

GENIUS SWORD IMMORTAL

by Feng Yin Zi Chen

GSI-TOC

Genius Sword Immortal

GSI-C01

GSI-C02

GSI-C03

GSI-C04

GSI-C05

GSI-C06

GSI-C07

GSI-C08

GSI-C09

GSI-C010

GSI-C011

GSI-C012

GSI-C013

GSI-C014

Message

GSI-C015

GSI-C016

GSI-C017

GSI-C018

GSI-C019

GSI-C020

GSI-C021

GSI-C022

[GSI-C023](#)

[GSI-C024](#)

[GSI-C025](#)

[GSI-C026](#)

[GSI-C027](#)

[GSI-C028](#)

[GSI-C029](#)

[GSI-C030](#)

[GSI-C031](#)

[GSI-C032](#)

[GSI-C033](#)

[GSI-C034](#)

[GSI-C035](#)

[GSI-C036](#)

[GSI-C037](#)

[GSI-C038](#)

[GSI-C039](#)

[GSI-C040](#)

[GSI-C041](#)

[GSI-C042](#)

[GSI-C043](#)

[GSI-C044](#)

[GSI-C045](#)

[GSI-C046](#)

[GSI-C047](#)

[GSI-C048](#)

[GSI-C049](#)

[GSI-C050](#)

[GSI-C051](#)

[GSI-C052](#)

[GSI-C053](#)

[GSI-C054](#)

[GSI-C055](#)

[GSI-C056](#)

[GSI-C057](#)

[GSI-C058](#)

[GSI-C059](#)

[GSI-C060](#)

[GSI-C061](#)

[GSI-C062](#)

[GSI-C063](#)

[GSI-C064](#)

[GSI-C065](#)

[GSI-C066](#)

[GSI-C067](#)

[GSI-C068](#)

[GSI-C069](#)

[GSI-C070](#)

[GSI-C071](#)

[GSI-C072](#)

[GSI-C073](#)

[GSI-C074](#)

[GSI-C075](#)

[GSI-C076](#)

[GSI-C077](#)

[GSI-C078](#)

[GSI-C079](#)

[GSI-C080](#)

[GSI-C081](#)

[GSI-C082](#)

[GSI-C083](#)

[GSI-C084](#)

[GSI-C085](#)

[GSI-C086](#)

[GSI-C087](#)

[GSI-C088](#)

[GSI-C089](#)

[GSI-C090](#)

[GSI-C091](#)

[GSI-C092](#)

[GSI-C093](#)

[GSI-C094](#)

[GSI-C095](#)

[GSI-C096](#)

[GSI-C097](#)

[GSI-C098](#)

[GSI-C099](#)

[GSI-C0100](#)

[GSI-C0101](#)

[GSI-C0102](#)

[GSI-C0103](#)

[GSI-C0104](#)

[GSI-C0105](#)

[GSI-C0106](#)

[GSI-C0107](#)

[GSI-C0108](#)

[GSI-C0109](#)

[GSI-C0110](#)

[GSI-C0111](#)

[GSI-C0112](#)

[GSI-C0113](#)

[GSI-C0114](#)

[GSI-C0115](#)

[GSI-C0116](#)

[GSI-C0117](#)

[GSI-C0118](#)

[GSI-C0119](#)

[GSI-C0120](#)

[GSI-C0121](#)

[GSI-C0122](#)

[GSI-C0123](#)

[GSI-C0124](#)

[GSI-C0125](#)

[GSI-C0126](#)

[GSI-C0127](#)

[GSI-C0128](#)

[GSI-C0129](#)

[GSI-C0130](#)

[GSI-C0131](#)

[GSI-C0132](#)

[GSI-C0133](#)

[GSI-C0134](#)

[GSI-C0135](#)

[GSI-C0136](#)

[GSI-C0137](#)

[GSI-C0138](#)

[GSI-C0139](#)

[GSI-C0140](#)

[GSI-C0141](#)

[GSI-C0142](#)

[GSI-C0143](#)

[GSI-C0144](#)

[GSI-C0145](#)

[GSI-C0146](#)

[GSI-C0147](#)

[GSI-C0148](#)

[GSI-C0149](#)

[GSI-C0150](#)

[GSI-C0151](#)

[GSI-C0152](#)

[GSI-C0153](#)

[GSI-C0154](#)

[GSI-C0155](#)

[GSI-C0156](#)

[GSI-C0157](#)

[GSI-C0158](#)

[GSI-C0159](#)

[GSI-C0160](#)

[GSI-C0161](#)

[GSI-C0162](#)

[GSI-C0163](#)

[GSI-C0164](#)

[GSI-C0165](#)

[GSI-C0166](#)

[GSI-C0167](#)

[GSI-C0168](#)

[GSI-C0169](#)

[GSI-C0170](#)

[GSI-C0171](#)

[GSI-C0172](#)

[GSI-C0173](#)

[GSI-C0174](#)

[GSI-C0175](#)

[GSI-C0176](#)

[GSI-C0177](#)

[GSI-C0178](#)

[GSI-C0179](#)

[GSI-C0180](#)

[GSI-C0181](#)

[GSI-C0182](#)

[GSI-C0183](#)

[GSI-C0184](#)

[GSI-C0185](#)

[GSI-C0186](#)

[GSI-C0187](#)

[GSI-C0188](#)

[GSI-C0189](#)

[GSI-C0190](#)

[GSI-C0191](#)

[GSI-C0192](#)

[GSI-C0193](#)

[GSI-C0194](#)

[GSI-C0195](#)

[GSI-C0196](#)

[GSI-C0197](#)

[GSI-C0198](#)

[GSI-C0199](#)

[GSI-C0200](#)

[GSI-C0201](#)

[GSI-C0202](#)

[GSI-C0203](#)

[GSI-C0204](#)

[GSI-C0205](#)

[GSI-C0206](#)

[GSI-C0207](#)

[GSI-C0208](#)

[GSI-C0209](#)

[GSI-C0210](#)

[GSI-C0211](#)

[GSI-C0212](#)

[GSI-C0213](#)

[GSI-C0214](#)

[GSI-C0215](#)

[GSI-C0216](#)

[GSI-C0217](#)

[GSI-C0218](#)

[GSI-C0219](#)

[GSI-C0220](#)

[GSI-C0221](#)

[GSI-C0222](#)

[GSI-C0223](#)

[GSI-C0224](#)

[wink](#)

Genius Sword Immortal

Tiāncái Jiàn Xiān

Author: Feng Yin Zi Chen

Synopsis:

A Cultivation Immortal teenager takes rebirth in a modern metropolis, transported straight from the world of the immortals. Here, for the first time, he sees and faces the modern world, modern fire arms and his new life starts with an arrogant school beauty as his neighbor and a beautiful fiancée.

His journey starts in this metropolis, holding the sharpest sword, running at peak speeds, stealthily climbing the walls and flying high over the metropolis!

A Domineering and Romantic legend of this teenage sword immortal finally starts.

Genre: Action, Adventure, Romance, Fantasy, Harem, Martial Arts, School Life

Tags: Cultivation teenager, Sword immortal, Transported to a different world, Searching for answers, Romantic plot, Cool Main lead, OP Main lead, Weak to strong , Xiaohua (School beauty), Jealous Female lead, Beautiful Female lead.

Note:

Genius Sword Immortal is a Xianxia which completed in 1500 chapters (14 volumes). It's about a teenager who unexpectedly got transported to the modern world from 'the world of the immortals' . He found himself in the body of an ordinary guy. He wants to go back to his world and for that, he will have to practice to get stronger and investigate the reason why and how he crossed through to this world.

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/genius-sword-immortal/>

Raws:

<http://www.17k.com/book/641804.html>

Translator:

<https://novicetranslator.wordpress.com/genius-sword-immortal/>

<https://lastvoicetranslator.wordpress.com/>

<http://novelsnao.com/category/gsi/>

Changed to

<http://www.novelsaga.com/category/gsi/>



Chapter 1 – Urban rebirth

“Ah – someone’s peeping!”

Under the night sky of a city, within a certain villa district, a loud panic-stricken and angry voice resounded. Then, suddenly, the sound of a heavy object falling on the ground echoed.

“Damn, it hurts

It seemed as if someone had fallen from a high altitude, and Ye Feng stood up unsteadily, swaying from one side to the other.

“No! Master has been captured by the monster, I must hurry Hey, where is this place?”

When he opened his eyes, he actually discovered that he was no longer present in front of the Fire Dragon Cave, but a completely unknown and strange place.

There was a villa on his front and when he turned back, he saw yet another villa behind him. The whole area was illuminated with city lights and he could clearly see a bustling metropolis under the night sky.

“How did this happen, I was undoubtedly in front of.....”

Ye Feng was totally bewildered.

He distinctly remembered that he was chasing the trail of a monster, and had entered the Fire Dragon Cave, but accidentally stepped on a mechanism, and the very next instant, he was falling down and when he landed on the ground, he found himself in a metropolis!

In his memories, a city like this didn't exist in the 'World of the immortals'.

He stood up, but right at that moment, a series of memories, which did not belong to him, flooded into his mind causing a severe headache. This headache was unbearable and he could not help but shake his head to get rid of this sudden headache.

"This guy is also called Ye Feng? He didn't have the keys and wanted to reach the second floor of his villa, so he had tried to climb by crawling up the water pipe? But, after climbing halfway, he startled when heard a loud scream of a girl and fell to his death?"

Ye Feng almost cursed out loud at this ridiculous incident, present in the memories that he had just got after the severe headache.

From the memories, Ye Feng found out that 'Ye Feng' of this world had left home and gone out in the evening to play online games, but unbelievably, the body of 'Ye Feng' had been possessed by him when 'Ye Feng' had fallen to his death. (NT: 'Ye Feng' is the guy of modern world and Ye Feng is the MC who has come from 'the world of the immortals')

"Hold on!"

Ye Feng's complexion changed when he recalled the memory of the snow white and creamy smooth body of a girl that had come into the sight of this guy when he had climbed up the water pipe and had accidentally seen the naked body of that girl taking bath.

He was a smart person and quickly realized that he would soon be in danger!

There were two villas adjacent to each other. 'Ye Feng' lived alone in one of these villas and it belonged to his grandpa. And in the other villa, lived a beautiful girl who was also considered the Xiaohua of his high school. Both of them were neighbors, but they never talked much. (NT: Author has used 'Xiaohua' frequently in this chapter which means 'the prettiest girl in the school')

"Ye Feng, you're so dead!"

At that moment, an anger-filled, sweet and pleasant voice of a girl resounded in his ears.

Ye Feng shivered and looked back and saw a beautiful girl, clad in white dress, and she looked exactly the same in his new memories that he had got after coming to this world. However, right now, she was holding a fruit knife in her tender hand and with a haze of anger on her face, she menacingly rushed towards Ye Feng through the small alley, located between the two villas.

"Run!"

Ye Feng instantly understood that this beauty was a serious threat to him because if he got stabbed by that knife, then he would most likely die!

If Ye Feng possessed his previous strength then he would certainly not be afraid of a little girl. But right now, he possessed the body of this world's 'Ye Feng', and that guy's body was feeble and lacked strength.

Ye Feng immediately decided to escape from this so-called Xiaohua, who was chasing after him with a knife in her hand. Ye Feng felt that he needed to practice as soon as possible and gain the ability to protect himself in this new world. Only then, he would be able to investigate why he had suddenly appeared in this damned place.

He started to run, guided by the memories of 'Ye Feng', and since it would be impossible to hide in the interiors of the villa district, he ran straight towards the gate.

At this time, it seemed as if the big beautiful eyes of this school beauty were spraying fire, and she kept on pursuing after him.

She had entered the bathroom and prepared hot water to have a comfortable bath, but just when she had taken off her clothes, revealing her creamy jade like skin, she looked outside the window and actually saw a figure climbing up the wall of the adjacent villa.

This stinky neighbor had just now tried to shamelessly peep on her?

He actually dared to peep on a girl taking bath!

Too shameless!

She had panicked and did not notice that her scream had scared that boy so

much, that he lost his grip on the pipe and fell down on the ground. However, how could she forget that her naked body had already been seen?

She had become furious and had finally decided that she must catch this peeper and turn him over to the cops!

“Stop, don’t run!”

That Xiaohua was in a constant pursuit of Ye Feng holding a fruit knife in her hand, and it did not take long for them to run out of the gate of villa district.

In the security room, a young security guard saw a young boy running out of the gate and a young girl chasing after him, but he did not care, and thought that this might have been the result of couple’s argument and continued to watch television.

“This body is really weak and runs quite slow..... However I must escape, and who can win against me in a race?”

Ye Feng was soon out of breath, but in the world of the immortals, he was known as the ‘famous escape master’, who had once survived after being chased down by numerous strong masters.

If he was to get caught by a little girl and the word about it spread out, then won’t he become a laughingstock?

He ran past many streets and soon arrived at a bustling place. In his memories, this place was called Bar Street and he had decided to come to this place because it was stuffed with various kinds of people and it would be quite easy to

blend in the crowd to hide from that Xiaohua.

He looked back and saw he had left her far behind, but she was still chasing after him and this time, she was hiding the knife from the eyes of the people.

“Listen, I climbed up because I didn’t have the keys and i was just trying to open the door. It was not my intention to peep, so why are you behaving so violently over a misunderstanding? However..... This little girl is really in a good shape, and her snow white figure is quite exquisite”

Ye Feng started to think about her exquisite figure and admired it, but he quickly shook his head because now was not the time to have such thoughts.

Ye Feng rushed towards the Bar Street, and quickly disappeared in the crowd.

Su Menghan had chased all the way after Ye Feng, but when she saw him running towards the Bar street, she hesitated to proceed. She had heard bad rumors about this place, that it was definitely not an appropriate place for a pretty girl walking all alone. (NT: Here, author has used her name for the first time. But MC prefers to call her Xiaohua, which also means a ‘school beauty’)

However, just the thought of her whole body being looked at by this stinky brat had made her even more furious.

“Today, I will definitely catch you!”

She gritted her teeth and ran after him into the Bar street.

When a beautiful girl like her entered the Bar Street, her presence immediately attracted the attention of many people with their gazes filled with desire, greed and lust.

Su Menghan was a little scared, but was bold enough to keep on searching for that hateful figure in the crowd.

After about half an hour, Ye Feng had finally arrived in the central area of Bar Street.

When he was sure that Su Menghan was no longer following him, he was relieved.

“She is such a violent woman, just like my master.”

Ye Feng was walking on the Street, and at the same time, he looked at the scene of debauchery in the colorful Bars, located on both sides of the Street. He had never seen such a scene in his world of the immortals.

He tried to find a quiet place where he could begin his practice, but finding a quiet place in the Bar street was certainly impossible, and quickly understood that his only option was to get out of there.

As he was about to go elsewhere to start practicing, suddenly, he heard desperate cries of a female coming from an alley.

“Help

Ye Feng heard faint cries of a girl and the origin of this voice was definitely close to him, otherwise, he certainly would not have heard those cries in a noisy place like the Bar Street.

“Isn’t this the voice of that Xiaohua?”

When Ye Feng heard this voice and confirmed that these cries belonged to that Xiaohua, he felt somewhat strange, because he did not expect that the so-called Xiaohua would continue to chase after him and enter the Bar Street. She had entered the Bar Street and seemed to have encountered a dangerous situation.

Although, he did not want to interfere, but then he realized that this little girl had chased after him all the way to this place, which was definitely dangerous and scary for a young and pretty girl like her. And if anything bad happened to her, then he would not be able to forgive himself!

Ye Feng slightly hesitated then finally entered the alley and prepared to take a look at what was actually going on.

Chapter 2 – Half brick

Ye Feng ran into the small alley and soon saw a figure running out from there, who seemed to have lost his mind out of fear. (NT: to lose one's mind out of fear (idiom))

“Tian Youliang?”

When Ye Feng clearly saw the appearance of this guy, he found information about him in the memories of his counterpart from this world.

Tian Youliang was a dandy guy and a student in his high school class, and he belonged to a considerably rich family. He would pester Su Menghan all day and not just because she was beautiful, but also because her family was filthy rich. She belonged to a multimillionaire family that owned assets throughout the Yanjing city. (NT: ‘Yanjing’ used to be the old name for Beijing)

Bleached hair and a black leather jacket gave Tian Youliang an appearance of a school punk, but right now, he looked confused with a sign of panic in his eyes.

“Ye Feng?”

Tian Youliang was frantically trying to escape but when he lifted up his head, he was somewhat startled to see Ye Feng there.

Tian Youliang had seen his goddess Su Menghan at the Bar Street, and had helped her in searching for Ye Feng for half an hour but they still couldn't find him, but he did not expect to actually meet Ye Feng here.

Unfortunately, now, Su Menghan had been surrounded by the guys from the 'Heavenly Serpent Gang' and things were going to get very ominous for her.

If it was an ordinary small fry, then Tian Youliang could have tried to help her. But, even his father would not dare to provoke the 'Heavenly Serpent Gang', then how could a mere school kid like him try to save her from their clutches. It was a common saying in that locality that those who dared to annoy 'Heavenly Serpent Gang' would have a very miserable fate!

Just the thought of his goddess getting defiled by four drunkards in front of his eyes had left Tian Youliang in a bad mood, however to him, his own life was obviously more important than that of Su Menghan.

Tian Youliang was not in a mood to pay attention to Ye Feng, because he was afraid that those drunkards might rush out of the alley and come after him. After he saw Ye Feng face-to-face, Tian Youliang immediately ran out of the alley and soon disappeared.

"It seems quite dangerous"

Ye Feng looked at the back of the guy, fleeing with all his might. He thought deeply for a moment, and then picked up a half brick which was lying quietly on the ground. Since, he had not practiced in this new body so his strength was extremely low and could not take rash decisions.

Without making any sound, he crept around the corner to come inside the alley and slowly stuck his head out to look. He secretly chuckled to himself after seeing the scene inside that alley.

He saw four drunken tall brawny guys, with a white snake painted on their cuffs, which was definitely the symbol of 'Heavenly Serpent Gang'.

They had completely surrounded and trapped that Xiaohua, Su Menghan, inside the small alley and were about to commit atrocities. (NT: Xiaohua = School beauty)

Ye Feng had chuckled because all of the four brawny guys had their backs towards him!

"Hey, grandsons!"

Ye Feng roared and ran forward, then threw the brick in his hand skillfully, with all of his might.

Su Menghan was crying.

She now regretted her decision of chasing that stinky brat all the way to the Bar Street, and now hated him even more for leading her to this damned place.

When she had first entered the Bar Street, she met Tian Youliang who often pestered her in the class. Tian Youliang said that he was familiar with the Bar Street area and could help her in finding Ye Feng, but near this small alley, they bumped into four drunkards of the 'Heavenly Serpent Gang'. When they saw her beautiful appearance, they could not control themselves and decided to trap her

in the ally and have some fun with her.

When Tian Youliang saw those four brawny guys, he got scared to the point of wetting himself. He abandoned her and immediately escaped like a scaredy-cat.

By this time, the four tall and burly drunk men, who looked as if they had smoked up all day, had surrounded her in this small alley with an evil look in their evil eyes, looking at her as if they were going to strip her down with just their looks.

Desperate Su Menghan had to shout for “help”, but in such a small remote alley of the infamous Bar Street, no matter how much she shouted for help, who would come to her rescue?

She had tightly gripped that fruit knife which was hidden in her skirt, and had already prepared herself to struggle hard against those four drunkards, when suddenly, a familiar voice spread over from the corner.

“Hey, grandsons!”

A loud outburst of this provocative phrase immediately attracted the attention of the four drunkards.

“Where did you come from you spoiled piece of shit, I, your father, will immediately prepare your funeral”

One of the foul-mouthed drunkards turned back but couldn’t react when he saw a brick flying towards him and the very next instant, it heavily smashed into his face.

It was the half brick!

This direct hit from a brick had caused the blood to gush out of his face. He couldn't bear the extreme pain and immediately fell down while screaming incessantly.

Although, Ye Feng was not strong at the moment, but he had once cultivated to become an immortal, so his grasp on control and angle of a projectile weapon was absolutely impossible to achieve for ordinary people. For others, they couldn't have hit a person from that far, let alone with such accuracy to hit the face with enough force to cause the blood to gush out.

The other three drunkards were stunned, and even Su Menghan was totally stunned.

"Don't you want to run?"

Ye Feng did not hesitate to take advantage of the fact that those stupid men were drunk, and he quickly held Su Menghan's hand and ran outside the small alley.

If these people were not drunk, but sober, then let alone saving her, he certainly couldn't guarantee his own safety in this situation. Fortunately, they were totally wasted at the moment so their thinking capacity had decreased considerably and that had caused the delay in their reactions. Before they could react and take some actions, Ye Feng had already pulled Su Menghan and ran more than ten meters away.

One of them finally reacted and started examining the face-injury of that foul-mouthed guy and the other two started to pursue them: “Brat, I, your father, will definitely catch you!”

“If I was chasing after someone then I won’t waste time on useless talks.”

There was a disdain in Ye Feng’s smile and while pulling Su Menghan by her hand, they turned several curves and soon returned to the Bar Street main road.

When Su Menghan saw the street full of people, she was immediately moved to tears, but unfortunately, the two drunkards had already caught up with them, and their desperate escape started yet again on the main road.

“You’re running too slowly.”

Ye Feng frowned and put his hand around her waist to pick her up. Her soft and fragrant body was very light like a flower. Ye Feng embraced her tightly and rushed forward, but not only did his speed not decrease, he had actually gotten a bit faster, and the distance between them and the drunkards also widened considerably.

The people on the Bar street raised their eyebrows in succession. What was going on?

“Grandma Xiong, that boy runs really fast.”

After seeing that Ye Feng, while embracing Su Menghan, was running too fast and had already left them far behind, both drunkards had to finally give up on their chase. One of them spat on the ground and said: “Forget it, elder brother

Ba Tie will kill them for us, that brat's fate is sealed.”

With the help of Heavenly Serpent Gang's influence, finding the identities of Ye Feng and Su Menghan would be quite easy for them.

— — —

“Put me down!”

He ran out of the Bar Street, and after seeing that the danger was gone, Su Menghan started struggling in his embrace.

The feeling of being carried at a lightning speed had left some aftertaste. Since her childhood, she had never allowed other males to touch her, except her dad. However, today, she did not expect that not only would her naked body be seen by Ye Feng, but he would also conveniently embrace her all the time during their escape, which made her even more angry.

When Ye Feng heard her, he loosened his arms all of a sudden.

“Ah!”

Su Menghan suddenly fell on the road, and shouted with the pain and cursed in her heart. How did this guy have such a demeanor?

She stared bitterly at Ye Feng and held the street lamp post to slowly stand up.

In the night, under the dim light of street light, her graceful fragrant body, under her snow white dress, appeared incomparably attractive that perfectly complemented her oval face and her delicate features. She indeed was worthy of the title of Xiaohua of his school.

Ye Feng looked at her and could not help but recall the feeling of holding her in his embrace. That creamy soft, full breasts and fully stretch..... He could not help but think of his master, who was the same peerless beautiful woman who was called the 'Cold Ice Fairy' in the world of the immortals.

“Master, she was captured by the monsters

Ye Feng once again thought of this matter, but now he was in a different world and could not do anything. In fact, his master's cultivation was ten times better than his own and even if he was still in the Fire Dragon Cave, he would not be able to do much for her.

He wanted to quickly find a place to practice, in order to find a way to go back soon.

He started walking when suddenly, he heard Su Menghan's angry voice from behind: “Wait a minute!”

— —

Chapter 3 – Warning

When Su Menghan called out to stop him, Ye Feng turned his head and asked: “Why?”

“Take me home.”

Su Menghan glared at him and thought that this guy was really stupid. First, he saved her, then he threw her down on the road and now he was leaving her alone like this in the night.

“I don’t have time for that.”

Ye Feng refused.

“You!”

Su Menghan couldn’t believe her ears. How could this guy be so stupid? He had no time? Both of their villas were located next to each other then how could taking her home be a waste time for him?

“Take me home, or I’ll tell my dad.”

She again said the same words, however, with one more sentence added at the back.

Ye Feng did not want to get involved with her, but when he heard the newly

added sentence, he abruptly stopped. In his new memories, Su Menghan's father was definitely not an affable person and had never been nice to 'Ye Feng' of this world.

If her dad found out that tonight, Ye Feng had dared to peep at his daughter while she was taking bath.....

Ye Feng broke out in cold sweat, because at his current strength, would he not be easily killed by the opposite side?

"I was a bit hard on you, but try to walk faster."

Ye Feng had to compromise and he caved in, but he was incomparably aggrieved because this was his first time submitting to someone other than his master and that too before a little girl!

However, he didn't have a choice other than surrendering to her, because he no longer possessed the hard-earned cultivation that he had achieved in the world of the immortals.

Su Menghan looked at his aggrieved appearance and secretly rejoiced in her heart, but in the next moment, she was in a bad mood. If other people would get an opportunity to take her home at night like this, then they would certainly be ecstatic and cheerful, however, this Ye Feng had an expression of reluctance on his face?

"Today's events, you are not allowed to tell anyone."

While both of them were walking back home, Su Menghan said to Ye Feng. If

her father found out that she went to a sketchy place like the Bar Street at night, then won't he break her leg?

“Oh.”

Ye Feng nodded absentmindedly, because right now, he was busy thinking deeply about his practice plan.

Su Menghan looked at his absentminded appearance and noticed that he was not even paying attention to her. This made her feel even more uncomfortable and unhappy in her heart, but then, she recalled how Ye Feng had come to her rescue and how he had shouted “grandsons” in the alley, followed by that piece of flying brick, making her feel a little touched.

Although this bumpkin was only good at playing online games, moreover, he had also dared to shamelessly peep at her, but speaking the truth, he still seemed a lot more pleasing to the eye compared to that ‘gong zi’ Tian Youliang and was definitely very reliable in the face of danger. (NT: ‘gong zi’ is an honorific for ‘son of an official’)

They continued to walk and were about to reach the ‘Qingfeng park’ when a midnight blue BMW 7, deluxe model, Limousine suddenly stopped next to them.

Seeing this car, Su Menghan immediately gawked. Was it not her father's car?

Ye Feng saw a rather dignified middle-aged man sitting on the front passenger seat and this man was looking at him and Su Menghan with eyes full of anger.

Ye Feng immediately felt that something was wrong.

In his memories, Su Menghan's father was always busy with business and would always be out on business trips and seldom returned to the 'Qingfeng Park'. In the Su family's villa, located in the Qingfeng Park, most of the time, only a maid would be present to accompany Su Menghan in the night.

Ye Feng did not expect that her father would actually come back tonight.....

"Get inside the car."

The middle-aged man rolled down the window and looked sternly at Su Menghan.

.....

Su Menghan opened the back door and looked once at Ye Feng before getting inside. She could not help but be somewhat worried for him.

Ye Feng, although, also lived in a villa located in the Qingfeng Park, where the value of each of the villas was in millions, but he had always lived alone in his villa. Su Menghan's father, Su Xinchang, had already investigated him and knew that Ye Feng didn't have a father or a mother, he had no social relations and the villa where he lived actually belonged to his grandfather.

Su Xinchang had never seen Ye Feng's grandfather. Even after so many years, he had never made an appearance, so he would definitely not be any special character. The most important thing was that, owning a villa in Qingfeng Park was not something incredible in the eyes of Su Xinchang.

Therefore, Su Xinchang had never allowed Ye Feng to have contact with his daughter.

However, today, he had seen Ye Feng and his daughter walking together on the road and that too this late in the night! Damn it, was this brat trying to hit on his daughter?

Su Xinchang had become extremely furious.

How could he tolerate seeing his precious daughter together with such a poor boy? It was time to give a good warning to this brat and then move Su Menghan from the Qingfeng Park to somewhere else.

Of course, for a big personality like him, it was a disgrace to come forward and personally talk to Ye Feng. He would leave this matter to be managed by his assistant-driver. (NT: The person he is referring to holds both the positions of his assistant and driver)

The Limousine sped up and soon went into the Qingfeng Park's parking lot.

Ye Feng had seen a look of disdain in the eyes of Su Xinchang, but he simply did not care. He was cultivating in order to become an immortal, so why would he bother about such an ordinary person?

Now that Su Menghan was not around anymore, Ye Feng relaxed a bit and quickly ran towards the Qingfeng Park.

In accordance with the previous Ye Feng's consistent practice, he continued to climb up the water pipe along the wall. Of course, his movements would be more

flexible and swift than the previous Ye Feng, and in a very short amount of time, he had already reached the second floor and from the balcony window, he jumped inside to go in. (NT: He didn't have the keys so his only option was to follow previous Ye Feng's trick of climbing up the water pipe)

At this time, Su Menghan did not want to be scolded by her father so once she entered the villa; she immediately rushed towards her room to hide in the bathroom.

When she entered the bathroom and looked out of the window, she saw Ye Feng crawling up the water pipe and then going inside the villa. After looking at this scene, she could not help but cover her mouth with a hand.

“So he really was just trying to enter the villa and was not peeping.....”

At this time, she finally understood the original misunderstanding and realized her fault. She had forgotten to draw the curtains and because of that, her whole naked body had been seen by Ye Feng. When she recalled that scene just now, her delicate face turned red all of a sudden.

“It's so far away, he should not be able to see anything right?”

Though she felt unlikely, but could only console herself.

Recalling the scene from the Bar Street, where Ye Feng had suddenly appeared in front of her eyes at the critical moment, had just now made her heart to pound a little. She quickly pulled the curtain and turned on the water to re-take a bath.

And downstairs, Su Xinchang was sitting on the sofa, wearing an elaborate western-styled suit, which made him look matured and decent. His whole personality revealed a high-ranking temperament of the Chairman of Su Sheng Group, who owned innumerable resources.

His beautiful woman assistant-driver was sitting opposite to him on the sofa. She looked matured and intellectual, wearing an OL dress and black-rimmed eyeglasses. Her long hair was trailing over her shoulders, and her pitch-black short skirt in coordination with the skin-colored stockings was making her look very tempting. (NT: The term ‘OL dress’ stands for ‘Office Lady Dress’)

“Take this two hundred thousand and go warn that kid to make him stop dreaming of something he cannot achieve in this lifetime.”

Su Xinchang signed a check and handed it over to the beautiful woman assistant.

“Yes, Director Su.”

The beautiful female assistant took the check and turned her small waist to leave the villa and walked towards the neighboring villa to give a warning to Ye Feng.

Su Xinchang was sitting on the sofa, watching her seductive backside, but the anger in his heart had still not disappeared. Later, he must teach a good lesson to Su Menghan otherwise she might get out of his hands.

.....

Ye Feng entered his room from the second floor's balcony and guided by his memories, he turned on the lights inside the villa.

To be able to live in such a luxurious double-storied villa was very enviable, but 'Ye Feng' of this world had his own difficulties. In this villa, he could only go to three places; the hall, his bedroom and the bathroom.

If he ran wildly all over the place then his damn grandfather would stop sending the living expenses to him.

So, 'Ye Feng' indeed was a poor chap.

He was about to start practicing when he heard someone ringing the doorbell. Ye Feng had some doubts about who would come this late in the night?

He ran up to open the door and saw a bespectacled intellectual-looking royal elder sister standing in the doorway and immediately recognized her. Was she not the beautiful driver of Su Xinchang?

.....

Chapter 4 – Dragon Sword ancient ring

Ye Feng saw a tall and beautiful woman standing outside the door, but he did not get out and did not allow her to enter as well. He just stopped her at the door and said: “Girl, why have you come to visit so late at night?”

Assistant Hu Meimei was a bit annoyed at this attitude of Ye Feng. How could he make a beauty like her to stand outside the door and did not even ask her why she had come to him? He actually stopped her at the door and did not even allow her to enter the villa, how outrageous!

Moreover, it was very strange that he called her “girl”. Just in what era was he living that he actually addressed her in such an odd way? No wonder, Director Su Xinchang had an unfavorable impression for this boy, as he was certainly a big bumpkin.

“Director Sue has asked me to bring you a word.”

Hu Meimei glanced at him and when she saw his filthy appearance, a look of disdain appeared in her eyes: “Miss Su is not worthy of people like you, afterwards, do not try to get close to her. Director Su has sent this for you, do you accept it?”

She handed over the check.

Ye Feng took a look at it and was suddenly surprised to see two hundred thousand written on it. Did it even seem like Su Xinchang actually hated him? Why would Director Su give this money to him? After giving it a thought, he figured out that it was a “transaction fee” from the other side to make him leave

Su Menghan.

But the problem was that there was really no relationship between him and Su Menghan, then why would the other party give money in vain?

Ye Feng really didn't hesitate to take the check and then with a "bang", he closed the door and didn't even give a glance at the beautiful assistant.

Right now, to Ye Feng, this two hundred thousand was really a timely help. No matter where one would want to practice, whether in the world of immortal or in this mortal world, one would still need adequate resources.

Without any cause or reason, he was getting two hundred thousand, so why must he not take it!

Next, he would take a bath first then look into the matters of cultivation.

.....

When Ye Feng slammed the door, Hu Meimei's complexion suddenly became very unsightly.

As the beautiful assistant of Su Sheng group's director, Su Xinchang, she was very much used to getting all kinds of flattery from others, but what just happened right now? This young hick had actually disrespectfully shut the door on her face.....

She grew more and more unhappy and returned back to Su Xinchang but

seemed to be in a very bad mood.

“How did it go?”

When Su Xinchang saw an irritated look on her face, he asked in an indifferent tone.

“Director Su, he took it.”

Hu Meimei diligently reported.

“That’s good.”

Su Xinchang nodded: “Go upstairs and take a look at that girl, why hasn’t she come down yet.”

“There’s no need for that, I have come down.”

A melodious voice of a girl came over from the staircase. It was Su Menghan who had just come down after taking a bath. When she was coming down the staircase, at that moment, she distinctly heard Hu Meimei’s phrase “he took it,” and all of a sudden, she felt a little agitated.

“Oh? Good.”

Su Xinchang turned his head and looked at his budding flower-like beautiful daughter who had just taken bath and motioned her to sit down on the sofa

opposite to him, then said: “Meimei just now went to talk to that Ye Feng and between you and two hundred thousand, he chose two hundred thousand..... “

“How many times do I need to tell you that I don’t have any relationship with him!”

Su Menghan was very uncomfortable sitting on the sofa. She thought that her dad was really a fool that he actually gave money to someone for no reason.

But in her heart, she was unable to determine why she was feeling so uncomfortable at the moment.

She had yet to realize that Ye Feng had already made an important place for himself in her heart. When she just heard that Ye Feng had actually chosen money over her, the favorable impression for him inside her heart disappeared all of a sudden.

“Tomorrow, we will move to our villa in Yanxi Villa district, let Meimei pick you up.”

Su Xinchang said in a tone that could not be refused.

Yanxi Villa district was Yanjing city’s new district for luxury villas with their living standards a lot higher than the villas in Qingfeng Park, but the distance between Yanxi Villa district and Su Menghan’s middle school was a bit too far.

“What?”

Su Menghan suddenly stood up and stared at her dad with her big beautiful eyes: "I'm not going."

"It's not up to you to decide."

Su Xinchang sternly said.

Su Menghan was reluctant, but couldn't do anything. Just because her dad had seen her roaming outside, late at night, he was making her move to a place that she did not like?

Unconsciously, Su Menghan had become even more annoyed at Ye Feng.

.....

Ye Feng certainly did not know about Su Menghan's disgust for him, and even if knew, he simply wouldn't care.

As for the 200,000 he had gotten his hands on, he again didn't care.

It was not that he did not know the value of two hundred thousand, but to him, this was barely enough to meet the basic requirements of practicing and nothing more than that.

In this whole world, the only thing that could make him feel excited was the ring he was wearing in his hand.

When he was in the hidden treasure trove of Fire Dragon Cave, he had stumbled upon this magic ring and at that time, this ring looked to be entirely made up of stone, but now, he actually saw two words written on the ancient ring “Dragon Sword”.

For the sake of this Dragon sword ancient ring, he had accidentally stepped on a trap mechanism which had caused him to fall all the way into this modern metropolis.

“Dragon Sword ancient ring, so it was not just a legend after all.....”

Seeing the ring in his hand, Ye Feng was incomparably happy and ecstatic and this joy was much more than the joy of getting two hundred thousand. Let alone two hundred thousand, even two billion could not buy this ring!

Using this legendary Dragon sword ancient ring, one could open the ‘Dragon sword ancient tomb’ and get ancient immortal tools, but right now, forget about the Dragon sword ancient tomb, Ye Feng could not even go back to the world of the Immortals.

“This world’s air is polluted and I don’t think there are enough heavenly treasures left to help me with my practice.....”

Ye Feng shook his head and did not think about it too much.

He did not know whether this Dragon sword ancient ring had any other functions, but clearly, now was not the time to study about its functions.

In the world of the Immortals, he had cultivated in order to become an

immortal and it totally depended on the time spent on cultivation. Under normal circumstances, the longer the cultivation time was, the stronger the cultivator would become. So if someone possessed the cultivation of a decade, then he would obviously be much stronger than those with a cultivation of five years.

Before coming here, Ye Feng had cultivated for 10 years in order to become an immortal, but after coming to this metropolis, he had completely lost his hard-earned cultivation in an instant.

He wanted to improve his cultivation as fast as possible in order to become an immortal and for that, he needed to practice a cultivation method so that his cultivation would keep on increasing steadily. There were a lot of ways to increase the speed of cultivation, like by consuming some of the heavenly treasure medicinal pills, or relying on other fortuitous encounters. If his luck went against the heaven's will, then even if he were to practice only for a year, he could obtain ten years worth of cultivation.

In order to become an immortal, the cultivation of a decade was like a watershed.

'Decade cloud god' and 'Century sun god' were the most popular cultivation laws in the world of the Immortals.

Ye Feng recalled the cultivation law that he had practiced in the world of the Immortals – Revolving star tomb tactics. This was the most basic cultivation method for growing one's cultivation day after day.

He had heard that some advanced core laws could increase the practice speed by ten times, but unfortunately, Ye Feng could not obtain such an advanced core law in this metropolis.

After taking a bath, Ye Feng returned to his room and tried to practice 'star tomb tactic', but suddenly, his complexion changed.

Because he found out that his body was actually unable to practice!

No, not just him, but everyone in this world was unable to practice! And the reason was very simple.....

Chapter 5 – Conflict at the School gate

All of the people in the World of the Immortals contained ‘Core Dan’ in their Dantian which and its main function was to generate and control the systemic circulation of Zhen Qi throughout the body. (NT: ‘Dan’ means ‘Pellet’)

However the people on the Earth did not have ‘Core Dan’ in their Dantian. As a result, they couldn’t even produce Zhen Qi then how could they possibly practice?

Ye Feng scowled and didn’t know what to do, when suddenly the ‘Dragon sword ancient ring’ on his right hand shone up and a trace of mysterious stream of air entered into his body.

“This is.....forming a Core Dan?”

Ye Feng was ecstatic and overjoyed.

Dragon Sword ancient ring actually had such a function which directly opposed the heaven’s will. This really was a pleasant surprise to him especially because now it was possible for him to practice in this world. However, didn’t this also indicate that in this world, he would be the only one who could practice?

He did not believe that others on Earth would also possess magic artifacts like ‘Dragon sword ancient ring’, that directly opposed the will of heavens. Even in the ‘Cultivation World of the Immortals’, among the many magic artifacts, it was considered a top notch and could lead to an all out war among the forces. (NT: Ye Feng’s world is called ‘Cultivation World of the Immortals’ but I will just use ‘World of the Immortal’ to avoid any confusion)

Thus, as long as he was careful, he would certainly be safe here, and without worrying about anything, he would be able to fully concentrate on finding a way back to the World of the Immortals.

Thanks to the miraculous function of 'Dragon sword ancient ring', a soybean-sized 'Core Dan' had quickly formed in his Dantian and he had finally calmed down, because now, he could actually begin to cultivate by practicing 'Star tomb tactics'.

When he was in the World of the Immortals, he had practiced 'Star tomb tactics' for eight years and was very much familiar with it. He used his thoughts to move the faint trace of Zhen Qi in his Dantian along the fixed passages of meridians, circulating it randomly up and down in the whole body.

He forced the circulation of Zhen Qi in his meridians which was slow in the beginning but it gradually began to get faster.

Soon, all of the meridians inside his body had been developed by the forced circulation of Zhen Qi! Next step would be to start the operation of Star tomb tactic, which would continue to grow his cultivation day by day, and he would gradually become strong in this world as well.

Certainly, merely practicing a cultivation law was far from enough. He wanted to quickly increase his cultivation and for that, he must look around for some heavenly treasures, medicinal herbs, medicinal pills, in order to absorb the divine Lingqi accumulated in them. Only then, his cultivation growth would become very fast!

But now that he had gained the ability to produce Zhen Qi, he could protect

himself, because he could finally display the most basic fighting technique of the World of the Immortals – Bagua Fist.

In the World of the Immortals, the main fighting techniques used were powerful immortal techniques. Using them, one could spit clouds, walk on the wind, topple the mountains and overturn the seas and all kinds of unfathomable tricks. This Bagua fist technique was used by no one in actual combat, but unfortunately, Ye Feng could only use Bagua fist as there was not enough Zhen Qi in his body, so using a fist technique was all he was capable of.

In the Bar Street, if he could use Bagua fist technique then he wouldn't need to run from the drunkards of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Finally, he could feel that his body was getting stronger little by little.

Ye Feng felt relaxed and went to bed.

.....

The next morning he woke up early and decided to go to the Yan High School.

He certainly did not want to go to school, but this world's Ye Feng had a best friend who studied in his class and his family had a business of antiques. He wanted to have a look as he might find some treasures among the antiques.

He still had the check of 200,000 and if he could find some good practice resources then that would very cost-effective.

From the memories, he had come to know that in this world, there was a fearful presence of firearms. At his current strength, if he was to face these firearms, it would be very difficult for him to escape, so he must gain strength as soon as possible.

Yan High School was not far from 'Qingfeng Park' villa district.

Ye Feng went out of the villa and spent more than twenty minutes walking to the school. When he was approaching the school door, a car stopped beside him. Sitting on the front passenger seat was a beautiful girl clad in white dress and she was none other than the beautiful Xiaohua of his school, Su Menghan.

"Hmph."

Su Menghan saw him but there was a bitter expression on her face. She came out of the car and walked straight towards the school gate. Her beautiful appearance and exquisite graceful figure instantly attracted the attention of many boys.

As far as the attitude of this so-called school beauty was concerned, Ye Feng naturally did not care.

But when he looked towards the school gate, he was suddenly startled. He saw three slovenly guys standing near the school gate with a white snake painted on their cuffs.

Members of Heavenly Serpent Gang!

These three goons of Heavenly serpent gang had certainly come here to teach

him a lesson.

When they saw Su Menghan, they immediately recognized that she was the girl from last night, but they had not come for her. They had thoroughly investigated and knew that the girl from last night was the daughter of Su Sheng Group's chairman. Although they were not afraid of the other party but they didn't want to needlessly get into trouble.

However, since this girl had appeared then that Ye Feng brat should also come, right?

Sure enough, they looked around and located Ye Feng leisurely walking towards the school gate. They immediately laughed and geared up to fight.

"They are....."

Su Menghan saw the three goons at the school gate and felt a little strange. She saw them slowly approaching Ye Feng with malicious smiles on their face and all of a sudden she realized that they had come for Ye Feng.

"Su Menghan, you are early today, ah, I'm so glad to see that you are alright."

An equally slovenly voice reached her ears. It was Tian Youliang who had abandoned her and escaped last night.

She didn't even give him a glance as she was really disinclined towards paying attention to an unreliable 'gong zi' like him. Right now, she was concerned about Ye Feng's safety. (NT: 'gong zi' is an honorific for 'son of an official')

She felt a crisp pain in her heart. Although she wanted that repugnant Ye Feng to suffer, but deep in her heart, she was somewhat worried.

Tian Youliang came next to her, still wearing the black leather jacket, but when he realized that she was ignoring him, his complexion darkened. Certainly this was because of things that happened last night but now she didn't even want to exchange greetings with him.

Tian Youliang looked towards Ye Feng, who was slowly walking towards the school gate, and thought: "Boy, although I don't know how you saved Su Menghan last night, but now that you have provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang, get prepared to die."

Ye Feng gradually approached the school gate and the situation looked somewhat tensed.

When other students sensed that something was wrong, they stopped near the school gate to see what was going on. The three goons were smirking and walking towards Ye Feng.

The security guard saw this scene but didn't do anything. How could a mere security guard like him dare to annoy the members of influential and untouchable Heavenly Serpent Gang?

He didn't want to get involved with the Heavenly Serpent Gang because if tried to interfere in this matter, he might not be able to continue his job. Right now he was just hoping that the student wouldn't be fatally injured after receiving the beating and when this was all over, he would immediately call the ambulance.....

“Boy, be sensible and come with us.”

A thin and tall goon looked playfully at Ye Feng and said.

Even after seeing the arrogant and overbearing attitude of the opposite party, Ye Feng’s facial expression didn’t change instead there was a calm look on his face. He suddenly stepped forward and condensed Zhen Qi in his right leg and instantly kicked out!

Dealing with people like this, he won’t show them any mercy, because for him, talking rubbish with them was just a waste of time. In the World of the Immortals, even a second of distraction could lead to death, so why would he waste time on idle talks?

“Peng” Ye Feng heavily kicked that guy between the two legs.

In a split second, the sound of an egg breaking resounded in the ears of all of the people. After hearing this sound, the bodies of almost all of the males simultaneously shivered.

Quite ruthless!

The thin goon’s complexion paled as he could not bear the intense pain. He immediately kneeled down clutching his broken eggs between the legs.

“Attack!”

“Kill him!”

The other two goons had been stunned by this sudden turn of events, but they immediately reacted and did not hesitate to throw their fists at Ye Feng!

Chapter 6 – Best friend Ouge

These three goons were the small fries of Heavenly Serpent Gang and they had been sent by Brother Tie to catch Ye Feng who had smashed the face of a member of their gang in the Bar Street.

Actually, they were not strong fighters and their strength was nothing compared to that of the drunken members of Heavenly Serpent Gang who had surrounded Su Menghan last night.

As the two goons threw their punches at him, the meridians in Ye Feng's body activated at once. He clenched his fists and Zhen Qi gathered up in both of his fists and he suddenly threw two subtle and matchless fists at them one after the other in a row.

Bagua fist!

His left fist hit a goon on the abdomen, while at the same time, his right fist punched on the chest of the other goon. With two successive loud pop sounds, everyone saw that the two goons spit a mouthful of blood and their bodies were sent flying and severely fell on the ground upside down, spreading a cloud of dust and their blood sprayed on the ground.

Ye Feng used just one hit on each of them to send them flying!

When people present near the school gate saw this scene, they were suddenly stunned.

Su Menghan widened her eyes in disbelief. She didn't know what to think because she just witnessed how a simple looking school boy had punched two goons and sent them flying.

It was just too shocking!

Last night, Ye Feng had used a half brick to knock down a drunkard and then he had escaped with her from the bar street, which she thought was a normal behavior for a school boy, but now, she noticed that the current Ye Feng seemed very different from before.

When Tian Youliang, who was standing beside her, saw how Ye Feng knocked down three members of Heavenly Serpent Gang without breaking a sweat, his jaws dropped down. He was totally bewildered because he just could not believe his eyes. Was this the same weakling who liked to go skipping to the internet cafes to play online games?

Just how much strength was needed to be able to actually send two adults flying?

At that time, Ye Feng noticed that four students were pointing their camera-phones at him and he could not conceal his surprise, because it was certainly not a man enough thing to do, taking video when a fellow student was being ganged upon by goons.

In this age of advanced communication and interconnected information system, it was impossible to stop the news about this incident from spreading, and soon, everyone in the Yan High School came to know about it.

The School gate security guard was stunned. He was well prepared to call the ambulance at any time but he just couldn't comprehend how a high school student had single-handedly knocked down three members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

"Finished, it's over for him. Today, a student has provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang, and soon, he will suddenly disappear....."

Although the security guard was surprised at the unexpected outcome of this fight, but he still felt sorry for Ye Feng and regrettably shook his head. After all, school kids were too young, too impulsive, and didn't know that waves calm down only for a short time!

The security guard was worrying for the safety of Ye Feng, a school student who had just provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang. But if these people knew what Ye Feng was thinking right now, they would definitely wet themselves.

"Today, this Heavenly Serpent Gang has caused too much trouble for me. I must find some time to get rid of them in one fell swoop....."

Ye Feng thought then glanced at Su Menghan and Tian Youliang then walked straight inside the school gate. Since childhood, his beautiful master had taught him that if someone threatened him then he must get rid of them as soon as possible and must never let them go! This was one of the basic rules of survival in the World of the Immortals.

"Hmph, what's with that proud look on his face?"

Seeing that Ye Feng glanced at her but it was as if he wasn't looking at her at

all. He immediately turned back to leave as if she was invisible to him which left a bitter feeling in her heart.

However, they were in the same class so she could only follow up behind him. Along the way, she was very unhappy at his attitude but she felt relieved in her heart that nothing happened to him. After all, he was her classmate, and she was also the reason why he had gotten involved with the underworld so she would obviously feel guilty if he was to get hurt.

.....

In a noisy third year classroom, Ye Feng entered the class, and suddenly, a silence spread, and all of the students started looking at him as if they were looking at a monster. Obviously, the news about the fight had already spread in the class.

“Damn, tell me man, when did you become so popular?”

A somewhat wretched voice resounded and Ye Feng looked towards the source of the sound and saw his best friend.

The boy was called Ou B, and his special trait was that half of his hair was white which made it easy for someone to recognize him in the crowd. (NT: Ou is the family name of Ou B)

Many years ago, the Hua State had allowed the use of English alphabets in names. At that time, Ou B’s grandfather felt that using English alphabets in the name would be quite fancy and he gave his son the name Ou A. And Ou A inherited his father’s wishes and named his son Ou B and that’s how he got his

name.

“It’s nothing. Oh, by the way, I have a request and there’s something I need your help with.”

Ye Feng smiled and while ignoring the surprised looks on the faces of other students and their curious gazes, he went straight towards Ou B.

In the World of the Immortals, Ye Feng had seen a lot of treasures which would secretly absorb the Lingqi present in the atmosphere, and after absorption, they could enhance the rate of rise in cultivation. Ou B’s family did business of antique objects so one could say that Ye Feng was in a great luck.

“Rest assured bud, your Ouge will solve all your problems.” (NT: Ouge: Elder brother Ou)

Ou B smiled and patted on the shoulder of Ye Feng and said: “Oh, by the way, I heard that some people from underworld ganged up on a student, ah damn, it’s a good thing that I am a civilized guy

“Well, take me to your house tonight.”

Ye Feng straightforwardly stated his purpose, although he wanted to go right now, but such a request would seem irrational, after all, they were still students and they couldn’t casually bunk classes.

“What, to my house?”

Ou B jumped up from his seat.

“En, to go and take a look at the goods and see if there’s something I can use.”

Ye Feng said while sitting on his seat at the back row in the classroom.

“Ha ha, I get it, I get it.”

Ou B’s eyeballs revolved in all directions and his face instantly exposed a wretched expression: “This time, there’s no shortage of beautiful girls in our class.....”

Ye Feng didn’t say anything and ignored him. He looked up and at the same moment, he saw Su Menghan entering the classroom clad in a graceful white dress. Her beautiful appearance immediately attracted the attention of the male students in the class, including Ou B.

“Gee, Su Menghan is so beautiful, and on top of that, her dad is the chairman of Su Sheng Group. Isn’t she a perfect girl? If I could just get off with her.....”

Ou B began to daydream.

Just then, Su Menghan turned towards Ye Feng and stared ferociously at him.

Under her piercing gaze, Ou B suddenly felt a chill down his spine, but he soon realized that she was not staring at him, but at Ye Feng. He was suddenly alarmed and asked at once: “Bud, be honest and tell me, is there something going on between you and Su Menghan?”

Ou B certainly knew that Ye Feng and Su Menghan were neighbors.

“No.”

Ye Feng immediately denied.

“Damn it, it’s improper to lie to your brother!”

Ou B glared at him.

“There is nothing going on between us, trust me..... by the way, do you know about Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

Ye Feng did not want to listen to his crap and immediately changed the subject.

“Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

As Ye Feng had expected, Ou B fell into his trap and got distracted. He stared blankly at Ye Feng and asked: “I have heard of them, what about it?”

“I just knocked down the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang.....”

Ye Feng told him everything.

“Crap, do you want to get yourself killed or what!”

When Ou B came to know that the three goons, who had the crap beaten out of them by Ye Feng, were actually the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, all of a sudden, he stared at Ye Feng with a frightened look in his eyes.

Heavenly Serpent Gang! It was one of the three influential gangs in the whole Yanjing city!

Ye Feng actually beat the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang?

.....

Chapter 7 – Oval faced maiden

At the end of the school day, Ou B explained everything he knew about the Heavenly Serpent Gang and Ye Feng finally came to know how terrifying an existence this gang actually was.

Heavenly Serpent Gang was a strong dark influence and it had established a company which was secretly involved in selling drugs. It also operated a number of entertainment venues and casinos. It was said that severe measures had been taken against them several times but nothing worked.

“Such a large influence, it would be a pity to destroy them.....wouldn’t it better to find a way to gain their control in my hands?”

Ye Feng pondered that this would not be very bothersome if only he was in the World of the Immortals. There, he would easily formulate a poison to control the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Unfortunately, on the Earth, he did not know whether he could find the appropriate raw materials for the poison. Later he would go to the Chinese herbal medicine shop to take a look.

Ye Feng was not at all worried about anything, but Ou B had been worrying all day and why shouldn’t he? After all, his best friend had provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“Well, let us go to your house.”

After the last lesson, Ye Feng stood up and said to Ou B. He and Ou B were the students of third year in high school so they did not need to self-study late at night.

“You really are.....”

Ou B helplessly shook his head as he could not figure out how could Ye Feng be so calm even after provoking the Heavenly Serpent Gang? And Ye Feng was also thinking of going to his house to find some “good stuff”?

They arrived at the school gate and saw that the three goons were long gone, only the blood stains remained on the ground. As a famous high school of Yanjing, the capital city China, no matter how arrogant the Heavenly Serpent Gang actually was, it would still not dare to enter the campus of Yan High School and act unruly.

Su Menghan was walking in front of the two and would occasionally turn back and look bitterly at Ye Feng. Later, she was picked up by Hu Meimei because from today onwards, she was going to live in the Yanxi villa, a place she did not like.

But all of this was a gift bestowed upon her by Ye Feng and was also the reason behind her bad mood all day.

Ye Feng naturally did not care about her and completely ignored her, in fact, she glared at him for a whole day but he simply didn't mind at all.

Ou B was being furtive and stealthy at the school gate and had been planning all day how to deal with the members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, if they got

attacked after coming out of the school. Although no one dared to offend the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but now that Ye Feng had provoked them, he would naturally not hesitate to stand by the side of Ye Feng.

“There’s no one suspicious outside, let’s go.”

Ye Feng swept his eyes outside the school campus and did not see any suspicious elements and went out of the school gate while pulling Ou B along with him.

Until they walked far away out on the street and did not meet any mishaps, only then Ou B relaxed a bit but then a solemn look appeared on his face: “Xiao mifeng, you shouldn’t go back home tonight. If the Heavenly Serpent Gang can find which school you go to then they must have also investigated where you live.” (NT: Xiao mifeng is a nickname given to Ye Feng by Ou B which means Small bee)

“So what?”

Ye Feng did not care about the Heavenly Serpent Gang but each time Ou B called him “Small bee”, he simply felt like dying.

“Are you really a fool or just try to act like one?”

Ou B scolded him and said: “Tonight, going back to your villa can be very dangerous! Perhaps, this time, they may send people with guns to take you down.”

Ye Feng was surprised for a moment, because right now, he had still not

grasped a way to resist against firearms: “It’s highly unlikely that they would send armed men to deal with a high school student.”

Although he had come from the World of the Immortals, but he still had the memories of this world’s Ye Feng and was very much familiar with firearms, in fact, this world’s Ye Feng was originally a shootout expert in gun-battle game named CF.

Ou B started to think more and more about this but he still couldn’t understand as to why the people of Heavenly Serpent Gang had stopped Ye Feng at the school gate? He didn’t want to believe that they would let Ye Feng off so easily.

“Well let’s go, first we will visit that Chinese medicine shop and have a look.”

Ye Feng spotted a Chinese herbal medicine shop, then nodded, and said while pointing his finger at it.

By the broad street, two rows of willows were planted on both sides, and the street had a variety of shops, and fortunately, he happened to find a traditional Chinese herbal medicine shop among them.

“What? Wait, now you want to go to a Chinese medicine shop?”

Ou B suspected they he heard it wrong and gave a strange look to Ye Feng.

“I am looking for some good stuff.....”

Ye Feng said and walked towards that Chinese medicine shop.

However, when he came under a willow tree, suddenly, a tender figure fell down from the tree. Ye Feng's eyes moved swiftly and his hands reached out to catch that figure in his bosom.

What was going on?

A beauty just now actually fell down from the willow tree?

Ye Feng was puzzled then lowered his head and saw a beautiful maiden who was unconscious at the moment and had an appearance of 18 or 19 years old. She had an adorable delicate oval face that could easily incite tender affection for her. She was wearing a long blue skirt with flower patterns on it, breathing steadily with her chest rhythmically going up and down. She seemed just like a fairy in the arms of Ye Feng.

The girl was young, but her body under the skirt was actually quite exquisite, revealing her perfect curves, and was quite vivid and incisive! Especially her soft buttocks that were held in his hands right now and the wonderful touch made him to stare blankly all of a sudden. His brain was full of question marks, where did this baby face actually come from.....?

Suddenly, the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring, worn on his right hand started to give off heat and his complexion immediately changed.

“Small bee, you

Ou B followed closely and approached him but saw Ye Feng embracing a lovely girl. He couldn't help but widened his eyes and glared while pointing his fingers at him: "You, you, you, you....."

"What you? You go home."

When Ye Feng noticed that the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring had begun to heat up on his right hand, he immediately understood that this girl was not ordinary and asked Ou B to leave.

Ye Feng didn't wait for Ou B to react and swept his eyes in all four directions while still holding the unconscious maiden and finally found a hotel. In order to avoid getting shot by the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, anyway it wasn't safe for him to go home tonight, so it would be better to spend the night at a hotel.

"Small bee! You want to do it don't you!"

Who would have thought that Ou B would not listen to him? He actually came in front of Ye Feng and blocked his way then shouted: "Let her go, your Ouge will never allow you to succeed in your dirty intentions....." (NT: Ouge means Elder brother Ou)

With the fragrant body of a beautiful girl in his bosom, Ye Feng looked at Ou B who had a bewildered look on his face at the moment.

The sky was getting darker, and in the street, some people gradually began pointing at the two men. Ye Feng knew that he must hurry up and handle Ou B, or the crowd might cause trouble for them.

“Remember how I punched the two members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

Ye Feng asked in a serious tone.

“Ah? I remember.”

Ou B gawked and subconsciously nodded.

“Actually, I am a martial arts expert and this is my junior sister apprentice. She is seriously injured and I must find a place to heal her as soon as possible

Ye Feng finished the sentence and before Ou B could react, he bolted away in the direction of the hotel while still hugging the cute girl.

“What?”

When Ou B heard his words, he was again stunned for a moment and said to himself: “Is it true, small bee is actually a martial arts expert?”

His bewilderment was understandable, after all, this morning, he had also seen how Ye Feng had punched the two goons of Heavenly Serpent Gang and sent them flying and this scene was still vivid in his mind.

But, before he could react, Ye Feng was nowhere to be found.

The crowd on the street gradually dispersed, but there was a shadow hidden in

the dark, watching all of this.

After the school, Tian Youliang had followed Ye Feng all along, because he wanted to look at his miserable appearance after getting beaten by the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang on his way back home, but he never expected to see Ye Feng entering a hotel while embracing a young beautiful girl in his bosom.

A sinister look appeared on his face as he pulled out his phone and called his father.

“Damn, this time, if I didn’t ruin your reputation then my surname will not be Tian anymore. Ye Feng, get ready to enter the police station very soon.....”

.....

Chapter 8 – timely help

Embracing the adorable girl in his bosom, Ye Feng quickly entered a hotel.

The man at the hotel's front desk saw a high-school student embracing a female high school student, and it was clearly visible that she was either drunk or unconscious. When Ye Feng asked for a room, the man looked at him with some contempt, but still opened a room for them and handed over the key.

It was obvious that this was not the first time this man saw something like this happening, he had seen things like this before, and each time he would witness such a thing, he would feel that the morality of the society was declining day by day.

Ye Feng didn't have free time to pay attention to what others were thinking of him and he quickly entered the room and placed the maiden on the sofa.

Just now, he had not invented a story in front of Ou B, because this adorable girl was indeed injured. Moreover, some tracking powder was sprinkled on her body and it was obvious that she was being chased down by people who wanted to kill her.

Earlier when he was talking nonsense to Ou B, Ye Feng had used his Zhen Qi to eliminate the tracking powder from her body. And this way, he had finally found the source behind the sudden heating up of his Dragon Sword Ancient Ring.

The source was the girl's chest. Something was hidden in there and was causing the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring to give off heat non-stop. (NT: :P)

Compared to the injured girl, Ye Feng was clearly more interested in the thing hidden in her chest. With slight hesitation, he put his hand into the neckline of her blue skirt to see what it actually was.

As expected, his hand felt a sensation of soft plump touch which made him somewhat embarrassed. This was like taking advantage of an unconscious girl and was definitely not a gentlemanly behavior.

However, this girl really had one pair of plump breasts, soft and rounded and gave a plentiful feeling when touched, and that feeling of elasticity and bounce..... Keke, but fortunately this course of events didn't last longer and he quickly took out that thing from her chest. (NT: keke depicts a coughing sound)

He took out three medicinal herbs and each of them had five thin leaves with golden colored central rhizome.

Seeing those three herbs, Ye Feng could not help but exclaimed with a look of ecstasy on his face. So it actually turned out to be golden leaf grass? As they say, God has eyes, and this time, it was really a timely help!

Golden leaf grass was a very common medicinal herb in the World of the Immortals and had a variety of functions.

For example, the three golden leaf grasses, currently held in the hands of Ye Feng hands, were all five years old and if even one of them was consumed, the Lingqi contained in it could promote the cultivation, and this rise would be equivalent to 5 months worth of cultivation. This was only the first time effect of consuming a golden leaf grass and it had other effects as well.

In addition to that, Ye Feng also knew a recipe to use golden leaf grass to create a poison which could easily deal with the situation of Heavenly Serpent Gang. This poison was enough to control an ordinary person and even if it was the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, once poisoned, he would be bound to obey Ye Feng.

These golden leaf grasses were clearly the treasures of this girl. No wonder she had properly hidden them in the cleavage of her boobs.

“Well, one grass can be used for healing and one for refining the poison also I can use one more for”

Ye Feng looked at the unconscious girl on the sofa and somewhat hesitated.

It was obvious that his current behavior was undoubtedly equivalent to taking advantage, but the golden leaf grass was too important to him right now and he didn't want to return them. Might as well save her life with one of the three grasses, then won't she owe the other two grasses to him?

After all, if Ye Feng had not saved her, then perhaps, she might have been caught by those people who were chasing her and she might have faced serious atrocities or lost her life.

He took a golden leaf grass and forced it into the mouth of that cute girl and closed it tightly. Then he started the slow circulation of Zhen Qi in his hand and slowly pushed the golden leaf grass to make her swallow. Swallowing a golden leaf grass in such an unconscious state was not so easy, but fortunately, Ye Feng was there to help her. She coughed up a few times and finally swallowed the golden leaf grass.

Then Ye Feng held the delicate wrist of that girl and slowly began to probe her body by sending his own Zhen Qi into her body. He began to guide the lingqi released from the golden leaf grass in her body to help her heal.

This was no trivial matter!

Ye Feng was astonished and stood up all of a sudden because while probing her body, he felt that the acupuncture points present in the meridians within her body were actually open, and there was also some kind of strange power flowing in her body, just like some kind of core law.

“How is this possible, there’s no Core Dan in her Dantian then how can she practice?”

Ye Feng suddenly remembered his own words that he had arbitrarily said to Ou B, a while ago, and they actually turned out to be right. From the memories of this world’s Ye Feng, the legend about the world of martial arts was not supposed to be present in this world. Could it be that this girl actually belonged to a circle of martial artists like him?

Ye Feng was not familiar with the strange power present within her body, but it was obviously not Zhen Qi, and it was also not as powerful as the Zhen Qi. To be specific, she actually had 8 years of cultivation, but he could determine that he would only need to have 4 years of cultivation to be able to catch up with her strength.

The might of Zhen Qi was probably twice the might of that strange power flowing in her body.

Ye Feng tried to restrain the intense feeling of surprise in his heart and while he was clearing the meridians inside her body with the controlled circulation of his Zhen Qi, he discovered several internal wounds and the meridians had been torn open that had caused the leakage of energy inside her body and was the primary reason behind her unconsciousness. Fortunately, the effects of golden leaf grass were very good for healing and coordinated with the Zhen Qi control technique of Ye Feng, such small injuries would be quite easy to heal.

It did not take much long and Ye Feng fully cured all the broken meridians in her body then let go of her wrist.

“Although I saved her, but in the end, I have also taken her things, and if she woke up now, then with my current cultivation level, it would be impossible for me to take her on.....”

Ye Feng thought that it would be better to leave as soon as possible.

He glanced around in the room, and found a pen and paper prepared on one side of the cabinet. He walked over to the cabinet as he wanted to write something in a note addressed to her. At least, he wanted to tell her what happened and apologize for taking her golden leaf grasses.

But just when he was about to pick up the pen to write a note, the unconscious girl suddenly opened her eyes and sat up instantly!

“Who are you!”

The girl didn't stay unconscious for a long time and was exceptionally astute. She knew very well that she was being chased down by people so as soon as she

woke up, she gave a wary look to Ye Feng, who, at the moment, was standing next to the cabinet.

Her voice was very pleasant to hear, very mellow and crisp, like the sweet chirping of an oriole, but there was a hidden murderous touch in that melodious voice.

“Girl

Ye Feng was a little embarrassed and immediately wanted to explain things to her.

But when she glanced at him, her sight fell on a thing present on the cabinet, and suddenly, a blush appeared on her delicate face. What she saw was one of the goods supplied by the hotel, a box of “X Yang God Lu”. As for the pen and paper present in front of Ye Feng, she didn’t see.

This boy, he intended to do dirty things to her while she was unconscious?

Wrong!

She hurriedly inspected her own chest and noticed that the three golden leaf grasses were gone. Her complexion immediately changed then she looked up and fiercely stared at Ye Feng.

“Girl, since you woke up, I don’t need to write anything.”

When Ye Feng saw the accusing look on her face, his heart skipped a beat, but

he made a poker-face and immediately said: “I saw you fainted on the street and brought you here. Now that you look all right, I’ll leave first.”

From his words, it seemed as if he was like an elder brother who was passing by the street and when he saw a girl fainted on the street, he kindly gave her a helping hand. Listening to his words, one would have no alternative but to think how kind of a person he really was!

The girl gawked for a moment, and it seemed like she was pondering about the authenticity of his words. She realized that the wounds inside her body were now healed and her broken meridians were cured as well. Not just that, the tracking powder on her body was also gone, this clearly showed that someone must have saved her.

Could it be that this boy was the one who saved her?

While looking at Ye Feng, she secretly made a guess. But even if he had saved her, she still didn’t want to let go of the golden leaf grass. She had been tracked down, injured, solely because of those three golden leaf grasses, and now that she had lost them, it meant that all the hard work she had done for the past one month would go in vain.

Ye Feng secretly looked at the balcony and noticed that it was already dark outside. If he ran out now, escaping should not be a problem for him.

At first, the girl intended to take hold of Ye Feng as fast as possible and Ye Feng was also preparing to escape, when at this time, something strange occurred.

All of a sudden, the hotel room’s door was forced open from outside and a

sharp voice resounded.

“Anti-vice, hands up!”

.....

Chapter 9 – Serious crime

When the room's door was wrecked, Ye Feng reacted immediately and turned towards the window to jump out and leave.

However, someone else's reaction was faster than his reaction.

He saw that the maiden instantly jumped up from the sofa, and without warning, her kick went flying towards him.

Ye Feng was vigilant and without wasting any time, he immediately condensed the Zhen Qi in his palm in order to catch her kick. But, contrary to his anticipation, her kick changed direction midway, cleverly from bottom to upper region of his body, and heavily kicked on his chest.

“Bang”, he fell heavily against the wall with a stinging pain in his chest.

Eight years of cultivation was not to be taken lightly.

“Don't tell me that you have only recently started to practice martial arts?”

The maiden slightly curled up her mouth and a pair of beautiful eyes flashed at him. She looked like a quick-witted girl and her whole appearance had an air of elegance and unconventional grace: “Bye bye~”

She apparently did not want to get into trouble with the police, and right then, he noticed that her figure looked like a beautiful flower under the blue dress. She smiled tenderly at him, and soon after, she took a small step on the sofa and

floated out of the balcony and disappeared.

Ye Feng wanted to cry but he had no tears to shed.

Fortunately, at the key moment, he had condensed Zhen Qi in his chest otherwise her kick would have seriously wounded him. However, even so, he only had one day worth of cultivation and the weak Zhen Qi wasn't enough to defend him from the kick thrown by a master with eight years worth of cultivation. After receiving her kick, it temporarily left him paralyzed and unable to move.

A lineup of uniformed police rushed in, led by an aquiline-nosed, small-eyed, sinister-looking insidious man.

“Handcuff him.”

The aquiline-nosed man pointed at Ye Feng then he immediately went to the balcony and tried to track the beautiful maiden but she was long gone and disappeared without a trace, and he had to give up.

However, so long as he grabbed this kid called Ye Feng, it was sufficient.

Aquiline-nosed man was thinking that thanks to that beautiful girl's kick, it became so easy to seize Ye Feng, and laughed.

“Young man, by coming to a love hotel at such a young age, you have forced this policeman to educate you well.”

The aquiline-nosed man said in a thick voice and waved his hand: “Take him

away and lock him up!”

In his opinion, although dealing with this kid was only a minor matter, but it was going to be a beneficial thing for him, because by doing this favor, he could expect good repayment in the future.

And at this time, Ye Feng couldn’t resist and his only option was to behave obediently.

If he had not been kicked by that beautiful maiden then why would he be afraid of the police? Unfortunately, right now, he could only be seized by the opposite party. He was arrested and brought to the police station.

.....

It was dark outside, and in a small, dark, narrow and gloomy interrogation chamber, that aquiline-nosed, small-eyed policeman began to interrogate Ye Feng along with another middle-aged policeman, with a deadpan look on his face.

“Name?”

Aquiline-nosed policeman asked.

Ye Feng was sitting opposite to the two policemen, continuously thinking about the possibilities of escaping from there, but finally concluded that it would be difficult to escape from this place as both his hands were handcuffed, and at his current cultivation, it would be difficult to escape using his strength. If he ate a golden leaf grass then it would enhance his cultivation considerably, but doing

so in this environment was too dangerous, and it would be bad if his meridians fractured because of too much intake and it could seriously injure or kill him.

“Ye Feng.”

He decided to cooperate and see what their purpose actually was. Anyway, he had not done anything wrong so he was calm and wasn't worried one bit.

“Sex?”

The aquiline-nosed policeman continued to ask.

“Age?”

“High school?”

Ye Feng obediently answered all the questions thrown at him.

At this time, that aquiline-nosed man answered a phone call: “Hello, Boss Tian right? Well, I have taken care of it, but this kid is very obedient, do you really think.....?”

Boss Tian?

When Ye Feng heard this, he was somewhat puzzled. Who was this Boss Tian? Among all the people known to this world's Ye Feng, the only one with this surname was Tian Youliang. Could it be that this Boss Tian person was actually

Tian Youliang's father?

In Yan High School, Tian Youliang could be considered a wealthy guy, and that was because his father had a company, and small assets, so knowing police was not much surprising, and it seemed that Tian Youliang had asked his father to create troubles for Ye Feng. Ye Feng was a smart guy and quickly linked the events to understand what was going on.

"If they want to falsely accuse me then I can't just sit here and do nothing."

Ye Feng immediately started to run his mind, thinking about the countermeasures.

"Speak, why were you with a prostitute?"

After answering the phone, the aquiline-nosed man did not ask those irrelevant questions anymore and directly changed the nature of his interrogation and started pressing the charges of involving with prostitution.

Ye Feng: "I have nothing to do with prostitutes or prostitution."

"Nonsense!"

The aquiline-nosed man pounded his hand on the table and aggressively said: "We have solid evidence regarding this matter. You seem like an energetic young man, so sometimes, making mistakes is understandable, and it's not a big deal, you will just get detained for ten days and you will also have to pay a small fine."

He tried to persuade Ye Feng because if he admitted his crime then things would be much easier. In fact, they couldn't catch the girl so they didn't have the evidence to press charges against Ye Feng for getting involved in prostitution. But, this was police station and they held the authority and the final say.

"I haven't done anything."

Ye Feng refused to admit as he certainly would not admit to something he had not done, moreover this was detrimental to his reputation.

"It appears that without suffering a bit, you will not admit your crime."

The aquiline-nosed man smiled coldly and abruptly stood up.

Ye Feng was vigilant, and thought, should he begin now?

But at this moment, that aquiline-nosed man's cell phone rang again. He glanced at his phone and answered it: "Hello, Liu Ju?"

"Xiao Zhang, open the door."

When the aquiline-nosed man heard the voice on his phone, his attitude immediately became very respectful, and opened the back door of the interrogation room. There stood a potbellied middle-aged man, and he was the one that the aquiline-nosed man referred as "Liu Ju" just now on the call.

That middle-aged man took a good look at Ye Feng's face, then smiled and patted on the shoulder of that aquiline-nosed man then said: "Little Zhang, you

have done a very good job this time, according to reliable sources, this kid is a major suspect in a rape case, which is a much serious crime compared to his involvement in prostitution. Interrogate him properly, after all, it's the job of the police to get rid of evil people you know?"

He was the chief of the Public Security Bureau and had just now received two calls in a row. The first call was from the assistant of the chairman of Su Sheng Group, suggesting that he must deal with the just caught high school student, named Ye Feng, who was right now in their custody.

He also felt strange because he couldn't understand why Su Sheng Group was spying a high school student. But then he immediately got another call from his boss, making him to break into cold sweat, and his boss repeatedly told him the same thing again and again that Ye Feng must be restrained at any cost and must also be brought to justice by the law, and severely punished.

From the tone of his boss, he soon realized that this kid must have offended some powerful people, so powerful that even his boss couldn't dare to offend them and was respectfully following their orders. Liu Ju was somewhat puzzled, because a high school student could offend just anyone, but how could he offend such powerful people. Whose daughter did he actually rape?

Of course, Chief Liu was confused and was trying his best to make out something from this matter but he did not dare to ask his boss about it. He just decided to follow the instructions and act accordingly.

"That's my job Liu Ju!"

Aquiline-nosed man was very happy at the moment because Liu Ju's words rang in his ears like a melodious music. He thought that this kid seemed to have

offended a lot people. The prime suspect in a rape case, wasn't this charge worse than the charge he was asked to put on Ye Feng? He would be sentenced for at least two years for this!

Liu Ju walked up to the aquiline-nosed man, stood next to him, whispered a few words into his ears, then stood at one side and did not leave. This obviously showed that he was taking Ye Feng's case very seriously and was attaching great importance to it.

The aquiline-nosed man listened to the whispers, nodded his head, then turned his head and said to the middle-aged pokerfaced policeman: "Search again."

The two policemen headed towards Ye Feng.

"Search again?"

Ye Feng frowned because he vaguely heard the whispers of Liu Ju while he was whispering into the ears of the aquiline-nosed man, saying "three grasses" and so on. After hearing about the three grasses, he immediately understood what was going on.

When he was brought into the interrogation chamber, they confiscated his mobile phone. The words "Search again" implied that now, if they thoroughly searched his body then the 200,000 check, two golden leaf grasses and the Dragon Sword Ancient Ring would definitely be found and removed.

That was not good! He must take action as fast as possible.

.....

Chapter 10 – High ranked officer pressured

Ye Feng felt a little strange. He knew that the adorable oval-faced girl was obviously fierce so why would she just let go of the golden leaf grasses?

Now, it appeared that the other party made the move fearing that he might escape with the grasses. That pretty girl had quite a large influence in the city, at least enough to command the chief of the Public Security Bureau.

Ye Feng could not just sit still and do nothing while the other party was so close to take away the golden leaf grasses from him.

In his heart, he somewhat regretted his actions. If only he knew that it was better for him to immediately leave rather than to write a note for the unconscious girl. Maybe then he would not have fallen into such a trouble. However, that was not necessarily the case, because even if he had escaped at that time, the opposite party could still find him from the hotel registration card, so the final result would still be the same.....

“I advise you to coordinate with us, so as to avoid any hardships.”

The aquiline-nosed man said in an overbearing tone while he was coming towards Ye Feng along with the middle-aged policeman. In the eyes of these two, Ye Feng was just a high school student, and handcuffed at the time, so he wasn't a threat at all.

Standing nearby, Chief Liu was waiting and also looking forward to the time when the two would seize the three golden leaf grasses from Ye Feng, and after turning them over to his boss, he would be awarded handsomely for his

meritorious service. Although he did not know why his superior was attaching great importance to the three grasses, but he just needed to do his job as told, and sometimes, knowing too much was not a good thing.

But just when the middle-aged policeman and aquiline-nosed man were getting closer and about to reach Ye Feng, he suddenly jumped up, withdrew several steps and stood against the wall, and using both of his handcuffed hands, he took out a golden leaf grass from his inner pocket.

He had placed the two golden leaf grasses and the 200,000 check in his inner pocket, so these items had not been confiscated by the police like his mobile phone.

At this moment, he wanted to eat a golden leaf grass then quickly absorb the Lingqi contained in it. If he could achieve the five-month cultivation then he could easily destroy the handcuffs.

Although, in the current situation, the process of absorption of Lingqi from the golden leaf grass would be quite dangerous, because if not done in a proper manner, then it could cause severe damage to the meridians inside his body and he might die a violent death as a result, but he had no other choice. If he didn't resist at this time, then not only the golden leaf grasses would be taken away, he would not have a good end, because he might really be falsely charged in a forged rape case.

How many years of sentence he might have to face for a serious crime like rape?

Ye Feng was certainly not willing to face such a situation.

Without wasting any time, he quickly put the golden leaf grass in his mouth and just when he was about to swallow it, suddenly, Chief Liu cried out: “Stop!”

Right now, Chief Liu was sweating profusely!

In the dim light, he could see the grass in the handcuffed hands of Ye Feng, and just as his boss had described on the phone, it had golden rhizome.

So this was the grass his superior was talking about!

In his superior’s tone, these three grasses were priceless, he didn’t care whether Ye Feng lived or died but the three grasses must be obtained from him at any cost. However, at present, Ye Feng was about to eat that grass, so how could this situation be good?

Chief Liu could foresee that if he couldn’t obtain those three grasses then he would most likely lose his head before his job.

“You are called Ye Feng isn’t it?”

Chief Liu realized that he must stand firm now in front of Ye Feng, so he quickly calmed down and spoke: “I urge you to not take any rash steps young man. If you really ate that grass then your crime will not be as simple as the crime of rape.”

When Ye Feng heard his words, some thoughts passed rapidly in his mind and he stopped.

He was obviously not afraid of the opposite party, but realized that he could use golden leaf grass as a bargain chip to threaten the other party.

“Do you really want this grass? Then first let me go otherwise I will definitely swallow it down.”

Ye Feng and the other side were maintaining a distance, and the golden leaf grass was still in his mouth.

This action of Ye Feng caused a dark feeling to arise in Chief Liu’s heart along with anger. This rascal actually put the priceless grass in his mouth, so even if he managed to obtain the grass, won’t it still be filthy? His superior would surely blame him.....

“I cannot do that, this is police station, and everything happens according to law.”

Chief Liu had been at the position of Chief for several years so he was certainly very experienced at dealing with tough situations: “But, if you hand over all the three grasses, then no matter what charges put on you, I will make sure that you receive lighter punishment.”

In his opinion, Ye Feng was just a high school student, once scared a bit, he would eventually breakdown and listen to him.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng was not an ordinary high school student, so how could he possibly be intimidated?

“Really? Then I’m sorry but I’m going to swallow it.”

Ye Feng moved his mouth, like chewing, in fact, of course, it was only an act.

He thought: That oval-faced girl did not seem to know that one of the three golden leaf grasses had already been used to treat her injuries, and she actually wanted all the three golden leaf grass back.

In retrospect, Ye Feng thought that using one of the golden leaf grasses to rescue her was really a big loss, but even if it was, Ye Feng would still make that choice.

After all, these golden leaf grasses belong to her and Ye Feng couldn't go against his conscience to leave her dying and steal all the three grasses.

"Stop! Do not be too impulsive young man."

When Chief Liu saw Ye Feng to make chewing movements, he suddenly panicked, but he was still calm on the surface: "Do you know the consequences of doing this?"

"Let me go otherwise whatever you say will just be a waste of time."

Ye Feng seemed disinclined to talk nonsense with the opposite party and firmly said.

The two sides were deadlocked, the aquiline-nosed man and middle-aged policeman just stood there, not knowing what to do, and right at this moment, Chief Liu's mobile phone rang. He lowered his head and looked at the number

displayed on the phone and his complexion suddenly changed and he hastily picked up the call.

After looking at the number displayed, he couldn't maintain his calm anymore.

He hurriedly ran out of the interrogation room and picked up the phone. Ye Feng and the other two policemen clearly heard his timid and submissive voice but no one knew who actually called.

Aquiline-nose man had a somewhat surprised expression on his face because he had not seen Chief Liu being so submissive and respectful even when he received calls from his superiors, so who was the one who called this time?

Ye Feng did not act rashly and tried to think, maybe, this was the call from the people who wanted to make his situation even more miserable. If he had the cultivation of ten years and practiced the Yin God technique, then his sense of hearing and vision would increase several times, then he would be able to listen what they were talking on the phone and would also know about this situation. Of course, if he had ten years cultivation then he would not have been caught by the police in the first place.

Sometime later, when the potbellied Chief Liu returned back to the interrogation room, he was already sweating profusely, and it was obvious that he was facing tremendous pressure.

He was separated by a few meters from Ye Feng, but this time, his manners were extremely respectful, and he politely said to Ye Feng: "Ye Shao, we are really very sorry, we unknowingly offended you..... You can leave now, this matter is merely a misunderstanding." (NT: Shao means 'young')

When Ye Feng heard these words, he gawked for a moment, and thought, what actually happened just now?

“No!”

That aquiline-nosed heard the words of Chief Liu and immediately shouted with a surprised expression on his face: “Chief Liu Ju, he.....”

“Are you the Chief or me?”

Chief Liu Ju stared at the aquiline-nosed man and strictly said.

Aquiline-nosed man wanted to say something, but he was not a fool, seeing the respectful attitude of Liu Ju towards Ye Feng, he was a bit frightened deep in his heart. Just what was the extraordinary background of this Ye Feng to be able to put so much pressure on the Chief of Public Security Bureau?

There was blank look on Ye Feng’ face. Just what kind of extraordinary background did this world’s Ye Feng actually have that even he himself wasn’t aware of?

Ye Shao?

“Why haven’t you still removed Ye Shao’s handcuffs?”

Chief Liu snapped and shouted.

Aquiline-nose heard and reluctantly walked towards Ye Feng.

When Ye Feng saw this, he was somewhat vigilant, but the aquiline-nosed man did not play any tricks, and with a dark expression on his face, he removed the handcuffs from the hands of Ye Feng.

Aquiline-nosed man was somewhat scared and speechless. Chief Liu answered a phone call and his attitude quickly transformed to such an extent.

Ye Feng knew that in today's China, the high ranked officials were often pressured, and it was obvious, the one who just now helped him was definitely not an ordinary person, and was one of the handful people who held powerful status to threaten even the Chief of Public Security Bureau, and the status of this person also seemed to be greater than that oval girl's background. Although he was feeling strange in his heart, but if police was trying to play tricks on him, then he would certainly not be fooled by this clumsy trick.

.....

Chapter 11 – Weiming Lake

Although Ye Feng did not know about his own background, but he would definitely use this chance to make this aquiline-nosed man suffer a hardship for getting him into this mess.

After his handcuffs were untied, Ye Feng smiled and in a very friendly manner, he patted on the shoulder of the aquiline-nosed policeman and said: “Thank you for taking care of me. I will certainly engrave this in mind.”

The aquiline-nosed man’s face suddenly darkened with horror clearly visible on it, but still squeezed out a smile and whispered: “Ye Shao, I was blind, why would you care about a petty and insignificant man like me

“Oh? A moment ago, I think you seemed to be talking to some big personality?”

Ye Feng faintly smiled and said.

“What are you talking about?”

Aquiline-nosed man was almost scared to death, and in his heart, he cursed Boss Tian several times. Damn, he should have thoroughly investigated the background of Ye Feng before taking any major actions, because due to his negligence, he ended up kicking an iron wall.

In order to not incriminate himself in the eyes of Ye Feng, he made the decision almost immediately and said: “Ye Shao, I was instructed to do all this by Boss

Tian, the chairman of Lantian Advertising company.....”

“Isn’t his son named Tian Youliang?”

Ye Feng asked.

“Correct.”

Aquiline-nosed man gawked for a moment.

“So the so-called protectors of justice, policemen, can also get their strings pulled by someone and can get controlled so easily, go back and get a good reflection on it.”

Ye Feng snorted and intentionally looked towards Chief Liu.

Chief Liu immediately perceived the look in Ye Feng’s eyes and responded: “Ye Shao, rest assured, Zhang Guocai has violated the discipline of police, so he will be suspended from duty effective immediately and an inspection will be also be performed.”

“En.”

Ye Feng put on airs and looked around, then calmly picked up his cell phone from the table then swaggered outside.

With a wide smile on his face, Chief Liu saw him off at the entrance of the

police station, but when he looked at his own cell phone, he suddenly remembered something then looked up and said: "Wait, Ye Shao, I forgot to inform you that you will have to take the trouble of going to the Weiming lakeside, someone's waiting for you there."

"Weiming lakeside?"

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows and responded immediately, but he quickly understood that this person was definitely the one who helped him from the shadows and now he was waiting for him at the Weiming lakeside.

From the memories of this world's Ye Feng, it was obvious that he had never become friends with any great person, so Ye Feng was also a bit curious to know who this person really was, who actually helped him at such a critical time.

"Got it."

Ye Feng nodded and left the police station. Today, he never expected to face so many unexpected situations, and now, he was going to meet his powerful savior.

After he left, Chief Liu finally relaxed.

"Liu Ju, what is the backing of this kid?"

Aquiline-nosed man could not help and finally asked.

"Well, about today's matter, you are not allowed to mention to anyone.

Starting tomorrow, rest at home for a week, do not come to work.”

Chief Liu’s whole body was already covered in cold sweat, and after solemnly warning the aquiline-nosed man, he turned around and left. This matter ended for Ye Feng, but it was not yet finished for him.

Because, he will have to find ways to explain things to the Chairman of Su Sheng Group, as well as his own boss. There was no way for him to tell them that the person who called in favor of Ye Feng was actually more ‘Niubi’ than his boss, that he couldn’t dare to hold Ye Feng even for a second after getting a call from that person. (NT: Niubi means kickass, flamboyantly strong)

He was just hoping that he wouldn’t lose his position as the Chief of Public Security Bureau because he was unable to obtain the three grasses as instructed by his boss.

.....

At this time, with a triumphant look on his face, Tian Youliang was already spreading the news on the internet group of their class that Ye Feng visited a prostitute and was involved in prostitution. He was arrested and was going to be locked up for more than 10 days, this news set off waves of rumors.

In the Yanxi villa, the unhappy looking Su Menghan had locked herself in her room, and to relieve her boredom, she was surfing on the internet, of course, also saw the news about Ye Feng.

“He visited a prostitute?”

Su Menghan thought of Ye Feng's figure and could not help but be a little surprised.

She knew that Ye Feng was not such a type of person, well, he would always bunk classes and go skipping to play online games, but it was simply unfathomable for her to believe the news about Ye Feng visiting a prostitute.

She thought of calling Ye Feng, but then dropped the thought, and with a cool mind, she thought in her heart in a convincing manner that this wasn't true right?

Just the thought of Ye Feng visiting a prostitute caused a burst of uncomfortable feeling in her heart and she felt like she would never think of that person again. She felt pathetic when she remembered the scene when she was embraced in his arms for a long time while escaping from those drunkards which made her feel even uncomfortable.

She got up and decided to take a bath, but just then, her phone rang.

She looked at the number, it was from Su Xinchang.

Hesitating a bit, she picked up the call.

"Su Menghan, regarding your matter, Dad has given a lot of thought today."

Su Xinchang's prosperous voice conveyed from the phone and seemed to contain a self-rebuking touch: "If you do not want to stay together with Aunt Xie, starting tomorrow, you can go back to our Qingfeng Park villa....."

“You are being so kind all of a sudden? Well, just state your purpose Dad.”

Su Menghan lightly snorted and said.

Her own mother had passed away, and this person her Dad just mentioned was “Aunt Xie”, whom her Dad remarried after his wife’s death. She was from the Yanjing City’s Xie Clan and Su Xinchang’s current achievements depended on Xie Clan to a great extent.

“Su Menghan, you deeply misunderstand Dad.”

Su Xinchang sighed: “Starting today, I will no longer interfere with you and Ye Feng’s matter. Last night, I had a very ill conceived approach about him. If you like him, I will support your relationship with him.”

It was not that Su Xinchang had developed conscience and compassion all of sudden, but he just received a phone call from Chief Liu Ju, and was informed about the ‘Niubi’ background of Ye Feng that even Chief Liu’s boss couldn’t put his hands on Ye Feng.

In that case, if he could use this opportunity to make his daughter, Su Menghan, to get close to Ye Feng and they get together, then he would undoubtedly be very happy.

Nowadays Su Sheng Group was at the economical and political center of Yanjing City in China, but it was only a second-rate influence. He was currently relying on Xie Clan but it was also a second-rate clan.

Ambitious Su Xinchang didn't want to stop there and wanted to rise as high as he could and his relation with Ye Feng was going to be a great opportunity for him!

“I do not like that guy.”

Su Menghan said in a crisp voice and hung up the phone, and in her voice, an undisguised disgust for Ye Feng was clear.

Su Xinchang stood stunned after hearing her reply.

But he was not going to give up, and would continue to push Su Menghan towards Ye Feng, and this time, he planned to resort to a sure shot killer move. By using this move, Su Menghan would have no choice but to obediently listen to his words.

.....

It was already dark outside when Ye Feng left the police station, and a while later, it got completely dark.

Weiming Lake was an artificial lake inside the Yanjing University, and although he didn't know why the other party elected to meet in such a place, but Ye Feng still took a taxi and headed for Weiming Lake.

In this early April spring season, lovey-dovey couples could be seen roaming about in the Yanjing University everywhere. He was a student of Yan High School, and as a student, he had certainly visited Yanjing University before on school trips. Following his old memories, he walked towards the Weiming Lake.

“Weiming Lake is not small, where will that person wait for me?”

With some doubts in his heart, Ye Feng soon arrived at the stone road on Weiming lakeside and looked at the weeping willows lightly blowing in the breeze, and this atmosphere was pouring a somewhat comfortable feeling in his heart.

There were a lot of pedestrians on the lakeside but he did not see any suspicious looking individual among them.

But right at this time, a burst of gale suddenly hit him from behind!

“Sneak attack?”

Ye Feng immediately reacted and wanted to dodge to one side to see who it actually was, but things didn't go as planned and he couldn't dodge in time, and at that instant, it seemed as if a chestnut knocked on his head.

Teng!

Ye Feng was knocked down and he lost his balance and his body crashed into the willow tree trunk making him to suddenly feel dizzy and his vision blurred.

His mind was alert and he quickly stood up and hastily turned his head but didn't see anyone suspicious. There was only a University couple at the lakeside, giving him somewhat puzzled looks. They felt strange about this guy who seemed to be in good condition but still bumped into a tree.

Who was it?

Ye Feng was alarmed because it could be someone from the World of the Immortals who had stealthily attacked him!

“Brat, now do you feel emboldened?”

A slightly hoarse voice spread out of thin air and entered his ears.

.....

Chapter 12 – Rumor spreads everywhere

“Grandpa?”

Ye Feng heard that voice and was startled then looked in all directions but couldn't see his grandfather's shadow anywhere.

However this voice indeed belonged to his grandfather, but the voice seemed to echo and also had a mysterious profoundness in it. Was the person who called Chief Liu and saved him actually his grandfather?

In Ye Feng's memories, his grandfather was a person he remembered since childhood, and also met him several times, but in his memories, he didn't have a profound impression of his grandfather, rather he seemed like a normal person. He had not seen him for several years, and every year, his grandfather just gave his school expense and living expenses, so in his heart, the image of his grandfather was nothing more than a shadow.

Until now, Ye Feng was waiting for the opposite party who saved him from a difficult situation but his savior actually turned out to be his own grandfather.

“So you brat still remember this old man.”

That slightly hoarse voice once again spread out of thin air: “Today I helped you settle the matter with that girl but if something happens later, then this old man may not settle it for you.”

Ye Feng heard this and immediately understood that his grandfather knew

about the matter of the three grasses and the girl he saved today and he was the one who saved Ye Feng from this mess. Just what kind of authority and status this guy's grandfather held?

He could actually transmit his voice, and threw a chestnut from an untraceable distance, and it held enough strength to knock him down. Considering all these points, could it be that his grandfather was also a martial artist of this world like that maiden he saved today?

Moreover, his cultivation level was definitely not low!

Shua!

The gust of winds hit once again. Ye Feng tried to dodge again but was knocked by a chestnut, stinging in the back of the head, and was pushed two steps forward. This time, he turned his head quickly but still saw that University couple currently looking at him with surprised looks in their eyes.

“Hey, look this man was hit by a ghost just now!”

The girl said in a surprised tone to her lover while pointing at Ye Feng.

“Baby, you are an educated individual and still believe in ghosts, let's go, I think that person is mentally sick.”

The male University student held his girlfriend's hand, glanced once towards Ye Feng, and left in a hurry.

Ye Feng was totally helpless, hit by a ghost? Mentally sick?

“Well brat, this old man is quite busy and has other matters to take care of.”

That elusive hoarse voice started to mysteriously appear and disappear from one direction to another direction: “Remember, you must pass the entrance examination of Yanjing University and get admission at any cost. At that time, I will introduce you to your fiancée. As I recall, the granddaughter of that old man from the Lin Clan is pretty good, but you will have to work harder.....”

As the voice faded, Ye Feng felt the breeze flowing from all directions, and was somewhat startled in his heart.

There was no doubt that his grandfather was a martial arts expert. No wonder he was so elusive and mysteriously appeared and disappeared in all directions and Ye Feng couldn't sense his true location at all.

“Pass the entrance examination of Yanjing University then he will introduce me to my fiancée? Granddaughter of Lin Clan's old man?”

Ye Feng recalled these words and was a little aggrieved. As someone who had come from the World of the Immortals and had cultivated in order to become an Immortal, when did he ever need to listen to others? In addition to that, who was this Lin Clan's old man and his granddaughter?

Although he was unhappy, but right now, he really didn't have a choice but to do what the other party said, because the other party was clearly much stronger than his current self.

“Even if I leave home, there’s a high possibility that this old guy will find my trail..... it seems like I must increase my cultivation level as soon as possible, and gain a sufficient enough strength to protect myself, so for now, I need to follow a careful conduct and do as he says.”

Ye Feng slightly regretted in his heart because he wouldn’t be able to cultivate unbridled as he initially planned. And not just that, contrary to what he thought, in this world, there were many people who could pose a threat to him.

“Well for the time being, what’s the harm in listening to what this old man said?”

Ye Feng whispered in a soft voice.

It seemed that from the next day, he would be ensuring his own safety. He would enhance his cultivation and simultaneously ponder about how to get admitted into the Yanjing University.

There were three months left before the entrance examination of Yanjing University, and looking at his current grades, it was simply impossible for him to even dream about passing the entrance examination of Yanjing University. However, for the current Ye Feng, with the virtue of cultivation memory, it would be easy for him to pass the entrance test and get accepted in the Yanjing University.

.....

He spent the whole night on the Weiming Lakeside.

During the first half of the evening time, he relaxed his mind, took out a golden leaf grass, and swallowed it. Till midnight, he completely absorbed the Lingqi present in it and finally achieved the five-month cultivation!

This achievement was not worth mentioning compared to his past cultivation level, but cultivation was the thing that needed to be accumulated bit by bit. Once he had five-year cultivation, he could practice agility technique, then it would not be easy for his grandfather to catch him, and only then he would feel safe.

Late at night, he silently walked around on the Weiming Lakeside.

He was walking around searching for some spiders, ants and centipedes. He bought a bottle of mineral water, dumped half the water from the bottle, then finally put those bugs and a golden leaf grass inside the bottle and soaked them together.

Five-month cultivation allowed him to control his inner Zhen Qi very smoothly and easily, and soon in a place where no one was watching him, he compressed a dark and swarthy pill inside the mineral water bottle.

This was the poisonous pill he was going to use to control the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang to ensure his own safety and also to gain control over the influence of this gang in his hands.

But, just now he realized that he did not know where the general assembly of the Heavenly Serpent Gang actually took place, and thought of Ou B.

“That kid’s information network is quite broad, there’s a chance he might

know where I can find the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang. Moreover I also need to go to his house to look for antique goods. If there is any ancient jade Lingshi, then I can once again enhance my cultivation.”

Ye Feng had been busy all evening, first cultivating then refining a poison at the Weiming Lakeside, so early in the morning he went to a hotel in order to rest for a while.

.....

At this time, early in the morning, at Ye Feng’s residence, outside the residential villa of Ye Feng in the Qingfeng Park, three goons were waiting all night. They were the same three goons who had been beaten by Ye Feng yesterday at the school gate.

“It’s really bad luck, damn. We waited all night and that guy didn’t come back to his villa.”

The tall and thin goon said, and even now, his balls were still in pain, but fortunately, yesterday when he went to the hospital, the doctor said that the injury was not a big deal.

However, right now, they did not come looking for trouble with Ye Feng, but the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang was very much impressed with the ruthlessness of Ye Feng and ordered these three men to personally go over to his house and discuss the matter of inviting him to join the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“This boy has quite an impressive luck. Brother Tie took a fancy to him just by looking at his aggression and ruthlessness.”

Another goon enviously said.

“If you are also so ruthless like him, then Brother Tie will certainly take a fancy to you as well.”

Finally, the third goon with a cigarette in his mouth helplessly said.

How could they ever expect a trivial high school student to actually fight so ruthlessly? No wonder Brother Lian Tie had his face smashed by a half-brick, because, Ye Feng was definitely not an ordinary guy as they thought.

They were waiting outside the Qingfeng Park but Ye Feng didn't come back home.

“First, let's report to Brother Tie, then we will find a place to sleep for a while and later we will go to the Yan High School to look for him.”

Their leader, the tall goon, made the decision and took out his cell phone.

.....

Ye Feng slept until noon and when he woke up, he discovered that last night, he forgot to switch on his cell phone after picking it up from the table in the interrogation room.

He switched on his cell phone, only to find a lot of unread messages and missed calls, many of which were from Ou B. He got many voice mails from Ou B,

who was scolding and yelling at him, convincing him that he should not go astray, and must never fall so low as to actually visit a prostitute. Once grasped in the tight clutches of prostitution, he would have a very dark future ahead. From now on, his life would be destroyed and he would lose everything and so on.....

Ye Feng didn't know whether to laugh or cry because it seemed that rumors about him had already spread throughout the Yan High School.

As for who spread these rumors, there was also no need to ask. Except the perpetrator, Tian Youliang, who else would know about these things?

.....

Chapter 13 – Tail incident

Ye Feng walked out of the hotel then went to a shop and bought something for lunch. After eating, he walked towards school.

In the afternoon, he arrived at Yan High School during the lunch break, before afternoon classes were going to start. He entered a third year classroom and the whole noisy classroom suddenly silenced down and a pin drop silence spread in the class.

More than fifty pairs of eyes started staring at Ye Feng.

“Small bee!” (NT: Small bee is Ye Feng’s nickname used only by Ou B)

Ou B was the first to react. He pounded his hands on the table and stood up and his face immediately lighted up with a happy expression spread all over his face.

Right now, in the classroom, others also reacted and were suspiciously staring at Ye Feng, whispering to each other.

“What’s going on, didn’t Tian Youliang say that he has been arrested for visiting a prostitute?”

“I don’t know, but he did not come in the morning, so it should be true right?”

On a front row seat, Su Menghan was preparing to have lunch when she looked up and saw Ye Feng and her water filled eyes opened widely and an

incredible look appeared on her face.

He was arrested for having prostitution charges on him then how did he come out so quickly?

What Tian Youliang said was a lie? Well it could be, after all, she was aware of what kind of guy Tian Youliang actually was, so how could she believe the news circulated by him?

Su Menghan turned back and looked at Tian Youliang sitting next to the window and saw that there was a startled look on his face as well while he was staring at Ye Feng. He just never expected the sudden appearance of Ye Feng in the classroom.

Last night after Ye Feng was released from the police station, Chief Liu Ju informed Su Xinchang and his own boss, but as far as Tian Youliang's side was concerned, he certainly didn't bother to inform them. As for that aquiline-nosed police man, Zhang Guocai, because of this matter, he was suspended for one week along with inspection put on him, so how could he even dare to inform Boss Tian?

Thus, until now, Tian Youliang thought that Ye Feng had been detained for more than ten days and spread the news. He did not spare any effort in spreading this news throughout the school, and by now, almost everyone in the school knew that a high school boy named Ye Feng was involved in prostitution and had been arrested and detained for 10 days.

“You how.....”

Tian Youliang pointed at Ye Feng and said while somewhat stuttering.

“I how?”

Ye Feng lightly smiled as if secretly brewing something.

He would certainly not let off Tian Youliang so easily without teaching him a lesson.

Originally, Ye Feng didn't mind a small fry like Tian Youliang, but last night because of this small fry, he had to suffer a lot. If Ye Feng didn't teach him a lesson now then he would certainly feel sorry for himself.

“Don't come close!”

Seeing Ye Feng walking towards him, Tian Youliang could not help but think of the scene from yesterday morning when the two punks were sent flying by Ye Feng, and was scared that he would face the same misfortune.

“I feel too lazy to deal with you.”

Ye Feng smiled and shook his head, but at the same time, while facing Tian Youliang, he secretly released Zhen Qi from his body, and he did it so covertly that nobody discovered this action.

At this point, the boy seated in the seat next to Tian Youliang was suddenly taken aback and shouted while pointing towards his ass: “Tian Youliang, when did you grow such a long tail?”

“Tail?”

Tian Youliang also felt strange and turned his head back to have a look, but he actually saw that a long and fluffy tail had grown out from his butt. The tail looked like the tail of a black dog, was flinging from one side to another, and was almost 6-7 inches long.

“What!!!”

A scream immediately came out from the mouth of Tian Youliang.

He had a tail!

What was going on?

How could he possibly have a tail?

Everyone’s attention that was originally on Ye Feng was now diverted towards Tian Youliang’s long black tail. Their eyes were as if glued to the tail on Tian Youliang’s butt, and sure enough, this long and black-furry tail looked real as it was swaying.

“Wow, tail!”

“So amazing!”

In the classroom, the screams resounded and regardless of whether it was boys or girls, all of them were pointing towards Tian Youliang's tail. There were people who pulled out their cell phones and shot down this marvelous scene.

Two students next to Tian Youliang could not help but reached out and touched the tail and found out that it was a real tail, long and fluffy, but they couldn't figure out how he suddenly grew a tail?

Seeing that everyone was trying to touch his tail, Tian Youliang panicked and ran out of the classroom while miserably bawling, and the long black tail was swaying conspicuously behind him when he was running desperately in random directions.

Seeing this, Ye Feng laughed.

Compared to his prostitute incident, this incident about a tail mysteriously appearing on Tian Youliang's butt was clearly more attractive and drawing a lot of attention. He believed that soon, when the news about this tail incident would spread, the prostitute incident would be completely overshadowed by the tail incident throughout the Yan High School.

In fact, it was just a small trick to shift the attention from him onto Tian Youliang.

With his current five months of cultivation, he had been able to cast an Immortal technique called "camouflage" by condensing Zhen Qi and attaching it to Tian Youliang's ass to create a tail. And doing so was not at all a difficult thing for him.

If his cultivation was profound then he could also use the same Immortal technique to change his external appearance, then he could easily take the appearances of others or even create illusions to trap the enemy.

Ye Feng's cultivation was now at five months level and this was enough to easily congeal a tail.

The tail was not an illusion, it was real, and even if someone would reach out to touch it, they would get a fluffy feeling. But it was just condensed Zhen Qi and would disappear in few minutes.

However, a few minutes were enough.

At least long enough for the news about this tail incident to spread throughout the campus, enough to cover up the news of Ye Feng's involvement in prostitution. Moreover, Ye Feng had safely returned to school, looked full of energy, nothing indicated that he had been arrested.

"Damn, Small bee, just what's going on?"

When Ye Feng returned to his seat, Ou B immediately came over and sat in the adjacent seat and asked in a surprised manner.

Their president suddenly grew a tail, everyone was simply bewildered!

"I don't know, perhaps it's a punishment for his evil deeds?"

Ye Feng certainly would not say that it was his doing.

“Amazing, it’s truly mysterious.”

Not just Ou B, all of the students inside the classroom were boiling up, chattering with each other.

Ye Feng was actually a bit afraid that when the news about this incident would spread out, even if there were martial arts experts in this world, but Immortal techniques certainly wouldn’t exist in this world. There was a chance that they would start to suspect him.

Even Su Menghan’s face was full of surprise, with her attention completely fixated on Tian Youliang’s tail, and looking at the tail swaying up and down, left and right, she seemed to be totally taken aback.

After a long time, Ou B calmed down then suddenly thought of something and patted on Ye Feng shoulder: “Small Bee, what actually happened last night? I really thought that you have been arrested.”

Regarding this issue, Ye Feng had already prepared an excuse: “I went to see Grandpa.”

He did not deny being arrested but also said the fact.

“That’s good well, what happened to that young girl?”

Ou B shifted the conversation to the matter that he was most concerned about.

“Young girl?”

Ye Feng could not bear wanting to punch him. Even now, this guy was still thinking about that last evening’s pretty girl.

Ou B continued to think about her after seeing her last evening, but Ye Feng simply didn’t care. Just the thought of that maiden caused a dull feeling of pain in his chest. He decided that someday, he would definitely return the favor for that kick.

The entire time during lunch break, the atmosphere was lively and everyone was talking about Tian Youliang’s tail nonstop. And the news about his tail quickly spread throughout the school.

As the classes were soon going to start, Ye Feng felt a burst of fragrance next to him and tilted his head to look on his side. He saw that Su Menghan stood next to him and she bitterly said: “Ye Feng, you come out with me.”

“What?”

Ye Feng looked somewhat strangely at her. He always thought that this Xiaohua hated him then why would she suddenly take the initiative and come to him?

.....

Chapter 14 – Su Menghan’s request

“You want to talk to Small bee!”

When Ou B saw that Su Menghan wanted to talk to Ye Feng, he suddenly jumped up.

Ye Feng pressed him back to his seat then stood up and said to Su Menghan: “Whatever it is, say it here.”

“You won’t dare to come out?”

Su Menghan said bitterly then extended her hand and grabbed Ye Feng’s wrist and walked out of classroom while pulling him with her.

Ye Feng now had a cultivation of five months and possessed considerable physical strength but when he saw Su Menghan desperately trying to drag him out of the class along with her, he immediately understood that something must have happened and decided to play along.

Listening to her for once wouldn’t harm him anyway.

As soon as they went of the class, everyone in the class once again started talking among themselves. What was this all about, the school’s number one beauty actually took the initiative and approached Ye Feng, and not just that, she also held his hand and ran out?

What were they going to talk about?

Today, too many news exploded and spread throughout the Yan High School! First about Ye Feng's involvement in prostitution and getting arrested, which was shocking enough, followed by Tian Youliang actually growing a dog's tail, and then everyone's favorite Xiaohua, Su Menghan, actually took the initiative and pulled Ye Feng out of the classroom to talk about something!

Gossips were burning like fire and spreading everywhere. A group of people wanted to eavesdrop on Su Menghan and Ye Feng but their attempt failed when they saw the two people going all the way to the playground. The students who wanted to eavesdrop were immediately disappointed, because it was obvious they couldn't possibly follow all the way to the playground to eavesdrop.

They still remembered the scene from yesterday morning when Ye Feng had sent the two goons flying near the school gate and they certainly didn't want to face the same thing.

Su Menghan and Ye Feng finally arrived in the playground.

It was a beautiful sunny afternoon and there was no one in the playground, so it was the most appropriate place to talk.

"Well, what do you want to talk about?"

Ye Feng walked as he asked.

"I....."

Su Menghan looked at Ye Feng, the boy who had been her neighbor for a long time, but she was still not much familiar with him, and this was the first time she discovered that he was very handsome.

She shook her head because now was not the time to think about those things. She slightly hesitated then tilted her head to one side in order to avoid direct eye contact with him and said: "I brought you here to tell you that I am ready to give you a chance to pursue me, my dad is no longer against it, what do you say?"

As these words came out of her mouth, Ye Feng suddenly smiled.

He carefully sized up the school Xiaohua standing in front of him, perfect oval face, delicate features, quite an exquisite body, and in just one look, one could say that she was incomparably attractive.

If she said the same thing to other boys of Yan High School, they would certainly be overjoyed and would hastily agree without waiting even for a second. Unfortunately, she was not facing just any boy, she was facing Ye Feng.

"Sorry, I don't have any interest in you."

Ye Feng chuckled, shook his head and turned around to leave.

When Su Menghan heard his reply, she could not help but gawked for a moment, until Ye Feng turned away, she finally responded: "Hello!"

She grabbed Ye Feng's arm and stopped him from leaving. Just what was this ridiculous situation and that too when she finally reached an agreement with her father, how could she allow this thing to go wrong at such a critical time?

Su Menghan thought in her heart, didn't it seem as if she was forcing Ye Feng to pursue her? This was really too outrageous!

"Just come with me on a trip to Langfang, don't you want to?"

She stated her true purpose.

Langfang was a city located in the southeastern direction of Yanjing city and not far away. If she only wanted him to accompany her on a trip, then it was not a big deal, at least for other boys who would absolutely agree without hesitation.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng didn't have time to accompany her on a trip. What a joke, he's really wasn't interested in her then why must he accompany her on a trip?

"You will still have to find someone else."

Ye Feng shook his head and shook off her hand and walked away. He must hurry back and discuss with Ou B about going to his house to find antique goods.

Su Menghan saw him walking away and angrily stamped her foot.

This Ye Feng, it was so hard to understand what he was actually thinking!

She had only one favorable impression of him when he rescued her in the bar street from the members of Heavenly serpent gang, other than that, he was totally annoying.

If not necessary, she would never approach one step near Ye Feng, let alone taking the initiative to talk to him. But last night, Su Xinchang made an agreement with her that as long as she maintained a good relationship with Ye Feng, then he would allow her to go to Langfang to visit her grandmother.

The woman whom Su Xinchang remarried to was a member of Xie Clan, and was a very caustic, narrow-minded and mean person and didn't like Su Menghan one bit. At the time of marriage, she had put forwards a condition in front of Su Xinchang that if he wanted Su Menghan to stay with him, then she would never go back to see anyone from her maternal family.

Su Xinchang also thought that if his daughter went back to her maternal home then her lifestyle would certainly be inferior to her current lifestyle and therefore promised his second wife that he wouldn't allow Su Menghan to go her maternal home in Langfang, isolating her from the family of her deceased mother.

This was main cause of friction between Su Menghan and her father.

This time, Su Xinchang finally made some concessions and allowed her to finally go back to see her grandmother, but the condition was that Ye Feng would also accompany her. How could she be willing to let go of this opportunity?

Su Menghan bitterly returned to the classroom and stared at Ye Feng then went back to her seat. Ignoring the gazes and gossips of other students, she began to think about countermeasures.

"Small bee, what did she talk about? I thought that she wants to eat you whole. Don't tell me that she is jealous because she believes that you visited a

prostitute.....”

Ou B sat beside Ye Feng and started an endless gossiping session.

“Do not talk nonsense. She wants me to accompany her on a trip to Langfang, but I don’t have spare time for that.”

Ye Feng shook his head and said as if he didn’t care.

“Accompany her on a trip to Langfang?”

Ou B felt somewhat strange about this. He was naturally an outsider and didn’t know about her family circumstances so only shook his head and didn’t say anything.

He and Ye Feng were childhood buddies and Ye Feng certainly wouldn’t lie to him.

Evening classes ended.

Ye Feng decided to go to Ou B’s house and search for antique treasures which might contain sufficient Lingqi so as to enhance his cultivation as soon as possible.

In order to avoid trouble, the two friends ran out of classroom right after the class ended. Su Menghan was hanging far behind and couldn’t keep up and looked at them angrily and bitterly stamped her foot, while they ran out of the school.

Henceforth, a rumor spread throughout the Yan High School: Xiaohua Su Menghan had developed feelings for a guy called Ye Feng!

Regarding this rumor, Su Menghan naturally didn't mind. She thought that her father would be so happy once this rumor would reach his ears, and then perhaps she might not need that Ye Feng to accompany her when she would go to visit her grandmother. Anyway the rumor was not true, so why would she care?

Ye Feng and Ou B came running out of the school and saw three familiar fellows and abruptly stopped.

"Last time was enough for you guys?"

Ye Feng looked at the familiar three goons of Heavenly serpent gang and said loudly in a threatening manner.

Heavenly serpent gang was certainly persistent. But he could use this chance to make use of the golden leaf grass poison present in a small medicine bottle in his pocket.

Ye Feng had planned to first visit Ou B's house, then he would think about this Heavenly serpent gang matter.

Ye Feng and three goons of Heavenly serpent gang once again confronted each other near the school gate and the scene attracted the attention of many people who were expecting for this to happen sooner or later.

But the next scene totally stunned them all.

They saw that the three goons arrived in front of Ye Feng and shouted in unison: “Elder Brother Ye!”

.....

Translator Changed to:

<https://lastvoicetranslator.wordpress.com/>

to

<http://novelsnao.com/category/gsi/>

Chapter -15 Brother Tie admires you

The three goons of Heavenly Serpent gang showed up suddenly that stunned the surrounding people.

Elder brother Ye?

Could it be that the last beating had taught them a lesson and unexpectedly turned them docile?

School gate security guard was in shock. Didn't they say that these three goons of Heavenly Serpent Gang were very aggressive and domineering? Who could dare to provoke them? But for some reason, after getting all beaten up by a student, the other party was still calling him 'Elder brother'?

Ye Feng was also in surprise for a moment after hearing this: "Playing tricks on me?"

"Elder Brother Ye, our boss, Brother Tie, appreciates you very much and wants to invite you to join our Heavenly Serpent Gang."

Although, their leader, that thin and tall goon, called him 'Elder Brother' but his attitude wasn't very respectful, he was still very arrogant and ill mannered: "As you know, our Heavenly Serpent Gang holds a very powerful position in this area, so by joining our gang, you will also become one of us."

Standing behind the thin and tall goon, those other two goons were present looking at Ye Feng with envy, jealousy and hatred. Obviously they called him

‘Elder Brother’ not because they wanted to, but they were commanded by their boss brother Tie to do so. If not done properly as instructed, their fate would definitely be miserable.

Fortunately, even if they were unable to complete the task of bringing Ye Feng earlier, as directed by Brother Tie, they still weren’t punished by him instead he had given all of the required medical expenses to them, making them dead set on being the members of the Heavenly Serpent gang.

“Hey Small bee” Ou B was in a state of shock and said while pulling the clothes of Ye Feng: “Probably it is worth giving a try?”

Actually, in Ou B’s opinion, being invited to the Heavenly Serpent Gang was already a bit too much. Not to mention, even after getting badly beaten up by Ye Feng, the other party still gave him an offer to join their gang, which was not the kind of treatment a normal human being could enjoy.

If he came to know that Ye Feng had also hit the face of Brother Tie’s younger brother with a brick then his reaction could be imagined.

Just when the surrounding people were very much expecting that Ye Feng would agree and would go with them to meet their boss, Brother Tie, suddenly the whole situation took a huge turn.

Ye Feng lifted his foot and once again kicked between the two legs of that thin and tall goon and whispered “To show up like this unexpectedly in order to invite me and on top of that with such an annoying attitude, perhaps, you could have shown a little sincerity?”

It was a strong kick and when the tall and thin goon received the kick, he could only get enough time to scream pitifully and fainted immediately on the spot because of the severe pain.

At present, Ye Feng had five months of cultivation and his strength compared with his strength from yesterday morning had increased tremendously!

Ye Feng was aiming to control the entire Heavenly Serpent Gang, so how could he possibly go and work under that Brother Tie? One must know that Brother Tie was merely a small gang leader but Ye Feng's target was the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Ye Feng's action once again shocked the students present on the scene.

They looked at Ye Feng with their eyes wide open in astonishment. Was this violence actually needed? Those three men came here just to invite him to join the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but he actually kicked one of them so violently, wasn't he afraid that they would retaliate? That thin and tall goon was really pitiful, got kicked in his balls, and not just once but twice, this could be said as world's ultimate punishment.

"This boy is really daring!"

The remaining two goons looked at him with anger flashing in their eyes. This Ye Feng was unable to discriminate between good and evil, wasn't he aware of the influence of Heavenly Serpent Gang?

"If you guys want to invite me to your gang, then your boss, Brother Tie, will have to come personally to invite me."

Ye Feng said this in a casual manner, and just then, he kicked the other two goons one after another, making them fall on the ground crying in pain, after that, he left the school gate along with Ou B.

Everyone at the school gate saw the whole incident, how those three goons were kicked by Ye Feng and then how he left the school as if nothing happened and a thought suddenly appeared in their hearts: Recently, this Ye Feng had suddenly become quite Niubi. He was no longer that kid who used to play online games all the time!

Soon after they left, Su Menghan ran up to the school gate to catch them, but unfortunately, they had already gone far away which made her to bitterly stamp her foot on the ground. Then she saw those three goons on the ground, and suddenly, she made a guess about what must have happened here few minutes ago and was a bit startled in her heart. She thought that this Ye Feng fellow had become more and more reckless nowadays, and if this went on, then sooner or later, he would get caught in another incident.

Su Menghan was a very smart girl and after seeing the sudden change in her father's attitude towards Ye Feng, it didn't take her long to understand that Ye Feng's family was definitely quite influential, and that must be the reason why he got quickly released just after getting arrested for visiting a prostitute.

However, Heavenly Serpent gang was an underworld organization and was counted among one of the top three big gangs of Yanjing city! If someone tried to provoke them then it didn't matter how much influential his family background actually was, it would not protect him from getting shot and dying.

.....

“Small Bee.....your elder brother thinks that wouldn't it be appropriate to go back and apologize to them?”

Ou B was following Ye Feng and the more he was trying to feel relieved, he was getting more restless while talking to Ye Feng.

“No harm”

Ye Feng shook his head: “Very soon I will completely resolve this matter regarding Heavenly Serpent Gang, but for now, going to your house is more important.”

Ou B almost collapsed after hearing this carefree response from Ye Feng.

Even though Ye Feng was in such a terrible situation, how could he still keep on thinking about his family's high-quality goods? Although Ou B accepted that his family really possessed some very high-quality goods, but after provoking those gangsters of Heavenly Serpent Gang, how could he possibly think about enjoyment.

Although Ye Feng said that one day he would certainly resolve this issue related to the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but it didn't convince Ou B one bit. Speaking of which, it might happen that someday, this gang could be picked up by the number one clan of Yanjing City named 'Lin Clan' to cooperate with them to deal with their personal matters, under that situation, how could Ye Feng possibly stand against the Heavenly Serpent Gang?

One must know that Lin Clan was the most powerful clan in the whole Yanjing

city in terms of power and influence. Ye Feng had an influential background too, but when compared to the influence of Lin Clan, it didn't stand a chance.

“Come on, you shouldn't even think about dealing with the joint forces of both Heavenly Serpent Gang and Lin Clan.”

Ou B shook his head.

“Lin Clan?”

Ye Feng felt something very strange about it.

It reminded him that last night at Weiming Lake, his grandfather told him that he would introduce Ye Feng to the “granddaughter of the old man from Lin Clan” could it be that this was the same Lin Clan his grandfather was talking about?

Then suddenly, a second thought appeared in his mind that in China, there were several Lin Clans, so it was not such a big deal.

“Right, this Lin Clan is the first clan of Yanjing city and it is so powerful that its influence has proliferated into the three major fields, military, business and government.”

Ou B explained this then it seemed like he was lost in his thoughts and a yearning expression appeared on his face: “Anyway, I once saw a very beautiful woman of Lin Clan, ah I was really fortunate, she was such a beauty, very attractive, that figure, that face.....”

“Well, we have finally arrived at your house.”

Ye Feng patted his shoulder and interrupted his imagination.

Ye Feng was not at all interested in hearing about some beauty of Lin Clan. It was very clear in his mind that whether it was the World of the Immortals or the Earth, at both places, strength was the most important thing. Without strength, how could you even stand confidently in front of a beautiful woman?

At this time, “the Oushi antique store” appeared in front of them. It was located in a street not far from the Yanshan High school.

“Dad, I am back.”

Ye Feng had interrupted Ou B’s beautiful dream, that was why he was not in a great mood, but he still shouted and ran inside the antique store. He and his father usually lived in this place.

“You wait here, I will go get something for you to have a look, oh right, what do you want to see, antiques from Europe and America, or Japan or South Korea?”

Ou B ran inside while asking.

“I am looking for some antiques, so go talk to your father.”

Ye Feng shook his head because he already knew that Ou B’s father was an

unscrupulous businessman, in fact, he had come here prepared to be butchered.

“Boy, are you looking to buy some antiques?”

Ou B heard what his father said to Ye Feng and suddenly stopped then turned his head with a stunned look on his face.

He remembered that Ye Feng never had any interest in antiques and his mind was full of games! Over these last two days, something was not right with him. He didn't even hear Ye Feng talking about games during this time.

Moreover, the price of the antiques was usually very high, especially in his family shop, because they mostly kept genuine things!

How could Ye Feng possibly afford to buy them?

Chapter – 16 Lin Clan's Sanshao

Not after a while, Ye Feng entered into the shop and saw Ou B's dad, Ou A.

He looked like an astute middle-aged man, a pair of his fox-like eyes was shining like a profiteer, clad in a very ordinary dress short sleeved shirt and grey trousers, and there were 7-8 points which clearly showed the resemblance between him and Ou B.

To be honest, Ye Feng very much admired this family considering the fact that they had managed to gain such a wonderful reputation in just two generations.....

“You said that you are looking for some good antiques?”

Ou A was also a bit surprised like Ou B when he came to know about the purpose of Ye Feng coming to his antique store.

“Right.”

Ye Feng nodded his head then began to move forward to look around the store. Lobby of the shop was not very large and was stocked up with several porcelain antiques, each with ornamental value.

The moment he entered the shop lobby, he immediately started to check the temperature of his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. Since the last time when he encountered that oval faced young girl, he was aware that his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring had a basic function – treasure hunt.

When the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring would come in contact with the Lingqi then it would start to gradually emit heat, just like previous time during the golden leaf grass incident.

“Why do you want to buy antique goods?”

Ou A asked this straightforwardly, a high school student buying antiques, already it was not normal, not to mention he already knew that Ye Feng was not very rich, rather he was very poor, sometimes he used to skip classes to go to internet cafe, and for this, he usually asked Ou B to lend him money.

“Anyway, don’t stand idle and keep looking.”

Ye Feng certainly would not say that he came here looking for a Lingqi rich object, he smiled and said: “Consider that I want to buy something that strengthens body, keeps it healthy, and prolongs the life.”

His words did not lie, moreover there were indeed a good number of high-quality ancient jade items that held the function of strengthening the body and prolonging the life, so Ou A didn’t had any suspicions at what he said.

“Come inside, there are no good stuffs outside, you are my son’s classmate, I will not sham you.”

Saying this, Ou A guided him towards the inner hall.

This antique shop was divided into two halls, one was the lobby where majority

of the things were of ornamental value, but their actual value was not as high as they appeared to be, it was because even if a customer didn't understand their value and broke them accidentally then it wouldn't be a huge loss.

As for the inner hall, most of the things were very expensive. Here things were perhaps not very attractive and pretty, but they were absolutely priceless!

Ou B was following Ye Feng and whispered: "Hey Small Bee....what do you actually want to buy?"

It could be said that previous Ye Feng never used to have much money on his hand, even if he got something out of some illegal business, it was impossible for him to actually spend it in buying antiques! According to previous Ye Feng's temperament, as long as he possessed wealth, he would waste it only on online games.

"Well, I haven't thought about it, it's for my grandfather."

Ye Feng noticed that Ou B was unwilling to give up so he used his grandfather as a shield to escape from his questions.

And it really became a very nice excuse, after that, Ou B didn't ask any questions, rather he started to sell things to Ye Feng: "Since you want to buy something for your grandfather then look at this ancient Jade item, if worn by an old person like your grandfather then it will really give a very good effect on his health."

Ye Feng smiled a bit then shook his head, the environment was quite gloomy, but the hall was very spacious, soon he got attracted by the dazzling antique

products.

Oushi antique shop was indeed very famous in Yanjing city, there were lots of antique goods here making it worthy of its fame. Ye Feng looked around casually and saw lots of things of some obvious eras, and were being sold at thousands or hundreds of thousands or even more.

Of course, this was just a small antique shop and could not be compared with those large antique malls. Those large antique shops held antiques that were worth more than one million, Ou A couldn't place such high-valued things here in his small shop.

"Little Ou, you introduce the antiques to him."

At this time, Ou A raised his head and looked at a relatively old clock on the wall: "I have to receive an honourable guest, hey."

There was a very deceitful and self-satisfied look on his face making it obvious that the identity of this honoured visitor was very extraordinary.

"Go, I am more than enough for this."

Ou B pulled Ye Feng without paying attention to Ou A who hurriedly went outside, instead, he started introducing things to Ye Feng one by one that were placed there in the hall. Ye Feng looked at his eyes and chuckled in his heart, this boy grew up into a profiteer absolutely like his father.

Ye Feng listened to the introductions being given by Ou B, while paying attention to the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, but it hadn't responded at all

throughout the time. After a while, they came in front of a counter, and inside, there was a delicate white jade yin yang fish which seemed quite extraordinary.

“Small Bee, this thing is very incredible and it’s actually a new good that arrived just a while ago.”

Seeing this item, Ou B’s mood suddenly picked up pace and he immediately started to give explanation about it, “It has a history of more than 1000 years. Moreover the material quality is insightful, excellent workmanship, and above all, it was deeply buried in the soil for over 1000 years but look how perfectly preserved it looks, there is not a slightest defect.....”

“What’s the cost for this one?”

Ye Feng interrupted his endless explanation in a somewhat ridiculous way.

“The price should not be a problem.”

Ou B continued to grin and said: “The main point is that nowadays this stuff has become very popular among old people and it is being worn a lot nowadays and it is best suited for them, therefore if you want to buy it for your grandfather, buy it absolutely without any doubt, even if you want to send it as a gift to someone, then also go for it.”

“What’s the cost?”

Ye Feng asked again.

“Well, dad once said that this thing could be worth 150,000, but if you really want to buy it, since we are friends so considering it, it can be priced cheaper for you...”

Ou B said in a somewhat awkward manner.

He was considering that once he would introduce such an expensive item to Ye Feng, he would finally get the response from Ye Feng that he did not have enough money. Since their childhood, for ten years, he had known about the situation of Ye Feng that he was actually quite poor, and living in a villa was only for show.

“So expensive? There are too many dark spots on it.”

Ye Feng gave a surprised look and thought that didn't selling this type of damaged item for 150,000 seem too deceptive?

Certainly he was not at all interested in buying this white jade yin yang fish, but just now, he wanted to negotiate the price of this thing in order to mentally prepare himself. His Ancient Dragon Sword Ring didn't react in front of this white jade fish besides he too didn't feel any significant Lingqi around it, so he lost interest.

Seeing Ye Feng like this, Ou B felt somewhat helpless as he already knew that this was the case.

Just when he was about to give an explanation, suddenly, they heard a despising laughter coming from the outer hall: “Dislike expensive things? Good things are certainly going to be expensive. Boss, if there is any good stuff to

introduce then you do it freely because as long as the stuff is good, money is not the issue!”

Who was so arrogant?

Ou B and Ye Feng both of them simultaneously turned their heads and saw a person accompanied by Ou A. He was wearing designer clothes, branded sunglasses, and on his left wrist, he was wearing a 5002 series of Patek Philippe wrist watch. Everything was exhibiting his honoured status.

Only the value of this watch was more than ten million CNY! (CNY is Chinese Yuan)

“Ha, ha, indeed, taking the broad view of the whole Yanjing city, who doesn’t know about the extravagance of Lin Clan’s Sanshao?” (Sanshao means third son)

Next to that youth, Ou A was standing and showing the look of an unscrupulous businessman and said with a smile: “Since an old friend has introduced Sanshao to my shop, so I can’t disappoint you can I?”

“That is natural.”

The so-called Lin Clan’s Sanshao nodded and gave a joyful smile: “Well, I don’t have much time to spend, take your best stuff out.”

“No problem Sanshao, first come and have a look at this white jade yin yang fish, it has been freshly unearthed and was found in the ruins of a Shang Dynasty ancient tomb, dating back to nearly five thousand years in the history.....”

Ou A smiled, his eyes narrowed and took a crescent moon shape and he led Lin Clan's Sanshao towards the place where Ye Feng and Ou B were standing.

Chapter – 17 Spirit stone

Did this Lin Clan's Sanshao actually belong to the number one clan of Yanjing city?

Ye Feng thought, looking at the sinister smile of Ou A, he knew that something was going on in his mind. He felt that Ou B wouldn't deceive him, then in that case, this white jade fish had a history of over 1000 years, but his father said over 5000 years.

Could it be that Ou A was planning to deceive Lin Clan's Sanshao?

"Half a month later, it's my grandfather's 70th birthday. In order to make him happy, even if it costs more money, that won't be a problem."

Lin Clan's Sanshao said this with full of arrogance then followed Ou A.

He looked at Ye Feng with a despising look in his eyes, because at present, his eyes were selfishly focussing on that white jade yin yang fish that looked really beautiful and attractive!

Obviously, the way he was looking at that thing with was not at all similar to the way Ye Feng was looking at it.

Ou B took advantage of this situation and pulled Ye Feng away and ran to the side, then whispered: "Small Bee, you must not mess with this Sanshao of Lin Clan, let's go somewhere else to take a look at other things."

Ye Feng nodded and followed him.

He certainly didn't think that he shouldn't mess with Lin Clan's Sanshao, but there was no need to do that, or else it would sound very impolite, to be honest he actually didn't care about the other party's identity or status one bit.

"His name is Lin Xiuwen. Remember what I said before about the Lin Clan of Yanjing City, he is ranked third among this generation of males of Lin clan."

Far away, Ou B started giving introduction of Lin Clan's Sanshao. Ye Feng was only interested in playing online games and did not know about these matters, but fortunately, under the influence of his father, Ou B had come to know a lot about the upper level clans and influences of Yanjing city.

"He is the first year student of Yanshan University, his grandfather loves him the most, normally he is a very arrogant and domineering person, there is almost not a single person in the entire Yanjing city who dares to provoke him....."

While giving details about the Lin Clan's Sanshao, Ou B was thinking, was it a good thing to give introduction about Lin Clan's Sanshao to Ye Feng?

At this time, both of them came to a corner, Ye Feng suddenly felt that the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring slightly heated up and started emitting warm rays of light, his heart trembled with excitement and he hurriedly started looking around.

"Small bee, what's wrong with you?"

Ou B noticed that something was strange, so he hastily asked.

Ye Feng didn't respond, he kept on following the instruction given by the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, and his eyes moved towards the corner of the hall, a large amount of junk goods were piled up there, apparently they were some unvalued and totally neglected goods.

Among them, there was a half fist-sized dark green stone that attracted the attention of Ye Feng.

Lingshi! (Spirit stone)

Unfortunately, there was only a half piece of it.

Ye Feng secretly sighed in his heart, it was such a pity then he moved forward to pick up that half piece of green stone and started sizing it up carefully.

"Don't tell me you like this thing?"

Ou B looked at it in a strange manner then walked up to it and stated giving the introduction: "This thing came together with that white jade yin yang fish. Although it is very old, but only half of it could be recovered, so I don't have any idea what this thing is, even though I have already cleaned up this place, it is still here."

"Since it is a useless thing, so might as well give it to me, right?"

Ye Feng tentatively asked.

If he had a chance to save money then he naturally must try to save, in any case, Ou B didn't know anything about this green stone.

Spirit stones were considered as rare practice resources in the world of cultivation and their first time use could considerably promote cultivation level. If used again, then it would only help in fast recovery of Xuan qi, but it was equally precious, because during the fighting, if Xuan qi was exhausted then presence of spirit stones could help a lot.

In the World of the Immortals, many big schools had started giving little amounts of spirit stones to some core disciples to help them with the initial phase in enhancement of their cultivation. As for this world's Ye Feng, this treatment never happened.

“Unfortunately, this is only half of a spirit stone.”

Ye Feng heaved a sigh inside his heart, this remaining half piece would begin to lose its Lingqi very soon, in fact, now, this half piece of spirit stone contained only one third of its total Lingqi.

“Give it to you? Then I think I will be killed by my father.”

Ou B refused him without any hesitation but his eyeball revolved once and shifted towards Ye Feng: “How much money do you have, might as well give it to me, let's not haggle over it, or I will have to talk to dad regarding the pricing for this stone.”

Profiteers, two generations of profiteers!

Ye Feng just wanted to beat him up to death, however he had a cheque of 200,000 which he really wished to throw away, with that cheque he could easily buy that whole white jade yin yang fish, moreover, it was needless to say that an ordinary person wouldn't pay even a single penny for this half piece of green stone.

"Only two hundred, I would like to buy it."

Ye Feng pulled out the last 200 from his trouser's pocket. It was given to him by his grandfather as this month's living expense. Actually this month, he had received a lot of living expenses, but unfortunately, when he opened the room after arriving in this world, there only remained 200 to spend.

"What the hell!"

Ou B saw that and scolded him: "Your grandfather makes you buy antiques and gives only 200 to spend?"

"I don't have any other option, or else why would I choose this stuff? It looks so ugly."

Ye Feng shrugged. Ou B had inherited his father's profiteering traits, but it was quite clear that Ye Feng was not bad either!

"Well alright, let's finalize the deal for 200."

Ou B reluctantly nodded then took two bank bills from Ye Feng. Although he grew up with Ye Feng and their relationship was very strong, but his father had taught him since his childhood that when money was involved, even if he was

dealing with his own blood related brother, he couldn't be careless and must clear the accounts properly!

Ye Feng kept that half piece of green stone in his pocket. Right now, he was quite impatient to go back quickly and absorb this half piece of spirit stone.

Although this remaining half piece contained just one third of original Lingqi content, but if it could be absorbed completely, he would be able to achieve one year worth of cultivation! By that time, he would barely be able to use agility martial arts and while facing firearms, probably, he would be able to barely escape the bullets.

In order to deal with the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, he certainly needed higher level of cultivation. The higher level cultivation was the better for his safety and survival.

“Then I should leave.”

Now that the deal was done, Ye Feng wanted to leave right away.

“I'll see you off.”

Ou B nodded.

They came to the lobby and found Lin Xiuwen had completed selecting things and was about to leave, only leaving behind a middle-aged attendant to swipe the card to pay money, another young attendant was also there carrying two beautifully wrapped boxes and several bags that were hanging on his shoulders, it seemed like he was having a tough time carrying all those stuff.

“Are all of these things purchased by Lin Xiuwen?”

Ye Feng looked at those things and thought, this Sanshao had actually purchased so many things, he was just like the core disciples of those big schools in the World of the Immortals, moreover he was also paying money to carry these stuffs rather than carrying them himself, he just selected things and left first, leaving everything else entirely to his personal attendants.

“Well, one of them is a vase, be careful, don’t break it.”

After making payment, that middle aged personal servant turned back and lifted one side of that tall blue and white porcelain vase, although that young attendant was already carrying lots of things, but he tried to reluctantly carry other side of that half-man sized blue and white porcelain vase.

Unfortunately that young attendant was not very skilled, he lifted that half-man sized vase but he couldn’t maintain his balance, and suddenly, the whole vase fell on the ground!

At that moment, coincidentally, Ye Feng and Ou B happened to pass through.

“Be Careful!”

Ou A had just now received money and was also present there. He couldn’t help but shouted out loud.

Ou B did not react at all but Ye Feng subconsciously extended a hand to help in

holding that blue and white porcelain vase.

Bang!

The sound of something falling on the ground and breaking into pieces echoed immediately, but it was not the vase that shattered, but a box that was there on the shoulder of that young attendant and it had fallen down, it was that white jade yin yang fish that had broken into two halves in an instant.

“What happened?”

Hearing the sound, the middle-aged personal servant turned back hastily and came back quickly to the other side to see what happened.

“This..... I didn’t do anything, he is the one who broke this, he pushed me!”

That young attendant helplessly said all of a sudden. He was scared and sweating all over, but suddenly, he got an idea and pointed his finger towards Ye Feng.

.....

Chapter 18 Triple Compensation

Ye Feng coldly looked at that young attendant, but he did not speak anything, he just steadily placed that vase on the floor.

“What’s the matter?”

The middle aged personal servant came back and said aggressively in a threatening manner, he bent to pick up that white jade Yin Yang Fish that had fallen and broken into two halves, his complexion changed, he looked at Ye Feng and said: “Boy, do you know how big a trouble you have put yourself in? Didn’t you know that this stuff belongs to none other than the Sanshao of Lin Clan?”

“Damn, it is obvious that your own guy is the one who broke it!”

Ou B saw other party making false accusation, and all of a sudden, his blood started boiling with anger, he pointed at that young attendant and started scolding him.

If it were not Ye Feng who came out of his way to help him, then not only that white jade Yin Yang Fish would have broken into pieces, but that Vase wouldn’t have survived either. Because of all these things, that poor young attendant was extremely scared, and out of fear, he was frightened to the point of peeing in his pants, at this time, he knew only one thing to push the blame on someone else.

“Without even investigating this thing properly, it is unfair to accuse an innocent person like this.”

Ye Feng knitted his eyebrows and said.

“Accuse an innocent person you say? I tell you if this matter is not resolved today then no one will leave this place.”

Middle aged personal servant rolled up his sleeves, there was a bandit like expression on his face, he seemed very violent and fierce and it appeared from his action that he was ready to fight anytime.

Seeing this situation, Ou A hurriedly came over to smooth things over and said: “I will compensate for this loss! If Sanshao wants, he can go inside right away to select some other things and I won’t charge any money this time!”

At this time, Ou A was looking at them waiting for a reply, but these were the people of Lin Clan’s Sanshao, how could they be reasonable? Would they tell their boss the truth, the genuine reason? The right thing to do under such a situation was to quickly extend an offer to give compensation to the shopkeeper but that young attendant placed the blame on Ye Feng and continued staring at him.

The whole incident took place in Oushi Antique Store, he had no option but to consider Ye Feng or else the Lin Clan’s Sanshao would probably put Ye Feng to death in secret!

“It is not so easy, let’s see how our Sanshao plans to deal with this matter.”

Middle-aged personal servant gave out a cold humph then pulled out his phone and dialled a number. Lin Clan’s Sanshao had left the store already after selecting the desired things. So, there was no other option left except using

phone call to get in touch with him.

However, would Ye Feng allow himself being treated unjustly?

Seeing that the other party was being persistently unreasonable, Ye Feng moved forward, he wanted to beat up that middle aged personal servant, at this time, speaking nonsense with him was completely a waste of time, the only solution to this situation was a solid punch.

While on the other side, Ou B was already prepared to calm down the suddenly angered Ye Feng, seeing his violent form, he rushed towards him and pulled him back: “Small Bee, don’t be impulsive, just leave this matter to my Dad, don’t interfere.”

Ou A was also on his side, he patted Ye Feng’s shoulder to calm him down. Ye Feng looked into his eyes and saw care for him that moved his heart and decided to listen to him and not to act rashly.

“What a spoiled person you are. Not only have you broken our stuff but you also dare to fight back?”

That middle aged personal servant sneered, and at this time, the phone call got connected, and it did not take him too long to report the whole circumstance to the other side, and then got the reply from Lin Clan’s Sanshao.

“Triple compensation, then consider this matter as over.”

Hearing this, Ou A finally heaved a sigh of relief, it would be good as long as Lin Clan’s Sanshao didn’t investigate into this matter.

“Well, you guys are lucky today since Sanshao is in a good mood, otherwise this wouldn’t have been so simple.”

The middle aged personal servant hung up the phone then coldly glared at Ye Feng.

Ye Feng kept on watching everything from the sidelines, he still wanted to grab and smash him badly, but taking many aspects into consideration, he endured it after all hitting Lin clan’s people in the Oushi Antique Store would also involve Ou B into this matter as he was his close friend.

However, in his heart, Ye Feng had already created an impression of Lin Clan which was extremely bad, the middle aged personal servant thought that Ye Feng’s life had been saved, what he didn’t know that it was actually him who was spared by Ye Feng and this was just because Ye Feng looked into Ou A’s eyes and refrained from being violent.

“Triple compensation should be no problem.”

Ou A still had a smile on his face, and like before, he ran to the side to begin the process, not only he just finished the whole process very soon, but also helped them in carrying the other antiques to the white van standing outside, then they drove away.

“Uncle Ou, today, I would have made sure they crawled out of this shop.”

Ye Feng looked at the departing opposite party and said with a cold humph.

“Crawl my ass, if you had tried to be impulsive then back luck would have befallen you, not them.”

Ou B scolded him: “In the whole Yanjing city, who doesn’t know about the bad reputation of Lin clan’s Sanshao, if you dare to anger him then that means you are courting death! He would do anything to kill you!”

Ye Feng heard that but he wasn’t in the mood to give any explanation, he immediately cupped his hands and said to Ou A: “I have put Uncle Ou in trouble so this younger generation should better say goodbye now.”

“No need to be so anxious, why don’t you first have dinner with us before going?”

Ou A gave a very passionate invitation to him, his eyes were shining because he heard Ye Feng referring to himself as ‘younger generation’ while saying goodbye, which was definitely not the way modern people talked these days.

“No, it’s fine.....right, Uncle Ou, you paid triple compensation just now, how much did you pay?”

Ye Feng thought for a second then asked this.

“Not much, it was just three million.”

Ou A waved his hand casually, the air around him gave this feeling that the amount of three million was not worth mentioning at all.

Ye Feng's whole body got covered in cold sweat after hearing the amount of three million, Uncle Ou really was a big profiteer, he actually sold an item of 150,000 for one million, that Sanshao of Lin Clan was really a very foolish person, or maybe he simply had too much money that he didn't care? However, Uncle Ou really was quite courageous to actually defraud the Sanshao of Lin clan.

"Well Uncle Ou, now I owe you three million, I will definitely repay it in the future."

Ye Feng nodded and said, he was confident that as per his ability, he would certainly earn three million in the future. This sentence was heard by both the father and son but didn't sound very reliable to them.

"Just, don't mention about this matter again."

Ou A waved his hand: "As the saying goes, saving someone's life is like a victory, just like making a seven-story pagoda, today three million has rescued your life, which is very cost-effective. Right, I forgot to ask, what did you buy today?"

"Dad, it is that half piece of green stone."

Ou B described the appearance of that half piece of spirit stone.

"What! Brat, how much did you sell it for?"

Ou A was startled and immediately asked.

“Two hundred.....”

Ou B said in a somewhat guilt-filled tone and looked scared.

“I will kill you prodigal son!”

Suddenly, Ou A turned extremely angry, he didn't attend to Ye Feng, however he caught Ou B and started scolding him: “Just a few days ago, I contacted an old friend of mine and convinced him to come and help me in its appraisal, how could you sell it.....”

“Dad, didn't you say that this item was useless?”

Ou B brought him into an inconvenient situation.

“Humph.”

Ou A didn't argue with him rather he turned towards Ye Feng and said: “Ye Feng, how about you give me that stone? You go inside once again and pick something else.”

Ye Feng looked at his reaction and was already feeling strange in his heart. Perhaps, Ou A had correctly guessed the function of spirit stone? Anyway, he wouldn't return this half piece of spirit stone at any cost, because for him, its value was far more than three million.

“Uncle Ou, the younger generation has obligation and reason to listen to you, but this thing is really very useful to me, I cannot return it to you, still I hope you

will excuse me.”

Ye Feng shook his head, “You want it back from me but Uncle Ou is a senior businessman and should not go back on a promise, right?”

“Ahem.”

Ou A was somewhat embarrassed, but he very quickly resumed his normal self, it seemed like he was thinking something: “Since it is like this, then Uncle Ou won’t force you. Right, half a month later, there is going to be an antique trade fair in Langfang, are you interested in it?”

Chapter 19 I curse you that you never get a wife

“Antique trade fair?”

Ye Feng gawked, for what reason the other party invited him to go.

“Yes.”

Ou A said in a somewhat mysterious way: “It’s going to take place on a very large scale, not only this, but probably, you may find many important personalities there, the people who are usually very hard to see on normal occasions.”

People who are usually hard to see?

Ye Feng knitted his eyebrows as he didn’t understand the meaning hidden in Ou A’s words.

“Alright, if you want to go then I will manage to get a letter of invitation for you, and perhaps you can find something beneficial from that trade fair.”

Ou A smiled while waving his hand, after that, he didn’t say anything.

Ye Feng looked at Uncle Ou and his heart was moved a bit, Uncle Ou was a very nice and sophisticated person, but come to think of it, he shouldn’t have noticed Ye Feng’s identity as someone from the world of the Immortals right?

No, definitely not. Inferring from the spirit stone, Ou A might be considering him as a martial art practitioner. It was not difficult to notice from his actions that he was actually a martial artist.

“Well, then I will be troubling you Uncle Ou.”

Ye Feng nodded, he didn't point out anything. But he was still very much interested in that trade fair and asked: “Right, Uncle Ou, do you know where headquarter of the Heavenly Serpent Gang is located or where can I find their boss?”

He had already decided to absorb the spirit stone tonight and then he would go deal with the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“Small bee, what are you planning to do?”

Ou B's complexion suddenly changed, if Ye Feng was asking about headquarter of the Heavenly Serpent Gang then he was surely planning to cause trouble, had he gone completely insane?

“Headquarter of the Heavenly Serpent Gang is located at Tianhua casino but I don't know about the whereabouts of the gang boss.”

Ou B noticed that his father was not like his usual self, he was very calm, and on top of that, he was helping Ye Feng by telling him about the location of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“Dad what are you...?”

Ou B was staring at his father and thinking, why did his dad tell Ye Feng everything, wouldn't it be like he was leading Ye Feng towards his death?

"Thank you so much Uncle Ou, I will take my leave now, goodbye."

Ye Feng cupped his fists to salute Uncle Ou, he then patted Ou B's shoulder with a smile and left. He was going back to start his cultivation process and then he had planned to go to Tianhua casino to have a look and find Heavenly Serpent Gang's boss, and once found, he would quickly put him under control using the poison!

"Dad, you are really strange today."

Ou B helplessly shook his head while looking at the leaving figure of Ye Feng.

"A little brat like you won't understand."

Ou A scolded him: "If your father is not mistaken, then he should be a person, who practices martial arts, are you still worried about him?"

"Practices martial arts?"

Ou B gawked, he obviously didn't understand anything.

"Yes, that's right. Do you know what that green stone is?"

Ou A complexion gradually became dignified.

“What is that green stone?”

Ou A asked in a curious tone.

“From the shape, it is probably a spirit stone, desired by martial artists.”

Ou A solemnly said: “In the beginning, I didn’t know a thing about its importance, but last time I had a discussion with my old friend about this stuff, we talked about many stuffs related with martial arts. Talking about the value of a spirit stone, it is at least one hundred million!”

“Hundred million! You are lying and doesn’t that mean we just had a huge loss?”

Just by listening this, Ou B suddenly jumped up to go and stop Ye Feng.

“Have you lost your mind?”

His profiteer dad exploded suddenly and hit on his head, he scolded him and said: “If it’s really true, then Ye Feng is definitely a martial arts practitioner, that boy may actually be very strong and influential, remember to maintain a good relationship with him.”

Ou B foolishly asked “What is this martial arts stuff anyway? Don’t tell me it’s like what appears in TV, like they can fly in the sky, walk on water?”

“Even I do not know concretely about it, in short, it is something very extraordinary.”

Ou A smiled and said “Last time when I went to Langfang, there, my old friend recommended me to go to this fare to sell that spirit stone. However, now I don’t need to go, so take the invitation letter along with you and give it to Ye Feng in the school.”

As a businessman, it was essential to be quick witted to observe people’s every action. Ou A had already noticed a huge change in the current Ye Feng in comparison with how he used to be. So, he took this countermeasure.

He listened to that old friend saying that each and every martial arts user was a very honourable person because these people were not found easily in this common world. Even the Lin Clan of Yanjing City couldn’t dare mess with them!

Just now, Ou A was not at all afraid for Ye Feng during Lin Clan’s Sanshao incident, rather he was taking advantage of the situation to show Ye Feng about his concern & feelings for him. As a businessman, such an investment was nothing, let alone, the other party was his son’s best friend.

Very soon, the so called no-good Ye Feng was going to bring a turning point for this Ou Family in their growth and success.

.....

Ye Feng spent his last cash in taking a taxi to return to the ‘Qingfeng Park’ villa district. He already had a rough idea that Ou A must have guessed his identity already.

“So according to this logic, at this trade fair, it is most likely that a lot of martial artists are going to be present there, including.....”

He thought of that oval faced young girl from the last time as well as his mysterious and elusive grandfather. His grandfather hadn't told him anything regarding martial arts. Rather he wanted him to lead a stable life. He was no longer that old Ye Feng, how could the current Ye Feng stay calm and lead a stable life with his attitude and temperament?

Even if he couldn't go back to the world of the Immortals, so what, he should mix in this world as fast as possible!

“Ye Feng! Take me to Langfang!”

He just wanted to go back to his villa, but suddenly, he heard a very pleasant oriole-like sound coming from the next door, it was his school's Xiaohua, Su Menghan.

Ye Feng saw that Su Menghan was actually calling his name from her balcony on the second floor. She was in white one piece dress and looked very elegant and beautiful.

He didn't pay attention to her and went straight towards his villa.

“Ye Feng! Take me to Langfang!”

Su Menghan seeing him leaving quickly shouted once again.

Ye Feng patiently replied: "I plan to go there two weeks from now, you can come along if you want."

"Really? Don't lie to me!"

Su Menghan was surprised for a moment but then she became extremely happy. She thought that Ye Feng would instantly reject her request once again.

"Why would I lie to a little girl?"

Ye Feng laughed out loud then finally went back to his villa and closed the door with a "bang".

Still standing on the second floor's balcony, she was extremely happy at this moment. Although she didn't know why Ye Feng came back home this late, but since he was taking her to Langfang, it was more than enough for her.

She just wanted to visit her grandmother at any cost. Although she didn't like Ye Feng, but just the thought of seeing her grandmother had made her extremely happy.

However, he called her a little girl?

Su Menghan could not help but lowered her head and glanced at her own plump bosom and angrily said: "Who is a little girl, you jerk? I curse you that you never get a wife!"

Ye Feng, who had just now returned to his bedroom, sneezed.

“Who cursed me behind my back? Well, forget about it, now I have finally obtained a spirit stone after such a huge difficulty, I must make the best use of time to enhance my strength.”

He got up and drew all the curtains in the bedroom, and without eating meal or taking shower, he immediately sat on the bed and took out that half piece of spirit stone.

A complete spirit stone could have promoted his cultivation up to three to five years in one fell swoop. However, the spirit stone he had now in his hand contained just one third of its original Lingqi content, so it could promote only up to one year of cultivation.

Absorbing such a kind of spirit stone enhanced cultivation only once in a lifetime. However, because the current Ye Feng had only five months of cultivation, and at present, he had no sense of security, so he didn't mind using it.

Human beings were very fragile, they could die in an accident while walking on the road, they could choke to death while eating or drinking, Ye Feng did not want to live as such a fragile creature in this world.

Chapter – 20 Sword

At nightfall.

Ye Feng sat on the bed while holding the half Spirit stone in his hand, he then started absorbing the Lingqi present in that stone. Not only his cultivation was growing rapidly because of the absorption of Lingqi but the meridians inside his body were also getting stronger simultaneously.

The core dan in his body was absorbing the Lingqi continuously from that spirit stone. Once the absorption process ended he would become a truly strong martial artist. Just like that oval faced girl or other martial artist who had absorbed Lingqi to attain such kind of well-known power and strength, similarly he would attain the same kind of power but since he had only half piece of spirit stone so he would attain half the amount of zhen qi.

“The meridians inside my body are not very strong so they can only hold cultivation for maximum three to five years. Seems like time is needed to work hard to broaden the meridians in order to enhance the limit of the cultivation.....”

Only the thick and strong meridians could contain more zhen qi and for longer period of time.

One year four months!

Close to the midnight, the time finally arrived when his cultivation rose to a brand new height and this happened when that half piece of green stone which was in the hand of Ye Feng suddenly turned into powder.

Just to check his strength, he pounded a fist conveniently in the air, and from the flow of the air, he felt a massive explosive power coming out from his fist!

If a punch of an adult male could produce a force of 150 kg, then at present, the current Ye Feng's Bagua boxing had already become almost double, reaching 300 Kg. It was because not only the Bagua boxing technique was itself very stronger but also the style and moves of this technique were exquisite. This boxing technique was actually one of the basic fighting techniques of the World of the Immortals, here on the Earth, it was working wonderfully.

“But unfortunately no matter how strong the power of the fist is, it still cannot stop bullets.”

Ye Feng was already aware of this fact, therefore after being familiar with his current strength, he was now completely prepared to practice the agility technique again that he had once practiced in the previous world, it was called – rapid shadow immortal trace.

In the world of martial arts, only the fastest couldn't be defeated. The same was true in the World of the Immortals as well. There, each and every single person was very much focussed on practicing agility techniques. And Ye Feng's master, Ice Fairy, had taught him a superior agility technique.

He searched a bit in his memory and finally came to the conclusion that there was a similar type of martial arts practiced in this world called surging waves micro step, but it had only scratched the surface and couldn't be compared with 'rapid shadow immortal trace' of the World of Immortals.

“To reach the highest level of this technique 'rapid shadow immortal trace' at

least five years of cultivation is needed. If I practice now, perhaps I will have to finish it in haste for quicker results. However as long as it can be used at crucial moments, it can save my life"

A thought started running in his mind, he recalled the display method of 'rapid shadow immortal trace' then congealed zhenqi in the meridians throughout his body and started circulating it in his two legs, agglomerating in the key position unceasingly, then suddenly erupted it!

Instantaneously, his figure moved a few steps forward leaving behind a faint afterimage!

"Not bad."

Ye Feng nodded with satisfaction then he stopped suddenly and noticed that the meridians in his both legs were little sore. Obviously in a short period of time, if he repeated this move once again then it would certainly be dangerous for him. The current Ye Feng could perform the 'rapid shadow immortal trace', but only for few seconds. Once his cultivation would reach a certain height then he could use this technique for a longer period of time.

"From the point of view of this world, using 'rapid shadow immortal trace' to run means covering 100 meter in just three seconds, dodging bullet is very easy now....."

Ye Feng finally had the self-confidence. But still, it was a temporary measure to escape one time. If the other party would keep on firing openly then he would certainly be in a tragic situation.

As for the open fire, he should have an anti-bullet defence technique?

This was also not the matter he should think of.

At this time, he raised his hand to accept that he was satisfied now, but suddenly, he felt slight cold in his finger in which he had worn that Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and then it started bursting out one after another.

“What’s going on?”

Ye Feng’s facial expression suddenly changed. This was his first time facing such a kind of situation. Actually the zhenqi circulating in his meridians were being absorbed by the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, gradually condensed and after that, it gushed out suddenly.

Bang!

After a light sound, a red light appeared from his ring and filled his entire bedroom, it was shinning blood red!

Ye Feng opened his eyes and looked at the thing in his hand, with a somewhat inconceivable look on his face.

“This isa sword?”

His whole body’s zhenqi had been absorbed by the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, a hilt also originated from the ring, and at this moment, a sword made up of red zhenqi was grasped by him in his hand.

Ye Feng never thought that after absorbing his zhenqi, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring would actually transform into a zhenqi sword, however, it would be scary to bring out this stuff on the streets.

It was blood-red in colour, like a pure condensation, formed by the zhenqi, flashing red light which appeared to be branching off a little bit, and it looked very sharp as well.

Ye Feng waved the red zhenqi sword a little and it easily cut through the villa's beautifully tiled walls, and left behind a deep gully, which looked very grim.

So sharp?

Bang!

He used his intention to recover the zhenqi from the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and the red blade suddenly disappeared, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring also returned to normal.

“Taking it out and putting away so freely?”

This phenomenon made him very happy and he still wanted to try once again, but found out that the remaining amount of his zhenqi was actually not enough to conjure a red zhenqi sword.

Such a weapon was an absolutely killing artefact. It was a dark and stormy night, Ye Feng was planning to go to the Tianhua casino in search of the boss of

Heavenly Serpent Gang and having this killer weapon gave several points of assurance to him.

Since the loss of zhenqi was very serious, he could only rest for a while, in the midnight, he finally left the villa and went towards the Tianhua casino.

Although this time, ordinary people were already asleep, but in places like Tianhua Casino, nightlife had only just begun! Ye Feng now had a perfect opportunity.

.....

At this point, in the Tianhua Casino.

In an elegant compartment, many persons were sitting and drinking together, while several females in exposing outfits were sitting beside men and mooching off money in a variety of ways.

One of these men was Tian Youliang.

“Dad, since Brother Tie has already said it then we do not have to worry anymore, cheers!”

Tian Youliang had bleached hair and was wearing a leather jacket, giving him the appearance of a punk, but a middle-aged man was sitting next to him, appropriately dressed, western-style clothing with leather shoes and tie, this was Tian Youliang’s father and Blue sky advertising company’s boss, Tian Zhongkai.

“Indeed, cheers! Brother Tie, I will trouble you with this matter.”

Tian Zhongkai raised his glass and said to a brawny guy, sitting opposite to him and was wearing sunglasses and laughing. This time, he spent money because he wanted to give that kid, Ye Feng, a painful lesson. He also inquired and found out that there was no small enmity between Ye Feng and Heavenly Serpent Gang’s Brother Tie.

That brawny guy was wearing sunglasses and his nose was wrapped in a layer of gauze, obviously had been injured recently, it was actually Brother Tie.

“Humph, rest assured. I invited that guy but he disrespected me, does he think this Brother Tie will forgive him? This time, if I don’t cripple him then my name is not Brother Tie!”

Brother Tie coldly snorted, but in his words, the hatred for Ye Feng was clearly apparent. Even crueller things than breaking someone’s leg was nothing to him.

Brother Tie thought that Ye Feng was a high school student but actually dared to use a brick to smash his nose, but also on several occasions, he repeatedly beat his three younger brothers, even when they went to invite him to join their gang, Ye Feng simply rejected his offer. For him, this was undoubtedly a great insult.

Tian Youliang hugged a plentiful beautiful woman and kept on rubbing her ample breasts and was self-satisfied in his heart.

Thinking that now at the school forum, the discussion about his long tail must be going on, he could not help but feel ashamed. He did not know how it

happened, but he always felt that it was related to Ye Feng.

While they continued to drink, soon, they started discussing a cruel plan regarding Ye Feng, but no one knew that at this time, Ye Feng had taken the initiative to come towards the Tianhua Casino.

Ch 21 Ye Feng attacks

Tianhua Casino was situated in the most conspicuous place on the bar street. It was not very far away from Qingfeng Park.

In a while, Ye Feng finally arrived at the Tianhua Casino and quickly summed up the trump cards he had right now: First was “Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace” which could be used to escape at the critical moment; second one was “Ancient Dragon Sword Ring” that could turn into a double edged red colored sword after absorbing his zhenqi , it was very sharp and matchless and could be used several times during the fight; third was the poison which was made up of the golden leaf grass and was there to be used to control the main boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang.

However there was a problem, Ye Feng must find the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang first to use the poison on him. He had heard that this boss was a very fierce bald person having a knife cut scar on his face. Fighting with this man was very dangerous which could lead to one’s death, but for Ye Feng, as long as he would find the boss, he didn’t need to worry about subduing him.

Before coming here, he already made this very clear that which area was under the influence of the Heavenly Serpent Gang and that was the north eastern part of Yanjing City keeping in mind that Yanjing University was at the centre.

Located on the bar street, Tianhua Casino was actually the headquarters of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was said that each and every group boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang would show up here. However, no matter what, Ye Feng still had to go to this place to check the details.

“If I can bump into someone who guides me in the Tianhua Casino, it would be

good.”

Ye Feng thought about that Brother Tie, as a group boss, there was a high possibility that he knew about the whereabouts of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang. However, meeting him by chance wouldn't be that easy.

When he walked into the bar street, he saw that it was very lively as usual, nobody cared about his clothing, he looked like a simple boy. After a while he arrived at the golden and jade green gate of the casino, he looked up and saw “Tianhua Casino” written in large characters and was shining golden bright, demonstrating luxury.

He walked into the casino very calmly. Nobody stopped him however some people obviously noticed him. They could figure out very easily that he was a student who had entered this place and it was a matter of surprise for some of them.

Casino was very crowded, people were moving continuously, Ye Feng had just now entered the casino and felt that the atmosphere was fiery, he gave a quick glance around to observe the situation.

Before he could look around, he suddenly heard a loud shout coming from his front side: “It's that guy, catch him!”

Ye Feng heard this and a cold feeling appeared in his heart, he looked up and saw two goons and immediately recognized that they were actually two of the three goons, who were with Brother Tie last time, and were going to rape Su Menghan back then, in that alley.

Those two goons were coming out of the elevator, they immediately recognized Ye Feng and without wasting a single moment they rushed towards him to catch him. This attracted the eyes of people who were present there.

“Hey, grandson, want to catch me?”

Ye Feng wasn't afraid at all, instead the corners of his mouth curled up as he taunted one of them. He then ran towards the area with few people were standing in order to make space for the upcoming fight. His figure was matchless and very agile!

“Chase!”

Both of the goons chased after him without a slightest hesitation, there were fierce looks on their faces. They thought that this boy was really extremely daring, not only he offended Brother Tie but he also dared to come to the Tianhua Casino, was it like he came here to court death at his own initiative?

They didn't think that a single high school student could become a threat to them, although they had already heard that he could fight well, but he was still nothing when comparing with Brother Tie, who was simply like the gold medallist goon of the Heavenly Serpent Gang!

Although the Tianhua Casino was the headquarters of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, but it was not like the men of this gang were present everywhere around this casino. So Ye Feng ran all the way to the restroom since there was no one to stop him and occasionally he kept on kicking away few small goons who were trying to come in his way.

He ran inside the restroom.

Seeing this those two goons became very happy, they thought that since he had entered the restroom, now there was no way for him to escape from inside.

But when those two men crashed inside the restroom, the next thing that they saw a big fist, which was as fast as the lightning. The goon who was in the front didn't even get the time to respond. Ye Feng punched directly on his chest, "Kacha" a sound of the broken ribs rang out and that goon flew backward and knocked down the second goon who was standing behind him.

Ye Feng threw a solid punch to finish that gold medallist goon of the Heavenly Serpent Gang. His punch had the strength of 300 kg, how could an ordinary person possibly withstand it? It was good that the goon's physical strength was better than an ordinary person, or else that punch was quite enough to kill a normal person very easily.

However, even so, that goon had lost his battle efficiency already by just a single punch. Ye Feng moved forward towards the second goon who was knocked down but he wasn't severely injured. Ye Feng coldly said: "Take me to your boss or else your fate will be just like his."

The man struggled a bit, however that was of no use, he barely turned to his one side to take a look of his companion. What he actually saw was his companion's chest had been destroyed completely. His eyes were rolled up, had also vomited blood and had already passed out long ago.

This Ye Feng's single punch could make me like this?

Suddenly that man started sweating, just a moment ago he had been knocked down which was a little painful, now he could easily infer that how strong Ye Feng's fist actually was.

Could it be that he was a young Tyson?

That goon used to worship the matchless boxing king "Tyson". Ye Feng and Tyson were very different. But now actually it was not possible to compare the strength of these two men since they were at the same level of strength!

"Boss... is.. on the sixth floor."

He replied in a somewhat stammering way, he, as the gold medallist goon of this gang, had been assigned to do a very important work and that was to take care of the protection and safety of the each and every group bosses of the Heavenly Serpent gang, for him to know the whereabouts of the boss was not at all surprising.

He was not at all afraid that Ye Feng was looking for his boss since he knew that his boss had a gun, no matter how powerful this Ye Feng was, he won't be able to kill the boss.

Ye Feng then tied his hands with a black handkerchief, that goon had a very fierce expression on his face although Ye Feng's hands looked like the hands of a boy but still that goon didn't dare to resist.

Very obediently he led Ye Feng, they passed through few people and then from the stairs they reached the sixth floor of the Tianhua Casino.

Ye Feng carefully observed and discovered that there were many cameras in the corridor. He secretly pondered in his heart, if he did not manage to poison the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang and if he could not put him under control then this would cause a big trouble for him in the future.

Tianhua Casino's sixth floor.

This was the place where all the elites of the Heavenly Serpent Gang were present, and during this period, in that room, almost everyone was embracing a woman for their enjoyment. Ye Feng together with that goon whose hands were tied with a black handkerchief passed through the corridor without paying any attention to those people.

Finally they arrived at the entrance of the most luxurious passenger compartment. The goon moved forward one step and knocked the door rhythmically.

Thump! Thump! Thump! Thump!

"Come in."

From inside a middle aged man's voice resounded and there was no sentiment in his voice.

"Well, if only I had Shen records."

Ye Feng thought in his heart that if he had waited ten years to develop his cultivation to practice the technique "Yinshen", then under this situation he would have been able to sense everything even there would be any slightest sign

of trouble, he could even investigate everything inside the room from outside the walls.

That goon slowly opened the door and made a gesture of invitation to Ye Feng, hinting him to enter the room.

Ye Feng looked at him coldly and noticed that the other party was exhibiting an expression of panic from his face, however by looking in his eyes, there was a touch of malice in them.

“Trap?”

Ye Feng’s mind was very alert, he walked into the room proudly by holding up his head.

The moment he went in: “Bang” a gunshot occurred!

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

Ye Feng was already well prepared, he had already condensed zhenqi in his legs and instantaneously moved forward leaving behind a faint blurred afterimage and thus dodged the bullet clearly!

He quickly observed the situation in the room and saw a knife cut scarred face, bald man holding a pistol in his hand and exhibiting a fiery expression from his face. And next was a very beautiful flirtatious woman wearing a very sexy dress, leaning on his body, her sexy and attractive body was mostly exposed.

Both of them saw how Ye Feng dodged the bullet instantaneously and were extremely shocked by this sudden movement of Ye Feng!

But Scarred bald man was indeed worthy of being called the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang. Without any hesitation, he wanted to continue facing Ye Feng by shooting at him one after another. But all of a sudden he noticed that Ye Feng appeared right in front of him unexpectedly and instantaneously!

Ch 22 Invisible kill

Even if the “Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace” could be used only for a moment, it was quite enough for Ye Feng to cover a distance of twenty meters in an instant and arrive in front of the scarred face bald man directly from the door.

The moment that scarred face bald man wanted to pull the trigger again, Ye Feng came up with his fist, he punched the gun and it flew away. He then hit the chest of that flirtatious woman, meanwhile he started condensing his whole body's zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring.

Bang!

The red light flashed. Without giving any warning the red colored Qi condensed double-edged sword emerged suddenly and in a just one stroke it pierced through the chest of that flirtatious glamorous woman!

Woman was staring with her eyes wide open, since she had been following Scarred face bald man so she had seen the deaths of lots of people, even she had personally killed a person by her own hands. But she had never thought that her death would come so quickly.

Along with that woman who collapsed on the floor after losing her strength, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring resumed itself instantly, it had killed a person invisibly! While the other hand of Ye Feng had still grabbed the bald man's neck tightly.

Although that scarred face bald man was standing close to Ye Feng, but he didn't see anything clearly how Ye Feng killed that woman!

The appearance of that scarred face bald man was somewhat like – his nasal bone was straight, the lower jaw was upright, the edges and corners were very sharp, a startling scar of knife wound extending all the way from the right eye to the left corner of the mouth, he looked very aggressive and matchless, like a brave warrior.

Even if someone was just killed in front of him, it was hard to deter such a character.

“Eat it.”

Ye Feng pulled out the jet black pill that was made of the golden leaf grass and forced it in the mouth of that scarred face bald man, he didn't pay attention to anything, just patted twice on his back and made the pill slide directly in his belly.

“Who are you! What have you forced me to eat?”

The scarred face bald man gritted his teeth and asked.

“Soon you'll know.”

Ye Feng smiled and finally loosened the neck of opposite party then waved his hands with ease. When he looked at the glamorous woman who was lying on the ground, he saw that the blood was gushing out of her half-naked chest, but he didn't pay any attention to that instead he slipped to the side where pistol had fallen. This attracted the attention of that scarred face bald man.

If Ye Feng had been slow just a moment ago and had given the chance to the other party to start firing gun then he would have been trapped in a very dangerous situation. But fortunately the Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was unexpectedly amazing which stunned the opposite party for a moment.

At this time the zhenqi present in Ye Feng's body had almost exhausted. While on the other side that scarred face bald man wasn't able to withstand all this. Not only his attack was completely dodged by Ye Feng but also the pill inside his belly had started to attack suddenly. Not a slightest bit of strength left in his body and even more his whole body was in sharp pain and it was all happening because of that black coloured pill.

Ye Feng without paying any attention to him went forward to pick up the pistol. He picked it up then started playing with it but then suddenly he raised it and aimed at the entrance: "Come in, shut the door."

That black handkerchief goon opened the door and remained there standing completely stunned by seeing the condition of the room, the boss was actually subdued in just few seconds?

Just now what was that blurred afterimage thing left behind by that boy? And how did he escape the bullet?

The black handkerchief goon was somewhat confused and couldn't believe what he just saw was true or just an illusion. But at this time Ye Feng's gun was pointed at him and he had no other choice but to go inside.

When he saw the sight of that glamorous woman lying on the ground all bleeding then he didn't had any doubt left that if he would try to run away from him right now then Ye Feng would not hesitate a bit and shoot him. As he

already knew that like Ye Feng, he didn't possess any such kind of ability to escape the ferocity of a bullet. Hence he had no option left than to submit to him.

The black handkerchief goon finally stepped into the room and closed the door conveniently.

Ye Feng keenly focussed on the other party's body movement and what he discovered was that while closing the door the other party was making some hand signals towards outside. Ye Feng narrowed his eyes and said.

"Well, don't play any tricks or else you will die."

The pistol was in Ye Feng's hand so he felt relieved. He turned back and gave a quick look to the scarred face bald man and what he noticed was that his whole body had curled up into a ball, he was constantly shaking, apparently he was being tortured extremely by that pill but still he never groaned, obviously it was due to his firm willpower.

"Good, now get up."

Ye Feng stepped forward and casually kicked his foot, while kicking him he channelized his zhenqi in his kick and transferred it secretly into the body of the scarred face bald man. By doing so, he suppressed the efficacy of that drug for a temporary period.

"Later you will need to see me once in every week otherwise the efficacy of that drug will break out in your whole body, the maximum time limit you will get then to resist it is one hour after that you will lose your life. I am called Ye Feng, going to be your boss in the future, of course from behind the scenes."

Hearing this made him scared and he started sweating. He barely held the table to stand up.

He raised his head and looked at Ye Feng, while gritting his teeth tightly, he said: "Really courageous.....Aqiang, come over here."

After hearing this that black handkerchief goon gave a quick glance to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng nodded. He was still very calm and was playing with the pistol that was still in his hand.

Aqiang moved a step towards the boss, at the same time that scarred face man took up a fruit knife kept on a table and suddenly stabbed it into Aqiang's chest neatly.

There was an expression of disbelief and shock on the face of Aqiang. Scarred face man covered his mouth and pierced that knife twice in his chest continuously. The blood gushed out from his chest and Aqiang quickly fell down on the floor.

"Good."

The scarred face man dropped the blood covered fruit knife on the floor and took a napkin to wipe his hands. The boss then raised his head and looked at Ye Feng.

"Good job."

Ye Feng nodded with a smile.

As far as the current action of the scarred face man was concerned, he was really very sharp. As a gangster boss, he knew that the prestige was the most important thing to maintain in front of his subordinates. And right now, under this situation where such a thing happened and it was clearly seen by Aqiang, so it had become very essential now to eliminate that potential informant, otherwise he would undoubtedly have spread the news about this incident outside.

For this scarred face man, apparently his life was more important than anything else and he also knew that the efficacy of that drug on his entire body was not a fake story. After he heard Ye Feng saying that he would be the boss of this gang, but from behind the scenes, it was already quite clear to him and he understood it all.

“Afterwards if there is something to dispatch, give the orders.”

Scarred face man said in a sinking voice.

“I know that you are not convinced, you can freely go to the hospital to get yourself checked.”

Ye Feng turned around and said with a smile: “Don’t blame me for not reminding you that because of the random drug treatment, there is a possibility that it may worsen your condition then even I cannot save you.”

“Elder brother Ye, rest assured.”

Scarred face man looked up and said: "You can call me Scarred face, I know you are not an ordinary person, just a moment ago that agility of yours, as well as"

He tilted his head and looked down on the ground where that beautiful woman was lying with her bleeding chest.

People were usually most frightened of the unknown things.

Not only Ye Feng dodged the bullet but also killed that beautiful woman with a certain technique, leaving that scarred face man extremely scared! If Ye Feng wanted to kill him then he would be dead by now and his corpse would be lying on the floor just like the dead body of that beautiful woman.

"Are you a martial artist?"

The scarred face man asked in a somewhat hesitated manner.

"You shouldn't ask, must not ask."

Ye Feng crooned and said: "Well, I wouldn't be too difficult on you, I am letting you do things that you have handled till now in your way and I really don't care about other affairs. You are still the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang."

"Yes."

The scarred face man replied accordingly in a polite voice.

“As for the people standing outside, I will let you deal with them.”

Ye Feng kept the pistol in his pocket and advanced towards the door.

Just a moment ago the gesture of that black handkerchief goon had given an idea to Ye Feng that many people were standing outside the door and most of them had been attracted to the sound of the gunshot.

“You don’t worry.”

The scarred face man nodded many times then he opened his mouth and yelled towards the door outside: “I am telling you all to come inside, take hold of these two trivial dead bodies, drag them out of the room and deal with them!”

“Bang” rang a sound and the door from the outside was forcibly opened and many people suddenly rushed in, those gold medallist goons also came in. At first they had devilish expressions on their faces, but in few seconds, their facial expressions changed, they were now standing stunned since the real situation in the room and their imagination both were polar opposite.

“What are you gawking at? Why haven’t you quickly dealt with these two traitors! This is my younger cousin and he is the one who saved my life just a moment ago. Later you see him, give him respect in the same way you give respect to me!”

The scarred face man gave a furious look to them while pointing his finger at Ye Feng to introduce, making those men stay silent.

“Then I will go first.”

Ye Feng didn't want to complicate things here so he decided to leave first. He greeted that scarred face man and left the room immediately without consulting anyone. The group of people really thought that he was the younger cousin of their boss so they greeted Ye Feng while seeing him leaving the room in a respectful way.

The scarred face man wanted to personally see him off, but the situation was quite inappropriate, he needed to first get rid of these corpses and explain things to his men.

.....

Note-> Gold medalist goon means goons with highest status in the gang.

Ch – 23 Brother Tie's tragedy

Ye Feng walked out of the room, he took elevator and came down directly to the lobby, and meanwhile, he coincidentally saw many unexpected people.

Besides Tian Youliang and Brother Tie, whose nose was covered with a layer of gauze, there were several other people who were passing through the other side of the compartment, they were chatting and laughing among themselves, it seemed like they were in a very happy mood, full of life like they had accomplished something big.

Ye Feng planned not to move forward rather to stop and eavesdrop for a while.

“Relax! Since I have received the money, this matter will absolutely satisfy you.”

Brother Tie, wearing sunglasses, with his nose covered with a layer of gauze, said this with a cruel look on his face: “Just waiting for tomorrow morning, I will definitely make that guy cry and beg for mercy!”

Heavenly Serpent Gang's group leader 'Brother Tie' was quite illustrious in this area, it was not just because he used to fight fiercely and he was involved in bad things, but also because his younger sister was the mistress of the boss of the Heavenly serpent Gang and she also held a position of minor boss of the gang.

Obviously, Brother Tie was not a knuckle-head that he would like to become famous relying on a woman and that was the reason why he paid more attention to train his team including his henchman. When he came to know about Ye Feng

and his strength then he tried to attract him to join his team, it was not at all strange, but unfortunately Ye Feng declined his offer without giving a second thought.

“If he was beaten up severely and got crippled, will there be any trouble?”

Tian Youliang was a young guy after all, so the matter which was being discussed right now had scared and somewhat startled him. It took only a trivial amount of tens of thousands for him to disable a high school student, now he would be on a wheelchair throughout his life, it was really very cruel!

“Hmphh! My Heavenly Serpent Gang has means to kill people, crippling someone is a trivial matter for us.”

Brother Tie coldly groaned, it was obvious that Heavenly Serpent Gang had a strong supporter supporting them from background, so there was no need to worry.

“This is natural, Ha ha.”

Seeing a discontented look on Brother Tie’s face, Tian Youliang’s father promptly gave an explanation to defend his son: “My son is somewhat surprised that Brother Tie has decided to assist us in this matter, please don’t mind him.”

“Hold on Dad, Brother Tie

Tian Youliang was originally in a drunken state, and at this time, he suddenly pointed his finger towards the two men and said: “Isn’t that Ye Feng?”

As expected, Ye Feng was standing there, behind those people, he was in a very calm and collected mood and slowly walked away from them as he already understood the intention of the other party and wasn't in a mood to continue wasting his time here anymore.

Hearing him, Brother Tie turned back, he finally saw Ye Feng who had established a profound impression on his mind. This was the boy who smashed Brother Tie's face with a brick last time and he also dared to decline his offer, certainly it seemed as if he didn't care about the influence of Brother Tie and his gang, Heavenly Serpent Gang!

"You boy, you actually dare to look for your Brother Tie? But you are too late!"

Brother Tie laughed, he had already taken it for granted that Ye Feng came here because he had recognized Brother Tie, he couldn't help but felt proud of himself and said: "Lots of opportunities come in the life of a human being, but only once, right now, even if you kneel down to beg me to accept you as my little brother, that will never happen!"

"Is it?"

Ye Feng smiled slightly while looking at other party.

"Ye Feng, do you know what place is this?"

Tian Youliang was very much drunk and said in a carefree manner, he was holding the wall to support himself and was also very much excited as he had already imagined how Brother Tie was going to beat the crap out of Ye Feng.

Even his father hadn't expected that he would see Ye Feng at this place, although it was actually a pleasant surprise for them. Obviously, now there was no need to wait till tomorrow morning, they could now take a hold of this Ye Feng and teach him a lesson.

"Begin! Make this boy understand the fate of those who dare to offend our Heavenly Serpent Gang."

Brother Tie ordered, two gold medallist goons of Heavenly Serpent didn't waste any time and immediately rushed towards Ye Feng.

Ye Feng remained calm until these goons came in front of him, then in an instant, his hands moved – Bagua Boxing! His fists were quick as the lightning and left afterimages as they advanced towards those two goons and hit both of them, in just a couple of seconds, two sounds resounded one after another – Bang, Bang and both of the goons were blasted away by the two simultaneous punches, both of them instantaneously flew upside down and then crashed against the wall and fell miserably on the floor and started groaning pitifully.

This sound suddenly attracted the attention of everyone present around that place.

How couldn't the people in Tianhua casino possibly know that who was in charge around here? But today, they were seeing something unexpected, that in the headquarters of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, someone actually dared to oppose them and was hitting the members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang one after another. This scene had greatly surprised the surrounding people and the expressions on their faces seemed as if they just saw an alien.

When they saw that just a casual flick of hand, used by a youth who seemed like a high-school student, was enough to send these two goons crashing against the wall, they were very shocked in their hearts. They thought that today, probably, this boy wouldn't be able to leave this place alive.

Brother Tie was stunned by seeing his two subordinates on the floor after being punched and what was shocking that everything happened in a flash, which completely startled him. He already knew that Ye Feng was capable of fighting back but he didn't know that he could fight at this level, keeping in mind that those two goons were considered the gold medallist goons of the Heavenly Serpent Gang!

Ye Feng drew out his fist and looked calmly at Brother Tie and said: "I advise you to get out of the way, do not get involved, otherwise you will be responsible for the consequences."

"Bullshit! Arrogant kid is threatening his dad!"

How could Brother Tie accept the threatening by a high school student, he waved his hand to give instruction to the dozens of members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang to rush towards Ye Feng!

All the visitors surrounding the Tianhua Casino were ready to see a show on the spot, they were thinking that very soon, Ye Feng would be killed, exactly then, a voice burst out from behind Ye Feng: "I, your boss, order you to stop!"

Ye Feng turned his head and saw the scarred face man, there was an angry expression on his face!

The scarred face man had given the work to his men to deal with those two dead bodies, and after that, he had immediately run down quickly to catch up with Ye Feng and request him regarding his matter, but after seeing the current scene, how could he not be furious?

Brother Tie suddenly shouted out: “Brother, this boy doesn’t care about our Heavenly Serpent Gang, I was about to teach him.....”

“Hmph.”

Scarred face man coldly groaned and quickly interrupted Brother Tie’s words, he took a quick glance around that place and indifferently waved his hand: “Ye Feng is a distantly related younger cousin of mine, just a moment ago, he also saved my life, and you say that you want to teach him a lesson?”

All the people around that place gawked hearing this statement.

What?

This high school student was the distantly related younger cousin of the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang, and on top of that, he even rescued his life? Lie! Must be some mistake right?

Tian Youliang felt lifeless all of a sudden. He couldn’t accept that Ye Feng had a relationship with the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang. No wonder Ye Feng dared to be impolite with the Heavenly Serpent Gang, certainly, he was actually the distant cousin of the boss of the Heavenly Serpent Gang! So the discussion they just had in the private room all went in vain? Now, not only they wouldn’t think about teaching him a lesson, but they also invited a bad luck on

themselves!

“Ah Tie, how long have you been working for me?”

Scarred face man asked this while looking at Brother Tie.

“Brother, three years.....”

Brother Tie didn't know why did the boss ask this question and what would happen to him now? Frightened, he looked at Ye Feng once then replied.

“In these three years, you gathered your younger sister and Aqiang in your team and then unexpectedly, you guys tried to collaborate and made a plot to murder me, if it weren't for Brother Ye then I would have lost my life few minutes ago and wouldn't be standing here in front of you!”

The scarred face man was saying all this in a very serious and ruthless way, it seemed like this was the truth and had actually happened. On the other side, Ye Feng was very much impressed with his acting skills and truly admired him for his performance. This man was really a talented person, as expected of someone who was able to hold such a high position of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was absolutely beyond the capacity of a mediocre person.

This sentence gave a good enough explanation to everyone about the death of those two people, and meanwhile, he very conveniently also mentioned the importance of the existence of Ye Feng in his explanation, thus by this way, he killed two birds with one stone.

“Brother, how is this possible.....”

As soon as Brother Tie heard him, he went into shock.

It was over!

Tian Youliang and his father both looked at each other in dismay. They didn't expect how unexpectedly the things would develop like this. They actually encountered this kind of thing, wasn't this the so-called unexpected strike of big bad luck for them? Both of them then looked towards Brother Tie, such kind of thing happened all of a sudden, the most tragic one was this guy.....

The scarred face man waved his hand to give order to the surrounding men to capture these three people, and instantly, a group of people rushed towards them.

Ch 24 Let's go to the school together

Finally, Tian Youliang, his father and Brother Tie, all of these three were handed over to the men of Scarred face man to deal with. On the basis of the personality of the Scarred face man, it was quite obvious that those three wouldn't be killed, rather their skin would be peeled off in order to extremely torture them.

Those three men including Brother Tie were taken away by force, Ye Feng saw that but he simply didn't care at all, instead suddenly something hit his mind that he had probably no money left. So he looked at the Scarred face man and said "Oh by the way, is it fine to conveniently borrow some cash from you?"

This stunned the scarred face man for a moment. He thought that as per the skill of Ye Feng, how could he possibly not have money?

However pondering for a while, he then nodded and said: "Come with me."

Ye Feng looked at his back while thinking that he just asked for a convenient few thousands, then why did he need to go with the scarred face man? He then guessed that the Scarred face man might have something to talk about, so together with him, he left the hall leaving behind a pile of dumbfounded members of Heavenly Serpent Gang and other night visitors who were still whispering about the whole incident.

From all this, it had become clear to everyone that the group leader Brother Tie would be removed from his position, and the boy named Ye Feng, whose appearance was still clear in the minds of many people present on the spot, was listed among one of the people one must never offend!

Ye Feng didn't expect that his actions would have so much impact on people.

A moment later, while following the scarred face man, Ye Feng came to a relatively secluded room which was a small warehouse.

The Heavenly Serpent Gang was ranked as one of the top three gangs of Yanjing city that had extraordinary natural wealth. This small warehouse was usually used during emergency situations, like when they were in need of cash for ransom to save a fellow gang member, it came in handy.

The scarred face man opened a complicated door lock and then took Ye Feng inside along with him. In the entire small warehouse, there were ten wall cabinets embedded inside the wall, it could be figured out just by seeing that this place was newly constructed in Tianhua Casino.

Without any hesitation, the scarred face man arrived in front of a fixed safe cabinet and inputted his fingerprints, passwords and so on and finally opened it. What appeared before Ye Feng was a cabinet full of cash, a glowing red piece, he could roughly calculate just by one look that this was probably one million worth of cash!

"Brother Ye, is this enough?"

He asked this as he knew that the cash one million was way too much for Ye Feng to carry off and felt that the same would be going on in the mind of Ye Feng as well.

"That's enough."

Ye Feng remained very calm and casually took two packs then put twenty thousand cash on his body, this was more than enough. At present, there was no such thing as the storage ring or storage place on him, so it was really inconvenient for him to carry too much cash.

The scarred face man was observing him continuously, seeing Ye Feng's reaction to this situation, he secretly nodded, as he once again affirmed that Ye Feng was really not an ordinary person, since he saw such a big amount of cash but still didn't bat an eye.

He still kept on observing Ye Feng's expression. Finally, he gathered all his guts, clenched his teeth and said: "If Brother Ye wants more money, I don't have any objection, so long as you accept my one condition."

"What condition?"

Ye Feng asked indifferently. He had already guessed that there was something going on in the mind of the other party. The scarred face man was the boss of such an influential gang and it was not possible for a big gangster like him to obey Ye Feng easily, no matter how much he feared the death.

"Teach me martial arts!"

The scarred face man said firmly with an apparent fiery look in his eyes.

The statement took Ye Feng by surprise, to teach him martial arts?

After slight hesitation, Ye Feng did not answer him instead asked something from him: “What do you know about martial arts?”

Actually, he just wanted to clarify about the situation and status of martial arts here on the earth.

Unfortunately, the scarred face man did not know much about it, but he still said: “Not much, but this scar on my face was inflicted by a knife wielding martial artist.....”

While the scarred face man was telling him about this scar incident, his eyes were exhibiting a look of envy. It was obvious that he yearned for martial arts.

.....

An hour later, Ye Feng left the Tianhua Casino along with twenty thousand cash.

From what that scarred face man said, it was quite clear that he did not know much about martial arts, but after hearing about the incident in detail, Ye Feng got a rough idea about that knife wielding martial artist, about how fast and strong his attacks would have been when he attacked the scarred face man.

That knife wielding martial artist must have possessed approximately ten years of cultivation, from the explanation of that incident that Ye Feng heard from the scarred face man, his knife skill seemed quit exquisite, and his agility-class technique must have been at first-class level!

At that time, if there had not been a little brother to protect the Scarred face

man by blocking the knife of that martial artist, then that knife would have killed him definitely. During evening time, when that martial artist was passing by, he heard them making too much noise and found it annoying, which resulted into the death of a dozen in just an interval of few seconds, he started killing people with his double edged knife without giving a second thought.

After that incident, when several people were chopped down by a knife, the scar of the knife gave him a nickname of “Scarred face man” and it became very popular. Now, no one remembered what he was really called previously.

“If I met that knife wielding martial artist, we would be far from rivals! Besides, that was ten years ago if he is still alive then he had the cultivation of almost twenty years, in that case, he is probably on a completely different level when it comes to strength.”

Ye Feng was now secretly very alert as he finally knew that in this world as well, there was the existence of several expert martial artists.

After listening to the scarred face man, Ye Feng fuzzily said that as long as he would obey him properly, he would teach him martial arts, making him happy. So, after ten years, he finally had this kind of opportunity!

Just before leaving, Ye Feng made a request to prepare three million by tomorrow morning, and also to collect certain traditional Chinese herbal medicines in next half a month of time. He was preparing all these things to attend the trade fair in Langfang.

Seeing that the scarred face man promised him to fulfil both the requests, Ye Feng left a phone number and left.

.....

He finally returned to his villa in the “Qingfeng Park” and took rest for the rest of the night until the dawn. After a peaceful sleep, he resumed his energy to the most flourishing condition.

When the sun came out, he stretched himself to get out of the bed, opened the door to go to the school.

“Ye Feng, be a bit faster or else you will be late for the school.”

He just came out of his villa and heard a very pleasant, clear and crisp voice, wasn't it Su Menghan's voice?

“Even if I am late, that's none of your business.”

Ye Feng said in a very rude manner, he raised his head to look and noticed Su Menghan's figure, bathing under the sun, she appeared exceptionally beautiful and attractive, while her beautiful sweet smile surprised him for a moment.

A white flower on the collar of her small shirt with natural folds brought out her attractive S-shaped figure. An under knee-length white skirt, a pair of white legs were elegantly close to each other, making her seem slim and graceful.

Under the sun, her delicate oval face was suffused with a smile, she was really extremely happy seeing Ye Feng.

“Come on, let's go to the school together.”

Su Menghan saw him standing and gawking, she stretched her hands and waved twice in front of him to bring him back to his senses. In his heart, he somewhat chuckled: It seemed like this girl's charm was really very big.

“Why do you want to go together?”

Ye Feng regained his calm and did not know what she was scheming so he asked this with a light hmph.

“My dad doesn't let anyone to come pick me up, so I have to go with you.”

Su Menghan said in a somewhat grieving manner: “I have been waiting for half an hour at your door.”

She thought that Ye Feng finally promised to take her to Langfang so this was the time to develop and maintain a good relationship with him, or else he might go back from his words. Just because of this, she was deliberately waiting for him in front of Ye Feng's villa so that they could go to the school together.

“I do not know what you're exactly thinking, well, let's go.”

Ye Feng shook his head then walked towards the entrance of Qingfeng Park.

“Wait for me, ah, why are you going so fast?”

Su Menghan was trying to mach up her speed with him, her pure and beautiful figure seemed very charming and lively. When they passed through the entrance,

the young security guard was unable to take his eyes off her, her beautiful figure almost made him to drool all over himself.

They had just left the Qingfeng Park and saw that four strong-looking men were waiting at the side. There was the mark of white snake on their sleeves which clearly indicated that they were the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang!

Ye Feng saw them but didn't stop rather kept on moving.

"Oh, run!"

Su Menghan figured out that they were not good people, suddenly she panicked and pulled taut Ye Feng's arm to escape. She thought that Ye Feng had annoyed them several times, and now, these four men came here to teach him a lesson, just by their looks, it was clear that they looked very serious. If she didn't quickly escape with Ye Feng then this would really be a dead end for them!

"Why do you panic?"

Certainly it was not possible for a young girl like Su Menghan to pull him and run, but when Ye Feng saw her so genuinely worried for him, it touched his heart. He then said to calm her down: "Relax, they're not looking for trouble."

Although he said so, but how could Su Menghan possibly believe him so easily?

The way Ye Feng provoked them many times, according to the style of an organized gangster group, it was already a strange matter for them to still leave him alive! Moreover, so early in the morning, four goons were waiting outside, what could possibly be their goal besides looking for trouble?

Suddenly, Su Menghan became extremely nervous in her heart, as she noticed that Ye Feng was not at all in a mood to escape with her, so she finally hid behind him.

.....

Ch 25 Goes to Langfang

“Brother Ye, your cards.”

Those four men came in front of Ye Feng and handed over two bank cards to him.

Ye Feng took the card. He was quite aware that one of the cards had two million cash and the other card had three million which he had asked from the Scarred face man to arrange by morning. He had the plan to give this bank card of three million to Ou B.

For the Scarred face man arranging three million cash was not a big deal, although the Heavenly Servant Gang didn't use to keep huge amount of liquid cash. Still arranging three million was not a big problem for him.

This could also be considered as his sincerity towards Ye Feng.

Could it be possible to subdue the Scarred face man this quickly and take hold of the Heavenly Serpent Gang behind the scenes? Ye Feng sighed at his good luck. If the Scarred face man didn't have such sort of past, he hadn't known the techniques and moves of martial arts and there wouldn't have been the feeling of deep fear in his heart from the martial artists, and a simple threat by Ye Feng couldn't have been successful alone to force him to act obediently.

If the target of Ye Feng would have been to capture the other two big gangs, then this action wouldn't be so smooth.

After handing over those two bank cards to Ye Feng, those four men bowed respectfully then they turned back and left.

The actions of those four men stunned Su Menghan, who was still hiding behind Ye Feng.

What was with this situation? Was not Heavenly Serpent Gang supposed to be a very flamboyant and fearful gang, then why were they being so respectful to a high school student? She couldn't help but recalled that how her father Su Xinchang tried to keep her close to Ye Feng by all possible means, could it be that the background of Ye Feng was unexpectedly formidable, so not even the Heavenly Serpent Gang could dare provoke him?

Moreover "Brother Ye" this name had Ye Feng also became one of the members of the Heavenly Serpent Gang?

"Come on."

Ye Feng put away the bank cards and said in a light tone which interrupted the thoughts of Su Menghan.

All the way, she obediently did not say a word, she just had a guess about the status of Ye Feng, but she did not dare to ask from him.

Since she did not speak a single word all the way, this silence made Ye Feng quite happy. After the two walked twenty minutes to reach the Yanshan High School, then suddenly, they became the centre of attraction among the people present in the surroundings.

Did Ye Feng and that Xiaohua, Su Menghan, walk all the way to school together? (Xiaohua – means school beauty)

There was no mistake!

They walked side by side all the way to the classroom, Ye Feng as if heard the sounds of many hearts shattering, including his best friend Ou B as well.

Barely they sat on their seats and Ou B pulled himself together, he was filled with righteous indignation and said: “Small bee, you too didn’t do justice, you actually took hold of the prettiest girl of our school so silently? Sure enough you have the advantage of being close to her, but first month

“Do not make guesses so randomly.”

Ye Feng took the bank card out, he put aside the former discussion and said: “Take it back to your father, I don’t like to owe others. This card has three million cash, the password is written on the back of the card.”

“What, what?”

Ou B subconsciously took the bank card, his mind was still in a stunned state.

Just a moment ago he was in a very bad mood. To express his anger, he had come to Ye Feng and Su Menghan’s seat, but now suddenly, he had been stunned by Ye Feng’s words.

Three million?

Just over a night's time had passed and he earned three million?

Ou B's first reaction was.... this guy was lying! But to think carefully did he really need to lie at the first place? How much money this card had, it could be figured out the moment it would be used in the ATM, then for how long he could conceal this fact?

"Small bee, you are kidding right? We don't want you to pay back the money....."

A look of surprise was there on Ou B's face.

"Well, your father has given me a very clear idea in my mind, so I feel relieved."

YE Feng smiled while patting on his shoulder.

Ou B accepted the bank card although he was not fully convinced by his statement. He was being sceptical, but Ou B suddenly tapped his head and said: "Yes, this is an invitation to the trade fair."

Until this time, Ou B realized that Ye Feng had completely changed and he had a feeling that it might be because of his grandfather?

Ye Feng thought that he should open up a precious invitation letter now, so he kept it in his pocket.

He took a look at the invitation letter, it was an envelope with a red title page,

in the title page it was printed 'soaring dragon', there was nothing strange about it when he looked at it for the first time, but in no time he felt the seal position of the envelope, actually there was a faint strange power flowing around it!

"Thank you."

He quietly kept aside the invitation letter, but an idea was unceasingly floating around in his heart.

This so-called antique trade fair was not a simple thing to talk about! At the seal of the invitation letter there was a strange energy flowing which was totally similar to the internal energy of that oval faced young girl. Until now Ye Feng had no idea what this energy was called but now he had a little idea that this energy was definitely related to this world of martial arts. (Ye Feng's internal energy is called zhenqi and its stronger than the internal energy of this world's martial artists)

"Little Ou, does your father hold more invitations?"

Ye Feng asked.

"Just one, why?"

Ou B replied with a strange look on his face.

"Nothing, just asking."

Ye Feng was perfunctory, he was thinking very fast about this invitation case.

There was no doubt this invitation was really very precious, Ou A could go that far to get one obviously for the sake of that half spirit stone.

It seemed like there was a possibility that the organizer and all the participants of the trade fair might be from the world of Chinese martial arts!

Could he also bump into that oval faced young girl?

Some interesting thoughts were going on in Ye Feng’s mind regarding the antique trade fare. Fortunately, after two weeks, he was able to achieve the cultivation worth of one year and five months, and now he could use the technique called “camouflage”, then he would be able to change his appearance for a certain amount of time, even changing the height and build was possible.

“In this world, people should not be aware of immortal techniques. But just in case, in order to provide against contingencies, bringing a mask is better.”

Ye Feng made the decision.

He looked around and noticed that Tian Youliang didn’t come to the school today. When he inquired about it, he found out that last night, Tian Youliang requested for his transfer from the school, since he no longer dared to continue studying in Yanshan high School.

.....

Half a month passed in a flash.

Now in the month of April, in Langfang, it was raining lightly. From now on, there were two months left for the college entrance exam.

“.....I’ll be careful Uncle Ou, you rest assured.”

Ye Feng hung up the phone, he took Su Menghan out of the Langfang Railway Station along with him. At noon, the sky was a bit gloomy, Ye Feng felt the fine drizzle, he was in a slightly bored mood.

While Su Menghan on the contrary was in an extremely good mood, she was being very cheerful all the way because now she could visit her grandmother, which was the main reason behind her heartfelt excitement.

For Ye Feng coming to Langfang was to attend the Trade fair, moreover one of the more reasons was to bump into some good stuff. But the most important reason was to scout the level of martial arts on the Earth.

But for Su Menghan, her goal behind coming to Langfang was to visit her grandmother, whom she hadn’t met for almost ten years, naturally her mood would be good.

“To visit a family member, and on top of that, your father is not accompanying you, this is actually a very responsible behaviour.”

Ye Feng smiled and said this in a sarcastic tone.

“He has to deal with Xie clan, he would never dare to come.”

Su Menghan lightly crooned, she didn't speak anything rather she turned and asked: "Your mock test, how was it?"

Before coming here to Langfang, their school had arranged two mock tests. Su Menghan was not at all worried since her score used to come as one of the best scores in the school. As for Ye Feng, he was one of the lowest scorers in the class.

The talk about the examination brought a smile on Ye Feng's face, some time ago, he had been very busy refining the compounded drug, he was preparing his own drug to sell in the trade fair, so how could he possibly get time to study for the mock tests?

Undoubtedly, his exam results were very bad, even worse than before..... But Ye Feng didn't need to worry about it since as per his present memory, even if he started studying one week before the college entrance examination, he could still do fairly well for entering the Yanjing University. (As instructed by Ye Feng's grandfather)

"Wellgood I guess, anyways now you can go your way, I can go mine, let's not interfere in each other's affairs."

Ye Feng said fuzzily then he turned around to walk away.

"Hey you wait!"

Su Menghan saw him going away and hurriedly stopped him. She didn't know what made him come to Langfang, she had a rough guess that he might have come here with her just to accompany her, but now it seemed that it wasn't the

case?

But if Ye Feng left her here alone, this place was completely new to her, what would she do in case she got into trouble?

Ch 26 Moron Cousin

Ye Feng stopped from moving ahead since he was called out by Su Menghan. He turned his head and asked: “What happened?”

Su Menghan took out her phone, there was her grandmother’s address recorded in it, she read it and with a little embarrassment she said: “You accompany me.”

“You are such a big girl and still want people to accompany you?”

Ye Feng frowned, obviously he was not happy.

“You..... I, I don’t have money.....”

She was holding her white skirt and pinching it with her hands while looking at Ye Feng coyly. Actually her father, Su Xinchang, had controlled her pocket money very strictly, it was not his idea though rather he was forced by that Xie clan’s woman to do so.

“

Ye Feng was somewhat speechless. He looked at the time, it was exactly 12 P.M. in the noon. The antique trade fair was about to start at 6 P.M., so he had no reason to worry about it.

“Let’s go then.”

Without wasting any time he stopped a taxi and along with her he moved toward the address of her grandmother.

Out of Langfang city, towards eastern side, few villages and small towns were located. Su Menghan's grandmother's house was in the same direction and luckily the antique trade fair was also located in the same direction. So Ye Feng was at ease as he didn't need to worry about not having enough time to reach the fair on time.

All the way, Su Menghan was somewhat emotionally disturbed. It was because of two reasons. Firstly, she was going to meet her grandmother after a decade and secondly because she was going to see her with a guy.

Half a month ago, she and Ye Feng were merely unfamiliar neighbours. But now he was actually accompanying her to her maternal home together. He was really a very violent guy and Su Menghan had already seen his brutal self. In case his beastly self showed up then she definitely wouldn't be able to resist him.

Certainly after getting along with him in last half a month time, Su Menghan finally decided to believe in Ye Feng. The most important point was all the time, Ye Feng never showed any interest in her appearance and he usually looked quite cold and indifferent towards her.

Perhaps in Ye Feng's eyes, she was unimportant.

Su Menghan thought that a woman's intuition was generally accurate, from Ye Feng's consistent attitude, she could now feel that the other party was not acting hard to avoid her rather he really was not paying attention to her.

This made her to show a trace of frustration, didn't she even had a little charm to attract him?

After covering three or four kilometres of distance, the taxi stopped in front of a residential area. Ye Feng paid the fare and instructed Su Menghan to get out of the car. They took a broad view of the whole area to look at a peaceful auspicious scene, the buildings stood in great numbers, the alleys were interlocked, it could be seen clearly that the cars were parked everywhere, obviously this economic development was quite good.

They asked the taxi driver to ascertain the concrete address direction. After that they walked toward the destination.

“Ye Feng, I am a bit nervous

Su Menghan said this while grabbing the lower part of her clothes. She was really quite disturbed.

“Why are you nervous, although you have not seen her for so long, but still, she is your relative then what are you afraid of?”

Ye Feng shook his head, he couldn't help but thought about his own life. Whether he was in the World of the Immortals or he came to the Earth after his rebirth, he did not have any family member at both the places.

In the World of the Immortals, he had only one master and here on the Earth as well, he had only one relative, his mysterious grandfather.

How did it feel to have a complete family?

He didn't know, because he never had one.

Following the house number plate, they quickly arrived at the outside of a courtyard in a building. They stood at the entrance. Su Menghan had a very anxious and fearful look on her face. Ye Feng stepped forward to press the doorbell.

"Who is it?"

An impatient, middle-aged woman's voice came out, "Come inside."

Middle aged woman's voice?

Ye Feng quickly guessed that it was Su Menghan's Aunt. Su Menghan's grandfather had already died, he had total four children, the youngest one was her mother and the rest three were her uncles.

He had heard that her grandmother was living with her uncle.

Soon the door opened and the person who appeared in front of the two was a somewhat fat middle-aged woman. She looked at them very strangely: "Kids, are you looking for someone? Dai Gen is not home."

Seeing Su Menghan that middle-aged woman was somewhat in amazement. But then she hid the envy and contempt in her eyes. It was quite obvious that Su Menghan's beauty and charm made her own Aunt jealous of her. It was really

quite easy for women to get jealous.

“II am Su Menghan.”

Su Menghan was little hesitant to ask: “May I ask you something, aren’t you my Aunt?”

“Su Menghan?”

The middle-aged woman repeated the name, she then reacted and with a puzzled look on her face and asked: “Are you Su Menghan?”

Su Menghan nodded again and again out of the fear that the opposite party didn’t recognize her.

The middle-aged woman said in a thick voice: “After so many years, what brought you here?”

“I..... I have actually come to see my grandmother, and.....”

While she was saying this she got interrupted by her Aunt.

“The old woman got sick and died a few years ago.”

The Middle-aged woman looked very indifferent as if she was talking about the death of a stranger. Suddenly she remembered something, in a somewhat vigilant way, she looked at Ye Feng and Su Menghan: “If you have nothing else to

do, then leave.”

She was very vigilant, it was not without a reason.

The people of this area did not know anything about how Su Xinchang’s business was flourishing bigger and bigger day by day because he used to be a poor guy when he lived around here. Su Menghan’s mother leaving everything behind followed him and finally ended up dying in a car accident, and the people of this area didn’t know what happened after that.

Who would know that Su Xinchang had remarried a person of Yanjing city’s Xie clan, unexpectedly he got not only power and position but also fortune as well. Until now, Su Sheng group had successfully hit the market with a sale price of one billion!

Here, people used to think that Su Menghan must be having a hard time after losing her mother for the past few years. Now she suddenly came back, then she would certainly want to borrow money.

“Hello, how can this.....”

Seeing the other party was about to close the door on their face, Su Menghan became very anxious, she never thought that her Aunt actually would not welcome her.

“Just leave, we can’t help you.”

The middle-aged woman finally looked at them once again, that look in her eyes was very strange, but she shook her head to close the door. But suddenly at

the same time, she looked at a face which was not far from the alley.

“Help, mummy, save me

It sounded like a very distressed voice, passing from far to near.

Ye Feng and Su Menghan together turned back and suddenly saw a young person wearing short sleeved clothes. He appeared to be in a very difficult situation. He was running while limping, and behind him, three men, who obviously looked from the crime world, were chasing him.

“Not paying back our money and on top of that running away from us, it’s completely useless, pay back the money.”

One of the ferocious men said, his eyes appeared very ruthless, he moved forward to catch him then kicked him very hard, the short-sleeved young person got kicked and fell on the ground. Another man took a brick and hit on the skull of that youth.

“Dai Gen, do not hit him, do not hit him.....”

Middle-aged woman suddenly got panicked, her hands and feet were shaking, she, without paying attention to Ye Feng and Su Menghan, went out of the house. She was crying while running towards him: “Dai Gen, didn’t I tell you to not gamble, but you never listen to me...”

“Not only gamble, he also takes drugs.”

A black jacket man rolled up his sleeves while looking at the middle-aged woman who was running over to him, then said: “Are you his mother? This boy owes us 300,000 so hurry up and pay back our money, otherwise just wait to collect his dead body.”

“300,000?”

Middle-aged woman suddenly went into shock, from where would she manage to arrange such a huge amount of money now?

“Ye Feng

Su Menghan pulled at the back of the sleeves of Ye Feng, wearing a look of pleading on her face, she wanted to help that youth.

“Other party is not willing to recognize you, still you ask me to help her?”

Ye Feng found this very funny: “This cousin of yours not only gambles but he also takes drugs. I am not so dumb as to offend the local mafia just to help such a moron like him.”

Ch 27 Trying to stop injustice

Ye Feng raised his head to look at the front where those three gang members were beating the short sleeved youth badly, it really seemed like he was about to die, his fresh blood was spattered everywhere.

How could Su Menghan have ever seen such a miserable scene, she kept on pulling Ye Feng's cuffs again and again and begged him for help.

"Stop it."

Ye Feng failed to ignore her continuous begging, finally he reluctantly shook his head and quickly walked forward and in an instant he blocked the hand of one of the men, who was holding a brick to hit that youth.

"Boy, who are you?"

One of the men looked at Ye Feng with a quite brutal facial expression and said: "Mind your own business!"

"Trying to stop injustice, that's all."

Ye Feng replied to him in a very soft tone, in this situation he knew already that he shouldn't give any chance to the other party and it was quite obvious that the opposite party was not willing to give up. Just in order to get their money back, they were terribly beating that youth to death which was quite weird behaviour for Ye Feng. He didn't understand this type of attitude at all.

To her surprise, seeing Ye Feng unexpectedly came out to help her son gave her a powerful shock. Normally in this kind of situation if it were some other person then he might have run away very far from this fight. Who would dare come to help some stranger?

In an instant, Ye Feng came into action.

He turned away and very conveniently took the advantage of this opportunity. He started condensing Zhenqi into his fist and in a matter of seconds and punched one of the men with a “Bang”. Since everything happened so fast that the man didn’t get enough time to react to his punch, and all of a sudden, his whole body flew and bumped against the wall. He was very badly beaten up by his punch.

While on the other hand, seeing the solid attack of Ye Feng, the other two men barely tried to respond to his shot and got away from him but Ye Feng couldn’t be underestimated. He was way faster than those two, instantly he fired two punches back to back towards them!

These two punches couldn’t be underestimated at all!

Once again the simple two fists of Ye Feng sent those two adult men flying several meters away. Both of them crashed on the ground and the impact caused the dust to fly upwards. After that a series of pitiful scream spread out in that area. In addition to those three men, Su Menghan’s moron and useless cousin was also there accompanying them in this screaming, he was also yelling due to severe pain.

“Well, quickly take him to the hospital.”

Ye Feng shifted his vision toward the ground to look at Su Menghan's moron cousin. He was lying down on the ground screaming badly due to intense pain. Ye Feng then said to the Aunt while looking at her: "By the way, there is no need to thank me, just say 'thanks' to her."

Hearing this, she immediately ran toward Su Menghan with a smile on her face.

It was needless to say that how much happy Su Menghan was, it could be noticed easily. Her smile could be compared with a blooming flower at that time. She was thinking that Ye Feng was really very ferocious back then. How easily he dealt with these three gang men. Being together with him was surely not a bad idea.

But who would have thought that Su Menghan's Aunt was actually not at all grateful for the kindness shown to her, instead she started scolding her in a loud tone: "Thanks? Do you even know that you have brought a big trouble for us? These men were the member of Heavenly Serpent Gang and you don't know how powerful they are..... Dai Gen, hurry up let's go to the hospital, they hit you really hard with something and here we are doing something very irrelevant....."

While she was scolding her, she took her cell phone out simultaneously and started making a call.

Both Ye Feng and Su Menghan were completely speechless listening to her words, they never thought that an unexpected kind help could also be blamed like this. However, the Heavenly Serpent Gang? Who would have thought that the existence and influence of the Heavenly Serpent Gang could be in this place as well? It appeared that the power and sphere of influence of this gang was way larger than what Ye Feng had imagined.

Since this matter was about the Heavenly Serpent Gang, so Ye Feng didn't need to be afraid of anything.

"Boy ...you dare to hit the people of Heavenly Serpent Gangkeke. You are a dead man, keke"

A man from that gang, who was lying down on the ground, said this to Ye Feng and then he pulled out his cell phone and started calling for help.

Too lazy to care for what he said, Ye Feng took out his cell phone and called directly the scarred face man: "Scar, the people of your gang are also there in Langfang city?"

The phone call from Ye Feng obviously startled him a bit, he originally did not know what to do in this situation, but then he immediately recollected his composure and replied: "Brother Ye, did you bump into them? Yes, our people also work there, but not many....."

While speaking about this place, he suddenly started hesitating, he was confused whether he should say it or not.

"Go on."

Ye Feng gave him the hint to continue.

"Yes, actually they are there to test new drugs and they are just trying to create a new way to earn extra and convenient money."

The scarred face man thought that there was something that was not right to tell him, but still he replied.

“New drugs?”

Ye Feng frowned hearing his words : “I will talk about this matter when I come back, for now, just withdraw your people from here at once, and one more thing, from tomorrow, Heavenly Serpent Gang is prohibited to do any type of drugs business anywhere in future.”

“What? This.....”

His statement apparently startled the scarred face man.

Not to do the drugs business in future, this order of Ye Feng would certainly cause a great loss to the gang. The source of income of entire gang would reduce by half because of this!

The most important point was, now, the supplier of new drugs was not affable! Suddenly stopping the purchasing merchandise, it would be troublesome if the opposite party began to investigate into this matter. Even if Ye Feng was a martial artist, he might not be able to handle the opposite party.....

“It’s settled then, and if I later find out that you are still continuing this business, then you better be prepared for the consequences.”

Ye Feng did not say much, just warned him then hung up the phone.

Su Menghan listened to everything and was secretly scared. She was thinking that in the end what was the identity of Ye Feng, making a phone call to stop Heavenly Serpent Gang from doing the drugs business? Even if he were the boss of this gang, still it should be impossible for him to achieve such a thing! After all, the interest of the whole pack was not the matter that a single person could decide by himself.

But listening to the tone of Ye Feng, the way he said it, there was a huge confidence visible in his appearance.....

Anyway, Ye Feng's impression in the eyes of Su Menghan changed a bit. Now, she was seeing him in a new light. As the danger of taking drugs was well-known, and here, Ye Feng was just trying to ban Heavenly Serpent Gang from doing the drugs business, the idea was very good, of course, the goal could not be reached, she was still quite skeptical about it.

“Well, you heard it too.”

Ye Feng glanced at her: “Listen closely, if you dare to spread the word about my relationship with Heavenly Serpent Gang then....”

As soon as she heard him saying this, she immediately stared at him to shut his mouth. Inside her heart lots of things were going on which were making her very restless and uncomfortable as she didn't know at all about the relationship between Ye Feng and Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“You haven't gone yet? Just go, don't hurt us.”

Su Menghan's Aunt said this and rushed toward her son while waving her hands. She then started trying to lift her son up. That short sleeved youth was already in a very miserable condition. He was limping and was also unconscious.

"Let's go."

Ye Feng pulled Su Menghan to go since they were not welcomed by the other party, so there was no need for them to stay anymore.

"But"

Su Menghan was little hesitant, she poured her gaze upon her unconscious cousin and seemed worried about him.

At this moment, suddenly the sound of a motorcycle resounded from far and gradually came closer second by second, and simultaneously, a rough male voice transmitted: "What happened here? How is Dai Gen?"

Su Menghan's Aunt who was standing at the doorway while supporting her son, Dai Gen, immediately turned around, looked at him then started complaining with tears in her eyes: "He has been hit terribly, hurry up, take him to the hospital or else, or else....."

"How did it happen? He was hit by whom?"

The motorcycle then turned around, the man riding the bike was a forty year old man. He gave a quick glance around the area and was a bit startled seeing the situation. He then said: "We don't have money for the hospital. I just took a loan to purchase the vehicle....."

Then the motorcycle stopped at the door and that man, without paying any attention to Su Menghan and Ye Feng, took out his phone to make a phone call. He just took loan for his son to buy a car, his son was about to get married and he didn't have cash left on him.

Of course, that man also had two brothers.

“Brother, what, the money which was there to be used for the house renovation ran out? Well, well....”

“Brother, what, you recently picked up a project and your entire money was used up in that?”

Soon, that man put down the phone, he seemed dejected and did not expect that in such a critical moment, even his own blood related brothers would turn out to be so unreliable. This was really the world's most frustrating situation for him.

“No matter what we will take him to the hospital first, we will deal with this money issue later when the time comes.”

The man finally made his decision and started preparing to start his motorcycle so that they could rush to the hospital to admit their son, Dai Gen.

“Ye Feng

Su Menghan looked at her side and pulled on the sleeves of Ye Feng. She

looked at him and appeared very pitiful, her current appearance could compel even a heartless person to take pity on her.

“.....”

Ye Feng knew that she was thinking about the 200,000 he had.

Chapter 28 Listen to my woman

Ye Feng looked at Su Menghan's sweet and charming face, he shook his head and said in a soft tone: "The world is a dangerous place, honest and kind hearted girl like you are normally rarely seen. Since you want to help them, I will give you a chance."

After saying this he took out that bank card of two hundred thousand from his pocket.

"Here, I am handing over this card to you, now its completely your decision as how to use this card, but you need to think clearly since you already know the result very well. Anyway, I'm going to do my own thing, have to do a phone call."

Finally Ye Feng made his decisions, first was let Su Menghan do whatever she wanted as she was a very kindhearted girl. And the second was to charge ransom from Heavenly Serpent Gang for their crime, their sin. That short-sleeved youth, Dai Gen was victimized by drugs and for this, Heavenly Serpent Gang was partly responsible, so this matter couldn't be ignored, somehow Ye Feng was feeling a bit sorry about this.

When she saw Ye Feng so solemnly explaining things to her, she took the card and nodded once.

Ye Feng felt a little funny inside while looking at her, actually in his heart he was looking forward to see what this girl was going to do now. After all, she had experienced cruel things in her life, he was thinking that was this girl really so simple and pure?

The motorcycle man and that middle-aged woman still didn't pay any attention to Ye Feng and Su Menghan again this time, they were busy supporting their son, Dai Gen, they were trying to board him on the motorcycle, but Dai Gen was in an unconscious state so it wasn't easy to do so.

Just then, two vans came whistling from the alley raising a cloud of dust everywhere, all of a sudden the way was blocked by them. One after the other, several sturdy men got down from the car, holding cigarettes in their mouths, bare chested, wearing a garment with a low neckline, two of them were still had their sunglasses on, just by giving a glance at them, one could say that they belonged to the criminal community in the society.

“Who dare to annoy Heavenly Serpent Gang, do you want to die?”

Headed by a muscular man in dark sunglasses, he spat out the cigarette and looked at the crowd standing in front of him very fiercely, as if he was trying to guess the person who hit their men.

Seeing these dangerous looking people, the parents of Dai Gen were immediately panicked, they stared at each other for a quick glance and then they suddenly pointed towards Ye Feng: “He is the one who is involved in this, how can we ordinary people dare to provoke you brothers?”

The dark sunglasses man suddenly turned his vision towards Ye Feng and when he saw at his side where the pretty attractive Su Menghan was standing, he remained surprised for a bit, he never thought that such a beautiful lovely young girl could be seen at this kind of place.

Once someone provoked the Heavenly Serpent Gang, they would certainly have to pay the price.

The dark sunglasses man gave signal to his men by waving his hand, and in an instant, his ten or so people rushed towards Su Menghan and Ye Feng and surrounded them by forming a circle around them. Their frightening appearance terrified the parents of Dai Gen and they immediately moved towards one side.

That middle-aged man heaved a sigh of relief when he noticed that those gang members had completely ignored them, he then whispered: “Who are they, the young boy and girl?”

“It’s Su Menghan, your niece. Heavenly Serpent gang has come back to hit them, lets not get involved in this for our good, Dai Gen is already in such a miserable condition

The middle-aged woman said this with tears in her eyes, she cried since she was afraid that he would go back there to help them.

That man was a little surprised hearing about this, Su Menghan? How did she come back today..... His eyes were at Ye Feng and Su Menghan who were surrounded by a large group of gang members at that time. Although it was difficult for him to endure this but then he thought about their own situation clearly and shook his head to let it go.

No way, he couldn’t help those two who were standing against the Heavenly Serpent Gang, besides in this current situation when he was surely going to get burdened under huge medical expenses. His son was badly injured, one of his legs was broken, on top of that, he was an addict, in addition to this, perhaps he had other injuries and concussion as well.

Su Menghan was extremely nervous. She grabbed the arms of Ye Feng very

tightly and hid behind him. This time there were total eleven men in the opposite party. Besides, something was going on in her mind that why was Ye Feng not revealing his identity to them, they might have stopped all this chaos once it was told properly.....

As everyone knew that Ye Feng was simply not a bit worried about anything, for him, they were just trivial ten or so men, although he would need to use his hands and feet to deal with them, but for him, by no means it was a difficult problem.

Just when Ye Feng was prepared to begin, suddenly, the cellphone of the leader of this group rang up. He then waved to his men, letting them to go on first, while he stayed behind to answer the phone call.

“Hello boss, what..... Go back? Don’t do it?”

The dark sunglasses man was in shock: “Oh, yes I got it, but there is a boy who has stirred up trouble, first let me deal with him..... what?”

He looked up and saw Ye Feng who was at that time playing with two of his men, he hit both of them, both of them flew and crashed on the ground. Also he noticed that there was an old ancient ring on his finger of the right hand.

“Yes, yes, it’s him together with a young beautiful girl..... Well, ok got it boss!”

After that call, he understood very well that the situation was quite critical, so very quickly, he hung up the call then moved few steps forward and roared: “It’s my order! Everyone stop right-away!”

But he was a bit late.

He saw Ye Feng had embraced Su Menghan's soft and slender waist in order to protect her. Besides, his several men had already been wiped out by him, they all were lying on the ground yelling in pain. It seemed like Ye Feng had very badly smashed them.

While the remaining five men were still gathered around those two vigilantly, actually they didn't dare to go forward and fight with him.

That sunglasses man once again shouted very loudly, since he was uncertain about the whole situation, what happened, we mustn't fight with him? Although this boy is very ferocious and powerful, but they still had to let him go.....

"Sorry, Brother Ye, it's out fault."

The man in dark sunglasses ran several steps towards Ye Feng, and with a slight smile, he scratched his head in a somewhat embarrassed manner.

"Anyway."

Ye Feng had already guessed that just now, the scarred face man had called the sunglasses man, he waved his hand to him and said: "Just find a person to drive me to a place, the rest of you just stay here and listen to my woman, just do what she wants you to do, and you know why right?"

Su Menghan was still in the embrace of Ye Feng, after listening his words, her face instantly turned red.

The sunglasses man glanced at her and secretly said to himself that Brother Ye's woman was really very beautiful, he nodded: "Ok got it, San Zi, come over here, take a car and drive Brother Ye to the place where he wants to go."

A thin man heard this and immediately responded by saying yes to him.

"If you need anything, please call me immediately and anytime."

Ye Feng let go of her fragrant body, then stretched his body till his heart content and with a smile on his face, he immediately followed that thin man toward a van.

Su Menghan was still blushing, she didn't know what she should say, in her heart, she was scolding Ye Feng several hundred times: Who is your woman, you shameless guy.

Regarding Ye Feng's arrangement, she understood very well.

Seeing that taking her cousin by a motorcycle to the hospital was a big problem for his parents, so Ye Feng planned all this, leaving behind few people for her was also a convenient idea, but at the same time, it could also be considered as a way to give her protection in an unknown town while he was away.

"Quickly, take my cousin to the hospital."

Just thinking of this, she without any hesitation quickly pointed her finger to

the family of three.

Till this time, both middle-aged men and women had been stunned, they did not expect that this would be the case. Recently, Heavenly Serpent Gang had been very rampant in this area, provoking their people had always been a bad thing for anyone, but now.....

The middle-aged woman surprisingly looking at Su Menghan, a thought was running in her mind that Su Menghan was such a beautiful and attractive girl, how did she manage to maintain a relationship with that flamboyant young boy, could it be considered as normal?

At this moment, Su Menghan's image in her heart had completely transformed from an innocent young girl to a clever and smart seductress.

However, this did not matter at all right now, the middle-aged woman thought intelligently that Dai Gen could be saved only because of Su Menghan, it looked like nowadays, Su Menghan was involved in dirty business by using her good appearance. So helping them with medical expenses should not be a big issue for her right?

At present, she just completely forgot how badly she treated Su Menghan few minutes back.

While on the contrary, Su Menghan wasn't thinking so much.

As soon as Ye Feng left, she asked those men of Heavenly Serpent Gang to arrange one more van to take her cousin Dai Gen to the hospital. However this matter was taken care by the dark sunglasses man, he did a phone call to the

hospital for an ambulance.

When the two vans left, finally some of the neighbors from the neighborhood appeared, they started gossiping, pointing and discussing about what just happened.....

Ch 29 You want to blackmail me?”

Ye Feng’s mind had long been drawn out of this matter.

As per the location mentioned in the red invitation letter, he directed the thin man of Heavenly Serpent Gang to take the van to a very remote village, which was almost two kilometers away from his actual destination.

Ye Feng got off the van then sent him away. Then after he found a remote deserted corner, he took out a mask which he had already prepared.

The martial arts existed in this modern world but had been kept hidden from the rest of the world. Ye Feng believed that no one would their true identities in this trade fair.

If he were to use the camouflage technique to transform his appearance, then at his current level, he wouldn’t be able to hold it for a longer period of time. So, it would not be an appropriate idea to fully rely on it.

After putting on the mask, he ran all the way towards the target location. After nonstop running for ten minutes, he arrived in front of quite an ancient looking courtyard.

At the entrance of the courtyard stood a handsome young man, he was there looking around in all directions, and suddenly, his eyes stuck on Ye Feng. He raised his eyebrows and started observing him.

“Who are you sir?”

That handsome man opened his mouth to ask, it was really a bit effeminate. Besides, there was a mole on his chin which made him appear incomparably outwardly submissive but inwardly evil-hearted.

“Mo Jiuge.”

Ye Feng answered in a low voice.

He certainly wouldn't use his real name until he was clear about the situation. This name 'Mo Jiuge' was the name of the guy whom he used to dislike the most when he was in the World of Immortals. It was because that guy was the fiancé of his beautiful master.

Ye Feng guessed that in the future, he would definitely do lots of things to offend several people, then those people would blame Mo Jiuge for all those things.

He also thought that when his cultivation would reach higher levels then he would transform himself into the appearance of Mo Jiuge and would deceive people.

“Mo Jiuge? Never heard of this name.”

The handsome young man glanced at him disdainfully, he wasn't a bit interested in his appearance.

“Here is the invitation card.”

Seeing his reaction Ye Feng took out the invitation card at once.

“Oh? This invitation card is originally meant for Huang Lao, anyway go in.

The handsome young man took his invitation card and looked at him again with a lot better attitude, he waved his hand to beckon Ye Feng to enter the courtyard.

Ye Feng pretended to be very normal, he strolled in by passing by that handsome young man. When he came inside, at that time, he really sensed the breath of martial artists of this world, apparently it seemed like the right place.

“Huang Lao, he must be the friend of Uncle Ou.....”

Ye Feng thought to himself, after entering the courtyard, there was only one path leading to a dilapidated wooden house, however it didn't seem like a place where trade fair could be conducted.

But when he entered the house, he saw one side of the cabin had a passage leading to the underground, although it was hidden but was a very beautiful spot.

“Wan'er, you finally came, we have been waiting for you for a long time.”

Just then, it seemed like that handsome young man saw someone and was quite excited.

Ye Feng was very curious, he turned his head to look and what he actually saw was one group of people just enter the courtyard which was unexpectedly headed by – that lovable oval faced beautiful young girl! It seemed as if that handsome young boy was very respectful to her.

This startled Ye Feng, he didn't dare to stay there any longer and he quickly walked along the passage.

Although the passage was very long and narrow, but what appeared before Ye Feng was a spacious underground hall, it was brilliantly illuminated, obvious modernized breath headed on, but in the hall the person's shadow was flickering. At a glance it looked like there were over a hundred people.

Ye Feng, wearing a mask, slowly walked in, he looked around in all the directions and felt that the hall was similar to a vegetable market, people were there everywhere with their stall properly set up, but not arbitrarily complex and chaotic, instead it was neat and orderly.

It wasn't the case that all of the people present in the hall were from the world of martial arts, such as in front of Ye Feng, there was a stall of fat man, he was really extremely fat and was constantly crying out to sell his things.

Ye Feng saw that the fat man was selling something like antiques, but his Ancient dragon Sword Ring didn't react at all. It seemed like these things were of no use to Ye Feng, but was really attracting the attention of many people, they were busy in negotiating and asking prices.

“This fat person should be similar to the status of Uncle Ou, I don't know from where do they get lots of antiques, and on top of that, they also expect to sell them at the high prices at this trade fair

Ye Feng shook his head and turned around to leave.

In such type of place, as long as there were useful things, the price would never be lowered, basically those who were qualified to participate in such a trade fair would surely make a lot of money, for example Uncle Ou A had half a spirit stone.

“Buddy, come this way.”

Just then, suddenly, a wretched thin man appeared in front of Ye Feng and said furtively: “I picked up a sky blue and white porcelain in the morning, would you like to go and have a look?”

Ye Feng saw his wretched appearance, he seemed monkey-like and fragile, with little to none cultivation whatsoever. Ye Feng did not know what the reason for him to be so careful, why didn't he want to expose his goods in front of everyone?

That sky blue and white porcelain must be something good but Ye Feng had no idea about it, neither did he care.

Ye Feng was a bit worried since no one had informed him anything about the martial arts thing, however meeting this guy was somehow good for him. He slightly nodded and followed the thin man. They eventually came to a remote corner in the hall.

Everyone in the hall were busy discussing about their own respective matters, nobody noticed them radically, however occasionally some people noticed them

and also casted strange looks at them, but finally ignored them altogether.

“Look, this is the best quality sky blue and white porcelain, just eating this can promote one’s cultivation equal to five years worth of cultivation. It costs you only five million, fair trade honestly.”

The thin man pulled out a plant from the cloth bag on his waist and said with a smile.

Ye Feng took a look, what the heck was this best quality sky blue and white porcelain, wasn’t this just a fragrant-flowered garlic? He had come from the world of Immortals, how he could get confused between fragrant-flowered garlic and medicinal herbs.

“You want to deceive me?”

Ye Feng’s eyes flashed coldly with anger, he said in an angry voice.

“Is this how a chivalrous person speaks? This is the sky blue and white porcelain, you saw it already, now you don’t want to buy it? Things don’t work this way.”

The thin man sneered loudly then he turned his head to the other side and hinted Ye Feng to look in that direction.

Ye Feng tilted his head in that direction, and to his surprise, he saw two ferocious men, with bare upper bodies, standing at one side. At this time, both of them were looking fiercely at him as if Ye Feng was a lamb, ready to be slaughtered.

“Hey buddy, do you know them?”

The thin man proudly said: “Jiangsu duo, they are called Tornado axe and Wolf sword, it is said that they have taken dozens of human lives! This sky blue and white porcelain is being sold on their request.....”

Obviously, Ye Feng was not dumb to not under his current situation?

Unexpectedly, it was blackmail!

Perhaps at this trade fair, this Jiangsu duo would not dare to attack. But clearly, if Ye Feng refused to buy this fragrant-flower garlic with 5 million now, then when he would leave the trade fair, they might come to trouble him.

Tornado axe seemed like an overwhelming guy, he looked quite ugly and ferocious-looking. There was a large and conspicuous double ax on his back. Wolf sword looks vicious, like an experienced killed who must have fought numerous battles without a doubt.

Ye Feng was standing far away from them, so it was a bit difficult to figure out how many years of cultivation they had, but still it could be estimated that their cultivation was quite highPresently he had no chance of winning against them, hence only sneak attacks would be worth a little.

Supposing, this thin man was considering Ye Feng as a greatly fat sheep (means extremely rich), what a pity, Ye Feng was just a cultivator, aiming to become an immortal, how could he possibly get trapped in this blackmail? Moreover, he could not manage to arrange five million anyway.

Suddenly an idea hit his mind, soon he thought of a safe escape strategy. As for now, he might as well try to actually draw out something from this fellow's mouth.

“If you don't want to die, answer my questions.”

Ye Feng groaned coldly, and in an instant, he grabbed the collar of the other party and said: “If you compel me, I, your father, will have to kill you first.”

Hearing this, the thin man shivered with fear.

Ch 30 Long Wan'er

Not far away, Jiangsu duo were standing, the sudden action of Ye Feng startled them. Although they were involved in all kinds of evil, but still in this trade fair, which was conducted by Long Wan'er, they could not dare to cause trouble in the hall.

(Lastvoice: 'Long' means 'Dragon' so this trade fair is being conducted by someone from Dragon family)

Therefore, they did not act rashly.

But that thin man was being forced by Ye Feng, but similarly, even he didn't dare to raise hue and cry. Because he was wrong in the first place, and if this matter caused commotion and came in the knowledge of Long Wan'er that they were blackmailing people in this trade fair, then all three of them would face serious consequences.

Shortly after that, Ye Feng got some satisfactory answers from the thin man.

It turned out that in China, there existed a hidden world of martial arts, a circle of martial artists, where people could practice martial arts, however there were also people like this thin man and that fat merchant, who did not practice martial arts at all but knew about this secret world.

Nowadays, all the major schools and families used to respect just their own value, outsiders had no means to obtain the martial art heart sutra from these major schools and families, so for outsiders, practicing martial arts was impossible. Revealing one's heart sutra to outsiders was considered a big crime

in the world of martial artists, and any such group or family was treated as a traitor and immediately disposed by the rest of the martial arts community.

Thus, in China, those who practiced martial arts were honored and held very high status and respect.

The strength division was the same in this world and in the World of the Immortals, but when it would to the practice of martial arts then martial artist in this world used inner qi rather than zhenqi.

Ye Feng had felt a strange power flowing inside the body of the oval faced maiden, which was different than zhenqi. However the power of inner qi was only half of the power of zhenqi. So now that Ye Feng had the cultivation of one-and-a-half year, he could easily compete with those martial artists of China, who possessed three years worth of cultivation or less!

Of course, willingly doing that would be none other than being stupid and reckless.

Ye Feng believes that whether it was agility type or other type of martial arts, the martial arts of this world were definitely inferior to the martial arts from the World of the Immortals. With the help of an immortal technique like 'Rapid shadow trace' and the red zhenqi sword of Dragon Sword Ancient Ring, if he had to play a sneak attack, no matter how much high the cultivation of his enemy was, he would be able to deal with them.

Finally, he inquired about "Huang Lao" and left the corner once he was satisfied.

Jiangsu duo was watching from the sidelines, they remembered this masked man firmly. This fellow dared to not give them face, so they would wait until the trade fair was over then kill him!

.....

Ye Feng returned to the venue and soon found Huang Lao.

He saw an old man standing before a stall with his eyes closed, wearing a grey robe, was over sixty years of age, had grizzled hair and beard.

The old man had very vigorously and tightly gripped his both hands. Ye Feng took a quick look at them and noticed that Huang Lao's hands were truly amazing and very powerful, hinting that he must have been practicing Kung Fu for a long time.

Huang Lao was an old friend of Ou A. He was also the person who arranged the invitation letter for Ou A, currently being used by Ye Feng. He had come from Zhejiang province, Mt. Tianzhu. Currently, he was 65 years old, he began cultivation when he was 40 years old and now he had 30 years of cultivation. He was an expert of palm method.

Ye Feng previously wanted to stay away from him, but now he decided to rely on Huang Lao.

Beside Huang Lao, there was a clever-looking young man standing at a stall and was dealing with that thin man from earlier. It seemed like he was the apprentice of Huang Lao.

Ye Feng stepped forward to look at their booth, but suddenly a pitch black broken blade caught his attention.

“Is this actually a sharp weapon?”

In the World of the Immortals, magic weapons were used by martial cultivators, but the point was that the magic weapons were very difficult to find, and not everyone could have them. Moreover under the category of magic weapons, the weapons were also divided into two ranks – ordinary weapons and sharp weapons.

The examples of ordinary weapons were kitchen knife, fruit knife, butcher knife *etc.* But the sharp weapons of a certain level held the power to cut even the iron like mud or easily cut the hair, for example in the ancient times, there was a rumor that there existed ten great swords in Chinese country, and as per the estimate of Ye Feng, the modern ordinary firearms were probably at this level.

So in other words, it could be said that the might of the pitch black broken blade, which was there on Huang Lao’s stall, might be compared favorably with an ordinary pistol!

Unfortunately, it was a broken weapon.

“Hello friend.”

At this moment, that clever youth saw Ye Feng coming toward their stall, he hurriedly stacked a smile on his face and began explanation: “This pitch black blade has been following master for many years, although it is broken now, but it still used to be at a sharp weapon rank, if you want it then you can have it for

100 million.”

Hearing him saying 100 million so casually, Ye Feng smacked his lips, 100 million?

It seemed like the people belonging to the martial arts world of China were really very rich, that was the reason why even a Broken Blade was being sold so expensively, if it would have been intact then they would surely sell it for 800 million.

No wonder why the other people would shake their heads before moving away from this stall, obviously because this Broken Blade wasn't worth the price. They were selling it so expensive because Huang Lao still was emotionally attached to it.

“Don't mind me, I'm just looking around.”

Ye Feng smiled and shook his head, then he asked from that young man: “I have some compounded drugs, but I have no stall to place them, could you place them in your stall? Then you will be entitled to 30% of the total sales”.

He then turned around and found that in the entire, there were very few people selling the compounded drugs personally, this made him chuckle to himself. He had arrived in this world, almost half a month ago, and depending on the resources provided by Heavenly Serpent Gang, he managed to obtain lots of expensive and rare medicinal herbs. Finally, he used a technique from the World of the Immortals and his own zhenqi to produce some crude compounded drugs.

These compounded drugs had of great benefits, they could be used in

treatment of various internal injuries and wounds, to restore zhenqi and so on. Of course, since these drugs were of extreme help in recovery of zhenqi so he kept few for his own use, while the remaining drugs were supposed to pull out money from the selling point.

“This.....”

At first, the young man hesitated a bit then said: “Only master can make a decision regarding this matter.”

The compounded drugs were quite rare in the world of martial arts and this masked man (i.e. Ye Feng) said that he wanted to sell them? If any problem occurred then others would surely blame Mt. Tianzhu.

Ye Feng looked at Huang Lao who was sitting nearby with his eyes closed. He thought, if at this time, some people performed an experiment then it would be good. His compounded drug's main effects could come in play only when the drug was mixed properly with the qi, but achieving this was way too difficult for others, moreover his compounded drug was extremely good in healing flesh wounds.

Just when he was thinking about all this, at the same time, suddenly two people started quarrelling in the venue hall. They were not far away from the stall where Ye Feng was standing.

One was a dark skinned young man and other person was a fat middle-aged man, clad in a western-style suit. The reason of quarrel was a mutual disagreement between them which later led to the mutual accusation on each other, thus this thing later on grew stronger and stronger, and finally resulted into a quarrel.

“Maybe I should add fire to the fuel and make them fight and hit each other? If someone gets injured then only I can test my drug’s effect. I will test it in the form of demonstration, which will also act as a convenient advertisement.”

Ye Feng thought in his mind.

Just when he wanted to act, a moist and crisp voice suddenly transmitted from the entrance hall. The voice belonged to a female and sounded very sweet, just like the voice of an oriole: “Hey you two, you are causing trouble in the trade fair hosted by our Dragon clan, are you so impatient to die?”

The crisp female voice, all of a sudden, attracted everyone’s attention.

Ye Feng looked up, indeed she was the same lovable oval faced young girl, she walked into the hall together with several people. They all moved toward that dark skinned young man and middle-aged fat person, who were quarreling.

“Long Wan’er has arrived!”

“Long Wan’er is here!”

People screamed one after another.

Ye Feng finally got to know that the oval faced maiden’s name was actually Long Wan’er.

Still wearing the white blue skirt, wrapped tight around her delicate body, her

front pair was plentifully tall and straight as if the cotton material was about to burst. The twins were stretched closely and squeezing too tightly into each other like they existed just to seduce men. The men on the scene couldn't help but swallow their own saliva.

Ye Feng couldn't help thinking of that day in the hotel when he had probed her chest to search for the golden leaf grass, the touch of that soft creamy and rich elasticity.....

Could it be that this Long Wan'er had quite a distinguished and honored identity?

"Well, maybe others are afraid of your Dragon clan but I am not."

Just then, a cold fiery voice came out, it was the voice of that dark skinned young man who was in the quarrel a moment ago. He was exhibiting a very arrogant look at Long Wan'er.

His words caused a commotion among the people in the hall!

"Oh really?"

Long Wan'er showed a faint smile while slowly walking toward him.

Ch – 31 Swift and fierce sword

Ye Feng was not a bit interested in beautiful women, but as he knew very clearly that irrespective of which world he was in, the strength was the most important thing. He didn't want to think too much about this stuff before he acquired enough strength.

For example, at present that dark skinned capable-looking young man was going to face tragedy.

“Do not attract my attention this way.”

Long Wan'er moved towards the opposite party, while curling up the corners of her mouth as she said: “I, Long Wan'er, am not interested in men who are weaker than me.”

As soon as that dark skinned young man listened to what she said, immediately, his complexion changed.

Indeed, like she just said, he already had the intention to attract the attention of her just by causing commotion to stir things up, but at this moment, he didn't expect that it would be easily seen through by her.

“Just because you spoke words of provocation to provoke me, it doesn't mean you really sincerely convinced me, that statement of yours isn't enough.”

Long Wan'er smiled tenderly: “I have heard that the boxing technique of God Fist Sect is matchless, it just so happens that I feel like testing it myself.”

Her voice just fell, and right then, everyone saw her fragrant body instantly rotating once, and in a flash, her leg swept towards that dark skinned young man, swiftly like the wind!

The dark skinned young man was totally speechless when he saw her displaying such a quick movement, however, he immediately took a stance and started condensing his entire body's qi in his fists. Actually, he wanted to use Chinese boxing to block her kick.

But before he could even think about throwing a punch, her fierce kick swept on his face, and she simultaneously used her other leg to kick him on his both legs, throwing him off balance and he suddenly and heavily fell on the ground. This whole thing happened very fast and neatly!

Ye Feng was watching everything from one side, he felt a slight faint pain in his chest. This scene reminded him of the incident, which happened days ago in the hotel room. Wasn't he also kicked in a similar fashion by Long Wan'er?

She then landed, her skirt slightly hiked up, revealing a pair of her sleek and smooth white calves, plus a pair of sandals on her exquisite delicate feet, each and every man standing around was staring at this sight without moving an inch, as if they were mummified.

8 years of cultivation.

At this time, just by watching her in action, Ye Feng got an idea about the strength of Long Wan'er. A mere thought about her true strength startled him a bit. Her kicking style was exquisite, her speed was extremely fast, she was remarkably swift and flexible, was this martial arts?

But right now, he somewhat hesitated.

One of the two main objectives that dragged him here to this trade fair was to inquire about the existence of martial arts in this world, which was basically completed. Another objective was to find the things he could use to enhance his cultivation, but unfortunately, he could not find anything useful until now.

And he also wanted to sell these compounded drugs. Ye Feng wouldn't have any hesitation if Long Wan'er had not been here. However, now, he was running out of time to show off, not to mention if she recognized him then he would be in serious trouble.

For a while, he deeply thought about it then finally decided to give up on selling his compounded drugs, it wasn't money that he needed right now, because the most important thing for him currently was his own safety.

"Well, our Dragon Clan has organized this small trade fair, so all of the guests will have to maintain an order and refrain from making trouble for us."

She finished saying this with a sweet smile on her face then looked around and Ye Feng's mask suddenly caught her attention. She slightly paused for a moment then turned away thinking that participating in the trade fair with a mask on, perhaps he wanted to keep his identity a secret.

Meanwhile, Ye Feng heaved a sigh of relief when he saw her turning away.

Long Wan'er and other disciples of Dragon clan began to maintain order in the venue hall so that no one would dare to cause any trouble again. Meanwhile,

that thin man, along with the Jiangsu Duo, was ready to leave the trade fair, but before leaving the hall, he maliciously stared at Ye Feng.

Ye Feng sneered secretly in his heart, so they wanted to gang up on him outside the trade fair? It won't be an easy task for them.

After that, he put on an act of randomly strolling around and checking out stuff.

In the entire trade fair, most of the stuff was jade ore concentrates, as well as some superficial compounded drugs. Except Huang Lao's pitch black broken Blade, mostly everything was being sold at tens of thousands or several hundred thousand. There were few good medicinal herbs with good healing effect but they were being sold at 3 million.

Apart from a veteran martial arts user like Huang Lao, the rest people present there were all young martial artists, along with some people like thin man, who only did business in the secret world of Chinese martial arts.

Ye Feng looked towards Huang Lao and saw that Huang Lao was walking with Long Wan'er and talking about something. He couldn't help but shook his head since his original plan was to rely on his compounded drugs to attract the attention of Huang Lao and form a relationship with him, so that in future, he could use this powerful connection to scare off Jiangsu Duo or any other possible threats that he might encounter in the world of martial arts.

But now, there was no need for that anymore. Even without Huang Lao, Ye Feng was confident enough to get rid of this Jiangsu Duo, because while he was wandering around in the trade fair, when he inquired about the so-called Jiangsu duo, he found out they only had 5 years of cultivation, hence he should be able

to deal with them.

These two guys were villains, many people had heard about their ferocity, they had taken dozens of lives, they would rob everything from the victims, also, no one knew how many young girls had been raped by them. If the time would come to dispose them off then Ye Feng wouldn't mind to remove few harmful pests from the world of martial arts.

Just when he was about to leave the trade fair, suddenly his phone rang. He pulled out to take a look, it was Su Menghan's call. This call was quite unexpected so quickly replied: "Hello?"

"Ye Feng! Ye Feng, where are you, come quickly to the People's Hospital....."

Su Menghan's hurriedly said in her crisp voice and immediately hung up the call, it seemed like there was some urgent matter.

Not good!

Ye Feng didn't think that she would hang up the phone like this, he instantly moved towards the doorway of the hall and hurriedly walked out of it. He was not worried about what was going on with Su Menghan, actually what worried him was that Su Menghan called out his name very loudly on the phone.

Meanwhile, Huang Lao and Long Wan'er were busy with their conversation, but when they suddenly heard these two words "Ye Feng", they hurriedly turned towards him and saw him moving out in a hurry.

"Stop right there!"

The complexion of Long Wan'er suddenly changed!

From the report of Chief Liu, she already knew about the name 'Ye Feng', besides she also knew that the golden leaf grass from the previous time was also taken by him. Although, she had promised that old man that she would no longer pursue him, however there was a condition!

Now that Ye Feng had come on his own initiative, how could she possibly let him off so easily?

"Stop him!"

She pursued Ye Feng hastily, the handsome youth was also with her, but his strength was not enough and his agility skill was more rotten, not only he could not keep up with Long Wan'er instead he stumbled and almost fell down. Right then, several disciples of Dragon clan saw Long Wan'er pursuing a masked man and also began to pursue him.

In the hall, there were over a hundred of people, they were all startled by this sudden commotion, they were confused and trying to guess the identity of this masked man, who made Long Wan'er so impatient.

Huang Lao wrinkled his eyebrows but didn't seem to care about it and continued to keep his eyes close and sit in repose.

At one side, the clever-looking youth was watching everything, he was lucky since he didn't allow the masked man to place his compounded drugs in his stall or else wouldn't it be like offending the Dragon Clan? Everyone knew that in

today's flourishing martial arts world, offending such a powerful and influential Dragon Clan was just like willingly courting death!

.....

Ye Feng ran along the passage of the hall, he was very vigilant in his heart as he was well aware that Jiangsu duo must be waiting for him outside the hall to ambush him, and he also had to worry about pursuers.

He tightened the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring on his finger, then took out several compounded drugs from his pocket and tossed them into his mouth. He started taking counter measures beforehand as he was expecting the fight to begin quite soon.

The moment he ran out of the small log cabin, he saw the two figures were standing proudly in front of him. One person was holding a double axe, known as Tornado axe, and the other man was with a sword, also known as Wolf sword, together known as Jiangsu duo! However they didn't know that it was someone called Ye Feng under this mask and Long Wan'er was pursuing him. So they weren't paying much attention to him, but both of them still appeared very ferocious, one must know that they were peerless villains and their hands were stained with blood of several people.

"Boy, handover your money, leave behind an arm, then you can leave this place!"

Tornado axe was trying to threaten Ye Feng to hand over the money, also giving him a hint that if he would try to offend the so called Jiangsu Duo, then the result could be fatal.

But Ye Feng didn't pay attention to them since he knew that a very dangerous pursuing team, led by Long Wan'er, was after him.

It was already too late!

He didn't want to be overtaken, so his only option now.....

In an instant, Ye Feng took his decision, he started channeling his zhenqi and condensing it simultaneously in his feet and also in his 'Ancient Dragon Sword Ring', meanwhile he cast out 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' leaving behind only a faint blurred afterimage, and at the same time, the 'Red Ancient Sword' flashed out!

The red flash startled Tornado axe, his heart was beating very fast, he hurriedly turned his head to his side and saw that his companion, Wolf sword, who had been with him for so many years, had his head chopped off and his headless body was spurting blood everywhere.

It was Ye Feng's swift and fierce sword attack!

Ch 32 Pursuit

When Long Wan'er came outside running all the way, she happened to see that greedy Wolf Sword, the sword in his hand was broken into two parts, and with a "bang", they soon soon fell on the ground, accompanied by his headless corpse falling on the ground as well. The whole courtyard was bathed in fresh blood.

Meanwhile that masked man, Ye Feng, was already out the courtyard and running away.

"Quick!"

Tornado Axe was sweating all over just by imagining that if Ye Feng's goal was him, then it would be his headless body lying on the ground!

He killed a man in just one sword strike.

"You guys deal with him, I will pursue him."

Long Wan'er clenched her teeth, and in a flash, her beautiful figure fluttered out of the courtyard and rushed towards Ye Feng to catch him up.

But now she had some suspicions that the guy in the mask might not be that Ye Feng from the hotel room. Because she knew, Ye Feng was a high school student who was easily be caught by the police. But this masked man could skillfully use a sword and so easily killed a very skilled swordsman, who was supposed to have five years of cultivation. No matter how flamboyant a newbie

was, it should impossible to progress so fast.

Long wan'er must investigate about this masked man who killed someone in the trade fair or else wouldn't it ruin the reputation of Dragon clan?

Several juniors from the Dragon clan came outside, but they remain startled after seeing the headless corpse of Wolf sword, however they immediately went into action. First of all, they must make sure that the corpse won't be found by the city police, their second aim was to catch the murderer to settle this case.

The Tornado axe's whole body was soaked up in cold sweat, he had never experienced such a moment where he was so close to death. When he came back to his senses, he found himself sitting in a small room while in front of him, there were several people of Dragon clan. They were inquiring him about what exactly happened there few minutes back.

He did not dare to conceal anything from them, he explained everything very hastily: "Earlier in the venue hall, we blackmailed that masked man, later he came out with his sword and killed my brother....."

"Did he use just a sword to kill him?"

Some people started inquiring.

"Yes, a red sword."

Tornado axe nodding his head.

“His sword cut off Wolf sword’s long sword into two parts quite easily. It seems that his sword is a sharp weapon, such a character is rarely seen nowadays.”

Some people frowned hearing his speculation.

“I know the identity of that man.”

Just then, the door of that small room opened up and that handsome young man from earlier rushed in. While panting heavily he said: “He is called ‘Mo Jiuge’ and has the invitation card of Huang Lao”

“Huang Lao?”

The Dragon clan’s people started looking at each other in bafflement, their complexion also changed since they knew it was very difficult to deal with that old man, Huang Lao.

.....

On the other side, the compounded drugs, swallowed by Ye Feng in the hall’s passage in order to restore his Zhenqi, took some time dissolving in his blood, but by now, they began restoring his consumed Zhenqi in the meridians.

He kept on running all the way, and soon he covered several kilometers and finally reached Langfang city centre. This place was crowded which was very convenient for his escape by blending in. This was one of lessons he had learned from the many years of experience in his own world.

However, that remote village was still 34 kilometres away from the city centre. So, until he reached that place he had to ensure that he wouldn't get captured by his strong pursuer, Long Wan'er, in the meantime.

"Stinky girl, I cannot imagine how quickly she is chasing me."

Ye Feng turned back to take a look and actually saw the beautiful figure of Long Wan'er, wearing a long skirt. She was running after him really very fast. In the absence of the technique 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace', even if he had been running at his maximum speed, he still wouldn't stand any chance against her speed.

Long Wan'er had a total 8 years of cultivation which could be felt from the tyrannical aura around her. Although she was a female, but she was running at an incredible high speed and moreover with light footsteps that not a trace of dust was spreading out. Just like the gentle flow of wind, she was getting close to him second by second.

"Ye Feng, stop right there!"

Ye Feng heard her clear and melodious voice.

"Girl of the Dragon clan, you have got the wrong guy."

He said this in a very low and deep voice. Obviously, he was trying to hide his true identity from her.

“Humph, it doesn’t matter who you are, your methods are cruel, you are an enemy of the martial arts world!”

She crooned lightly and it could be seen that she was gradually getting closer and closer to Ye Feng.

Hearing her saying such things caused disdain in his heart, could his methods be called cruel? In the World of the Immortals, no one was blamed even if someone was to kill a person or erase an entire family and so on. Moreover, in the current situation, it was the other party who annoyed him first, so naturally he couldn’t stop himself from behaving like he did. It what he did was cruel then so be it.

If he had not used that method to kill that greedy Wolf Sword, then the Jiangsu due would have ganged up on him and wouldn’t let him pass through, ultimately, he wouldn’t have been able to escape from there and would have been captured by Dragon clan.

He didn’t like the feeling of being captured by someone.

“Right now, my cultivation is still too low. Before I get powerful, I should make sure to annoy the people of Chinese martial arts world as little as possible and only when there’s a scope of getting treasures to promote my cultivation.....”

In order to kill Wolf Sword, he had to use ‘Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’ along with his ‘Ancient Dragon Sword Ring’. The overall zhenqi consumption was enormous, even the meridians present in his legs were a little bit sore. Under this current level of his cultivation, activating ‘Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’ once again would not be easy for him.

If he had the cultivation of five years, he could not only use 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' several times but he could also easily escape from Long Wan'er.

Something ran across his mind and he started looking for a narrow alley around him so that he could escape from her. She was just 10 metres behind him and if this trend would keep up then it would become impossible for him to get away from her.

Just by swallowing few compounded drugs, less than half of his zhenqi was restored. That pumped up the fire of strength in Ye Feng, and all of a sudden, he stopped, quickly turned around and fired a punch!

Long Wan'er, who was also running after him at a very speed, suddenly arrived very close to him and noticed this sudden and surprise attack, which startled her for a second. Before she could react, Ye Feng's fist, which was extremely fast, arrived in front of her in a fraction of a second!

Meanwhile, Ye Feng was busy in condensing his entire body's zhenqi into his 'Ancient Dragon Sword Ring'. He had a feeling in advance that the other party was going to dodge his attack surely, so he had already planned to use his sword simultaneously with his punch. Suddenly, the red light flashed and a red zhenqi sword instantly congealed out from the ring!

Tear it up!

Long Wan'er possessed eight years of cultivation and it was not just for show, even if she was in this urgent situation, she instinctively used her agility technique to barely avoid the danger at the key moment.

However, after the red sword light flashed, the thin cotton cloth on her chest was actually cut and formed an opening, suddenly exposing the snow-white color of her bare chest, which was now in the direct view of Ye Feng.

Suddenly, Long Wan'er realized something and shouted angrily: "You are courting your death!"

Hurriedly she used her hand to cover the front of her chest to cover up her snow-white skin from getting all exposed, while her eyes were constantly staring at Ye Feng. And at the same time, she also flung her leg to kick him!

Ye Feng thought, since he had already felt the touch of her chest, so what was the big deal if he saw it?

Ye Feng was actually in a surprised state since his sword attack completely failed to achieve the desired result. Her reaction time and agility skill were obviously beyond his expectation.

Seeing her kick coming at him, he rolled back and dodged the kick from her beautiful leg. He once again exhausted his entire body's zhenqi to congeal the red zhenqi sword so that he could hold it for a longer period.

But she managed to clearly see the weapon in Ye Feng's hand and quickly went few steps back.

In her life, she had never seen an expert like this masked man, who could manipulate his qi so flexibly to handle a sharp weapon. In the martial arts world, the existence of such an expert was simply like going against the heaven's will. Not even those old seniors with decades of cultivation could achieve such a level

of expertise in qi manipulation.

Ye Feng had an upper-hand in this battle, he was continuously wielding his sword and swinging horizontally, although this was a very chaotic form of swordplay, but she had to be very careful while dealing with it. But accidentally, he cut open the white bottom of her skirt, thereby exposing her two very beautiful snow-white legs, which unwillingly attracted his eyes towards them.

Long Wan'er was breathless and furious at this moment. She must hide her exposed snow-white flesh, so there was no way to display her true strength.

Just in a moment, several holes appeared on her white skirt and her snow-white skin was visible from everywhere, her skin was extremely attractive. While on the other side, Ye Feng's condensed zhenqi in his sword got exhausted and his red zhenqi sword suddenly disappeared without a trace.

"Let's see how you chase now."

Ye Feng smiled and started running at once.

Ch 33 Win an inch, want a foot

Originally, Ye Feng wanted to injure Long Wan'er to prevent her from chasing after him. But the current situation was comparatively better than his original plan. Now, there were lots of holes in her long skirt. Clad in this semi torn skirt, if she still kept on pursuing him, then her snow-white beautiful skin would certainly attract attention of the huge crowd present in that area, which was obviously not something a girl could endure easily.

Ye Feng turned back and saw her beautiful figure gradually disappearing in the distance. While on the other side, Long Wan'er was extremely angry, she was bitterly stamping her feet on the ground. With one hand, she was trying to hide her plump and white chest and her other hand was trying to cover her legs. While doing so, she was looking around while clenching her teeth tightly to think deeply about some countermeasures.

So, should she just let him run away like this?

This was impossible!

.....

Ye Feng kept on running all the way, and very soon, he reached the main road. He had already thrown away his mask and his 'Ancient Dragon Sword Ring' was back to normal. He then stopped a taxi and went directly to the People's Hospital.

Together with Heavenly Serpent Gang, Su Menghan took her cousin to the People's Hospital, but what happened after that, Ye Feng did not know anything.

What actually happened there which forced her to call him so impatiently? Due to that, he was almost captured.

Fortunately, Long Wan'er did not continue to pursue him. But Ye Feng knew that Su Menghan's actions were not intentional.

Ye Feng got out of taxi right at the entrance of People's Hospital. He thought of first finding a place to buy new clothes so that he could change his clothes before entering the hospital. He then called Su Menghan and asked: "What happened?"

"They have started fighting again, my cousin has been found addicted to drugs, please come quickly"

Su Menghan almost immediately picked up the phone and anxiously replied.

Ye Feng hung up the phone and quickly rushed inside. He quickly arrived at the nearby ward where Su Menghan and other were present.

He looked around and discovered that on both sides of the hospital ward entrance, a dispute was going on between the parents of Dai Gen and the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang. While Su Menghan was caught up in the middle of all this chaos, she was anxiously trying to settle this dispute all by herself.

The quarrel had also attracted the surrounding people to flock near the ward entrance.

"You people are the reason behind my son's bad condition, you must take

responsibility for this!”

Dai Gen’s mother was acting very rudely like a vixen. Since she was in power now, she had no intention to forgive them, thus she was making this unreasonable scene in the hospital.

“How are we responsible for this?”

The man in black sunglasses asked while suppressing his anger.

“At least pay for the damages, or do you want to just hit people and forget about it?”

Dai Gen’s mother was looking at the sunglasses man in a threatening manner, since Su Menghan was on her side so she was taking advantage of this, while, the opposite party couldn’t dare to argue with her.

“Aunt, regarding the medical expenses, I have already paid, cousin is alright now, so just let it go.”

Su Menghan was constantly persuading her Aunt to settle all this peacefully. Since she still had no idea how Ye Feng was related to Heavenly Serpent Gang. She thought that if her Aunt went too far and these men lost their cool then something tragic might happen.

“No, you still led Dai Gen towards drug addiction, so today you must take responsibility for this and pay for the damages.”

Dai Gen's mother was extremely angry and said in a bitter voice. It seemed as if the other party didn't pay up then they would certainly lose their lives at her hands.

"Dai Gen, you hang in there..... It's not good, he can't hold up anymore, cannot we give him drugs in small amount? Seeing him in this condition makes me very uncomfortable in my heart."

The painful voice of Dai Gen's father transmitted from inside the ward as well as a shaky painful voice of Dai Gen, struggling on the bed. It was quite obvious that Dai Gen was a big drug addict, so he was struggling and craving for drugs while his father was trying to suppress him.

"No, it's not good, he cannot take drugs again....."

Su Menghan firmly refused him. She was basically clamped between two sides, on one side were her relatives and on other side were the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was really too painful for her to deal with both sides at the same time. Now, she really felt like crying, she was really hoping for Ye Feng to come quickly.

"No, no, if something happened to him then will you take responsibility for it?"

Dai Gen's mother said this bitterly and then stared at Su Menghan, she dragged the sunglasses man hurriedly and said: "Help him quickly, he can't bear anymore....."

"What's going on here?"

At this time, Ye Feng walked up to them and said. When the middle-aged woman saw him, the unruly look immediately vanished from her face and her complexion paled. Ye Feng then looked inside the hospital ward and saw a female nurse and Dai Gen's father. Both of them were very trying their best to suppress Dai Gen to lie down on the bed.

Bulged out blue veins could be seen on Dai Gen's whole body, he was so in so much pain that he wanted to crash into the wall to commit suicide, but actually cannot achieve it. He was unceasingly struggling and violently swinging on the bed.

Su Menghan as well as the several members of Heavenly Serpent Gang was extremely happy to see that Ye Feng was finally here, because they were all really fed up by now!

Without any hesitation, Ye Feng walked into the ward and hit on the back of Dai Gen's head. In just one hit, instantly, the world turned very quiet and relaxing. There was no longer any struggling noise or painful screams because Dai Gen had immediately fainted on the spot.

"How could you do this to Dai Gen!"

Dai Gen's parents simultaneously reacted and called out in alarm.

"Let him rest quietly, he will wake up after some time."

Ye Feng indifferently said.

The nurse reached out to probe a little, but she was also relieved, because

finally, the patient was in relief, and it was peaceful for other patients as well.....

Ye Feng turned back, looked at Su Menghan and members of Heavenly Serpent Gang and said: “All right, you all can go back. Su Menghan, we will leave as well. Have you paid the medical expenses?”

“Yes

Su Menghan lowered her head and looked somewhat embarrassed, because the big amount of 200,000 didn't belong to her, Ye Feng lent it to her. After admitting in the hospital, she found out that even the amount of 200,000 was insufficient so he had to request Heavenly Serpent Gang to pay the rest.

The hospital took full onetime payment for surgery, hospital expense and so on, most important was brain stem damage and even the slightest carelessness could send Dai Gen into a vegetable state. Not to mention, this was the case of drug addiction.

“Let's go.”

Ye Feng waved his hand to say goodbye to the man in black sunglasses and others. They quickly dispersed with happy expressions on their faces.

Usually, if they were to face such an unreasonable bitch, then they would have slapped her away long time ago, but just because of Ye Feng, they didn't dare to do anything and were stuck with that vixen for so long. The whole time, they simply felt like dying from extreme rage building inside them.

(Lastvoice: The above paragraph is meant for Dai Gen's mom, not Su Menghan :P)

"Hey, do not even think about leaving, you better pay for the damages, I tell you!"

Dai Gen's mother hastily rushed outside and tried to stop them.

"I warn you."

Ye Feng noticed her talking endlessly, he suddenly looked back and said in a cold voice: "You must learn to be content, do not push your luck, do not reach out for a yard after taking an inch, do not wait to get into big trouble because at the end of such path, only regret awaits you."

Indeed, Heavenly Serpent Gang had already done enough. Dai Gen owed them a big amount of 300,000, which they already wrote off. They also helped Su Menghan while paying the medical expenses, how could this middle-aged woman dare to ask for more?

Ye Feng's ferocious argument left Dai Gen's mother in a scared and stupefied state, she immediately shut her mouth.

Su Menghan saw this but didn't say anything. Before, even she thought the same thing that her aunt was going too far, but she couldn't bring herself to say the same words as Ye Feng.

"Look, the matter ends here. Even if he has become a drug addict, it's not like this is not his fault at all, maybe he has his own reasons for this."

Ye Feng said then gave a cold glance to Dai Gen's parents then held Su Menghan's frail hands and departed together with her.

Dai Gen's mother look at their back profiles while they were leaving, but even now, she was not quite convinced. She turned towards her husband and shouted: "Look at your niece, she doesn't understand a single custom of your family."

"I wonder who doesn't understand?"

Even Dai Gen's father was unable to continue watch this. Did these people have any obligation to help them? Now, they help them out by paying more than 200,000 worth of medical expenses, when his own blood brothers were not willing to help him!

"You still talk bad about the people who helped us, you devil!"

The middle-aged woman suddenly cried: "You look at our Dai Gen, what are we supposed to do in case he slips into the vegetative state..... Even if he is cured, how are we supposed to cure his drug addiction.....?"

Dai Gen's father remained silent. He looked at his wife and thought that if something like that really happened, would her curses and scolding do any good to help them?

.....

Ye Feng and Su Menghan continued to hold hands and went all the way out of the hospital, her complexion was slightly red, she was blushing and also trying to find meaning in Ye Feng’s actions. Why did he hold her hand all of a sudden, was there a deeper meaning hidden in this?

If something like this had happened earlier then she would certainly be very offensive, but after coming to Langfang and experiencing a series of events, she had actually started to accept Ye Feng in her heart.

“Ye Feng, stop!”

When they arrived at the large entrance of hospital, a beautiful figure suddenly stopped in front of the two, she was panting heavily but had finally managed to catch up with him, it was Long Wan’er!

.....

Chapter 34 Jealousy

At this time, Long Wan'er was clad in a relatively loose white shirt with tight clasp buttons and had put on a black lace skirt, covering up to the knee, revealing only two parts of her white smooth leg.

The price tag was still tied to the shirt collar, showing that she must have been in a hurry to buy the clothes and then she directly put on the new clothes over the previous ragged skirt, which was still tightly wrapped on the inside. Several small cloth strands was blown outside by the wind from time to time.

And, at the time, her cute ponytail was also in a somewhat disheveled condition. Her beautiful eyes were spouting fire while looking at Ye Feng, and with her head held up, she stood upright with her chest propping up a wonder arc under the loose white shirt. It seemed as if her beautiful figure was shining extraordinarily under the nightfall street light, making her appearance especially charming.

A beautiful woman was blocking the way in front of the hospital entrance so it naturally aroused the interest of many people.

“Ye Feng, who is she?”

At this time, Su Menghan seemed very anxious. When she saw Long Wan'er, all of a sudden, she became vigilant and tightened her grip on Ye Feng's hand.

She could not help thinking, what did Ye Feng actually do? Why did this woman in disheveled look come looking for him and looked angry as well?

Originally, she was very pleased to hold hands with Ye Feng but now it seemed like Ye Feng was already tangled up with another woman.

“It’s you?”

When Ye Feng saw Long Wan’er, he did not panic and said: “So it’s you, what’s the matter, are you being chased down by someone?”

This, of course, was an act in order to get rid of the suspicion of him being the murderer.

He had already taken off the mask and changed clothes before entering the hospital, plus he also had a trump card. Basically, he had enough confidence to make the opposite party to not suspect him temporarily.

Long Wan’er lightly crooned while her eyes were covetously fixated on him: “Stop acting and come with me, do not compel me to take severe measures!”

“Crazy bitch, Su Menghan, let’s ignore her and leave.”

Ye Feng gave her a baffled look then clasped Su Menghan’s soft hands to leave.

But Ye Feng never thought that at this moment, Su Menghan was extremely jealous of Long Wan’er. There was a fire of jealousy burning inside her heart, she instantly suppressed the feeling of gratefulness in her heart towards Ye Feng and threw off his hand. She stared at him and said: “First you make it clear, what’s

this all about.”

Ye Feng didn't have a choice so he had to say: “Last time, I saw her faint near the school so I helped her by renting a hotel room for her to rest, but that Tian Youliang gave false report to the police”

Su Menghan immediately remembered of how the last time, Tian Youliang had publicized the news about Ye Feng being involved in prostitution. So this was the real story behind that rumor?

But then why did this beautiful woman in disheveled appearance come looking for him and why did she look so angry? She felt that Ye Feng was deceiving her, but when she looked into his eyes, suddenly, her heart thumped. It seemed like deep down in her heart, she believed in him.

Anyway, Ye Feng wanted to get rid of this disheveled beauty, right? Regarding her other questions, she would ask later.

“Ok, let's go.”

A sweet smile bloomed on Su Menghan's face and she held his arm to leave.

Long Wan'er saw this and was still stubbornly blocking their way: “You don't want to acknowledge? Well.”

As the eminent leader of the younger generation of Dragon clan, she always had a vigorous and resolute disposition. At this time, when she saw that Ye Feng stubbornly refused to acknowledge his crime, she suddenly lifted her right leg and aimed a heavy cross-kick at Ye Feng!

When Ye Feng saw the kick aimed at him, without any hesitation, he immediately pulled Su Menghan behind himself and boldly stood there to take on her kick.

“Bang” With a loud sound, Ye Feng received the heavy kick on the waist and his entire body was sent flying several meters away, then heavily fell on the ground.

“Ye Feng!”

Su Menghan was extremely shocked, she quickly ran up to him and held him. She actually saw fresh blood flowing out from the corners of his mouth. The blood clearly indicated that he was seriously injured.

“What?”

Long Wan'er frowned, why didn't he resist? If he was really that masked man who killed Wolf sword in a blink of an eye, then it would have been very easy for him to dodge her kick. In the event of not dodging her kick, it was possible for him to have died on the spot!

She quickly walked forward and caught Ye Feng's wrist, then began to inspect his inner qi.

(Lastvoice: Ye Feng has 'zhenqi' which is two times stronger than 'Inner qi')

Soon, her complexion slightly changed.

“Ordinary person?”

Long Wan'er pulled back her hand, bitterly turned around, hesitated for a moment then finally left.

Su Menghan, who was standing nearby, seemed vigilant and ready to act anytime. She was annoyed in her heart when she Long Wan'er escaping from there. She decided to report this to the police right away but changed her mind because right now, taking care of Ye Feng was the most important thing for her.

“Ye Feng, are you okay?”

Su Menghan leaned forward and asked in a worried tone.

“I am fine.....help me in finding a place to rest”

Ye Feng could feel that he had received some minor internal injuries from the kick, but a good few of his meridians were broken, making him to vomit blood.

Fortunately, he had already activated the immortal technique called ‘Covert kill technique’, which completely concealed his cultivation and thus dispelled her suspicion all of a sudden.

This ‘Covert kill technique’ was his trump card!

Considering the current level of his cultivation, he barely managed to use this technique and so it caused big damage to his meridians.

While 'Covert kill technique' was active, both his zhenqi and cultivation were completely concealed, making him no different from an ordinary person. How could an ordinary person possibly kill a martial artist like Wolf sword?

This immortal technique was widely used for assassination in the World of the Immortals, and in this situation, Ye Feng used it appropriately.

"Do you want to go back to the hospital?"

Su Menghan asked anxiously when she saw him vomiting blood. Shouldn't he go to the hospital and get treatment?

"Go to the hospital? Do you have money?"

Ye Feng coughed up blood and held her to stand up.

"All spent....."

Su Menghan hesitated, indeed, they didn't have money to admit Ye Feng in the hospital? But she suddenly changed her mind and quickly said: "I can tell my dad to admit you"

"Well, forget it, why take so much trouble, let's just rent a hotel room and rest tonight."

Ye Feng shook his head, looked up but saw a lot of people around, some of them were taking their pictures so he quickly wiped off the fresh blood from the

corner of his mouth. After that, along with Su Menghan, he hastily got out of there.

This whole year, there was certainly no shortage of nonsensical news in the media.

Ye Feng imagined, in a while, the news channels would flash his photographs with a title like “The man caught two timing and kicked so hard that he spat blood near the hospital entrance”

Fortunately, the pictures weren’t very clear because they were taken hastily by mobile phones in the dim light of night.

Ye Feng was leaning casually onto Su Menghan while walking on the street, looking for a hotel. They used their identity cards to rent a hotel room. They had to use the last remaining money left with her.

After entering the room, Ye Feng immediately sat tightly on the sofa, pulled out a good few compounded drugs and swallowed them. Now he was ready to heal his injuries.

Today, he beheaded Wolf sword, offended Long Wan’er and the Dragon clan, he had been quite impulsive lately and must think carefully, there were a lot of loopholes, but in fact, from the very beginning, he had thought of the consequences of this series of events, and right now, he was thinking of ways to deal with them.

Su Menghan looked at Ye Feng and seemed quite worried about him. She not only prepared a wet towel for him, but also quickly boiled water for him in a pot.

She appeared delighted while taking care of Ye Feng.

Poor girl, she herself did not know what kind of feelings she held for Ye Feng in her heart. Initially, she was undoubtedly disgusted of him, but after whenever she was facing danger, Ye Feng would always dutifully stand in front of her. Whenever she remembered those moments, her ignorant heart would start beating rapidly.

Mere the thought of how Ye Feng was kicked by that disheveled beauty near the hospital entrance would make her restless and feel uneasy.

There was no doubt that she was jealous, and this jealousy was not light.

Ye Feng and that beauty, in the end what happened between them which led to the buildup of so much resentment between the two? Could it be that this was the so called thoughtless sex first and abandonment later.....

.....

Ch 35 School beauty's mind

Long Wan'er returned all the way to the trade fair. Deep within her heart, she was extremely angry, and at the same time, ashamed of herself.

She was the leader of the young generation of Dragon Clan, how could she possibly go through such an experience? Unexpectedly tonight, that masked man had toyed with her quite a lot, this was really hateful!

She firmly believed in her inspection that Ye Feng was just an ordinary person, she could never be wrong about this.

Depending on this point, she had a solid reason to believe that the masked man and Ye Feng were absolutely two different people! Because, in this world of martial arts, it was not at all possible to conceal one's cultivation by using any kind of method.

"Judging by the nature of that old man, I guess he wouldn't dare to teach his grandson to practice martial arts."

Long Wan'er thought to herself: "It seems like previous time, we accidentally meet once again..... Humph, that masked man, if I ever get to know about his identity, then he should consider himself as dead."

She finally returned to the entrance of trade fair courtyard, took one step inside and immediately saw that handsome young man coming quickly to welcome her. But seeing her disheveled appearance, a surprised look appeared on his face.

“Long Wan’er, did u chase after that guy?”

He hurriedly asked.

“Long Xian, when will you start using your brain?”

She crooned lightly and said: “Just look at my appearance, doesn’t it tell you whether I chased after that masked guy or not?”

“Well, that is also right.”

That handsome young man, Long Xian, scratched his head in a somewhat awkward manner and said: “I know that masked man’s name, he is called Mo Jiuge and he was one of the guests invited by Huang Lao.”

“Mo Jiuge?”

She frowned after hearing this strange name, was there really such a skilled swordsman present in the world of martial arts?

“Huang Lao said that Mo Jiuge is his friend from long ago, but he was kind of a loner since he was not in the contact of anyone for a very long time, so reputation is not significant.”

Long Xian quickly explained this to her.

“Huang Lao?”

Long Wan'er asked.

"He just now left the trade fair."

Long Xian said in a somewhat helpless manner. Considering Huang Lao's cultivation, at present on the scene, no one should be able to stop him.

"Ok, got it."

Long Wan'er lightly nodded her head: "Did you guys dispose off the corpse?"

The handsome young man happily smiled and said: "All these things have been buttoned up, I, Long Xian, can handle such type of matters quite well."

"Humph."

The Long Wan'er crooned then once confirming that there was no need for her to stay there, she turned around and walked away.

She really had suppressed plenty of anger today, and not just that, she also kicked that Ye Feng, perhaps now his grandfather might come to inquire about it so she must do everything possible to deal with him, which was really bothersome.

She thought of when she heard 'Ye Feng' when the masked man was in the trade fair answering the phone call. Now she knew that Mo Jiuge and Ye Feng was not the same person, but there definitely was some connection between

them. It might be possible that Ye Feng had given those three golden leaf grasses to Mo Jiuge.

In that phone call, she had faintly heard “People’s Hospital”, although she couldn’t succeed in pursuing the masked man to the hospital, but who would have thought that she would end up kicking Ye Feng, not only she failed to capture Mo Jiuge but she also kicked Ye Feng and hence caused a big trouble for herself.

Right now, she just wanted to find a place to take a good bath and change clothes to the ones she liked.

Just the thought of that masked man would turn her so mad that she wanted to smash things around her.

“Mo Jiuge, the next time we meet, you will be dead!”

She thought and a cold look flashed in her eyes.

.....

At midnight, Ye Feng finally recuperated his meridians completely and restored them to the original state.

He lightly breathed out and opened his eyes.

The compounded drugs took a lot of time in restoring his zhenqi to its original form and repairing meridians completely, although he had used his connection

with Heavenly Serpent Gang to obtain these herbs but their cost was not less.

That Scarred face man had been given the time of just two weeks to collect a variety of herbs, it took more than two million for him to collect them, however they had almost been used up by Ye Feng tonight.

Of course, compared with the cost of the herbs, the value of the compounded drugs was apparently much higher. If one could find sales channels, then there would certainly be a guarantee that these drugs would sell in millions!

Whenever there would be a shortage of money, he could look for a path to sell these compounded drugs to the people of the martial arts world, but before that, he must wait level up his cultivation and become capable enough to protect himself.

“It seems just like the World of the Immortals, there are only a handful of experts who walk outside and they rarely stir things up to cause problem. They are never caught in any kind of trouble. So long as one can achieve the cultivation of 10 years, it should be enough to guarantee one’s own security.”

Ye Feng deeply thought to himself, from today’s experience in the trade fair, he could now make a conjecture about the current status of martial arts in this world.

In the World of the Immortals, if anyone wanted to quickly level up his cultivation then all he needed was to just eat some precious medicinal herbs and so on, but that was not realistic. Instead, the most effective way to rapidly grow one’s cultivation in that world was to practice!

In the World of the Immortals, the practicing speed to level up the cultivation could also be increased. There were few big factions, they could even double the practicing speed, and on top of that, the effect would be remarkable. There were many old cultivation freaks in the World of the Immortals, who used to stay in the blessed spot and practice all year round without going out.

And now in this martial arts world as well, it seemed like the situation was most like the same. Huang Lao, from Zhejiang province, Mt. Tianzhu, wasn't he known as the so-called seventy-second pearl of China?

Ye Feng opened his eyes, moved slightly and then tried to wake up Su Menghan, who was actually sitting beside him on the sofa but had fallen asleep.

"You woke up, are you feeling any better?"

Su Menghan worriedly asked while rubbing her eyes.

"Relax, everything is all right."

Ye Feng replied to her with a smile on his face as he was feeling a bit sorry seeing her so worried and concerned about him.

"Really?"

Su Menghan raised her head and her sleepiness vanished in an instant, she started rubbing and massaging his body all over in order to check his injuries but she realized that he wasn't feeling any pain. She finally felt relieved seeing him all better now.

Ye Feng looked at her actions and found it funny: “It seems like you’re taking advantage of me...”

“What are you saying?”

Su Menghan’s face suddenly turned red, hurriedly she pulled back her hands, but soon, something came in her mind and her complexion changed. She asked directly: “You haven’t explained yet, just who in the world was that beautiful woman?”

“Don’t ask about this, sometimes not knowing is better.”

Ye Feng shook his head and said.

He was well intentioned, involving Su Menghan in the world of martial arts, in spite of knowing that she was leading a modern life in this modern world, was not at all a good idea. However, unfortunately, Su Menghan didn’t thinking so because she thought that Ye Feng and Long Wan’er had a secret.

“Really?”

Su Menghan was somewhat disappointed with his reply, she stood up and said: “Then consider this as finished, I want to sleep now, you rent another room.”

There was no doubt that she was in a hurry.

“It’s just, I thought about so many things, but I never expected that it was all a self deception, alas.....”

Originally she thought that if Ye Feng came up with a reasonable explanation then she would be willing to accept him. But now, by no means she could accept him when he was together with that beautiful woman.

In order to prevent any kind of accident, she didn’t want to be together with Ye Feng in the night. Hence, she needed a separate room.

“Well, then remember to get up early tomorrow, since we have to go back to Yanjing.”

Ye Feng was somewhat disappointed, he got up and walked away. He had a feeling that now she hated him.

“Ok.”

Su Menghan nodded as she saw him going out of the room. She was feeling very uncomfortable since lots of complicated thoughts were running in her mind.

With a great difficulty, she had made a favorable impression of Ye Feng in her heart with a great difficulty, but now, wasn’t it like the school beauty’s sweet and pure first love ended right after beginning?

Ye Feng was not at all aware about this school beauty’s thoughts, otherwise if he knew that she liked him then he would definitely explain things to her. Sadly, things went wrong between the two, not to mention Ye Feng was also very much fond of this good-hearted girl.

In the World of the Immortals, Ye Feng had never dealt with any girl, so at this time, he naturally couldn't correctly guess what was going on in Su Menghan's mind, instead he made an assumption that she disliked him.

He went out of the room and just wanted to go to the front desk to rent a room to rest for the night. But when he looked up, he actually that the door to the opposite room was open and there was bright light shining inside. An old man was sitting on the sofa, sitting in repose with eyes closed.

“Huang Lao? Not good.....”

Ye Feng was immediately startled.

Ch 36 Ye clan in the past

When Ye Feng looked up and saw the old man, Huang Lao, at the same time, Huang Lao also raised his head to look at him, their eyes suddenly met.

“What should I call you, Ye Feng or Mo Jiuge?”

Huang Lao indifferently asked this, he then shifted his gaze and relentlessly fired his stare at Ye Feng.

“Old man, probably, I haven’t seen you before, right?”

Ye Feng smiled while saying so, he tried his best to pull a superficial act just to prove that he really hadn’t seen him before.

“Is that so?”

Huang Lao crooned loudly: “I am Ou’s friend from Mt Tianzhu Huang Province. You can fool others but you cannot hide the truth from me, are you really Mo Jiuge?”

“Sorry, Mo Jiuge is just a friend of mine whom I meet occasionally. But are you looking for him?”

Ye Feng was standing in the doorway in a state of alert as he had a feeling that the opposite party could launch an attack any moment. Huang Lao had 30 years of cultivation so obviously Ye Feng was far from being his match. However he had a curiosity to know the goal which brought this old man here.

Huang Lao carefully looked at Ye Feng's face, it didn't seem like he was lying which startled him, he hesitated: "You're not?"

"No, I am not."

Ye Feng shook his head.

"Well, even I told that old codger, how you can possibly practice....."

Huang Lao sighed and said: "Do you know where I can find Mo Jiuge?"

"How would I know? He has always been very elusive, who appears and disappears unpredictably. It's always he who finds me, not the other way round."

Ye Feng shrugged his shoulders, but at the same time, a doubt took birth in his heart regarding that old codger, mentioned by the other party, could it be that this old codger was his grandfather? So it appeared like there were some people in the world of martial arts who knew about him and what kind of status he held?

At least, they knew that he was not some ordinary person.

"Well, if he comes looking for you, then you convey my message to him."

Huang Lao stood up and said in a low voice: "Killing that greedy Wolf Sword is not a big deal. But if you want to be a part of Jianghu, just come to Mt Tianzhu

and look for me, otherwise the Dragon Clan will never give up. Goodbye!”

Finally, after finishing his talk, Huang Lao’s stature moved like the wind, it didn’t feel like he was over 60 years. In a flash, he arrived at the doorway, brushed with Ye Feng, passed through and suddenly disappeared from that place.

But suddenly, Huang Lao extended his hand in order to grab Ye Feng’s arm!

However, Ye Feng didn’t hesitate to use the “Covert kill technique”!

Covert kill technique was not the type of immortal technique which could only be used for assassinations, it was also used to camouflage oneself as an ordinary person. It was like hiding in the crowd and waiting for the right opportunity to act. At this moment, all of the energy flowing in the meridians within his body suddenly stopped, his Dantian was instantly polluted as well, thereby successfully camouflaging him as an ordinary human being.

“So you really.....”

Huang Lao finally believed that Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge were not the same people.

Merely a single strike of the sword was capable enough to kill that Wolf Sword, how could an ordinary man possibly achieve that?

After confirming this, Huang Lao took sudden footsteps, his whole body seemed to be floating and went far away, and in an instant, he completely disappeared from the corridor.

“Fuck!”

Ye Feng cursed out loudly, he reluctantly displayed his ‘Covert kill technique’ but since used at such a low cultivation level, his meridians were unable to withstand the load and were severely damaged. If Ye Feng would keep on using this technique again and again, then very soon, this would negatively affect his body.

But he knew that if he hadn’t displayed covert kill technique at this time, then he would be facing a bigger trouble right now.....

“I am only waiting to achieve 5 years of cultivation, then I can very easily display techniques like Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace and Hidden Kill Technique. But how should I promote my cultivation rapidly?”

Ye Feng clenched his teeth while thinking so. Earlier, he obtained golden leaf grasses and the half piece of spirit stone, but only by coincidence. In the World of the Immortals as well, he never had so much luck.

In order to promote the cultivation quickly, orderly and routinely practice was a very slow method. Besides, he must wait till the university graduation to achieve five years of cultivation, but that was a very long period of time, so obviously he might not wait that longer.

“As soon as I go back, I will ask Ou B about the place from where he obtained that half spirit stone. He can tell me about that place, certainly it would be somewhere in the immortal paradise. If I find out the hidden source of spirit stones then I should be able to progress twice with half the effort..... ”

Ye Feng felt relieved and also deactivated the covert kill technique.

Just when he thought of going to the front desk to rent a room, suddenly a gust of wind blew in the corridor!

This gust of wind was faster than Huang Lao. Ye Feng didn't even get enough time to respond and suddenly a vigorous and powerful hand gripped his arm.

This feeling, resembled a bit like.....

Ye Feng cursed loudly and thought that the old man had come once again to visit him.

If this sneak attack was not done by his grandfather then who else could it be?

He failed to activate Covert Kill Technique at the crucial time, poor boy, moreover his one and half a year of cultivation had already been exposed to the other party.

“Little brat! Who taught you this technique?”

A serious and old voice transmitted into the ears of Ye Feng and it was followed by a solid force which suddenly pushed him inside the room.

Ye Feng swayed like a carp back and forth to set out, he turned back to look and actually saw an old man wearing a gray outfit, standing on the doorway as if blocking it, had straight eyebrows slanting upwards, sharp eyes like an eagle,

very swift and fiery vision, tall and straight stature. The way he was standing there, people might think that he was like a ten thousand years old motionless palatial!

This time, he finally saw the true colors of his grandfather.

“You, yourself, will destroy your Dantian, otherwise I, Ye Wentian, will personally act!”

Ye Wentian was Ye Feng’s grandfather, the way he was speaking was very awe-inspiring and was constantly staring at Ye Feng.

“I don’t understand, I am your grandson, then why?”

Ye Feng acted very coldly and asked in a puzzled manner.

Himself destroy his Dantian? He absolutely did not want to do that, because deep within in his heart, he had always thought of one day returning to the World of the Immortals. He couldn’t put down the memories of the time when he had been constantly together with his beautiful female master for more than ten years

“Do you really want to know? Good, then I will tell you.”

Ye Wentian crooned loudly then he paced into the room and conveniently locked the door.

“In the past, Ye clan used to be a big aristocratic clan in the world of martial

arts, but unfortunately, a night of destruction arrived which destroyed everything. I, Ye Wentian, have managed to preserve the Ye clan till now by signing off a deal with the other party that if you don't practice martial arts, they will not come after you.....”

Hearing this suddenly gave a powerful shock to Ye Feng's mind.

So this world's Ye Feng actually belonged to a clan, which, in the past, was actually considered a big aristocratic clan in the world of martial arts?

As for the reason behind the destruction of clan, he asked his grandfather but didn't get a reply, but Ye Feng could make a guess. Now he finally understood why Huang Lao said those words and why his grandfather asked him to destroy his Dantian.

Once he started his practice, then that would definitely attract the attention of those hostile forces. Preventing him from practicing was just for his own safety purpose.

“Do you think I, Ye Wentian, is some coward who has given up on his revenge?”

Ye Wentian snorted and said: “Jianghu's man has an unpredictable heart, they are playing games from all sides and their situation is complicated, there's no need for you to know. As long as know, I am here for you, so”

“Wait a sec.”

Ye Feng raised his hand and said: “I have a way to hide my own cultivation so I

don't need to destroy my Dantian, right?"

"Well, I saw when Huang Lao was inspecting you."

Ye Wentian disdainfully said: "He didn't find out that you little bastard was using a technique. However, I clearly saw through your little trick. For being prepared against contingencies, I have no other choice but to cripple you."

"Go cripple your sister."

Ye Feng said without hesitation: "If you force me, I will commit suicide! Don't you want to kindle our clan? If I want to die, you cannot always come to stop me can you?"

"You!"

Ye Wentian stared at him angrily: "Little bastard, your courage is growing bigger and bigger!"

"Thank you very much."

Ye Feng did not flinch while both were mutually staring into each other's eyes.

Ch 37 Crafty old man

Finally, Ye Feng displayed the 'Covert Kill Technique' in front of his grandfather so that he could inspect him properly.

Even his grandfather, Ye Wentian, couldn't feel anything even though Ye Feng was a martial cultivator! Moreover, he just felt that the strength present in Ye Feng's body didn't seem to be the same as inner zhenqi.....

"Who taught you?"

Ye Wentian inquired.

"An expert living in seclusion."

This reminded him of his beautiful female master from the World of the Immortals, suddenly his expression changed since he turned a bit sad: "Grandfather, even your cultivation is inferior to her."

"Is that so?"

Ye Wentian frowned a little because he didn't believe in what Ye Feng just said. Although he was not considered at the top of martial arts world but he was still a first-class master.

Was it possible that there was an expert living in seclusion that possessed higher skill and cultivation than his?

However, Ye Wentian did not ask too much, just helplessly said: “Well, since you have already embarked on this road and have found a way to hide your cultivation, this old codger won’t interfere anymore... However, you little brat, you have to be careful and never let other people catch you. Especially the Dragon Clan, understood?”

Dragon Clan?

Ye Feng did not ask anything, just nodded: “Yes, I know.”

“Right, just memorize this number, it belongs to an old friend of mine, later if you have anything to ask then you can ask him for help.”

After saying that, Ye Wentian took out his cell phone to find a contact number to hand it over to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng saw this and was a bit startled, what the hell, this old codger had a mobile phone?

“What happened, why do you look so surprised? Little brat, quickly record this number in your phone, this old man’s time is very precious.”

Ye Wentian gave a light tap on the back of Ye Feng’s head and said in a serious tone.

Ye Feng helplessly looked at the number and noticed that the contact name was called “Lin Hongchuan”. His heart suddenly moved and he directly opened

his mouth to ask: “Grandpa, isn’t this Lin Hongchuan from the Yanjing city’s first clan, the Lin Clan?”

“Yes, he is.”

Ye Wentian nodded: “We have reached an agreement, when you get admitted to the Yanjing University then we will betroth his granddaughter to you.”

“Wait, wait, wait.”

Ye Feng waved his hands hastily, he felt very uncomfortable in his heart. Any modern young person of this world would react the same way if they were suddenly faced with the idea of arrange marriage, they would obviously not feel well about it.

“I’m a talented guy, do you think that I would just give in to this?”

Ye Feng thought that who knew whether this Ling Hongchuan’s granddaughter was good looking or ugly? Whether she was fat or slim, tall or short, and has a good temper or bad temper.....?

However, based on what Ou B said, it could be interpreted that generally, the females of Lin Clan were considered as great beauties, but Ye Feng couldn’t be sure until he would see her and get to know her. It was not like whatever said by the people was always going to be true.

“I don’t accept it.”

Ye Feng deeply thought of it and said firmly.

“Little brat, it’s not choice whether to accept it or not, you must accept it.”

Ye Wentian scolded him first then said with a smile: “Or is it true that you really love that little girl living next to your villa? I tell you, just wait till you see the granddaughter of Mr. Lin, you will stop caring about other women. You will simply forget that other women even exist in world.”

“Why are you so exaggerating her? What’s her name?”

Ye Feng didn’t give any explanation about Su Menghan’s matter, rather out of curiosity, asked her name from his grandfather.

“Lin Shiqing, she is a well known persona in the Yanjing University.”

Ye Wentian patted on Ye Feng’s shoulder and said: “Do not hesitate because this kind of romantic luck is something others cannot enjoy even if they want to. Also, do not carelessly get involved in the matters of martial arts world, it’s not good for your own safety. I will send someone to monitor you

“Wait a minute.”

Ye Feng’s complexion suddenly changed: “How about we make an agreement?”

He couldn’t afford to be monitored frequently, that much supervision was going to hurt his freedom? In order to attain freedom, a little sacrifice of other

aspect was necessary in this situation. At least it wouldn't hurt him anyway.

"What agreement?"

Ye Wentian frowned and asked.

"I promise you, I will gladly accept that girl, Lin Shiqing, and I will also pass the entrance examination of Yanjing University."

Ye Feng said slowly, "But, you can't send someone to monitor me. You don't need to interfere in my matters, what do you say? If you don't agree then I would rather die than surrendering to your selfish commands!"

"Well, brat, you have certainly gained courage."

Ye Wentian put on a crafty smile and said: "Well, since there are only two persons remaining in the Ye Clan, you and me, so this old codger may be unable to send out someone to spy on you, ha ha."

Ye Feng listened to him and secretly cursed in his heart. Fuck! His grandfather was playing with him!

This old codger was radically like a polished rod commander. How could sending over someone to monitor him be a tough job for a man of his status?

"Well it's settled now, you will never regret it. Well, old codger should go now."

Ye Wentian said deceitfully then smirked and finally disappeared in front of Ye Feng's eyes. His floating body opened the door, and like a gust of wind, he suddenly disappeared.

Ye Feng criticized that old codger deep in his heart, so this crafty old fox was really playing with him.

What should be done, could it be that it was really very important to accept that Lin Shiqing?

"Well, it's not necessary to deeply consider this matter. Even if I am willing to accept her, probably she is not ready to accept me?"

As he was thinking so, he stood up in front of the wardrobe and sized himself up.

Well in one look, he didn't seem like a tall, rich and attractive guy.

Since Lin Clan was the first Clan of Yanjing city, therefore certainly, Lin Shiqing would have high hopes and keen eyesight, would she develop a liking for someone like him?

Ye Feng didn't think too much about this matter, in fact he also didn't go to the front desk to rent a new room. Instead, he decided to use the same room, where he was conversing with his grandpa moments ago, for the night which would also save him some money.

He comfortably took bath then lied down on the bed, and after a while, he fell asleep.

But, without spiritual sense, his sleep was not steady and safe.

If he had 10 years of cultivation, then just by congealing his spiritual sense, even if he was in a deep sleeping state, he could clearly feel the slightest trouble in his surroundings. This method, which simply went against the heavens, could only be used by cultivation immortals.

Even the great martial arts practitioners of this world like Huang Lao could not use this technique. Or else, Huang Lao did not need to seize the arm of Ye Feng just to inspect his cultivation. A person, who was able to use spiritual sense, could directly check one's cultivation from afar without ever coming into contact, which was extremely convenient.

.....

Next morning, Ye Feng and Su Menghan got out of their beds respectively, and after some time, they walked out of the hotel to take a taxi to go to the train station.

“I’ll later pay you the amount of 200,000.”

In the taxi, Su Menghan bit her lip and said lightly.

“Forget it.”

Ye Feng, who was sitting beside her, shook his head.

Now, he knew about this little girl's family situation, even if he would wait for her to return the 200,000, he didn't know how much time it would take, so he might as well just forget about it.

Anyway, now he had the support of Heavenly Serpent Gang, obtaining a mere two hundred thousand was not really a big deal for him.

"No, I do not want to owe you."

Su Menghan looked out the window, her long eyelashes were trembling while there was very peaceful look on her face.

"Then do as you like."

Ye Feng did not say much, he did not bother to disincline her decisions.

"You....."

Su Menghan turned her head and stared at Ye Feng, she wanted to say something but somewhat hesitated.

"What's wrong?"

Ye Feng looked at her strangely.

Su Menghan wanted to ask something, but the words stopped at the tip of her tongue and couldn't speak. Her heart was struggling constantly, reminding her

that she didn't want to be with Ye Feng after she witnessed the tragedy caused by the beautiful woman at the hospital entrance with her own eyes.....

“Well, it's nothing.”

Su Menghan shook her head and determined her heart to no longer have any relation with Ye Feng.

Of course, Ye Feng could not read minds and did not know what was going on in her heart.

He made a random guess and said: “Are you still thinking about your cousin? Do not worry, I'll go back and certainly investigate thorough about the source of drugs, then give you a proper explanation.”

“No I am not, you fool.”

Su Menghan cursed loudly in her heart but did not speak out loud.

After having gone through so many things, she was very confused and did not know how to deal with her relationship with Ye Feng. She was quietly looking out of the window, pretending to look very calm and tranquil, but her plump chest was rising and falling rapidly, showing that her heart was not at all tranquil.

Since yesterday's incident, her spirit was not very good, she was basically very tired. Later on the train, she slowly fell asleep with her head rested against Ye Feng's.....

Chapter 38 Youth in western-style suit

The high-speed rail went fast and it would take only 20 minutes to reach Yanjing city.

In the train compartment, Ye Feng and Su Menghan were sitting adjacent to each other, but at this time, Su Menghan, who was leaning against Ye Feng, was asleep and appeared to be too tired because of yesterday's fatigue. Needless to say, at this time, Ye Feng was in a pleasant mood, after all his school's Xiaohua was sitting so close to him and it was quite pleasant when the intermittent bursts of her fragrance was greeting his nostrils

(Lastvoice: Xiaohua is the Chinese term for 'school beauty')

"Ah, you beast!"

Suddenly, Su Menghan woke up with a painful look on her face.

"What happened?"

Ye Feng lowered his head and looked at the somewhat wet eyes of this pretty Xiaohua. There was a very sad look on her face and appeared somewhat bewildered as well. Damn, could it be that this girl didn't realize that she was sleepy and fell asleep leaning against him? Was this the reason why she called him a beast?

In this high-speed train's compartment, a lot of people aimed their line of sights towards them, pointing towards Ye Feng, without a doubt, others had

seen his arm around an attractive beautiful woman, but when this beauty shouted “beast”, all of a sudden, he was seriously regarded as a beast by everyone. Some elderly started to sigh and talking about current society’s moral degeneration, while some also began to compare the new generation with the young people in the old days.

“I’m sorry.....”

Su Menghan woke up and hastily separated from Ye Feng, the bright red blush on her face made her look even more attractive.

She then suddenly remembered that she was with Ye Feng on a high-speed train and going back to Yanjing city.

But that dream just now.....

Su Menghan’s heart was in a somewhat trance-like state, she was basically absent-minded and still could properly differentiate the reality from her dream, making her heart to beat rapidly even now.

Her eyes secretly looked at Ye Feng and she continued to stare at him, while there was confused look on her face.

She quickly tilted her head to one side and looked out of the window, reorganizing her disorderly skirt and hair in a somewhat chaotic manner but didn’t speak anything. That dream just now was really too embarrassing, she did not want anyone to find out about it.

In the dream, she actually made a romantic confession to Ye Feng then began

to live happily together with him, but at this time, that beautiful woman in untidy appearance from last evening suddenly appeared out of nowhere! And, after having a one night stand with her, Ye Feng abandoned her and went to stay with that beautiful woman. She had a severe heartbreak and could not help but shout out, “beast”

“Beautiful lady, what happened?”

Just then, all of a sudden, a voice filled with righteous indignation transmitted from Ye Feng’s side.

Both of them looked up and saw a young man wearing a western-style suit and tie. He had a 23 or 24 year old appearance, high nose, looked handsome and was standing beside Ye Feng and staring angrily at him.

In the high-speed train compartment, a lot of people immediately applauded for him.

At this time, he dared to stand up for justice and undoubtedly was a real man among men. Apparently, everyone present in the surroundings assumed Ye Feng as an indecent beast who tried to harass a beautiful girl while this youth in western-style suit was actually a good and brave citizen who was behaving righteously.

However, other people could not see the kind of look apparent in the eyes of this youth. He was actually secretly looking at Su Menghan’s breasts, and was obviously very much attracted to Su Menghan’s beauty and coveted her. He seemed quite anxious to replace Ye Feng and sit next to this beauty, and seemed to be literally drooling over her.

“.....”

Su Menghan looked up and actually noticed the look in the eyes of this youth. She frowned and a feeling of disgust appeared in her heart, she immediately crossed both her hands on her chest, thereby blocking the line of sight of the opposite party.

“Get lost.”

Ye Feng was too lazy to deal with this nonsense, he directly stood up and blocked the line of sight of that youth, so now, he could no longer peep at Su Menghan with his dirty vision. This guy actually dared to peep at his woman and that too right in front of him? How could Ye Feng allow this!

When the youth in western-style suit saw Ye Feng standing up and was almost as tall as him, he simply refused to be outdone, and said in a cold voice: “Young man, you shouldn’t interfere when two people are talking, hasn’t your family taught you about this?”

At the same time, he raised his right hand and properly rearranged the tie near his chest in a refined but arrogant way.

While he was putting the tie in order, he was constantly thinking how he should scold this boy and put him to shame, so ashamed that it would end up difficult to bear. But Ye Feng definitely wasn’t in a mood to talk so much nonsense with him!

Ye Feng had suddenly gotten very angry!

The opposite party actually brought his family into this, and Ye Feng would get very touchy whenever his family, especially his mother, was mentioned, because he had never seen his mother! Ye Feng blew a fuse, and being a hot headed guy, he couldn't control his anger and immediately threw a punch which pounded on the chest of that youth. In an instant, he was sent flying several feet away and heaving fell in the corridor.

Ye Feng did not use his full strength. Otherwise his real fist could simply explode the body of that youth.

“Boy, you dared to hit me My uncle works for Heavenly Serpent Gang.....”

The youth in western-style suit clutched his chest and barely managed to stand up, then said while pointing his trembling finger at Ye Feng.

“Heavenly Serpent Gang? Well, isn't that good.”

Ye Feng sneered and completely ignored the opposite party. He went back and sat down beside Su Menghan.

As soon as the people in the surrounding heard the name of Heavenly Serpent Gang, there were somewhat surprised, so are in abundance flamboyant, did the organized crime come out? They looked at Ye Feng and thought that this young fellow would soon face tragedy.

When Su Menghan heard the name of Heavenly Serpent Gang, she couldn't help but laughed a bit, because she was the only one who knew that Heavenly Serpent Gang simply couldn't pose any threat to Ye Feng. She couldn't believe that they were bumping into the members of Heavenly Serpent Gang just

anywhere.

But when she saw how Ye Feng didn't even bother to explain things, he directly hit the opposite party and sent him flying, she was a little dissatisfied: "You are too violent, well, cannot you use speech to settle things out?"

"With such a person, what's there to say?"

Ye Feng disagreed with her, anyways, when his powerful fist was like the truth and could easily solve the matter then he was certainly not willing to waste time in talking nonsense with unimportant people.

"You're really..... humph."

Su Menghan said but it didn't have any effect on him, so she angrily turned away.

"What's going on here?"

Soon, two train marshals walked into the train compartment and when they saw the painful look on the face of that youth, one of them stepped forward and asked in a loud voice.

While clutching his own chest, the suited youth barely managed to point his finger at Ye Feng: "Just now, that boy sexually harassed a female passenger, when I went forward to stop him, he hit me"

The two uniformed train marshals looked at Ye Feng, discussed a bit then

made a nearby female train attendant to support the suited youth and help him in leaving the compartment.

But both train marshals, one tall and one short, walked over toward Ye Feng.

“Did you hit that man?”

The chunky train marshal arrived right in front of Ye Feng and asked while staring at him. He looked at Su Menghan sitting nearby and could not resist from having a feeling of shock and amaze, he once looked at her and this time, his eyes were as if glued to her.

“Yes it’s him, we saw.”

An aunt stood up and immediately gave her statement. She really could not stand watching today’s young people going too far.

“He hit the other guy, and before that, he even harassed the beautiful girl sitting beside him, we all heard her cry ‘beast’!”

At the same time, an uncle who was incomparably envious of Ye Feng stood up and said, while his words were filled with righteous indignation and fervent.

The chunky train marshal heard this and immediately believed in it, he turned to Ye Feng and said: “Come with me, the train is soon going to stop at Yanjing city station, I must ask you to get off with me at the station.”

After getting off the train, he would surely inform the police station and make

them come to take him.

Ye Feng thought to make a phone call to that Lin Hongchuan after reaching the police station. He basically wanted to witness how much influence this Lin clan actually held. Therefore, he stood up and was all ready to leave the compartment with the chunky train marshal.

“Wait!”

Su Menghan abruptly stood up and held Ye Feng, then clenched her teeth and said: “You didn’t even ask me, the other party, involved in this, how you can just casually take him away like this?”

At this time, she was certainly standing on Ye Feng’s side. It was needless to say that the man in suit simply induced disgust in her heart, and this whole thing actually started when she shouted “beast” out loud, so if Ye Feng was taken away like this then she would feel restless at hear.

.....

Chapter 39 Elder brother Ye and Ms. Ye

Seeing that Su Menghan stood up in favor of Ye Feng startled everyone around there.

“Young lady, may I ask you something, is this a fact that he hit someone?”

It appeared like the chunky train marshal had noticed something, therefore he tried to shift the whole matter towards hitting a person.

He could now figure out easily that the relationship between this young boy and girl standing in front of him was not general, they were most likely to be a couple. In that case, the so-called harassment charges certainly didn't hold up, but hitting a person on the train could be considered as quite a nasty behavior.

“He hit that other guy in order to protect me, right?”

Su Menghan pulled Ye Feng's arm and clung on to him very intimately and said while opening her big beautiful eyes wide open: “His temperament was a little bad, and more importantly, that was at fault in the first place.”

Ye Feng listened to her words which somewhat took him by surprise, he never thought that Su Menghan actually had the courage to stand up and speak for him.

“This.....”

The chunky train marshal somewhat hesitated seeing her taking Ye Feng's side,

now at this situation, he didn't know what should be done.

"Then it's all right."

The tall train marshal tugged him aside and with a smile on his face, said: "Sit down, you can leave the station only after a proper settlement."

Then, the tall train marshal pulled his companion to leave this compartment.

"Hey, this is against the rules, what are you doing?"

This really baffled the chunky train marshal.

"Well, this matter is related to Heavenly Serpent Gang, so we can't interfere into this matter foolishly."

The tall train marshal said in a whispering tone, the way he was speaking truly revealed that he was obviously afraid of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Both of the train marshals left, and suddenly, a silence spread out all over the compartment. Many people were feeling speechless since they were thinking that it was just a little couple argument, but that youth in western-style suit selfishly interfered and got beaten up, this whole incident was purely hilarious for them.

However, this pair of young lovers must be very scared right now and wouldn't be feeling any better since the opposite party had the full support of Heavenly Serpent Gang.....

“Why did you help me?”

Ye Feng sat on his seat and asked this question from Su Menghan.

“This was entirely my fault, so shouldn’t I help you speak with them?”

Su Menghan replied to him and then she leaned against the window.

“Right.”

Ye Feng smiled and nodded his head, he thought that didn’t this whole thing happen only because of the single word “beast” which came out of the mouth of this little girl which stirred things up?

Fortunately, this matter was also not a big trouble for him. If he was an ordinary man, then whether it was to swallow an insult or brutally fight with people, ultimately, just by knowing the fact that Heavenly Serpent Gang would be aiming at him wouldn’t end up in a good result for him.

This was the benefit of having strength. In case of lack of strength, just being together with such a beautiful girl, Su Menghan, would attract a countless number of troubles for him.

In order to avoid more troubles, Ye Feng took out his phone and sent a message to the Scarred face man, directing him to come to the train station and defend him.

“Also, listen.”

Su Menghan raised her beautiful black-colored eyebrows and continued saying to Ye Feng: “You must keep your temperament in check later on, , even though you are backed up by Heavenly Serpent Gang but frequently beating up people like this will one day certainly cause a big trouble for you

Ye Feng stared at her face, as always, she looked very pure and beautiful when accompanied with just a touch of concern on her face.

“Got it.”

Ye Feng turned his head and nodded.

Originally, he was definitely not used to seeing such type of things. In the World of the Immortals, there was a law of the jungle which stated that one should not interfere in the fights of others, because the fight might lead to losing one’s life. When he used to have a weak cultivation of just 10 years, following his beautiful female master was the safer option for him to survive in that world.

However now, he felt some strange feelings in his heart. In the World of the Immortals, there was a beautiful woman who used to always stand in front of him to protect him from dangers, she was his master. But at this time, his beautiful master was no longer by his side.

“I remember he was not like this earlier, could it be that he received stimulation that evening which ended up turning him into his current self.....”

Su Menghan thought to herself that the sudden change in Ye Feng’s attitude

took place right after her dad offered him 200,000 to humiliate him, she felt a bit sorry in her heart.

There was no denying of the fact that Su Menghan had now imprinted a very good impression of Ye Feng in her heart, or it could be said that she was in love with him. But something was still intriguing her, it was that if last night, at the entrance of the hospital, that Long Wan'er girl hadn't shown up suddenly, then perhaps, she might have really confessed her feeling to Ye Feng by now.

.....

The train stopped at Yanjing Train station, both of them got out of the train together and left the station.

Taking a broad view at the stretch of tall buildings, Ye Feng felt a bit relieved, finally, he was back to his own city. Here, as long as he did not expose his identity of being a martial arts practitioner, he would not get into any trouble caused by the martial arts community.

“Uncle, they have come out.”

Just after getting out of the station, Ye Feng immediately heard a familiar voice. He tilted his head and looked to the side and saw the same young man in the western-style suit from the train, was standing there along with another group of men in the same western-style suit and sunglasses. From very far, he was pointing to him and Su Menghan.

They all should be from Heavenly Serpent Gang, but the scarred face man wasn't there.

Soon, a group of people walked toward them with an aggressive look on their faces. They all looked like they truly belonged to a dark organized crime world, were clearing the path by dispersing the surrounding passer-by in abundance, and nobody really dared to approach even half a step close to them.

Only Ye Feng and Su Menghan were still standing together waiting for the other party to come close to them.

“Is this the guy who hit my nephew on the train?”

This group was headed by a square faced man who was looking coldly at Ye Feng. He was the uncle of that young man in the western-style suit, besides he was also a small gang leader of Heavenly Serpent Gang.

“He was being rude to my girlfriend, also cursed my family, did I do anything wrong if I hit him?”

Ye Feng fiercely looked at the young man in western-style suit and said lightly.

“Young boy, you are in this situation and you still dare to be arrogant?”

When the youth in western-style suit saw Ye Feng’s bold attitude, it instantaneously ignited his anger. He wanted to take away them, cripple the guy then take his woman and have fun with her, but now, he decided to teach this guy a lesson right there on the train station and make him know the fate of those who dared to annoy Heavenly Serpent Gang!

“I am just stating the truth.”

Ye Feng shook his head then looked up and saw that from a very far place, the scarred face man was actually anxiously rushing toward them, and seemed to have just now hung up his phone. Therefore, now Ye Feng knew fairly well that he didn't need to begin anymore.

While the young man in western-style suit along with his square faced uncle were still staring at Ye Feng constantly, so they didn't notice the Scarred Face man coming toward them. Seeing Ye Feng's calm appearance really made them furious, triggering their anger to grow bigger and bigger. They mused that this punk just had a short period of time left to feel all better, after that they would teach him a good lesson.

Square faced man waved his hand to instruct his men in suits and sunglasses to gear up and be ready to attack any moment. For them, dealing with a high school student was not a big deal so they were kind of feeling relaxed. They just needed one second to put down the opposite party and end this fight instantly.

But at this time, a familiar voice came from behind them: “Stop! What are you punks trying to do!?”

A group of people turned their heads to see the source of that voice and they saw their boss standing behind them, there was a scowl and anger present on his whole face.

“Brother, this guy hit my nephew on the train with no reason at all, so we are just here to discuss with him about how to solve this issue.”

The square faced man noticed his boss's bad mood and did not speak the entire truth.

"Well, do you think I don't know what kind of guy your nephew really is?"

The Scarred faced man lightly crooned and then stared at that youth in western-style suit.

"ThisBrother"

The youth in western-style suit was somewhat cautious, he was constantly looking at the mobile phone held by the Scarred face man and was actually aware that something was not right here, about which he didn't know anything completely.

"Well, this young boy is my younger cousin, later on when you see him, must call him Elder brother Ye and her as Ms. Ye, understood?"

The Scarred face man said this in a very serious tone and then he affectionately patted on the shoulders of Ye Feng, stupefying all of the members of the gang instantly.

Elder brother Ye and Ms. Ye?

The faces of both the youth in western-style suit and the square faced turned green all of a sudden. Fuck, so this boy actually had such a status? So he was intentionally playing the role of the pig to eat the tiger in the end!

Su Menghan, who was originally standing quietly beside Ye Feng, at this time listened to ‘Ms. Ye’ and immediately blushed, her face suddenly turned red from her cheeks to the bottom of the neck. She thought that this man was really too much, he didn’t know what to talk and actually spoke so irresponsibly. However, most importantly, was really Ye Feng the cousin of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang? No wonder, her father made her to approach Ye Feng.

.....

Ch 40 Mysterious organization and Cai Shao

After knowing the identity of Ye Feng, the youth wasn't feeling quite convinced, while on the contrary, the Square faced man knew how to deal with this type of situation on the basis of his rich social experience, he immediately said: "Elder Brother Ye, Ms. Ye, just now we have offended you numerous times, for this mistake kindly forgive my little nephew. He doesn't understand the custom, he has put you guys into a trouble, once we go back, I will strictly discipline him."

"It's fine, you can leave."

Ye Feng waved his hand since he did not want to say anymore. Whether he would discipline him or would make him suffer from extreme distress, it was quite natural that it had nothing to do with Ye Feng, so he would certainly not care about it.

Rather he was actually concerned about other thing.

When he saw that the square faced man, along with all his men, had left the place, he immediately asked from the Scarred face man: "Now, let's talk about the drugs matter."

The Scarred face man's shiny bald head was reflecting the midday sun quite well, making him appear especially bold.

He listened to what Ye Feng said, although he wanted to say something but he was a bit embarrassed, he glanced at Su Menghan. He was afraid that Su Menghan was not suitable for listening to this kind of thing, that was why he

somewhat hesitated.

Su Menghan saw through it and in a very considerate way she said: "I'm going to buy a pack of napkins, you guys carry on."

She then turned around to leave, her beautiful slender figure became a sharp scenery outside the station which attracted the eyes of the people. However, they previously saw her with the Scarred face man and even before that with those suited men who appeared to like the personnel of some organized criminal group, so no one dared to harass her or even tried to come to her to strike up a conversation.

Obviously, the deterrent force of the Scarred face man was very formidable among the group of people.

When Su Menghan left for a while, the Scarred face man said in a dignified manner: "Elder Brother Ye, an year ago, our Heavenly Serpent Gang, along with the other three Gangs of Yanjing city, were only engaged in relatively mild general drugs business, after all this is the capital city, so no one can preserve too many words....."

"Then?"

Ye Feng nodded his head and hinted him to continue what he was saying. Hearing to what the Scarred face man said just now, a doubt had taken birth in his mind which was puzzling him, that one year ago there were four gangs in Yanjing city?

"One year ago, a mysterious organization came into power in Yanjing."

The Scarred face man stopped speaking for a moment then in a very serious tone, he continued: “At once, the bosses of the four gangs were assembled secretly and they made us help them in the experimentation on a new drug in secret. Of course, we were not happy with this, and at that time, the boss of the largest of the four gangs, Southern Heavenly Gates, lifted the table on the spot and killed the two men who were sent by the opposite party.”

Then, the Scarred face man continued saying with a hint of fear in his eyes: “However, the next day, we found out that the entire Southern Heavenly Gates had been eradicated unexpectedly! After the eradication of the entire clan of Southern Heavenly Gates, each of us three bosses of other three gangs received a warning letter, saying that if we do not experiment on the new drugs, then our fate would be the same as the fate of Southern Heavenly Gates.....

“Almost one year has passed but you still have no idea who this opposite party really is?”

Ye Feng frowned and asked.

“Only occasionally, I hear from the people transporting drugs, that the boss of the opposite party is seemed to be called ‘Cai Shao’, everything else about him is still under dark, but Yanjing city does not have any influential family with the surname ‘Cai’, therefore, I really do not know who he really is.”

Scar shook his head: “At the beginning of each month, we are assigned a specified location to transport new drugs. We have just now completed the transaction for this month... Elder brother Ye, my Heavenly Serpent Gang is absolutely not involved in the business of other drugs, however about the new drugs, if we stop the business of new drugs then the trouble that befalls us

wouldn't be small."

Heavenly Serpent Gang would obviously be in big trouble, after all their fate was totally dependent on this, and they might end up like Southern Heavenly Gates gang if they stopped the business of new drugs.

Ye Feng heard him properly and then nodded to indicate that he understood his point: "So, according to your opinion, you don't want to arouse the enemy's suspicions, of course from now onwards, do not let more people infected with this new drug's addiction."

The Scarred face man listened to him and nodded.

Ye Feng thought of something and asked: "What are the characteristics of this new drug? What kind of attraction does it hold?"

"Except for the drug effect being stronger and for longer time when compared to other drugs, rest is the same....."

The Scarred Face man frowned: "Those earliest targets were able to persist the addiction continuously for a year, however recently, it seems like they have suddenly disappeared."

"Disappeared?"

Ye Feng frowned but did not ask any more.

A kind of new drugs, which was really not the good thing, he had witnessed the

condition of Su Menghan's cousin with his own eyes, when the drug addiction attacked him, his condition had become very miserable, his facial features had become very fearsome, he wanted to die but couldn't, it was extremely sinister and ruthless.

Ye Feng was emphatically not a kind-hearted person, he was too lazy and disinclined to manage this kind of stuff. But now, since Heavenly Serpent Gang was in his control, he would not allow any other force to interfere.

The mysterious organization was also capable to command the actions of the Scarred face man, how could Ye Feng accept this? The Scarred face man was now his puppet, and would always remain to be his puppet. Ye Feng wouldn't allow him to become the puppet of that mysterious organization! If he desired, so long as there was enough strength in his possession, he would fight over things and snatch them! This was one the rules of survival in the World of the Immortals, because if you wouldn't snatch things from others, others would snatch things from you, it was always the survival of the fittest.

And it was actually the same even on the Earth.

As per the view of Ye Feng, nowadays, people living in the city were being robbed in several ways almost every day, and there wasn't a single place where they didn't need to spend money. Even now, some hospitals in a big country like China were robbing their patients. They were "stealing money" from them in a very flagrant way.

Everyone said that you should always strive to work hard in order to lead a stable life, but no one ever said that you are being robbed constantly hence you must work hard, so that you become capable enough to be robbed again and again for the rest of your life.

“Cai Shao.....When you go to transport the next month’s quota of new drugs, I’m coming with you. I’d like to see what kind of extraordinary figure the other party is.”

Ye Feng finally made his decision.

“Understood!”

The Scarred face man’s complexion changed a bit, but he was now happy, so it meant that Elder brother Ye was going to come into action?

Too good!

He didn’t know that one year ago, how the largest Southern Heavenly Gates Gang was completely exterminated, but that method was inevitably very fearful, vigorous and resolute. He also didn’t know who was more powerful, martial artist Elder brother Ye or that mysterious organization?

“About the matter of new drugs, do the relevant departments know?”

Just before leaving, Ye Feng finally asked one more question.

“They don’t know.”

The Scarred face man shook the head: “Developing the registered drugs, we will control them, but majority of the addicts have gone missing. Moreover the quantity is not much and thus has not caused the government to suspect. Elder

brother Ye, do not tell the government, because the government cannot solve this matter, instead

“I know, you don’t have to worry about it.”

Ye Feng interrupted his words: “Right, I have heard that Heavenly Serpent Gang has connections with some people in the government, who are they?”

“This Let’s say, we have a formal relationship which is slightly above a little?”

The Scarred face man was feeling a bit awkward, apparently he didn’t want to reveal the name of that person to Ye Feng but just by looking at the expression on Ye Feng’s face, he finally gave up and said: “We have connections with Chief Liu of northwest sub-bureau, the sub-department of public security bureau. Above that, we also have connections with the vice-chief of public security bureau headquarters. If Chief Liu fails to do our work, we ask him to come into action.”

“Northwest sub-bureau? Chief Liu?”

As soon as Ye Feng heard this name, he thought about the last time when he was caught on the charges of visiting a prostitute. Under the façade of prostitution charges, Chief Liu wanted to seize the golden leaf grass from him. He was that pot-bellied middle-aged person with a typical Chinese face.

Unexpectedly, it seemed like that person was really very powerful, to think that the reach of his influence was all the way upto Heavenly Serpent Gang. But, Ye Feng still thought that he was quite a stupid chief.

“Then, it can be said that the last telephone call, that had really forced him to release me, definitely was from someone of Lin Clan. Just a telephone call from Lin clan scared Chief Liu so much that he was sweating profusely, now it seems like Lin clan indeed is very powerful.”

Right now, Ye Feng truly understood what it meant to be known as the first clan of Yanjing city. No wonder why the last time, that Lin clan's third son was being so rampant, should he go to curry favor from those people?

Chapter 41 she is jealous

After the Scarred face man finished reporting things to Ye Feng, he immediately went to first deal with the drugs matter as instructed by Ye Feng.

A young member of Heavenly Serpent Gang was driving Ye Feng and Su Menghan to their respective homes. They left for Langfang on Saturday and spent the weekend there, but tomorrow morning, they must go to school.

The results of the second mock test were also about to come out, and at that time..... Ye Feng looked at Su Menghan sitting next to him and thought in his heart, when the results would come out, he would definitely be despised by her.

Well, anyway, after what happened, he did not want any connection with this little girl, not to mention, it seemed like she was very repugnant of his appearance.

Even in the trade fair, Su Menghan unknowingly caused a lot of trouble for Ye Feng. When he was in the trade fair and answered her phone call, she loudly called out his name “Ye Feng” which suddenly attracted the attention of Long Wan’er, and thank to that, he was almost caught by Dragon clan, not to forget that he also ended up killing a veteran martial artist like Wolf sword to escape from there.

If he had been caught by Long Wan’er then.....

Ye Feng simply could not imagine the consequences. There was a possibility that he would be dead by now if he had been caught by her.

“Especially, the Dragon clan must never find out that you are able to practice.....”

These words of Ye Wentian reverberated in his ears. Although he did not know about the reasons behind the enmity between Ye clan and Dragon clan, neither did he know about the agreement made between his grandfather and Dragon clan, but he was sure that his grandfather wouldn't deceive him, especially because of the seriousness of this matter.

Ye Feng's mind was constantly pondering about the things related to martial arts, and occasionally, he was paying attention to Su Menghan sitting next to him in the car. He noticed, now that she was going back home, she appeared more tranquil and was quietly looking out of the window. Ye Feng didn't know what was going on in her mind.

Su Menghan was deliberately keeping a distance from Ye Feng, so he thought that perhaps, she had come to hate him. In his past life, she never got to experience love and didn't know much about it, of course, he was emotionally inept in these matters.

To be honest, since he thought that he was hated by this Xiaohua, his mind was a little bit lost, but after some time, he stopped thinking about it. Right now, he did not have the luxury to think about such things.

On the way back home, the two didn't talk at all, and in a while, the young guy from Heavenly Serpent Gang drove them all the way to the Qingfeng Park villa district and parked the car near the entrance.

“Listen, I will surely return the 200,000.”

Su Menghan said this and elegantly came out of the car. She didn't look back and directly entered the villa district. Her exquisite back profile appeared incomparably attractive.

Ye Feng did not say anything, he got out of the car and was about to walk towards his villa, but was suddenly stopped by the young guy.

Ye Feng turned his head to take a look at the young guy. He was tall, had a very beautiful pair of eyes and appeared like a lively guy.

However, right now, he was in front of Ye Feng so instead of displaying his usually lively attitude, he said politely in a timid manner: "Elder brother Ye, I want to say something but don't know whether it is appropriate to say this right now."

"If you have something to say, speak frankly."

Ye Feng nodded.

"I think, Ms. Ye is definitely jealous. Elder brother Ye, cannot you see it yet?"

The young guy calmed down and said in a determined manner while looking at Su Menghan's slender silhouette.

"What? She is jealous?"

Ye Feng totally did not expect to hear such a thing from this young guy, so he

was a bit surprised: “Why do you think that?”

When the young guy noticed that Ye Feng seemed interested in this topic, his spirit immediately rallied up and he said: “This is based on my research on the girls. Elder brother Ye, you have not paid attention, but judging from the eyes, demeanor and behavior of Ms. Ye, I am 100% sure that she is jealous! She is not talking to you, but that’s not because she is mad at you, Elder brother Ye, I think perhaps Ms. Ye knows that you have another woman out there?”

“.....”

Ye Feng was wondering, did he really have another woman?

However right then, the image of Long Wan’er standing at the entrance of the hospital suddenly flashed in his mind.

“Hey, could it be”

Ye Feng remembered and suddenly understood everything. During this trip to Langfang, she indeed fell in love with him, but after the Long Wan’er incident took place, she must have gotten jealous.

“What is your name?”

Ye Feng asked from the young guy, showing that he was giving importance to him, after all his words broke Ye Feng’s assumption that Su Menghan probably hated him.

“Everybody calls me Bei, my full name is Zhao Yibei, ha ha, Elder brother Ye can ask me anything.”

Bei gave a very warm self-introduction then said: “Moreover, boss has especially asked me to be your chauffeur.”

“Bei? Excellent name.”

Ye Feng smiled: “Well, I am not so inclined about having a chauffeur to drive me around all the time, but whenever I am in need, I will give you a call.”

He glanced at the nearby luxury car, a glacier silver BMW seven liner, it was a luxury car just like the one used by Su Menghan’s father. Although it looked just like the luxury cars generally used by most elites, but if he rode this car to the school daily, then after a few days, the whole school would come to know him, and he didn’t want to be surrounded by onlookers.

“Such being the case, Elder brother Ye, I am sending you a text message containing my phone number, you save my number and if there’s anything you need from me, just give me a call!”

Zhao Yibei pulled out his cell phone and sent a text message to Ye Feng. When the Scarred face man gave him the job to drive Ye Feng and Su Menghan to Qingfeng Park, he also gave Ye Feng’s number to him. That’s how Ye Feng finally came to know that Zhao Yibei was very much trusted by the Scarred face man.

“Good, you can leave now, I am also heading home.”

Ye Feng waved while saving Bei’s number in his cell phone.

He was not much interested in beautiful women or external beauty to be specific, in fact, before he would have enough strength to defend himself, he did not want to consider these matters. Now, however, the matter about Su Menghan was placed in front of him.

In fact, in the World of the Immortals, he had seen many stunning beauties like Su Menghan. However compared to others, in the last couple of days, he witnessed an out of the ordinary side of Su Menghan, which left a profound impression on his heart.

In Langfang, considering all her selfless actions to save her cousin and her family, where could one find such a good girl in today's society? Ye Feng suddenly felt, this type of selfless compassion for others had certainly been contaminated in the world now-a-days. The biggest tragedy was that he came to this world only to witness that it had been thoroughly polluted.

Never before had he met a beautiful girl who was actually so possessive of what she thought should belong to her, but in case of Su Menghan, she probably held a different perception about the whole thing.

“Well, I don't need to figure it out all at once.”

Ye Feng set a firm resolve and walked towards his villa. But on the way, he accidentally saw Su Menghan, who was surprisingly blocked outside her own villa entrance and it seemed like she wasn't allowed to go inside!

The one blocking her was actually a stylish woman, carrying a fancy handbag on her arm. She was in a heavy make-up, but appeared to be at least 30 years old. From her stance and attitude, she appeared like a wealthy wife, but why was

she here and why was she blocking Su Menghan from going inside?

“I heard you went to Langfang? This is so sentimental.”

The stylish woman, who was standing in front of Su Menghan, sneered and said: “Why did you go to see your grandmother? In the past, she was so firmly against my marriage with your dad, I may have a vivid memory, but it’s such a pity, you only got to see her grave, right?”

Su Menghan’s shoulder trembled with anger: “You are quite shameless! Was it you who harmed my grandmother?”

“I didn’t say that. But then, since you really went to that place, I must ask Su Xinchang how to deal with this. Either, he will have to stop recognizing you as his daughter or divorce me. He can have me or he can have you. If he wants me then he cannot keep you with him! You have been raised from childhood to adulthood on the money of my Xie clan, but you actually dared to go back..... ”

The jealousy was clearly visible in the eyes of this stylish woman, as she said these words sarcastically, while at the same time, she pulled out a cell phone.

Ye Feng was watching from afar and thought in his heart, was this the stepmother of Su Menghan? She really was a narrow-minded person.

Chapter 42 Su Xinchang's choice

The environment in the 'Qingfeng Park' was very elegant and pleasant, fresh and clean air, a lush flower garden on the roadside, a tree-lined shade. Such type of residential area was rarely seen throughout Yanjing city.

However, in front of the villa, there were three people confronting each other, the atmosphere appeared quite tensed, they were Ye Feng, Su Menghan and her stepmother.

"Su Menghan, what's the matter?"

Ye Feng asked.

"This has nothing to do with you, you should go back now."

Although Su Menghan was very indignant in her heart, but still, she did not want Ye Feng to interfere in this matter.

"No, I have something to tell you".

Ye Feng did not leave, rather continued: "But before that, I will first help you out in solving this problem."

"You will solve this?"

Su Menghan crooned lightly, since she had never been in favor of Ye Feng's

way of resorting to violence to sort out any kind of problem: “There are a lot of things that can’t be solved by fighting.”

“Rest assured, I don’t just fight all the time.”

Ye Feng smiled softly.

At this time, that stylish woman, who was standing in front of them, finally explained everything about the current situation to Su Xinchang on a phone call, the way she was expressing things was very rude, persistent and unreasonable.

From the phone call, Ye Feng knew by now that this woman was called ‘Xie Min’. Not only Xie Clan was a very powerful clan, but also on the basis of strength, it ranked among the top powerful clans of Yanjing. Because of Xie Min, Su Xinchang had been able to bring his company ‘Su Sheng group’ to great heights of success.

Su Xinchang figured out that things had become quite complicated here, so he said somewhat anxiously that he would come quickly to solve this issue, so she must not act rashly.

After hanging up the phone, Xie Min elegantly put her latest ‘Iphone model’ back into her branded ‘Louis Vuitton’ handbag. She then raised her head and disrespectfully looked at Ye Feng.

“Come to think of it, it seems this little fox has attracted a man and making him to help her out? However, this boy should better get lost, since in this world, there are some things that you just cannot take care of.”

Xie Min had heard the talk of these two people, but she did not actually care.

She knew that yesterday, this boy accompanied Su Menghan to go to Langfang. Xie Min investigated few matters related to him, and on the basis of that, in her opinion, Ye Feng was just an ordinary high school student, at most, above a little, last time he was caught on the charges of visiting prostitute, but was released later.

In case, the son of Xie Clan got involved in prostitution, then the trivial Public Security Bureau could not dare to arrest him, so she came to the conclusion that in comparison, Ye Feng was just an ordinary boy and nothing else.

“You want me to get lost?”

Ye Feng heard what she said and lightly replied: “It completely depends on whether you have the capability to do that.”

“Now this young boy is being so arrogant?”

Xie Min smiled contemptuously, then smiled and looked at Su Menghan: “If I were you, I would not have chosen such a callow boy. My second uncle desires an attractive young woman, he is a very kind and matured man, and has much more capability than this boy. Want me to introduce you to him?”

“Shameless!”

Su Menghan’s whole body started trembling madly with rage. She could not believe that this woman would be so virulent.

Was this something a stepmother should say?

“Is it?”

Ye Feng noticed that Su Menghan was trembling, so he gently put his arm around her shoulder to comfort her then he looked at Xie Min and said: “If I were Su Xinchang, I also wouldn’t have chosen an ugly old woman like you as my wife, when there is such a beautiful attractive secretary always around me?”

Ye Feng still remembered from the last time about Su Xinchang’s assistant and driver, Hu Meimei. Ye Feng obviously knew very well what he was doing, comparing a more attractive woman with Xie Min and moreover in front of her.....

“Humph, then wait and see. You are just a naïve young boy, do you actually think that Su Xinchang will dare to find another woman behind my back?”

Xie Min sneered and did not pay attention to what he said.

In her heart, she knew that at present, Su Xinchang was fully dependent on her Xie Clan, if he dared to find a woman outside, wouldn’t he be afraid of offending her Xie Clan?

She finally made up her mind that this time, she would force Su Xinchang to make a choice at any cost. It was because she had been married to Su Xinchang 10 years ago, and still had no child, Su Menghan was the daughter of his ex-wife, which was certainly causing more and more uneasiness in her heart.

Ye Feng noticed that she did not believe him, so he just smiled and became totally disinclined to say anything else to this vixen, now he just waited for Su Xinchang to come and say something.

Su Menghan gently grabbed his shoulder because she was feeling very warm under his arm. Suddenly she felt that since Ye Feng was there by her side, she didn't need to fear anyone, whether it was Xie Min or her own father, Su Xinchang.

All along, Su Xinchang had always been a henpecked husband, and due to that, he used to act very strictly towards Su Menghan to discipline her. While in the eyes of others, she might be a school beauty who belonged to a very good family with good financial condition and bright future, but the fact was that she had no freedom at all in her own life.

In case Su Xinchang really chose to abandon her, then, she would finally be released from the cage, with basically nothing to regret about.

Su Xinchang arrived quickly.

He never thought that Xie Min would actually be spying on Su Menghan, and she would also come to know about her trip to Langfang and that too so quickly. After suddenly encountering this kind of situation, he was very restless, burning with impatience and was being edgy to get over there as soon as possible.

When the BMW car stopped at the entrance of the villa, a middle-aged man, wearing a western style suit, walked down from the passenger seat, it was Su Xinchang. Ye Feng noticed that the person who was driving the car was that pretty and matured, Hu Meimei, however she did not get off the car to follow her boss, as she obviously knew she had no right to participate in this matter.

Originally Su Xinchang was a matured and steady man, who always kept a dignified look on his face, but at present, he had tightened his eyebrows, obviously there was something bothering him.

“Menghan, Min, what are you doing?”

Su Xinchang sighed and asked while walking towards them.

“Ask that from your dear daughter, where was she for last two days?”

Xie Min groaned loudly.

“You didn’t go to Langfang?”

Su Xinchang then clapped his hands and then he moved forward to hold the hands of Xie Min, sincerely saying: “This is the first and last time, it won’t happen again, just calm down, ok?”

“No, this time you have to give me an explanation.”

Xie Min said this harshly and pointed at Su Menghan: “Either choose her or choose me, you have to make the choice right now!”

It appeared just like how the salt wouldn’t enter into the oil, the same way, regardless of what he was saying, it wouldn’t change her decision since she already made up her mind.

Su Menghan was standing on one side and was just looking at them without speaking a single word. Ye Feng was also very calm, they just wanted to see what choice Su Xinchang would make.

If he would select Su Menghan and give divorce to Xie Min, then fortunately, he would be considered as a competent father. However, if he would choose to continue to rely on Xie Clan, and abandon Su Menghan, then that would be very disappointing thing and he would certainly fail as a father.

For Su Xinchang, making this choice was undoubtedly very difficult.

He tried every means to persuade Xie Min, but she was very stubborn and was not willing to change her mind. Every time she saw Su Menghan, she would feel a thorn in her heart, and this stinging pain had kept her unhappy for the last ten years.

If it continued like this, then one day, she would turn insane.

She was indifferently looking at Ye Feng and Su Menghan standing close to each together, no matter what Su Xinchang said, she would never change her decision.

After a long time, finally, Su Xinchang also noticed that she was not going to change her mind. He couldn't do anything and just helplessly sighed.

He then looked at Su Menghan as well as Ye Feng, who was standing beside her. His heart was feeling very uncomfortable, unfortunately with great difficulty, he managed to create a good relationship between his daughter Su

Menghan and Ye Feng, but now after coming so far, he was actually forced to make this kind of choice.

“Su Menghan, come with me.”

Su Xinchang seemed quite determined and beckoned his daughter, while he simultaneously walked to the one side, apparently to have a talk with her in private.

“If you have something to say, speak frankly, what are you so ashamed of?”

Su Menghan said in a very cold voice. She already guessed her father’s choice, because for him, his business empire was way more important than anything else.....

Chapter 43 Live in a room?

Su Xinchang was a bit embarrassed saying something like this to his own daughter, Su Menghan, however seeing her resolute demeanor, he cleared his throat and said: "Let's say like this, until you graduate from the college, I will be responsible for all the expenses needed for your studies and livelihood."

He said that but it sounded quite fuzzy, however everybody understood the meaning behind what he said, that he was only responsible for fostering Su Menghan till she would graduate, later he wouldn't take care of her.

In other words, he would not give divorce to Xie Min, instead he chose her over Su Menghan, and drew a clear dividing line between his relationships.

He had his consideration, he had found out that Ye Feng had some high level connection with Heavenly Serpent Gang, but besides that, he didn't know anything else. He certainly didn't have any idea about the relationship between Ye Feng and Lin Clan, that sort of top layered influence was considered as a very big connection for him about which he was usually unable to think.

Originally, he just wanted Su Menghan to win over Ye Feng, after that, it would be quite easy for Xie Clan to join hands with Heavenly Serpent Gang. In this way, if the strength of two second-class influences would become one and operate well, then he could definitely advance into the first-class!

However now, he could only discard one and choose one of the more stable ones. Apparently, Heavenly Serpent Gang was not the reasonable option for him. But Xie Clan had been helping him out for more than 10 years, so if he must make a choice then obviously he would choose Xie Clan.

“Thank you, but I do not need your support.”

Su Menghan looked at him coldly, then turned around and walked away.

“Hey, where are you going?”

Ye Feng did not expect that this little girl would be so strong, which startled him a bit.

“Why does it matter to you?”

Su Menghan stopped but did not look back, however Ye Feng actually noticed her weeping voice and trembling shoulders.

While facing such type of situation, no matter how matured and strong one was mentally, still it would be a very heavy blow for them. Moreover, Su Menghan was just a high school student, hearing such a cruel sentence from her father, Su Xinchang, was extremely painful for her, she suddenly felt like the whole heaven was collapsing upon her and there was no place for her to hide. She was filled with grievances but couldn't find a person to complain to, and cry over their shoulder.

She turned her head firmly, not because of her hate and anger, just because she wanted to hide her tears.

Seeing her in such a miserable condition caused a slight pain in Ye Feng's heart, he moved forward and held her but she wanted to cast him off, but could

she actually succeed to do so?”

“I don’t know that woman who appeared at the entrance of the People’s Hospital, you don’t have to misunderstand this. Also, if you cannot stay at your own place, want to live in my villa?”

Ye Feng directly asked.

Su Menghan heard this and finally stopped her footsteps.

In the eyes of Ye Feng, her back profile was very exquisite, her trembling shoulders were silhouetted against the faint shade of trees around there, constituting a beautiful picture of hers. What a pity that the figure of this pain stricken character was letting the whole picture seem as if it was dyed with a layer of hazy sadness.

She stood still and was taking long time thinking about his proposal.

“Isn’t it inconvenient for you?”

She finally asked something from him but still without looking back. She did not want to live at her home, since it would be very difficult and painful for her to live there. However, to go outside and live without money? But if she lived in the house of Ye Feng, wouldn’t it be embarrassing for her? Let alone, she was a young girl and Ye Feng was a lone male.....

“Villa is so big, how can it be convenient?”

Ye Feng asked that when he saw Su Menghan was shedding tears, he couldn't help her with her pain but just wanted to protect her, by protecting the good, honest and kind-hearted side of this girl.

Now, he was in this world, who knew whether he could return to the World of the Immortals or not. In such case, he might as well do something good for this world, at least, for the people around him.

“Well, I'll pay the rent.”

Su Menghan finally nodded. Although she was in an extremely sad state, but still she could understand her situation pretty well. If she didn't live in her own home, and also didn't want to go over to Ye Feng's home, then where she would live?

The BMW car silently passed away from their side, Su Xinchang was sitting on the back seat, he was closing the car windows, at the same time was looking at Su Menghan with some regret as if he was trying to say that he would definitely compensate to her. While, Xie Min was sitting beside him and was looking at them in a prideful manner as if proudly claiming that she finally got the victory.

However Su Menghan didn't look at them, she turned away and walked toward the villa of Ye Feng.

Ye Feng looked at Su Xinchang faintly, from now onwards this person would be considered as the most hated person by Su Menghan. Who was once her father but now, he was just going to be her enemy in the future. For Ye Feng, it didn't have any big effect on his heart, since in the World of the Immortals, such things used to happen plenty of times. However, this kind of thing was actually rarely seen on the Earth.

Ye Feng overtook her, and just then, suddenly her cell phone rang up and she received a text message.

She pulled out her phone to look at it, when she saw the text message, she couldn't control herself from crooning loudly. Ye Feng looked at the message and discovered that it was a message informing that her bank balance was now more than a million. Needless to say that it was Su Xinchang who did this as compensation. Moreover, he apparently did this while hiding it from his wife, Xie Min.

Seeing that, Su Menghan slightly felt better in her heart.

However, Ye Feng didn't think that Su Xinchang did this all because of his conscience. In his view, Su Xinchang was actually pretending that he was still concerned about Su Menghan, but she couldn't see that.

Su Xinchang was a businessman who just wanted stability in his business. In this case, he would never completely cut off relationship from anyone, whom he could use in the future, including Su Menghan. Because for him, any type of relationship would likely bring in new business opportunities.

If Ye Feng didn't guess wrong, then few days later, Su Xinchang would show his good will to Su Menghan and strive for her forgiveness. Perhaps in Su Xinchang's eyes, Su Menghan was just a young female high school student who could be swindled quite easily.

Ye Feng looked at the BMW car departing and some thoughts cropped up in his mind, if that was the case, then he would have to look after Su Menghan very carefully, he wouldn't allow her to be deceived once again.

If he really loved his daughter, then for the sake of Xie Min, would he make his daughter go through so much pain? No matter what Su Xinchang would do in the future, this matter was enough to reveal his true nature to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng opened the door of his villa and walked inside with Su Menghan.

“Do you have a vacant room? Firstly, I will move everything here from the next door.”

She was a very strong girl, she didn't cry for longer period of time, or she already knew that it would be useless to cry anymore. Instead, she had quickly started to consider her future matters. At present, she was abandoned by her own father, and it was the very critical moment for her since her college entrance examination was about to start soon, if the college entrance examination result wouldn't come out favorable then her future would be completely in the dark.

She absolutely did not want to be like that Xie Min, who relied on her face and figure to find a man for herself.

She wanted to rely on her own efforts, to obtain enough to make Su Xinchang regret his decision!

“Vacant room.....”

When she asked this question from Ye Feng, it suddenly stunned him. Because at this time, he remembered that even in his own villa, he couldn't mess around and wander freely at his own will, otherwise that old man would certainly not let

him off so easily!

The places accessible to him included a bedroom, a bathroom and a hall. As for the kitchen, a young guy like him, who only liked to play online game, certainly never needed one.

What should he do now, at this time, he certainly couldn't drive her out? Or should both of them live in a room? Should he make her go to find some other place to live, in any case she now had 1 million.....

Ye Feng looked at Su Menghan and somewhat hesitated.

“What happened?”

Su Menghan somewhat strangely looked at him: “You don't have a vacant room?”

All the villas of Qingfeng Park had same design. She also remembered that the adjacent villa had three bedrooms, could it be that Ye Feng didn't know yet?

Chapter 44 Gently

Ye Feng was a bit embarrassed since he really had no extra vacant room.

“Well, you sleep in the bedroom, and I will sleep in the hall.”

He said that while taking her along with him to the second floor: “You can’t go to the other rooms except this bedroom, anyway you tidy up, I am going downstairs.”

“This.....”

Su Menghan felt strangely embarrassed, obviously she wanted to freeload in the bedroom, but still how could she make Ye Feng completely go out of his own bedroom? Although she had no idea why she couldn’t enter the rest of the rooms, but she did not ask anything about it. Now, Ye Feng had become even more mysterious in her eyes.

“Don’t be embarrassed, how can I possibly make a girl sleep in the hall?”

Ye Feng said that to her, as for him it didn’t matter where he lived at all, since in the World of the Immortals, he used to sleep in the caves, covered with grass. In comparison to that, the hall of this villa was way better than his expectation, it was quite luxurious for him.

“Oh.”

Seeing him insisting in this way, Su Menghan couldn't bring herself to decline him, but she paused for a moment, and then with a slight shy smile on her face, she rested her both hands on his shoulders, and while he was completely unprepared, she gently kissed him on his cheeks.

Since Ye Feng was completely unprepared, he gawked.

“Ye Feng, thank you. When we will pass the university entrance exam, then we can start dating each other

While she was saying so, her face was red, she was blushing very hard, then she turned around to go downstairs, so that she could go to her dad's villa and start preparing her things to move over here. Moreover, she felt that just a moment ago, Ye Feng gave a proper explanation to her about the disheveled beauty from the hospital's entrance, perhaps because he was definitely afraid of her misunderstanding things if left unexplained.

Why would he be afraid of her misunderstanding? It was because he certainly had now started liking her, otherwise like always, Ye Feng could continue to behave coldly and indifferently towards her.

While looking at her slim and slender back profile, Ye Feng lifted his hand to gently caress that place where she just kissed him, he felt very funny seeing that this little girl was naturally very generous and cheerful.

However, come to think of it, it was not right, start dating after passing the university exam?

Suddenly, the words of his grandfather echoed in his mind, right after he

would get admission in Yanjing University, he would be introduced to Miss Lin, at that time what he would do?

Well, Ye Feng shook his head and decided not to think about such things rightnow. He then considered about the other matter and immediately gave a phone call to Ou B and asked him about the spirit stone from last time.

“Are you interested in it? It’s a little weird though. You wait, I will ask dad to get some information about it and send it to you as soon as possible.”

Ou B hung up the phone after he finished saying.

Ye Feng curled up his bedding from the bedroom and spread it in the hall downstairs properly. After that, he sat and started to expand his meridians through which the zhenqi circulated. Half a month before, he had tried really hard continuously to do so, and by now he had almost expanded his meridians twice the earlier width, which was quite enough to hold the zhenqi up to the cultivation of 5 or 6 years.

To expand the meridians, he now needed to constantly keep practicing, so he couldn’t waste time, not even a tiny bit.

When Su Menghan came in holding piles of stuffs in her hands, she saw him sitting in some strange way, it seemed just like the movies of the martial arts, where people used to practice for the internal strength.

She did not think too much about and just shouted: “Ye Feng, just remember, I am going to believe you only this one time, got it?”

After saying that she waited for a moment, but seeing that Ye Feng didn't respond to it, she took her stuff and went upstairs. Actually, she didn't want to let Ye Feng help her all the time, she could manage this thing on her own, instead she never wanted to make others help her. Not to mention, it appeared from the appearance of Ye Feng like he was very busy.

Ye Feng heard her words which totally baffled him, but then he thought about it and understood the hidden meaning behind what she said. It was about the matter of Long Wan'er. Obviously, Su Menghan held a grudge against Long Wan'er now, if she ever discovered Ye Feng entangled with Long Wan'er again then she certainly would never forgive him.

Regarding this, Ye Feng didn't have anything to feel, actually in reality, he had nothing to do with that Long Wan'er, so he had no need to be worried about it at all. As long as Long Wan'er wouldn't know that he was the masked man from last night, the opposite party absolutely would not be able to find him.

When he listened to the sound of the footsteps of Su Menghan going upstairs, he felt a bit relieved thinking that, now it seemed like this girl had very quickly recovered from the blow Su Xinchang gave her today.

Ye Feng had no idea that originally, Su Xinchang had never much cared about Su Menghan since beginning. Infact, the present situation was not at all worse, it had always been like this for Su Menghan. But today, it seemed like the reward of finally obtaining her love probably changed Su Menghan's mood for the better.

This whole afternoon , Su Menghan was busy in tidying things up in the bedroom, while on the other hand this whole time, Ye Feng was in the hall, sitting and expanding his zhenqi meridians.

After tidying things up, Su Menghan was perspiring heavily, she went downstairs and saw that Ye Feng was still sitting in the same pose, she felt even more strange in her heart. However, since she had been a very clever and smart girl, she decided not to disturb him, instead she entered the bathroom and started preparing everything for taking a comfortable bath.

Originally, this villa had bathrooms both upstairs and downstairs, but Ye Feng was warned by the old man 'Ye Wentian', not to go in the upstairs bathroom, so its door was locked and it couldn't be opened unless it was violently destroyed.

Su Menghan could only take shower downstairs.

Before entering the bathroom, she secretly looked at Ye Feng and thought about that day when he climbed up the building two weeks ago and suddenly turned and ended up seeing her taking bath, just by thinking about this she couldn't help herself from blushing.

She softly entered the bathroom, locked the door and very soon the sound of the showering water started coming out from the bathroom.

When Ye Feng listened to the sound of rushing water from the bathroom, he could not help but think about the day he arrived into this world and immediately saw her white bare body, thinking several times of holding her soft fragrant body, naturally he felt somewhat hot in his heart.

"Small Bee, Small Bee, open the door, Ouge, has come!" (Ouge – Ou Elder brother)

Suddenly the doorbell rang up.

Ye Feng was taken aback, this boy could not make a phone call to inform before coming over?

He got up and stretched his body, right now, his strength as compared to his rebirth time on the Earth had definitely grown up, but he just didn't know how many times he became stronger. The feeling that he was getting stronger bit by bit made him very happy and satisfied. Moreover, just by becoming stronger day by day, he could achieve some sense of security.

Ye Feng didn't hold the same sense of security as that Lin Clan's Sanshao (third son). No matter how strong his family background was, there would always be some people trying to kill him, so how could he feel relaxed just by depending on the strong backing of his family background.

He stood up, opened the entrance's door and saw Ou B wearing a casual shirt, seemingly in a very high spirit standing at the entrance, holding some photos in his hands.

"Small Bee, from the last time, both the spirit stone and the white Yin Yang fish were sold to us by a tomb raider."

Ou B seeing Ye Feng, smiled heartily: "An ancient grave in Changbai Mountains, but also took many pictures and insisted to sell to us together with the things. Dad spent 10,000 to buy these photos, really awful..... However, these photos are actually very strange, it seems like there is a demoness in them."

There was a demoness?

Ye Feng felt a little strange, such things also existed in this world?

“Hey, Small Bee, is there someone in your bathroom?”

Ou B listened carefully and really heard the sound of running water, he somewhat strangely looked inside because he remembered that previously, there was just Ye Feng who had been living in this villa all alone. He looked at Ye Feng and from his appearance, it didn't seem like Ye Feng had just taken a shower.

“This.....”

Ye Feng remained surprised for a moment, as he didn't know how to explain this.

Just then, the sound of water rushing in the bathroom suddenly stopped, followed by a crisp and clear voice of a girl: “Ye Feng, please pass me the electric hair dryer, I forgot to bring it in with me”

Both Ou B and Ye Feng were simulatanously stunned for a while.

Ch-45 Back view of beautiful female master

Ou B listened that and thought, wasn't this the voice of his school's Xiaohua?

He suddenly pointed to Ye Feng: "Small Bee, isn't that Su Menghan?"

Ye Feng coughed: "Keke, her father has driven her out, hence she is temporarily living in my"

"Holy fucking crap!"

Ou B suddenly started feeling dizzy, Su Menghan and Ye Feng were unexpectedly living together? On top of that, she was taking showed right now, and also asked him to hand over electric hair dryer to her?

If this news reached the school, it would definitely become the hottest topic before the college entrance examination!

Moreover, Su Menghan had been driven out by her own father? Wasn't she the daughter of the chairman of Su Sheng group, which was considered as a very rich family, how could she be driven out was it because of Ye Feng?

Ou B stared at Ye Feng: "You haven't explained it honestly and properly, what's the matter?"

"Actually, I accompanied her to a trip to Langfang City yesterday"

Ye Feng finally let go, since even he was not clear that Su Menghan's trip to Langfang yesterday would create so many troubles. But he still remembered that just after they arrived in Langfang and got off the train, at that time, both sides didn't see pleasing to each other's eyes.

"So her family agrees to you and her living under the same roof?"

Ou B was still feeling strange about all this.

"The situation is more complicated, I think you don't need to know. By the way, about these things, I will talk about it more specifically tomorrow in the school, until then, Bye-Bye."

Ye Feng snatched those photos and other materials from his hands, and pushed him outside the door and with a "bang", he shut the door. He did not want to wait even a single minute during Su Menghan's showering time or else she could be seen by Ou B.

Only Ye Feng could look at her in such a situation and no one else.

"Well done! Small bee, you really have the attraction towards opposite sex, you're a real guy indeed!"

Ou B shouted from outside but he was actually feeling very uncomfortable.

"Thanks Ouge!" (Ouge – Ou elder brother)

Ye Feng shouted from inside.

“Dman! This is the first time I have heard you calling me that, if you continue to call me that in the future, then this Ouge will forgive you, ha ha ha!”

Ou B laughed openly from the bottom of his heart.

“Alright then, there is no problem in it!”

Ye Feng laughed as well from the bottom of his heart, this really touched his heart. Previously in the World of the Immortals, he never had such type of friend, only he had a good relationship with his beautiful female master.

Worthy of being called best buddies.

After that, Ye Feng turned his head to place those pictures on the table, he then looked for the electric hair dryer, moved towards the bathroom entrance and knocked on the door.

In a while, a snow-white tender-looking beautiful hand quietly extended out from the bathroom door, and was slightly shivering.

Ye Feng could not help but smile, was she afraid of him that he would abruptly enter the bathroom, which was against the discipline? After putting the hair dryer in her snow-white hand, Ye Feng turned around and left and heard the bathroom door being shut firmly and quickly.

But he did not care about it, instead he came to the table all prepared to have a look at the pack of materials, brought by Ou B.

On top of the photocopy of the antique appraisal report there was some information which was about stuffs which were discovered from that ancient tomb including that White jade Yin and Yang fish.

Ye Feng could not help but glance at that information, which suddenly startled him!

That White jade Yin and Yang fish dated back to nearly 5000 years, excavated out from the Shang Dynasty tomb site, so what Ou A described about it to Lin Clan's Sanshao was exactly the same as written here and also the suggested price was around one million or even more.

"Ou B, that boy, he lied when he introduced me to it?"

Ye Feng thought to himself and suddenly felt a surge of warm feelings in his chest, his heart was moved. That kid wanted to introduce Ye Feng to some good stuff, but was afraid that Ye Feng would not be able to afford, thus he deliberately decreased the price so much. One must know, if Ye Feng had bought it for 150,000 then Ou B's father would definitely have lost around 1 million!

Moreover, Ou A also did not deceive Lin Clan's Sanshao. Although he was a crafty profiteer, but still, he carefully considered whom to make his target. Those sort of rich people, who held a very high status like Lin Clan's Sanshao, frequently used to buy antiques, so wouldn't they have some kind of medium to identify the age of the antiques? Deceiving him would be just like courting death.

Ye Feng knew already that last time, Oushi Antique Store absolutely did business at a loss.

“But Uncle Ou is really a good man. In the World of the Immortals, how could I possibly meet such an uncle.”

A self-ridiculing smile flashed on his face, because last time, he thought that Ou A was a very smart and crafty profiteer, but infact there was an other side to him, even if he lost a big amount of money to compensate three times to Lin Clan’s Sanshao, still he didn’t wrinkle his eyebrows and kept a smiling face throughout.

“Yanjing’s Lin Clan just like the World of the Immortals, same thing happens here as well, those who posses strength and power can humiliate other people at whim?”

Ye Feng eyes flashed with a touch of coldness, since Yanjing’s Lin Clan didn’t get success in creating a good impression on Ye Feng. Moreover, the ridiculous point was that his grandfather, Ye Wentian, had given him the direction that if he ever came across any problematic matter, at that time he must ask Lin Clan for help.

Now, even if Ye Feng was in dire need of help, he would never go to this so-called Lin Clan of Yanjing.

He flipped altogether ten documents about unearthed jade carvings, however most of them were damaged, only that White Yin and Yang fish was preserved properly. But still, what a pity it was also pulverized by those servants of Lin Clan’s Sanshao.

As for that half spirit stone, it looked more like an ordinary stone, furthermore, Ou A most likely hadn’t done its appraisal. However, occasionally he used to

meet with Huang Lao outside, at that time he must have mentioned about the appearance of that spirit stone to him. On the basis of that description, Huang Lao said that it might be a good stuff.

Just under the appraisal report, there was the picture sold by the tomb raider.

Ye Feng picked it up and looked at it, but suddenly the color of his face became pale, there was a look of total disbelief in his eyes!

“This..... how is this possible? Master?”

In this fuzzy picture, there was a broad underground stone chamber, surrounded by four large-scale stone pillars, in the stone chamber the junk goods were scattered everywhere in disorder, it could be seen from the picture that the stone chamber was accessible from all the directions.

In a corner of the path, there was a rear view of a female which was incomparably familiar to Ye Feng, dressed in a snow white gauze clothes, long beautiful hair swept up in a bunch, hanging down to the buttocks, light and elegant stature, the back view suggested as if she was trying to make a turn, probably to leave the line of sight of that tomb raider.

Although the picture was quite blurred, difficult to see anything clearly, but to Ye Feng, being constantly together for ten years with his beautiful female master, even if the picture was quite blurred, still it was impossible for him to make a mistake in recognizing her!

Ye Feng was all fired up with excitement instantly, his both hands were shaking while holding that picture.

“It really is my master?”

He quickly dropped all other photos from his hands, and started looking at some other pictures, altogether there was a total of seven pictures and each picture had a fuzzy back in it, and from the memories of his beautiful female master deeply engraved in his mind, Ye Feng was now 100% sure that the back view in this picture was exactly the same like his master's.

Su Feiying, also famous as the the Ice Fairy in the World of the Immortals. She was the leader of Star Tomb faction, and throughout her life, she only received Ye Feng as her disciple, and devotedly taught him.

Ye Feng still remembered that at that time, just in order to surpass the hundred years of cultivation, a great war was going on between his master and the devil lord of Fire Dragon Cave. While fighting all the way, they went deeper into the Fire Dragon Cave and he lost their trail. When he also went into the depths of Fire Dragon Cave, he only saw the traces of a fierce battle along the way, but could not find anyone's trace.

“Time wise could it be that master came here even before I came here?”

Ye Feng could not help but guess so.

His train of thoughts had started rolling all over, in any event, he must go to that Shang Dynasty tomb site in Changbai Mountains to check it out. Whether it was back view of his master on the picture or not, atleast, that place had produced a spirit stone and might have several more, so it was worth going there eitherway.

“No, perhaps that spirit stone was actually brought in this world by master?”

Ye Feng suddenly thought so, but he knew that merely guessing was just a waste of time, the key was that he must find out the truth himself.

“Ye Feng, what are you looking at?”

Su Menghan came out properly dressed after taking shower, but when she saw Ye Feng, lost in thoughts while carefully looking at something, she found it somewhat strange and couldn't control herself and asked curiously.

Chapter 46 Su Xinchang's invitation

Ye Feng was feeling a bit unsettled, the moment he heard the voice of Su Menghan, he collected all the photos and with an upward movement he replied: "Nothing."

He turned his head towards her and saw she was well-dressed, wearing a long sleeved pink T-shirt in which there was a printed cute teddy bear design on its chest area, an ordinary light colored jeans, hair was tied up in a cute & long ponytail braid, all these things made her transform into a simple and lively girl at present when compared from her pure and beautiful style from earlier.

The most attractive thing was present under the pink cloth around her chest area, those firm and arrogant looking pair, which was constantly attracting the eyes of Ye Feng and he couldn't control himself from glancing at them numerous times. Actually he thought to himself that this little girl would definitely not lose to Long Wan'er in this respect. Just by looking at them closely, it could be said that both of them would have fifty-fifty chance of victory.

"What are you looking at?"

Su Menghan had already tracked his eyes and blushed slightly: "Never mind, anyway I must go now, I will be back later."

Ye Feng responded just by seeing her in this appearance, he already had detected that she dressed like this since she had to go out, he felt a bit strange: "at this time of evening, where do you have to go?"

"My Father....."

Su Menghan somewhat hesitated, but then replied: "My dad called me up in the afternoon, he has invited me to dinner in the Jinghua Grand Hotel."

"Oh, Ok."

Ye Feng nodded and didn't care about it, the opposite party would start its movement this quickly had already been anticipated by him. However, at present, he didn't want to think about this matter.

Was Su Feiying really there in Shang Dynasty tomb site of Changbai Mountain?

Su Menghan noticed that he was a little lost and restless, that aroused some doubts in her mind, but she did not ask anything, instead she said: "Ok, then I am leaving."

"Wait, let me do a phone call first.

Ye Feng stopped her and then pulled out his cell phone and called Ou B.

The other party quickly picked up the phone, and with some doubts he answered: "Small Bee, what happened, is there any problem in the data?"

"Nothing, however I want to know where the tomb site is located, I want to go over there."

Ye Feng anxiously asked this.

“Regarding this, I really don’t know.”

Ou B reluctantly said: “that tomb raider won’t tell us about this. Still, if you want to know, then just ask from that tomb raider, however that mysterious person is very unpredictable, he appears and disappears by his own mood, my dad also failed to get in touch with him.”

“Really? How long does he generally take to show up again?”

Ye Feng did not give up, since the Oushi Antique Store was that shop which was frequently contacted by that tomb raider, in that case, someday he would certainly appear again.

“It can’t be said precisely, however sometimes it takes a period of half a month for him to appear again, and sometimes for several years we don’t even see his shadow

Ou B strangely asked: “Small Bee, why do you want to go to that place, although you can choose ‘martial arts’ as a good excuse to escape my question, but the tomb is that kind of place where not a single specialized professional has come out alive. If you are trying to make money, you don’t need to risk your life, right? ”

“If he appears again, be sure to inform me, thanks.”

Ye Feng did not explain anything. Regarding this Su Feiying’s shadow matter, it was just like Ye Feng’s case, his identity as a cultivator shouldn’t be known by anybody. Similarly, Su Feiying’s shadow case was exactly the same, so this thing

could only be better put off.

He was completely drawn in his own thoughts, he barely just hung up the phone, while on the other side, Su Menghan was very nervous seeing him like this, she anxiously asked: “Ye Feng, are you going somewhere?”

Ye Feng turned his head and saw that her innocent face had a touch of worry, he couldn’t help but smile and pat on her shoulder: “No. Come on, I’ll accompany you to the Jinghua Grand Hotel, lets see what he has to say.”

“We are going together?”

Su Menghan was a bit surprised.

“Of course, let’s go.”

Ye Feng sent a short message to the young guy, Zhao Yibei, of Heavenly Serpent Gang, making him to come and pick them up. Since he had got a free driver, that didn’t mean he had to use him in vain. However, the Jinghua Grand Hotel was such kind of place where the BMW seven series couldn’t be considered as a high-profile thing.

“Oh.”

Su Menghan nodded politely, as she knew that Ye Feng was afraid of her running into any kind of accident again, so he was willing to go with her. This thought deeply touched her heart.

Ye Feng smiled, he then held her soft hand and pulled her out of the door.

Since this Xiaohua had become very interesting to him, and at the same time he had also started liking this little girl, so from now on, the other people would be like his rival, who couldn't take her away from him. Those who would try to hurt her, had to think over once again that, could they deal with the so-called hurdle, Ye Feng first?

Su Menghan was holding his hand, suddenly her heart started beating faster and her face slightly turned reddish.

The dream she had seen on the train, was it going to come true? She could not help but recall the violent kick by that beautiful woman, Long Wan'er, she then thought to herself that it would not come true, right? She then shook her head and made a firm decision. If she had chosen to believe in Ye Feng, then she should not suspect him. But if he dared to lie to her.....

After some time the ice silver colored BMW Car arrived outside the Qingfeng Park district, and got parked in the roadside, the driver was the one called Zhao Yibei, that young guy from the previous time.

Zhao Yibei became indescribably excited seeing Ye Feng and Su Menghan coming out together by holding hands of each other.

Sure enough, it was right, she was really jealous! Didn't this explanation become reconciled? That Young guy felt that, his explanation greatly helped Ye Feng quite sooner, and suddenly he started bursting with a sense of accomplishment.

.....

Jinghua Grand Hotel, was one of the top rated hotels in Yanjing city, and it was located in the center position of the city.

This place didn't belong to the sphere of influence of Heavenly Serpent Gang, however this was the place where all the powerful dignitaries of Yanjing city used to gather, it was not such kind of place which could be controlled by a trivial criminal gang.

But at this time in Jinghua Grand Hotel, the entire floor had been wrapped, certainly it was not Su Xinchang who could make this magnificent feat, since he was just an ordinary chairman. but it was the influence of the Yanjing first Clan, Lin!

Lin Clan's Old Man, Lin Hongchuan's 70th birthday was today, so they specially arranged a feast here to entertain all the influential official public figure from around the country. The hotel's underground parking lot had already been full of all kinds of luxury cars and was fully occupied in all directions.

Su Xinchang drove his car and arrived in front of the gate of Jinghua Grand Hotel, however after seeing a huge crowd of all the rich and powerful figure of the city on the road, he wrinkled his eyebrows, it seemed like tonight he had no option left than to ask his daughter to have dinner in Jincheng restaurant which was on the opposite side of Jinghua Grand Hotel .

Jincheng restaurant, in terms of expense, was kind of a very cheap restaurant in comparison to Jinghua Grand Hotel, moreover the standard of this restaurant was also quite low. This was the first time Su Xinchang asked his daughter for dinner alone, so he wasn't feeling well deep inside his heart since he was facing

such kind of situation, but he didn't have any other means.

Whole restaurant was already booked by the Lin Clan for their private use. However, originally Su Xinchang had already made a plan to book the Jinghua Grand Hotel for the meeting purpose.

“That kid Ye Feng, he is also supposed to be coming together with her. When the time comes, I must strike well, I have already done a little investigation regarding the relationship between that kid and Heavenly Serpent Gang. If everything goes well, then I would be able to make them cooperate with each other.”

Su Xinchang thought to himself, he drove to the Jincheng restaurant's parking lot.

He was thinking a way as how to make Ye Feng ready for cooperation, of course, he had already decided to suggest an engagement proposal for Su Menghan and Ye Feng, as a result of this, he could be able to also stabilize his relationship with Heavenly Serpent Gang.

As for today, he had thought that he would try to convince and make Su Menghan understand that without Xie Clan, how would she lead a steady and secured life? Therefore, the relationship with Xie Clan was necessary to be firmly maintained.

He entered Jincheng restaurant, booked a room, and then gave a call to Su Menghan to notify her about the sudden change of meeting location.

At this time, Ye Feng and Su Menghan were brought by Zhao Yibei all the way

to that Jinghua Grand Hotel, they saw that in front of the hotel there was a huge number of people and a heavy traffic as well.

While at the same time, Su Menghan happened to pick up the phone call of him coincidentally and then she came to know that the meeting place had been changed. This left Ye Feng a bit puzzled, so he asked directly: “Zhao Yibei, what’s going on over there in Jinghua Grand Hotel?”

Zhao Yibei was one of the trusted subordinates of the Scarred face man, in addition to this he also had a very good idea about the other upper-class families of Yanjing city including Yanjing’s Lin Clan, he smiled and said: “I have heard that it is 70th birthday today of Yanjing Lin Clan’s Old Man, that is why they have done a grand reservation of all seats for this occasion. Hence, if someone encounters this kind of situation, then he can’t do anything except changing the place only.”

Yanjing’s Lin Clan? 70th birthday of Lin Hongchuan?

Ye Feng did not think that such a coincidence would actually happen, it was truly quite unexpected.

Chapter 47 Extreme Drinking capacity?

When the car stopped in front of Jincheng restaurant, both Ye Feng and Su Menghan got out of the car.

However, there was nothing intimate between them, because as per the opinion of Su Menghan, they were just high school students at present, they had not formally associated with each other yet. So, they must wait till the college

.....

Meanwhile, Zhao Yibei was looking for a place to park the car, he had refused the invitation of Su Menghan to accompany them to eat meal together. Being the trusted subordinate of Scarred Face Man, Zhao Yibei obviously knew quite well when he should submit and when he should retreat.

Ye Feng and Su Menghan both of them entered the restaurant together, and moved towards the room which was booked by Su Xinchang. On the opposite side of this restaurant, there was Lin Clan in Jinghua Grand Hotel, but Ye Feng was not a bit inclined to pay attention towards them.

However, he wasn't aware of the fact that at this time at the entrance of the Jinghua Grand Hotel, a group of people got out to welcome the host who invited them all for tonight's feast, and that was Lin Clan's Old Man, a 70-year-old Lin Hongchuan who finally arrived at the hotel's entrance!

Although Old Man was quite old, but he was full of energy, not even a few white hair could be seen, also he seemed to have a very strong built. He greeted the crowd while getting out of his car, but suddenly his eyes fell towards the opposite side of the road, he saw across the street Ye Feng and Su Menghan got

off the car together and entered Jingchen restaurant.

He could not help but squinted his eyes and thought, wasn't he that Old Man, Ye's grandson? How was he together with other girl at the same place?

Looking around and listening to a large group of surrounding people who were blessing him, it was like impossible for him to go and look for Ye Feng at this time, but he saved this matter in his mind and decided that if he got time even for a while, he would go to the opposite side to ask Ye Feng to have a talk with him. Although, he had not seen Ye Feng officially yet, but he saw him today coincidentally on this auspicious day.

This time on his seventieth birthday, his grandson, Lin Xiuwen, who already knew his grandfather was very fond of antiques, used all his means to gather up some good antiques for him as a birthday present. Finally today, he presented them to his grandfather, which made him very happy, this good-for-nothing grandson finally managed to do something properly.

If it was said that Lin Clan's Old Man was the most powerful and influential man in the country, then it wouldn't be an exaggeration. On the eve of his 70th birthday, many powerful officials accepted the invitation to come and congratulate him, which was just one aspect of the story, while the other aspect was they generally wanted to maintain a good relationship with Lin Clan and also with the other powerful officials who took part in this grand feast. It could be said that all the powerful figures were here for their mutual benefit.

Tonight, it was destined that a lot of contract agreements would be signed off secretly in this banquet hall, the influence of which would determine the direction of certain sectors of the economy as a whole.

A group of people were around the Lin's Old Man, they all entered Jinghua Grand Hotel along with him, where they received a very warm applause.

.....

On the other side, under the leadership of the beautiful waitress, Ye Feng and Su Menghan arrived quickly at the sixth floor in Jingchen restaurant. The corridors and hall were resplendent in gold and jade green, the look was like a very high-end places. Such a classy decoration and interior, but still it couldn't be compared to the standard of Jinghua Grand Hotel which was at the opposite side of the road.

"Both of you, please come this side."

That beautiful waitress came in front of the door of a big room and opened the door for them.

Ye Feng nodded and walked in the room first, Su Menghan followed after him, one after another both of them entered the room. It was a huge room where 10 people could easily sit, but actually there was only one person, Su Xinchang, who was sitting there alone waiting for them. The table was full of expensive dishes all prepared, in addition there was two bottles of red wine, which was revealing a seductive halo.

"Menghan, Little Feng, come, sit down."

As soon as Su Xinchang saw the two of them entering through the door, he smiled immediately, and got up to greet them by stacking a smiling face.

He had swayed back and forth for many years in the market, he had a great social experience, when any situation came up , he used to understand already at an earlier time that what measure he should take. The red wine was certainly prepared for Ye Feng, in this country if the liquor was kept on the dining table, it was meant to drink more and discuss all the matters conveniently. It was like an everlasting truth.

From the door, Ye Feng looked around and noticed that Su Xinchang had occupied the main seat of this private room, while the dishes were placed on both left and right sides of him, it seemed just by judging the table that he already had guessed Ye Feng would certainly come together with her. Also it appeared like he wanted Ye Feng and Su Menghan to sit in his two sides respectively, which could pull the relationship closer.

However, Su Menghan might not want to sit next to Su Xinchang, and the same might go with Ye Feng.

Ye Feng walked up straight and sat down exactly on the opposite side of Su Xinchang all of a sudden, but he did not look at him. Su Menghan saw that Ye Feng didn't follow the instruction of her father, so she as well went directly towards Ye Feng and sat beside him.

When that Beautiful Waitress noticed this, she felt a little awkward. She come up and very politely said: " both of you people, since it is a family dinner, would not it be better to sit closer? The cutlery is already ready, if you need refreshments"

That waitress knew the special identity of Su Xinchang, because he owned a Gold card of this restaurant, so she must invite his daughter along with her boyfriend to have a meal.

In the opinion of Waitress, this young fellow was too mound of earth, he came for this meeting in the casual sportswear, didn't even look at the position of tableware, moreover he chose to sit opposite to his future father-in-law unexpectedly! Then, he was aiming for his daughter, it seemed like a beggar was dreaming for a princess?

"No thanks, we will sit here."

Ye Feng faintly said that and interrupted the persuasion of waitress. Certainly, he would not sit close to Su Xinchang, since he came here just to take a look at what the other party had to say.

"Just listen to him now."

Su Xinchang felt a little unhappy in his heart, but still he kept a smile on his face and nodded to the waitress.

But all these things were making the waitress a bit confused, did Mr. Su admire this guy? Ofcourse, she could only listen to the words of Su Xinchang, so she started transferring the two tableware gracefully in front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan.

"Open the red wine, after that you can leave."

Su Xinchang said to the waitress.

"Alright, I will be standing at the door, Mr. Su, you can call me any time."

The waitress opened the bottle and then bowed and went out of the door, however before going out she glanced at Su Menghan out of jealousy. Needless to say that in reality, Su Menghan was already very pretty and pure which was quite enviable. Let alone that she was the daughter of Su Sheng Group's chairman and had this sort of great family background, there were a lot of people who were envious of her because of both matters.

Actually nobody knew that Su Menghan didn't like this status, even more she wouldn't consider this as the honor.

Waitress finally came out and stood outside the door, she looked at Ye Feng and then closed the door, she thought to herself that this guy as well didn't know anything about luck. Unexpectedly he won the favor of the daughter of Su Sheng group's chairman. If he could really become something in his life, then in the future he would definitely start his first career which would be pretty higher than a large portion of the average people.

While Ye Feng Sitting in the private room would certainly not guess that something was going on currently in the waitress's mind.

This time Su Xinchang picked up the bottle, and poured the red wine in the glasses of Ye Feng and Su Menghan respectively, and with a soft smile: "Menghan, Little Feng, the things that happened during the day, I hope you guys won't mind, it was just I was making it all look like this in front of the mother Tigress, how couldn't I recognize my own daughter? Moreover, Menghan is so beautiful

"Is that so? Then do you even know how sad she was in the afternoon?"

Ye Feng said so while faintly looking at the glass of red wine, the dense color of wine was revealing a fascinating glory, which was considered as the top class thing in the world, it was representing the symbol of luxury, and high-end Western style.

“Menghan, father has to apologize to you, okay? Come, have this glass of wine, even if I am your father, still I apologize to you.”

Su Xinchang smiled gently, he then carried the wine glasses, and offered them.

Su Menghan looked at the glass of red wine, and turned her face to look at Ye Feng with a bit of hesitation.

“Girls need not to drink, that’s why I have come.”

Ye Feng smiled and pressed down the hand of Su Menghan from the glass, he took his own glass and tossed it down in his mouth and in just one gulp he finished the whole glass. When the expensive wine flowed in the throat of Ye Feng, he could not help but frown. For him, this was the first time, he was really not used to such kind of thing, it was a bit difficult for him to drink.

Su Xinchang looked at the facial expression of Ye feng and thought that he had a great capacity for alcohol, this thought brought a feeling of proud and self satisfaction in his heart, as he had a feeling that now he could have a proper conversation with him more conveniently for a while.

Chapter 48 Angry Su Menghan

Su Menghan looked at the side of Ye Feng and with a touch of concern she asked: " You ok?"

"Ofcourse I am all ok, relax."

He smiled gently, nodded his head and sat down, he then raised his head to look at Su Xinchang sitting opposite to him and said: "Well, now we can talk properly, so what do you want exactly?"

When Su Xinchang saw him being so direct, he didn't feel good in his heart and became a bit unhappy. He thought that he was really a young child who didn't understand the custom. He didn't know what matter should be discussed on the liquor table, he shouldn't be so quick and so direct.

Now, it should be the perfect time to exploit one's connections! Su Xinchang couldn't believe that why Ye Feng was not the least interested to have any connection with Su Sheng Group? it was like, if Ye Feng and his daughter would really become one, then in future wouldn't it be like he would automatically become eligible to get most of the share of Su Sheng Group?

Too young!

Su Xinchang thought to himself, however, this young child would be much easier to deal with on the contrary.

He gently smiled: "Little Feng, there is a plenty of time, we don't need to worry

about it. Come on, let's celebrate our first meeting, and then have another glass of wine!"

Ye Feng snorted loudly: "You don't need to try to get close, since this is of no use to me, if you have anything to say then be on the line, otherwise if you don't come to the point, I will immediately leave."

Su Xinchang's face turned stiff, really he did not expect that he didn't know the difference between good and evil!

However, he managed to take care of the train of thoughts running in his mind, he was also feeling pity just by thinking that Ye Feng didn't drink, he failed to make an appropriate atmosphere for this purpose. Anyway, he did not have to pay attention to Ye Feng anymore, he sat down, looked at him with great interest and then by raising his chin he said: "If so, then I won't beat around the bush, I have heard you are the cousin of Scarred Face Man, isn't it true? "

"So what?"

Ye Feng saw the attitude of the opposite party and a feeling of disdain grew in his heart, he didn't even have the desire left to reply to the opposite party.

Su Menghan was silently watching everything from one side and was feeling very disappointed in her heart. She thought earlier that Su Xinchang heard the voice of his little conscience, that was why he invited her to dinner to make up for the father-daughter relationship. However, who knew it was Ye Feng's back influence.

"Don't you think we can cooperate with each other?"

Su Xinchang looked very confident while saying so, with a smile he continued: "Since Menghan and you are already living together, it would better to look for a day to get you two engaged in order to determine the relationship. In this way, in future you will also get a part in the shares of Su Sheng Group."

Ye Feng smiled: "Then, later Su Sheng Group has nothing to do, or you can make Heavenly Serpent Gang to help you out? That's a good idea, but shouldn't you ask the opinion of your daughter?"

Such arbitrarily he wanted to make his daughter to get engaged with Ye Feng, in this Su Xinchang could be really considered as a high ranking personnel who considered Su Menghan entirely as a tradable commodity.

Su Xinchang listened to him and then turned his head to look into her eyes and it seemed that she didn't care.

He said lightly: "Regarding this matter, I believe that Menghan will not reject it, after all she also likes you"

"I refuse."

Su Menghan completely disappointed Su Xinchang, she stood up and with tearful eyes stared at him: "It's true I like Ye Feng, but does liking someone is equal to engagement, tell me father, I am not that simple."

This statement of Su Menghan left Su Xinchang and Ye Feng stunned for a moment.

Su Menghan's body was trembling slightly, apparently, she stood up and said those words even though she was extremely nervous, but now she was also a little worried that Ye Feng would be angry with her.

Liking someone was not equal to becoming engaged. In other words, she had a good impression of Ye Feng in her heart and she wanted to attempt to associate with him, that was all. However, this favorable impression was far less than the degree of love. In that case, engagement, marriage, and so on were still very early now. Being good was not equal to simple, being good didn't mean being silly. Just a trip to Langfang had developed her feelings for him, but that was still far from being so firm.

Whatever she said perhaps it might make Ye Feng uncomfortable, but she stated the truth by pushing her luck, because it was really very difficult for her to bear the attitude of Su Xinchang.

Ye Feng had already guessed what was going on in her mind, so he softly said: "Relax, I am not angry."

He then held her hand.

His words made her very emotional, she angrily sat down and didn't loosen his hand, instead she tightened her grip.

Under Ye Feng's comfort, she gradually calmed down and continued saying: "Regarding grandmother's car accident, Su Xinchang, don't you have anything to say?"

After done saying, she coldly stared at Su Xinchang, as if she was looking at her

personal enemy, rather than her father. She took out a bank card from the bag and threw it directly in front of him. It was apparent that she did not need the one million of him.

The words she said suddenly reminded Ye Feng of that middle-aged young woman, Xie Min of Xie Clan. Could it be that she was really very sly? The way she spoke with them, it was quite obvious that woman was truly very narrow-minded, moreover since she had married to Su Xinchang, would she try to control his life on the ground of this marriage?

Angry Su Menghan said a series of words which left Su Xinchang speechless.

Before coming to the meeting, he had considered a very wide range of possibilities that might happen, but did not think it would turn like this. Actually he was not a bit concerned about Su Menghan's action of throwing 1 million bankcard in front of him, rather he was concerned about this, that the entire photograph was dispirited one after another.

As a successful public figure who had experienced lots of ups and downs in his life for a long time, although unexpectedly he got caught off guard, but he must know how to tackle this situation, since there was an Assassin's mace opposite to him!

“Waitress, give me a few bottles of Erguotou.” (Erguotou – white liquor)

It seemed like probably Su Xinchang had lost the strength of his whole body, he shouted towards the door, unexpectedly he must drink the Erguotou. In front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan, it seemed as if a young successful business man had turned into dozens of years old all of a sudden.

Ye Feng thought to himself that it was not good, since the other party was actually trying to act as a very poor and pitiful person, he was planning to play emotionally with Su Menghan's goodness and kindness, might be she would be swindled by him again.

But God had eyes, Su Xinchang's sinister plan did not succeed.

When the beautiful waitress who was standing outside, opened the door and came inside the room carrying three bottles of ergotou, just then a person who was passing through there, suddenly saw Su Xinchang together with Ye Feng and other third people in that private room, he stopped there and couldn't help but was astonished.

"Oh, isn't this Brother Su, how come you get a free time for this dinner?"

From outside the room that man said with a smile, as he walked into the room, it seemed like he was very familiar with Su Xinchang.

Ye Feng turned around to look back and immediately recognized him. This guy was that potbellied guy, the way he was smiling, wasn't he Chief Liu from the last time at the police station?

By the way, he was the one who used to support Heavenly Serpent Gang from backstage, Liu Lihui, the Chief of the Public security North-west Sub-bureau. Actually, he didn't expect to see him here today.

Su Menghan looked at the opposite party and thought that he was also one of the evil associates of her father Su Xinchang, so, a look of disgust appeared on her face.

“This Chief Liu, what happened, are you also here to eat?”

Su Xinchang just wanted to play a desperate measure, however, he didn't have thought that in the middle of their discussion Chief Liu would appear out of nowhere, he was secretly thinking through this.

“Ha ha, just came out of a toilet, I did not expect to run into you, brother.”

Liu Lihui smiled and then that potbellied sat down. He sat in a very good position which was in the middle of Su Xinchang and Ye Feng, but was kind of more closer to the seat of Ye Feng, which was only separated by two positions.

Su Xinchang was a bit alarmed, what was wrong, was Liu Lihui trying to curry favor with Ye Feng?

“Hey, Little Ye, ah, so you are with your girlfriend to take a stroll?”

After sitting down, Liu Lihui no longer paid attention to Su Xinchang, rather with a smile on his face he was looking towards Ye Feng, there was a touch of flattery with the respectful appearance on his face.

Seeing him like this, Su Xinchang and Su Menghan simultaneously felt lifeless and sluggish, what kind of situation was this?

Chapter 49 Xie Clan's people arrive

Although Liu Lihui, the chief of Northwest Sub-Bureau, was not a high-level official in Yanjing, but still he held a great power.

Even Su Xinchang's social status was almost the same as Liu Lihui's, which could be easily seen in Liu Lihui's strength. But holding this kind of real power, still addressing Ye Feng as 'Little Ye'?

Seeing this, Su Xinchang became very anxious deep inside his heart, Ye Feng had just the identity of being the cousin of Heavenly Serpent Gang, still that was not sufficient to let him become a "Shao", right? Could it be that this kid was having some other extraordinary background? (Shao – Little).

"Well....."

Ye Feng nodded, looked at the potbellied middle-aged man and thought to himself that the last time at the police station, who exactly was that person who telephoned him and made him so terrified?

He should be the person of Lin Clan, however, whatever Ye Feng thought might be just a possibility.

"Oh, by the way, who was that man who gave you the order to search for those three grass?"

Ye Feng asked this question since he was curious to know that was there any influence of Long Wan'er in this secular metropolis of the city.

“Yes, he is Chief Miao.”

As soon as Liu Lihui heard the question of Ye Feng, he started cold sweating, promptly he put up the name of his immediate superior. He was not a bit interested in getting involved in this fight.

“Chief Miao?”

Ye Feng frowned.

While they were having a conversation, Su Xinchang was constantly listening to them, he was being a bit fuzzy though, but the moment he heard the name “Chief Miao” he was totally startled by it.

Liu Lihui was merely the Chief of Northwest sub-bureau, but wasn't this Chief Miao just the Chief of Yanjing public security headquarters? He was also the member of sub-provincial level municipal party committee, everywhere in Yanjing city, people used to talk about him , he was regarded as a high level official!

Seeing Ye Feng didn't seem to clearly understand the identity of Chief Miao, Su Menghan went close to him and in a low voice she softly said: “He should be the Chief of Yanjing public security headquarters, Miao Zhenjiang, I often see him on the news channel and also in the newspaper.”

“Ok.”

Ye Feng listened to her presentation, smiled and nodded his head, he thought that this little girl knew quite a lot. This time he really wanted to hug her and give her a kiss, unfortunately the situation was inappropriate, what a pity.

Miao Zhenqiang, but Dragon Clan had any influence in the secular Metropolis?

Ye Feng fiddled with the glass of wine in his hand, and sneered secretly in his heart, it should be better not to annoy him again, otherwise depending on his method, the opposite party certainly didn't have the auspicious day today, simply the next step of Ye Feng would be, he would behead the other party altogether, once and for all.

When Su Xinchang saw Ye Feng sneering, he started getting panicked more and more in his heart. As from the aura of Ye Feng it appeared like, didn't he even pay a slightest attention to Miao Zhenqiang?

Liu Lihui didn't dare to continue too long on this topic, so he wanted to change the subject to avoid it. He knew that at the moment, on the opposite side, a grand feast was being held by Yanjing's Lin Clan for the celebration of the 70th birthday of Lin Clan's Old Man. If this Ye Feng didn't have any relationship with Lin Clan, then how couldn't he go?

Just when he was planning to make a veiled attack, immediately then the door of that private room burst open by someone "bang", a group of people flushed in a threatening manner!

Including Su Xinchang, all the people present there were suddenly got frightened and shocked, Ye Feng frowned and immediately turned his head to look back and what he actually saw was a line of 5 or 6 people headed by Xie Min were looking at Su Xinchang constantly with an extremely angry expression.

“Su Xinchang, do you have to say anything?”

The air around Xie Min was making it feel like quite sooner she was going to make an unreasonable scene, she came in and instantly pointed her finger at Su Xinchang and in an scolding manner, she shouted: “so late, and what you said that you were going to discuss a business meeting, as a result of it, well it feels like you are still thinking about your daughter, right? Very good. We’re divorced now!”

Behind her there was a man who was also from Xie Clan, he was one of the most dignified and commanding one. He was actually the father of Xie Min and also the main owner of Xie Clan presently. He was called ‘Xie Pinghui’.

Rest of the people were also from Xie Clan, they were both male as well as female and each and every one of them was gazing at Su Xinchang together with Su Menghan with a very ill facial expression.

When Su Xinchang saw Xie Min, he immediately understood that today’s matter was getting more and more difficult to handle, he started to have a headache, he thought that how today turned out to be such an unlucky day for him?

He immediately prepared his mind to resolve this crisis. If the current situation was not in his favor, then he would likely not think about pleasing both sides! His mind immediately entered the state of high-speed operation to come up with another way to resolve the current situation.

Liu Lihui was watching everything from the sidelines and was thinking that the current situation was not at all favorable for him, it seemed like somehow he got

involved and trapped in some kind of family quarrel. His level as compared to Xie Pinghui was far from comparison, hence he didn't have to be afraid of the opposite party. However, if it was seen from the different aspect then Liu Lihui was just a person while Xie Clan was a family as a whole!

Besides Xie Pinghui, other people of Xie Clan also held important positions in many places, moreover, they had a very strong hold over both the government as well as business. Although Xie Clan was merely a second-class family, but together they became much stronger than Liu Lihui as one person alone.

“Xinchang, I trusted you in vain, hadn't thought that you would deceive my daughter like this unexpectedly.”

Xie Pinghui walked towards Su Xinchang and with a very disappointed look on his face, he looked at him and arrived at his side to take a seat. He then looked at Liu Lihui and slightly nodded his head as a signal to greet him. Since Liu Lihui was such a real powerful figure, Xie Pinghui didn't need to offend him in any way, however he tried throwing him a hint to remind him that this was Xie Clan's matter and they didn't want outsiders blending in it.

If it were an ordinary time, Liu Lihui, seeing all these things, would have already thought to leave this place as he knew his limitation. However now, he decided to rush into danger and take the risk of a stroke!

By putting on a fake smile on his face he also greeted Xie Pinghui, and then he moved towards the position of Ye Feng and sat at the side of him directly. He did that just to express two points, first -he wouldn't get involved in this matter of Su Xinchang and Xie Clan, and second, with this he tried to convey his message to the opposite party without using his words that, they could do whatever they want but dare not to cause any trouble to Ye Feng.

It was crystal clear that Xie Pinghui understood what Liu Lihui tried to convey, so he smiled and nodded to him. But unfortunately Xie Min was such a feeble minded person, she didn't care about others. Seeing Su Menghan, she lost her calm and her blood started boiling, from behind the people she rushed and arrived at the side of Su Menghan.

"Bitch, offer your seat to somebody, don't you know how to respect the elder?"

Full of arrogance and condescension, Xie Min said that to Su Menghan with a superior tone.

Bang!

Ye Feng stood up and slapped her directly across her face, and said coldly: "I advise you to speak in a respectful manner!"

Half of the face of Xie Min turned red instantly, she didn't dare to believe what happened just now, she immediately covered her face and with her finger she pointed at Ye Feng, although her finger was trembling but she said in attitude: "You, how dare you hit me!"

This scene suddenly gave a power shock to all the people present there, Ye Feng's sudden slap mummified them all. In addition to Xie Pinghui and the other members of Xie Clan, Su Xinchang also didn't expect Ye Feng would actually hit her so easily like this! And on top of that, wasn't he afraid to offend Xie Clan?

Even if Liu Lihui was there to support him, still this boy was totally not at all

capable enough to offend Xie Clan! He had a connection with Heavenly Serpent Gang, who was just a bunch of gangsters, that was all, then how could he use the power.

Only Su Menghan was used to see this Ye Feng's ferocious side, actually she was somewhat worried.

Liu Lihui from one side, was taking pleasure in others' misfortunes, He thought that Xie Clan offended Little Ye, must be they were lucky today. Certainly, he was not a fool that he would go and remind the opposite party about Ye Feng's background, since if by any chance Little Ye planned to play the role of the pig to eat the tiger, a type of pretentious bastard to step on the human?

Xie Min went behind a tall youth wearing a military uniform, about 27-28 year old by his appearance. This sudden incident immediately turned on his anger and he stood up and strode towards Ye Feng! He came out to be the younger brother of Xie Min, called Xie Chengye, he grew by Xie Clan as to develop him into a key figure in the military, but at present he was only a deputy major of a battalion, his development was not upto the expectation.

"Boy, have not your family members taught you that in outsiders interact with each other, you must not be too rampant?"

Although his military rank was not very high, but his determination was more than enough to deal with Ye Feng, this sort of organized crime relative, hence, he stood up and threw a powerful slap across the face of Ye Feng quite heavily. Dare to hit his elder sister, didn't this boy want to live patiently?

When Xie Min saw her brother slapped him, a touch of happiness suddenly flashed on her face, it seemed as if she finally saw the swollen face of Ye Feng.

Her younger brother, from his childhood to till now had been helping her out several times, moreover, he also didn't know the difference between the good and the evil, anyone who tried to offend his elder sister and younger brother, never had the good end!

Chapter 50 The wrath of Scarred Face Man

The young soldier, Xie Chengye, was staring in anger, everyone from Xie Clan were already anticipating that something bad was going to happen soon, and suddenly a slap was thrown towards Ye Feng!

Bang!

Another clear sound, but the situation was different from what was imagined by people.

In anger, Ye Feng flung his arm to grab Xie Chengye and slapped him hardly across his face, as a result of it, he flew all the way to the wall and bump against the luxurious decoration on the walls quite heavily. Suddenly, fresh blood gushed out from the corner of his mouth!

This scene, once again left a very powerful shock on everyone's mind who were present in that private room, they were all got frozen to the spot. Besides, when that beautiful waitress saw the series of violent incident taking place one after another, she panicked and quickly ran out of the room all prepared to report to the manager of the hotel.

“Chengye, are you alright?”

Xie Min promptly moved towards her younger brother to give him support, a flashing anger with a touch of surprise could be seen very clearly on her face, this boy dared to hit her younger brother including her was really unexpected, really he overturned the heaven!

Xie Pinghui, seeing this now could not sit still, he stood up and loudly shouted: “Stop!”

“Why, do you also want to get thrashed?”

Ye Feng tilted his head at his side to gaze at him, and very indifferently he fired that question on him.

“You.....”

Xie Pinghui’s entire body started shaking with anger: “You are called Ye Feng, ain’t you? how can you be so uneducated and uncultured?”

“Ha ha, you are talking to me about education and upbringing?”

Ye Feng glanced at the side of Xie Min: “First take care of your daughter properly, then talk about it.”

Xie Pinghui listened to him and felt speechless suddenly. Indeed, just a moment ago, wasn’t Xie Min opened her mouth earlier to say “Bitch”? Seeing his own girlfriend was being abused like this by others, it was very normal for Ye Feng as a man to lose his calm.

Just now, who were got beaten up by Ye Feng were Xie Pinghui’s son and daughter, it was impossible for him to stand on the side of Ye Feng. While making a stuffy groan, he said: “That’s also not the way to hit people out of nowhere using your hands and fists. You apologize to my daughter, and I assure

you that we will surely write off this beating incident.”

Very frankly he said to Ye Feng that he surely would write off this incident of hitting Xie Min, however, he didn't say that hitting Xie Chengye would be written off as well, obviously this Xie Pinghui was also an old crafty fox. Firstly, he was trying to make Ye Feng apologize to his daughter to save his face, and then he would use his son as an excuse to teach a lesson to Ye Feng, indeed such a sinister old man!

“Ye Feng

Su Menghan saw him angrily hitting people around for her, she felt her heart had intertwined with him, she tugged at his sleeves.

With full of emotions, she saw that Xie Min was hit by him and because of that there was a very flustered and defeated look on her face. Su Menghan was a very pure and honest girl from inside her heart, after all she had been oppressed by the opposite party for more than 10 years in a row. Especially during her young age, she was got beaten up by Xie Min not only one or two times, instead several times.

But intellectually speaking, she did not want to see Ye Feng doing so. Although he had a complete support of Heavenly Serpent Gang , but still as compared to Xie Clan, he didn't have an absolute advantage, even if he was the young cousin of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but hitting someone from Xie Clan certainly would be very troublesome. Besides, leaving this aside, she had always been personally in favor of a peaceful solution to any problem.

Rest other people of Xie Clan including men and women saw that even Xie Chengye was got beaten up badly by Ye Feng, so no one dared to come forward

against him since they all were timid in a way. Originally, they had come over here to cheer Xie Min up for “justice”, but they didn’t know anything about Ye Feng, therefore, in order to not to get into any trouble, they fixated their sights on Xie Pinghui and relied completely on him.

Xie Pinghui stood up on the side, looked at Xie Chengye with a very shady and hidden complexion and nodded to him, then he turned around to pour his gaze at Ye Feng and said: “what happened? For the sake of so-called man’s honor, you are finally refusing to apologize for your action?”

In his opinion, although Ye Feng had the support of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but eventually he was merely a high-school student, so it was not difficult for them to make him admit his defeat.

But contrary to his expectation, Ye Feng was not a bit inclined to apologize to her.

“Just look at the face of Menghan, so I can’t be held accountable for this matter.”

Ye Feng didn’t pay attention to rest of the people who were covetously watching him from one side, he sat down and said slowly: “Anyway, since we are here, why don’t you just give me an explanation about how did Menghan’s grandmother encounter a car accident?”

“What car accident?”

Xie Pinghui snorted coldly.

“Right, what car accident, how are we involved in this matter, why do we have to give an explanation?”

Xie Min became a little worried, with an upward movement she replied to Ye Feng and tried to totally deny this blame, simultaneously, with all her might she gave signal to Xie Chengye by using her eyes. Xie Chengye quickly understood the hidden meaning behind that signal, with a shady facial expression he nodded to her as well and then he immediately pulled out his cellphone and sent a text message.

“Is that so? Since you have totally refused to admit this, I won’t force you then.”

Ye Feng smirked and looked towards Su Xinchang and Xie Pinghui who were sitting together, then he turned his vision towards Su Menghan, held her hand and pulled her to get up, since he wanted to leave now.

There was no point in staying there anymore. About the car accident, Ye Feng could definitely make use of Heavenly Serpent Gang to investigate into this matter, as he had a firm believe that they would certainly find any clue.

“Stop right there, after hitting people, now you want to walk away from here, that’s not so easy!”

Xie Chengye with half of his face red, suddenly saw them departing, he immediately stepped forward, stared at them angrily and stopped them at the door.

Ye Feng still holding Su Menghan’s hand, looked around and glanced at Xie

Min : “That’s quite easy to handle, let her apologize to Menghan, then in return I will apologize to her as well!”

“Little brat, just dream on! You dare to hit the active duty military personnel, you just wait for your death!”

Xie Min Poohed a little and didn’t pay attention at all to Ye Feng, presently the only thing she was itching to do was she wanted to take hold of Ye Feng and hit him personally by her own hands, so, how possibly she could apologize?

“Then get out of the way, don’t waste the time of everybody. If you have any contradiction with Su Xinchang, then you have to resolve it by your own.”

Ye Feng arrived in front of Xie Chengye and looked directly into his eyes without paying the slightest attention to the status of opposite party.

“Clear my way.”

Xie Chengye touched the fresh blood coming out from the corner of his mouth, contemptuously he looked at Ye Feng: “Now that even you want to apologize, you must look that whether I am willing to accept or not.”

He barely said his words and at the same time a group of men rushed out of the elevator of corridor, from their footsteps and clothing, it was quite clear that they were soldiers unexpectedly!

“Xie elder brother, what’s the matter!”

That group of people flushed in a threatening manner and caused a chaotic situation in the entire corridor. There were other customers as well who wanted to go to the bathroom, but seeing such a turmoil they stepped back and didn't dare to approach near the corridor.

In fraction of seconds, seven or eight youth wearing the military uniform gathered around the door of that private room to block the way of Ye Feng. They were below Xie Chengye on the basis of ranking, they were under commander of platoon leader, usually they were mixed together to commensurate with the brothers.

Su Menghan was a little nervous: "Ye Feng....."

"Rest assured, I won't have anything to do in this matter."

Ye Feng patted on her shoulder to comfort her a little, he then looked up to see the other side who was also glaring at them by narrowing his eyes.

"This....."

Su Xinchang didn't think the situation would turn out like this, he could not even get time to say few words, he simply looked at Xie Pinghui since he wanted to say something to him.

"You can't control this matter, now this thing will be handled by military people, you and I are not related."

Xie Pinghui interrupted him, with a very calm appearance he was looking at the door where Ye Feng, along with Su Menghan, was stopped by those military

people.

Xie Pinghui as well never liked the presence of Su Menghan around Su Xinchang and Xie Min, but the most important thing was Xie Min and Su Xinchang had no child till now, that was the reason why Su Menghan's presence had become very sensitive.

It looked like this time, he would certainly be able to force Su Xinchang to abandon his owndaughter completely, right?

Since there was a support of military personnels to Xie Chengye, so his mind was at ease finally, holding calm and composed appearance, he was looking at Ye Feng: "Boy, if you have sensed your position already, then let me tell you now, if you bark like a dog three times , slap your face 100 times and finally crawl on your knees, then only I can consider to let you off, what say?"

As soon as he said that, many people in that private room suddenly gasped, since they thought that didn't this go too far?

.....

And at this moment, on the staircase of Jingcheng restaurant, a group of menacing gang members from Heavenly Serpent Gang carrying chopper went upstairs and appeared on the floor in a threatening manner.

Scarred Face Man was angrily walking in front of them, just few minutes ago he heard from Zhao Yibei that there seemed to be a troop of soldiers looking for Ye Feng, therefore, without wasting any second he, along with his group of people, came over here directly with a killing instinct!

Hotel lobby manager remained silent and gave instruction to his man to report to the police hastily. Things had gotten bigger and complicated there, and this situation had gone far beyond the power of the hotel manager to control.

Chapter 51 Battle of Words

A confrontation took place at the door of that private room between those 7-8 soldiers and Ye Feng who was still holding Su Menghan's hand. While, the rest of the people were just there watching everything for their enjoyment.

Ye Feng sized up that troop of soldiers standing in front of him blocking his way, he thought that it would be quite easier for him to draw his sword suddenly and kill them all in a flash, but what a pity, he couldn't take this measure.

He turned his gaze towards Liu Lihui, possibly this time, this guy might be able to come into action?

When Liu Lihui saw this, he coughed and suddenly stood up, his potbellied stature was finally in the standing position. Under this situation, he was definitely going to be on the side of Ye Feng.

"Keke, just now whatever happened here, I'm the witness of it!"

Liu Lihui said that while coughing, and then by carrying his heavy potbellied body he stood up: "Little Ye's beating to the military personnel, this thing is completely fictitious, it is completely an act of self-defense. However, the things became big and complicated, all thanks to Xie Clan's kid, isn't your influence in the army also not good?"

It was truly said that 'old ginger was hotter than young ginger' that meant experience really did matter, suddenly the complexion of Xie Chengye changed, his face immediately paled down because of Liu Lihui's sarcasm.

“Lao Liu, we must not foolishly interfere in this kind of thing for the good.”
(Lao = Old)

Xie Pinghui sitting on the side, with a very calm and composed look, said: “But your police system will be in inconvenience to participate in the military thing, right?”

An outbreak of Military conflict in the Chinese country was considered as a very serious matter. The thing that Xie Pinghui just now was obviously a kind of warning to Liu Lihui.

“No, no.”

Liu Lihui certainly was not like the opposite party’s general, he patted his big stomach and said with a smile: “Just now, whatever I said was just representing my thought, my identity has nothing to do with this matter. As a matter of fact, Old Xie, the point you raised a moment ago is 100 % correct.”

Xie Pinghui was the party secretary of the North West District in Yanjing city, but was retired now. However, Liu Lihui was little afraid that he could still do something. Moreover, as long as Liu Lihui would stick to Ye Feng, he could take a firm foothold, a trivial Xie Clan’s people couldn’t be able to do anything to him.

This is an important turning point in Liu Lihui’s life!

“Representing the individuals? A very good point.”

Xie Pinghui smiled: “If that’s the case, then Chengye we don’t have to worry about how to carry out our plan.”

Simply put it like this, if the person were not Liu Lihui or the Chief of Northwest Public Security, Xie Pinghui would have completely acted as if he didn’t even exist there. But now, since he was already going to represent himself as an individual not like a Chief of Northwest Public Security, so they didn’t need to worry and give him any respect and importance as well!

Just by listening this, Xie Chengye’s face started revealing fierce and sinister look immediately, he fixated his eyes on Ye Feng in anger. Today, he had been slapped by this boy, if he didn’t take his revenge, then wouldn’t he lose his self-respect completely?

“Wait a minute!”

Seeing that, Liu Lihui strode and came in front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan to block the advancing opposite party and then he poured his gaze at Xie Chengye: “Ye little, you go over there , let me first deal with them! But you have to think about it, even if I represent the individuals, but also at the same time, I am a law-abiding citizen! Soldiers are like the hands of the people, if you dare to do anything to them, then I have plenty of ways to make things big.”

Although Liu Lihui couldn’t come up to act as an official to cover Ye Feng , but still he stood in front of him all of a sudden, that was beyond Ye Feng’s expectation which made him to do a little appreciation of him. It seemed like, was this fellow a little reliable?

“Then what do you say, how should this matter be resolved? Lets first come to an agreement, this kid didn’t give me an apology till now, doesn’t he want to get

out of here?”

Xie Chengye said that holding a gloomy face. Although Liu Lihui said he was just representing individuals, but his status as the Chief of Northwest Public Security couldn't suddenly vanish away, if he returned to his original power, then he knew quite well how to destroy someone by taking a disciplinary action, then the future would be even more uncertain.

“What apology? Damn!”

An angry and commanding voice passed out from the end of the corridor's elevator. Immediately, a group of people wearing suit, carrying choppers in their hands, mostly the gold medalist goons of Heavenly Serpent Gang emerged out. They were headed directly by Scarred face Man who was also holding a chopper in his hand, he was looking very brave, powerful and extraordinarily formidable!

From the other rooms on the corridor, several customers came out and stood on the doorway, watching this scene suddenly they gawked, what situation was this, even the organized crime gang had appeared here as well? This year, what happened, why the organized crime gang was being so rampant, and moreover they were also standing strongly against the soldiers? Wasn't this like courting death?

How to say it again, the organized crime people could never have the influence under the bright daylight, in addition, they couldn't confront with the national army ever. Since, no good result would ever come out in a situation like this.

Xie Chengye had also started to think so, although he was a bit surprised, but didn't care about it.

But when a group of people of Scarred Face Man came forward and started splitting up the doorframe of that private room, then suddenly those soldiers got the reality shock, they now understood that they couldn't underestimate them or consider them as a trivial group of people!

Almost everyone was stunned in that private room, however, Liu Lihui didn't have the time to enjoy their aggression and domineering.

“Who are you guys?”

Liu Lihui's complexion sank, he thought that bringing the choppers to clash with the soldiers, if this matter passed on to the higher authority, then it would be needless to mention that even for his immediate superior, it would become very difficult to protect Scarred Face Man!

On the surface, he certainly couldn't expose his relation with Scarred Face Man, so he could only ask questions from them like he did just now.

Scarred Face Man pulled the corners of his mouth to smile, obviously he was not a shithead, suddenly he pulled out a document from his bosom: “I, Your Father, am here rightnow, to ensure the security of Jingcheng restaurant, some people are causing trouble here, certainly we have to come forward on the surface to coordinate.”

What?

One group of people were just here trying to simply make noise and chaos, while on the other side, this organized crime gang were exhibiting such a high intelligence quotient?

Xie Chengye's complexion became more gloomy all of a sudden, he was constantly staring at the knife cut wound which was there on the face of that ferocious Scarred Face Man. He then snorted coldly and pulled out from his bosom, his own military officer card as an evidence.

“Obstruction caused in the military affairs by other personnel has been strictly prohibited!”

After done saying, Xie Chengye raised his chin and bulged out his chest as a symbol of feeling superior, he contemptuously looked at Scarred Face Man and thought, regardless of who the opposite party was, the organized crime gang or small security, the military had the ultimate power to sideline everyone even those who used to say ‘I, Your Father’!

The moment Scarred Face Man listened that, he split the door frame into two parts while pulling out his chopper, and by staring directly at him he said: “Why can only soldiers have the right to act as they please? We, as the security guards, have the prime job to ensure the safety of our customers at all cost, otherwise if by chance someone file a complaint against us, then our bonus of this month will be held, under such situation will you compensate me?”

“Correct, the security elder brother is stating the truth.”

Liu Lihui standing on one side continued saying: “Obviously, you Xie Clan has rushed over here to make trouble, whatever Little Ye did was just a justifiable act of self-defense, but you guys have blocked the way and not letting him leave. Is this the attitude of our country's military? I was really so disappointed!”

“I can't say that.”

Xieping Hui replied to him in a loud tone in that private room, since in the presence of Xie Clan, only he was capable enough to level up with Liu Lihui in this battle of words: “This is our Xie family’s affair, this little boy started hitting our people first, and on top of that also refused to apologize, how can we possibly let him go away?”

“Oh?”

Liu Lihui sneered: “And the ways to apologize are to bark thrice like a dog, slap yourself 100 times and crawl on your knees?”

“What? You insulted our customer, this boy, Jingcheng restaurant doesn’t welcome you, brothers, be prepared to catch up these people!”

Suddenly the anger of Scarred Face Man reached its peak, he waved his hand towards a group of men of Heavenly Serpent Gang to start a unified action, and so just after getting his signal they instantly flashed out a big row of choppers!

Xie Chengye came over here just to help his elder sister, did he actually know that he would bump into this sort of thing, he brought with himself his military officer card, but didn’t have any weapon in the hand, Ah! Since they were currently confronting a row of shinning choppers, so several soldiers were feeling diffident all of a sudden.

“Real man can never be at a disadvantage from the outset, were you guys just making fuss from the beginning?”

Many soldiers were having such type of thought, they were looking at each

other in blank dismay. They were empty-handed and now they had to confront with choppers, they didn't have that level of guts, the only thing left for them was to retreat, and by using their maximum speed they wanted to run away and ask someone to come and support them!

When Scarred Face Man was about to directly quell this scene, at this time, a large number of people appeared in that corridor out of the blue!

A group of four rows of police, wearing police uniform, from very far blocking the entire corridor from both ends, suddenly showed up. This group was headed by a tall and strong built personnel, having the look of an official, wearing the police uniform along with the first-level commissioner level epaulet, a silver olive branch, composed with three badges along with quadrangular flowers shining, all of them together were demonstrating his status explicitly.

“He is Miao Zhenqiang, the Chief of Yanjing's Public Security Headquarters!”

Many people exclaimed aloud, nobody had expected that such a big personality would actually show up himself today. Su Menghan, Liu Lihui, Scarred Face Man, Xie Chengye and others, all of them were totally in a state of shock. Ye Feng frowned and thought that wasn't this situation getting more and more complicated?

Chapter 52 Fierce tiger transformed into sick cat

Today, Miao Zhenqiang was supposed to be attending the grand feast of Lin Clan's Old man's 70th birthday, but suddenly he received a warning call from Jingcheng restaurant from the opposite side of the road and was informed about the chaotic situation where criminal police was also involved. Therefore, he used his maximum speed to rush over here to tackle the situation.

As soon as he arrived at the incident floor, suddenly his eyes fell on Ye Feng who was stuck at the doorway of that Private room, he secretly sneered at him in his heart and thought that did this kid, who caused so much trouble to Dragon Clan, again dare to cause such a high-profile trouble?

Undoubtedly, this time regardless of the situation, he would surely stand against Ye Feng!

Being the Chief of Yanjing public security Bureau headquarters, or the member of sub-provincial level municipal party committee, in this kind of situation he was obviously going to be deterrent. Merely the sudden appearance of Miao Zhenqiang immediately turned the fuss making incident floor into complete silence.

“Ye Feng, he is Miao Zhenqiang.”

Su Menghan pulled Ye Feng's arm and cautiously said that to him, while doing so, she was being more and more anxious. A character of this level had appeared there, in the present situation even her dad, Su Xinchang, also had no right to speak.

“Hmmmm, ok.”

Ye Feng squinted his eyes, looked at that middle-aged man of strong-built, wearing a first-level commissioner epaulet. He slightly thought that the current situation had gone beyond his expectation, if not handled with care then it would likely to hurt many people standing in his support like Su Menghan, Scarred Face Man, Liu Lihui and other people.

“Put down your arms and raise your hands!”

At one side of Miao Zhenqiang, one individual who was the Chief of Criminal Police, holding small speakers in his hands, facing the crowd in front of that private room, shouted out loud to alert them.

Seeing that Xie Chengye promptly jumped out and said: “Officer, these people are from underworld, to hold knife with the intention to offend someone is a serious crime, they must be severely punished.”

Miao Zhenqiang listened that and chuckled: “how can the people from military be so coward, can’t they even handle trivial underworld people?”

As soon as Xie Chengye heard that, his half still swollen face suddenly flushed. The relationship between the army and the police was not quite good, so in this kind of situation it was very normal to have a sarcastic encounter between them.

By crossing his hands behind his back to stand comfortably, Miao Zhenqiang was piercingly looking at Ye Feng and in a promiscuous manner he ordered directly: “Action! Catch them rightnow, the people of Organized crime gang as well as that boy wearing casual cloth!”

He knew that recently, Dragon Clan had suffered a great loss in Langfang City once again, seemingly that masked man who committed the crime there in Langfang was somehow related to Ye Feng. But because of the agreement done between Dragon Clan and Ye Feng's Grandfather, now Dragon Clan couldn't dare to trouble Ye Feng anyhow, but Miao Zhenqiang did not have this type of concern.

If he took hold of Ye Feng and got success in drawing out some news about that masked man from his mouth, then undoubtedly that would be a great help to Dragon Clan, obviously by doing this he would reap lots of benefits for himself. Being such a high level senior official, he was already quite aware of that hidden world of martial arts, moreover he had been on good terms with Lin Clan as well.

His this order had made this crystal clear among the people present on the scene that this time, who came out victorious and who lost the match!

Xie Chengye together with his group of soldiers had probably won this fight, with full of proud and self-satisfaction he was gazing at Scarred Face Man and his men.

He was feeling slightly uncomfortable in his mind and heart, since he couldn't succeed in humiliating Ye Feng personally, but as he knew already that it was impossible for him to take his revenge right now. Meanwhile, he could clearly see, although Miao Zhenqiang ridiculed him, but in fact his this action was aiming directly at Ye Feng. Ye Feng was soon going to be under the police custody, absolutely this thought was making him restless, however, he didn't know how this kid had offended such a high-ranked official?

Xie Min, who was still in that private room, although she didn't see what was

going on outside, but after listening to the outside propaganda she could at least guess now. She couldn't help herself from having a malicious thought in her dark heart. While looking at Ye Feng around Su Menghan, she thought as long as Ye Feng didn't return, she would see who was going to protect that young vixen?

On the other side, Xie Pinghui and Su Xinchang, who were still sitting inside that room, they stood up and approached close to the door where Ye Feng and other people were standing.

Su Xinchang was cold sweating, he totally didn't expect that inviting his daughter to dinner, such a trivial situation would evolve into something so big where even provincial and ministerial level officials had arrived at the scene. It seemed to him like, wasn't this guy Ye Feng, not on good terms with Chief Miao? However, if he relied on his identity as the cousin of the boss of trivial Heavenly Serpent Gang, and dared resist the provincial officials, then it would be undoubtedly suicidal for him.

Xie Pinghui was just as surprised as Su Xinchang, but it was a good thing for him. Since, in comparison to his idiot son, Chief Miao could do much more to Ye Feng, already he was eyeing at him, certainly he would bring more miserable fate for him.

He was just waiting for Ye Feng and the trouble making underworld people to be taken away by police, then after he would be able to handle the matter of Xie Clan very properly. He glanced at Su Menghan who was standing beside Ye Feng, and thought to himself that this little vixen was indeed very pretty, perhaps also

Everyone present on the spot was extremely happy because of Chief Miao's order, while on the contrary, there were few people like Scarred Face Man, Liu Lihui and Su Menghan who were worried like hell.

Liu Lihui was perspiring and looking at Ye Feng over and over again, he thought that why was Ye Shao not bringing up into light his relation with Lin Clan hastily? Did he want to wait until he entered the police station once again, was he playing the role of the pig to eat the tiger again?

On the other side, Su Menghan was tightly holding the arm of Ye Feng, a pair of her beautiful shining eyes were exhibiting the color of worry for him. She didn't utter a single word, but still Ye Feng could feel her anxiety and nervousness very well.

There was a fierce look on the face of Scarred Face Man, he was staring at Ye Feng as if his eyes were conveying this message: Ye elder brother, what do we do now. Would you like to fight with them ?

Fight with them!

Ye Feng was somewhat puzzled, this fellow was really a single minded person. He was pondering that in this current situation, very obviously only one thing left to do, that Ye Feng voluntarily got carried off by the opposite party. However, he must ensure the safety of Scarred Face Man.

He thought so because of two reasons, first was-organized crime people in the police station, was not good to speak about, second was-since Su Menghan would be left alone while she still needed someone very important to protect her here. If all people were taken away then apparently Ye Feng would not feel relieved.

Liu Lihui? Ye Feng didn't believe that this potbellied fellow would really firmly stand at his side once he was carried off by the police.

Ye Feng raised his head and looked towards the end of the corridor, that majestic Miao Zhenqiang was standing there looking at him constantly, coincidentally at that time, both were looking at each other's face. Miao Zhenqiang's face was exposing his secret sneer.

Ye Feng knew fairly well, this fellow was standing at the side of Dragon Clan, definitely he would not easily let him off from his grip. Moreover, several fully-armed police men were positioned close to the doorway of that private room, totally prepared to grab Ye Feng and Scarred Face Man at any cost.

“You stay here, I will be fine since I don't have anything to do with this matter.”

Ye Feng tried to comfort Su Menghan by saying that, then he raised his legs to arrive at the front. From his look it appeared like he was very self-poised at that time.

“I advise you, don't resist, if you try to act recklessly, then must know snipers have been kept on standby.”

Miao Zhenqiang said with a sneer, it was similar to the case where a brave fighter got selected to fight with a fierce tiger.

“Chief Miao , you really command such a huge power and prestige. Was this matter that important, ha-ha, that you needed to assign snipers to handle this situation?”

Just then, a very old spiritual voice passed from behind Miao Zhenqiang,

reverberated everywhere across that incident place.

Suddenly Miao Zhenqiang's body went stiff after hearing that voice, he thought wasn't that the voice of that Old man? Wasn't today his 70th birthday feast, unexpectedly had he come here in real?

Everyone's vision shifted towards Miao Zhenqiang's behind, they saw an old man indifferently approaching towards them, wearing a light gray Chinese tunic suit, although he was seventy years old still appearing very healthy and tough.

"I'm called Lin, the criminal police handles the case of dangerous criminals, how did you come here"

Miao Zhenqiang all of a sudden broke out in a cold sweat, he was thinking that this old man appeared here, there was 80% chance he was here just to protect Ye Feng, right? He had heard a lot that Ye Feng's Grandfather had some relation with Yanjing's Lin Clan, and now it appeared like it was pretty close to what he had heard!

In the eyes of people, just few minutes back, this powerful looking majestic Miao Zhenqiang all of a sudden turned into a sick cat from a fierce tiger. For other people like Xie Pinghui, etc, the vibration of the sudden appearance of Lin Clan's Old Man was way bigger than imagination!

Mr. Lin, this Old man, who shrouded in Yanjing's power and influence, actually unexpectedly came? Not to mention, before the sudden arrival of Mr. Lin, Miao Zhenqiang, who was a sub-provincial-level official and was also the state leader, he as well used to address him as "senior"!

Tonight this situation, where flamboyant personality kept on arriving at the incident place one after another, thus finally reached its climax!

Chapter 53 Shocked Audience

Ye Feng raised his head, and looked at the Old man, this was his first meeting with him.

Lin Hongchuan.

Lin Clan's Old man, during the beginning phase of his business, played a very important role in founding his huge business empire. Apart from that, regarding his children, at present he had formed a huge family and was surrounded by lots of children and grandchildren. The power he held in his empire was on tilting side. Although, he was not on any official position now, but no one dared to ignore his influence, not to mention his eldest son was currently one of the central most powerful persons in the today's business world.

Slowly he came out of the elevator, glanced around the corridor in front of him which let all the people present there feel the edge in the back. Every time he took one step, the breath of people was being half beat behind. Except a small number of people, no one knew the reason behind Old Man's sudden appearance over there.

Who among them had the worth to that extent where he was able to attract the attention of such a great person and draw him over there?

"Grandfather, please walk slowly."

A luxuriously attired youth, wearing a Patek Philippe watch on his wrist, standing behind Lin's Old man, said that with a smile across his face. Wasn't this

guy, Lin Xiuwen, the same person whom Ye Feng had seen last time?

At this time, he was accompanying Lin Hongchuan. Even if he was just a Lin Clan's Sanshao, still his existence as a Lin was more than enough to let the people of Yanjing shudder. Not to mention, right now in front of everyone, Lin's Old Man was also present there along with him, hence Lin's power was kind of doubled. (Sanshao – third son)

Customers of the other rooms were silently standing salute at the doorway. Being able to come to this Jingcheng restaurant to eat meal, obviously it was quite natural that their social status was certainly not low, just a glance was fairly enough for them to instantly recognize the identity of Lin's Old man.

“Little Miao, you got the team now, here I am.”

Lin's Old Man walked up to the side of Miao Zhenqiang and patted his shoulder with a smile.

Miao Zhenqiang had a connection with Long Clan in the martial arts circles while Lin's Old Man had a connection with middle Clan. Both sides were not on a harmonious term. However, the difference between the level of these two sides was way too large, still Miao Zhenqiang couldn't dare to confront him or speak even few words in front of him.

“Got the team!”

After that Miao Zhenqiang did not speak anymore rubbish, he coldly looked towards Ye Feng and then turned around and walked away.

A fierce tiger was tamed by Lin's Old Man and on top of that, it happened so easily in just a tweak. (Fierce tiger = Brave fighter)

Ye Feng was standing still there, remembering the face of Miao Zhenqiang which was very ferocious few minutes ago like a Chinese character, he thought to himself that one day in the future he would certainly point out the color of his look.

Then he turned his head and looked towards Lin's Old man and Lin Xiuwen, he slightly wrinkled his eyebrows and frowned. He never had thought to rely on Lin Clan to solve his any kind of problem, however the opposite party appeared suddenly like this which somewhat stupefied him.

Liu Lihui, who was standing behind Ye Feng, seeing that breathed a sigh of relief finally, he thought that since beginning Little Ye had already done the arrangement in advance with Lin's Old man, unexpectedly he made Lin's Old man to come over here personally, wasn't this really so awesome? This potbellied Chief of Public Security Sub-Bureau also thought that Ye Feng did call Lin Hongchuan to come and rescue him.

As for Su Menghan, she who was still standing beside Ye Feng, was feeling some apprehension. She didn't know the identity of Lin's Old Man, but she had an idea about Lin Xiuwen's identity who was known as Yanjing rich man's son and also as Yanjing's Playboy. However, by judging the surrounding person's response, suddenly she also guessed the status of Lin's Old Man.

She had no idea about what brought Lin's Old Man here, if he also wanted to deal with Ye Feng, then she simply didn't dare to imagine the consequences.

"Step aside, everything is alright okay."

Ye Feng waved his hand to indicate Scarred Face Man to take hold of their Choppers. As he knew, since Mr. Lin had appeared here, now there was no one who could dare to ask or do anything.

Although reluctantly, but still Ye Feng had to admit, this way many things would be smoothly done or easily solved. Su Xinchang, Xie Clan, Heavenly Serpent Gang now nobody would dare to create any problem to him. Must know, in the eyes of Lin's Old Man, he was his granddaughter's prospective husband! Of course, as for Ye Feng, whether he was ready to admit it or not, it was completely an another matter.

Scarred Face Man was being a bit skeptical, but seeing Ye Feng speaking up and waving towards them, he finally gave an order to all the men of Heavenly Serpent Gang to immediately withdraw and stand behind Ye Feng.

Xie Clan's people along with those soldiers also gathered together, they all were somewhat astounded, by holding a blank and uncertain expression on their faces they were looking at Mr. Lin while approaching gradually towards each other to stay close. Moreover, they were also getting more and more nervous with the passing time second by second. Even a rampant and unkind Xie Min was completely silent at this moment, she didn't dare to make even the least bit of sound.

As Mr. Lin was approaching gradually towards them, simultaneously Ye Feng could feel that the periphery of the atmosphere was changing gradually. No, not just the atmosphere, but also the breath!

Ye Feng looked stern, although at present he didn't know anything about the existence of the God, but still he could sense that everyone around Lin's Old man

was breathing vaguely because of his solid personality.

“Not only Lin Hongchuan was there, but there were also other people surrounding him to protect him!”

Ye Feng suddenly realized, no wonder merely two people, Lin Hongchuan and Lin Xiuwen, dared to come close to so many members of the organized crime gang who had choppers in their hands, they were not a bit afraid of any accident that might occur any moment.

Time seemed to have very slowed down, but in fact, it took just a moment for Lin Hongchuan to walk all the way to them.

“Ye Feng? This is our first meeting, do you know who I am?”

Lin Hongchuan stood still at a distance of three meters away from Ye Feng, and by chuckling he softly asked that from him.

“Are you Lin Hongchuan?”

Ye Feng looked at him while being totally stunned!

In short, by letting all the surrounding people completely startled on the spot, this boy unexpectedly dared to address Lin’s Old Man by his name, wasn’t it like courting his own death?

Moreover, Mr. Lin spoke to him so politely, it sounded like they were old friends, wasn’t this so unacceptable and unscientific?

“Hello! Don’t think you are the grandson of Grandfather’s old friend, how can you be so disrespectful to your elders and superiors!”

Mr. Lin standing at the side of Lin Xiuwen, immediately glared at Ye Feng angrily. He already knew the identity of Ye Feng, but it was quite obvious he didn’t pay any attention to that status. At this time, suddenly something hit his mind and he started thinking that this kid, Ye Feng, looked a little familiar, but where had he probably seen him?

“About that, I’m sorry, my Grandfather had introduced you to me like that.”

Ye Feng didn’t argue with him, without even looking towards Lin Xiuwen , he just gave an explanation directly to Mr. Lin.

“Haha, no worries. Correct, it really is the style of that Old man.”

Lin’s Old man was not at all angry with Ye Feng, instead he laughed, his eyes were displaying a sign of little praise for him. Had he ever seen such kind of young man for decades? Well, nowadays young people were very different, whenever they met him, they used to act like they were seeing an emperor. By the appearance of that Lin’s Old man it was apparently visible that he truly had a flattering expression on his face for Ye Feng.

Just a simple line of Lin Xiuwen had made Ye Feng’s status quite vivid among the people.

This boy Ye Feng was unexpectedly the grandson of the old friend of Mr. Lin! Moreover it appeared quite lucid that the relationship between Mr. Lin and his

old friend was considerably good!

The audience were completely astonished!

Su Menghan who was still tightly holding Ye Feng's arm, there was an expression of disbelief suddenly took birth on her face. Was Ye Feng really the biggest supporter of Yanjing's Lin Clan? Truly inconceivable! No wonder, he had always been so self-poised, that was the reason why he used to encounter any kind of situation very calmly.

Su Menghan somewhat discontentedly, slightly pinched him, why he did not tell her this sort of important matter, it was too repugnant.

Scarred Face man still standing respectfully behind Ye Feng, was revealing a look of shock at this time. He thought that Ye Feng, who was originally the real boss of his gang from behind the scene, was he actually having such a good relationship with a great personality Mr. Lin? This was really a bliss, an ecstasy !

He didn't have the desire or expectation to continue growing and expanding Heavenly Serpent Gang, but his heart was filled with a big desire to find out that Swordsman who had wounded his face ten years ago, so that he could take his ultimate revenge from him. Obviously, the more abundant background Ye Feng had, the more favorable situation would be for Scarred Face man in achieving his life's goal.

Chief Liu Lihui of Yanjing Public security Northwest Sub-bureau was extremely excited rightnow, he was almost about to dance at the scene. This time, he bet right!

However, on the one hand few people were in ecstatic mode, while on the other hand few were in extreme distress.

At one side, Su Xinchang, Xie Pinghui, Xie Chengye, Xie Min, and other people seeing Ye Feng and Lin's Old man talking to each other in so joyous and familiar way, turned them more and more tensed.

Chapter 54 He didn't deserve my older sister.

Regret was probably the only thing Su Xinchang's heart was feeling at the moment.

He had never thought that Ye Feng could have the relation with Lin Clan unexpectedly. If he had known this already, he would have absolutely maintained the friendly attitude towards him from the outset!

“Actually what is the identity of his grandfather, and unexpectedly he is friends with Lin's Old man”

Su Xinchang had mixed feelings, during his previous survey, how this thing went out of the range of his investigation which he carried out especially to find out every minor detail related to Ye Feng's life? In order to find out the identity of Ye Wentian, he, who was merely a chairman of the ordinary group, wanted to investigate this which was entirely a wishful thinking.

At present, until he completely offended Ye Feng, then only he came to know that unexpectedly he had a connection with Lin Clan! If since beginning he had stood in the favor of Ye Feng and had supported him and Su Menghan, then now did he need to look at what Xie Clan signaling him by winking at him?

Unfortunately, in this world there was no such kind of drugs which could eradicate the so-called 'regret'. Su Xinchang did all this by his own free will, he had no option left than to regret for his misdeed or misfortune.

Each and every person of Xie Clan had a very noticeable facial expression at the moment. their faces were exhibiting very colorful expression because of the

ongoing situation.

Originally, they had nothing to do with Ye Feng, they had no connection with him. But coincidentally that happened recently when Su Menghan came together with him. They just wanted to oppose Su Menghan, but that automatically provoked Ye Feng as well.

At this time, deep in their hearts most of them were scared because just a moment ago Xie Min had scolded Su Menghan, now she was also regretting at her own words which was truly of very low standard. Since she had no idea about the strength of the opposite party earlier, that was why she scolded her like that, but the terrifying point which kept the rest of the Xie people including her quite nervous was that wasn't she scolded her very badly in a very shameful manner?

At present Xie Min was incomparably worried in her heart just by thinking that she had caused Ye Feng a lot of trouble. Not to mention a slap across her face, if Ye Feng would wish to hit her again on the present scene, even if he hit her 10 times this time, could she be able to utter a single word against him now?

Simply speaking, Ye Feng had a big supporter now, the great Lin Clan. Just few words of Lin's Old man was capable enough to eradicate the existence of the so-called second class family 'Xie Clan'. They didn't even have any level in comparison to Lin Clan.

All of a sudden the identity proof of the Military officer Xie Chengye fell down because he saw Lin's Old man shouted loudly at Miao Zhenqiang to immediately withdraw his police group. He knew that, not only Ye Feng wouldn't have forgotten about the slap, but also he would now investigate into their issues!

Xie Pinghui's mood suddenly dropped to the bottom. As a retired official and a very clever old man, only he himself knew about the strength and capabilities of Lin Clan, as well as he also had a very good understanding about the current situation which was really not least a bit favorable for them.

He looked at Ye Feng who was standing in front of him in a very calm and composed form. In his heart he secretly hated this kid for concealing such a big thing so deeply in his heart. Not even an investigation which was jointly carried out together by both Xie Clan and Su Sheng Group could be able to discover his connection with Lin Clan.

"I, Xie Pinghui, respectfully congratulating Lin's Old man for his birthday today, Many happy returns of the day, may God bless you and give you lots of happiness as immense as the Eastern Sea longevity!"

Xie Pinghui stacked the smiling face and took the initiative to wish him his birthday first out of others.

"Well, I am getting old day by day, you young people get back and do what you have to do, ok?"

By raising his hand Lin's Old man said that with the intention to stop Xie Pinghui from further interaction since he wanted to continue talking to him. From his words, everyone implied that he wouldn't hold them responsible for today's action.

All of a sudden his words lifted the burden from their heart. Finally Xie Pinghui together with his Clan and Su Xinchang felt a big relief.

With full of excitement Old Man Lin then looked at Ye Feng as well as Su Menghan who had his arm tightly held in her grip. That view triggered the

interest of Old Man Lin, hence he asked from him: “Ye niece, she is your girlfriend, isn’t she? Why are you not introducing her to me?”

The moment Su Menghan heard his words, her face turned red, she blushed hardly, but she didn’t speak anything to oppose him, out of awkwardness she sipped her lips gently, which was making her incomparably lovable and cute.

Su Xinchang who was standing behind them, just for a while thought to jump out to introduce himself as the father of Su Menghan, but in the end he didn’t have the courage to come out and speak in front of him. He thought what would happen if Old man Lin would point out that he asked from Ye Feng, then why did he interfere between them? Speaking carelessly was not at all considered good.

“Ah, yeah, she is my girlfriend, how come you know about it?”

Ye Feng replied to him, then he looked straight into the eyes of Su Xinchang, and thought to himself that pretty soon he would be able to see what would be the reaction of Old man now to his reply.

He might force them to break up, and then he would announce the marriage of his granddaughter with him? If the impression of Lin Clan was so strong in Yanjiing, then it would be quite normal for the Old man to do so.

However, even if the opposite party would force Ye Feng to break up with her, it would be impossible for him to compromise with the opposite party. Since he had recognized Su Menghan as his girlfriend, so he would never let her go like this in the midway!

“Ha ha, the young girl is extraordinarily beautiful! The love of young people

must be treasured well.”

After saying that, Lin Hongchuan didn't speak anything else, he just kept on looking Ye Feng's eyes which was more than a subject of ponder, it was also more than a hint of appreciation.

Lin Hongchuan could see through the hidden meaning behind the look of Ye Feng, he thought Ye Feng could ignore his granddaughter Lin Shiqing, as well as he could also insist to stick together with the girl he liked. This spirit was truly commendable, really it was quite different from other ordinary young men.

Lin Shiqing's fame was resounded all over Yanjing, she was recognized as the perfect goddess in the city Yanjing. Lin Hongchuan thought it was close to impossible that Ye Feng would have not seen Lin Shiqing till now. If for a while lets assume he hadn't seen her, but he must have seen her pictures.

How possibly he knew that Ye Feng was not even least bit interested in his granddaughter, he didn't want to think about it anymore

Lin Hongchuan secretly sighed in his heart, unfortunately if he appreciated Ye Feng for his resolute, then how that old man, Ye Wentian, couldn't be able to think so.

Mr. Lin very clearly knew that Ye Wentian had already recognized his outstanding granddaughter and also wanted to make her the granddaughter-in-law of Ye Clan. Now in this case, even if he was his old friend since many years, but still he couldn't persuade him!

So, at present in front of them the love of these two young people was there,

they had no other choice left than to completely rely on fortune

“It is natural – Mr. Lin, were you looking for me, is there any matter?”

Ye Feng noticed that the other party did not mention anything about Lin Shiqing, that was the reason he brought this topic up.

“Well, no, its just happened that you are here, I have come over here to see the old man.....”

Lin Hongchuan showed a faint smile, he wanted to say something to Lin Xiuwen who was standing behind him, but abruptly something hit Lin Xiuwen’s mind and all of a sudden he raised his finger and pointed at Ye Feng!

“I remember now, are you that evil guy from the last time?”

Lin Sanshao finally remembered everything, he had seen Ye Feng last time at the Oushi Antique store! It seemed like, was this guy that one who broke his favorite white Yin Yang fish into pieces?

Lin Hongchuan was completely taken aback for a moment by hearing Lin Xiuwen’s words, had Ye Feng and his grandson seen each other already?

“Well?”

Ye Feng quickly looked at him, he did not know why on the earth Lin Sanshao was doing this.

“Wasn’t it you who broke that white Ying Yang fish which I had selected especially for my grandfather?”

Lin Xiuwen had an evil look on his face, he was staring at Ye Feng: “Do you even know, that was my own favorite gift?”

“Sorry, I do not know.”

Ye Feng chuckled: “And I was not the one who broke that antique piece, if you want to know who specifically did that, then just go back and ask this from those two attendants of yours.”

“Nonsense, they said that you bumped into them and broke that antique piece, is it wrong?”

Lin Xiuwen’s anger suddenly burst out.

“Even if I bumped and broke it, still Uncle Ou had already paid triple compensation to you, what more do you want to be done for that?”

Ye Feng smiled lightly, this boy was really too rampant.

“It’s – ahem – well, forget it.”

Lin Xiuwen also wanted to say something to zip his mouth, but just the thought that Grandfather was still behind him, stopped him, but he wasn’t ready to give up and just let off Ye Feng.

From the beginning he looked up and down several times at Ye Feng, finally he took a step back and said to Lin Hongchuan: “Grandfather, I think this boy doesn’t deserve my older sister. This thing

As the favorite grandson of Lin Hongchuan, Lin Xiuwen knew earlier than others that his grandfather wanted his sister Lin Shiqing to be betrothed to a thing called Ye Feng. But he didn’t expect Ye Feng would actually turn out to be that evil guy from that antique shop.

The moment his words fell in the presence of all, each and every one of them went in a complete shock!

Ye Feng didn’t deserve his older sister?

Wasn’t it like Mr. Lin was fully determined to get his granddaughter betrothed to Ye Feng? Moreover, just now as Lin Xiuwen mentioned about his elder sister who was unmarried, from that it could be concluded that there was only one person who could be said that, and that was none other than the No. 1 beauty of Yanjing city – Lin Shiqing!

Chapter 55 Exciting news burst out

Like a powerful bomb, Lin Xiuwen's words were suddenly thrown into the crowd.

This was the explosive news!

Ye Feng was the first to feel its heat, while at one side Su Menghan was there who was still holding Ye Feng's arm tightly, it was very obvious that those words had set off incomparably mighty waves in her heart, the destructive power of which was not inferior to 12 levels of typhoons!

What? Ye Feng unexpectedly had the entanglement with Miss Lin?

Su Menghan's face suddenly became pale, if it were the case of any other beautiful woman, then she would have a little confidence that she could compete with her. But when the opponent was Lin Shiqing, the case was completely different.

Although Su Menghan was considered as Xiaohua of the Junior High School, but still if she would be compared with the matured and royal elder sister, Lin Shiqing, it would be very tender. Moreover, the other party *i.e.* Miss Lin had an extremely high family background which was way too higher than Su Menghan's family background.

(Xiaohua = the prettiest girl of the School)

"Excuse me, I don't know who your older sister is."

Ye Feng frowned, then he shifted his line of sight towards Lin Hongchuan: “Mr. Lin, if you will excuse me, then may I ask you to take your leave. Thank you for coming here to see me, but I don’t welcome this.”

He said that, ofcourse it was totally meant for Lin Xiuwen, the Sanshao of Lin Clan.

“Haha, this kid is talking nonsense, this thing has not even started yet.”

Lin Hongchuan also gave Lin Xiuwen a glance, he should not have talked about this thing in front of others. But just a moment ago in this Jingcheng Hotel, in front of lots of people, a very crucial and confidential matter slipped out of his mouth.

Unexpectedly just a few minutes ago, this kid, who ran over here following his grandfather, could do such a blunder, just now he proclaimed an important matter in the public, which was a little indiscreet. After doing this kind of thing, could he be able now to take the responsibility and bear the consequences of it?

Old man Lin did not completely deny the words of Lin Xiuwen, but as a result he only tried to play the counter-effect. However, whatever he said now that indicated this matter had just a wee bit consideration, it was the best dealing method of him.

Since Lin Xiuwen noticed that he was being stared by his grandfather, he suddenly realized his mistake, he immediately shut his mouth and did not dare to leave the place.

“Since my nephew Ye said so, I’ll have to say good-bye then.”

Lin Hongchuan spoke that and with his sharp eyes he swept the crowd with a look that whether the hidden meaning of him was clear to everyone or not. Regarding this matter, if the people present there would ever try to speak out about it, Old man Lin would never forgive them !

The young lady of Lin Clan, Lin Shiqing, she could marry anyone, but this was capable enough to even affect the country's future political shape in next ten years or twenty years. If this issue would spread out in the public, then it would absolutely become a very sensational topic of discussion throughout the country. That was the reason why Lin Hongchuan didn't want to make an announcement about her marriage so early.

Most of the people present on the scene were cold sweating, among them Su Xinchang was also one of them who was very tensed, because his daughter Su Menghan was still together with Ye Feng, wouldn't people say that he had snatched away Lin Clan's son-in law?

Su Xinchang , who was already in a bad mood, was now more scared than being anxious, and all this happened simply because of Ye Feng's identity! Now, for him Ye Feng was like an almighty God, if he would get the opportunity to meet him alone, then he would definitely treat him very respectfully without saying anything rubbish to humiliate him.

As Lin Hongchuan turned around, Lin Xiuwen also hastily followed him, he appeared just like a child who after making a mistake used to lowered his head, he didn't dare to utter even a single word. Before others, Lin Xiuwen was just like the emperor, but in front of Lin Hongchuan, he without any doubt was a good boy.

Even if just a moment ago the thing that happened, it appeared like he accidentally made a mistake, thus making Lin Hongchuan unable to have the

heart to blame him or rebuke him.

“Oh, so did I want to get into trouble?”

The deep eyes of Ye Feng was staring at Lin Xiuwen's back, he was meditating quietly. As per his judgement, this Lin Sanshao didn't seem to be so superficially remnant on the surface, then that meant he deliberately said that in front of the crowd.

So many people were present on the scene, even if Lin Hongchuan didn't take guarantee that this rumor wouldn't be spread out tiny bit. But the most essential point was even if those people didn't dare to speak irresponsibly everywhere, but when the time would come, Lin Xiuwen would himself spread the news, and nobody would suspect him.

The thoughts were sinister, deceitful!

Purposely, when this news would be spread out, then Ye Feng would also understand what was it meant for. Since Lin Shiqing was so outstanding, very attractively and had a very splendid appearance, then how possibly the pursuers would be less in number.

Maybe if not tomorrow, but soon enough there would be a pile of admirers of Lin Shiqing who would come looking for Ye Feng to trouble him.

Of course, Ye Feng was all prepared to cope with anything to resist by whatever means available, although he was not at all afraid of those troubles , but in his heart he had something going on regarding Lin Xiuwen's sharp and crafty mind.

“Little girl.”

Ye Feng tilted his head and saw Su Menghan who was pouting, she had a very unhappy appearance and there was not even a trace of smile on her face. He touched her head: “You are thinking about it, I really do not know his older sister.”

“Don’t touch me.”

Su Menghan ran to the side and very uncomfortably said: “It is not shameful, you hid the truth from me, it was such a big matter about your connection with Lin Clan but you never told me, you never cared for me”

There was no doubt that this little girl started to play temperament.

Ye Feng had never experienced how to deal with such kind of situation, this thing could only bewilder him, he then said: “Well, then how can you be willing to believe me?”

“If Lin Shiqing comes to you, what would you do?”

Very depressingly Su Menghan asked that from him.

“What can I do, I don’t even know her.”

Without hesitation Ye Feng replied that directly.

“Once you see her, you will start liking her.”

Su Menghan lightly groaned.

“How is it possible?”

Ye Feng was dumbfounded, he didn’t know whether to laugh or cry.

“How it is impossible, she is so attractive, her stature is also good, she has a splendid family background, moreover she is the President of the university student council, obviously her management ability would be remarkably strong

Su Menghan started to bring into light various advantages of her future competitor.

“Well, I promise you, even if we bump into each other ever in future, I won’t talk to her, okay?”

Ye Feng was feeling very helpless, he had no option left but to say that, but this little girl started asking again.

“This is you who said that, I haven’t compelled you to say so, right?”

Suddenly a sweet smile appeared in Su Menghan’s face, since the statement of Ye Feng was agreeable to her!

“Of course, it’s the promise of the man , the effective and influential word which is impossible to break.”

Ye Feng assured her.

“Well. I still believe you just once, as you can see, ok.”

So Su Menghan said that, she was finally satisfied with his replies, now no more playing any temperament.

When the surrounding people saw that unexpectedly she had the dare to talk to Ye Feng in such a way, they started sweating out. They were very fortunate since they didn’t know the identity of Ye Feng from the beginning, but now when everything was in the light and everyone knew his identity, even though this little girl was talking to him like this, she was really very arrogant, wasn’t she afraid of Ye Feng?

This is the difference between Su Menghan and the person like Xie Min.

Whether it was the status of Ye Feng or his background, she didn’t care about any such things. What she cared the most was only this person ‘Ye Feng’, if Ye Feng were such type of person who used to break the faith of people after getting power and authority, , then in that case he would never have become worthy of her.

“What you people are looking at, do you people also want to cause trouble to Ye Shao ?”

Standing behind Ye Feng, Liu Liuhui with full of proud, all of a sudden shouted at the group of people of Xie Clan.

Could it be possible now for Xie Clan and other group of people to say a single word in front of Ye Feng? Until this time, they did not know why Liu Liuhui used to call Ye Feng “Shao”. But now they understood everything, this despicable sinister, this fat man knew everything already since beginning about the connection of Ye Feng!

“That, Ye Shao

(Shao – little)

Xie Min didn’t dare to have the slightest bit of arrogance again, with somewhat hesitation she shouted one.

“Ok?”

Both Ye Feng and Su Menghan turned around simultaneously to look at her. That reminded Su Menghan about all sorts of bad things which Xie Min used to do with Su Menghan. But now all of a sudden there was a very fearful expression on her face.

Chapter 56 Zhu Bainiao, the Tomb Raider

Lin Hongchuan left the place along with his grandson, but the shock generated by his presence was not subsided.

“Ye Shao, I owe you an apology.”

Finally Xie Min decided to face Ye Feng, this sarcastic and mean woman finally chose to submit.

Ye Feng looked at her face which was heavily painted with make up, he knew this was perhaps the so-called bullying the weak and fearing the strong thing. In the World of the Immortals he had encountered countless number of such kind of people, he was kind of tired of them.

“I don’t need your apology. If you really want to apologize, then apologize to your Menghan.”

Ye Feng shook his head, then glanced at the side of Su Menghan, and thought that now the time finally came to let this little girl vent her grievances which she had suffered for more than a decade.

“Need not to apologize, whatever relationship was there between us, from now on that doesn’t exist anymore.”

Su Menghan shook her head and said that coldly while facing Xie Min who was standing at the side of Ye Feng. Her will was firm, today in the afternoon, Su Xinchang made his decision to choose Xie Min over Su Menghan, since then Su

Menghan was firm determined to disagree with everything which could pull her back in her family.

Even though the opposite party was willing to apologize to her now, she was not at all willing to accept it. More than ten years of injustice and grievances she had suffered, was it possible that just an apology could make up for everything?

“Menghan

Su Xinchang read his daughter’s facial expression and suddenly understood that it was now too late for him to say anything to her in order to plead her. His complexion became somewhat pale.

“So, lets talk about her grandmother, what is the truth behind the car accident that her grandmother had encountered?”

Ye Feng was not a bit interested in the nonsense talks of the opposite party, therefore, he asked the most crucial question straightforwardly.

If he had the time to talk nonsense with the opposite party, he might as well go back to start his cultivation training to level up his strength. He had a very clear understanding that his trump card was neither Lin Clan nor Ye Wentian, but his trump card was his status as a cultivator. As long as his strength would keep on increasing, he would be able to deal with anyone proficiently, even if in the future both Lin and Dragon Clan would jointly conspire against him, he could deal with them as well.

All authorities, in front of the overwhelming strength were like floating clouds!

Finally, he inquired about the car accident just in order to give Su Menghan a confession.

Unfortunately, this matter was very important, but Xie Min was not ready to acknowledge it even though she was under such kind of terrible situation. Obviously, who would like to spend the rest of his life in the prison because of the instigation of someone!

However, Ye Feng saw her panicking and out of fear she shook her head and said: “Truly speaking, this matter has nothing to do with us, I am not that kind of person, I am not insane to the point.....”

“is it?”

Ye Feng asked that, then he raised his head and looked at those four people Xie Pinghui, Xie Min, Xie Chengye and Su Xinchang. Except Xie Pinghui’s facial expression which was very normal, rest three of them were somewhat nervous and had a doubtful appearance, this made everything clear to Ye Feng.

Since the opposite party stubbornly refused to admit this, so how could Ye Feng pursue to the end. He, as a cultivation practitioner, couldn’t participate in this matter anymore, originally this matter should be handled by the police.

There was still the existence of law in this world, Ye Feng thought to let Su Menghan herself investigate this matter, and in this investigation process Heavenly Serpent Gang would be there to assist her. There was a possibility that they might uncover the truth of the past.

But if they didn’t get any success, then they could only wait for Ye Feng to

achieve his five years of cultivation, after that he could use “hypnosis” on Su Xinchang and Xie Min to pull out the truth from them. This was one of the techniques of Immortals which was generally used to deal with the ordinary person to ensure that the opposite party must spit out the truth!

“Then let’s go. Scar, come with us.”

Ye Feng nodded to Su Menghan, then called Scarred Face man since he wanted to tell him to let his members of Heavenly Serpent Gang assist Su Menghan in investigating the truth behind her grandmother’s car accident.

However, when Scarred Face man called his men, at the same time Ye Feng’s phone suddenly rang up.

Beep, beep, beep!

He took out his cell phone and saw it was the call of Ou B, so he let Scarred Face man and Su Menghan standing there, and answered the phone.

“Ouge, what’s the matter?”

(Note : Ouge = Ou elder brother)

Ye Feng asked that to tease him.

“Its a big matter! Small Bee, come to our antique shop quickly, the tomb raider, Zhu Bainiao, is rightnow in our store

Ou B sounded very excited.

“What?”

As soon as Ye Feng heard that, his complexion immediately changed, and all other feelings from his heart suddenly vanished! His mind instantly returned to that seven pictures of that faintly recognizable form of that long hair and buttocks with ethereal figure. Not long ago, that figure was seen in Shang Dynasty tomb site of Changbai Mountains.

Master, was that you?

Ye Feng looked a little distracted, hastily he shouted down the phone: “I’ll be right there!”

“Hurry up, understand the urgency of the situation, he would rushed back to Changbai Mountains tonight again!”

Ou B urged that hurriedly.

“Well, ok, but try to make him wait for me!”

After finished talking to him, Ye Feng immediately hung up the phone.

“What happened?”

Some doubts cropped up in the mind of Su Menghan, she thought that the facial expression of Ye Feng was exactly the same like he had today in the afternoon. Which matter was making him so worried?

“Suddenly something urgent came up..... right.”

Ye Feng deeply thought for a moment, his look became dignified, and then after a deep ponder he said to Su Menghan and Scarred Face man: “I will leave Yanjing immediately for a while, but I don’t know specifically for how long. Scar and Zhao Yibei will accompany me in this trip, so in order to help Su Menghan in her investigation, make someone from your Heavenly Serpent Gang in charge for this investigation.”

“What?”

Ye Feng’s statement suddenly startled Scarred Face man and he remained mummified for a moment, what was going on?

“I am planning a trip which is far from my home, don’t you think after a week you will die because of that poison, so it would be better for you to follow me.”

Ye Feng looked at him and whispered.

“Yes, I understood.”

Scarred Face man, as one of the three best gang leaders of Yanjing, possessed a very flexible mind, he quickly understood what Ye Feng was trying to say. Definitely there must be any urgent matter which was making Ye Feng go to solve that immediately, moreover this matter didn’t look like it occurred in this local area of Yanjing. This matter seemed very tricky as well.

“You want to go far? What about school, as you know very soon the college entrance examination

Su Menghan looked somewhat worried, obviously she wasn't in the favor of Ye Feng's sudden decision. Besides, the relationship between them had just started to develop, she didn't want to separate with Ye Feng so quickly.

“I'm sorry, but this thing is far more important for me than the college entrance examination.”

Ye Feng looked at her face which somewhat disturbed him, since this matter was related to Su Feiying, so it was not possible for him to sit idly.

He was very clear that his feelings for Su Menghan was completely different from his feelings for his master Su Feiying. In case of Su Menghan, he liked her, he was attached to her, he wanted to protect her at any cost. However, for his beautiful female master, Su Feiying, he just admired her, worshiped her, and now under the given situation he was being very worried for her.

In the World of the Immortals, the gap between Ye Feng and Su Feiying was very big, that was why he never dare to reveal his feelings for her that he used to admire. This feeling was still there deep inside his heart.

“Song Hu, I have to go with my younger male cousin immediately for a while, till then i am giving you the authority to manage all the matters related to our gang for temporary period.”

Scarred Face man was vigorous and resolute, he knew Ye Feng used to rush to time, therefore, he immediately elected an individual to deal with all the matters

related to Heavenly Serpent Gang for temporary period: “Since you’ve been on my side, so you have this very clear in your mind about how to do the things.”

“Don’t worry big brother.”

A square faced man said in a sinking voice: “We will carry out our all gang matters as usual. In addition, we will ensure the safety of Ms. Ye.”

This man was called Song Hu, whom Ye Feng had seen at Yanjing railway station as the leader of the gang, and was also present on the train as the uncle of that youth in western-style suit. He looked towards Ye Feng and Su Menghan in a very respectful way.

“Well.”

Scarred Face Man said that, then he approached near Song Hu, leaned towards his ear and whispered: “If by any chance we fail to come back at the beginning of the next month , then you continue with the transaction of that head.”

“Ok, got it.”

Song Hu knew that what he said was about that new drug thing, without hesitation he nodded his head.

“Well, let’s go.”

Ye Feng turned around to walk.

“Ye Feng!”

Su Menghan was standing in-situ, her face was displaying the color of worry and dismay. She had a feeling that this time Ye Feng was going to deal with lots of complicated things which might take place in his trip. So, when he would finally come back from his trip, would there be everything same between them which they had rightnow?

Chapter 57 Diamond Membership Card

Ye Feng's footsteps suddenly stopped since he was called by Su Menghan.

"I will come back as soon as possible."

Ye Feng turned around and smiled while looking at her: "Oh, that's right, Heavenly Serpent Gang will assist you in the investigation of your grandmother's car accident, don't worry, ok?"

He then glanced at Song Hu, the man with square face.

"Ye elder brother, will surely do."

Song Hu answered that in a serious tone, now in the absence of Scarred face man, he was going to be the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang temporarily. It was his responsibility now to make arrangement for this kind of stuff.

"Ok."

Dejectedly Su Menghan nodded her head, her glittering and translucent pair of eyes were twinkling again and again, at last she could no longer hold herself and ran three-steps towards Ye Feng, by completely ignoring the presence of surrounding people who were watching them at the moment, she wrapped her arms around him and tightly hugged him.

Her soft, warm and fragrant body was so attached to the chest of Ye Feng,

that it was making him suddenly a bit impulsive, just to stay with her like this all the way to the end, there was no longer the need to recall the World of the Immortals from earlier, right?

But this idea was just a fleeting thought, now at all cost he had to find the whereabouts of Su Feiying. It was simply impossible for him to ignore it.

“In fact, it’s not a big deal, in these days you live like a good person.”

Ye Feng patted her shoulder, his soft and gentle words were meant to comfort her, he then loosened his hand, finally stared at her delicate face and saved her appearance firmly in his heart.

He then turned around to leave, while she eagerly raised her head to look him going away.

“Rest assured, he is not like the ordinary person, nothing will happen.”

Scarred Face man was standing at one side, his incomparably violent looking face was showing a smiling expression at the moment, he said that to Su Menghan and then trotted to keep up with Ye Feng.

Zhao Yibei was waiting for them outside the restaurant, they went downstairs directly. But the people in that floor were looking at the back of Ye Feng and Scarred Face Man while they were leaving, they were also being somewhat perplexed.

How did he suddenly leave the place , why didn’t he take Su Menghan along with him?

Su Xinchang immediately ran up to her and asked: "Menghan, what happened?"

"It has nothing to do with you."

As soon as Su Menghan heard his voice, she coldly replied to him.

"Ms. Ye, we are sending you home."

Squared face man, Song Hu who was in a western-style suit, saw Su Xinchang running over to Su Menghan, the moment he saw him approaching, he took the initiative on his own and blocked him in front of her, so that the opposite party couldn't approach to her.

He tilted his head and looked at Ye Feng and Scarred Face man leaving, his eyes were flashing strangely.

"Ok....."

Su Menghan nodded, now that Ye Feng had left the place, she was now no longer interested in seeing Su Xinchang or any other people, when she had such kind of thought going on in her mind , exactly then the man from Heavenly Serpent Gang took initiative and protected her.

At present she was more likely to trust that person from Heavenly Serpent Gang than any other people, because she had gone through lots of inferior social dealings before, Heavenly Serpent Gang had been very obedient and respectful

before Ye Feng. It could be said again that Ye Feng was not only the cousin of the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but had also a relation with Lin Clan. Therefore, she had a belief that no one would dare to offend Ye Feng after being aware of his status.

Song Hu waved towards his men to collect their choppers and escort Su Menghan in leaving the corridor.

Su Xinchang's mouth moved but at last he couldn't bring himself to say anything to her.

“Brother Su, ah, I'll go first.”

Smilingly Liu Liuhui came forward and patted the shoulder Su Xinchang and then he left the place as well. Although he didn't know what was the urgent matter Ye Feng had, but he believed that his today's performance must be saved in the mind of Ye Feng.

Undoubtedly, it was very wise to play a good relationship with someone like Ye Feng who possessed such a high status!

In-situ only a group of Xie Clan's people left, Su Xinchang was standing over there all depressed, tonight the appearance of Mr. Lin brought a very tremendous pressure on them.

“Xinchang, about this matter, I have no other option left than to say that you will have to suffer a big loss.”

Xie Pinghui stood up, coughed and said that Su Xinchang.

“Besides, you didn’t even make clear to use about the background of the other party,”

Xie Min also jumped out suddenly, pointed at Su Xinchang and shouted at him.

“Should this thing be blamed on me?”

At this time, Su Xinchang was a bit upset, unexpectedly he was being scolded by “that person who was on his side”, obviously it could be imagined how unhappy he would be because of this.

“That’s natural.”

Xie Pinghui said sternly: “No matter how, but this time we have offended Yanjing’s Lin Clan, therefore perhaps the sacrifice should be putting out some of the shares of Su Sheng Group”

As his words came out, Su Xinchang instantly understood the meaning of the opposite party and his face suddenly clouded over.

The hidden meaning behind Xie Pinghui’s statement was Su Xinchang must sell some of the shares of Su Sheng Group to Lin Clan at low prices! Naturally these shares should be taken out from the hands of Su Xinchang. No matter which side Su Sheng Group was, but many of its channels were under the control of Xie Clan. Hence, regarding such request, fundamentally Su Xinchang had no leeway to refuse it.

For Xie Clan , this company, Su Sheng Group, was just a part of its industries, but for Su Xinchang it was actually everything. He had very limited shares in his hand, selling his shares to Lin Clan meant completely losing his power and influence from Su Sheng Group.

In short, it meant both his social status and wealth would plummet!

.....

Ye Feng and Scarred face man went downstairs together, there in the hotel lobby they ran into the lobby manager of Jingcheng Restaurant.

He was a fairly young man, having a very gentle appearance, wearing a pair of thin-framed eyeglasses and a western-style suit and tie. His shoulders were little shivering out of fear.

He was the one who just happened to report the big boss of Jingcheng restaurant about all these matters, but even the big boss did not dare to come forward. It could be imagined that the troubles they caused tonight, how frightful their status would be for others.

Moreover, just a moment ago a big group of police came walking in and then they left the restaurant, that wasn't for a show, right? There were lots of people from organized crime world but not a single one of them was caught by the police, did the cops just show up to eat meal?

The Lobby manager was very depressed in his heart, but he didn't dare to say anything. Especially when he saw both Scarred face man and Ye Feng got down together, and he had to stack a smiling face immediately to welcome them, that

really gave a more depressing feeling to him.

“Gentlemen, please wait for a moment

He stopped in front of Ye Feng to block him, and said that very politely.

“What’s the matter?”

Ye Feng frowned, now that Zhu Bainiao, the tomb raider was there in Oushi Antique Store, he did not want to waste a single second on frivolous things.

“Its nothing, get out of our way.”

Scarred face man couldn’t stay so polite like Ye Feng, his face suddenly became ferocious and he roared one fiercely.

Seeing that, the lobby manager couldn’t bear but retreated two steps in fear, he lifted his hand to wipe the sweat appeared on his forehead, and then he explained: “Our restaurant is now preparing the Diamond Membership Card for you Mr. Ye, later you can hit the discount in total expense of this restaurant

“Sorry, no time to wait for you.”

After saying those few words to him, Ye Feng quickly raised his legs to walk towards the door.

“Wait, wait, Mr. Ye

That greatly startled the lobby manager, who exactly was this young man? Jingcheng restaurant was regarded as one of the top few best restaurants of Yanging. However, giving him the Diamond Membership Card still he was not a bit interested , didn't he really want it?

“If you really want to give the card, then give it to the girl who is coming behind us.”

Ye Feng was totally disinclined to pay attention to him, he just turned around and saw Su Menghan along with Song Hu was getting out of elevator, so he said that to him.

“This.....”

Lobby manager somewhat hesitated. But the boss had ordered him to hand over the card to the youth, if not done like he had been ordered, his position as the lobby manager would be certainly at stake.

“You have to give it to Ms. Ye, there she is, what are you waiting for?”

Scarred face man shouted at the opposite party just to make it seem like he randomly yelled at him, but actually his intention was something else, he tried to point out the identity of Su Menghan by doing so, after that he left the restaurant with Ye Feng.

Lobby manager understood everything very clearly that this pure beauty in front of them was the girlfriend of this young man!

There were limited number of people throughout Yanjing who had the Diamond Membership Card of Jingcheng restaurant.

When Su Menghan got that embedded small Diamond Membership Card, she remained startled for few seconds. Even her father, Su Xinchang, was just a silver member of this Jingcheng restaurant, which was several grades below diamond members!

She suddenly felt that the gap between her and Ye Feng was extremely huge
.....

Chapter 58 Long Clan's Young Lady

Ye Feng left the hotel, eventually he gave a call to Ou B requesting him to hold the tomb raider firmly for some time more. Meanwhile Zhao Yibei also drove him back to 'Qingfeng park'.

There he changed his clothes with the fastest speed, and before he disguised himself as Mo Jiuge he took his mask and hid it in his arms, after that he got engaged in packing up his stuffs one by one, at last he went out of the villa and again got in the car BMW.

"Oh by the way, can you be able to arrange a SUV (Sport Utility Vehicle)?"

(Note : here Ye Feng meant to say-to arrange an 'off road vehicle'.)

As soon as Ye Feng got in the car, he asked that immediately.

"Of course, Ye elder brother"

Scarred Face Man nodded his head and said that in a boorish and uncouth manner.

"Ok?"

Ye Feng cautiously glanced at Scarred Face Man and Zhao Yibei. Usually, Scar didn't use to call him 'Ye elder brother ' in front of the gang members of Heavenly Serpent Gang, because in front of them Ye Feng was his younger male cousin. But at present what happened to him, calling him 'Ye elder brother' in front of Zhao Yibei?

“Relax Ye elder brother, Zhao Yibei is my nephew who has come from my countryside, he knows everything already that you’re not my cousin.”

With a little embarrassment Scarred Face Man placed a very difficult explanation in front of him while scratching his head.

“Hmmm, Ok.”

Ye Feng nodded slowly: “It’s just that something crossed my mind, that no one will believe this thing that I am your younger male cousin. Anyway, drive, and by the way while informing your men to prepare a long-distance off-road vehicle, must tell them that this time we have to go a bit far. ”

The road near Changbai Mountains must be very difficult to walk, a BMW car couldn’t be suitable for that road, hence to arrange a SUV ‘off road vehicle’ had become a necessity for them.

Oushi Antique Store was not very far from Qingfeng park, although it was already dark outside, but since Zhao Yibei’s driving skill was of top class, he didn’t waste much time on the road. Very soon the BMW car arrived and stopped not far away from the store.

“You wait in the car, I’ll be right back.”

Ye Feng set out to get off the car, then he went straightly towards the entrance of Oushi Antique Store under the roadside lights.

At this time Oushi Antique Store was brightly illuminated, but it didn't use to do business during this time. From far away Ye Feng saw Ou B standing at the entrance, it seemed like he was waiting for someone very anxiously, his white hair was appearing very conspicuous under the light.

"Ouge, I'm here finally."

Ye Feng smiled and from very far he said hello to Ou B while facing him, he always felt so carefree around him, because they were not only very good friends but were also like close brothers.

"Crap, Small Bee you are too slow. Quickly get inside, my father is just having a formal chat with that guy right now."

Ou B saw Ye Feng coming under the streetlight, he quickly greeted him as well, and when Ye Feng approached close to him then he whispered: "That guy wants to borrow money, if you have money, then that all said....."

"Thank you."

Ye Feng nodded his head and showed his gratitude to him, it was his sincere thanks to him. In the World of the Immortals, besides his beautiful female master Su Feiying, who else was there to help him?

He always felt that care and attachment from Ou B as well as from his father, naturally a very good and favorable impression of them had been imprinted in his heart.

"Thank you younger sister, now go faster, will you?"

Ou B said that in order to contempt him for being slow, then he turned his head and looked at the parked BMW car, he knew that recently Ye Feng had really changed a lot terrifically, just to come here he used BMW which was quite surprising. However, in that case, there was no need to worry about the money that he might lend to that thief.

He said that but didn't go along with Ye Feng because when his father used to discuss official business in the hall, then during that time it was Ou B's responsibility to take care of the lobby. Although the stuffs of the lobby were not as valuable as the stuffs present in the hall, but if they all were put together, they could also form a big wealth, hence it was not affordable for them to neglect those stuffs.

When Ye Feng entered in the hall all alone, he saw near the display window Ou A and a thin and small man was arguing over something, the situation sounded very intense at the moment.

“Uncle Ou, I came.”

Ye Feng quickly greeted him and then began to take a look of that thin and small man, he saw the opposite party was in a dark blue colored good conditioned cloths, was appearing a bit old, had a pair of shifty-eyes, compared to that crafty thin man from the last time in that trade fair organized by Dragon Clan, he was way too inferior and insignificant than him, that crafty thin man.

Is this that tomb raider, Zhu Bainiao?

He looked closely at him and noticed the vision of opposite party was actually revealing a clear and agile look, his gesture was smooth and natural, his

personality was emitting a faint trace of a special kind of charm which was imposing Ye Feng to imply that this man was far from an ordinary man!

“Little Feng? Come, its just fine. By the way, this is Zhu Bainiao, he is immediately going to Changbai Mountains

When Ou A saw Ye Feng there, something flashed in his mind, and immediately he wanted to introduce him to that man.

“Slow.”

But Zhu Bainiao raised his hand to prevent Ou A from moving toward Ye Feng to continue their chat, he then tilted his head toward Ye Feng and looked at him, his eyeballs were spinning around and around.

His voice was a little incisive, but it was not coarse, it could be said it sounded very sharp, very offensive, it was like just his voice was capable enough to making people feel the danger naturally.

“You are called Ye Feng?”

Soon, Zhu Bainiao remained startled, he recognized the identity of Ye Feng quite unexpectedly.

“Yes, it’s me.”

Ye Feng thought to himself that this guy was definitely from the World of the Martial Arts of China, since he recognized his status as the grandson of Ye

Wentian. It was quite obvious that in this world, Ye Feng was not so famous that anyone could recognize him like this.

“However, what is my identity is not important, isn’t it?”

He then continue with a smile : “What important is that I can help you, you can help me.”

“I need 10 million, can you give me?”

Zhu Bainiao said that and smiled softly.

“No problem.”

Ye Feng also replied to him with a soft smile: “But the premise is, you have to take me to the place you visited last time, the tomb site of Changbai Mountains.”

He had no idea that whether Heavenly Serpent Gang had that large number of liquid cash available at the disposal or not, however, there was huge cash in that small warehouse of Tianhua Casino, ten million were sufficient, he would let Scarred Face Man took ten million for him, it wouldn’t make any difference.

The point is that the value of ten million must be spent properly!

‘Tomb? ’

Zhu birds gawked: “You want to go to Changbai Mountain not for the ‘telepathic grass’?”

“No.”

Ye Feng scowled, although he did not know what that ‘telepathic grass’ was, but he was too lazy to think about it. He just wanted to go to the tomb site of the Shang Dynasty in Changbai Mountain, just in order to explore a trace of Su Feiying.

“Then what are you going to do in the tomb?”

Zhu Bainiao asked that by being somewhat vigilant.

“I didn’t ask ask you that what do you want to do with 10 million, therefore doesn’t it seem like I have no obligation to answer your question?”

Ye Feng asked back with a smile, then said: “Certainly, you can feel relieved since I don’t know anything about that ‘telepathic grass’ thing. Whichever place you’ll go, I’ll keep on following you, but you must enter the tomb with me, I need you to guide me.”

The thin and small face of Zhu Bainiao frowned, he pondered for a moment, finally he nodded slowly and said : “Okay, it’s a deal.”

Although tomb was very dangerous place to go, but depending on his experience, he could lead Ye Feng nicely, it wouldn’t be a problem for him. In order to earn a huge amount of money in a very short time, it was quite obvious that it was impossible to do that without taking any risk, he already had a feeling

about this.

“But let me remind you something.”

Zhu Bainiao thought for a second, then while looking at Ye Feng enthusiastically, he said: “I heard that last time there was a masked man who caused trouble at the trade fare organized by Dragon Clan, do you have any kind of relation with that guy? Since, nowadays there is no peace around Changbai Mountains, Dragon Clan’s people use to go a lot there, including that Young lady of Dragon Clan once you set your foot out of Yanjing, no one can guarantee your security. “

“You need not to worry about that.”

Ye Feng lightly humed, he wanted to find Su Feiying at all cost, his determination to find her was way too bigger than anything else, even bigger than the most dangerous situation. So, he must move forward courageously: “Well, when should we start our journey?”

Some random stuffs suddenly started hitting his mind, his mind started thinking about something like what if he would run into Long Wan’er again this time? As soon as he recalled the name of Long Wan’er, suddenly the thought of her kicking his legs flashed in his mind and he felt a slight pain in his chest. At the same time her hot plentiful stature naturally reappeared in his mind, her white and shiny skin was still fresh in his memory. All these thoughts were frequently pulling up his heartstrings.

Luckily he had his mask prepared beforehand, if he bumped into her, he could be able to tease her

Chapter 59 Tornado Axe blocked the way to rob

Zhu Bainiao listened to Ye Feng inquiring about the appropriate time to leave, then he expressed his view that as soon as 10 million money would arrive, they could immediately set off together, like said -the sooner the better.

Therefore, Ye Feng gave a call to Scarred face man: “Scar, I am in urgent need of 10 million, when will it be ready?”

He didn’t ask that whether he could be able to prepare it or not, he directly asked the time he would need to arrange the money, he believed that for a gang like Heavenly Serpent Gang which was one of the Top three big Gangs of Yanjing, arranging 10 million money would definitely not be a major problem for them.

When Scarred face man heard 10 million, he was taken aback : “Ye elder brother, 10 million is not a small amount but if you really want it, then we will try to quickly arrange such a big amount, but as a result, some of the security company’s business of Heavenly Serpent Gang will certainly be affected.”

“Then?”

Ye Feng did not say much, but asked one lightly.

“This since Ye elder brother have commanded, so we will immediately act accordingly.”

Scarred face man noticed that he sounded a bit angry, so he complied hastily.

Ye Feng hung up the phone, he certainly knew that what was running in the mind of Scar face man currently. Although, at present Scar seemed to obey him probably very much, but it was built on a precondition that he was still under the effect of poison, and also someday Ye Feng could teach him martial arts.

However, the thing about teaching him martial arts had never been guaranteed by Ye Feng, therefore Scar just wanted to tell Ye Feng that he had made a big sacrifice only for the sake of Ye Feng, thus he hoped that Ye Feng would certainly consider the sacrifices done by him, and could keep his commitment by teaching him martial arts.

“Unfortunately, I don’t know anything about what’s this martial arts all about, as well as ordinary people can’t learn cultivation

Since beginning Ye Feng knew that Scarred Face man was doomed to be disappointed. However, as a compensation, Ye Feng would definitely help him finding that Visitor ‘Swordsman’ from ten years ago, this way he would actually help Scar in taking his revenge. Ye Feng would never let the help and support of the opposite party go in vain, but lately he had been little busy with his own issues.

While waiting, Zhu Bainiao went to one side and sat down with his eyes closed, and on the other side Ye Feng was still standing and having a conversation with Ou A.

There was a very harmonious relationship between those two, they were discussing something happily, finally Ou A said something to him with a smile: “Little Ye, I know your identity is a bit special. If in future my son little Ou gets into any difficulties, I hope that would you take care of him then?”

“That’s natural. Someone told me once, how I treat others, the same way they would treat me, Uncle Ou has helped me a lot so far, I would absolutely never dare to forget that.”

Ye Feng looked firm while he was saying that, whether it was for him to repay three times the compensation, or about that Lingshi, or the invitation letter to the trade fair of Dragon clan, he had owed the sentiment of opposite party.

When outside Scarred face man was busy arranging everything, at the same time Ou A confessed everything carefully to Ye Feng, and then Ye Feng took his leave along with the other person, Zhu Bainiao.

Zhu Bainiao was the patron of Oushi Antique Store, as the frequent antique supplier for Ou A’s store, he certainly was on good terms with him. However, if not for Ye Feng, it was impossible for Ou A to put out 10 million to lend to Zhu Bainiao.

Perhaps 10 million was not a big deal for Yanjing’s Lin Clan, such type of powerful influence they had. However, it was obviously a huge sum of money for over 99 percent of the world’s people.

“Small bee, when will you come back? Do you want me to take a leave of absence for you from school?”

Just before leaving, Ou B who was also concerned about him, asked that.

“When I will come back, I really don’t know.”

Ye Feng smile: “But still troubling you, please help me in requesting a leave on

my behalf.”

“Definitely make your family Su Menghan help you ask for leave.”

Ou B laughed and teased him by saying that sentence, his voice didn't have any other emotions actually. He was very happy for Ye Feng and Su Menghan, he felt that it was a good thing, he was giving his sincere congratulations to them from the bottom of his heart.

Of course, when he would go to school tomorrow and would hear the rumors spread everywhere, then this thing would immediately change his attitude.

What? Could it be like this unexpectedly? Ye Feng was simply a real beast!

Unfortunately, till that time Ye Feng would have been disappeared, even making a phone call to him would become difficult he couldn't even get through him by the phone.

.....

A black Hummer H2 picked up the speed and left Yanjing at the same night, it was running in Beijing-Shenyang highway and was moving towards northeast in a very fast speed.

From Yanjing to Changbai Mountain, the next foothold was in Linjiang City, there was more than 1000 kilometers of distance. They hastily started their journey at the same night. By using the driving skills of both the men, Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei, they could probably be able to make through it till the dawn.

Both the men were driving alternatively so as to ensure the safety during the night. This car was not suitable to run a long distance since the fuel consumption was too high. But just because of Scarred face man's words, man from Heavenly Serpent Gang arranged this car to maintain the reputation of his boss. However, this car was very suitable for the loading force, and also it could be used to avoid lots of unnecessary troubles. Anyway, it had a spare fuel tank as well, there was no need to worry about the problem of fuel consumption.

Regarding this, Ye Feng did not say anything, since he didn't have any idea about the cars, as long as it could be able to reach the destination as soon as possible on the line.

On the way, Ye Feng and Zhu Bainiao were sitting in an adjacent positions, so that from time to time they could talk to one another. During the journey, Ye Feng made a veiled attack by placing the matter of that seven pictures in front of him, but this dreadful fellow Zhu Bainiao was tight-lipped, he didn't disclose any useful news.

A night without words, on the same day when the day was little bright, the black aggressive Hummer picked up a high-speed, and from 201 National highway it arrived all the way to 303 provincial highway, leading to Linjiang city.

Linjiang city was located in the eastern part of Jilin Province together with North Korea country across the river, the river valley was surrounded by four remote villages.

If it was to go on a trip to Changbai Mountain scenic spot, the foothold should definitely be in the Songjiang Town, Baihe Town, *etc.* which were in the northern side of the place. But Zhu Bainiao went to the tomb relics recently by passing

through Linjiang city.

Shortly after five o'clock, it was time when the light began to appear, it was the dawn finally. Hummer H2 was running at its maximum speed on the provincial road since no one was there in the way. It was running under the mountains accompanied by little loneliness.

Far away, a motorcycle suddenly appeared on the road ahead, it looked from its appearance that something had gone bad with it, moreover it was also parked on the roadside. A bare-chested vigorous and healthy man was standing there next to that robust motorcycle. He was making an effort to kick the motorcycle, from his look it seemed like he was in an extremely angry mood.

Indeed, the motorcycle, which was parked on the road, was out of order, which was creating a very irritating situation for that man. Originally Ye Feng didn't pay attention, but when he approached close to him, he suddenly found that the man with that motorcycle seemed a bit familiar.

Tornado axe!

In Langfang city, at the trade fair of Dragon Clan, Ye Feng was the one who had killed his accomplice, that greedy Wolf Sword, by his own sword. Actually, he never had thought that, he would come to see this guy in a place like this, moreover the opposite party seemed to be very unlucky at the moment.

Ye Feng was not worried that the opposite party would recognize him, because last time when Tornado Axe saw him, at that time Ye Feng was in his mask.

"Stop!"

When Hummer H2 approached close, then suddenly that ferocious looking Tornado Axe jumped in the middle of the road and waved Zhao Yibei to stop the car. Jiangsu Duo's double edged sword had always been very ferocious and vicious, although one of them was dead now, but alone Tornado Axe was capable enough to make many great figure of the martial arts world tremble with fear.

Ye Feng thought that did this man Tornado Axe come here just to obtain that "telepathic grass"?

The road was not wide, therefore, Zhao Yibei couldn't hit the road directly. Ofcourse, he stepped on the brake ahead of time. At first he also thought that the man in front of them was just an ordinary passer-by, whose motorcycle broke down so he was standing there to get a lift, but quickly he remained startled.

The fierce and fearful personality of Tornado Axe was sufficient to shook the heart of Zhao Yibei, his face was also appearing very violent, he opened the door of Hummer's driver seat and said: "If you guys don't want to die, then you all people get out of the car instantly!"

That threat suddenly petrified Zhao Yibei as well as Scarred face man, was this guy blocking their way to do highway robbery? Or it was just to snatch away the great Hummer? Although this guy looked very fierce and dangerous, however there were four people in the car, moreover all were men!

Both Ye Feng and Zhu Bainiao looked at each other, apparently they had recognized the identity of Tornado Axe.

Chapter 60 Sinister Jiangsu

Ye Feng didn't move a bit as he didn't want to expose his strength in front of outsiders. Moreover, Zhu Bainiao was also there, since he was a tomb raider so he must be one of the natives of martial arts world of China. Therefore, Ye Feng was kind of curious to have a look at his strength.

And also a clash with Tornado Axe was completely inevitable.

Suddenly Scarred face man took up a chopper from the seat and jumped out of the car, by passing through the front he walked towards Tornado Axe and while swearing he said: "Fuck, under this broad daylight you blocked our way to rob us, your this idiotic courage is not a small thing."

As the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, normally in Yanjing who hadn't awed seeing his fury? Unexpectedly now, someone really dared to block his way to rob his beloved Hummer H2, how couldn't he get angry?

Scarred face man moved swiftly, and before Ye Feng could do something to stop him, he already had jumped out of the car to go towards Tornado Axe.

On the face of Tornado Axe, ugly and ferocious-looking expression suddenly piled up. He snorted contemptuously by seeing that someone had really gotten the courage to get out of the car to revolt against him. As a martial arts user, how possibly he could fear from this underworld boss?

Five years of cultivation was making him so domineering and tyrannical in the common custom. At present, there were four people in the car but still he hadn't

paid attention to them. Neither he saw Ye Feng nor Zhu Bainiao by now, he just had a perception that there would be certainly ordinary people in the car.

Scarred face man thought that they were encountering such kind of problem but still there was no need to involve Ye Feng into this, consequently he thought to attack decisively. Just in two seconds he passed the front side of the car and by holding the chopper in his hand he directly attacked on Tornado Axe to cut him down!

It was just that he merely wanted to scare the counterparty and make him retreat before difficulties. However, unfortunately Tornado Axe was more ruthless than him. Seeing this attack, he promptly curled his fist and started condensing his Qi crazily, and in an instant from one side he rumbled one after another several hits on one side of chopper. As a result, his strike easily made that chopper fly and fall to the ground!

However, to one's surprise, Scarred face man didn't respond a bit, rather he let go the shining chopper from his hand, "Clang" and with a sound it fell on the roadside.

But in a couple of seconds he wide opened his mouth, he thought to himself that how could this guy be so fierce, wasn't this situation just like the previous time when Ye Feng had almost knocked his pistol out of his hand during their first meeting? Could it be that this guy was also a martial arts user?

"Don't move."

At this moment, Zhao Yibei suddenly coldly said that from the driver's seat, simultaneously he pulled out a pistol to aim at the head of Tornado Axe!

The point that he could pull out the pistol was not at all the strange thing. It must be Scarred face man who would have instructed him to bring a pistol along with him and hide it in the car properly. Then after driver seat's door got opened just to do the inspection of the road and simultaneously to scare the opposite party.

Tornado Axe's eyes fell on Zhao Yibei's hand, and he noticed the gun which completely stunned his mind.

Gun?

Obviously, his motion was nothing as compared to Ye Feng's agility which was very flamboyant and had also reached such an extent where he could easily dodge the bullets. Seeing the pistol Tornado Axe gawked, apparently he was looking all scared.

Ye Feng saw that and felt relief, but he slightly regretted and looked at the side of Zhu Bainiao while thinking that just now he lost a very good opportunity to see this guy in action.

Zhu Bainiao also gazed at him at the same time, it seemed like as if he knew that Ye Feng was thinking something, he gave a soft smile but didn't speak anything.

"You are thinking about robbing our Hummer, it's totally a crazy thought, don't you think?"

Zhao Yibei had been following Scar for many years, that was why his share of aggressiveness at such a crucial time like this was also quite obvious. Although in

general he was like a adorable young fellow, but during the critical moment he couldn't be unambiguous.

“Withdraw, and stand by the side of the road.”

Zhao Yibei raised his pistol and vigilantly looked at Tornado Axe.

Hearing that, the corners of the mouth of Tornado Axe wriggled a bit, he raised his hand to indicate that he had surrendered, at the same time he lifted his right foot and thought to draw back.

However, at the same time this evil and sinister man of Jiangsu Duo actually abruptly came into action and with a extremely high speed he pounded a punch towards Zhao Yibei! As a user of martial arts, this punch didn't prove any disgrace on his status. One after another he kept on hitting heavily on the wrist of Zhao Yibei, simultaneously he changed his boxing palm and snatched away that pistol from his hand!

This sudden change in the scene let Ye Feng fail to react, not to mention even Scarred face man didn't react because of the suddenness of the event.

“Brat, you dare to point a gun on me, seems like you are tired of living”

Tornado Axe maliciously smiled and then pointed his pistol at Zhao Yibei's head backhandedly, without any hesitation he was all prepared to open fire!

For him killing people was not a big deal. As long as no one from martial arts circle could attain any evidence against him, it would be impossible for anyone to take hold of him for his act. In other words, once he made his mind to come into

action, then without any exception he used to finish each and every one present on the scene!

Ye Feng's heart skipped a bit, how could he afford to let his people die at a time like this when he hadn't arrived at the destination yet? Unfortunately, he was still sitting in the back row of the car, although he wanted to rush out of the car and go over there to help them but was unable since radically he hadn't have enough time!

He somewhat regretted in his heart, if he had known this earlier that something like this might happen, then he wouldn't have waited for Zhu Bainiao to tackle this situation. What if now Zhao Yibei were killed

Shua! Shua!

Just then, sound of two weapons piercing the air echoed everywhere.

Clang! Bang! Puff!

Three consecutive different sounds fell into the ears of Ye Feng. Actually in this fleeting moment he didn't understand that where did these two flying blades come from and hit the pistol which was in Tornado Axe's hand. The first blade hit the pistol, as a result, Tornado Axe quickly responded to that and started firing rapidly, actually he started firing crookedly on the glass of car's window. However, the second flying blade which was aimed at Tornado Axe's throat, all of a sudden it went straight towards him and in a blink of eye it cut through the throat of him.

With a clatter, pistol dropped on the ground.

Tornado Axe turned his head and with his two prominent eyes he looked at Zhu Bainiao who was sitting in the back row of the car, he pointed out his finger at him in order to say something, but before he could say, he died.

Just in a moment fresh blood from his throat started gushing out and it spread all over the ground.

“There is a bridge in front of us, how should you guys process this further, it doesn’t need me to say, does it?”

Zhu Bainiao said that in a very aggressive and offensive tone from one side, and then he looked at the corpse of Tornado Axe lying on the ground and said: “He brought about his own destruction, no wonder.”

Hidden Weapon Technique!

Ye Feng reacted quickly and came back to his senses all of a sudden, he then thought that this man Zhu Bainiao was unexpectedly the legendary master of Hidden Weapon Technique! He didn’t know how many years of cultivation Zhu Bainiao had, but by just seeing the speed and trajectory of those two flying blades, it could be guessed easily now that he should have around seven or eight years of cultivation. Unfortunately, at present Ye Feng didn’t have the Divine knowledge, hence he was unable to verify it.

“Yibei, hurry up, come over here.”

Scarred face man promptly understood the situation, he somewhat had a lingering fear by looking at the corpse of Tornado Axe lying on the ground, as

well as by seeing Zhu bainiao who was sitting beside Ye Feng. He called Zhao Yibei rightaway to help him in throwing the corpse into the rapid flow of the front side river.

Without any hesitation Zhao Yibei immediately got off and together both of them dragged away the corpse and with a tissue they wrapped the throat to stop blood, so as to avoid leaving behind the bloodstain.

“This man Tornado Axe was very good at destroying the corpse and leaving no trace.”

Zhu Bainiao looked at the expression of Ye Feng, and found that he really had an expression like an ordinary person. With a somewhat panic-stricken appearance he continue explaining things: “He wanted us to eat the broadsword surface, naturally I should retaliate against him. He should be very glad to die in the way he was most excel at.”

(Lastvoice : ‘broadsword surface’ <— this has been used by author in order to describe 'killing a person and throwing his body into the water to leave no trace.' I don't know what should be the appropriate term to be used here. :P)

Broadsword surface was a slang word, used especially by Jiangsu, which meant to kill a person and throw his body into the water to completely destroy it along with its trace.

Ye Feng raised his head and looked at the front where both Scar and Zhao Yibei together were trying to dispose the corpse into the rushing river. He thought in his heart that finally today the chapter of Jiangsu ended here in this way.

"Relax, it's so neat and clean that in future nobody would be going to cause you guys any trouble, not to mention Jiangsu Duo don't have any backstage supporter"

Zhu Bainiao continued.

Ye Feng nodded: "Who could have thought that Zhu would be the Senior master of Hidden Weapon Technique, moreover being able to be with this senior person on this journey is really a matter of great honor for me."

He displayed this performance as if he truly admired him very much.

Zhu Bainiao saw that but he didn't suspect at all, he was still considering Ye Feng as an average person. He had no idea about why a boy like him wanted to go to the ancient tomb?

When Scar and Zhao Yibei finished dealing with the corpse and tattered motorcycle, they came back in the car and finally Hummer moved on. After an hour, they would be able to reach their destination Linjiang City, but this short distance was going to be the most restless and disturbing moment for Scar and Zhao Yibei.

Presently, these two men genuinely had realized that the Jiangsu was very sinister and dangerous man, the slightest mistake from their side, and they would have been dead by now!

Chapter 61 Again saw that handsome young man

Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei didn't know the relationship between Ye Feng and Zhu Bainiao, but they believed that they were kind of at the same place.

Because of this, these two talented people were considered by them as trustworthy and they felt a little relieved. Soon Hummer proceeded into a relatively lively region. After an evening's travel, City Linjiang finally arrived.

"Find a place to park, Scar and Yibei, you two guys find an inn to stay."

Ye Feng instructed them and then said again : "I'm leaving with Zhu Bainiao for few days."

"Ok."

Scar nodded his head to comply with his order, but he was somewhat worried in his heart, if by any chance Ye Feng failed to come back on time, wouldn't he be killed by poison?

The black Hummer H2 gradually stopped at the roadside.

"Don't worry."

Ye Feng got out of the car and went straight to the side of Scar and said in a whispering tone : "Before leaving I will surely help you in quelling toxicity, in case I can't come back within a week, and the effect of your poison starts showing its

sign, then eat this which will press down the toxicity of the poison and you will be all right.”

After finished saying, he quietly tossed a little pill towards him. It was him who earlier prepared this good thing so that at the time of emergency it could suppress the toxicity within the body of Scar faced man upto a duration of half a month.

“Yes.”

Scar took the little pill and nodded, then with a bit of hesitation he asked: “Don’t I need to go along with Ye elder brother?”

“There is no need to, just wait for me here. In addition, I have to pretend that I’ve been continuously staying in the inn, remember?”

Ye Feng said that the biggest objective behind bringing Scar and Zhao Yibei over here was especially this only.

The news that he left Yanjing would certainly reach the ears of many people. So, in order to avoid inconvenience, he must let Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei stay in Linjiang city to camouflaged as always together with Ye Feng. The method was very simple, to go out everyday to buy food, moreover, must be three shares of food should be bought everytime and so on. He had a firm belief that Scar could pull it out very well till the end.

“Alright!”

Scar solemnly answered one to him, however he faintly understood what Ye

Feng wanted to say.

“Well, let’s go.”

Ye Feng turned around to look at Zhu Bainiao, but he noticed that Zhu Bainiao wasn’t paying attention to his and Scar’s discussion and action, rather he was looking somewhere at the front of the road.

Ye Feng tracked his vision and looked towards that direction, and saw that two persons carrying a large bundle of tarpaulin on their back, attired in grey colored garment and straw-hat, these visitors were proceeding along the road, although their footsteps movement was slow, but their speed was quite quick. There was a man and a woman. By looking at their attire, it could be said that their appearance was out of the tune with the modern city style.

“Get inside the car, just make sure that don’t get discovered by them.”

Just a moment ago Zhu Bainiao got off the car and immediately spotted two people at a very distant place. Hence, without giving a second thought he quickly said that and simultaneously pulled opened the car’s door to seat in the car.

“Obey Elder Zhu.”

Ye Feng saw that Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei looked towards him and then they nodded. He had a feeling that those two straw-hat visitors were not ordinary people.

After getting in the car, Hummer moved on and galloped after those two straw-hat visitors to surpass them. In order to avoid future trouble, Ye Feng

didn't look at those two straw-hat visitors, because he was aware that once the cultivation reached a certain extent, then the eyes of the cultivator used to become very sensitive to other people's vision.

Early in the morning there were very sparse passers-by in that locality, and they all were throwing their gazes at those two straw-hat Visitors with the surprised eyes. But the sudden approaching Hummer became a matter of even more inexplicable envy for them, the surrounding people were staring at Hummer as if they were thinking in their hearts that they were able to afford a Hummer, it seemed like they really were very rich people ah!

"Elder Zhu, who are those two people?"

Ye Feng saw the distance was getting more and more far, so in a soft voice he asked that.

"Tian Daodian, a crazy couple, don't mess with them."

Zhu Bainiao had a very normal expression at that moment like always, but in the depths of his eyes, a trace of tension could be easily spotted, even Ye Feng could notice it.

"Oh."

Ye Feng pretended as if he didn't care about it, he just nodded his head after hearing his reply and decided not to ask anything further.

Just when Zhu Bainiao's words fell, the whole body of Scarred face man started trembling, he who was sitting right in front of Ye Feng, it seemed like

suddenly something cropped up in his thought process.

Ye Feng saw that and thought in his heart that was this man, Tian Daodian, possibly that martial arts user, that swordsman? Could it be that the man who left such a terrible scar on the face of Scarred face man, was this Tian Daodian?

Ye Feng didn't ask anything from him, and now he even knew the status of the opposite party. It was close to impossible to help Scar in his retaliation. The strength disparity was way too big, that fellow now might be having currently at least 20 years of Cultivation

Hummer pulled into the city, all the way it kept on capturing the attention of numerous resident. Zhu Bainiao somewhat was looking vigilant because of these visions, he gave a hint to Ye Feng to find an appropriate place to stop the car.

In a hotel entrance, Hummer advanced towards the underground parking lot. Soon all four people get out of the car one after another. At this moment, Zhu Bainiao's old style cell phone vibrated suddenly. He pulled it out and looked at the number that immediately changed his complexion.

"Where the tomb site is, now directly lets go over it."

Ye Feng said that while turning his head towards Zhu Bainiao, but what he saw suddenly was there was a terrific change in the facial expression of Zhu Bainiao, which made him little vigilant.

Zhu Bainiao had killed Tornado Axe by using his opponent's favorite method of killing people, this shifty-eyed tomb raider was absolutely a very cruel, ruthless and merciless character, Ye Feng must have to be very vigilant against this

opposite party.

“Sorry, I can’t come along with you now.”

By still gripping tightly that 10 million bankcard, Zhu Bainiao said with emphasis: “it’s not my intention to do the breach of contract, I really have something very important to do now!”

Then he took a step to leave.

“Don’t try to run away, otherwise I will inform my grandfather that you have cheated me 10 million, then be mentally prepared to take responsibility for whatever happens with you afterwards.”

Ye Feng said that and snorted coldly, by saying that he kind of issued a heavy threat!

Hearing that Zhu Bainiao gawked and felt a bit of surprise, obviously he was little scared therefore he stopped and thought for a moment deeply and then said: “If that’s the case, then I’ll give you a rough draw of two maps, one map which will lead you to the entrance of the tomb, and the second one is a roadmap from inside the tomb.”

After finished saying he turned his head, his pair of eyes were trying to dodge his cold gaze: “This is the maximum I can do for you, don’t force me too hard, I’m really running out of time.”

“If this is the case, then draw the map. Scar, get a pencil and paper.”

After saying that sentence Ye Feng stood one side, momentarily all prepared to guard against Zhu Bainiao's sudden attack. Now he couldn't find out the level of the opposite party, moreover, he couldn't dare to compel him rashly to exhibit his strength. If there would be a map of the tomb relics, it would also serve his purpose as well as it would be easy to handle in a way.

The specialized tomb raiders were really very different, it took about five minutes and Zhu Bainiao had already two roughly drawn sketchy maps ready in his hand and on top of that they were quite vivid.

"If the map is wrong, or anything wrong happens to me, then my grandfather won't let you off."

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and put away the map.

"Well, rest assured, there won't be any advantage for me in deceiving you or lying to you."

Zhu Bainiao lightly snorted and immediately his stature moved and within a couple of seconds he took few steps toward the parking lot outside and then he ran out as if he disappeared in the wind smoothly in front of those three remaining men!

This guy's agility was equally frightening, even unexpectedly Ye Feng failed to see his trace.

"Because Cultivation is still too low I hope tomb can fetch some rewards for me."

Secretly Ye Feng's heart was wondering that it would be the best to have a five-year of cultivation, in that way he would be capable enough to protect himself efficiently in this world. Unfortunately, the heavenly material treasure was not easy to obtain, but earlier Zhu Bainiao mentioned something about the telepathic grass, very likely it would be a treasure which might help in promoting cultivation.

He casually looked a bit into those two maps and got a rough idea about them, then he called Scar and Zhao Yibei to leave this place. Soon these three people left the underground parking lot together.

The moment he came out, he suddenly saw that a familiar looking fellow appeared in front of them not far away.

He was that handsome young man of Dragon Clan from the last time!

At the Dragon Clan's trade fair, he was there standing at the entrance of the fair for invitation cards inspection. Ye Feng remembered him instantly. At this time, this handsome young man was standing at the entrance of this hotel with a pair of young lover, and was displaying a playful and teasing look on his face.

The sudden appearance of him gave a deep shiver to Ye Feng, he thought that if this handsome young man was here then Long Wan'er?

Immediately he swept his vision all around, his mood was already off by now and he was feeling a bit tensed!

Chapter 62 A maiden jumped off a building

Ye Feng quickly glanced around, but Long Wan'er was nowhere around. It seemed like only this handsome young man of Dragon Clan was present nearby. As a matter of fact, it would be more easier for Ye Feng now since there was no need to worry about being attacked by Long Wan'er such early.

Right behind Scarred face man and Zhao Yibei, Ye Feng was walking but a bit slow, as he was secretly observing that handsome young man, and found out that this fellow seemed to be harassing that young couple.

“How about it, I, Long Xian, have plenty of money, you just accompany me one day and I'll give you ten thousand, what say?”

That handsome young man, Long Xian had carelessly blocked the way of that young couple, and with overflowing arrogance he said that to that attractive young girl while frivolously looking at her.

“Are you crazy, your are getting out of my way or not?”

The attractive young girl scolded him tenderly. Wearing white shirt and black skirt, she was dressed up very nicely, it appeared like probably she just came out from the hotel with her boyfriend. By listening to her tone, obviously it could be concluded that Long Xian had not at all any favorable impression in her mind.

“Oh, everyone has a price, ten thousand is not enough, then twenty thousand? Thirty thousand?”

Long Xian chuckled loudly: “Come on, beautiful lady come up with a price.”

After saying that, he disdainfully gazed at the youth who was standing beside that beautiful maiden, his eyes were exhibiting a look piled up with a contemptuous expression.

“Young man, joke also has a limit.”

The youth was quite sturdy and grandiose, seeing him talking nonsense in front of them, he came firmly in front of his girlfriend to support and protect her, he fiercely stared at Long Xian and threatened him: “Now apologize, if this thing doesn’t happen, then.....”

“Oh, so now you are threatening me.”

Long Xian contemptuously smiled, there was a black mole on his chin which was extremely noticeable: “Man, I have just started coming to this place, but this place has lack of beauties to play with. I just happened to see your girlfriend, she is pretty enough to attract my attention, also she has a sticking out perfectly suitable bosom. Enough with your nonsense, just lend me your girlfriend for one day to have a fun with me, money is not a problem for me, Hahaha. ”

His statement drew the attention of surrounding passers-by, as a result the expressions on their faces suddenly took a form of despise for Long Xian. Although, they saw such type of thing was happening before their eyes, still no one dared to come out and say anything in this matter. Afterall who would like to invite trouble for themselves. Another pair of young lover was also there, but they moved round the road and went away out of the fear of being seen by that handsome man.

After listening to the words of Long Xian, that sturdy youth glared at him with his burning red eyes, the blue vein on his face stuck out suddenly. How could a man hear and endure such type of vulgar words against his own girlfriend?

“Ye elder brother?”

Upon seeing that scene, Scarred face man glanced at Ye Feng, since he wanted to ask that he must not pay attention to those people.

“Don’t bother about it, first go to open those three rooms. Yibei, help me to buy some rations from the nearby area of the hills, so that I can fill my stomach before I set off on my journey.”

Ye Feng said that and directly advanced towards the hotel by completely ignoring the existence of Long Xian and the pair of those young lovers. He thought to himself that it wasn’t like Long Xian would always try to snatch away girls on the street. He really didn’t need to meddle in this kind of matter, he must not get noticed by Long Xian, since that would be the best option for him.

He quickly opened a room, Zhao Yibei went out alone to buy some dry rations for him. On the other side, Ye Feng and Scarred face man finally went into their respective rooms in order to show that they were going to be staying in this room for considerably a longer period of time.

The room was on the third floor and the environment was pretty good as well, but Ye Feng didn’t care about the environment. Instead he was thinking about how to exit from this place, he was planning to use window to jump down to the lower floor without being discovered by anyone. Considering his current cultivation, jumping down from the third floor which was ten meters high, was really very dangerous for him. Obviously, for him it would be better to explore

any other option.

Ye Feng had completed making constant false appearance, probably after half an hour Zhao Yibei came back with the stuffs including dried beef, pilot biscuit, mineral water and so on, everything was packed in a small packet for easy carrying. It was sufficient meal for a common person to eat for at least three days. For Ye Feng, to carry it even for one week wouldn't be a problem.

Ye Feng took the black packet from Zhao Yibei's hand, and suddenly he remembered anything and asked: "What happened outside about that handsome young man?"

"They all disappeared till I came back."

Zhao Yibei knew what he meant to ask, with a smile he said: "Probably he is a crazy man, how can he think of finding a woman on the streets like this. Even the others girl who would be willing to accept such type of offers for the sake of money, will never agree to something asked in this way. Ye elder brother, won't you say anything?"

Ye Feng did not speak, he just put down his heart.

On the basis of rationality, Ye Feng was not a good person, if someone got caught into any dangerous situation, then Ye Feng would never go to interfere in his matter to help him out. But sentimentally, he was very emotional type, he was little worried about that couple of young lovers.

Long Xian was from the world of the martial arts, and just now he had a conflict with that sturdy youth, sure enough no good outcome would come out

from this conflict. Since, Zhao Yibei didn't see those two people still conflicting, then in that case Long Xian should be gone by now.

He returned to the room alone, as he wanted to take his mask and keep it in that black easy to carry packet to carry them all together. But suddenly from his window, he heard a sound of glass broken!

Following that sound, a weeping sound of a girl appeared, and just after that sound, again a sound of a weighty thing fell heavily on the ground was heard and then the crying of that girl suddenly stopped!

Ye Feng wrinkled his brows, after packing up his stuffs he immediately ran up to the French window edge and saw a young girl fell from the building to the ground, the ground was full of fresh blood, it looked like she was not alive.

“Wasn't she that maiden from back then?”

Ye Feng felt a cold shiver in his heart, wearing white shirt and black skirt, wasn't she just a moment ago outside with that handsome young man, Long Xian? Currently her shirt and skirt had the torn traces here and there. Ye Feng slightly wanted to know what happened with her.

“Isn't this the deed of that Handsome young man of Long Clan?”

As soon as Ye Feng thought and related this incident with Long Xian, he became inexplicable angry in his heart. Although, he didn't know concretely what was the matter, but compelling others to jump off a building, that handsome young man also couldn't dare to do this thing.

In the World of the Immortals, Ye Feng had seen the deaths of lots of people, even after coming to the Earth, he had seen innumerable deaths repeatedly. But they all were evil and rogue doers. This time, at present, the dead person was an innocent maiden!

Behind the hotel there was an alley, generally no one used to pass through that alley. But when the girl jumped off and her voice heard by the surrounding people, the crowd quickly began to gather up there, simultaneously many people began to report to the police by hitting 120.

Looking at the pool of red blood all over the ground, Ye Feng didn't react a bit, instead without any hesitation he changed into a black sportswear which he had brought from black Hummer and then he put on his mask and picked up that black packet.

He did not jump through the window to leave, rather he quietly left the room in such a way that not even Zhao Yibei and Scar noticed him leaving the room. By following the staircase he arrived to the hotel lobby. The hotel had total three elevators together, Ye Feng walked out of the hotel by hiding in the side of the elevator.

In case this scumbag Long Xian would appear, then Ye Feng would follow him very far and would look for the opportunity to settle this completely by using his sword! Anyway, his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring was a very convenient thing by which he could receive and dispatch things freely without leaving behind any clue of murder. This sword was not the entity, rather it was made up of Zhenqi which used to scatter. So, where would someone try to look for the murder weapon?

After neatly finishing everything, he would go straightly into the mountains to look for the ancient grave by following the map.

The news of a girl jumped off a building behind the hotel, very soon spread out and came to the knowledge of the nearby people as well. They also rushed to the alley behind the small crowd. The hotel lobby's elevator doors finally opened, however, it was not Long Xian who appeared from the elevator, but it was that sturdy youth in a totally bruised condition, a trace of anxiety could be seen on his face, was he not the boyfriend of that girl who just jumped off?

“Lily, Lily that beast”

That sturdy youth was black and blue all over, he was shouting the name of that girl loudly. Staggeringly he ran out of the hotel towards the back alley.

When he saw the fresh blood flowing everywhere, and down on the ground her girlfriend completely motionless was lying in a pool of blood, his brain felt a severe thunder and it went totally blank. He felt as if his whole body had weekend and he became completely numb.

Chapter 63 Distressed Zhu Bainiao

Ye Feng waited for Long Xian for about ten minutes, but now he couldn't wait for him any longer to come out, since three police cars rushed over there and they encircled the hotel completely.

“It is strange, where did that handsome young man run away, was he still somewhere inside the hotel?”

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows and finally decided not to wait for him any longer.

He thought for a while that Dragon Clan was counted as the number one Clan in the martial arts world, needless to mention its influence in common custom, even if Long Xian compelled a girl to jump off a building and was seized by the police, then also perhaps just by a single phone call he would be released easily.

Under such circumstances, why did the opposite party run out of the hotel?

He wanted to get rid of Long Xian but without much extra effort, he already had wasted too much of his precious time on this scumbag which wasn't needed at all. Now at any cost, he couldn't go back to the hotel to kill him, that would be very troublesome for him.

“Relatively, master is still more important

Ye Feng gave a little consideration, then he made up his mind to go directly into the mountains in order to look for the ancient tomb with the help of the

map.

He turned around and saw that young girl had been picked up by an ambulance, there were also few policemen who were clearing the accident site and blocking it. Other two police were inquiring that badly battered youth about the incident and were taking notes for record.

Just recently Ye Feng had heard and seen everything personally, that was the reason why he knew that this really was the deed of that handsome young man, Long Xian.

When that youth along with his girlfriend came out of the hotel early in the morning, they suddenly bumped into Long Xian, and then they were entangled by the opposite party, the handsome young man started teasing them. That sturdy youth was a short-tempered man, since the opposite party was pestering them and also insulting his girlfriend in front of him, naturally this behavior of the opposite party would trigger that youth's anger and he raised his hand to hit Long Xian. Unfortunately, the youth was actually not at all a worthy opponent for Long Xian, he was very badly beaten up by him to the extent where he could even die. Long Xian used his Qi on the youth because that youth had aired his anger very badly.

His girlfriend was unable to continue watching him getting thrashed by Long Xian, so she started crying and begging for mercy from Long Xian. But instead of getting any help, she had been dragged into the hotel by Long Xian. The youth didn't know what was going to happen, he just rushed upstairs even though he was severely injured. However, he was too late, when he arrived there, till then that young girl was dead after falling from the building, and Long Xian had disappeared as well.

“Disappeared?”

Ye Feng pondered for a moment, but was unable to think properly. Finally he gave a quick glance to that badly battered youth and thought: if he meets that handsome young man again, then I will help him in taking revenge.

After coming to that conclusion, he jumped out two steps suddenly and directly ran toward the east, but all of a sudden he was discovered by the police.

“Stop!”

One policeman immediately shouted out loud, he thought that this fellow, who was wearing a mask, was too suspicious!

But Ye Feng didn't pay attention to the opposite party, he quickly activated Rapid Shadow Immortal trace and instantly he ran and covered a distance of 30-40 meters just within a second, leaving behind a faint blurred remnant shade, his stature already vanished in front of that policeman. He flashed into a nearby small lane.

“Well, my eyes?”

The two policemen looked at the deserted street, they were also feeling a little strange, probably they didn't sleep soundly in the night that was the reason they were having hallucinations right now, they did a mistake, right?

.....

At the eastern side of Linjiang City, there was a stretch of river valley as well as

dense forest. Ye Feng took a plunge in the map.

The number of days he used to live and eat outside when he was In the World of the Immortals, he did not know about that but he had long been accustomed to it. After entering the jungle, later the hills, he felt like he was like a fish in water, he didn't have that kind of opportunity in the city, he was feeling ecstatic and very comfortable and his happiness was touching the sky.

Last night when he was in Hummer, he couldn't take proper rest since he had to guard against Zhu Bainiao. However the endurance of a cultivation practitioner used to be much more stronger than the average person. Even when he had a total one-and-a-half years of cultivation, but still if he didn't sleep consecutively for 48 hours, that wouldn't be a big problem for him.

On the basis of the map, he kept on running all the way toward the destination, he didn't see any shadows. Villages and rivers were appearing in the ravine frequently, so he was not at all worried about the water source issue.

Although it was not possible for him to continue displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace all the way, but his physical strength was way better than the average person's strength. His normal running speed was also noticeably fast. All day long he passed through innumerable ravines and small villages. He was running this race since he wanted to quickly cover up the distance as soon as possible. Soon he was about to approach the Changbai Mountains Nature Reserve, the topography was gradually high.

The Popular Changbai Mountain tourist attraction was not here, so naturally this place was off the beaten track.

"This map is pretty good, it seems like according to this map, it is going to take

another two hours to reach the vicinity of the entrance to the tomb relics.”

Ye Feng leaned against a tree trunk to rest for a while and drank some water. He then calculated the distance on the map. He had given 10 million to Zhu Bainiao, although the opposite party didn't lead him to the tomb since he had some urgent matter to deal with immediately. But he had a feeling that the other party didn't need to deceive him.

Ye Feng rested slightly for more than ten minutes, afterwards he felt that he regained his most flourishing condition, hence he finally started once again. But this time, he hadn't run far, and suddenly he heard a flurried sound of footsteps coming from woods ahead .

“Someone?”

Ye Feng frowned and became alert, hastily he started looking for a big rock and hid behind it. He had heard that because of the sake of that Telepathic grass, this place had become recently an attraction for a lot of the people of martial arts world. In such a case, Ye Feng could never dare to make a move here carelessly.

Not to speak about other people, but Zhu Bainiao was that sort of opposite party who could suddenly appear behind Ye Feng's back, and if at that moment Ye Feng fell short to dodge him then undoubtedly he would fall prey to his attack and would be dead in no time. Zhu Bainiao was truly a very dangerous and sinister martial artist, totally no inferior to the World of the Immortals!

Disordered footsteps as well as heavy breathing sound was heard , Ye Feng could hear clearly that only one person was running over, as if he was probably injured.

“Who is there ahead?”

An incomparably vigilant sound soon went into Ye Feng’s ears which made him gawk. Such a sharp and offensive voice, wasn’t it Zhu Bainiao’s voice?

“Oh? Actually its Zhu Bainiao.... in such a distressed condition.”

Ye Feng didn’t forget this point that currently he had his mask on, without revealing his identity and still hiding behind the stone, he said that in a lower voice.

“Your Excellency, who is the one who recognized me?”

Zhu Bainiao stopped his footsteps, as if he leaned on a tree to rest his body, he heard Ye Feng shouted his name, that was why he became more wary.

“I am a friend of Ye Feng, I was about to go to the tomb along with him. He talked to me about you, did you give him that map or that sketch?”

Ye Feng heavily smiled: “My name is Mo Jiuge, I do not know why you are under such a difficult condition elder brother

“Did you killed that corrupt Wolf Sword while putting on a mask?”

Zhu birds apparently had already heard this name “Mo Jiuge”, so all of a sudden he turned more vigilant.

As per the rumors, that masked man, Mo Jiuge, was a very scary swordsman! That corrupt greedy Wolf Sword who had a five-year of cultivation, such a ferocious swordsman was he, even though his head was chopped off by Mo Jiuge in just a single strike. That thing totally stunned Dragon Clan and since then it listed Ye Feng as its archenemy!

“it’s me.”

Ye Feng replied in a sinking voice.

“Ha ha ha, Heaven is really perforated, letting me meet such a great figure just before the point of my death,Coughs”

Zhu Bainiao burst out laughing, but soon he started coughing breathlessly. It was quite clear that he was very severely injured.

“Since you are a friend of Ye Feng who is also my friend then let me tell you, this Telepathic grass may help you to promote your cultivation for more than two years. If you help me to do one thing, then in return I will bestow it upon you. Anyways, the arteries of my heart have been broken, in any case I have around two hours left”

As soon as that statement of Zhu Bainiao fell, Ye Feng was totally startled by it.

Surprisingly a very short period of time left, Zhu Bainiao was unexpectedly in a very difficult situation. It seemed like in order to grab that Telepathic grass, his whole body was badly injured in the process of chasing down.

More than two years of cultivation!

Without any doubt, Ye Feng immediately changed his mind.

Chapter 64 Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass

Under a hill cliff, wearing his mask in the disguise of Mo Jiuge, Ye Feng was sitting beside Zhu Bainiao by resting his back on a rock.

Zhu Bainiao was still attired in the same dark blue colored cloth, but this time his cloth was appearing completely tattered, especially around the chest area there was a big hole and was damped with fresh Blood. By looking at his face it seemed like he was feeling very exhausted and he had a very painful expression on his pale face. In comparison to what Ye Feng had imagined, Zhu Bainiao was in more miserable and distressed condition than that.

“Just promise me one thing, and consider this Telepathic Grass as yours.”

Zhu Bainiao was struggling hard, with his hand he was constantly caressing his bosom where he had a severe injury. After saying that he took out a tough blue plant difficultly, that plant even had roots, it was as long as an arm of an adult person. Altogether there were 78 leaves and were looking unusually attractive.

As soon as Ye Feng's eyes fell on it, his mind completely blew away, wasn't that called 'Hair Ornament Blue Sprit Grass' in the World of the Immortals? Unexpectedly, it was called Telepathic Grass here on Earth. If this Blue Spirit Grass would mature, it had the ability to promote one's Cultivation upto three years after the absorption of its spiritual energy!

The effect of this Blue Spirit Grass was much more stronger than that 'Gold Leaf Grass'. Because to have such an effect of Gold Leaf Grass, it must be thirty years old, then only it could give its full effect. But, even in the World of the Immortals it was next to impossible thing, because abundant of plunderers were

there everywhere who were in search of this Grass, as long as this had reached certain years of age, they were picked out by them.

The plant which was capable of enhancing one's Cultivation was known as Spirit Grass and the plant which was incapable to enhance the Cultivation was known as Medicinal Herbs. The value and effect of both the grasses were completely different. In the entire world, the type of Spirit Grass was not present in abundance, but each kind of Spirit Grass had the capability to enhance Cultivation of every individual only once, during the first time use.

This was the reason why Ye Feng was suddenly taken aback. In the World of the Immortals as well, this Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass was considered more precious as compared to Lingshi. It was totally beyond his thought that there could be the existence of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass on the Earth, unexpectedly.

At present, this Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass had almost approached its maturity. If Ye Feng would get an opportunity to absorb the spiritual energy of this Grass, then certainly he could reach four or even more years of Cultivation.

“A step closer to five years.....”

Ye Feng was inevitably excited deep in his heart, but on the surface he was showing a face covered with an indifference expression. Because this stuff was still in the hands of Zhu Bainiao, in that case, how could he become happy and excited beforehand.

Although this guy was seriously injured and dying, but still it was very difficult for Ye Feng to hit a person who was already at the point of his death. Moreover, Ye Feng also self-examined that dodging the flying blades of the opposite party

was still very difficult for him even though the opposite party was under such a critical condition.

“If you can’t make it, I would rather Keke, destroy it!”

He said that to Ye Feng while coughing continuously. On the other hand, he had that Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass gripped in his hand very tightly.

“Tell me, how did you turn like this?”

Ye Feng was also a little curious, if it was said that this fellow turned into this condition just for the sake of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass, that was not at all worthwhile. This reminded him of his first meeting with Long Wan’er, at that time the opposite party was also in the similar condition.

“I don’t know why do you want to go to the tomb site, but I am just asking you to help me kill a person

Zhu Bainiao, while resting against the rock and looking upside towards the heaven with his eyes full of sadness, finally told his story and experience about it, gradually.

Ten years ago, Zhu Bainiao was merely an ordinary tomb raider. Once, accidentally he saved the life of a very skilled senior person, as a result, in return that senior expert taught him a type of superficial martial arts technique as well as Hidden Weapon Technique. With the use of those techniques, his body became very healthy and strong, hence the exploration of ancient grave became quite handier for him. For these past several years he had obtained lots of wealth from the tomb, but unfortunately this tens of millions were all

squandered freely because of his beloved woman.

The woman he loved was called Cuckoo, who was at present a disciple of Hidden Immortal School, which was considered as one of the top ten big schools of martial arts. This school was located in Kuocang Sang Caves which was one of the top ten big beautiful and heavenly places. The disciples of this school were excel at Hidden Weapon Technique, which was almost similar to Zhu Bainiao's method.

Some time ago, while exploring the old tomb of Shang Dynasty in Changbai Mountain, Zhu Bainiao suddenly discovered the Telepathic grass which was about to mature soon. That was the most ecstatic moment for him, he became extremely joyous and wild out of happiness, he then took a picture of that grass as an evidence and sent it to his beloved Cuckoo. The Telepathic Grass was priceless, it appeared like it could absolutely raise the sanguinary rule in the world of martial arts!

But eventually this made them realize their initial dream – that was to fly away from here with enough wealth, by separating Cuckoo from the fetter of the Hidden Immortal School.

Therefore, when Zhu Bainiao came out of the tomb, he disclosed the news of the existence of Telepathic grass to two big power of martial arts' world – Tian Daodian and Dragon Clan. Although these two big influences in the world of martial arts were not the strongest Clans, but were actually quite wealthy. It was the plan of Zhu Bainiao, to make these two influences bid for the Telepathic grass, and when this Grass would mature, then he would sell it out.

But, unfortunately, he didn't know how did this news about the appearance of Telepathic Grass soon got spread all around the country. Because of that, various people from various places started coming to Changbai Mountain in

search for it. Zhu Bainiao always wanted stability in his life, seeing this situation he understood that he did a good job. But in case he couldn't be able to obtain the Telepathic grass, in that situation he decided to get hold of 10 million from the other source. That way he would secure his future, as well as he would also try his luck in Changbai Mountain.

If he could be able to obtain the Telepathic Grass on time, then in that case he would sell it out and reap a big amount of money. But if he failed, then he would depend on this 10 million, and together with Cuckoo he would go to faraway place.

However, when he came to Linjiang city, suddenly he received some information about Cuckoo that she had also come to Changbai Mountain! That made his heart very restless, he immediately left Ye Feng and rushed directly towards the mountains.

Very soon, he got to see Cuckoo finally, and together with her, he went to take the Telepathic Grass. Fortunately, that concealed location had not been discovered by other people, as well as the Telepathic Grass also had not been plucked out from there. However, in such a crucial moment, out of the blue a handsome youth jumped out of nowhere. He was also from Hidden Immortal School, and to one's surprise he moved towards Cuckoo and united with her there on the spot in front of Zhu Bainiao and together they stood against him to start a fight with him!

It didn't take Zhu Bainiao long to understand the current scene, he immediately interpreted that he was cheated by Cuckoo. His beloved woman had already ganged up with that long and handsome youth! The moment he realized the whole situation, he felt a severe pain in his heart, but he had no time to waste, hence he quickly started running away by holding the telepathic grass in his hand. Both the disciples of Hidden Immortal School – Cuckoo as well as that Handsome youth started releasing hidden weapons on him respectively, with the

intention to kill Zhu Bainiao.

After a long pursue, Zhu Bainiao finally got success in getting rid of the opposite party, by relying on his rich experience. But in this all chaos, his chest was badly hit by two hidden weapons and the arteries of his heart were also broken. Now, he could survive no longer than two hours.

“That guy Keke is called Li Junlong, he is also one of the disciples of Hidden Immortal School, currently he is taking younger generation training of hidden weapon technique there..... He has been gifted with the extraordinary talent in Hidden Weapon Technique comprehension,KeKe.....You help mein killing him”

Zhu Bainiao coughed up fresh blood, he then fervently gazed at Ye Feng and said : “With just a single strike of your sword you had killed that strong corrupt Wolf Sword very easily Just absorb this Telepathic grass Li Junlong is inevitably not your opponent!”

“And what about that Cuckoo?”

In a very low voice Ye Feng inquired that.

“Let let her go, after all”

Zhu Bainiao was getting weaker with the passing time, his voice was staggering and his speech was also not very coherent, the area around his chest was appearing bright red because of the heavy blood flow, moreover he was facing a huge blood loss as well.

“I understood, I promise you.”

Ye Feng said that in a soft voice while nodding his head.

As per the opinion of Ye Feng, Zhu Bainiao’s feelings for his beloved Cuckoo was still very strong, even though he was badly betrayed by her, still his conscience was not supporting him to take revenge.

“Hurry up, hide from them and start your absorption process quickly
..... by the time I’ll help you in holding them.”

Zhu Bainiao had a very sensitive and dynamic pair of ears, all of a sudden he felt something and instantly he handed over that Blue Spirit Grass into the hands of Ye Feng, and urged him to start his part of job rightaway.

No doubt Ye Feng’s cultivation was way too inferior to Zhu Bainiao, similarly his sensation capability was also nothing as compared to Zhu Bainiao’s quick and keen sensation. He immediately took that Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass from Zhu bainiao’s hand.

Goal acheived!

As long as this stuff was in his hands, everything was fine for him now. If it were someone else, probably after achieving one’s goal, who would bother to manage other’s promise or work. But, Ye Feng was not such kind of a person.

As a man, he must abide by his commitment!

Blue Spirit Grass was now in his hand, so he quickly took a look around his surrounding, and soon noticed that there was a steep which was more than ten meters away in the deep forest. That was quite an appropriate and easy place to hide. He immediately jumped and ran towards that side, and quietly hid there leaving behind Zhu Bainiao on the same place.

Now, it was not the time to be immersed in man and woman's deep love, Ye Feng couldn't afford wasting time. Moreover, Ye Feng had a clear idea about Zhu Bainiao's injury and he also knew that he couldn't be saved as well.

Soon, light and lively sound of footsteps of a man and woman, from far to near started arriving, as if they were approaching towards him rapidly!

Chapter 65 Feeling of being strong!

Ye Feng sneaked out quickly and hid in the bushes below in the steep slope while controlling his breath as smooth as possible, so that he couldn't get discovered by them. Simultaneously, he started absorbing the divine spiritual energy of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass which was still in his hand.

Fortunately, he had been tempering his meridian and broadening them, or else after coming to this world, just the normal width of the meridian couldn't be able to withstand the power of the divine spiritual energy of the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass.

Zhenqi within his body started boiling up again, at the same time his Core Dan started transforming a wisp of divine spiritual energy into Zhenqi, which was later on perfused in the meridians of his whole body, for the rapid growth of Cultivation!

While this process was going on, from behind, the sound of the footsteps of both the man and the woman soon stopped as if they arrived to the side of Zhu Bainiao and stopped next to him.

Then the voice of both the parties passed on one after another.

“Cuckoo, I just want to ask one thing from you, why

It appeared like Zhu Bainiao was disinclined to show any action against his beloved woman, he just asked a simple question from her difficultly.

“Why can’t I?”

A fairly pleasant female voice resounded everywhere, her voice revealed a touch of disdain for him: “Just relying on a mere 10 millions, still you want me to follow you, is this a wishful thinking? Not to mention, it has been so long since my heart has been with Junlong, and I have always been using you. ”

“Ha ha.”

Soon after a candid male voice arrived, he was that handsome youth who was called Li Junlong. By listening to his voice he seemed to be a gentleman, but his words were really outrageous which were enough to make the blood boil : “Really good, you have been racking your brain all the time to rob a grave, you accumulated 40 millions from all sides, and finally handed it over to Cuckoo, and eventually it became the resources for me in my practice. Should I need to thank you for this, Zhu Bainiao?”

“Well, without further ado and idle talks..... you really deserve being a disciple of Hidden Immortal Faction, you are truly a very treacherous person Ah

With difficulty Zhu Bainiao said that, at that time he couldn’t feel any physical pain, instead the only thing he could feel was the mental anguish, which would never allow him to rest in peace after his death.

“Come on, a mere forty million, it was nothing in my eyes.”

The youth smiled disdainfully : “Come on, now just show me the Telepathic Grass, I am totally disinclined to deal with you. However, why are you prepared

to lose your life just for the sake of an insignificant Telepathic Grass? That Grass isn't worth it."

"I'll die, but I'll never let that heavenly precious treasure fall in the hands of a cheap person like you!"

While saying so, Zhu Bainiao suddenly turned excited again : "Well Cuckoo, don't believe him this man just wants to absorb the Telepathic Grass by himself, how could he be willing to sell it, and run away with you to some faraway place"

The woman who was called Cuckoo, groaned loudly and said: "You are wrong, how Junlong can be such person. We have already reached an agreement, that when the Telepathic Grass will be sold in billions, we will go abroad and start a calm and steady life, and then we will not go back to Hidden Immortal Faction..... "

When these words came out, Ye Feng heard that from his hidden place and finally understood something more about the whole story.

It seemed like the environment of Kuocang Cave's Hidden Immortal Faction was not as good as it should be, strict and harsh rules were prevailing there, was this making Cuckoo and Li Junlong not wanting to continue to stay there?

"You are too naive....."

Zhu Bainiao was struggling hard while speaking: "Li Junlong is a disciple of Hidden Immortal Faction, but is also the adopted son of the elder of criminal law, how could a guy like him abandon such a condition, and together with you

.....with you

“You’re talking nonsense!”

Cuckoo scolded him tenderly by suddenly interrupting him in the middle of his speaking.

But then, a series of laughter echoed all around : “Ha ha ha, Zhu Bainiao, you are very, actually its worth praising. Correct, it’s impossible for me to give up such condition. Therefore, this sluggish woman is going to survive for next couple of seconds, luckily you guys are able to die together atleast, also in this way both of you guys should be able to rest in peace, right? ”

As he said these words, several hidden weapons suddenly echoed from nowhere, followed by flying blades which penetrated her body, and in the next moment the sound of hidden metal weapons mutually colliding with each other, echoed and made an endless sound.

“Ah! Junlong, you

The Woman screamed in agony as if she was injured severely, the sound of her staggering disordered footsteps resounded rapidly.

Ye Feng heard everything and instantly got a brief idea about the current situation, he understood everything that this was Li Junlong, and currently he wanted to get hold of the Telepathic Grass. Therefore, it was now unbearable for him to let that woman tag along with him. Hence he finally made up his mind, to get rid of Cuckoo rightnow.

As far as the specific details of this situation was concerned, Ye Feng didn't know about it deeply and accurately. In the meantime, the absorption of the divine spiritual energy of Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass was finally completed!

Now, he had finally reached full four years of Cultivation, because of that his strength was increased two times than before. Presently Ye Feng's whole body was feeling stronger than before, his Zhenqi was rushing crazily throughout his body!

He could feel that now that he could make an optimum use of his Bagua Boxing, it was like a single punch could be able to hit a cow and make it fly! Besides, his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace could finally continue to last at least one minute, that was an enormous guarantee for his safety.

In case he drew out red Zhenqi sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, then its duration would also be several times longer than the previous time.

It was the time to act!

Ye Feng then took a step and immediately cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. As a result, his remnant suddenly dodged from his original position and passed, and his main body already had slid off the steep slope, and came to a forest where those three people were entangled. Finally, he looked at the field to have a clear idea of the current situation.

Originally, Li Junlong was about to strike and Cuckoo once and for all, but Zhu Bainiao had already anticipated his final move. Hence he raised up and stiffened his body to protect Cuckoo from these flying blades, in the process two blades hit his abdomen, and one hit his shoulder badly.

Meanwhile, Li Junlong also released flying blades, the precise blow to fly the additional three flying blades of Li Junlong. He was the only talented disciple of Hidden Immortal Faction, who had been able to command the Heavenly Diffusing Technique long ago!

Simultaneously, more than ten flying blades departed, Zhu Bainiao was desperately trying to protect Cuckoo, but while doing so 45 knives one after another hit his whole body, and all of a sudden he turned into a seriously injured condition. Fortunately he wasn't hit at the key places, hence probably his injuries were not fatal.

“Cuckoo, quick run!”

Zhu Bainiao's whole body was completely covered in blood, although his beloved woman already had betrayed him, even though he stood in front of her, like a thick wall to keep her off from the flying blades!

The sudden attack frightened and shocked her for a moment, she heard everything what was said but failed to react, her facial expression was revealing that she didn't dare to believe anything. She was a round-faced woman, it couldn't be said that she was an exquisite beauty, but she couldn't be considered too ugly as well, she was worth a second look, she was in a black dress which already had a full bloom, several blood red flowers.

“Can you still run?”

Li Junlong groaned coldly, these two men were standing at a distance of ten meters away from each other, his hands were all prepared to fire more than a dozen pieces of small blades again. He was an extremely handsome man, moreover as compared to Zhu Bainiao, he was several folds stronger than him,

no wonder he became capable to attract the attention of Cuckoo, and made her to be dead set on him.

But just as he was about to make a shot, suddenly he felt something, and quickly leaned and turned over to look at the direction from where Ye Feng was about to appear: “Who — -”

Shua!

Just within a fraction of seconds the red sword flashed, and Li Junlong who didn't even see the shadow of the enemy, instead felt that he suddenly flew up and the world started spinning round and round before his eyes, and next that appeared in front of his eyes was a standing headless corpse spurting blood non-stop, wasn't that his own body?

Before losing his consciousness, the last thing he saw with his heavy eyes was someone wearing a mask and black casual cloth like a young man, and abruptly a thought about something cropped up in his heart, this was – Mo Jiuge!

Unfortunately, he immediately sank into the inexhaustible darkness, which was followed by unconsciousness.

Ye Feng put away his red Zhenqi sword, and raised his head.

It just took Ye Feng a single sword strike to kill Li Junlong, for him it was not at all a difficult thing to deal with the opposite party when the opposite party had also not reached 10 years of cultivation, moreover the counterparty was good at Hidden Weapon Technique as well. If this incident had taken place in the open, then wouldn't it be like the human slaughter?

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace along with the red Zhenqi sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring , had become entirely an extra-superior assassination technique!

Now he was able to cast these moves and techniques more smoothly and easily. Besides this, even if he bumped into Long Wan'er once again, then he would be able now to challenge the opposite party directly without any fear. This was all because of the feeling of being strong now!

Chapter 66 Crying Ghost Sword Technique

As the headless body of Li Junlong fell to the ground , Zhu Bainiao's mouth threw up fresh blood. Finally he wasn't able to withstand anymore, and all at once he collapsed on the ground.

The moon-face female Cuckoo saw that in a blink of an eye, Ye Feng wearing a mask appeared out of the blue, while in the second blink of an eye Li Junlong's head flew high suddenly. Seeing that she became extremely scared, even her legs felt weak, in addition the wounds caused by those five flying blades on her body, were also still bleeding, and she felt that she was almost about to faint, but barely she leant against a tree.

“Don't, don't kill meTelepathic Grass is with him”

Cuckoo's whole body was trembling as she pointed her finger at Zhu Bainiao, a color of fear could be seen on her face very clearly then.

Seeing this condition, Ye Feng could only shook his head, this kind of woman could never know that Zhu Bainiao not only liked her so much, but was also even willing to sacrifice his own life for her safety.

However in this world, it went without saying that love never had any reason to speak or explain, only Zhu Bainiao himself could understand this thought and feeling.

Ye Feng walked thirty two steps towards him to come close to him, then squatted down and started examining his injuries.

He was not dead yet, but unfortunately he couldn't hold it much longer, needless to mention that Ye Feng, who was a well-known medicine immortal in the World of the Immortals, still he couldn't do anything to cure him.

“Thank you so much.....You..... Give me a pen and a paper I'll draw you”

Zhu Bainiao was stammering as he was speaking, even lifting up his hand was being almost impossible for him now.

Seeing this, Ye Feng immediately rushed out without saying anything, and returned to his previous hiding place, that steep slope, he took up the black packet kept on the grass and pull out a map along with a pen. He turned over the previously drawn map of the tomb and along with a pen he presented the back side of it towards Zhu Bainiao.

From one side, Cuckoo was watching everything, but she didn't know what had engaged those two men. This masked man killed Li Junlong, now shouldn't he try to look for the Telepathic Grass as soon as possible? Then why did he go towards Zhu Bainiao with a pen and a paper?

Ye Feng frowned, and thought to himself that this woman was being a little hindrance in his way, so he raised up and advanced towards her.

“You, what do you want to do, don't kill me, don't kill me Ah”

Seeing him coming towards her, Cuckoo was taken aback and exclaimed, she wanted to stand up and escape, but there was no enough strength left in her

body.

Bang.

Ye Feng pointed his hand knife on her neck and posed as if he was about to slit her throat, and in a couple of seconds she lost her consciousness.

He then returned and Zhu Bainiao was shivering when he was drawing a map. Ye Feng looked at that sketch and noticed that the map aimed at the eastern China seashore, probably in Zhejiang province range. On the top of the destination, there was written “Crying Ghost Sword Technique” probably with the large character.

What’s that?

Ye Feng had some doubts.

“Hidden Immortal FactionLost Hidden Weapon Technique..... If it is practiced to the extreme level, then it can make flying blades accompany by the sound of crying like a ghost and howling like a wolf, which can affect and directly attack the sanity of the opposing party but unfortunately mymy talent is not high.”

As Zhu Bainiao was saying that, he closed his eyes: “This technique was passed on to my seniorby a traitor of Hidden Immortal Faction”

He hadn’t even finished saying that, but then he breathed his last breath, and after that completely no sound came out of his mouth.

“.....”

Ye Feng examined that map carefully, and then he put away the map and paid a silent tribute for a while for Zhu Bainiao.

With his condensed Zhenqi sword, he dug a pit next to Zhu Bainiao's body and buried him inside it. After all, this was not the World of the Immortals, rather it was a modern city, letting the corpses lying on the ground like this was considered here as highly inappropriate. As for the body of Li Junlong, Ye Feng threw it directly from a small cliff into the rushing water to flush it away.

After finished processing everything there, he then came next to unconscious Cuckoo, and slightly examined her wounds, those five flying blades hadn't hit her severely, but it looked like those blades had some toxicity on them.

He hesitated for a bit, but then he took out a small medicine bottle from his black packet, and poured two detoxifying pills into her mouth and forced it down.

Didn't matter whether they would be of any use or not, he just wanted to try anyway.

“The true love of his life, in the end, it was nothing but a clear betrayal.”

Ye Feng stood up, finally looked at the heap of buried Zhu Bainiao, and then he turned and left the place.

He thought of Su Menghan, if he had to live in this life with Su Menghan, then finally how it would be? No one knew, but since Su Menghan used to trust him, he would also choose to trust the opposite party.

“Crying Ghost Sword Technique, a lost Hidden Weapon Technique of Hidden Immortal Faction if there would be free time, I will go to look at it since it sounds pretty good. That way I can also know more about the martial arts of this world, what’s it all about and how it works.”

Ye Feng thought in his mind, as he knew this Hidden Weapon Technique of the Hidden Immortal Faction’s group of people, was not as simple as it sounded like throwing a flying blade. Throwing their hidden weapon must require much more power than the average person, there must have a specific way through which the internal Qi could move inside.

He was in the thick patch of grass running along a creek, towards the direction of his destination-the ancient tomb site which was not far away, but all of a sudden he saw two familiar figures appeared, unexpectedly they were actually those two persons attired in grey colored cloth and straw hat visitors, carrying a long tarpaulin package, which was resembling some type of weapons.

A man and a woman, on the opposite shore of the creek, not far away from Ye Feng, and were moving forward in the same direction with him.

Fortunately, where Ye Feng was running, it was very thickly grown long vegetation, and moreover the opposite party hadn’t located his existence there yet.

” Heavenly Sword Palace, I don’t even know a thing about their strength”

[LASTVOICE : Tian Daodian means Heavenly Sword Palace, so from here onwards I'll be using Heavenly Sword Palace to avoid future inconvenience. And in my previous chapter No. 61, I'll change 'Tian Daodian' into Heavenly Sword Palace. Sorry for inconvenience. :)]

Ye Feng cautiously started walking slowly, since he couldn't let the opposite party know that the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass had already been absorbed by him. As when he was planning to change his direction, exactly then accidentally his attention got attracted by few words spoken between that man and woman.

“He he, that young lady of Dragon Clan, should be in front of us.”

Woman prettily said that.

“Heh , last time during Gold Leaf Grass incident, we were being soft. But this time, when we will encounter again, I'll surely kill and behead her with my sword.”

By sticking out his dark and red colored tongue, that man licked his lips and gave a very murderous look.

“I know you wanted to capture that Miss Dragon alive, enjoy a bit, however a lot of Long people would be there, I am feared that it won't be so easy to succeed.”

That Woman groaned lightly.

“Baby I know.”

That Man smiled ghastly : “But she is that kind of a exquisite woman, how can I not taste her flavor? Even if it is only a beautiful glamorous corpse

From across the river, hidden in the vegetation clump, Ye Feng was eavesdropping them, and immediately understood the hidden meaning of what Zhu Bainiao said once previously, ” a pair of Heavenly Sword palace, a crazy couple who has some abnormal desire.”

Originally, last time this crazy pair of man and woman had snatched away that Gold Leaf Grass from the hands of Long Wan’er and ran away, as she was passing through them. During that period, she had lost her consciousness and Ye Feng was there who rescued her .

“Really they are a dog bitten people, kind of brain dead people, who don’t have any type of good feelings.”

Ye Feng cursed them badly in his heart, if Long Wan’er ever fell in the hands of these two crazy no-brain people, then who knew what would be the end. But Long Wan’er was actually against him, she showed her ingratitude in return of his kindness , but also to deal with him everywhere, was absolutely impervious.

“Who is there!”

That gloomy man suddenly barked harshly, which startled and scared Ye Feng.

But soon Ye Feng noticed that the opposite party hadn’t found him, but it was a mountain woodcutter who was discovered by him. That woodcutter was also wearing a straw hat, but obviously he was just an ordinary man.

There was a basket of herbs carried by that woodcutter on his back, he should be from the village, who came into the mountain to pick the herbs. When he saw two Heavenly Sword Palace people, he obviously remained surprised for a moment. Then, his eyes bumped into the exquisite stature, the snow white flesh partly visible, highly attractive beautiful woman, he couldn't help but continued giving several glances.

“What are you looking at?”

The gloomy male voice sank, it was obvious that he was not feeling well and totally unhappy because of the vision of the opposite party, and was it possible for his woman to just stay watching this chaos?

“Not good.....”

Ye Feng penetrated the thick patch of grass, and suddenly saw the murderous intention appeared on the face of that gloomy man, as well as his eyes were also flashing relentless bloodshed, seeing this his heart shivered. The woodcutter who was just here to pick up the herbs, was it necessary to kill him?

But before Ye Feng could even think to react, by then that man had untied his long tarpaulin package, and from there he pulled out a sword and grasped it in his hand tightly and reveled it boldly.

Shua!

His stature moved incomparably quick, under the setting sun, followed by a long sword reflecting a orange-red light, he advanced towards the plucking herbs

woodcutter, to chop him down on the spot.

It appeared like the Man was lightning fast!

Ye Feng secretly shivered in his heart, to one's surprise in a split of second the counterparty burst out in such a speed, what more heart wrenching was his sudden speed was even more faster than Ye Feng's Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. He simply couldn't get enough time to approach there, he hesitated little bit but only thing he could do then was to watch the sword chopping down that man, helplessly.

If he would chop him down completely into two pieces, then that woodcutter would be done for!

Chapter 67 Chicken-hearted Long Xian

Basically, Ye Feng didn't even get enough time to react, since the man of Heavenly Sword Palace, by holding a long sword in his hand, had already reached close to woodcutter's head within a couple of seconds. Now, probably in the next moment, he was about to chop him down into two halves.

However, at the same time, another figure appeared like a tornado, he leaped from nearby thick patch of grass, and instantly blocked the front of that woodcutter.

An old man!

"How fast he is!"

Startled, Ye Feng look at that old man, and thought that this old man somewhat seemed a bit familiar, but wasn't he extremely fast? In a flash, he crossed like a tornado in front of his eyes.

Bang!

Instantly the old man condensed his Qi in his palm, and simultaneously shot his palm sideways, an incomparably precise hit fell on the long sword held by that man, which made it fly and fall heavily at the side of the woodcutter, on a huge riverside rock, which split open that rock and caused a very terrifying fissure on it, and as an impact the debris caused by the hit, flew upwards.

Hiding in the thick patch of riverside bushes, Ye Feng took a closer look, and

instantly found out that he had actually seen this old man before at Dragon Clan's trade fair, he was actually Huang Lao from Mt. Tianzhu Huang Province, who had a full thirty years of Cultivation!

Unexpectedly, this old man also arrived here, Ye Feng thought this in his heart, and didn't dare to look at the confrontation between both the parties, promptly he took a detour and continued to move forward.

Whether it was the Old man from Huang Province or Heavenly Sword Palace's crazy pair, Ye Feng was not even the least bit interested in getting into any kind of conflict with them. At present, he just wanted to arrive safely at the ancient tomb site, to search for the traces of Su Feiying.

"Huang Lao shouldn't be a wicked man, I don't know why he is looking for Mo Jiuge"

When Ye Feng was thinking this, suddenly he recalled the time when he was in Langfang city's hotel, during that period Huang Lao asked him to convey his words to Mo Jiuge if he would ever meet him.

He shook his head, since he didn't need to think about it right now, all the way up along the mountain road, he was being constantly careful with the surrounding situation. The present Changbai Mountain had become crisis-ridden, just recently Ye Feng didn't even notice that Huang Lao was hidden nearby. So, he was on his toes all the way.

Ofcourse, no matter how dangerous the path would be, he would certainly go to the tomb site, it was impossible for anyone to break his resolve.

It took him another half an hour to arrive at halfway up the mountain, the forest ahead was even more dense and was covered with overgrown weeds.

Through the thick bushes, he inclined towards a small hole and looked ahead towards the winding spiral road of the mountain, most probably after covering a distance of another two or three kilometers, he would arrive at a spacious mountain platform. But suddenly he saw something and wrinkled his brows, there were more than dozen of people at that mountain platform and by looking at them, it seemed like all of them were martial artists of this world.

In order to go to the entrance of the ancient tomb site, this mountain platform was the only way which must be taken. But Ye Feng who was in his mask and wanted to go the tomb site, while passing through so many people currently present on this mountain platform, was purely delusional.

“Oh.. correct, these people are here because of the Telepathic Grass. Is this mountain platform by any chance, a mentioned place in the auction agreement of the Telepathic Grass?”

Ye Feng quickly reacted, but at this moment, he suddenly felt that the disorderly sound of footsteps arrived from ahead, followed by an extremely captivating wheeze of a woman, Deja vu!

(Note : Deja vu means – the experience of seeing exactly the same situation a second time.)

“What’s this situation?”

Ye Feng stopped his footsteps and immediately wanted to hide in the thick

bushes, but before he could make a move, a petite and pretty figure suddenly rushed out of the bushes and crashed into him .

Ye Feng subconsciously raised his hand, since he wanted to promptly drag out his Zhenqi Sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, in order to behead the opposite party in the next moment! Because he was not sure whether the opposite party wanted to sneak attack, or something else.

Although he was in a hurry, but he didn't fail to see who hit him unexpectedly in his face, that was none other than pretty and charming girl, Long Wan'er!

"It's You! I"

While rushing out of the thick patch of grass, Long Wan'er's stature naturally advanced towards Ye Feng and bumped into him. She also raised her head, and saw a masked man standing in front of her. Thunderstruck, she remained standing where she was, her beautiful pupil was revealing a color of desperation.

There was an ambush ahead, and a troop of pursuers behind, wasn't this situation exactly like the same which Ye Feng had confronted in Langfang city's trade fair?

Ye Feng glanced at her, the situation she was in, was certainly couldn't be considered as very wonderful. Even more, some kind of poison which had the power to "suppress the resistance of one's lustful youthful emotion" had been given to her, and he didn't even know it was given by whom.

Seeing her in this condition, suddenly something cropped up in Ye Feng's mind, and he thought of an excellent idea.

Without giving a second thought, he immediately extended his hand to take advantage of the opportunity, he hugged her soft stature into his bosom, immediately a faint fragrance of her delicate body burst out and greeted his nostrils, a warm and soft feel from the touch, through her piece of snow white one-piece dress, transmitted in the hands of Ye Feng, making him unable to resist his somewhat fiery heart.

But he immediately set his mind, that he wouldn't take advantage of this young girl in this critical situation.

“Who's after you?”

Ye Feng leaned over and whispered softly in her ear.

“You let me go!”

Long Wan'er was struggling in his embrace to free herself from his grip, her cheeks flushed, finally she made an effort to slap him.

Unfortunately, with an increased level of Cultivation, Ye Feng easily grasped her pink palm: “I wanted to help you, since you didn't appreciate my kindness, so now forget about it.”

Hearing that, Long Wan'er gasped, her pair of beautiful eyes were staring at him with full of suspicion.

She hadn't thought ever, that this hateful masked man could really offer to

help her with such a good intention, this surely be a cheat. Just by recalling the time during her stay in Langfang city, when this fellow had played jokes on her, triggered her anger and she wanted to throw all the things which was there in front of her. Unfortunately, once again she bumped into him, but she hadn't retaliated yet, instead, she was again frivolously treated by him.

Long Wan'er thought for a while, she felt that her entire body was impatiently becoming hot, because just a moment ago she was hit by that kind of intense poison, which had the tendency to suppress the resistance. It quickly rushed into her core Dan, and through her meridians, it hit her qi and circulated throughout her body, and then started suppressing her resistance hastily, of that kind of people's bashful desire.

“Actually right, Yes you can”

The beautiful eyes of Long Wan'er shifted towards him, she thought of a way, at this time she was no longer struggling, instead with her weak body she stuck to him: “God Fist Gate..... the two men of God Fist Gate have a very illegal intentions, so can you help me in dealing with them? ”

Just like the pleasant sweet voice of oriole, her inexhaustible, alluring and powerful voice resounded in Ye Feng's ears.

God Fist Gate?

Ye Feng's mind started functioning fast, he thought of the incident which took place in Langfang's trade fair, that dark-skinned boy, who was kicked by Long Wan'er, was he one of the men of God Fist gate?

Soon, he knew that he didn't guess wrong.

Meanwhile, the rustling sound of the thick patch of grass suddenly appeared, followed by the sound of footsteps approaching towards them from far to near, and soon a familiar self-satisfied voice burst out: "Wan'er, come on, just accept your fate without any fight! I would like to see you, so where can you run away, better be a well-behaved girl with me, ok? I together with my fellow apprentice have decided to be good to you, we surely will make you comfortable"

This sound was not heard at the trade fair, this seemed to be a deliberate fight, was that guy trying to attract the attention of Long Wan'er towards him?

At that time was Long Wan'er ruthlessly humiliated him, the result of which could be seen today that the strength of that feeble man exploded like this, and unexpectedly he even made use of such method to retaliate, the things didn't end here, he even asked his fellow apprentice to gang up with him, since he wanted to embarrass her by shamelessly dealing with her.

As the sound of footsteps was getting closer, Ye Feng could also feel that the man, who was saying these things, was very weak, and there was another man as well, who was almost at the same level like Li Junlong from before. In his heart, he very clearly knew the intensity of the situation, so he didn't flinch.

A moment later, these two figures, by pushing through the bushes, finally appeared in front of Ye Feng, and when they saw each other, they gawked.

The thing which made the opposite party gawked was that Long Wan'er had always been a keen eyesight girl, who used to look on the top, but now unexpectedly seeing her in the embrace of a masked man, stunned them. Apparently they were looking exceptionally intimate like this.

But the reason Ye Feng gawked was completely different, they were actually more than two people. There was the third person, who was being carried by one of those two guys, in his hands. Wasn't that guy who was being carried by one of them, was from earlier, that Handsome Young man, Long Xian?

All of a sudden, Ye Feng got a clear picture of everything, why Long Wan'er was infected. Clearly speaking, since there were lots of Long people, so it would be next to impossible for these two fellows of God Fist Gate to get success in their plan. Unfortunately, they had Long Xian in their grip, by using this method, they wanted to draw Long Wan'er out alone. An easiest way to deal with her.

One of the persons of the opposite party, had been seen before at trade fair. He was that dark skinned young fellow, who had around three or four years of Cultivation at most, because of that he was not been paid attention by Ye Feng.

Another one of them was carrying that handsome young man, Long Xian. He was tall and was looking very strong, had a treacherous look on his face, probably he was the one who poisoned Long Wan'er. This tricky guy must be the one who would have made plan to draw her out, he must be the fellow apprentice of the dark skinned guy.

Panic-stricken Long Xian, who was in the hands of the tall person, said :
"Wan'er, you can't blame me for this. They said that if I wouldn't give you medicine to lead you out, they would perhaps kill me"

Chapter 68 One on one

Hearing his confession, Long Wan'er couldn't help but scolded him rudely:
"Bullshit."

That handsome young man came late alone, and unexpectedly was caught and threatened by those two men of God Fist Gate. Practically, he was a very stupid person in his whole Clan, how couldn't she ever notice that her Dragon Clan had such an incompetent fellow.

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and looked into the pair of eyes of Long Xian, and thought that this young man was indeed a best quality person, using strength to bully the weak was certainly a favorable situation.

Confronting a pair of ordinary young lovers in Lin'an city, and then compelling that young girl to jump off the hotel's building, was just like using his strength to bully a weak couple, but when he confronted a pair of fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate, he actually became extremely frightened to the extent where he could even pee in his pant on the bad. Besides, he also betrayed Long Wan'er, who was his own Clan member.

"Come with me."

Ye Feng said in a low voice, by embracing Long Wan'er's fervent stature in his arms, he advanced towards the nearby bushes, and by turning back he dragged her to go inside them. This path should be the only mountain road, and if at the moment they would start fighting here, then it would become completely inevitable for him, not to be seen by others, or by Huang Lao and that crazy pair of Heavenly Sword Palace, who might be approaching from behind any moment,

which would become very troublesome for him.

Consequently, he decided to take Long Wan'er, and direct those two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate into the woods, far away from this path, so that there would be no need to worry about other people's disturbances.

His ultimate goal was to seize this young lady of Dragon Clan, and hold her as a hostage, in order to pass through the platform on top of the mountain! In case above, there would be numerous people of Dragon clan, then by producing Long Wan'er as hostage, he could become able to suppress the attack of opposite party as long as she would remain in his clutch. Right from the platform, he had to cover only a short distance ahead, exactly then the entrance of the ancient tomb would appear there. And once he would advance into the tomb, then surely he would get rid of everyone by relying on the drawn map.

"Where are you going?"

Long Wan'er had no idea about his train of thought, hence in a very soft tone she shouted to ask that.

As she was in his embrace, she was feeling uneasiness all over her body, from infancy to maturity she had never felt this kind of strange feeling. But at this moment, Qi within her body was working crazily to suppress the toxicity, simply she didn't have the strength to break herself free from Ye Feng's arms.

Once she gave up suppressing the toxin, it might burst out badly. At that time, could it be possible for her to bear it again, it was difficult to say.

She might not want to ruin her life because of this thing!

Now the only thing running in her mind was, either make Ye Feng fight with the two guys of God Fist Gate, or let the people of Dragon Clan discover this situation here.

“Come with me.”

Ye Feng chuckled, because of the mask on his face, he was looking incomparably ferocious. Almost by dragging her all along, he came to the side of the woods.

“Brother Luo Li, pursue them quickly!”

The moment that sinister deceitful tall person saw them advancing towards the woods, he immediately waved his hand, making the dark-skinned young fellow take the lead in the pursuit.

“Brother Luo Lei, I am inferior to you, why don’t you take the lead?”

The dark-skinned guy, Luo Li couldn’t be swindled, instead he had already tighten up his guard and said that.

“Hmmm, I will go ahead then, can you suppress this handsome young man?”

The Tall man lightly groaned and illustrated to carry this handsome young man, Long Xian in his hands.

As Luo Li heard that, a cloudy expression crawled on his face: “That masked

man was the one who, just by a single strike of his sword, killed the master Greedy Wolf Sword. What if he launches a sneak attack on me, I am absolutely no match for him.”

Although he wanted to capture Long Wan’er at any cost, but still he didn’t want to risk his own life for this.

“Well, if you are not coming along with me, then I will not go as well, and regarding this matter, you handle it by yourself.”

Luo Lei apparently had heard the name of the mask name ‘Mo Jiuge’, he groaned coldly since he didn’t want to take the lead.

“This.....”

Luo Li hesitated for a moment, and finally clenched his teeth and nodded: “Then brother, you must have to pay attention to protect me.”

He thought that even if he let that Mask man and Long Wan’er run away today, still that wouldn’t bring an end to their future troubles. They had given a very fierce poison to Long Wan’er, in addition to it, taking hold of that mask man wouldn’t be a child’s play. In the future, both of them would certainly join forces against them. Hence, now they didn’t have a better life anymore.

Moreover, if Long Wan’er returned alive, then she would certainly report this to her father and stir his anger. In that case, their school ‘God Fist Gate’ couldn’t be able to shoulder such a terrific anger.

“Relax, although that fellow has killed the corrupt Wolf Sword, but that

corrupt Wolf Sword had only five years of Cultivation.”

The Tall man, Luo Lei lightly groaned and continued: “However, I, Luo Lei, have eight years of Cultivation, besides I am not that sort of good for nothing person like the corrupt Wolf Sword, in no way I can be inferior to that mask man.”

A moment later, carrying Long Xian in the hand, both of the guys entered in the thick patch of grass, chasing behind the mask man and Long Wan’er, to know about their whereabouts. Since, they planned and poisoned Long Wan’er illegally and executed such a shameful thing, so they could certainly not go back to inform their elder, to come and help them.

.....

Carrying Long Wan’er all the way in his arms, through the deep forest, Ye Feng kept on running continuously, and crossed even more than 1000 meters of distance, until he came to a bottomless precipice, and then stopped.

“Ten years of Cultivation, pretty good, such a huge progress!”

Ye Feng was feeling her fiery stature in his arms, he chuckled loudly. Since they were too close together, ofcourse it was quite natural that they could feel the Cultivation of other party.

“Hmmm, four years of Cultivation

At this time, her heart was a bit amazed, this fellow had merely four years of Cultivation, then how unexpectedly, just by a single sword strike, he could be able to kill the corrupt Wolf Sword who had five years of Cultivation, moreover

his agility was noticeably good, and his red sword was extremely strange as well, didn't know where was it hidden

She didn't know that Ye Feng had attained four years of Cultivation just a short while ago, by absorbing the Hair Ornament Blue Spirit Grass, otherwise he would be definitely regarded as a monster, a freak.

"Well said, then how about while you stall the tall man, I will deal with that dark-skinned guy, what say?"

Ye Feng chuckled, he lowered his head to stare at her delicate face from across his mask.

"As you can clearly see that currently I am in this condition, so basically there is no way I can take him on."

Long Wan'er heard that, and her face turned red, she got more and more soft, as if she was about to melt in his arms.

"is it?"

Ye Feng ruminated about it and then said: "Then I must walk away, I have only four years of Cultivation, apparently I am far from the match of that tall person."

"That"

She blushed hard and her cheeks turned red, she hesitated for a moment, but then considered this matter carefully, and thought that whatever he said was

also the truth, she had no option left but to only nod: “You must be a bit faster while dealing with that guy Luo Li. Besides, you also have a sword you used while killing that corrupt Wolf Sword, you surely will not let that fellow run away, right?”

“Naturally, so long as you keep holding the tall man, I could be able to kill that guy in next few seconds.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, wearing the facial features of mask he was looking very suspicious, but unfortunately now, Long Wan’er was simply unable to take care of it.

She decided that while both sides would be busy in fighting, in the meantime she would grasp the opportunity to escape and return to the above mountain’s platform to look for the elders of Dragon Clan and make them detoxify

“They came.”

Ye Feng smiled, her fragrant body was still in his bosom, he slipped his hand and slowly pinched her straighten up perky breast and then shoved open her. This girl was under the effect of the ‘youthful lust poison’, this type of behavior of Ye Feng was making her efficacy outbreak, so as to avoid this, she wanted to run away.

Being touched by him like this, made her very uneasy, her cheeks immediately became red, just by thinking about it, her whole body had turned dry and hot. And also there was the tendency of this poison that it used to suppress one’s resistance. Since she was shoved open by Ye Feng, she hastily calmed her mind, and then immediately looked towards those men Luo Li and Luo Lei brothers, who were rapidly chasing after her.

“One on one!”

Seeing Ye Feng and Long Wan'er dividing into two groups unexpectedly, totally stunned Luo Lei, it was like taking the bull by the horns. He promptly knocked down Long Xian and threw him to one side, and then took the initiative and rushed towards Long Wan'er instantly.

Without any doubt, Long Wan'er was looking extremely attractive at present, moreover as compared to the other side, it was a better deal to handle her, even more he could also take advantage of this situation. By the time, on the other hand, Luo Li and the masked man came in front of each other, Luo Li was almost at surprise, he had not expected that this Masked man would come in his way once again. He started thinking about a way how to get rid of him in just one swoop!

He had heard the story about how the mask man's sword had killed the corrupt Wolf Sword, but hadn't witnessed it with his own eyes. He believed that as the disciple of such a big school 'God Fist Gate', although his Cultivation was inferior to the corrupt Wolf Sword, but still he could definitely be able stall him for a while.

Seeing that, he started sweating out.

Luo Lei hadn't seen the mortification of Wolf Sword, he was actually outside the trade fair of Langfang, but he already had a psychological fear of the name of the Masked man. Not to mention, letting him alone now to face that Masked man, wasn't it like he was assigning his name?

Chapter 69 Now, its his turn.

Lastvoice : Hello guys, this chapter especially was really a very challenging job for me to translate, since it was totally action-based. Though, I have tried my best to make it meaningful Kindly deal with it.

Here it begins : haha

Chapter 69 Now, its his turn.

At this moment, Ye Feng and dark-skinned young fellow Luo Li were confronting each other, wearing a mask on his face, Ye Feng chuckled softly and said: “Boy, so do you have any strategic move to execute now?”

Luo Li’s small eyeballs took a quick revolution: “Elder brother, people should mind their own business, it’s not worthwhile to die while vying against one another, right?”

“What?”

Ye Feng’s tone suddenly rose up: “Long Wan’er is a friend of mine, you are bullying and insulting her like this, how can I turn a blind eye?”

“Friend?”

Hearing his statement, an expressionless look immediately clouded over the face of Luo Li, he thought to himself that back then, during Langfang city’s trade fair, these two persons weren’t acquainted with each other, were they? Besides, this masked man had also killed the corrupt Wolf Sword at the scene, and ruined

the reputation of Dragon Clan, as well as became their personal enemy.

Then how did they become friends now?

When nearby standing Long Wan'er heard that, she blushed, and started criticizing Ye Feng in her heart, who was a friend of this person, a really shameless guy he was!

“Beauty, I exhort you not to run wildly all over the place.”

The tall guy Luo Lei gradually approached the side of Long Wan'er, and by putting a smile on his face, said: “You are in such a situation, where would you run away, isn't it the same like earlier?”

Presently, he wanted to injure Long Wan'er so as to at least restrict her movement and stop her from running away anywhere, after then together with Luo Li he could launch a convergent attack on Ye Feng from both the sides. Thus by using this way, he could get an edge over him in this fight.

To finish it up as soon as possible, Luo Lei abruptly picked up his pace and quickly leapt towards her, who was currently leaning against the tree, simultaneously he pounded out a shot with his double fists. This skill was considered as the supreme Feat of God Fist Gate, and was called ‘Paochui Fist’!

(NOTE : Paochui Fist is also called as Three Emperor Cannon Punch)

He condensed his inner qi in his double fists in a tigerish style, and in an instant came closer to the chest of Long Wan'er. But when he was about to hit her, he decided not to hit on her face, such an attractive beautiful woman was she, in case her face got injured because of the hit, then it would be very awful.

Moreover, to handle this matter like this, would also be not good.

Hitting her chest would be more than enough to shatter her meridians and kill the chance of her running away!

The moment Long Wan'er saw that, her heart became very anxious, with her light footsteps she quickly went behind the back of the tree and hid there, while at the same time, the opposite party rushed towards her and hit directly on the tree's trunk with his double fists, followed by two immediate back to back explosions caused by that hit, making the debris swirl in the air.

A sound "squeak" echoed, and along with it half of the upper part of such a thick and big tree actually started collapsing, obviously it was the might of his pair of fists.

Seeing that, Long Wan'er didn't dare to still stand behind that tree and risk her life. While breathing heavily, very swiftly she rushed towards one side to dodge that chaos, then she looked towards Ye Feng by placing her hope on him, that very soon he would settle his fight with Luo Li, and would come to help her out.

Ye Feng was watching the situation Long Wan'er was in all along, he deliberately had let her exhaust her physical strength, so as to avoid any trouble which might occur while holding her as a hostage. He was very calm and composed even in such a pressure. All of a sudden he made an instance of hand-to-hand fight, and by stacking up a smile, he said to the dark-skinned young fellow: "Come on, let me have a look whether my fist is stronger, or the fist of God Fist Gate is!"

As soon as his voice fell, he spontaneously took the initiative to attack him using Bagua Fist technique, and all of a sudden with an explosion, he

approached in front of his face!

“Play with me?”

Luo Li saw that, and smirked secretly in his heart, the boxing style of God Fist Gate was recognized throughout the world as a matchless technique, which had the capability to erupt in the shortest time with the maximum might! In response to him, Luo Li bumped his fist with him hardly, wasn't it like he courted his death?

Since Luo Li was extremely confident about his school's boxing technique, he instantly welcomed Ye Feng's both fists. Just after that his inner qi started circulating heavily and he bumped his fists against Ye Feng's fists!

As a result of the bilateral contact, a violent gust of air burst out, which simultaneously blew away large quantities of leaves lying on the ground, making them flutter in the air everywhere!

“What, we have the same level of Cultivation, how could it be possible....”

Luo Li exclaimed in fear, and then with a screech, his whole body flew upside down as a kite with a broken string, and fell heavily to the ground!

Seeing that Ye Feng sneered in his heart, God Fist Gate was also nothing but a big talk only! Although both of them were at four years of cultivation, but the power intensity of Luo Li's inner qi was only the half of Ye Feng's Zhenqi.

In addition, Ye Feng's Bagua Fist Technique was far exquisite than Luo Li's Paochui Boxing, both sides had just a touch, and as it's impact, Ye Feng's qi

promptly entered the opposite party's fist, immediately caused a severe destruction inside his body, and in just one fell swoop jolted him and made him fly.

“Another one!”

Ye Feng vociferated, trod forward, and pounded out the double fists again!

As Luo Li saw Ye Feng approaching towards him, his heart was thunderstruck, he immediately crawled on the ground to set out, since he wanted to escape, so he took rapid steps, and instantaneously slid out the distances of ten meters!

Unfortunately, Ye Feng's agility was not just for a show, in a flash he activated his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and moved forward leaving behind a faint blurred afterimage, followed by two fists, which smashed on Luo Li's face and chest one after another, when he was trying to escape.

“Ping” a sound resounded everywhere, followed by “Kacha” sound, apparently Ye Feng's fist had completely smashed the ribs of opposite party. Afterwards by using his formidable strength, Ye Feng hit the thin and petite body of that dark-skinned young fellow, which made him fly with a huge force in the upward direction, and then his petite body fell down the cliff.

“Ah.....-”

Luo Li screamed pitifully as he was getting smaller and smaller until disappeared, falling down from such a high cliff, on top of that was seriously injured, it seemed like this fellow had no way to survive.

This sudden incident, let Luo Lei freeze to the spot!

How he couldn't think that his young fellow couldn't be able to drag Ye Feng even for a minute, merely a short face to face fight, which resulted in a disastrous defeat to the extent where he fell off the cliff. By listening to this masked man's voice, it looked like he was about twenty years old, how could he be so dreadful?

After all, he was an expert of a school!

Luo Lei's sharp mind worked fast, but at the same time, a loud scolding burst out from other direction.

"Obscene traitor, suffers to death!"

Seeing him distracted, Long Wan'er suddenly dropped the idea of running away, instead, she turned around, jumped up, and pointed her snow white creamy and powerful right leg at his chin and kicked him powerfully.

"Dragon Rise!"

Bang!

The response time of Luo Lei was way too long, besides his Cultivation was not as good as her, by moving her foot in an upward direction she precisely hit his chin, making him fly to the sky, then he collapsed heavily on the ground, and his several teeth fell out.

“Dragon Tail!”

She was in form now, and she had no intention left to forgive him, from sideways she revolved, and kicked a foot on the center of his chest, which threw him away more than ten meters far in one fell swoop, and like a bullet he heavily crashed against a tree, making it completely knock down.

He spat out fresh Blood, as he could no longer dare to stand up. Dragon Clan’s exquisite unique move “Dragon Leg” was not an ordinary move, under the unexpectedness, this guy was strongly kicked by her feet twice, leaving behind a severe injury.

Immediately by suppressing the efficacy of that intense drug, and desperately resisting her body which was becoming hot and fragrant more and more, she suddenly started running away without any hesitation, as she wanted to return to the mountain’s platform, to make the elders of her Dragon Clan take responsibility for her.

But Ye Feng was always concerned about the situation here, hence he continued using Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace! Since his Cultivation was at increased level now, so he had this advantage to continue using it for little longer, moreover he decided not to display any strategic move to exhaust his Zhenqi anymore.

He flashed towards her, leaving behind a blurred afterimage, and by stretching out his hand, he grasped her and seized her in his arms.

“You want to run away? It’s not so easy.”

Ye Feng chuckled loudly while clinging her to his bosom in order to control her delicate and charming stature. The present Long wan'er, had kicked two back to back hits just a while ago, hence now she was not in the position to suppress the drug's efficacy anymore, her body was getting more and more softer, and her consciousness was also fading away bit by bit. Not to talk about her revolting attitude against Ye Feng, now she wasn't even in the condition to do anything except clinging onto to him involuntarily, and constantly exhaling blue and light aroma.

"It's really troublesome"

Ye Feng thought to himself, and while hugging her tightly in his arms, he came around the severely injured Luo Lei.

"If you kill me now, then God Fist Gate won't let you off ever!"

After saying that, Luo Lei vomited out blood and a look of a relentless threat suddenly covered his face.

"Cut the crap."

Ye Feng's Zhenqi quickly started rushing out, and in a matter of second, a red Zhenqi condensed sword emerged out again. Thus, finally, by using his Zhenqi coated sword, he pierced the throat of Luo Lei and finished his life, then he kicked his body off the cliff. He clearly remembered the teachings of his master Su Feyang, that was – must get the opportunity to get rid of the threatening enemy!

Then he turned his gaze towards nearby lying Long Xian.

Long Wan'er looked at his eyes, and suddenly became little bit awake, while hugging his neck with her arms, she softly asked: "You want to..... to him..... what do you want to do?"

"Now, it's his turn!"

Ye Feng muttered, thought that today in Downtown, that girl jumped to her death only because of this young man, he naturally would never let this young man, Long Xian off!

Her heart skipped a beat, was Ye Feng going to kill one of the members of her Dragon Clan?

Chapter 70 Long Wan'er's father

At this moment, just when Luo Lei was knocked down by Ye Feng, exactly then unconscious Long Xian came into senses, and heard Ye Feng saying “now, it's his turn”, which all of a sudden scared the hell out of him, and his complexion became equally paler as a corpse.

“Big Brother, I was wrong!”

By putting on a distressed face, Long Xian started begging for mercy, though he was timid, but was actually not a fool, sooner he noticed that both of the fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate had disappeared, wouldn't he have understood by now, that what might have happened to them?

“Where were you wrong?”

With every step, Ye Feng approached close to him, and coldly asked that.

“I should neither have given the drug to Wan'er, nor should have directed her to go alone in this conditionI really had no idea that she is your woman, great swordsman”

Long Xian was cold sweating, he looked at delicate and well-behaved Long Wan'er leaning against Ye Feng's arms, so he took it for granted that she was her woman and said that.

But when Long Wan'er heard that, it ticked her off, she wished she could jump out of the arms of Ye Feng and throw several hundreds of hands out on Long

Xian, who was this masked man's woman? Unfortunately, at present the efficacy had burst out within her body, making her suppress it fully, otherwise, she was afraid that she might become delirious any moment, letting Ye Feng overthrow her at the scene.

Also, she didn't know till the end, that where did Luo Lei and Luo Li find that medicine from, it was so intense, making her curse those two guys constantly in her heart several times. Of course, those two fellows would be already dead by now, and howsoever her curses would be, absolutely they were going in vain.

Under such circumstances, where her entire body was feeling weak and incapable, she could only let Ye Feng take advantage of her. Actually, she was only waiting for an appropriate opportunity to erupt again all of a sudden, and she could smoothly escape from his evil clutches

"Really? You listened clearly."

Ye Feng sneered: "Today, in the morning, in city Lin'an, a young girl was compelled to jump off the hotel's building to her death, do you still remember that?"

"Ohhhh."

As Long Xian heard about the morning thing, he glued to the spot, how did this masked man know about this matter?

Suddenly, an expression of disgust crawled on the face of Long Wan'er, and a perplexing thought rushed into her mind, could this kid Long Xian be actually capable of executing such things in the outside world?

“Today, I, as an ordinary citizen, will wipe out an evil doer for sure!”

Ye Feng’s Zhenqi quickly rushed out, and the red Zhenqi Sword suddenly emerged out in his hand, pointing at about three metres away lying Long Xian!

“Please no, the great swordsman, mercy! Wan’er, help me, save me!”

As Long Xian’s eyes fell on that red Zhenqi coated sword, his blood dried up, and because of his extreme fear, suddenly water leached out between his two legs, causing stain!

“In that hotel, that maiden would have certainly thought so and might have begged you for mercy, but did you forgive her?”

Ye Feng groaned coldly.

It was rightly said, “Whatever is hurtful to you, don’t do that to any other person.” This guy Long Xian considered other people’s begging very indifferently, that was why Ye Feng wanted now to make him taste, what kind of flavour this despair had.

Then after Ye Feng didn’t say anything, just raised his hand and waved it, immediately a bright red light flashed!

Soon, the third corpse fell down the cliff.

.....

“Honestly speaking, be my well-behaved hostage. On the platform ahead, are there people of your Dragon Clan?”

After finished resolving with Long Xian, Ye Feng choked the neck of Long Wan'er, and returned to his original route, and then broke into a run to go towards the mountain platform.

“CoughsKe Ke... there are ”

Since Long Wan'er's neck was seized by him, that impeded her breath, moreover, she didn't take long to understand that since beginning Ye Feng didn't have a crush on her, rather it was his plan all along to capture her as a hostage.

However, what was the purpose behind holding her as a hostage?

Of course, she didn't have even the least bit idea that Ye Feng just wanted to pass through that platform, in order to enter the old tomb relics. Whether it was the identity of a masked man, or his true identity as Ye Feng, in any form if he would appear in front of those people of Dragon Clan, they would never let him pass through. Hence, this was the last option left in the hands of Ye Feng to succeed in his goal.

“That's good.”

Ye Feng nodded with satisfaction, along with Long Wan'er he gradually moved forward step by step.

Poor Long Wan'er's current condition was quite pathetic, her whole body was under frequent drug seizures, her cheeks were blushed red, especially because she was being held under duress by Ye Feng, but still unexpectedly she had faintly a very comfortable feeling, which was making her ashamed of herself and resentful, that was why she simply wanted to commit suicide.

Ye Feng simply didn't have a shred of tenderness towards women, on top of that this Miss Dragon was not his woman at the first place, on the contrary, she was his enemy, hence, he would never show his soft side to his enemy.

When they gradually approached closer to the mountain platform, they finally attracted the attention of some of the members of Dragon Clan.

There were approximately 17 – 18 individuals on the platform, in several groups consisting two and three individuals in each, they were discussing anything mutually. Just a glance was enough for Ye Feng to understand that all of them were the people of the martial arts world. When their eyes shifted towards Ye Feng holding under duress Long Wan'er all the way, immediately the complexion of few 5 – 6 persons paled down.

“Wan'er!”

One among them was considerably a middle-aged man, with straight eyebrows slanting upwards and outwards vertical stroke, knitted his brows, and with extremely quick footsteps he moved forward to welcome them!

Ye Feng raised his eyes and look at that middle-aged man. He was around thirty years of age, was wearing a shallow white long gown, a plain scabbard was hanging from his waist, from head to foot was covered with a kind of refined and courteous atmosphere, making him almost delusional. All these features of him

forcing Ye Feng to think that it seemed like as if this guy was someone from the World of the Immortals, with a secret immortal sword.

“Dad

With great difficulty, Long Wan'er put out a word, followed by a signal with her eyes towards that middle-aged man.

Was that refined and courteous middle-aged man, her father?

Ye Feng's mind was already alert and he had also tightened up his guard beforehand, he opened his mouth and in a very threatening manner, said: “No matter who you are, just make a way for me, or I'll strangle her to death! I have to just pass through here, once I leave this place, I'll return your daughter totally intact .”

“Young man, you are actually so bold!”

The refined middle-aged man's eyes were exhibiting cold look, his straight eyebrows were slanting upwards and outwards, his generous hand slipped and grasped the sword hilt hanging on his waist as if he wanted to begin.

“Mo'ran, wait a minute.”

From behind him an old man was seeing everything, hastily he came up, and whispered something in his ears.

That scene made Ye Feng scowled, if he were at such a level where he had

atleast 10 years of Cultivation, then he would have been able now, to hear what the other party was whispering, but unfortunately he had no way to do that.

“Are you called Mo Jiuge?”

The refined man listened to the old man’s words, it seemed like as if he was feeling justified now, he then nodded as he raised his head and looked towards that masked man, Ye Feng, and with solemnity he said: “If you dare hurt my daughter, our Dragon people will travel all over the ends of the earth, and will certainly take your life!”

“Relax.”

Ye Feng smiled softly, by still continued pinching her neck, he kept on walking, and when he came closer almost about five metres away from Long Wan’er’s father, then he suddenly peaked up his speed!

Embracing her tightly in his arms, Ye Feng hastily activated his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace to its maximum limit, and as an impact of it, a series of flashing blurred afterimage appeared on the platform! And just in a blink of an eye, by holding Long Wan’er, he crossed the entire mountain platform, and fled into the woods in the opposite direction.

This sudden incident, left Long Mo’ran along with the rest of the Dragon people, gawk. How could this boy have such a noticeably fast speed? Till they could even think to respond, Ye Feng had already disappeared right in front of their eyes, along with Long Wan’er!

“Ha ha ha, Mo’ran its kind of little strange, never imagined that you will have

one day of admitting defeat.”

A loud laugh, immediately followed by a satirical sentence, passed out from the other side, actually Dragon Clan and the Great Elder of God Fist Gate were not in good terms with each other, so as to insult Long Mo’ran, he used this satirical way. However, by now, he had neither this idea that Luo Li together with Luo Lei wanted to capture Long Wan’er, nor that they had already been killed by Ye Feng. Or else, he would be more afraid now that his presence could trigger Long Mo’ran’s anger and he might fly into a rage because of his two evil pupils.

“Humph.”

Long Mo’ran snorted lightly, without paying attention to the opposite party, he frowned and said: “You guys go and investigate below to see what was going on with that kid Long Xian, simultaneously I’ll go behind Wan’er.”

As his voice fell, he immediately cast a light dodge agility, as if he easily swallowed a deep pool, and then he quickly jumped a step and advanced towards them, to pursue the place from where Ye Feng along with Long Wan’er vanished. He could clearly notice that the present condition of Long Wan’er was very awful, that kind of crimson cheeks she had then, she must not bump into any bewildered person, who might destroy her, for a lifetime

Chapter 71 Enters the ancient tomb.

The sun had already set in the western sky, and the shaft of remaining sunlight had submerged the entire city, Yanjing.

The last class of Yan Junior High School finally ended in the afternoon, a constant stream of students were getting out of the school gate, either to return home or to have dinner outside, but almost all of the students had one thing in common, that was the topic they were discussing.

“Have you heard that, the first and most beautiful woman of Yan High School/Yanjing University, seems to be engaged with a third-year high school student named Ye Feng!”

{Lastvoice : Yan High School or Yanjing University ... both of these terms will be used interchangeably, hence I have mentioned both of them to avoid future confusion.

Su Menghan is in Yan Junior High School, and

Lin Shiqing is in Yan High School/Yanjing University.}

“Naturally heard that, actually what is the identity of that guy Ye Feng, and would Miss Lin take a fancy to him, unexpectedly?”

“It’s not like that, rather I have heard that the family has forced it.”

“You don’t know anything, they are already living together, ok?”

“Wow, really, is it true?”

A topic like this was cropping up one after another.

Su Menghan was moving towards the school entrance, her pretty and beautiful figure was capturing the attention of numerous students. Popular and admired as the top Xiaohua of Yan Junior High School, her fresh and pure face, her exquisite figure, everything was standing her out from other students, and was making her as the most beautiful landscape.

{Note : Xiaohua – School’s beauty.}

“Hello, things have turned out so noisy and big, don’t you want to find Small Bee and ask about it?”

Ou B finally caught up with her, while panting heavily he asked that with a face covered with a depressed look.

“No, there is no use of it, I trust him.”

Su Menghan said that by piling up a smile on her face, as if she didn’t care about the rumours and slander going on all over the school campus.

“You trust that ass blindly! Today, there are just the students of Yan High School/Yanjing University looking for him to trouble him, all around it has more than 70 batches of students, consisting of a hundred male students or even more, in each batch!”

Ou B continued saying in a scolding tone: “That boy, hidden from us so deep like this, in my opinion, now this little should certainly ensure his hiding, or if he feels like then he should seek asylum! Just take a look around, those fat bodies

looking for him, are so strong, like Sumo wrestlers or even more like boxer community people, if he gets punched by them just once, that wouldn't be a joke

"It will not."

Su Menghan said that still stubbornly, a pair of her beautiful eyes were glittering firmly.

"Hey, I am telling you"

Ou B wanted to make her aware of the consequences of the current situation, but just when he barely thought to go forward, he was actually blocked by four guys of Heavenly Serpent Gang, thus he had no choice left but to look at her helplessly, as she was departing.

Su Menghan didn't turn around, instead, she went straight towards the car, which was brought by Heavenly Serpent Gang to pick her up, and then like a wisp of smoke, she went far away, swiftly. She had never socialised with the boys in the school, nor have ever shown a good face to them, just because Ye Feng had a good relation with Ou B, she exchanged a few words with him, which was extremely rare.

But in the eyes of Ou B, didn't it look like Su Menghan was too stubborn? Such a big matter was breathing strongly all around the school campus, even though unexpectedly she had held an unshaken trust for Ye Feng, which was simply impervious!

However, the first beauty of Yanjing University/Yan High School, Lin Shiqing....

Ah.....

That sort of strong woman, endowed with both such a terrific talent and incomparable beauty, could really have a liking for Ye Feng?

Ou B was being a bit sceptical, only if Ye Feng were the legendary martial artist from the martial arts world, then it would be possible. Since the world of martial arts didn't get involved in the matter of the worldly things, then how could it be possible that the marriage of the direct line female, of the ruling family, was set with a common person without any martial arts skills?

He pulled out his cell phone, once again he gave a call to Ye Feng , but as expected he got a prompt message that call couldn't be put through, hence resentfully he decided to go home, as he had no other choice left.

.....

At this time on the other side, holding the weak and fragrant body of under duress Long Wan'er, Ye Feng was speeding away to dash out wildly.

The map left behind by Zhu Bainiao, he draped it over his shoulders to blaze a trail, actually the route taken by him was getting more and more desolated, but soon, finally he approached the destination, the entrance of the ancient tomb vestige.

“Hurry up let me go quickly, I can't stand it anymore”

Long Wan'er while leaning on his chest was breathing heavily, a pair of her beautiful delicate hands were softly embracing Ye Feng's body. She felt that the

efficacy of the drug within her body, must have to be suppressed, or else if it would erupt out just once, then the only god would know what might happen.

“Your father is chasing behind us, if I let you go, wouldn’t it be like I am courting my death?”

Ye Feng groaned lightly, and simply decided not to pay attention to her.

As far the action of those two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate was concerned, Ye Feng despised it very much, in order to obtain a woman, was there such a need to be so vicious? Presently, Long Wan’er who was deeply immersed in his bosom, was making Ye Feng feel strangely an intense strong desire for her, however, nothing could be done, since whoever would touch the soft delicate body of Long Wan’er and feel it’s charm, wouldn’t he also feel the same way, just like what Ye Feng was desiring for currently?

During the period when he was in the World of the Immortals, he had constantly followed his master, hence, he didn’t get any chance to have access to any woman. However, after his rebirth here in the modern city, he had actually taken possession of Su Menghan as well as Long Wan’er, both of them, one after another, and had also taken small advantages of these two great beautiful women.

Previously, when Ye Feng had his first encounter with Su Menghan, he very much liked her honesty, kindness and pure-heartedness, but at present while being with Long Wan’er, he didn’t feel a thing about her.

However, now, by constantly embracing the delicate fragrant body of a young girl, was making him have some strange thoughts

His Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was still under use, all the way a faint blurred afterimage was continuously appearing and disappearing quickly. Just within a period of short one minute, Ye Feng covered a distance of two kilometres, until his Zhenqi finally exhausted, which gradually slowed down his pace as well.

The whole body of Long Wan'er was being hot and dry, since her mind was fully occupied with several types of her strange lustful desire. Just a mere thought that Ye Feng was running with her, was making her flushed, that she didn't even notice his speed which was incredibly fast, otherwise, it might have surely surprised her incomparably.

It just took one minute, and Ye Feng with his super fast speed, had already left her father far behind.

Finally, at this moment, a small cliff appeared in front of Ye Feng , which a bit delighted his heart, wasn't that the entrance of Shang Dynasty ancient tomb vestige, as said by Zhu Bainiao?

By putting his single hand around the slender willow waist of Long Wan'er, Ye Feng quickly moved forward, on the basis of Zhu Bainiao's instruction he finally found a sufficiently thick and solid vine, after then together with her, he seized an opportunity to start descending down the rock.

Although they were two people, but Long Wan'er was not heavy, that vine was fully able to withstand their weight.

After descending several metres, Ye Feng finally stopped in a gigantic stone, probably enough to accommodate the size of a truck, and then he loosened the thick solid vine.

He then exerted an effort and finally pulled out that vine, so as to avoid being caught up by Long Wan'er's father, confronting him was not a funny thing after all. Just by looking at the temperament of that refined man, Ye Feng right away got an idea that the opposite party had absolutely possessed few dozens of cultivation. Moreover the opposite party was gifted with a very strange skill, if he would pull out his sword, in that case, Ye Feng would surely prove to be far from being a suitable opponent for the opposite party.

Ye Feng dug out an already crushed flat black colored packet from his bosom , and then he pulled out a map, since he wanted to look into the map to see whether there was any danger or not in the ancient tomb.

Long Wan'er was softly curled up in his arms, suddenly she resumed her senses, looked carefully around her and discovered that along with Ye Feng, she was currently present at a place, which had only one access. It was a narrow and small crevice, possibly to be used to pass and go inside the cliff.

Otherwise, she might have jumped off the cliff, but when she glanced around herself, then noticed that there was only fog and wind lingering around, jumping down the cliff was absolutely out of the question.

She looked up and saw the overhanging cliff, but again she found the same thing, fog and wind lingering around everywhere, which made her heart very disappointed and depressed. Infact, the dark secret passage was not at all a good option for her to choose, since as the matter stood, if she chose this way to escape, her father would never save her, right?

Also, she didn't know why did this guy in the mask bring her here and what did he want to do with her.....

Suddenly, she noticed that Ye Feng was staring at a map holding in his hand probably very attentively, she couldn't help but her heart moved a bit.

Opportunity should never be missed, it was the time to begin!

All of a sudden, ten years of Cultivation mastered Long Wan'er's inner Qi exploded out abruptly, by twisting her body, she hastily jumped out of Ye Feng's arms, and by getting on her feet she snatched away the map from his hand in one fell swoop, which was immediately followed by a move 'Mysterious Dragon Pendulum Tail', aiming directly at the chest of Ye Feng to kick him over!

The sudden upheaval of Long Wan'er petrified him and left him extremely startled, but fortunately, his wariness had already prepared his heart strong enough to handle these reactions, hence he quickly responded to this, by putting into use the last trace of his already exhausted Zhenqi, to activate his last trump card, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, in order to escape the violent kick of Long Wan'er!

What a tremendous force and strength her foot had! Imagine, if Ye Feng were kicked just a moment ago, then that kick would have definitely thrown him down the cliff, and by now he would have ended up dead, exactly like the fate of previously met fellow apprentices, Luo Lei and Luo Li.

As Ye Feng raised his head again, exactly then he remained surprised for a moment to find that Long Wan'er's soft and exquisite graceful body had already disappeared, but then he noticed that she was leading to the tomb and ran into that crevice of ancient tomb vestige.

Ye Feng didn't want to think about any stuff, without further delay he took to

the heels to chase after her.

It was getting more and more dark outside, as well as inside the crevice it was so pitch-dark that Ye Feng who ran inside only for a short moment, but when he stretched his hand, he couldn't even see his own five fingers

Chapter 72 Inside the tomb vestige

Ye Feng advanced towards the ancient tomb relic and ran inside it, suddenly his eyes were smeared with darkness, and he felt like everything around him was entirely invisible. If he had owned ten years of Cultivation, then he could have relied on the knowledge of his spiritual power to see even in the darkness, but now he had no way to do that.

Fortunately, he already had done preparation for it.

From his black packet, he took out a small flashlight, which was earlier prepared by Zhao Yibei, in addition, there were also several No. 7 batteries arranged by him as the reserve, so as to persist it for several days, uninterrupted. Moreover, In order to increase the persistent use period of the flashlight, Zhao Yibei also prepared that type of flashlight which might not give quite a bright light, but was suitable enough for Ye Feng.

Once the flashlight was switched on, a crevice channel finally appeared before Ye Feng, leading the way ahead, which could only allow the next person through. However, it had suddenly widened about hundred metres ahead. Ye Feng clearly knew that the entrance of ancient tomb vestige had finally arrived.

The traces and shadow of Long Wan'er had long gone, but Ye Feng must overtake the opposite party as soon as possible, because, without the ,map, it would be extremely difficult for him to continue in this ancient tomb. After all he was not a specialised professional tomb raider. Whether to talk about his skills or the tools he had prepared for it, was still far from Zhu Bainiao's comparison.

He covered around hundred metres of distance in just 32 steps, then after he

arrived at a small stone chamber, the other side of which had a door, which had already been damaged, naturally that was destroyed by Zhu Bainiao.

There was no other way to proceed, hence he entered that stone chamber. Officially, finally he entered the ancient tomb relic now. In the dim light of a flashlight, alone in the dark, a stone passage covered with vine appeared in front of him all the way downwards, although he couldn't see the end.

“Atmosphere seems a little moist, on the basis of tracking the words said by Zhu Bainiao, there must be a large underground lake in the central part of this ancient tomb

Ye Feng heart made a speculation, he assiduously was trying to find some clues from the left traces of Long Wan'er. His walk suddenly turned into a trot and then he broke into a run, rapidly down the stairs and arrived at a horizontal road.

Flashlights were illuminating towards both sides, Ye Feng found that after a certain distance, on the walls of the corridor of both sides, there would have been flashlights, but unfortunately, they were immediately extinguished.

Just a second ago, a flashlight disappeared all of a sudden right in front of him, Ye Feng guessed that it could be no one else but Long Wan'er, who took away the illumination.

“This young lady actually is pretty smart

In his heart, Ye Feng secretly praised her, but was also very dignified, because very obviously Long Wan'er was not at all a good option to deal with.

When he proceeded to run along the corridor, then after covering around half a kilometer of distance, he felt that the things had started to become awful, since unexpectedly it turned out to be actually a crossroad existed there.

He hurriedly squatted down his body, and aimed the light of his flashlight at the traces on the ground, he just wanted to find out some clues, and he quickly succeeded in that. Soon he found the dust on the road leading to the left, was a bit messy, also there were several shallow footprints present on that road.

“This road, doesn’t lead to a tomb chamber, right? Isn’t it a blind alley?”

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows a tiny bit, and pondered that the other party was, by no means a stupid person, she had the map in her hands, so wasn’t it highly unlikely that she would still compel herself towards the blind alley?

Regarding the map, in a hurry he could only remember the beginning route of this tomb journey as well as the road leading to the direction of the central underground lake. About the rest of the details, he didn’t even get enough time to look into it before it got snatched away by Long Wan’er.

No matter how, but this road didn’t seem to be very far, therefore he decided to go and explore it out. Quickly he ran along the left side of the corridor. All the way, he saw the cliff’s rock was very well-preserved, it was very ancient, time-honored with a long history. By any chance, if some historians arrived here, they would definitely exclaim out in amazement, for discovering this treasure. What a pity, these things were completely pointless and insignificant to Ye Feng.

Soon he arrived at the terminus of this passage, a periphery of the tomb chamber.

“Damn, I was tricked.”

Ye Feng carefully examined that little tomb, but there was no trail of her, there was just a deathly silence which had taken over the surrounding area. In the centre of that tomb, there was a pit, who knew who was buried in it, Ye Feng was totally disinclined to think about it.

Since then, he didn't dare to underestimate her. Actually falsely making traces on the crossroad, delaying him by distracting him towards a dead end, it seemed like to pursue her again, had turned out to be a very difficult task now.

“I can only go to that central underground lake first.”

The moment Ye Feng decided that, he instantly set off.

Zhu Bainiao had said that at the beginning of the ancient tomb, there was no such underground lake, but later on it naturally got formed, water naturally accumulated and lake came into existence directly in the centre part of this tomb chamber.

The place from where Zhu Bainiao discovered that Lingshi, it was also the same place where, for the first time he saw the beautiful back view of someone, which was similar to Su Feiying!

Therefore, Ye Feng must go to look into that since he didn't succeed in finding out Long Wan'er, he could only go to the underground lake to check and explore that area, afterwards he decided to return to the original road. He would try to climb up that gigantic rock to get outside the cliff. However, by taking into consideration his current level of Cultivation, climbing several meters up the

rock, would undoubtedly be very difficult challenge for him.

A hope was there that the underground lake must render some fruitful results to him, this was what he was anticipating right now.

All the way back, he took several wriggles and spiral turnings, he was proceeding along the route drawn on the map, saved in his memory. Step by step he was advancing towards the underground lake situated somewhere around the central part of that ancient tomb.

His heart was palpitating, the closer he was getting to the underground lake, the quicker his heart was jumping, out of excitement.

His beautiful female master, Su Feiying had really appeared here before? If not, then why did that figure look exactly like her? If it was really her picture, why had she come over to a place like this ancient tomb vestige?

He had too many questions boiling up in his mind, but there was a hope that just after arriving at the underground lake, they all could be answered.

The distance was not very far away.

The flashlight was still on, Ye Feng wandered for more than ten minutes, soon, finally he was about to reach the destination. As he turned a corner, the light of his flashlight suddenly faded, but simultaneously another hazy white light appeared covering the dim light of his flashlight.

“Arrived!”

Ye Feng turned off the light and raised his head to take a broad view around his surroundings. He noticed that whatever Zhu Bainiao had said was 100 % true, a ray of dim gentle white light had flooded the entire space, that was naturally the big legendary luminous night pearl in the center of the tomb chamber, but unfortunately, it had already sunk to the bottom of the lake, which could now only send out such a dim hazy shimmer.

Ye Feng moved two steps forward to see the panorama of the entire central tomb.

He only saw a square-shaped tomb chamber of several hundred metres square, into a large central hollow, which had been filled up by the limpid underground lake water. But around that underground lake, there were some vine plants widely spread. Under that dim white light, there was no longer feeling of that kind of previously experienced deathly stillness, instead it was embellished all around, and was exhibiting the aura of the paradise.

In the lake actually swimming fishes could be seen very vividly, quite brisk and lively. Moreover, the water plants were appearing very luxuriant, the ray of the legendary luminous pearl was penetrating the water plant through the water surface, resembling like a very thin and white layer of yarn had draped over the entire space.

After arriving here, Ye Feng burst of freshness and comfort feeling, since unexpectedly he felt the presence of the divine and wonderful world's spiritual influence in the lake!

Although very weak, but it actually truly existed here, no wonder Zhu Bainiao could be able to find Lingshi "dark green stone" here. Zhu Bainiao was an

unprofessional man, who was not an authentic martial artist from the world of martial arts, even though he saw Lingshi. Without knowing it had any effect and power, he simply picked it up conveniently and threw away to Ou A, and by luck Ou A sold it at such an undervalued price to Ye Feng.

Ye Feng walked to the edge of the lake, and as he was thinking something, suddenly an uncertain beautiful figure of a woman, rushed over and threw herself on him, from another side.

“Who is this?”

Ye Feng only got the time to shout loudly frantically, and suddenly he felt a sudden burst of fragrance in his nostrils, and the next moment his whole body heavily fell to the ground.

A feel of the soft touch but full of elasticity spread all over his body. This aromatic body, wasn't this the body of Long Waner?

Surprisingly, he was thrown to the ground by her!

The ray of light of the bright pearl of night was too hazy, and it was extremely difficult to see anything clearly, but still he could feel that the situation she was in currently, was very bad, actually her whole body was burning hot, disheveled, being short of breath as if she was about to throw up. Moreover, it seemed like the efficacy of the drug had already erupted, and because of that, she was burning with that sort of lustful desire.

As her smooth, plentiful, pretty generous, tightly sticking out breasts, were closely pasted upon his body, that soft and smooth touch, had all of a sudden

made Ye Feng's little thing show the sign of erection!

Chapter 73 -> Pie in the sky

At this moment in time, the moon and the stars were sparsely scattered in the sky outside the world, whereas, mountain platform was flooded with several martial arts people, regardless of whether it was the group of the people of Dragon Clan, or the elder of God Fist Gate, or later approached the crazy male-female pair of Heavenly Sword Palace and Huang Lao, all were badly keyed up, the so-called anxious expression had clouded all over their faces.

Previously met, that round-faced woman, who was dressed in a black robe, stained with fresh blood here and there, was trying to say something with a very mournful and distressing looking face.

“Wearing a mask, and holding a red sword, that man appeared out of nowhere! And awfully slaughtered Li Junlong along with Zhu Bainiao , moreover, the Telepathic grass was also taken away by him!”

“Wearing a mask?”

Almost at the same time, some people suddenly recalled the incident which had taken place during the dusk, when holding under duress Long Wan'er in his bosom, that young guy passed through this platform, right in front of their eyes. The gazes of almost all the individuals of Dragon Clan shifted directly towards Dragon Clan's one person.

Clad in a white gown, Long Mo'ran's inner qi suddenly started shaking with anger.

Actually, today he wanted to buy that Telepathic grass, as a birthday gift for

Long Wan'er. He had never imagined that the Telepathic grass had long been taken away by the same masked man, making him as futile as carrying water in a bamboo basket!

Not only that, as he was pursuing the masked man carrying his daughter, Long Wan'er, he suddenly arrived at a towering overhanging cliff, and when he leaned forward to have a look downward, then he noticed that the entire region was wrapped by the fog and winds, making the appearance of the bottom totally invisible.

That guy, he wouldn't have jumped off the cliff holding Long Wan'er, would he? The mere thought that his daughter was trapped in a very dangerous situation, was making Long Mo'ran precipitate, he was getting intolerably anxious, but there was no way out.

"The current situation is this, both of my disciples, Luo Li and Luo Lei haven't come back yet, Long Mo'ran, that handsome young guy of your Clan hasn't also returned yet, has he?"

The elder of God Fist Gate solemnly asked that, long before he used a satirical tone while talking to Long Mo'ran, but currently, he was totally out of his mood to launch a satire again.

Not only coming to here didn't result in any profit, but the Telepathic grass was also stolen away, moreover, the traces of two young people of his Clan had completely disappeared, most likely they might have encountered a violent treachery. To sum up, Long Mo'ran, had not only suffered a huge financial loss, but also had lost two children of his clan, hence he was under such a tremendous pressure where he could upside-down the entire soldiers, completely, to find them.

Of course, compared to Dragon Clan's situation, God Fist Gate was in a better situation.

Not Only Dragon Clan's Long Xian was fraught with grim possibilities, but also the most talented person of Dragon Clan's younger generation, Long Wan'er was seized as a hostage, and seemingly was drugged as well. Such a long time had rolled on, but there was not the slightest bit of any news of them, what might have happened to them was quite obvious.

So far as the martial artists of these two school of martial arts were concerned, since they gloated over the misfortunes of others, they departed from this world silently.

The complexion of Long Mo'ran had paled down, if that masked man reappeared before him, he surely would bring into action his Clan's most exquisite swordsman, to kill and behead him at once, just like he did 20 years ago, when he got the master of Ye Clan, beheaded to death!

"Report this to the head of the house, that we couldn't find Young lady!"

Soon, the master of Dragon Clan hurried back, and while sweating profusely, he said.

"Continue searching for them!"

Long Mo'ran waved his hand instructing them, his white gown was floating under the moonlight, however gloominess had taken over his mood. Today, until he got success in finding out some trails of his daughter along with that masked

man on this mountain, he would never leave this place.

“Roger.”

While on the other hand, on one gloomy side of the mountain platform, Heavenly Sword Palace’s crazy pair, that man and woman looked at each other, and exchanged a sinister smile.

They thought that they arrived a bit late here, when drugged Long Wan’er was already captured as hostage unexpectedly, and the people of Long Clan were turned out to very incompetent as well. However, such an attractive young girl was taken hold by the so-called masked man, it was really unfortunate

Certainly, the man of Heavenly Sword Palace wouldn’t care whether he stood out first or what would be his reward, so long as he could have enjoyment out of this, he would never consider this trip went in vain.

They didn’t say anything, just looked at closely standing Huang Lao, then they jumped a step and left the place. They vowed not to rest until they would find Long Wan’er. Also, they didn’t say anything about the Telepathic grass at this time, however, regarding the Gold Leaf Grass from the previous time, they must demand interest for it, later !

By squinting his eyes, Huang Lao looked at the eyes of those two people, and groaned lightly, then he also moved sideways to depart.

It wasn’t like he was looking for Long Wan’er, instead it was that Masked man who had stirred his interest, he just wanted to find traces of that man.

“If the guess is correct, this person not only killed the greedy and corrupt Wolf

Sword, but also the two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate. Moreover, his courage didn't stop here, he also removed Hidden Immortal Faction's Li Junlong from his way, and captured under duress Long wan'er as a hostage, his courage and wisdom are incredibly strong! What a pity, I didn't get the chance to receive him as my apprentice.....”

Silhouette of the mountain platform all of a sudden became sparse, under the moonlight glory, the deathly paled facial expression of Cuckoo was appearing.

Since Li Junlong died, would she return to her school 'Hidden Immortal Faction' to explain things regarding his death and so on?

He was one of the disciples in Hidden Immortal School who used to give training of Hidden Weapon Technique to the younger generation! Until now, her brain was unceasingly contaminated with Li Junlong's flying head scene, as well as the sneering face of that masked man present at the scene, was also haunting her continuously

.....

Outside this tensed and gloomy atmosphere, a matchless and exquisite scene was going on inside the tomb.

Outside the tomb, Long Wan'er threw a kick at Ye Feng and quickly snatched away the map. However, because of that, all of a sudden the efficacy within her body erupted thoroughly, and made her completely incapable of suppressing it again. She tried resisting it, and with the help of the map, she arrived near the most conspicuous underground lake. But finally the time arrived when she completely failed to hold it anymore, her consciousness had also started getting more and more fuzzier, and her lustful desire was burning like a fire.

During that moment, she saw Ye Feng appeared, could she still endure it anymore? Instead, all of a sudden she rushed and threw herself on him.

“Damn!”

Thunderstruck, Ye Feng was lying on the ground staring foolishly, since he was knocked down on the ground heavily by Long Wan’er, his resistance wasn’t working at all.

In a very short period of time, she had actually reached a decade of Cultivation. Even after absorbing Hair Ornamental Blue Spirit Grass, Ye Feng’s Cultivation had reached just four years, literally after doubling it, it would still hit only eight years.

To compare the strength between them, still the difference was quite a noticeable point!

Under the dim white light of the legendary luminous pearl, her soft and smooth silk dress slowly slipped from her body, making her snow white skin like porcelain, visible to him, which suddenly jolted out his heart and soul, and mesmerized him under the supple halo, as if it was the world’s most exquisite and wonderful art.

Although Ye Feng previously had accidentally experienced her breathtaking amusing beauty, but probably it had so intensely stimulated his feelings now than the previous time. Her body seemed like exuding bright light like moonlight’s brightness, Ye Feng immediately felt that his blood suddenly rushed upward towards his brain, and his brain started releasing heat.

Even if he wanted to resist, now the girl would not agree!

“Don’t move I want to”

She pressed her white hand on his chest roughly, her pair of beautiful eyes were getting blurred, she lowered her face and tore apart his cloth, and threw it to one side.

Under this kind of circumstance, if Ye Feng would really want to resist, then it would be possible only by killing her. Regretfully, he couldn’t do such a thing. A proverb rightly said, ‘flowers worthy to be folded straight off, if not treated well, it would result in blossomless and empty branches. If a man was a real man, then how could he be loathsome?

Consequently, Ye Feng gave up in his heart, and extended both hands out

Within the lake, silently swimming fishes, unwillingly stirring the inverted reflection of both of them every now and then, as if they were embellishing the general appearance of the paradise.

That young girl’s long and beautiful hair was hanging down gently, accompanied with a pure and delicate fragrance, lingering around the side of Ye Feng’s face.

“Damn!”

At such a critical moment, Ye Feng suddenly uttered that.

The voice, although very destructive to the current atmosphere, but Ye Feng couldn't help but shout out, as he had really no other way to control that.

He was so intensely shocked, as if he got pierced deeply through his inner feelings, so he uttered this sound.

Because when these two people were really intimately close to each other, he finally detected that the constitution of Miss Dragon was actually extremely rare to be seen in the World of the Immortals, and it was called "the body of immortal arteries"!

Pick up the treasure!

Or to send her back home!

Has anyone seen 'Pie in the sky'? This is it!

Her special constitution, the existence of such a physical constitution was extremely rare to be seen in the World of the Immortals, he had never expected that he could see such thing right here on Earth!

Chapter 74 -> The body of immortal arteries

In the World of the Immortals, regardless of whether it was the head of the Immortal School, or the Elder of the devil realm, most of them had more than one woman. As a matter of fact, it was neither to manifest their authorities, nor to attain their certain demands, rather it was because there in the World of the Immortals, there were many rare special physiques, which were of great benefits for the Cultivation practices.

For instance, the body of the immortal arteries, which is considered as one of the leading special physiques in the World of the Immortals, not only excels at pacifying the speed of its own master far more than the ordinary people, but along with its master, it also gives advantage to her husband, by boosting up his practicing speed.

The woman gifted with the body of immortal arteries, normally possesses smooth and flexible meridians, with several hidden acupuncture points, which are far more than an average person's acupuncture points. These acupuncture points have the tendency to naturally start storing up the divine and spiritual energy right after her birth, and the moment that woman starts practicing, these acupuncture points automatically open up, releasing and letting this divine and spiritual energy fall directly into her Dantian, which later on follows by a sudden enhancement of her Cultivation, even more than ten years, at just one fell swoop!

This process is called "Open Holes."

In the World of the Immortals, only the incredibly powerful man had the capability to take hold of such woman as his wife, otherwise, he might be defeated by that powerful woman, and could also be killed as well. Even more,

his whole family could be extinguished, till his nine generations! Also, these females, possessing such body of immortal arteries, were themselves very powerful, with a high level of cultivation, almost at the similar level just like her strength, so there was not a single man who could subdue her.

“One, two, three, four, five, six and seven, surprisingly there are seven hidden acupuncture points in her body, the body of immortal arteries with seven points, amazing! Maximum Nine points are normally considered as the highest number of acupuncture points!”

Ye Feng counted it down, and was overjoyed at the turn of the events, since it was a very pleasant and delightful surprise for him.

Seven hidden acupuncture points, it seemed like if she began practising her Immortal Cultivation Technique, then it would promote her practice speed by 70%, which was immensely higher than a common person’s ability, and was certainly enough for anyone to turn into a big shot or an Elder in the World of the Immortals!

Unfortunately, there was no one on the Earth with such eyes, who could see this type of body with immortal arteries. Seemingly, Long Wan’er had not gone through this “Open Hole” process, and her Cultivation was still in the sealed state. What a waste of such body!

Presently, Ye Feng’s heart was unusually intertwined.

As he could feel several hidden acupuncture points in her body, which had been storing up massive divine and spiritual energy since her birth. Considering the fact that if she would be currently twenty years old, then her these seven hidden acupuncture points might have collected a great amount of spiritual

energy by now, which would be more than enough to let her Cultivation take a sudden leap of fourteen years in a blow, which was really quite a terrific figure!

If some day she would start practising Immortal Cultivation technique, then she could very easily absorb all of this divine and spiritual energy, which had been getting stored since long ago, and this in return would let her Cultivation enhance enormously in a noticeably short period of time.

However at present, the situation Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were trapped in, was in a way quite favorable for him, since he could also easily absorb her spiritual energy for his own purpose, to let his Cultivation hit a full eighteen years, in just one move, to become a dap hand!

Because, these two individuals were currently having the most intimate relationship

How about, take hold of her body and suck in all of her spiritual energy present within her body, then run away and forget about her including this incident?

Ye Feng was perplexed because, if all of a sudden all of her body's divine and spiritual energy got extinct, then certainly she wouldn't survive any longer, very soon she would die. Even if it would be a matter of absorbing just three to five years of the spiritual energy, it would also damage her meridians awfully, letting her seriously injured, and consequently she could no longer practice throughout her life.

The attraction of suddenly achieving a gigantic rise in his level of Cultivation, but this was actually a dilemma of choice.

Though, Ye Feng was not a good man, but was not a wicked person as well.

Although Long Wan'er had been opposing him everywhere since beginning, but by placing himself in her shoes, he could clearly realize that in fact, she wasn't much at fault, all this happened mostly because of the spontaneous misunderstandings.

For attaining a great strength, could he drag her to death?

In the current relationship between these two people, Ye Feng really was not being able to get down his hand, no matter how, but at present Long Wan'er was more like his woman.

“Such being the case, in the end, I should be thoroughly responsible for everything. Moreover, this woman, possessing the body of immortal arteries, is my woman now, I am in gain in a big way, right? Why should I sway by personal gains and losses?”

In fact, Ye Feng's heart had already made a decision, when he confronted this situation, he easily considered Long Wan'er as his woman, otherwise on the basis of his personality, how possibly he could think whether he should show tender affection towards her or not, but could he discard this golden opportunity of promoting his Cultivation?

Since she was his woman now, he certainly would not hurt her. If she was destined to be his, then there would be ample time at his hand, meanwhile he would also try to lift these misunderstandings by then, then he could have plenty of time and opportunities to absorb her divine and spiritual energy.

But for now, Ye Feng temporarily couldn't let the opposite party know his real identity.

By the way, what kind of relationship existed between Dragon Clan and Ye Clan? This relationship would be definitely awful, since Dragon Clan was responsible for the destruction of Ye Clan, otherwise Ye Wentian would not have solemnly warned him like that.

As of now, he could only wait for the propitious time, then only he could make her know the fact.

After figuring out everything thoroughly, Ye Feng tuned a little bit unscrupulous, by stroking her delicate white skin, he slowly turned over his body to press her under him. Meanwhile, silently he raked out the divine and spiritual energy present within her body in her hidden acupuncture points, and slowly started absorbing it.

If she would not have run into Ye Feng, then her this spiritual energy would never have been found ever by anyone on the earth. If Ye Feng absorbed an year of her energy to upgrade his own Cultivation, it wouldn't definitely be a big deal. Moreover, absorbing little bit of her spiritual energy, wouldn't cause any injury to her body.

"If there were not so many factors like family existed, then....."

Ye Feng's heart sighed a bit, as he was thinking that, if these two people would stay together, every day and night, around 10-15 days in a row, then in that case, he would definitely be able to safely absorb her spiritual energy, to promote his Cultivation to the level of 18 years.

As far as Long Wan'er's Cultivation was concerned, he didn't know whether it was feasible or not, as he knew already that the people of this planet 'Earth' didn't possess Dan in their Dantian.

Could it be possible that his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring could produce Core Dan for others as well?

Ye Feng hadn't tested it yet, also he wouldn't dare to rashly examine it on the body of Long Wan'er.

At this moment, like a beautiful panther, Long Wan'er was struggling, was looking lively and elegant, and exquisitely was swaying her body from side to side under Ye Feng's body, as if she was nicely coordinating with his movement naturally.

Embracing her smooth, delicate and exquisite body, Ye Feng actually didn't dare to be too substantial, as he was afraid he might hurt her and cause severe pain to her body. But in fact, in comparison to him, Long Wan'er was more enthusiastic, she had no idea from where did those two guys of God Fist Gate bring that drug, which was really immensely strong.

Soon her enthusiasm infected Ye Feng, but her eyes were shedding a few tears, making Ye Feng slightly distressed. Although she was subconscious but perhaps she still knew about the current situation and was desperately resisting, but unfortunately she wasn't able to nullify the function of efficacy.

Four years and six months

Four years and nine months

Constantly they were moving their smooth statures cleanly and mutually, as Ye Feng was continuously absorbing the divine and spiritual energy of the opposite party, and gradually concealing it in his own hidden acupuncture points, letting his Cultivation grow slowly.

After a long time, as soon as this young girl's passion and enthusiasm calmed down, the fervour of bund ashore extinguished finally, letting the atmosphere tranquil and undisturbed.

At this time, Ye Feng reached a five-year of Cultivation, finally!

Now, whether it was diversionary technique Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, or Zhenqi sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, all had become quite handy for him and he could use them proficiently now. He would be fully able now to battle with those martial arts practitioners possessing a decade of Cultivation!

He had a feeling that even if he encountered those two people of Heavenly Sword Palace, it appeared like he could although with a bit of difficulty, but stand against them relying on his current strength.

Of course, he still accepted that if he would run into that sort of high ranked people like Huang Lao or Long Mo'ran, he would definitely be not the match for these two fellows. The former had 30 years of Cultivation, while Long Mo'ran was the head of the Dragon Clan. Was it really so easy to deal with them? Not to mention about Ye Wentian, that old monster was at unfathomable level, hence, Ye Feng didn't need to think about him yet.

At this moment, Long Wan'er was sleeping deeply and quietly, as her tears were hanging on her delicate face, and was looking extremely delicate, as if was

arousing people's pity.

After being absorbed an year of Cultivation, although she was not injured, but was somewhat unavoidably tired. Ye Feng tried to fix up her cloth by finding her layers of clothing, very awkwardly he helped her put on cloth, by avoiding touching her smooth white skin, but his heart was still feeling hot.

“This girl, when she will wake up, she will not take things too hard to commit suicide, will she? Or will she try to kill me first, and then she would commit suicide?”

Ye Feng grew more and more tensed, that he must have to think of a way, to certainly take hold of Long Wan'er, when she would be completely in a stabilised condition.

Chapter 75 -> The young girl wakes up

Faint and hazy white light gradually streamed into the eyes.

When Long Wan'er woke up and opened her pair of beautiful eyes, she found her upper half of the body was resting against the wall, on the soft vine. She then noticed that there was no one around, which really startled her and she remained staring blankly.

What might have happened?

Immediately a burst of pain one after another hit her heavily, making her finally recall everything, and in a split second her complexion turned pale and her shoulders shuddered.

What did she do?

Snatched a map, fled into the ancient tomb, the efficacy erupted, caught a person —

It was that masked man!

She finally vaguely remembered the series of events that had happened before!

She couldn't bring herself to accept it for a while, she rolled up her delicate and charming body, and squatted down in the corner, and started shedding tears. Under the dim white light of the legendary bright pearl, which was peeking

from inside the lake's bottom, her solitary silhouette was appearing helpless as if it was provoking people to feel pity for her again.

At this time, she saw a neatly arranged thing around her.

A map, as if some words had been written on the back of it, unexpectedly it had not been taken away.

She stretched out her trembling snow white hands, turned over the map of that ancient tomb, and saw a row of some ugly handwriting, the writing style was too shoddy.

“You are mine. Want to kill me? Then just get out of here alive.”

In order to prevent her from committing suicide, Ye Feng left behind this note written by him, although his words were too bad and were looking quite ugly, but nothing could be done.

At this point of time, he was quietly hiding in the side, while consolidating his Cultivation, he constantly kept a keen eye on her. The moment he would notice that she was going to commit suicide or any other similar signs, he would instantly rush out to prevent her.

If not, then her leaving this place safely, would be the best thing for him.

If by any chance the eyes of these two people fell at each other now, then unchangeably they would stand up to fight with each other. Although, Ye Feng had upgraded his Cultivation with her help, but still he wasn't at all interested to stake his life together with his own woman, now, in this fight of life and death.

So far as the map of the tomb was concerned, Ye Feng had already taken advantage of her deep slumber, and had jotted down everything in his heart firmly. Also, leaving behind the map to her wouldn't be risky anyhow, since it wasn't related to her.

“Kill you, is killing you going to be useful

Long Wan'er softly whispered: “But, letting you go, would also be not good.”

By embracing her knees, she slowly curled up against the nearby wall covered by soft vine, with a trace of dull and lifeless eyes. This matter had really caused a terrific blow on her, no matter who had changed her life, it wasn't easy for her to brisk out of this tomb, normally.

Without being in a hurry, unworriedly, Ye Feng was patiently waiting, from one side.

He was just waiting patiently for her to leave this ancient tomb safely, as he believed that outside her father would be certainly searching for her crazily all over the mountains and the plains; there she wouldn't get the opportunity to commit suicide. Moreover, he also had to stay in this tomb little longer, to find even a little trace of his master, Su Feiying.

It goes without saying that Ye Feng was little dependent on his beautiful female master. Currently, he was thinking that if by any chance, his master would also be here, then to attain a hundred years of Cultivation, wouldn't be a joke, and there wouldn't be so much trouble.

“Depending on others, what kind of man I am!”

Ye Feng smiled as if he self-ridiculed himself, and shook his head, as he clearly knew that men always want to be successful, and for that, the key is to rely on yourself. Naturally, this didn't affect and bring down his enthusiasm to find Su Feiying. No matter how, but she was the only one who was the closest person to him.

Long Wan'er squatted down against the wall for a long time, completely motionless. Through the white light, Ye Feng could only see her earnestly buried in tears, with slightly trembling shoulders, that was an incomparably sad appearance.

She kept on sobbing like that around half an hour, and then suddenly she raised her head: “Won't you come out?”

Her melodious voice just like an oriole echoed everywhere, it was still as pleasant to listen as before, but actually it had taken a little delicacy, even more than that, it had become deeply touching.

Her voice suddenly jolted his heart and startled him, had she already noticed?

“No, it can't be possible, she is just trying to trick me. Since, she doesn't possess Immortal Cultivation, moreover she has just a decade of cultivation, hence she can never use the Immortal technique “Soul Search” to feel his presence.”

Ye Feng soon understood that this was just a clever strategy of her to drag him out, therefore, he decided to restrain from any movement.

“I can feel you, you’re out in the vicinity, Just come out, come out in front of me!”

She said that as she crying, her voice was full of sadness and pain, she was still in a crouched posture and was continuously weeping, but this time her shoulders were quivering even more.

Ye Feng still didn’t move.

“Bastard! Shameless guy! Don’t you ever let me see your face again!”

She herself tried to wander around and look for him, but apparently she wasn’t able to find any traces of him, after searching for him for next half an hour, at last, she became a little tired. By this time she saw a black packet placed next to that map, she hit opened it, and to her surprise, she found that unexpectedly there was something to eat.

Chocolates, dried beef, and some other high-calorie foods were there that could quickly add physical strength.

She was a bit hungry, hence, she opened the packet, and without any hesitation started eating them directly. Although she had gone through such a situation, still she was not least bit afraid of the thought that this thing might have been drugged or something like before.

Ye Feng was watching everything from one side, the way she was voraciously devouring them, was appearing little funny to him, but he couldn’t laugh loudly, or else he could be caught. Even if he would try to make a little movement, then

based on her level of Cultivation, she could certainly easily feel his presence.

There weren't lots of food stuff, but they were still sufficient for her to satisfy her appetite completely. After finished eating, she felt a little thirsty, so she looked up and saw that there was a puddle of clear lake water.

The underground lake was not a stagnant water, rather it was connected with the outside world, therefore, not only it had maintained a quite pure and limpid water, but also there were several swimming fishes in it.

However, she shook her head, this was the centre of the entire ancient tomb, and even more, there was the central tomb chamber in the centre of this lake. Therefore, it could be assumed that the atmosphere of the water had the touch of that deceased person's presence, then how could it be considered as pure. Hence, she didn't want to drink it.

Although it was undrinkable, but it could be considered as perfect for taking a bath, there wouldn't be any problem in it.

She floated up and softly arrived at the edge of the lake, clad in a white dress, her alluring beautiful stature was resembling an image of a pretty fairy, the tear stains on her face were complimenting her beauty, and were adding more delicacy on her face and brightening it up, also was making her incredibly more attractive than usual.

She looked at the lake, and noticed that the water was reflecting her charming and pretty appearance, her supple long beautiful hair was hanging down, and was appearing somewhat haggard.

“Hey, if you won’t show up, then I’ll die for you, look!”

Her slim stature moved and she gracefully stood at the edge of the lake, and sized up all around, while being extremely vigilant and quite ready to act momentarily.

Unfortunately, the entire periphery was empty, in addition to her voice, no other voice was there coming out from anywhere. Only the fishes, who were occasionally taking a rapid turn in the lake water, and causing little water splashes, were producing soft sound, which was quite agile and penetrating.

After waiting for a long time, she was finally convinced that there was really no one around. That scoundrel, who had taken hold of her by force, had certainly departed after finishing his business here.

“Hmmmm, to the ends of the earth, right? Lets see how far you can go.”

She groaned softly, there was clearly a touch of hatred in her expression, but also had a kind of different flavor inside. After feeling relieved, she was no longer hesitant, she thought to consider this matter as a nightmare which had already passed. She was feeling disgusted, therefore, she wanted to take a bath and wash her body cleanly.

Her slender white hands untied the snow white long skirt wrapped around her waist, as she thought that this dress quite probably didn’t seem right, how did she wear such a strange cloth?

Of course, she didn’t remember that all of her clothes were taken off at that time, and this was Ye Feng who helped her by clumsily wrapping around such

cloth on her body. Ye Feng was just a novice, then how could he be good at helping women in wearing clothes properly? Obviously, it was little strange for her.

Then slowly she slid down her snow-white dress, once again Ye Feng's eyes fell at that sight, her snow white, delicate, charming body, which had already hit his mind hardly, had made his heart all fiery once again.

“Damn it, isn't this seducing me?”

He thought that just in order to avoid any death at such a crucial moment, he had been holding back for quite a long time. Now, was it important for this girl to actually take a bath here openly like this!

He couldn't help but recall the moment that happened not so long ago, when the other side was with him together in a very intimate pose

No matter how badly his little friend chinned up and turned excited, but at this critical moment, he could only do just one thing, and that was complete endurance and control.

Or else, if he failed to control and jumped out, then, as per her personality and character, she would certainly not compromise, and consequently the two sides would start fighting, that was certainly going to happen with one hundred percent guarantee!

Chapter 76 Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique

When the whole body of Long Wan'er completely soaked in the cold water of the lake, she then finally felt relaxed and breathed a sigh of relief.

After taking bath cleanly, she had to leave this place, but her mind was completely focussed on the whereabouts of the Masked man

Just the mere thought of this matter, was making her heart want to commit suicide, however, she didn't intend to die before seeing that man.

She heaved a sigh of relief, while on the other side, at this moment, Ye Feng was actually diving into the abyss of suffering.

When Long Wan'er's snow white long skirt slipped down, and immediately after that she untied her pink colored cloth from around her chest, then a pair of her huge, tight and sticking out breasts dazzled in front of Ye Feng's eyes, and her white and shiny piece swayed his emotions, making him all heat up.

It goes without saying that her figure was totally of high standard, but she usually liked to wear quite loose skirts, and the reason behind it was not known. Besides, she was one of the petite body type, who couldn't be compared with those tall and huge urban women from some magazine covers.

"If she could practice Immortal Cultivation Technique "Open Hole", then this practice could have removed impurities from her entire body, leaving behind a relatively much more beautiful skin and body, and would have made her more attractive and beautiful, but unfortunately"

Ye Feng thought that, but he didn't want to take any risk in this critical situation, by teaching her Immortal Cultivation Technique.

Moreover, Long Wan'er was one of the members of Dragon Clan of this Martial arts world. And not by any means, Ye Feng could completely trust her. If he would try teaching her this Immortal technique, and this would come in the knowledge of Dragon Clan, then who knew what would be its consequences?

Most importantly, this was his biggest secret in this world, it would never be known to others, unless it was a truly trusted person or a close relative of him.

At least for now, Long Wan'er was in a hostile relationship with him

Constantly hearing the sound of the water splash, was causing severe pain in Ye Feng's heart feel, and his overflowing emotions were unceasingly tormenting him, for around half an hour he didn't even open his eyes so that he couldn't see her bathing. Wasn't that incomparably painful to just keep watching but couldn't do anything? Rather it would be better not to see anything.

Truly speaking, Ye Feng was such a pure guy, there was a beautiful girl bathing in front of his eyes, but he wasn't looking at her bathing. Suddenly, a thought popped up in his mind, and he started thinking of that incident when he just arrived in this world, and got caught in a misunderstanding with Su Menghan, regarding that 'peeking while bathing thing'. This thought brought smile on his face.

In fact now, he was thinking about the school's beauty, Su Menghan, and was feeling somewhat puzzled in his heart.

“It seems like this boy’s previous thoughts are still inside his mind and are probably influencing me

(Lastvoice : here ‘this boy’ means Ye Feng of the earth, whose body is under possession.)

He was helplessly thinking about these things.

He grew up in the World of the Immortals, and since childhood he had been seeing that the strong personalities of his world, used to follow polygamy, like they used to have three wives and four mistresses, and that was considered as quite a natural thing. Even more, women were also allowed to look for a few good men suitable for them, and what more intriguing was, it was not at all treated as something wrong and abnormal.

But this fellow, whom the current Ye Feng had taken possession of, was grown up and had accepted the modern education of this world, on the basis of that he was a huge supporter of monogamy. This belief of Ye Feng of this world was also affecting the current Ye Feng, making his heart indistinctly feel sorry for Su Menghan.

But no matter what happened, he could never leave Long Wan’er! To put it like this, she was more like his first woman, before and after his rebirth.

Moreover, Long Wan’er had the body of immortal arteries.....

Until the water splashing sound gradually stopped, Ye Feng didn’t open his eyes, but after sometime he heard a rustling sound of clothes, as if Long Wan’er had finished bathing and started wearing clothes.

But after a short moment, Ye Feng heard a sound of something being torn “rips”!

His heart jumped a beat, he quickly raised his head and saw her already completely dressed, but she was appearing quite unhappy. She ripped off the tomb’s map into pieces and threw them on the ground, they were all scattered on the ground as if the snowflakes were spread everywhere.

“Don’t just go away like this.”

Her tone made it seemed like she said that in a fit of pique, she then turned back and moved towards the lake, and looked at the clear lake water. This lake was connected with the outside world, and if she chose the underwater route to exit, then she wouldn’t need any map. Probably, this thought was running in her mind, to get out of this place from the bottom of the lake!

When Ye Feng looked at her eyes, he quickly guessed that what was going on in her mind currently, he immediately understood that this underground secret passage was far from a good option for them to exit.

Even Zhu Bainiao didn’t know that where the passage of this underground lake would exactly end! In case the journey would be very long, then to hold breath for a longer period of time wouldn’t be possible, in that situation what could be done?

This thought suddenly brought a panic-stricken look on his face, he thought that Long Wan’er must not be foolishly trying to die in this lake!

But before he could make any response, Long Wan’er had already taken a deep

breath, and then “Plop” she jumped into the lake, and her beautiful figure vanished all of a sudden!

“You Bitch!”

Ye Feng cursed loudly, and hastily ran out from the hidden place, so as to catch up with her quickly.

But at this moment, he suddenly saw an exceptionally familiar design drawn on the wall of the ancient tomb. This sight deeply jolted his heart out from inside, and he immediately stopped his footsteps.

A pattern like a unique seven-pointed star appeared in his eyes, it looked like it had been engraved not so long before.

“Star Tomb School mark”. It must be her!”

Suddenly he turned extremely ecstatic!

Once there was ‘Star Tomb School’ in the World of the Immortals, and Su Feiying together with Ye Feng belonged to this school. However, long ago this school collapsed since everyone left this school, except these two people. Therefore, starting from his childhood, Su Feiying had been teaching him how to draw the mark of the Star Tomb School.

Seven-pointed star mark was not something which could be seen everywhere, if it was not Su Feiying who might have come here and marked this, then, how could it be a coincidence?

However, currently, where was Su Feiying?

Was she still in this ancient tomb?

When somewhat anxiously Ye Feng was fully occupied with his thoughts, exactly then he suddenly felt a little sign of vibration, the ground and the walls of the tomb were shaking.

“Is it an illusion?”

Ye Feng raised up his head, and something came before his sight which thunderstruck him: “Not good, the tomb is going to collapse!”

Bang!

The sound of the monolith heavily falling to the ground, passed from the distant path leading to the tomb, simultaneously debris containing dust and soil began to fall from above Ye Feng’s head, and in a blink of an eye, the entire space gradually started vibrating.

“Don’t tell me that

Ye Feng hastily ran towards the underground lake, to look towards the lake bottom, and just like what he had expected!

That girl, Long Wan’er, had actually taken away the legendary luminous pearl, which was embedded in the bottom of the lake, and was swimming rapidly

towards a nearby lake bottom passage.

Since that luminous Pearl was removed, so the entire ancient tomb might collapse any moment!

Zhu Bainiao knew this from beginning, but because of this reason he had not stolen that fist-sized luminous pearl, otherwise if the value of the brightness of this pearl would be compared with all of the antiques of this tomb which he had swept away, then surprisingly one must know that it was incredibly higher than collective value all of them.

However, Long Wan'er didn't have any scruples, fearlessly she took away that legendary luminous pearl from the lake's bottom. By the way, for her, it could also be used to illuminate the bottom passage of the lake ahead.

Perhaps she was thinking that after removing the pearl, if the tomb collapsed, and if the Masked man hadn't departed yet, then it would be better for him to be crushed to death in this way. Anyway, she was going through the bottom of the lake, and probably she might not survive, but she didn't care about it.....

“Immortal Technique – Dragon Turtle Holding Breath!”

Ye Feng now couldn't afford wasting time, he quickly cast out an Immortal Technique, and took a deep breath, in a flash, a massive amount of air entered in his back, ran through his several meridians, and got stored up there in his back!

His entire back skin turned somewhat swollen, bulky and hard, just like a tortoise shell in general, not only it stored up enough air to be used while breathing underwater, but that shape could also be used to accelerate his

swimming speed.

Five years of Cultivation, it was quite an appropriate stage where he could easily cast out this Immortal Technique, to store up air, which would be more than enough for him to remain underwater up to five hours.

This was the stunning effect of Immortal Technique.

Ye Feng believed that it was next to impossible for the martial arts of this world, to be so miraculous.

“Plop”, with this sound he promptly jumped into the water, since that luminous pearl was removed, so the entire space had become dark once again, numerous boulders were continuously crashing down, the entire ancient tomb of Shang Dynasty was close to its destruction at a breakneck speed.

However, Ye Feng wasn't thinking about that, rather he quickly swam to the bottom of the lake, and saw that there was really a lake full of water passages, leading to the distant places. Long Wan'er's figure, against the light of that legendary luminous pearl, was appearing very mesmerizing. She had already gone very far, the ray of the legendary luminous pearl, through the icy-cold lake water, was appearing dim and weak.

Chapter 77 Crisis arrives

In the icy-cold lake water, with a swollen and bulky back, Ye Feng's streamlined shape was helping him easily cut open the flow of the water to move ahead swiftly. Just like a swimming fish, he also moved through the water.

In the dim light coming from ahead, Ye Feng was getting more and more close to Long Wan'er, he could even see the pretty attractive figure of her now in this clear water, although her speed was way too inferior to his speed, but was equally flexible, and advancing rapidly.

However, the bottom of the lake had nothing but water, basically, there was no place like little ventilation, to take a breath. They were moving along the passage, which was very zigzag and circuitous, with lots of twists and turns, who knew how long it would be.

By holding her breath, Long Wan'er was swiftly advancing, it would be quite difficult even for the experts of the martial arts world, to stick holding the breath to the very end.

Just after a short swim, Ye Feng heard a sound coming from behind, like a roaring thunder. It was the sign that the entire tomb had thoroughly collapsed. On the basis of the current of water, it could be easily guessed that the entire underground lake was almost filled up by the megalith detritus now.

If Su Feiying was inside, then

Ye Feng turned a bit worried.

Although Su Feiying had a hundred years of Cultivation, and by using Immortal Thunder Technique, she could easily blast out the entire mountain. Such a mighty destruction happened just now, which had completely engulfed the entire tomb, but still it wasn't able to even harm a single strand of her hair, let alone causing any threat to her.

He was afraid of the thought that if Su Feiying would have also gone through any accident, just like him, and might have lost her Cultivation, then

(Lastvoice : here, by 'accident' author means that 'rebirth thing' which had snatched away Ye Feng's Cultivation in the beginning of this novel.)

As this thought was running in his mind, he suddenly picked up his swimming speed and moved forward more swiftly. No matter what it would take, but safely taking Long Wan'er out of this lake first, and then come back again to look for his master, these were his prime two objectives as of now.

At this point of time, suddenly the pupil of Ye Feng contracted, because he felt that a dangerous shadow was speedily approaching towards them from ahead!

A gigantic dark shadow suddenly appeared in front of Long Wan'er, and under this faint light of the luminous pearl, an incomparably vicious canine teeth peeped out. It was a fierce, strange-looking and an equally big fish like a man, which was approaching towards her head, with a lightning fast speed, with an opened mouth to nip her head!

Quite apparently, Long Wan'er had also discovered that gigantic strange-looking fish was approaching, therefore, she quickly began concentrating her inner qi in her legs, and as soon as that strange fish came close to her, her snow-white legs threw two successive kicks, which heavily kicked in its lower jaw, and

threw it aside.

The situation was appearing pretty good, but then a light groaning sound passed into the ears of Ye Feng. Just like he expected, her feet would themselves suffer a severe jolt in return as an impact of those kicks.

This voice jolted his heart out, and he quickly moved forward, but unfortunately he couldn't cast out 'Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace' in the water, otherwise he didn't need to exhaust himself like this.

In the World of the Immortals, all kinds of vicious and voracious wild beasts were spread everywhere, some of them were formidable type, who used to feed on even those who were specialized with a hundred years of Cultivation, they were truly brutal!

Although he didn't know anything about this strange-looking fish, but he could see that its strength was quite tyrannical. If Long Wan'er would try fighting with it alone, then she would certainly end up in its stomach, all dead.

Ye Feng left her there and stopped a hundred meters away, since he couldn't go too close to her, he couldn't do anything but helplessly watch her fighting. Soon, the light of the glowing pearl began to mingle with a little bright red colored thing.

She was injured!

Her flexibility was already affected by her injuries and she was no longer agile, while on the other side, that ferocious strange fish had become increasingly fierce, it seemed by looking at its power that any moment, it would bite her into

several fragments, and then would swallow her completely.

“Beast, you are asking for your death now!”

Ye Feng shouted that loudly, and quickly started swimming towards Long Wan’er. Soon, he arrived close to her at such a crucial moment, and in a matter of seconds, he started condensing Zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, and the next moment a zhenqi condensed sharp sword flashed out in the water!

Just when that strange-looking fish was about to bite the head of Long Wan’er, exactly then an orange light flashed in the water, and divided the head of that Strange fish. Some jet-black colored blood of that strange fish proliferated in the water like the ink.

“Poisonous!”

Ye Eeng quickly shifted his gaze towards her, grabbed her around her waist, and hurriedly drag her away from that place very far. That luminous pearl, which was still there with her, was making her visible against its light, and was also highlighting several injuries of her, which were there on her arms and legs. Her soft and fragile body seemed like didn’t have any strength left.

“You.....”

The moment Long Wan’er saw the Masked man holding her, she couldn’t help but wide-open her beautiful eyes, and fiercely glared at him. As she opened her mouth to say something to him, suddenly a flow of water entered her mouth, and she started coughing up, since the icy-cold lake water had almost filled her mouth and lungs.

In such a desperate situation, someone really appeared unexpectedly to save her, and on top of that, he was that Masked man, for whom she had wished, not very long ago, to be cut to pieces. Just imagine, what kind of mood she would be having right now!

Although she wanted to kill him at any cost, and commit suicide after that, but at present, she didn't have the strength left to get into action.

"Don't speak anything, I'll take you out."

Ye Feng softly said that as he wrapped his arms around her already soaked soft and delicate body, and then together with her, he swiftly moved ahead in the water. All kind of fishes in several groups were swimming around them in the lake, but he never saw that kind of strange-looking fish again.

He recalled that just few minutes back, his sword, which always used to appear from his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, had unexpectedly turned orange from red? He speculated that this sword seemed to quickly revise itself according to the increasing level of his Cultivation. Might be it would be following a certain color-changing order, like from red to orange, then yellow, then green, blue, purple, and so on, did it mean the strength of the sword was also getting more and more big?

He didn't consider how long could it be used now, anyway, enhancement in the power of the Ancient Dragon Sword was obviously a good thing for him.

Few minutes later, Long Wan'er's cheeks turned red, and it appeared like she was unable to breathe easily.

Ye Feng had already sensed her condition, hence promptly with his single-hand, he pushed his mask upwards, exposed his mouth and nose, and without thinking much, he moved close to her, as he wanted to pass air through her mouth.

A pair of her beautiful eyes widened up all at once. Like a conditioned reflex she wanted to dodge, however, she didn't have enough time to act, and suddenly she felt her soft lips had been lightly kissed by Ye Feng, simultaneously, a flow of fresh air started crossing into her mouth, letting her finally breathe slowly.

The dark bottom underwater, the dim light of the glowing pearl, frightened swimming fishes, clumps of water plants continuously swinging.

In such a surrounding, these two people, who were tightly sticking together in this icy-cold water, were elegantly moving forward.

Very warm

Subconsciously, Long Wan'er outstretched her hands, and tightly grasped him, making both sides closer to each other.

Overwhelmed, Ye Feng's heart was filled with sorrow, in case Long Wan'er knew his true identity, then what would be her reaction? It was possible that she could accept the Masked man's identity as 'Mo Jiuge', but he was afraid that it was extremely difficult for her to accept the true identity 'Ye Feng', because there was a hostile relationship between Ye Clan and Dragon Clan, even more, there was an intense and deep-seated hatred between them as well.

Although just a short period of time had passed, but it seemed like they were so close to each other for quite a long time. Finally a blue light appeared in front of them from above, and was appearing incomparably profound and tranquil in the deep water.

Was it the starlight? Or the moonlight?

No matter what the light was, it was still a good sign, since that was at least one outlet.

Whish!

Embracing the fragrant soft body of Long Wan'er, Ye Feng finally came out from the water on the surface.

“Ahem” Coughed.

Impatiently, she separated herself from his embrace, while coughing strenuously.

Ye Feng didn't care, immediately he moved ahead and started observing the four surroundings, and found out that it was a deep pool of the mountain valley. There were towering cliffs on the three sides, and there was just one side leading to the outside, which was covered with overgrown weeds and tall trees. It looked like it was inaccessible and was appearing incomparably gloomy under the dim moonlight.

“Everything’s all right?”

Ye Feng lowered his head to look at her, and noticed that her whole body was drenched, a thin layer of cloth was wrapped around her body tightly, making her quite exquisite, her beautiful long hair was wet and hanging down on her creamy white skin. Such a mesmerizing scene was undoubtedly attracting Ye Feng very much!

Unfortunately, she didn’t stay in his bosom very long, very quickly she struggled to separate herself from his embrace, and hastily swam to the shore of the deep pool, and took a deep breath finally.

Ye Feng went along with her ahead, since he must help her in further processing, in order to draw her father Long Mo’ran here, then only he could secure his return to the tomb, to commence his search once again. But right at this moment, suddenly his complexion changed, not good!

“Jie Jie! Actually, they are here.”

A sepulchral voice suddenly burst out from the only entrance of the mountain valley, followed by two people wearing grey clothes and straw-hat. In a flash, they came to the front of the deep pool, through the woods. They were that crazy pair of the man and the woman from Heavenly Sword Palace!

Long Waner’s heart immediately sank down to the bottom of the valley.

Chapter 78 Do you understand Immortal Technique?

Ye Feng stepped his foot on the water shore, looked up and saw two people were standing under the stars, wearing grey clothes and straw hat, which suddenly startled him. In his previous strength estimation, he had assumed that perhaps he could barely cope up with one of them, but if they teamed up against him, then he was far from their match.

Wherein, the man, with a gloomy smile, stuck out his long red tongue and licked his lips, as he looked maliciously towards the head to toe soaked Long Wan'er. Quite apparently, he was looking at her as his prey.

“So, you're that Mo Jiuge It seems that you and Dragon Clan's Miss Long had a great time together, how about you add me in it?”

The man's eyes were similar to a poisonous snake in general, and was looking at Ye Feng with relish.

“Wouldn't it be better if you and I team up, and together play with this woman, what do you think about it?”

Ye Feng groaned lightly, as he arrived and stood in front of Long Wan'er, silently blocking the line of sight of the opposite party, and then he looked at those two people who were standing around thirty metres away.

Standing beside that man, was that woman, who was looking extremely seductive, clad in a straw hat and a grey clothes, although her attire was old-fashioned, but had a very hot body. An inch wisp of her flesh, which was peeping out occasionally, was quite tempting, like a seductively attractive woman.

“Actually, it’s pretty good.”

That man licked his lips, as his eyes flashed with a sinister look: “We four people can have an amusing game, and this game is probably going to be very interesting, however, its result is already determined

“Who are they?”

Ye Feng asked that from Long Wan’er In a whispering tone.

“The man is called Li Hua, and woman’s name is Hai Tang, together they are called “a happily married couple of swords” of the Heavenly Sword Palace honestly, we are not their opponents, let’s run away quickly!”

She said that earnestly, however, there was a touch of anxiousness in her voice.

“You can’t fly, where will you go then?”

Ye Feng looked around, the valley was encircled by precipitous mountain walls on the three sides, and the only way to exit was blocked by the other side. Unless he knew flying, or his agility was far better than the other side, otherwise, he had no other option left to escape. In a flash, he could burst out his speed by using ‘Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’ to escape, however, it was far inferior to that man, Li Hua’s speed!

Also, he didn’t have any idea why these two guys were called such names, did

Li Hua use to command Hai Tang?

“C’mon, boy, take off your pants, let me, your grandfather, make you a court eunuch, might be it would help you in a way to make a living.”

While saying that, Li Hua, with a cruel smile, slowly gripped the long tarpaulin which was wrapped behind his back. However, Ye Feng had a very clear idea that a long sword was wrapped in that long tarpaulin!

“

Ye Feng remained speechless, this guy seemed to be a big pervert, moreover, wasn’t that to a great extent? Imagine, if such a beautiful woman like Long Wan’er would ever fall in his hands, then what would happen to her? Apparently, the other side was being jealous. As the other side was expecting that in this given situation, if Ye Feng were not at Long Wan’er’s side, then everything would have been so smooth.

“Try thinking a way to inform your father to come over here as soon as possible, whether by making a phone call or sending a long distance voice notes. Till then, I will help you in stopping them.”

Without looking at Long Wan’er, Ye Feng said that to her, simultaneously he started condensing Zhenqi in his hand, and the next moment, an orange-coloured, Zhenqi condensed sword emerged out again!

His sword was three feet seven inches long, had a very simple shape, just like a galloping dragon!

Making a phone call? Long Wan'er was thinking that she had one cell phone, but just recently it was damaged after entering the water. Regarding sending a long distance voice notes, she hadn't attained that level of Cultivation yet.

When they saw an orange-coloured Zhenqi sword appeared in Ye Feng's hands, the three of them remained surprised for a moment. This was the first time Long Wan'er finally saw that where Ye Feng's sword was hidden!

"Let's go back, even if we are drowned to death, still it would be better than to die in their hands"

As Long Wan'er said that, she pulled his hand, since she wanted to go back together in the tomb.

What if they bump into other people, she was actually indifferent about it. Anyway, such a thing had happened, of course, they had to die one way or another, but before dying she wanted to drag Ye Feng with herself as a scapegoat. However, these two people Li Hua and Hai Tang were perverts, and before this situation, Long Wan'er didn't want to die! But now because of these two perverts, she was damn sure that even after her death, that man wouldn't let off her body

Therefore, she would rather return to the ancient tomb, even if it would completely collapse, and she would drown to death in the lake's bottom, or whatever, still it would be much better death than an insulted death by their hands.

"Just shut up, you have to live just the way you wanted to, just try to find the way to inform your father to come over this place!"

Ye Feng solemnly scolded her, she had such a magnificent body of immortal arteries, but had not the slightest bit of ambition left. Moreover after running into these two perverted people, she had now completely lost all hope and had given up on her life.

He raised his head, firmly gripped his Zhenqi sword while looking at that man and woman, Li Hua and Hai Tang, and then by turning back he suddenly burst out laughing: “Ha ha, Wan’er, don’t worry, your father has come

What? Long Mo’ran?

The complexion of those three people suddenly changed almost at the same time, and instantly they shifted their visions towards the entrance of the mountain valley. At first glance, all they saw was just the recently destroyed vegetation, where was the shadow of any human figure?

“Not good!”

Li Hua and Hai Tang quickly responded and hastily turned back.

Shua!

Li Hua quickly grasped his long sword in his hands, and held it horizontally at the top of his head, and blocked the sudden attack made by Ye Feng’s Zhenqi condensed long sword. Both of the Swords intersected with each other, under the bright shining stars.

However, unexpectedly Ye Feng’s sword wasn’t cut off, because this long simple-looking sword fell under the category of ‘Sharp Weapon Rank’!

“Jie Jie, this young guy is really treacherous, unexpectedly launched a sneak attack on us!”

(Lastvoice → Jie Jie is a term used by the author to show a way of cruel laughing.)

A gloomy smile crawled over Li Hua’s face, although he was seemingly relaxed, but few drops of sweat could be seen on his forehead. If he had responded even by half a beat slow, then Ye Feng’s sword would have beheaded him by now.

“Moron!”

From behind, when Long Wan’er saw Ye Feng had made a sneak attack, she scolded him loudly, this guy had merely five years of Cultivation, and had just a long and plain sword which was just at the weapon level rank, and with that did he intend to fight with Li Hua and Hai Tang, who were at terrific level of fifteen years of Cultivation?

Obviously, she had not the slightest bit of idea that Ye Feng’s five years of Cultivation was equal to a decade of Cultivation of this world, let alone this case, the gap was still not as huge as she had imagined

“You are crazy, I can’t accompany you, you stupid

She gritted her teeth as she said that, then she turned back and directly plunged into the deep pool of water. Since this thought was crazily running in her mind, that being drowned to death would be always relatively better than to be killed by the perverted opposite party. In her opinion, Ye Feng had already

entered into a complete face to face combat with the opposite party, hence, in no time he would be beheaded, and she didn't have the courage to see her man cut down into several sections, that would be such a horrifying scene

But before plunging into the deep pool, she hesitated a bit.

When she turned around and saw a heart-terrifying scene where Ye Feng was constantly trying to avoid the opposite party's sword attack, she couldn't endure it and her voice stuck in her throat.

"Speed is really fast"

After experiencing the first attack, Ye Feng was reluctantly trying to avoid opposite party's attack, his complexion had turned very calm and solemn, the instantaneous eruption speed of the opposite party was much stronger than his speed. Just now, he had barely avoided that sword which was almost about to cut off his head.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

He suddenly put to use this technique, one after another his faint blurred image started appearing and disappearing around them, and his velocity was incredibly fast.

"Too slow."

That seductive woman smiled, simultaneously clasped the hilt of her sword, which was wrapped in the tarpaulin hanging behind her back, and waved opened it. Immediately a sword emerged out. She then quickly waved her sword at the

place where the figure of Ye Feng had just appeared, in order to cut him down. Her swift and fierce sword's edge was similar to the figure of the god of death, in common!

Although there were numerous remnant shadows, but since her Cultivation was at a higher stage, her sensation was very keen relatively. She quickly saw the place where Ye Feng's true body was, and thus, she aimed her sword there to chop him down, in a single blow.

“Hey Stop!”

Watching from the edge of the deep pool of water, Long Wan'er eyes were shining with tears. Unconsciously, she seemed a bit disturbed since she wasn't able to bring herself accept this thought that “Mo Jiuge” would be killed like this. Although her innocence was slandered by him, but think carefully, this man was not like he couldn't be accepted

Hai Tang's corners of the mouth curled up, how could she stop? But the next moment, she remained totally thunderstruck, because she was almost sure that her sword had actually hit someone in the empty place!

Immortal Technique ‘Camouflage’!

Ye Feng, while being under the cast of ‘Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’, was constantly trying to baffle the other party, simultaneously he also activated ‘Camouflage’, making his body fade away, like a false remnant shade. Although he was unable to run, but had already succeeded in making the opposite party totally confuse and misinterpret.

“Do you understand Immortal Technique?”

The real Ye Feng’s ghost suddenly emerged out behind Hai Tang’s back, and by curling up his corners of the mouth, he raised his hand. Suddenly Zhenqi heavily rushed through his long sword, and the next moment, he waved his hand.

Bright-coloured blood instantly gushed out, as his double-edged sword pierced through her heart!

Chapter 79 Heavenly Sword Tornado

After reaching five years of cultivation, now Ye Feng could use 'Camouflage' technique up to his heart content, without any time limit, in order to confuse what others' naked eyes were seeing.

This technique is considered as just a small cheap trick in the World of the Immortals, because there, once an Immortal attains ten years of Cultivation, he gets the ability to use 'Soul Search' technique. He then doesn't need to rely on his naked eyes anymore, since he already becomes able to see through the illusion easily. However, the people of the Martial arts world don't have the capability to use Immortal Technique 'Soul Search', therefore, Ye Feng used 'Camouflage' as his next move!

In the twinkling of an eye, Ye Feng's sword assassinated the glamorous beautiful woman, Hai Tang, without showing any tender affection towards her. Now, the situation had turned out like this, if he didn't kill the opposite party, then the opposite party would undoubtedly erase him.

As Hai Tang wide opened her eyes, and turned around to look even a glimpse of that person who killed her, Ye Feng immediately kicked her in the ass, and she heavily fell to the ground, as her fresh blood streamed down her body and spread all over the ground. She died with a remaining grievance, her straw hat also rolled out far away from her head.

After all, Ye Feng had killed her, and suddenly felt more relaxed now. This kind of perverted wicked person used to live in the world, even if few of them survive, then who knew, in the future, how many people would become their prey. Actually, seeing one's own man abusing and having fun with other women, was not at all a good thing.

When that sinister man, Li Hua, saw that, the colour of his face suddenly faded away, as if he couldn't believe his own eyes that a woman, who had been accompanying him for last so many years, was now killed before his eyes.

Just now what happened? Hai Tang actually failed to distinguish between Ye Feng's real body and fake body! This kid, what type of agility did he use in the end which was so terrible?

Long Wan'er also froze on the spot.

Was that woman, Hai Tang, just now killed by Mo Jiuge's sword? Just like he previously killed Corrupt Wolf Sword and Long Xian? However, Hai Tang was different from those guys, she had a great fifteen years of powerful Cultivation. Honestly speaking, she had been ruling in the arena of martial arts for many years!

So now, was he going to pick on Li Hua next? Was he confident about it?

When she saw Ye Feng's sword flashed and killed Hai Tang, her heart immediately ignited the hope of survival, and she promptly got into action.

She was not stupid, under such a dim light of night, if Long Mo'ran would have been really searching for her in the mountains, then, in that case, she wanted to notify him very easily.

"Daddy! Daddy!"

She made an effort to shout out loud twice, if he would be somewhere nearby in the woods, she believed that he would come quickly.

At the same time, she lurched forward, picked up few dry twigs and piled them up together, quickly cleaned up all around, and then by using her inner qi she ignited the wood!

“I have never imagined that he could actually be so fierce

As she was lighting up the fire, she looked at Ye Feng with a perplexed look. Wearing the mask on his face, he was appearing so mystical under the light of stars.

“He has just five years of Cultivation, even though his strike actually killed Hai Tang, no matter what means he had used, it all explains that he is gifted with an unusual talent. If he comes to our Dragon Clan as the son-in-law, then I believe that daddy will probably not refuse to accept him. However, I don’t know why he always refuses to take off his mask.....”

When she shouted a few times, the word “daddy” caused reverberation around the mountain valley, which also shook up that perverted man Li Hua, and he suddenly came back to his senses.

No, it was not the appropriate time to daze out!

In case Long Mo’ran really rushed over here, then Li Hua should consider himself as all finished. Who didn’t know how ferocious this guy Long Mo’ran was? If someone dared to bully his daughter, then that meant he was tired of living!

If he would do everything secretly without leaving any evidence, then that would be fine. But if somehow Long Mo'ran would come to know about it, then perhaps, the fate of Heavenly Sword Palace would be similar to Ye Clan from twenty years ago

Seeing Long Wan'er trying to light up the fire, Li Hua's thought turned very violent, and he decided to kill her first!

"Your opponent is me."

Ye Feng groaned coldly as he said that, at the same time he held up the sword to block in front of the opposite party. By looking at his eyes, Ye Feng quickly guessed that some evil ideas might have been cropping up in his mind.

"Do you think that you can block me?"

A ferocious expression suddenly crept over the face of Li Hua, and he heavily hit his right foot one after another on the ground, angrily. Actually, how Ye Feng's long sword had killed Hai Tang, this scene had jolted his heart out, and in anger, he clenched his hands.

A pair of swords was there in his hand!

He was extremely confident that once he burst out with his speed, then this Masked guy could never stop him. Therefore, he made a plan to first deal with Long Wan'er, then after killing her, he would throw her body into the deep pool. Afterwards, he would have plenty of time to play with this kid.

This kid dared to kill his woman Li Hua had never turned so annoyed in this last decade, like he was now.

But the moment he moved his feet, so as to dodge and quickly leap forward to kill Long Wan'er, at the same time, he suddenly felt that a flower appeared in front of his eyes, and in a split second, his mind blanked out, and he stayed standing in-situ!

“Kill!”

Ye Feng had five years of Cultivation now, which had tremendously increased his real combat capability. Hence, he used an Immortal Technique ‘Hypnosis’, making the opposite party blanked out and expressionless all of a sudden. Although it had just a little effect on the people of this martial arts world, but even if it was only for a moment, was still a rare opportunity.

His Zhenqi condensed long sword exuded an orangish-red light, carrying a swift and fierce matchless power and influence, he rushed towards Li Hua's neck and waved his hand to cut off his neck.

Shua!

However, at such a critical moment, both of the swords of Li Hua rose up. By relying on his several years of fighting experiences and intuitions, he promptly stuck out his sword and blocked Ye Feng's sword attack, which was just a few centimetres away from his neck.

The cold sweat streamed down as he recovered!

This masked boy, how could he be so strange?

Not good, he would have to get rid of him first

Li Hua's heart trembled with fear, by holding swords in his hands, he fended off Ye Feng's Zhenqi sword, in one fell swoop. He was now totally determined that the right time had arrived, to use his unique sword technique, which was considered as the commensurate skill of Heavenly Sword Palace, in order to quickly finish this Masked boy.

A terrifying killing style 'Heavenly Sword Tornado'. Since it possessed an enormous destructive power, therefore, a very few people of Heavenly Sword Palace cast out this technique. But, once someone cast out, it was rare that people could survive from its effect. Li Hua and Hai Tang together always used to rely on this move to kill their several enemies!

As his double swords united, he quickly moved forward, simultaneously started to pull out his inner qi from all around his body, which was condensed in the essential acupuncture points throughout his body, making his killing technique finally activated. In a flash, a relentless light flashed out from his sword. In addition to it, under the complimenting starlight, his face was revealing a very fierce expression, as if the devil had descended to earth!

All of a sudden, Heavenly Sword Tornado burst out, and with a lightning speed, it swept towards Ye Feng to completely engulf him!

"Oh, not good, I have to avoid its sharp edge!"

Ye Feng heart shivered with fear, he waved his long sword, and barely stopped

the close attack of the opposite party's sword's light. Simultaneously, by displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, he promptly retroceded.

“Die!”

With an extremely fast speed, Li Hua raised his Sword Light Tornado and pressed it close against Ye Feng. Soon, fresh blood spattered. Just in a moment, Ye Feng's whole had been covered with several wounds of all sizes. The double swords were quite sharp, which were easily peeling away his flesh such as mud!

Ye Feng clenched his teeth, as he was still stubbornly blocking Long Wan'er from Li Hua's attack. He didn't have any means to counter the moves of the opposite party. Even if he tried to confuse the opposite party by using 'Camouflage', which he just recently used to kill Hai Tang, that too wouldn't work out anymore.

Let alone this matter, currently, Ye Feng didn't dare to leave Long Wan'er alone. Since in the water, she had already been injured by a strange fish's bite, again if she came close to Li Hua, then that would be the end of her life.

Several wounds were continuously popping up all around his body, like on his chest, arms, legs, even there were two deep wounds from where his bone could be seen! However, Ye Feng still stood stubbornly facing the enemy, without even shrinking back even an inch!

“Ehh! What is this?”

At this time, Ye Feng suddenly felt that his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring was transmitting certain kind of information to his mind, which startled him for a

moment.

“Die!”

Seeing that, Li Hua quickly rushed towards him to seize the opportunity. By holding a hideous look on his face, frequently licking his lips with his red tongue, he crossed his footsteps, and the tornado, which was formed by his double swords, at last enveloped him completely!

Chi Chi!

(Last voice : Chi Chi – a laughing sound made by Li Hua to scoff at Ye Feng)

All of a sudden, Ye Feng's whole body was twisted into fragments by the swift and fierce light of the sword!

In the fierce looking eyes of Li Hua, the fresh blood of Ye Feng was appearing beautiful, accompanied by the starlight together with his sword light. A bright red coloured blood, all at once, spurted out in the air, right in front of the eyes of Long Wan'er, making her heart stop beating at once!

Chapter 80 Sword qi's trembling cold light

Died?

Long Wan'er's heart started jumping wildly. Just a moment ago, she got engaged in lighting up the fire, hence she couldn't pay attention to their fight. But now, her charming face paled down, as she could see that Ye Feng could have clearly dodged it, but he insisted on standing in front of her, so it –

Between her and Li Hua, Ye Feng's fresh blood splattered, making the whole scene look like the hell on earth.

Once again, that perverted man proceeded with his Heavenly Sword Tornado. Under the faint light of the stars and moon, his reflection appeared dark and hellish in the nearby dark and silent deep pool.

However, those two people, at the same time, quickly discovered the incorrect place.

This meant that the splash of fresh blood, didn't it seem quite real? When it touched their bodies, it appeared same as mist and then it vanished lightly. Even after getting twisted by the Sword Tornado, Ye Feng's body fragmented into several pieces and also became very light.

“No it can't be, was it just his afterimage?”

The perverted man's heart suddenly shivered out, as he found out that he had seen through his trick. However, immediately after that, he curled up his corners

of the mouth, and with a hideous smile, he covetously glared at Long Wan'er.

Although it was an afterimage but accompanied by fresh blood. The true level of people could be anticipated by that, although Ye Feng nearly deceived them. But strength was strength, just relying on a small cheap trick wouldn't help in achieving victory.

“Boy, since you got away with that afterimage, so now, this beauty will certainly go with me!”

His smelly red-coloured tongue licked his lips, as he revolved his Heavenly Sword Tornado with a great velocity. And then he moved forward towards her, since he wanted to completely engulf her and then break her into fragments by twisting her!

At this moment, her pupils contracted as she saw him coming towards her. She wanted to hastily jump down in the water, but the condition of her legs was not good, as they were badly hurt. But now, she simply didn't have a way out!

During such a critical juncture, Ye Feng's stature appeared silently behind Li Hua's back, about ten metres away, and then suddenly wielded his Zhenqi sword, and a fierce ice-blue Sword qi emerged out under the light of the stars, cutting through the air at a lightning speed, and hit someone right on the mark!

Poof!

The sound of a weapon entering the flesh resounded, immediately followed by a flow of fresh blood which dispersed everywhere as the sword light passed through. In a split second, the sword light stagnated, and in the next moment, a

long sword flew up and fell down in the nearby thick bushes with a “clang” sound.

“Aaaah aaah!”

All of a sudden, Li Hua’s pitiful yell resounded through the night.

When the sword light halted, Long Wan’er finally saw what just happened and remained stunned for a while. As she found out that Li Hua’s one arm had been cut off from his shoulder and blood was constantly gushing out from there and falling to the ground. The sight was extremely fearsome; apparently he was experiencing an unparalleled pain!

“How is it possible? Sword qi!”

While staggeringly, he turned back and look at Ye Feng’s mask, there was an alarmed and frightened expression on his face.

Just now, that was Sword qi, without any mistake!

In the world of Martial arts, most people could only do close combat, except two kinds of people. First, those who excelled at Hidden Weapon Technique, and second, those who could pull inner qi out. Only such people had the ability to efficiently use Sword qi, Knife qi, and so on!

Such as Long Wan’er’s father, Long Mo’ran, who was the head of Dragon Clan. He was able to release a powerful Sword qi because fifty years of cultivation was not a joke.

However, there was a small number of people in the hidden martial arts world, who had this kind of talent. Who exactly was this masked man?

He didn't know that Ye Feng was different from other people since he used Zhenqi to practice. Besides, he also didn't know that Zhenqi and inner qi were totally two different things.

The reason why the inner qi is referred as "inner qi" because it's extremely difficult to pull it out, and it can only be attached to the body or a weapon to enhance its power.

But the fact was that Zhen qi was more suitable with the natural world.

The principles of these two had a fundamental difference.

Therefore, Li Hua was scared of the thought that he was facing someone, who could easily cast out such a powerful Sword qi. He was just an ordinary swordsman, having merely fifteen years of Cultivation, hence, was simply not a suitable opponent!

He didn't want to report anyone about Hai Tang's enemy. He quickly picked up his blood dripping arm, lifted up his long sword from the bushes, and at an incredibly fast speed, dashed towards the entrance of the valley and ran away.

He was really afraid that if Ye Feng would hit him once again with the Sword qi, from behind, then he wouldn't be able to dodge it.

Fortunately, Ye Feng watched him as he ran away and didn't use his Sword qi again.

In fact, Ye Feng also wanted to chase him down, to eliminate an evil like him thoroughly from the face of the earth, leaving behind a threat to oneself was not in his nature. But the problem was, at present, he had no power left either to use Sword qi or to chase him down.

The information about Beheading dragon sword first style, just a moment ago, had been transferred from the Dragon Sword ancient ring into his mind. The first style was the most basic use of Sword qi, nothing fancy, just needed the practitioner to release Sword qi channeled through the sword. And this time, it emptied out all the Zhen qi from Ye Feng's body.

“Dragon Sword heritage, even ancient ring

Ye Feng gasped, immediately his Orangish-red Zhenqi sword disappeared from his hand. His long sword couldn't exist without the continuous condensation of Zhenqi, hence, it immediately changed into the nihility.

Beheading Dragon sword first style, Ye Feng just instantly comprehended it and successfully displayed it. This could stun almost anyone. What kind of talent was this?

However, this was just a normal thing for Ye Feng.

In the World of the Immortals, why the renowned Ice Fairy, Su Feiying, had a liking for him and why did she accept him as her disciple? Only one reason was there, that was simply because – he was a genius!

In Immortal's Cultivation, the strength of the cultivator was considered most important, apart from the level of cultivation. However, the cultivator's talent also had a major role.

In the Immortal's World, some people needed to spend several days or even several months, in order to grasp some ordinary Immortal techniques like Camouflage, Hypnotism, Dragon Turtle, and so on. But in Ye Feng's case, he actually just needed a moment.

Highly talented people not only comprehended Immortal Technique quickly but also reached a profound level of understanding. When such people cast out any Immortal Technique, they displayed stronger power. While others, even if they tried their best to excel at it, still showed a horrible result.

In the Immortal's World, each of the Immortal Technique has a division of levels. Less talented people can practice only up to the first layer, but highly talented people are able to practice up to the second layer, third layer, and so on

Also, he didn't know whether the Martial arts world had this kind of parlance

Ye Feng coughed twice and was unable to stand properly. There were two visibly deep wounds on his chest and thigh which were deeply-cut and had clearly visible to the bone, from where the blood was dripping unceasingly.

Li Hua's double sword Tornado couldn't be overlooked, just in a short moment, he brought about enormous injuries. What if the battle didn't end yet, Ye Feng was not his match. But, fortunately, that perverted man was scared

away since one of his arms was cut off by Ye Feng's Zhenqi sword.

"Hey, how are you now!"

Under the faint starlight, along with the chimney smoke curling up in the air, hurriedly, somewhat staggeringly, Long Wan'er ran up to him, as she was still worried about this desperate guy standing in front of her as a shield.

When she saw there were a dozen of large or small wounds on his body, as well as, two severe deep injuries on his chest and right thigh where even his bone had become somewhat visible, she suddenly felt a severe pain in her heart as if a knife had pierced through her heart.

"It's nothing, -coughs-"

Ye Feng felt somewhat laughable, could it be that this young girl's heart was really captured by him?

"Just wait until Daddy comes, then, come with me to Dragon Clan."

The young lady, Long Wan'er with a bad temper, by gathering her black-coloured eyebrows together, said that with an undeniable expression. Such injuries, so long as he went to Dragon Clan's home, then after training for a whole month, would be able to heal up thoroughly.

As per her tentative plan, as long as her father would arrive, everything would be over by then. At that time, she would bring him back to her home. With his natural talent, the father would definitely have a liking for him, right?

Just then.....

“Also, take off your mask, I won’t ignore or abandon you, even if you are ugly.”

Long Wan’er stared at him as she said this in a somewhat peevish manner.

Unfortunately, regarding these two requests, Ye Feng was doomed to let her down. He could neither take off the mask nor could he go with her to her home, otherwise, only God knows what might happen then?

Chapter 81 Long Mo'ran's green hat

Since Ye Feng had five years of Cultivation now, he could easily use 'Camouflage Technique' to change his appearance, completely. And in case, he had to take out the mask in front of Long Wan'er, then she couldn't be able to see his real face.

But his heart didn't support his thought, he actually didn't want to show his false appearance to her, instead, he would rather prefer the image of a masked man in front of her.

Only when he would completely know the matter which had happened between Dragon Clan and Ye Clan, and would get success in resolving both parties' contradictory views, then only he could appear before her, with his true appearance!

The crucial point was that, Ye Wentian had seriously warned him once that he must not let Dragon Clan know that he used to practiceAnyway, he used to believe Ye Wentian, since that old man was his grandfather after all.

"Sleep for a while."

Through his mask, Ye Feng gazed into her beautiful eyes, and quickly cast out 'Hypnosis' on her.

Suddenly her consciousness dispirited, and her mind became relaxed. Since she hadn't kept her guard on against him, she immediately got caught in his trick! Her beautiful eyes immediately closed, and she softly poured in his arms.

“Hiss

Ye Feng couldn't bear the pain and shouted painfully, because this young girl slumped over his chest wound, and almost gave him a painful death experience. He hastily stretched out his hand, carried her next to the point of fire, and then picked up some soft leaves, making her partly lie down above them.

Afterwards, he decided to take advantage of her, until her father would come over here, he must ask some questions before the effect of hypnosis ran out.

“Wan'er, do you know Ye Clan?”

Ye Feng asked that first.

“I know.”

She was asleep, but she replied smartly

Under the pale light of the stars, these two started playing questions and answers game. Soon Ye Feng got the picture clear about the general situation of both the Clans. Perhaps, because, this was not considered as a secret matter anymore in the Martial arts World. Moreover, Long Wan'er wasn't under any guard, hence, she spoke out everything completely.

Originally 18 years ago, one of the largest Clans of the Martial arts world was Ye Clan, with the maximum influencing power. In the Martial arts circle, Ye Wentian, who was the great martial artist of the veteran level, with great name and fame, was considered as a highly respected person throughout the secret hidden world of martial arts.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng's father Ye Yunfei, was totally a very incompetent person, who neither had any interest to learn martial arts nor had any skill, he was just known as a big playboy in the martial arts circle. Shortly after the birth of Ye Feng, he got hooked up with the wife of Long Mo'ran.

Since Long Mo'ran's wife was engaged in such an affair, it terribly stirred up his anger. Besides, in general, the actions of Ye Yunfei had already triggered the hatreds of several influencing Clans. Hence, at last, one night, a war broke out when Long Mo'ran, together with numerous influences of the martial arts world, exterminated the entire Ye Clan, in the Mt. Luofu cave, along with Ye Yunfei and his own wife, personally, by beheading them!

In that tangled warfare, numerous casualties took place. Ye Yunfei, who only got success in protecting his newly born child Ye Feng, died with a huge regret. Before dying, he looked up towards the sky and sighed deeply, since he was feeling severe guilt for his entire family's mishap.

Moreover, it was extremely difficult for Ye Wentian to fight against many influencing figures at the same time, and secondly, it was totally his son's mistakes. These two reasons forced him to restrain the thoughts of taking revenge, and lastly, he agreed with numerous public figures of the martial arts world.

So long as Ye Feng didn't practice the martial arts, the great public figures of the martial arts world wouldn't permit anyone to trouble him. Otherwise, even if Ye Wentian would try, by putting his life on the line, to support Ye Feng, still he wouldn't be able to stop them from destroying his family!

A highly respected person from the Martial arts world said such words,

besides, who wouldn't dare to obey him?

The Mt. Loufu Cave was one of the ten big dwelling places for Cultivation practices, in which the practice speed was 30% faster than the outside world. When Ye Clan was eradicated, Ye Wentian, along with a newly born baby Ye Feng, left this cave and moved away, since this place was under the direct control of Dragon Clan.

Henceforth, Long Mo'ran had become eccentric and unreasonable. He started to administer this Martial arts world and always considered himself as correct. Moreover, since Long Wan'er's childhood, he had been harshly dealing with her.

She grew up learning all kinds of cultural talents and skills, and kept pace with the times. When she turned fifteen, her standard became equivalent to the standard of various branch masters of the outside world. Then the time arrived when she finally established a connection with her meridians, to open up her Dantian, and finally started practicing Dragon Clan's old Cultivation techniques. She had three years of Cultivation at the age of eighteen, then after she went outside to learn and practice through real experiences. Currently, she barely turned twenty, and already had promoted her Cultivation to 10 years, just through her 3 years of real life experience. Now she had become the extraordinarily talented person in the younger generation of her Clan!

For the people of this world, during one's childhood, meridians used to be very frail, accompanied with a turbid Dantian. Therefore, normally, some people didn't use to practice the martial arts in their childhood. 16 years of age was considered as the most appropriate age of this.

The achievement of Long Wan'er, created a new style in the martial arts field, making Long Xian, Luo Li and other people of her age, far inferior to her.

“It can be assumed that her talent ‘the body with immortal arteries’ will certainly not be wasted. Since she looks for natural treasures to quickly lift up her Cultivation, which explains everything that this young girl is not at all stupid.”

Ye Feng recalled the time when he first saw her, and thought she cherished that three gold leaf grass. She even risked her life just in order to snatch away that grass, from the clutch of that crazy couple of Heavenly Sword Palace. Such kind of strength she had, coupled with the status of being the daughter of Long Clan’s first wife, how couldn’t she have such name and fame in the world?

He somewhat sighed with emotions, he had never thought that such a huge enmity was there between Ye Clan and Dragon Clan from quite a while. While their children were actually hanging around together like this.....

He wanted to ask some more questions, like how was her mother now, and so on. But suddenly he heard the sound of some messy footsteps coming from the valley’s entrance. He already knew that it was Long Mo’ran along with his people.

“I can only say that we will carry on this discussion again next time.”

While he was thinking about this, he looked at her, then lowered his head, pressed his lips against her cheeks softly and gave a lovable kiss, and then with a smile, he quickly cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and plunged into the water, carrying that luminous pearl, and finally sank.

He couldn’t meet Long Mo’ran now, moreover, he must go back to look for the traces of Su Feiying.

And Long Wan'er, he would later say goodbye to her!

.....

When the sun raised from the east side, a grey and black coloured Land Rover was smoothly running between the mountains, gradually approaching Linjiang City, as well as, several other SUV were following it from behind.

In the car's passenger seat, Long Mo'ran was there wearing a light coloured long and dull looking gown. Although he was looking very calm, but in fact, he was actually burning with anger.

While on the other side, Long Wan'er was lying on the back seat of the car, under her sister-in-law's care. If this news that last night, Long Mo'ran let his pride, her daughter, taken away by a man, and there her virginity was stained, then this could totally ruin the honour and reputation of the great Dragon Clan.

When he arrived with his people at the spot, chasing the smoke rising from the valley, and took a closer look at the scene, then he noticed that Hai Tang from 'Happily married pair of swords' had been killed by a sword, while Long Wan'er was sleeping by the fire, wearing a very quiet and peaceful expression on her face.

"That masked man, Mo Jiuge, have really got a huge courage."

Long Mo'ran's eyes flashed with coldness, he clearly knew that it was certainly that Masked man who was involved in all these affairs.

Although he didn't know a lot about him, but he knew that he had a sword. The corrupt Wolf Sword, Hai Tang, as well as Long Xian, whose corpse was just discovered at the foot of the hill, all these three were killed by the sword.

Long Xian was the son of Long Mo'ran's brother, who was very ignorant and incompetent guy. That was why whenever Long Mo'ran's eyes fell on him, he always used to remind him of Ye Yunfei. Therefore, his death didn't cause much impact on Long Wan'er, however, his daughter was actually tarnished by that guy, did he really manage to torture Long Clan like this?

He ordered to block off the flow of news, so that this matter didn't get spread everywhere. But in his heart, he also knew that how long he would be able to keep this matter in dark from outside world. Since, not only that Masked man was not caught, but that abnormal man, Li Hua from 'happily married pair of swords' disappeared as well, these might be the insider

"Wan'er, did you wake up?"

From the car's rear seat, a voice of a female came out which was as gentle as water. It was Long Wan'er's sister-in-law, with a very lucid and attractive facial structure. She saw her with deep concern and asked that.

"I'm here..... What about him?"

As soon as Long Wan'er woke up, she quickly sat up, and anxiously looked around in all directions.

"Who?"

Her sister-in-law asked one.

“Mo Jiuge, he

Long Wan'er remembered everything and turned a bit anxious. Though, she tried hard to place her point in front of her father, but was interrupted by him in between.

“No matter who that guy is, I won't let him go.”

Long Mo'ran lightly said: “As for you, go back and give me a good reflection, also, you are prohibited to go out anywhere, throughout this year.”

“What? It's not right, he -”

Long Wan'er hurriedly opposed his father.

“Shut up.”

There was a furious look on his face.

She noticed that her father was thinking something, and stared him for a while.

Mo Jiuge was somehow related with Ye Feng, whereas because of Ye Feng's father, Long Mo'ran had to wear a green hat. As far as Ye Feng was concerned, Long Mo'ran could already have killed him easily, but due to the agreement, he

wasn't able to touch him. Now, that Masked man and Ye Feng had some connections with each other, so wasn't it like they brought about their own destruction?

(Lastvoice : In China “wearing a green hat” is an expression that Chinese use, when a woman cheats on her husband or boyfriend.)

What to do?

Where is he now?

He must not get caught by Daddy

She had a feeling now, that whatever she would say, that would never change the decision of her father, hence the only thing she could do was prayer. She silently prayed in her heart for his safety. Earlier, she had wished to make him Dragon Clan's son-in-law, now it seemed like she wished for something impossible.

In such case, she could only

Chapter 82 Vicious punks

Time rolled on, and two weeks quickly passed, later.

Wearing tattered clothes, a young guy, descending the Changbai Mountains, arrived at the foot of the hill's village. Two scars on that juvenile's chest and thigh could be clearly seen, which was quite alarming, like they had been caused by the sword's strike.

That juvenile was none other than Ye Feng! Some time ago, he had thrown away his mask and restored his original appearance.

During these days, he carefully searched out thoroughly the already collapsed ancient tomb, however, totally failed to find any trace of Su Feiying. Carrying a glowing pearl and also a complete Lingshi, which he happened to find by chance, he descended the hill, all prepared to make Scar come to pick him up.

Although his mood was lost, but he kept on searching all around for so many days, still didn't find any relevant information. Therefore, to still continue staying in the ruins, didn't make any sense.

Afterwards, he arrived at the village which was not big, however, surprisingly there was a cemented road actually leading to the outside world. Although it was not wide, but Scar's vehicle that Hummer could still be able to pass through it. Besides this, it was impossible for him to return to Linjiang City in these tattered clothes, after all, he was looking very suspicious in this appearance. He was just trying to somehow borrow a cell phone from someone, in this village, so that he could give a call to Scar, to come over here with a pair of new clothes, to pick him up.

Before entering this village, he carefully observed it for a moment, and when he didn't find any suspicious person or thing in the village, then he slightly felt relaxed, and finally set his foot in the village.

The moment he entered the village, he saw two aunts weirdly watching him dressed like this. They immediately pointed at him and started whispering with each other while returning home, and then they closed their door. Since, at present, he was looking more like a person from the underworld, who had been chopped down by someone, so it was quite natural for people to get scared of him.

He walked into the village, and went towards a row of four careless and casual youth. They were somewhat strangely staring at Ye Feng's bulging chest.

"Boy, what's hidden in your clothes?"

Inside his clothes, around his chest area, he had kept that fist-sized glowing pearl as well as the complete Lingshi, which were extremely priceless.

Seeing the other party questioning him, he said lightly : "Lend me a cell phone, I have to use it just for a moment. And, regarding what I have brought, it surely has nothing to do with you, right?"

"Fuck, so arrogant? Come to think of it, isn't it great that his body has two severely cut scars?"

Those four young people booed together rhythmically, as if they were seeing Ye Feng as an idiot.

They were the gang members of Baoshan Town which was near the village, who used to loiter around all day. Occasionally they used to collect huge protection fees from nearby villages. They were quite famous, and were called as Baoshan's four handsome youth. They used to fight very cruelly, that was why they were also recognized and very much appreciated by the boss of their gang.

Today, they had come to this village to stroll, and then they started sexually harassing an unmarried girl from any random family. Seeing Ye Feng passing through, suddenly stirred up their interest. Obviously, such a dubious character would naturally attract them, and they could never easily let him off.

“Brat, come on, hand over that thing. Otherwise, if we begin personally, then you will certainly start crying and calling out your parents for help, just like a baby.”

One among them was a guy with blond hair, with a single earring, although was not the mainstream youth, but arrogantly he stretched out his finger and pointed at Ye Feng's nose, and scolded him awfully.

“Huang Zi, don't get involved in idle talks with him, some people are a lowly type, just give him a beating once, and see he will quickly become obedient and agree to what we say.”

Gao Shou, an another youth with a pair of small eyes, said that as he pulled up his sleeves and prepared to begin dealing with Ye Feng : “Ain't you going to still hand over that thing?”

This was clearly a defiant act, an open robbery in a blatant way.

Ye Feng's expression gradually turned cold.

Since, he actually failed to find any information related to Su Feiying, so he was already in quite a foul mood, on top of that, now these guys were giving an order to him and trying to make him dance at their fingertips, wasn't that quite an oppressively inadequate behaviour? He conveniently pulled out both the things, the glowing pearl as well as that complete Lingshi, and then coldly said : "Here, see it till your heart content. Now, tell me, do you have a cell phone?"

"These are so round, what are these things?"

When they saw those things, they remained surprised for a while and also felt a bit puzzled, and then they started whispering together with each other.

"Probably, it's the legendary luminous pearl, I have seen it on the television!"

"Fuck, such a big legendary luminous pearl, then could it be sold at higher price?"

"No wonder this boy was hewn like this, actually, the body has such an expensive treasure"

The eyes of those four guys were shining brightly at the moment, as they were looking towards Ye Feng maliciously. Obviously, they had regarded him as a big fat sheep! This boy, who was in such a shabby cloth, also chopped down twice by the sword, and was carrying two priceless treasures, was making them feel too jealous of him simply!

Lastvoice : fat sheet – it means a source of earning quick money.)

If he used that technique, he would eliminate

Ye Feng immediately saw through their thoughts, and snorted coldly. He was too lazy to talk nonsense, hence, he immediately took a little step, and promptly released a Bagua boxing shot!

He didn't need to exert his full strength while dealing with these guys. These guys didn't even get the time to respond, and in a flash, his punch already knocked them to the ground, one after another. They were lying on the ground, upside down, and were shouting out loud in pain.

From the distant place, some people of the village noticed that these four youth were hit by someone, one after another, which really astonished them, but they suddenly felt carefree about this incident.

These four punks used to depend on Baoshan to threaten and bluff people daily. Even more than that, they also used to deceive the innocent village girls, and then by luring these girls, they used to drag them into the dirty business. Because of these punks, every day a girl was dropped out from the school. Because of these four guys bad influence, girls unknowingly took a wrong step in their life, and finally, they used to become a professional trollop.

But they had some worries, since the youth, in the ragged clothes, had hit these four fellows, and offended the Baoshan gang, which might not have any good end!

“Lend me a cell phone.”

Ye Feng went straight towards that non-mainstream guy with blond hair, and said that coldly.

“Lend you, lend

A panic-stricken expression suddenly appeared on the face of that blond hair guy, as if he hadn't ever expected that this fellow could hit like this. He then slipped his hand in his bosom, seemingly acted like he was pulling out a cell phone.

But then, his facial expression suddenly turned quite ferocious : “Alright, I will give you paralysis, just go to hell!”

Holding a fruit knife, he jumped towards Ye Feng and waved his hand, in order to pierce it through his chest!

Bang!

By wielding his single-hand, Ye Feng promptly slapped his palm, making that fruit knife fly. In an instant, his complexion became colder. Such an evil and cruel hoodlum was he, if Ye Feng would let him off, then wouldn't it be too good for him?

Hence, Ye Feng lifted his foot, heavily stepped on the back of the hand of that Blond hair guy, and by releasing his Zhenqi, he directly trampled his bone into several segments.

All of a sudden, a blood-curdling screech of Blond hair guy penetrated through the whole village!

Ye Feng's positive and upright mood had turned gloomy now, since the opposite party was constantly trying to stir up trouble for him.

"Yes, Nagang Village, there is a kid with jewellery and precious stone, and he can also fight well"

At this time, the youth, Gao shou shifted his eyes towards one side, pulled out a cell phone, and said something about the current situation, to the other end. It appeared like the other side was a call helper, whom Gao shou had informed everything, and asked for the help.

"Lend me your cell phone."

Ye Feng walked up to him, grabbed the phone from his hands, and looked at the active call Contact: Elder brother Tianbao. Apparently, that Elder brother Tianbao was the boss of these punks' gang.

Ye Feng didn't give a damn to it, he decided to rather hand over this matter to Heavenly Serpent Gang of Yanjing, so that they could have their jurisdiction over here. Then, wouldn't they be able to pay attention to such a small gang like this, established in such a faraway town?

He hung up the phone, and then by dint of memory, he dialled the number of Scar : "Scar, Ye Feng this side, come over to Baoshan Town of Nagang Village, to pick me up."

When Scar heard the voice of Ye Feng, he became extremely happy, however, suddenly he calmed down, and with a dignified tone, said: “Ye elder brother, Yanjing had an accident! We must hurry back

“What’s the matter?”

Ye Feng frowned.

“Song Hu, that guy betrayed us!”

Scar said bitterly.

As soon as Ye Feng heard that, his look became dignified.

Song Hu, wasn’t he that squared face man, to whom Scar handed over the complete management of Heavenly Sword Gang, at the time when they were leaving Yanjing? Ye Feng still remembered that this guy had a nephew, that youth in western-style clothing, whom he had met on the train, and had also beaten him. But still he was not quite convinced about this news.

Not good!

Ye Feng complexion suddenly changed, as the matter stood, could it be said that currently Su Menghan was in danger?

Chapter 83 First from the bottom

Ye Feng knew very clearly that since Song Hu dared to betray them, that meant there must be someone supporting him from backstage. After all, the opposite party had clearly seen that Ye Feng had some kind of relationship with Old man Lin.

Song Hu had such an influencing force supporting him, that he even considered himself at the same level with Yanjing 's Lin Clan!

Lin Clan was known as the first powerful family of Yanjing, but in fact, they couldn't hoodwink people. There were several other influencing forces as well, which used to maintain the balance. Take the case of Miao Zhenqiang, the head of Public Security Bureau, his clan was similarly one of the top four respected Clans of Yanjing. However, Lin Clan was a bit on the higher side in terms of strength, if compared with another three Clans.

Ye Feng could make a conjecture that behind various respected clans, there had always been the shadow of someone from the Martial arts world. For example, Miao Clan was backed by Dragon Clan, Lin Clan had a connection with Ye Clan. Although at present, there was only one person left in Ye Clan and that was the old gentleman, Ye Wentian. Hence, most likely Lin Clan might be having some other supporters as well from the Martial arts world, since he couldn't rely on just one person.

In the game of the common world, these Martial Artists can easily earn wealth for themselves. And to achieve that, they must establish a friendly relationship with the top influences of this common world, as per their needs. Like behind Mr Lin, there always uses to be a mystical person to protect him, perhaps that shadow wouldn't ever let even the sniper's rifle cause any threat to Mr. Lin.

“Ye elder brother, if we don’t hurry back, then I am afraid Ms Ye will be caught in any danger.”

Scar hesitated for a moment, but then reminded him: “Song Hu has a nephew, named Song Tianying. He had a conflict with you and Ms Ye on the train, remember? Perhaps she would be

“What’s the situation now?”

Ye Feng asked.

“My confidant has placed few people around Ms. Ye to protect her temporarily. However, Sung Hu have collaborated with Black Dragon Association, I fear that my people can’t hold up against them for long.”

Scar explained.

Ye Feng felt a little-relieved hearing that: “That’s good, by the way, buy a set of a new suit for me, while coming to pick me up from this place called Nagang Village of Baoshan Town. The sooner, the better.”

At this moment, Ye Feng finally decided in the heart, that perhaps couldn’t he consider Scar as his future primary assistant, and could develop his skills by teaching him Cultivation?

The performance of Scar had truly satisfied him, he had always been good at his assigned work. Moreover, in these last so many years, he had created a good

background of Heavenly Serpent Gang, which could never be considered as running on a small scale, with limited extent. Moreover, he also had earned numerous trusted friends in this field.

No matter what Ye Feng would plan to do in the future, like whether he would try to look for Su Feiying in the entire world, or he would like to protect the loved ones around him, he would certainly need his own power. Relying on others was not the right path after all.

After hanging up the phone, Ye Feng hit the other number to call Su Menghan.

Before walking into the mountain, his cell phone didn't have the signal, afterwards, because of repeatedly diving, he had already destroyed his phone long ago. Until now, he really didn't get any chance to contact with Su Menghan.

As for looking for Su Feiying thing, it came to an end for the time being.

In addition to that Seven-pointed star pattern, he couldn't find out any other clues related to Su Feiying in these last two weeks, as if her shadow stayed in the tomb just for a short while, and then she left the place without leaving any trace.

Soon, Su Menghan's phone got connected.

"Hello?"

A sweet and gentle female voice, just like his memory, softly passed through the phone, and made Ye Feng feel really relieved.

“Menghan, never mind, where are you now?”

Ye Feng asked.

“Today is the weekend, so I am home Right, just a moment ago, several people of Heavenly Serpent Gang came outside the villa and surrounded it, so, what have brought them here?”

Su Menghan had some doubts.

“They are around the villa just to protect you.”

Ye Feng explained that and then said : “By the way, I’ll be home tonight. Do remember, before I get back home, must not leave the villa, understand?”

“What’s wrong? Is there any danger?”

Su Menghan was a little surprised, but wasn’t too concerned about it, since her thoughts drifted towards Ye Feng promptly : “Where are you now? Will you really be back tonight? You really didn’t at all study during the last exams, did you? Since you have got the first position, from the bottom, in the whole class.....

Ye Feng was dumbfounded by hearing that, was this the appropriate time to talk about such irrelevant things, and on top of that, about the mock test?

However, as per his result, he got the first rank from the bottom, in the class. He had really set the historical new low

“Keke, don’t worry, I will definitely get serious before the college entrance examination, believe me.”

Ye Feng said a few words, and then again he started urging so that she must not leave the villa at all cost! In case she ran into any dangerous situation, then she must run away towards the other rooms of the villa. Probably, he should also ask Ye Wentian to come out and help her, but it seemed that the situation wouldn’t turn out as dangerous as he anticipated.

After urging repeatedly, Ye Feng finally hung up the phone.

Listening to the painful screech of those four punks, Ye Feng felt even more annoyed. Therefore, to stop them from making noise, he kicked them one after another and sent them to the world of unconscious. Under this bright daylight, in the open, in front of lots of people, he couldn’t go on killing people, moreover, there was no need to kill them, that would be very troublesome.

Unlike the barren mountains and wild hills, where Li Jun, Luo Li, Luo Lei, and Long Xian were slaughtered, and that too by that Masked man, Mo Jiuge. This place was not barren like that. Moreover, there was not even a single percent chance that Ye Feng had any relationship with the so-called Mo Jiuge.

While he stood by the roadside, waiting for Scar, letting those four punks lying on the ground in a deep slumber, soon, a medium-sized van, from the village’s cemented road, approached towards that place.

As soon as Ye Feng saw that, he quickly understood that someone came from the nearby town Baoshan, so as to help those four punks in taking revenge.

Suddenly, a touch of sneer appeared on Ye Feng's face, and before other people could get off the van and come to the place where he was standing, he promptly moved towards them, leaving behind several blurred afterimages, suddenly stood beside the van.

In the passenger seat, there was a paunchy fat guy, with oily hair and carrying a too outdated hairstyle of the 80s, dressed in a neat suit, wearing a pair of silver-rimmed glasses. All these features were collectively giving him the aura of being quite a rich and classic man from old society.

Seeing the figure of Ye Feng suddenly appeared at the edge of the door, the paunchy fat man thought his eyes dazzled, hence he rubbed his eyes.

“Come out quickly.”

Ye Feng was not the least bit interested in starting any idle talk, hence, he directly pulled opened the vehicle's door, and dragged that weird hairstyle fat man out of his seat: “Are you the brother of those four bludgers? That elder brother Baoshan?”

“Yes, I, I am

The ferocity of Ye Feng had already frightened the hell out of him.

It seemed like they were a gang of a small town, with just hundred people in their group. Might be they were involved in only one business, and that was merely collecting the protection fees. Like those four bludgers, this gang might have been robbing people by using fruit knife, murdering was just out of the

question for them. In addition, it wasn't the fault of those four punks, since that fist-sized legendary luminous pearl was undoubtedly very attractive, which could allure anyone, and in return, anyone would try to take hold of it, like those four punks did.

By judging Elder brother Baoshan on the basis of his appearance, it seemed like he was a pampered fat person, holding very high and respected position. How could he be placed on a par with an extremely dedicated and hard working guy, Scar, who was also the boss of a reactionary gang, with extraordinary courage and potential?

“Honestly, don't try to mess with me.”

Ye Feng directly warned him : “if you don't want to die, then do me a favour and stay well-behaved for a while.”

Just after warning him, Ye Feng suddenly grabbed him by his collar. Although he struggled hard, but didn't succeed in breaking himself free from his clutch, and then his big broad face turned red. Soon, several youths got out of the van, but they didn't dare to act rashly after seeing this situation.

When Ye Feng looked at these people, he secretly laughed in his heart, and thought that really by no means, these guys could be compared with the elite class people of Heavenly Serpent Gang, these guys were still only the bludgers.

Let just one gold medallist goon of Heavenly Serpent Gang come over here, he could easily knock down four or five of them, or even more, just in a tweak.

By now, several youths had already surrounded him, and their eyes were

covetously looking at him. They were constantly threatening him to let the fat person go, simultaneously looking for the opportunity to save him.

What a pity, was Ye Feng that kind of person who could show his opponent even the slightest flaw?

He sneered at them while controlling the fat person. He was looking very calm and carefree, as if he took hold of that fat man, as an under duress hostage to protect himself, but in fact, he was disinclined to begin any fight with them.

This scene made the villagers, who were constantly looking at them from afar, totally startled. They were mutually thinking that this youth was really very fierce, how easily he grabbed the collar of the elder brother Baoshan of Baoshan Gang, wasn't he even a little bit scared of him?

As when the scene had arrived at a stalemate position, just during that period, Scar with his Hummer H2, finally rushed over to the place, with a high speed, along with a huge threatening force and influence!

Chapter 84 Long Wan'er ran away

When the Hummer H2 rushed over there in a threatening manner, the people present on the field remained startled and frightened.

For this type of small reactionary gang like 'Baoshan Gang' of Baoshan district, just a few vans would be more than enough to carry on its business, could they ever own such an expensive and high ranking private car like Hummer? The idea of Scar was perfect, to use Hummer H2 on a trip like this. This way they didn't need to touch or beat many people in order to deter them, they could easily avoid numerous troubles in a tweak.

As Scar stepped down from the driver's seat, he noticed that a group of people were watching him. They were surprised and were thinking in his heart that either 'Scar' was this man's name, or 'Scar' was that scar on his face!

However, immediately the whole situation terrified them to the extent where they could even wet their pants.

They saw that in the front passenger seat, a handsome lovable youth, with delicate features, leisurely playing with the pistol, was occasionally looking at those guys. There was a deadly aura around him, as if just one unsuited word from their side, and he would immediately open fire on them, without any mercy.

"I am wrong, elder brother, I am wrong!"

Some of them became so frightened that they immediately started trembling with fear, and wanted to run away. But nothing could be done, since the fingers

of Zhao Yibei were on the gun, pointing at them, anyone could be scared of him, then why wouldn't these bludgers be scared of?

Damn, this was the so-called genuine underworld! To open fire brutally, without blinking an eye just because someone tried to chop down a person by his knife and rob his things! How could they even dare to trigger the anger of such a powerful presence?

Zhao Yibei would definitely not open fire to kill them. Even if he was not scared of troubles, but still he was disinclined to waste his bullets like this.

Seeing his men finally here, Ye Feng threw the fat man on the roadside, and boarded on the car with Scar. Afterwards, he promptly threw off his tattered clothes and put on a western-style suit. Although, it was the first time for Ye Feng wearing a western-style suit, but as per the words of Scar, all of a sudden, he appeared more graceful dressed in that suit.

“He he he, Elder brother Ye, if you return home like this, then I guarantee, you certainly will brighten up the eyes of Ms. Ye.”

Zhao Yibei said that with a smiling face.

“Damn you, just focus on driving, hurry up.”

Ye Feng showed a faint smile, and beckoned with the hand.

Previously, during the beginning phase of this journey, Ye Feng had already known the true identity of Zhao Yibei. Scar had a wife a decade ago, and Zhao Yibei was his wife's younger brother, who was still young at that time.

But ten years ago, that night, during that unscrupulous murder done by that swordsman, his wife had also fallen in the pool of blood, and couldn't stand again. However, since childhood, Zhao Yibei grew up with Scar, and after graduating from the junior middle school, he never studied further.

Regarding Zhao Yibei, Scar was very considerate for him and used to blindly trust him. Therefore, he especially assigned him as the driver of Ye Feng, with the hope that if he would maintain a good relationship with Ye Feng, then he could have a better career development in the future.

In the eyes of Ye Feng, he was a very lively and cheerful young man, with a network of some young individuals, which were almost similar to his age.

Hummer H2 then picked up the speed, and rushed ahead roaring, along with the cemented road of that village, and quickly drove out of it, leaving behind a group of Baoshan Gang's youths, who were still staring blankly.

That weird hairstyle, paunchy fat man, made an effort to wipe out the cold sweat dripping from his forehead, while looking at the back of Hummer. Finally, his heart heaved a sigh of relief.

He strenuously crawled on the ground to get up, then turned his head to look at those four unconscious youths, who were still lying on the ground. Suddenly his heart developed a feeling of hatred for them. Shit! Couldn't they see who the opposite party was, before stirring up trouble?

Being grabbed by Ye Feng by his collar, was making him unceasingly unhappy. Starting from this moment, his heart gradually gave birth to a sense of dissatisfaction, he no longer wanted to get down, he must walk towards the high

place!

As he looked at Hummer, going far away, bit by bit, from his sight, his eyes suddenly got attracted towards its number plate, which had the license of the capital city Yanjing. Immediately then he decided to set his foot in Yanjing as soon as possible!

.....

This off-road vehicle really had all the benefits which the vehicles of this class should provide.

All the way back from Nangang village to Linjiang, if this journey had been covered by an ordinary car, then the degree of discomfort, because of several jerks and jolts, caused to the people sitting inside the car, could have given them a terrible experience, and definitely would have made them want to die. Fortunately, for Ye Feng , it was Hummer which they brought to pick him up, a really fairly comfortable vehicle!

While passing through Linjiang city, Ye Feng suddenly recalled the young girl, who was compelled by that young handsome man of Dragon Clan, to jump off the building, so he inquired about it from Scar.

As expected, because of the power and influence of Dragon Clan, nobody really cared about such a “trivial” matter. At that time, Long Xian was caught and threw inside the prison, but just a few minutes later, he was set free. However, the friends of that girl’s boyfriend came to the scene and gave a little thrashing to him, and then swaggered away.

This thing's sudden repercussion was not small, but the media from all sectors didn't at all highlight it, rather everyone tried their best to keep this news in dark. Even more, it was also pressed down in the local public opinion, obviously, this was the overbearing effect of Dragon Clan.

"It seems like that young man really deserves to die."

Ye Feng recalled the scene, back from Changbai Mountains, and thought that the secret passage did not have to be really correct at that time leniently.

When Hummer finally left Linjiang city, this trip to Changbai Mountains was finally considered as over for Ye Feng. He turned his head and looked around, since he was a bit concerned about Long Wan'er. Two weeks had already passed, but still he didn't have any updates on her, how would be she now?

Come to think of it, this young girl's father had actually killed the father of this world's Ye Feng. Anyways, Ye Feng must not talk anything about Long Clan, if Ye Wentian would come to know anything about his relationship with Ms. Dragon, then he would certainly make his life very difficult.

Ye Feng shook his head, and decided not to think about it anymore. He just had to wait for the right time, when his strength would hit a noticeably high level, at that time who could dare to stop him?

With a high-speed, Hummer was running on the road, when in the afternoon, around 3:00 pm, it arrived at a crossroad, which was about 30 km away from Yanjing City.

After reaching there, the complexion of both the men, Scar as well as Zhao

Yibei, suddenly turned dignified, as they noticed that there was a checkpoint set up at the crossroad, and lots of policemen were assigned for inspection. Logically speaking, this matter was very ordinary, nothing was so surprising about it, but the key question was, Miao Zhenjiang, the Chief of Yanjing Public Security Bureau, was actually physically present there!

This explained that the situation was really serious.

Seeing this middle-aged man, in the police uniform, with several badges, all of a sudden Ye Feng thought of that previous incident, which happened in Jingchen restaurant, where this guy was also present, with a swagger look and with a large group of criminal police.

Miao Zhenjiang had some relationship with Dragon Clan. Although Long Wan'er had also the right to give him commands, but it was quite obvious, he was actually more willing to listen to the orders given by Long Mo'ran.

So, this guy was still in a hostile relationship with Ye Feng.

As Hummer approached the checkpoint, and was naturally stopped there, then Miao Zhenjiang's eyes got attracted towards these three men sitting in the car, and suddenly a look of "finally came" appeared in his eyes. He waved his hand, and a huge number of Criminal police suddenly rushed over there.

.....

And when Ye Feng, along with the other two men, was stopped at the crossroad, at the same time, they noticed that from quite a very distant place, like a few miles away, a man, burning with rage, was gradually approaching

towards them, from one of the top ten Caves – Wangwu cave.

In today's world of the martial arts, Dragon Clan's strength was considered as second to none, and Wangwu cave, which was hidden outside this world, was one of the top ten dwelling caves, which had been occupied by Dragon Clan. Various spiritual influences used to gather up there in this cave. Moreover, the people of the Dragon Clan used to reap huge benefits through practicing here.

Today, Long Mo'ran was burning with rage, because of his daughter. Long wan'er, whom he wanted to lock inside the house, as a confinement, for a whole one year, had actually quietly slipped down the hill and ran away!

As for where she had planned to go, was that also needed to answer?

Obviously, she was going to Yanjing, in order to try to look for that Masked man!

“Long Zi, Long Qing, quickly go and take hold of that ruthless girl and bring her back to me, if she refuses to come back, don't think I would ever recognize her as my daughter!”

Long Mo'ran ordered that in a threatening tone.

“Yes, head of the Clan.”

There were two calm temperament men of Dragon Clan, standing in front of him and taking his orders. They were seemingly around 27-28 years old, and the aura around them was making it clear that they were absolutely stronger than Li Hua and Hai Tang of Heavenly Sword Palace!

Looking at those two men turning around and depart, still wasn't enough to eliminate the cold wrath of Long Mo'ran, rather he was still thinking something in his heart : "Ye Feng, finally you came back from Changbai Mountains. I must examine carefully that whether you have any connection with the Maked man or....."

He had already arranged an informer in Linjiang, when the Hummer drove out of Linjiang city, the message had been passed over to him. Apart from seizing Long Wan'er, both men Long Zi and Long Qing were also assigned to carry out an investigation plan, to find out the connection between Ye Feng and that masked man.

Regarding Long Mo'ran, he had some other important affairs to take care of.

There was a rumour spread all over the country, that recently a Fairy emerged out of the East China Sea as a mysterious woman, who was incredibly beautiful, and her temperament was like to have a complete victory over all the mortal women!

Since Long Mo'ran personally beheaded his wife, so he didn't remarry in these last two decades. It was not because he was incompetent and foolish, but because he felt that there was no woman in this world, who could be worthy of him.

However, if that fairy, who appeared in the East China Sea, was really as beautiful as the rumour claimed, then perhaps he could remarry

Chapter 85 Zhao Yibei's death

Piercing through the air, with an extremely fast speed, when Ye Feng's Hummer H2 arrived at the crossroad, it was stopped there.

By looking at the facial expression of Miao Zhenqiang, it seemed like he was waiting especially for them to show up. Seeing that made everything clear to Ye Feng, and all of a sudden his heart understood everything. He guessed that when they had left Linjiang city, at that time they might have been watched by someone, who later on reported this to Long Clan.

(Lastvoice : Dragon Clan and Long Clan both are same, hence from today onwards I'll be using Long Clan to smoothen things.)

Long Mo'ran was not a stupid man, it was quite easy for him to guess that Masked man and Dragon Wan'er must have done something. So, he set up a checkpoint specifically for this purpose. Obviously, this inspection was not at all strange.

“Get off!”

By holding a stern expression, Miao Zhenqiang said that as he waved his hand: “You are suspected that you are concerned with several consecutive murders , so please coordinate in this investigation!”

When Scar and Zhao Yibei heard that, they immediately looked towards Ye Feng, as if they wanted to let him make a suitable decision.

“Get off the car.”

Ye Feng’s facial expression was looking extremely awful. At one side, already Heavenly Serpent Gang had caused a severe headache to them by betraying them, while on the other side, Su Menghan could be caught in danger any moment. While all these troubles were already going on in his life, then at such a crucial time he was stopped at the checkpoint, which was really quite annoying for him.

However, at present lots of Criminal Police were present on the scene, hence, he had to handle this matter patiently, according to the law. He couldn’t act recklessly. Moreover, his identity as an Immortal must not get exposed at any cost.

When those three people got out of the car one after another, promptly several criminal police ran towards them, in order to seize them, as per the direction of Miao Zhenqiang,

However, right at that moment, suddenly Zhao Yibei discovered something fishy, and his heart shivered out. From his angle, he could clearly see something, like the reflections of the setting sun, in the lush field, at the side of the highway.

“Not good!”

All of a sudden Zhao Yibei shouted that, at the same time he took few steps forward quickly, and jumped in front of Ye Feng.

Bang!

A heart-jolting sound of a gunshot echoed everywhere, immediately followed by a splash of blood from Zhao Yibei's forehead. This terrifying scene suddenly gave a severe shock to all the people present there, including Ye Feng.

Someone wanted to use a sniper rifle to kill Ye Feng, however, Zhao Yibei timely discovered that, and promptly jumped in front of Ye Feng, to block him from getting shot!

Since Zhao Yibei was shot in the forehead, it was totally impossible for him to survive. Scar, Miao Zhenqiang, Ye Feng and several Criminal Police, who were present there, saw him slowly falling to the ground after getting shot.

As soon as Ye Feng saw blood splashing out of his forehead, instantaneously several scenes flashed through his mind, which reminded him of his first meeting with Zhao, when this youth exchanged few words with him to awoke him, so that the relationship between him and Su Menghan could progress in a positive way. Since Linjiang's trip, this guy, Zhao Yibei had always been greatly admiring him. Moreover, the goal of Scar, behind putting Zhao under Ye Feng's supervision, was also clear to Ye Feng now.

Such a vibrant handsome teenager, who was full of vigour and vitality, had actually lost his life at a place like this!

"You have courted your death!"

Immediately this thought crossed through Ye Feng's mind that it must be Miao Zhenqiang who would have arranged a sniper. This thought triggered his anger, and a hint of coldness appeared in his eyes. This person was a threat to all the people, hence, he couldn't be let off, not to mention that Zhao's death had already become a prove of it.

He moved quickly, and grabbed the neck of Miao Zhenqiang, and squeezed it with his hands, since for him it was really necessary to kill him.

But exactly at this point of time, the captain of the team impatiently shouted from one side: “There is a sniper! Protect the Bureau Chief! Everyone look for bunker!”

The moment these words came out, Ye Feng immediately reacted without wasting a single second.

His speed was so fast, that the Captain of the criminal police didn’t even notice his Chief, Miao Zhenqiang had already been kidnapped by Ye Feng. However, subconsciously he issued that order. It was quite obviously that the sniper, in the countryside, was not arranged by them.

Very smartly, Ye Feng placed the heavy body of Miao Zhenqiang in front of his own, so that if that sniper would open fire again, he would never be caught in it.

Firstly, his Cultivation was less than ten years, secondly, he hadn’t practiced Soul Search Technique yet, and lastly he had to conceal his Immortal status from everyone, so much passive points were there, and he didn’t even know that currently whether he was being stared by the sniper, or not.

However, he got an appropriate protection for now, but still it was going to be very difficult for him, to succeed in grabbing that sniper.

Until this time, numerous criminal police turned around, and found that their Chief had actually been kidnapped by Ye Feng, which startled them for a

moment. After all, who this boy was, how could he be so fast?

“Yibei!”

A sad and shrilling cry, all of a sudden burst out from the mouth of Scar. A clank man, seeing his ex-wife’s younger brother died under the muzzle, finally failed to his sadness, instantaneously started welling up, and shedding tears.

He moved two steps forward, lifted up the body of Zhao Yibei from the ground, held him tightly and shook him to bring him back to life. But when he noticed there was no result, he promptly took out his phone, and made a call to 120 for first aid. However, everyone already knew that the young man was shot in the forehead, there was no way he could survive, even the great Luo Shenxian couldn’t save him now.

(Lastvoice : Luo Shenxian means supernatural entity or fairy.)

At this time, most of the Criminal Police were busy looking for their bunkers, either they were trying to hide behind the police vehicle, or Scar’s Hummer, so as to keep the quilt, from being killed by that sniper.

Meanwhile, several other police, who had revolvers, had pulled out a pistol aiming at Ye Feng. If, by any chance, Chief, Miao Zhenqiang had any accident, then they would definitely open fire to kill Ye Feng on the spot!

For them, such a reaction could be considered as very normal. Because, at first, Ye Feng was incredibly fast, so it wasn’t possible for them to grasp him and rescue Miao Zhenqiang, and secondly, the sniper threat was too large to be avoided, and it was also out of the question for them to grab and arrest that person hidden in the form of sniper.

All were assigned here just in order to seize Ye Feng along with the other two men, and drag him to the police station. Who would have thought that a sniper would appear over there out of nowhere, did he want to take Ye Feng's life?

"Ye Feng! Lets go quickly!"

Miao Zhenqiang who was seized by Ye Feng currently by his neck, although was feeling very uncomfortable, still he tried unwilling to make a noise to say that.

"Hmmm, follow me."

As Ye Feng could clearly see that by no means, these policemen would try to grab the sniper, since they were too afraid to catch him personally! Therefore, he pulled Miao Zhenqiang's body, and with a lightning speed, he moved towards the direction of the field, to hunt that sniper down. But he noticed that immediately several bullets were fired in his direction, aiming at him!

It would have been 100 % impossible for any ordinary person, to even move half an inch, by carrying such a heavy motionless body like Miao Zhenqiang, who was somewhere between 160 – 170 pounds. However, it was like a child's play for Ye Feng.

Although he was caught in such a critical situation, still he didn't cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, because he couldn't afford getting exposed in front of Miao Zhenqiang, that he used to practice "martial arts". Even though he hadn't used any Immortal agility technique, still his speed was way faster than any average person.

When a group of criminal police saw Ye Feng running towards the field, while carrying Miao secretary, and that too with an incredibly fast speed, they froze to the spot. This thing terrified them so badly, that they completely failed to react, and thought, was this guy really a human?

Shua! Shua!

After a few ups and downs, Ye Feng finally came to a field, which was covered with a man's height tall and dense grass. And surprisingly he found a trace of someone lying on the ground. However, the sniper had already run away, but left behind a trace, which was a pretty good sign!

"You want to run away? It's not that easy."

Ye Feng coldly snorted as he took out a knife, and the next moment, he slightly cut down the nape of Miao Zhenqiang. As a result, the Bureau Chief immediately lost his consciousness and fainted on the spot.

Afterwards, as per his plan, he continued carrying unconscious Miao Zhenqiang along with him, while simultaneously he activated Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. In a blink of an eye, his speed rose up, and it became quite handy for him, to start searching for that sniper, even more carefully, all over the place surrounded by tall grass.

Very soon, he found a clue!

At a distance of one kilometre, a strong-built man, wearing black camouflage clothes, was there. He was actually trying to escape from a tunnel, but

unfortunately was caught by Ye Feng. In all fairness, just within two or three minutes, this black dressed guy ran one kilometre of distance, moreover, he had already dug a tunnel beforehand, which clearly proved that his assassination experience was extremely rich.

Unfortunately, in front of Ye Feng everything was like fleeting.

“Guala Guala?”

The moment that strong built black guy saw Ye Feng running towards him, while carrying a person, he felt as if he saw the ghost, which scared the hell out of him.

He could not understand how Ye Feng caught up with him in such a short time!

“Can you speak Chinese? Tell me who sent you here?”

Ye Feng asked that with a cold voice, and immediately engraved a solid punch on his face. As a result, that black man, after getting punched by him, heavily fell to the ground, and spat a mouthful of fresh blood, along with several white teeth.

“Guala Guala”

The Black guy was still speaking very strangely, might be in a different language. But unfortunately, Ye Feng’s English was quite poor, because of which he was completely unable to understand him.

Just when Ye Feng frowned, exactly then, that black dressed guy suddenly took out a short edge knife from the bottom of his camouflage pants, and with extremely fast speed and full force, he moved his knife towards Ye Feng's chest, and stabbed him!

Chapter 86 Xiaohua was cheated.

[tl: Xiaohua means the prettiest girl of the school.]

Undoubtedly, the black dressed man was a professional killer! He was truly impeccable regardless of any perspective, but regretfully he happened to encounter Ye Feng.

As the black dressed sniper pulled out a knife to pierce it in Ye Feng's heart, Ye Feng easily moved sideways and dodged it. In return Ye Feng threw a punch on his wrist, making his knife fly after a preliminary shock. He then immediately looked into his eyes and said : "Sleep!"

Immortal Technique "Hypnosis" was basically used to deal with ordinary people, since it was quite appropriate for them. However, Ye Feng's eyes barely focused on his eyes, and the black dressed sniper instantly lost his consciousness.

If Hypnosis was cast on a firm determined person like this killer, then hypnotic time couldn't stay very long, hence Ye Feng, without further delay, bluntly asked: "Who has sent you here?"

"Song Tianying"

He could speak Chinese quite fluently, but since his professionalism didn't allow him to expose the identity of his employer, hence he was speaking strangely like that. However, under the Hypnosis of Ye Feng, how could an ordinary person conceal anything!

Poof!

Right after getting the answer, without wasting any other second, Ye Feng's Zhenqi condensed sword emerged out, and he directly jabbed it into the chest of that guy, immediately followed by a fresh blood spatter from his body. This way he finished the killer of Zhao Yibei and took revenge. But that handsome youth, Zhao Yibei could never wake up.

After putting away his sword, Ye Feng kept Miao Zhenjiang together with that sniper's body, and then he moved sideways, and quickly activated Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, to return to the side of the highway, as fast as possible. Meanwhile, he also found that most of the policemen were in the bushes, trying to search Miao Zhenjiang, while very few of them were left behind on the highway. in order to keep watch on Scar.

Ye Feng walked out from the dense bushes, snorted coldly and said : "Your Chief is carried off by a man wearing a mask, you guys quickly withdraw, or else wait for him to gather up dead bodies."

Just when his word came out, exactly then the criminal police found that beyond one km, there was a dead man in a black dress together with stupor Miao Zhenqiang, and immediately they came to the conclusion that it must be the Masked man.

Therefore, the remaining police, who stayed to keep watch on Scar, looked at each other in turmoil, and finally after thinking something, they moved aside and made a path for Ye Feng.

Ye Feng must leave this place as soon as possible. So long as he got back to Yanjing, it was impossible for him to make a call either to Old man Lin or

Hongchuan.

“Scar, lets go.”

Ye Feng came closer to Scar, as he said that.

His eyes were looking towards Zhao Yibei, who was lying on the ground. There was no movement in his body. Ye Feng’s heart was feeling very uncomfortable seeing him dead like this. Just some time ago, this youth had praised him for his good looks after wearing a suit, but now he was dead.

Song Tianying would certainly have to pay for this by his life!

“It is Song Tianying who hired that killer, after getting back, quickly try to find him.”

Ye Feng’s eyes flashed with coldness.

“So it was that bastard, who was behind this?”

When Scar heard his name, he didn’t doubt for a second. Earlier, Song Hu played a very important role in Heavenly Serpent Gang, his contribution couldn’t be overlooked as well, and his performance could be considered quite satisfactory. However, his nephew Song Tianying was totally useless; he just used to loiter around all day long, behind girls and beer. Come to think of it, he even hired a sniper now to kill someone.

Now, Zhao Yibei was dead.

Being the part of this criminal world for last so many years, Scar had seen a lot of deaths so far. But this time, his mood seemed to be exactly like he had then during those days, when he saw his wife being killed brutally by that Swordsman.

“Elder brother Ye, you must teach me the martial arts!”

By putting on an aggressive expression, accompanied by two lines of tears, finally, Scar expressed his determination! Undoubtedly he had been bearing this pain patiently for so many years!

“Sure. First get in the car, ok.”

Ye Feng’s surging emotions were also fluctuating at this moment.

Scar had struggled for more than ten years, finally, when he managed to take Heavenly Serpent Gang at such a great height, after going through lots of difficulties, Song Hu and his people plotted and rebelled against him, and got colluded with Black Dragon Association. His wife and all other family members had already passed away, now no one left at his side. He had changed into an average person now, absolutely couldn’t afford such a blow.

If possible, Ye Feng would like to help him. He thought of that time when Zhu Bainiao was at his point of death, and had drawn a map close to the East China Sea, where he had buried his lost Hidden Weapon Technique of Hidden Immortal School.

Ghost Crying Blade Technique, combined with the other martial arts techniques of Hidden Immortal School, would be very appropriate for Scar. He

would probably teach him how to practice this.

Of course, he had to wait for now, at first, he had to go back to Song Tianying and Song Hu to resolve this issue.

Bringing Zhao Yibei's corpse back to Hummer, Scar sat on the driving position, and stepped on the accelerator, making Hummer run crazily towards the direction of Yanjing.

Several criminal police were there, but they couldn't dare to stop them, they just kept on watching them leaving. Soon they received the message of another team leader, that Chief Miao had been found, simultaneously a corpse of a black dressed guy had also been found there.

By a sharp weapon, the heart of that black dressed guy had been pierced and had died. His body was found beside Miao Zhenqiang's unconscious body, he should be the sniper. His identity has also been easy to spot out, he turned out to be the killer of international organizations – members of the Viper.

Although this black dressed sniper was the preliminary level killer, but still his employment price had been astonishing high, like several million! It seemed like many people wanted to see Ye Feng dead.

Originally team leader's plan was to take hold of Ye Feng along with the other two men, but now how could he do that, he could only wait for Miao Zhenqiang to get back into senses, and then order them again. Because this time, it was totally Miao Zhenqiang's private action.

.....

When Hummer H2 speedily pulled into Yanjing City, the cell phone of Scar suddenly rang up.

Quite naturally, Scar was in an extremely foul mood at this time, hence he angrily picked it up and answered: "Who?"

"Woah Woah, brother Scar, why are you being so angry?"

A very impolite and arrogant voice of that youth passed through the phone : "is your younger male cousin dead? Hey, kindly pay a silent tribute to him on my behalf"

"Song Tianying, your courage has crossed all limits now."

By putting on a gloomy face, Scar said that to him sullenly.

"You are saying that again? Scar Brother, I don't have the heart to tell you, but still I have to say that now the era of your power and influence has already gone. Besides, also that young girl, surnamed Su is in my clutch, and soon she is going to have fun too with everybody"

Song Tianying happily said that, with a very evil tone. Actually currently he was filled with a pleasant sensation of retaliation.

That boy, surnamed Ye had actually dared to hit him on the train! Therefore, shouldn't he ask the killer to kill him? Just listening to the tone of Scar confirmed him that the killer had definitely succeeded in his goal. Moreover, Ye Feng's

woman was also in his grip now.

“If you want to save her, then come to Tianhua Casino within an hour, if time expires, I’ll not wait!”

Gloomily, Song Tianying said that, and then immediately hung up the phone.

When Ye Feng heard this, his complexion suddenly changed.

As he ordered earlier that must not let Su Menghan leave the villa, then how did she get caught and carried to Tianhua Casino?

Ye Feng didn’t even say anything, but Scar instantly stepped his foot on the accelerator, and with a speed of 160-170, he galloped towards the urban areas of Yanjing. Hummer’s speed was really extremely fast, which was sufficient to cause a traffic chaos.

Unfortunately, looking at the license plate of Hummer, the ordinary traffic police couldn’t dare to go forward and block it, hence Scar soared all the way back to the north-west city Yanjing, quite smoothly.

Sun just descended the mountain, when Hummer finally arrived and stopped at the gate of Tianhua Casino.

.....

At this time of the day, at Tianhua Casino, Song Tianying, wearing a suit, with the high nose, was sitting in a deluxe room, talking to people and was looking

very handsome.

Surprisingly, the person with whom he was having a conversation right now, turned out to be Su Menghan's father, Su Xinchang.

"Hey, also thanks to you."

Song Tianying sipped his wine, and said:. "Otherwise, it had never been really easy for us to catch your daughter."

With a faint smile, Su Xinchang said while looking at the glass of red wine in Song Tianyin's hands : "At present, I have nothing left in this world, to work with Heavenly Serpent Gang is a big honour for me, truly."

Su Menghan was cheated out by her own father, Su Xinchang. It was him who dragged her here from her villa.

Song Tianying smiled, and thought to himself that this time, that girl had been injected with the new drug, right? From now on, he could control her future, like how to entertain him, or treat other guys.

Such a great beauty was she, it was not like such kind could be casually seen.....

Chapter 87 → A punch throws someone down the building!

Clad in western-style suit and tie, Song Tianying arrived in front of a room, on the sixth floor of Tianhua Casino. Originally, this room was the workplace of Scar, but now it had become a place where Su Menghan had been detained.

“How are the things here? Have you completed everything?”

He entered the room and asked that.

“Done, Song Elder brother.”

Immediately, a young guy with greasy hairstyle with a powdered face, coquettishly said that.

Song Tianying nodded in satisfaction, and then raised his head and looked inside the room. There he saw Su Menghan lying on the sofa in an unconscious state. Her charming face was looking somewhat pale, wearing a pink chiffon shirt, with a black knee length skirt, revealing a snow white skin, was appearing weak hanging on the side of a sofa.

Moreover, there were two black dressed tall guys, who were standing next to the sofa. They bowed to greet him when his eyes fell on them.

“Little girl, this new drug once injected, and you will become addicted to it, let's see how you get rid of my palm.”

He laughed evilly, then slowly moved to the edge of the sofa, stretched out his

hand, as he wanted to touch the fair, smooth and clear face of Su Menghan.

But right at this moment, the door of the room was suddenly burst opened by a person!

“Oh Song Elder brother, not good, Scar Scar elder brother has come back!”

A young guy ran up to him breathlessly and reported that.

“So what? If they have come back, what are you afraid of? Didn’t we already make a plan about how to cope up with him? Just act according to our plan, that’s all!”

Song Tianying said that somewhat impatiently.

“But, Song brother, the boy, who had thrashed brother Tie last time, has also come back together with Brother Scar!”

That young guy hastily said.

Ye Feng’s last visit to Tianhua Casino had left a deep impression in the mind of this young guy, because last time Ye Feng had badly punched brother Tie, and blatantly left the place without any fear. Hence, when that guy saw him again, he became a little scared. Ye Feng was really a ruthless person in his eyes.

“What?”

Fianlly, his complexion took a 360 degree turn, and he became serious. Shouldn't that boy be killed by now, by that specialised killer of Viper Organization? Then how could he come back? He had spent eight million to hire a sniper, and had faced several hardships to ask Miao Zhenqiang, to set up a checkpoint for inspection. Wasn't it a very difficult way of beating the flowing water?

"It's useless! Hurry up, go downstairs, and pass this order to the assigned gunmen, to kill the kid together with Scar!"

His face revealed a colour of regret, although his decision to kill Ye Feng here in this Casino, might create several problems for him, since Ye Feng was related with Yanjing Lin Clan somehow. But now he wasn't in the mood to think about this stuff.

"Really? I'd like to see how you want to kill me."

Just then, a voice familiar to Song Tianying, as rumoured, suddenly passed through from outside the room.

The voice barely fell, and Ye Feng wearing a western style suit, burst in the room like ghosts and demons in general. Immediately he punched that messenger guy, made him fly several meters in the air. As a result, that guy spat a mouthful of fresh blood in the air, then fell heavily to the ground, and his chapter came to end, as he couldn't move again.

Other people present in the room immediately reacted. Those two black dressed tall guys quickly took out their pistols in his hands.

But Ye Feng's speed was extraordinarily fast, by leaving several blurred afterimages in-situ, he instantly arrived in front of Song Tianying, grabbed him by the collar, and picked him up!

"Ye Feng, how you didn't die!"

Panic-stricken, Song Tianying made an effort to struggle hard and break himself free, his complexion had also paled down, how couldn't he think through that Ye Feng could survive even from the ambush of killer.

"That you don't need to worry about, just think about how you are going to meet your death."

Ye Feng snorted lightly, as he made a huge effort with his hands, and threw the whole body of Song Tianying into the air.

Then he stood firmly, and clenched his right fist, immediately his whole body's qi started accumulating and condensing around his fist, and finally with an extremely sudden and swift movement, he punched him in his stomach!

Thump!

At his current Cultivation level, the punch he threw at him, had at least 500 kilograms of force. This one punch, when touched him, he directing flew in the air, like being thrown out as a volleyball, and then heavy slammed on the glass window. With a "bang" sound, the glass cracked-up, and he fell down!

With the sad and pitiful screams, Song Tianying's body fell down with a very fast speed, and soon his screams stopped suddenly, it seemed like he plunged to

death.

Ye Feng could feel that downstairs, outside the bar, things had become somewhat chaotic instantly!

Ye Feng's heart finally felt a little better, his pain was slightly subsided after punching that beast down to his death. This was the real help to Zhao Yibei's revenge.

If Zhao Yibei hadn't block the bullet aiming towards Ye Feng, then he would not have died yet, it was 100 % an undeniable fact!. Zhao Yibei sacrificed his life for him. Therefore, it was his responsibility to take revenge on behalf of Zhao Yibei.

Since Song Tianying died such a death, he now hoped that it could make Zhao Yibei rest in peace.

Ye Feng sighed, as he knew that this thing might cause trouble , however, he was not the slightest bit afraid of anything now. Rather he took an another decision, Song Hu, the uncle of Song Tianying, he wouldn't let him go as well.

He turned around and saw two black dressed tall men stood beside the sofa, holding a pistol, and carrying a distracted look on his face.

Obviously, they hadn't expected that Ye Feng would barge in so decisively, and punch Song Tianying which would throw him down. The might of that punch had already scared them, and on top of that throwing him down from the sixth floor, and he wouldn't die, that would be just very strange!

“Ye elder brother!”

Those two people quickly put away the pistol, and respectfully greeted him, although a trace of fear could be seen in their eyes.....

“Aren’t you Song Tianying’s side?”

Ye Feng asked that lightly, and immediately shifted his gaze towards Su Menghan lying on sofa. He noticed her pretty face had turned pale, which caused a bit of pain in his heart. Also he didn’t know what injustice had been done to her, after carrying her here?

“Ye elder brother, since beginning he have always been brother Scar’s subordinates and have been at his side!”

One of the black dressed tall guys said in a lower voice: “Since Song Tianying was being very rampant, we had to temporarily succumb to his

“These have nothing to do with me, she doesn’t like this place, then how did she come here?”

Ye Feng asked that as he arrived close to Su Menghan, hugged her tender body in his bosom, and felt her palpitation. He was suffering from the feeling of guilt.

If only he had come back a bit earlier, she would not have to suffer these hardships.

“This.....”

The two black dressed tall guys looked at each other in blank dismay, since they didn't know should say.

"If you guys have something to say, just say it, don't dawdle."

Ye Feng lightly hummed, and raised his head to look around. He saw that besides those two Black dressed tall guys, there was a greasy hair and powdered face youth, who was trying to slip out secretly.

"You want to escape?"

Ye Feng moved forward, and directly grabbed that guy by his hands.

"Ye elder brother, it's him!"

One of the black dressed guy finally ventured, and by clenching his teeth, he pointed his finger towards that wretched young and said: "Just recently, this guy has injected a new kind of drug to Ms. Ye"

"What?"

As soon as Ye Feng heard that, his complexion turned black, and he completely failed to control his surging emotions, his Zhenqi suddenly broke out, and incautiously he crushed the neck of that youth into crumbs!

Su Menghan was injected with drugs!

Bang!

Ye Feng also threw him down from the sixth floor, and hastily rushed towards Su Menghan to examine her condition.

Now he suddenly felt that the way Song Tianying was killed, was such an easy death for him. That bastard deserved a brutal death, how could he dare to inject new drugs to Su Menghan!

At this time, a group of people appeared at the door of the room. It was Scar with his people, who had brought Su Xinchang. Actually, Scar grabbed him when he was trying to escape from the spot, and presented him before Ye Feng.

“Trust me! I really didn’t know that bastard would inject drug to Menghan, ah, really

Su Xinchang was frightened to urinate, was weeping and wailing.

“Ye elder brother, this guy has plotted with Song Tianying, and swindled Ms. Ye out, how do you want to deal with him?”

Scar said that in a sinking voice, as he pushed Su Xinchang forward, making him kneel down at the entrance of the room.

Su Xinchang looked inside the room, and when he noticed that there was a very ugly expression on Ye Feng’s face as if he was boiling with a cruel killing intention, his heart trembled with fear, and he began constantly thinking about

how to escape out from here.

He didn't have thought that Scar would still survive, even though Song Tianying had arranged 5-6 gunmen to deal with him. Because Ye Feng was now being unwittingly angry, and he had finished them up in just one fell swoop, moreover he also mercilessly punched Song Tianying down to his death.

Chapter 88 -> Xiaohua's Immortal Cultivation

Ye Feng was already in an awful mood.

Seeing Su Xinchang sitting on his knees, at the entrance of the room, he didn't say much, but said : "Bring him home first, there I will have a talk with him."

He wanted to take Su Menghan back to the villa, as soon as possible, so that he could try to remove the drugs present in her body, with the help of his Zhenqi.

"Yes."

This time, Scar directly called Ye Feng as "Ye Elder brother" in the public, and other people didn't have anything too big to respond.

Ye Feng's relationship with Lin Clan had already spread all over in Yanjing, obviously, all the people of Heavenly Serpent Gang must be aware of it already. Could Scar have such a younger male cousin? It was close to impossible.

"But Ye Elder brother."

At first, Scar thought for a while, and then said : "Song Hu is not here in Tianhua Casino at the moment. He might have gone to have a discussion with Black Dragon Association. So, what should be our next move?"

"Regarding the matter of the Gang, I won't go to manage it, you have to take care of it."

Ye Feng shook his head, and directly left the room while holding Su Menghan's soft and tender body.

He was not even the least bit interested in the matters of Gang, however, regarding Song Hu, he would certainly kill him! Of course, since the opposite party wasn't here right now, hence he would let him live his dog's life for the time being. But, immediately after curing Su Menghan, he would definitely take him on.

"Two of you, go with Ye Elder brother to his villa!"

Scar gave an order to those two black dressed tall guys, and then together with Su Xinchang, he returned to 'Qingfeng Park' as per the instruction of Ye Feng.

Just thinking about the death of Zhao Yibei, suddenly made Scar feel a little tired. So many years of hard work to establish his gang, Heavenly Serpent Gang, but in reality, he failed to protect even his own loved ones, several times. Then what was the point of running such a big gang?

As he saw Ye Feng's back while he was departing, he finally came to a conclusion, and set his firm resolve. For him, after getting things completely done over here, he would just follow Ye Feng from now on. And this determination of him was finally made by keeping this point in mind, that someday in future, he would get trained by him, to become his number one right-hand man!

.....

Holding Su Menghan in his hands, Ye Feng went outside, and got in the car, BMW. A trusted man of Scar personally drove him back.

Icy-silver BMW car reminded him of Zhao Yibei. Now he had finally avenged for him, but it was still difficult for him to cheer up his heart.

He shook his head, for him currently, the first priority before anything was to deal with Su Menghan's things.

Ye Feng thought that today during the daytime, this Xiaohua had talked to him about school's mock test result on the telephone. All of a sudden his mind ceased and he felt dazzled just by thinking that how could Su Xinchang do such a thing to his own daughter? Even if he didn't know that Song Tianying would inject drugs to her, but still deceiving his own daughter and handing her over to the underworld people, wasn't it too trash?

If Su Xinchang were an ordinary person, Ye Feng would have directly killed him to put an end to this trouble, but since he was Su Menghan's father, therefore, how to deal with him was quite puzzling for him. Hence, he would rather prefer to see what would be Su Menghan's decision, when she would wake up.

Soon, two cars pulled into 'Qingfeng Park', and stopped in front of Ye Feng's villa.

Ye Feng, while holding Su Menghan, opened the door of his villa, and stepped inside. Two black dressed tall guys followed him, along with the detained Su Xinchang.

"You guys have a sit, just don't run all over the place. Also, keep a good watch

on Su Xinchang, and wait for me to get down and start dealing with him.”

After finished saying that to those tall guys, Ye Feng went upstairs carrying Su Menghan.

As those two guys heard that, they looked at each other in blank dismay, they never had thought that Ye Feng would be so polite to them. Moreover, unexpectedly he also asked them to sit down. Certainly, Ye Feng asked them to sit until he got down, still they didn't dare to sit, rather they stood firmly in the hall, watching Su Xinchang.

Upstairs, as Ye Feng holding her went inside the bedroom, he smelled a faint delicate fragrance. That was this young girl's unique fragrance, which could make people feel completely relaxed.

“Fortunately, I came back to Yanjing at a right time, because, in addition to injecting drugs to her, that bastard could have done other harmful things to her. But he didn't get enough time for that. However, still this drug alone has been difficult enough

While thinking about this, Ye Feng gently placed her delicate body on the soft bed.

“Umm.....”

She finally showed a little movement along with a sound, somewhat drowsily she opened her eyes, and saw Ye Feng looking at her, with a very anxious-looking face. She rubbed her eyes, as she couldn't believe that she would see him in such an anxious state.

“Menghan, I finally came back tell me, how are you feeling now?”

Ye Feng opened his mouth to ask that.

“I I feel like I was knocked down probably What happened?”

She said that a little weakly, and then tried to sit up.

“Don’t move.”

Ye Feng stopped her, it seemed like she didn’t know anything about this drug thing. Hence, he decided that not telling her would be a good choice.

Somewhat haggardly, but with a touch of concern for him, which could be clearly seen in her beautiful eyes, she said : “What happened about your trip and where had you gone? Did that matter go through?”

“Yes, everything has been all right, It’s just”

He was about to say something, but hesitated.

Suddenly a thought crossed his mind, there were no such things like drugs in the World of the Immortals, was it because Cultivation practice never let people become addictive to any drug? Even if it was the worst Immortal Cultivation Technique, but when it was in revolution, it used to automatically clear away all impurities present within one’s body. Therefore, people of Immortal world rarely fell sick.

If it could also make Su Menghan capable of beginning practicing Immortal Cultivation, then it would be good

As he was thinking that, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring present on his finger, suddenly lit up!

This thing suddenly attracted the attention of Su Menghan. She had been seeing him wearing this ring from quite a long time, and had always been thinking what was the meaning of it. Now for her, it was like, could it also shine now? Very miraculous appearance!

A month ago, exactly like now, this Ancient Dragon Sword Ring had also shone brightly then, and then a mystical air current entered Ye Feng's body, and immediately formed core Dan in his Dantian.

But now?

He didn't have any hesitation, he immediately put out his hands, and tightly hugged her soft tender body.

"Ah You....."

Su Menghan wasn't ready for that, hence, this action of him suddenly startled her.

"Don't move."

Ye Feng softly whispered: “There is a secret that I have never told you. Actually, I am an Immortal who can practice many Immortal Cultivation Techniques Now, I want to also make you an Immortal, do you want to be?”

“Immortal, Cultivation? Are you kidding

The secret of Ye Feng frightened her. Terms like Immortal, Cultivation, and so on, were not new to her. Ofcourse she already knew about this, after all, she had seen a lot of things in the past related to this, such as the Internet novel “Execute the Immortal” and the likes.

However, was Ye Feng really an Immortal who knew Immortal Cultivation?

Was this possible?

She didn’t believe such a thing, but due to the surge of warm air into her body, the area below her navel began to release heat. That was the position of her Dantian, accompanied with the tingling and itching feeling all over her body.

“Really good! Now there is core Dan in your Dantian, I’ll teach you one of the Immortal Cultivation Techniques, just follow me, and try to start revolving just as I say.”

Now Ye Feng could feel the formation of core Dan within her body, and his face instantly lit up. He immediately started teaching her Star Tomb Tactics. He wanted her to clearly understand the complete process of this technique.

However, Su Menghan was sceptical about it. On the basis of Ye Feng’s instructions, she really felt that a flow of air had suddenly started within her

body. She tried to mobilise the streams, which suddenly startled her, because just like what Ye Feng said, her body began to warm up.

“Can you do it?”

Ye Feng was concerned about her, therefore, he anxiously asked that.

With the help of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, he could make Su Menghan Cultivation Immortal, which was unusually lucky. But this option alone was not enough to let Ye Feng have a peace of mind, since to begin the process of Cultivation, Immortal Cultivation talent was needed, which was considered as the most important step!

Also, he didn't have any idea, whether Su Menghan had any talent or not?

Back then, he just took a second to comprehend the full process of Star Tomb Tactics, and had completed the big heavenly circulation just in an hour.

“It seems to be a bit strange feeling

Su Menghan finally succeeded in controlling Zhenqi within her body, but her mind was piled up with lots of question. She was puzzled, even if he was an Immortal, why did he come back to teach her Immortal Cultivation? Could it be that something was going to happen?

While on the other side, Ye Feng was a bit tensed. Actually what making Ye Feng a bit worried was, did she actually know that she had been injected with a new drug while she was in the stupor?

He closely hugged her in his bosom, and by moving his own Zhenqi, he started guiding her the initial practice. Back then, Su Feiying had also taught him like that, but the only difference was, he had a gifted talent, therefore soon Su Feiying had loosened him to let him practice on his own.

As time passed quietly, the drugs within her body also resided, along with the flow of Zhenqi which gradually discharged from her body

Chapter 89 A dead-end

When Su Menghan finally managed to complete one big heavenly revolution of Star Tomb Tactics, that gave a feeling of relief to Ye Feng. Henceforth, Star Tomb Tactics would work on its own automatically, it didn't need to constantly pay attention to it. Even more, it used to enhance one's Cultivation naturally.

He looked at the time, from the moment she began practicing to till now, altogether she had spent a total one and a half-hours of time, which was equal to almost three hours.

“Although, your innate talent is inferior to me, but it's not that bad.”

Ye Feng said that somewhat joyfully.

In reality, this kind of innate talent of her was already considered as top-notch talent in the World of the Immortals. There were many Immortals, who used to spend even a whole day, to complete their first big heavenly revolution, during the starting phase of their practice. From now onwards, if Su Menghan would ever want to practice any Immortal Technique in the future, then she would be definitely a lot quicker than any other average person.

She opened her beautiful eyes slowly, and felt that her body seemed to have become a bit different. Even more, her haggardness had also vanished all of a sudden without leaving a trace, and she had become very energetic out of the blue.

“Ye Feng.”

She softly shouted his name.

“What happened?”

Ye Feng loosened her soft and tender body, and smiled gently while staring at her pretty face.

“Thank you, thank you so much for trusting me.....”

At the moment, her heart was overflowing with emotions: “This must be your biggest secret, right? I certainly won’t say it out to anybody”

“Take a shower quickly, I’m going downstairs first, and will wait for you.”

Ye Feng gently smiled, but didn’t say anything, he patted her shoulder softly, and then set out to leave.

Since she had just completed one big heavenly revolution, the impurities within her body along with the drugs had been completely cleared out, leaving behind a thin layer of oil on the surface of her skin, making it very glossy. Her condition was like this, if she didn’t take a bath, then she couldn’t meet anyone in this condition.

Although Ye Feng asked her to shower, but that was not needed, since she could clearly realize her current situation. She was in an extreme shock seeing her oily skin, hence, she quickly jumped out of the bed, but suddenly remembered that, was there any bathroom upstairs in this building?

“Come downstairs with your clothes, all right.”

After saying that, he took one step down the stairs.

Downstairs, those two tall guys were still standing and guarding Su Xinchang, without even moving a half step. When Ye Feng saw them like this, he truly admired Heavenly Serpent Gang for hiring some pretty elites; after all, that was a whole three hours.

“Come outside, lets have a talk there.”

Ye Feng waved his hand, as he looked at Su Xinchang cold sweating, and then he took the lead and went out of the hall.

Standing continuously for whole three hours, had turned Su Xinchang’s feet numb. But as soon as he saw Ye Feng coming downstairs, he finally heaved a sigh of relief. However, he already knew that when Ye Feng would come down, Su Xinchang’s bad time would start then.

“He took a long time, what were these two people doing upstairs?”

Su Xinchang couldn’t bear but think about this, in fact, he had this thought crossed his mind, countless times during these last three hours. And then he finally arrived at a conclusion that there could be only one thing, that could be given by Su Menghan to him, and was

Had his daughter finally become Ye Feng’s woman?

These four people came in the courtyard, under the light of the moon and stars, Ye Feng lazily leaning against the wall, lightly asked : “Tell me, what happened in these last few days? And exactly how did you join hands with that kind of person Song Tianying

At present, Ye Feng was in a relatively more relaxed mood, after all, not only Su Menghan had been cured and was all right now, but he had also found the wondrous use of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. As the matter stood right now, he could also make Long Wan’er an Immortal, which was awesome news for him.

Naturally, he wasn’t in a hurry in case of Long Wan’er, because the relationship between these Clans was really

Seeing that Ye Feng’s facial expression had improved a bit, Su Xinchang also slightly calmed down and changed his mood. Finally he started telling about his bitter experiences in these days.

Ever since that night in the Jingcheng restaurant, Xie family had started causing lots of troubles to him. But after seeing Old Man Lin there in the restaurant, the share of Su Xinchang in Su Sheng Group had gradually started eroding, a small portion was snatched away by other Xie people, while the majority of shares were sold to Lin Clan’s Group, at an extremely low price.

Just like how Lin Clan’s company, Lin Group had a huge number of shares in one big multinational corporation. Exactly like that, when Su Sheng Group’s shares were being sold at such a low price, naturally they would love to accept this offer.

Therefore, originally from a billionaire, Su Xinchang turned into a bankrupt, who didn’t have a thing left in the world. Moreover, Xie Min also asked for the

divorce, because of two reasons. Firstly, because of his daughter Su Menghan, and secondly Lin Clan's snatched away his everything by taking hold of his Su Shen Group, wasn't this like courting death? Xie people were also assuming that Su Xinchang and his daughter surely would never have any good end!

Xie Clan was afraid of Lin Clan, rather than Ye Feng, therefore, they made such a choice, which was quite obvious and acceptable. Even his Secretary, Hu Meimei directly left him, so that she could replace Xie Min's uncle in Su Sheng Group.

Nothing left for him in this world, it was like a dead-end for him. Naturally, he was not at all willing to go on like this. By chance, he got an opportunity to join a mysterious organization.

This mysterious organization made him coordinate with Heavenly Serpent Gang's Song Hu. The plan was to get rid of Ye Feng first, and then take hold of Heavenly Serpent Gang! From his point of view, the condition was matchless and very attractive, which immediately stirred up his interest.

Thus, the intense planning started taking its dangerous form. As per their plan, initially they wanted to eradicate all the trusted subordinates of Scar, present in Heavenly Serpent Gang. Afterwards, the next step was to hire new professionals with the help of Su Xinchang, and soon all the assets of Heavenly Serpent Gang would fall under their control. Finally they would fix their prime focus on the rapid development of a group of loyal subordinates.

Today's plan was to attack Ye Feng when he would be outside the city Yanjing, in order to try avoiding any kind of trouble which might be caused anytime, by Lin Clan. After finishing Ye Feng, today's next plan was to directly put an end to Scar's life. Thus by this way, the total control of this gang would come in their grip.

Unfortunately, the series of plans made by them, one after another, was terribly devastated by Ye Feng.

Regarding Su Xinchang deceiving Su Menghan, and dragging her out of the villa, and letting her fall in the clutch of Song Tianying, was completely a secondary matter. It was only to satisfy the desire of Song Tianying, and nothing more than that. It had nothing to do with their plan to overtake Heavenly Serpent Gang.

Su Xinchang had originally thought, if Su Menghan would develop a liking for Song Tianying, then in future, with the help of a mysterious organization, he could be able to jointly control Heavenly Serpent Gang along with its big Casino. Really, he didn't have expected that Song Tianying would inject drugs to his daughter.

“Did any other mysterious organization contact you? Like Cai Shao ever contacted you?”

Ye Feng pondered for a while, then asked that at once.

It appeared like nowadays he had two main rivals, one was that mystical organisation which was under the control of Cai Shao. And the second was undoubtedly Long Clan from the Martial arts world. But if he wouldn't come up with the identity of the masked man, then the threat of Long Clan could be considered insignificant, temporarily.

“Cai Shao?”

After hearing this name, Su Xinchang felt a bit puzzled, obviously he hadn't heard this name ever.

"Never mind."

Ye Feng shook his head, it seemed like the opposite party didn't consider Su Xinchang as an important figure. Hence how could it be possible that Cai Shao would personally contact him.

"Well, now tell me, how do you want to deal with this situation?"

Putting on a calm and composed appearance, Ye Feng looked at him, while waiting for his reply.

Su Xinchang gawked, then with a sigh, he said: "Can I see Menghan?"

"No problem, right now she is in the bath, wait for a while."

Ye Feng said that, as he look towards him coldly: "But if you still want to cheat her, then don't blame me for being impolite."

Su Xinchang smiled: "Don't worry, she has become a drug addict, all because of me. As a father, I have gone too far, as long as she is willing to forgive me, nothing matters to me anymore....."

Su Xinchang's reply startled him, since it was totally unexpected. He felt that Su Xinchang's facial expressions was not falsely framed, was he really suffering from repentance and guilt?

Moreover, why was he so sure that his daughter had become addicted to drugs? Might be, he had known that recently several new drugs had entered the market, with a very strong addiction capability, so he was feeling sorry for his daughter.

Unfortunately, he didn't know that Su Menghan had started practicing Immortal Cultivation and had already removed all the toxins out of her body. For those, who used to practice Immortal Cultivation, the word addiction was a ridiculous term.

“Drug addiction? What are you talking about?”

At this time, after taking her bath, Su Menghan came out in good clothes, and just happened to hear Su Xinchang saying such things related to drug addiction, which aroused her interest and implanted doubts in her mind.

Chapter 90 – Long Wan'er arrives

Immediately after taking a bath, Su Menghan, wearing a light blue lace dress, gracefully came to the entrance, her long and luxuriant hair was looking somewhat wet, apparently she came out without blow-drying her hair.

She heard Ye Feng and Su Xinchang talking outside, something about drug addiction. Hence, she couldn't help but came outside, and directly asked about what was the matter of this addiction?

Seeing her outside, Ye Feng went towards her, and whispered a few words in her ear. Anyway, now she had started practising Immortal Cultivation, and had already thoroughly eliminated the drug addiction from her body, hence telling her about it wouldn't be a big deal now.

After listening to what he had to say, Su Menghan suddenly realised, and in a flash, she thought of an idea.

“Can we lie to him?”

Su Menghan winked.

“Understood.”

Ye Feng smiled, as he nodded his head.

They finished whispering, and finally came to the courtyard in front of Su Xinchang. As for those two tall guys were concerned, they were standing outside

the yard, like personal security guards.

Seeing those two people gradually approaching towards him, Su Xinchang became a bit nervous. Especially after seeing Su Menghan's condition, her face wasn't looking quite good, which made him very anxious. He thought that no matter what, but when a person came to know that he had been injected with drugs, and now infected with drug addiction, how could it be possible for him to be in the good mood?

"What do you have to say?"

She came and stood close to Ye Feng, her beautiful eyes were looking at Su Xinchang. Very sadly she asked that, as if she just learned that she was infected with a drug addiction.

"I Menghan, I am a beast, I am not a human."

Su Xinchang's corners of the mouth were trembling because of guilt feeling, by putting on a forced smile on his face, he continued : "So long as you can forgive me, just let me know what do you want me to do."

"What more can you give me now?"

As she said that, a painful expression covered her face, as if she was going through an extreme suffering.

"I....."

Su Xinchang didn't know what should he say, ah, as of now, was he still able to give anything to her?

“At least at least I still have a house and a car Menghan, you can forgive me, right? We can again live together”

When everyone around him, left him and walked away one after another, he was left behind alone, with a very bitter and painful heart. Now he didn't have a thing in this whole world. Was Su Menghan also willing to return to his side?

As everyone knew it that She simply never cared how many assets, cars and buildings her father had. All these stuff never mattered to her. Only if her father had been really nice and sincere towards her, then she could be happily willing to endure any hardship, just to live by his side.

Unfortunately.....

“A house and a car, what's the use of them for me now?”

Su Menghan was awfully sad, it seemed just by looking at her face, that she would start crying any moment : “I am in this miserable condition, just because of you, you have really harmed me like this.”

These words of Menghan suddenly jolted his heart out.

When he came to know that Song Tianying had injected a drug to his daughter, he had already regretted a bit for his action. Now seeing Su Menghan shouting so loudly on him, for pushing her into this terrible condition, finally awakened him.

He looked at her pure face, and thought that this was his daughter, who had been actually injected with drugs, and had turned into a drug addict!

Suddenly, he became a little too afraid to remember, that wasn't it him who had harmed his own daughter by dragging her into this addiction?

He thought that in case he earned wealth and became rich again, but still he couldn't do anything for her, because not even his money could do anything to resolve this issue. Her daughter's life was about to end, just one year left for her from now on

"I don't want to see you again."

She gently leant against the body of Ye Feng, and while gazing at his father, said : "Regarding this previous matter, I don't have any desire to blame you for that. But if you really have any conscience, then promise me one thing."

"What's the matter? As long as you say it, I'll definitely help you accomplish it!"

Su Xinchang immediately nodded.

"Then tell me the truth about my grandmother's car accident. I must make the criminal obtain the proper punishment for his deeds."

Su Menghan said with tears in her eyes.

Su Xinchang listened to that, and hesitated a bit, but when he thought about the current condition of Su Menghan, with a sigh he gave up finally. Let it be, she was under this situation, and the only thing she wanted to know was this. Was it still needed to hide it from her?

Hence, Su Xinchang finally began narrating the dust-laden past events from six years back.

Originally, in the past Su Xinchang wanted to marry Xie Min, however, Su Menghan's grandmother wasn't in this favour, and she wanted to do every possible thing to stop this marriage. The reason was, she clearly noticed that the aura around Xie Min was quite dark and evil, as if she would never be good for Menghan's growth.

But because of this, a grudge actually took birth in Xie Min's heart. Six years ago, Xie Min conspired with her younger brother Xie Chengye, and hired a person, to falsely create an accident and kill her grandmother. And they also succeeded in their plan, they intentionally created an accident and ultimately killed her grandmother.

When Su Xinchang happened to know about it, everything had already been done. He didn't have the choice to accuse Xie Min and Xie Chengye, instead he chose to help them in hiding the truth. Moreover, he also helped that hired man in getting rid of all charges, and then compensated a huge money to finish things up properly.

Because, at that time, Su Sheng Group was still in the development stage, and Su Xinchang was in an urgent need of Xie Min's resources

“As expected, it's really them.”

Ye Feng thought in his mind, that it seemed like in Jingcheng restaurant, whatever he had observed was 100 % right. About this incident, except these three people, Xie Min, Xie Chengye and Su Xinchang, nobody knew a thing about it.

Finally after knowing the truth, Su Menghan's heart felt a huge relief. Then Su Xinchang said : "Now, I'll surely drag both of them, Xie Min and Xie Chengye to the court. When the time comes, you must appear in the court to testify."

Su Xinchang's act was to shelter the criminals. Although he wasn't the part of that conspiracy, still concealing the crime for almost three years was itself a big crime. But since he would appear in court multiple times to testify on his own initiative, this could also reduce discretion of his punishment.

He slowly nodded his head: "Well, then I should go"

"Then, for the time being, you stay together with Scar."

Ye Feng beckoned with his hand : "Don't try to escape, otherwise by my ability, I can easily find you."

"Got it."

Hearing that somewhat scared him, and he started cold sweating, but still he nodded. As he knew, how Ye Feng punched Song Tianying and threw him down from the sixth floor! If Ye Feng was letting him go now, that was the best thing for him. Moreover, he would never dare to think about running away, since Ye Feng had a relationship with Lin Clan, even if he tried to escape, where would he

go then?

Watching those two tall guys escorting Su Xinchang to the car, and then after he boarded in, the car carried off, Su Menghan couldn't help but smiled. She raised her white hands to wipe off her eyes hardly, to squeeze out all tears.

“Your acting was awesome.”

Ye Feng also smiled back, while hugging her shoulders, he praised her for her performance. If she hadn't played well, and hadn't made Su Xinchang feel her despair of the drug addiction, then this thing certainly would not have been so smooth.

However, Ye Feng could have easily made Su Xinchang reveal the truth with the help of 'Hypnosis', however, the side-effect was whenever the enemy tried to resist Hypnotism, that used to cause damage to his brain. And after using Hypnosis several times, very probably it would turn him into an idiot. After all the opposite party was Su Menghan's father, not using Hypnosis on him was certainly a better choice.

As Su Menghan said that she would move to court, for justice, Ye Feng had no opinion about it. He was not in the World of the Immortals anymore, rather he was in the modern city, couldn't rely on anything violent.

“Was it really?”

Su Menghan's face suddenly turned bright red, as Ye Feng hugged her. Moreover, she didn't try to break herself free, rather she stuck to him more tightly, and said : “Originally if I had made him know that I haven't become the

drug addict, wouldn't that have aroused his suspicion? I don't want people to know that I am an Immortal like you"

Whatever she said just now was also right, until now, there had been no way to cure people who had been suffering from the new drug addiction. Su Menghan didn't become a drug addict, if this thing would come out in public, then it would definitely arouse their suspicion.

"Huh?"

At this time, when Su Menghan was very close in Ye Feng's arms, suddenly she saw something, and quickly drew two steps back.

"What happened?"

Ye Feng asked that with some doubts.

"She came again."

Su Menghan was looking outside the door of the villa.

Ye Feng chased her eyes, looked outside the villa along with her vision, and remained stunned for a moment.

Long Wan'er? How did she come over here?

He saw a silhouette of someone, standing opposite to the villa, under a big

tree, who appeared somewhat familiar, wasn't that the figure of Long Wan'er?

At this time, Long Wan'er was standing on the roadside, with folded hands, and was constantly looking towards the villa. There was a touch of sadness on her delicate pretty face. At first, Ye Feng couldn't trust his eyes, but later seeing this image of her made his heart feel a bit of pain and uneasiness.

Chapter 91 -> You are him

Seeing Long Wan'er standing outside the villa, Su Menghan looked towards Ye Feng, and softly asked : "Has she come here looking for you?"

Ye Feng replied as if he guessed : "Probably, let me go and check."

Actually, Long Wan'er must have come here in order to ask Ye Feng about the whereabouts of that Masked man, but it wasn't necessary for him, to give any explanation to Su Menghan about it.

"Well, I'll go first."

Surprisingly, the presence of Long Wan'er didn't trigger Su Menghan's anger, instead, she smiled as she raised her hands and wrapped them around Ye Feng's neck in front of Long Wan'er, and then pressed her lips against his cheek and kissed him. While doing so, her face turned bright red, and then she quickly turned around to go into the house.

However, the sudden action of Su Menghan startled Ye Feng, and he felt helpless. Apparently by doing this, she tried to declare in front of Long Wan'er, that Ye Feng totally belonged to her.

Afterwards, he turned back and saw Long Wan'er still stood under the tree, outside the villa, somewhat lonely. Her figure was looking wonderful under the moonlight. Her snow-white long skirt was drawing the outline of her exquisite body, which forced him to recall that incident, which took place in the ancient tomb, when he was with her and with her overflowing impetuous passion

He shook his head and quickly stepped forward towards her.

“I said, who are you after all? And why did you come again?”

He shouted to ask that. At present, he must not get exposed at any cost, that he was that Masked man.

“First of all, let me apologise to you

As Long Wan'er saw him running towards her, she became somewhat disturbed and nervous, just by the thought of meeting with him : “I'm sorry.”

It seemed like she was being very shy and timid, there were not many people in this world who had seen this side of her before, including Ye Feng. There was an impression, that this young girl had not always been very strong, then why did she put on the role of being pathetic and pitiful at present?

Ye Feng felt a bit strange seeing her saying 'sorry' multiple times, hence he asked: “Do you have a fever or something, and have you come here especially just to apologise to me?”

“No, it's not.....”

With a bit of embarrassment, she continued: “Actually, I have come over here, just to ask you about your friend Mo Jiuge, where is he now? I'm looking for him.”

As soon as he heard that, he immediately thought in his heart, that the reason

of her sudden visit was exactly the same just like he expected. Therefore, he felt a bit relieved, and finally by loosening his tone, said: “I really don’t know

“Really, is that so?”

As she said that, her beautiful eyes suddenly swept his right hand: “What a coincidence, ah! You have the same ring just like him.”

“Ah, it’s just a coincidence.”

Ye Feng said that smilingly, actually about this matter, he already had an excuse ready beforehand to cope up with this situation: “We have a pretty good relationship, he told me once to put on this ring, since wearing it can be a good self-defense

Although she clearly heard his reply, but didn’t speak a thing, instead, her eyes were stubbornly fixated at him, as if she was trying to judge something.

“Hey, what are you looking at?”

Seeing her sharply staring at him, his heart somewhat shivered out. Hence, he promptly waved his hand, and said:. “If there is no other matter left to be discussed, then I will return.”

“Are you really leaving? Just like this?”

Long Wan’er sighed, and then said in a soft voice : “With great difficulty, I ran out and came on this trip, just because I wanted to see you again

“To see me? You don’t want to look for Mo Jiuge— -”

Ye Feng said while shaking his head, but all of a sudden he was interrupted by Long Wan’er.

“You are him! Don’t you want to admit it?”

As she said that, she quickly grabbed his arm, simultaneously raised her head and looked at him : “You can deceive others, but can’t fool me, I can never forget your smell.”

“Crap! Do you have a dog nose?”

Perplexed Ye Feng panicked, and tried to break himself free from her hand, but was totally unable to get away from her clutch. Therefore, instantly he cast out ‘Covert Kill Technique’, to conceal his Cultivation, so as to avoid revealing his secret.

“It doesn’t matter, just come back with me to my house, Long Clan.”

While panting in rage, she said that and started pulling his arm stubbornly, to take him away with herself.

Ye Feng thought in his heart that the current situation was not at all favourable for him, it seemed like this young girl had gone crazy. Therefore, in this critical situation, should he really obey her and get carried off? But in case he revolted now, and cast out any move to cope up with her, then wouldn’t it be

proved that he was definitely Mo Jiuge?

He somewhat hesitated for a moment, and got pulled away by her around ten meters.

While on the other side, from the balcony of the second floor of the villa, Su Menghan was quietly watching at those two people. Seeing Long Waner tugging at him, and he was also letting him gradually pulled away by her, she became a little anxious.

She still remembered that incident from the last time, which happened at the entrance of People's Hospital, when Ye Feng was kicked by her, and then she said "ordinary people" or something to him. Could it be that this young girl was also a Cultivation Immortal?

Su Menghan immediately wanted to go downstairs to catch up with them, but then she thought something, and refrained herself from doing so.

"It appears like Ye Feng doesn't want to get involved with her, I must not act recklessly and go out over there, in case I mess up the things, it won't be good then"

If Ye Feng would know about her present viewpoint, then he would certainly praise her for her good understanding.

At this moment, he had already been carried off to the gate of the neighbourhood, as he had no other option left.

"I said, beauty, you must have the wrong person. But still you are pulling me

like this, so can I consider this like you are kidnapping me, ah?”

Although he kept on saying this over and over, but couldn't succeed in dispelling her thought.

“Nothing matters to me anymore, you are coming back with me, besides my dad also wants to see you.”

Very firmly, she said that.

“All right, then tell me, where is your house? What does your dad do? And again what is the relationship between you and me?”

Ye Feng tried to pretend as if he didn't know anything about her, therefore, one after another he blew up several questions.

“Why don't you acknowledge it?”

While she said that, she turned her head all of a sudden and looked at him. There were tears in her beautiful eyes, as if any moment they would spill from her eyes and run down her cheeks : “Are you ignoring me? Or holding something against me?”

“I.....”

The moment he looked at her face and saw tears rolling down her eyes, he froze to the spot and his mind ceased working for a while.

While this complicated talk was going on between these two, on the other side, several passers-by, as well as the Security guard of the neighbourhood gate were constantly watching these two young people, with a very strange look. Especially that young security guard, who just had arrived here this month, at his post, but he could still recognise this young man, Ye Feng quite well.

Moreover, the gossiping of this nearby neighbourhood was extremely fierce and powerful, like Su Sheng Group's mishap, Su Menghan and Su Xinchang severing their relationship, school's beauty staying at the house of a young man next door, and stuff like this had already spread like fire in the jungle.

But now, the most interesting point was this young guy actually had one more beautiful girl other than Su Menghan, and on top of that, she was currently dragging him forcefully, but then how could he make her cry like this? Really such a beautiful young romantic couple was making nearby people quite envious!

In spite of watching TV, that young security guard was constantly staring outside, at these two people, and thought that this girl on the roadside was prettier than any other TV star with excessive make-up. Moreover, her stature was also extremely noticeable; overall she was an exquisite beauty, who knew how did this young man hook up with this exquisite beauty?

However, Ye Feng certainly had no free time to give a damn to what others were thinking about them.

At the moment, he was intertwined with his own thought, how could she be so sure that he was "Mo Jiuge"? Was it really because of his smell? Strange, his body shouldn't have any peculiar smell, right?

“Don’t deny it.”

Seeing his reaction, finally she had completely determined his identity, immediately she threw herself into his bosom, and stretched out her arms to wrap him tightly, and then buried her pretty face in his chest: “This time I sneaked down the mountain, just because I wanted to look for you if you hold anything against me, hate me, dislike me, or ignoring me, then just say so frankly, okay? I won’t bother you then ”

Dislike, hate, she said these words, naturally these words came out of her mouth from the experience of her own life.

Her father had killed his father!

When Ye Feng and Long Wan’er were small, since then it was destined to have a gap between them. She thought that even though they had such an accident in the ancient tomb, still making Ye Feng to accept her was also an extremely difficult matter.

In case he really didn’t want her, then she wouldn’t have any other option left, than to.....

“Don’t be silly.”

Ye Feng sighed.

He could easily feel her grief and pain, if he didn’t acknowledge it, or even if he acknowledged it but refused to accept her, then probably this girl would try to find a place to commit suicide. She already had left the house and secretly run

away from her house, moreover, Ye Feng had already clearly seen the attitude of her father towards her.

“But if I admit this, wouldn’t it instantly bring the truth in front of her, that I practice Cultivation?”

While he was busy considering this matter that could it be possible to be convinced by this girl, but before he could draw any outcome, suddenly a gust of strong wind passed through them from behind!

“What are you doing?”

Suddenly, an old hoarse voice mixed with anger spread into the ears of those two, and then immediately Long Wan’er disappeared from his arms, right in front of his eyes!

A bit startled, he raised his head and surprisingly saw his grandfather Ye Wentian, who appeared as a tornado, and captured Long Wan’er to one side.

Not good, how did this old man arrive here?

Chapter 92 Dare to love, Dare to hate

All of a sudden Ye Wentian appeared out of nowhere, and like a gust of wind passed through them and suddenly grabbed Long Wan'er and pulled her away from Ye Feng's body, and in a flash, very swiftly he moved ahead around five meters away from him, and then stopped.

“Miss Long, being too close to my grandson like this, it's not at all appropriate, right?”

He said that lightly while shifting his gaze towards her.

If she had encountered Ye Wentian earlier, then without a doubt, she would have definitely felt somewhat diffident and fear, after all, he was the old personal enemy of her clan. However now, she was actually not the slightest bit afraid of him, because when she secretly ran away from her house, and descended the mountain, just because she wanted to look for Ye Feng, since then she had already disregarded everything.

She snorted lightly: “Don't you want to ask your treasured baby grandson that what he has done to me?”

After saying that, she raised her pretty face, and took a quick glance of Ye Feng. Her eyes were brimmed with a complex look.

“Huh?”

Her words left Ye Wentian totally flabbergasted.

Ye Feng looked towards her, while thinking that he didn't even know whether Long Wan'er had spread the news of him defeating the perverted man, Li Hua of Heavenly Sword Palace, everywhere or not. Most probably, Li Hua would be occupied with his broken arm nowadays. Moreover, people of Long Clan wouldn't publicise this matter everywhere.

Ye Feng's mind started thinking about the possibilities, at present his grandfather had arrived here, and complicated this matter even more. In case Long Mo'ran also came over here, then he would candidly admit his defeat.

Therefore, he quickly came up with a decision, anyhow, he could never let his grandfather harm her, not even a hair's breadth of her!

Since she possessed the body of immortal arteries, which was extremely important to him. He thought that if she were not the daughter of Long Mo'ran, then wouldn't it be so good for him? Unfortunately, he could just think about it, it could never become a reality.

He raised his head and directed his gaze towards her.

Coincidentally, exactly at the same time, she also happened to turn around and look at him, and their eyes met as they were standing face to face.

"Could it be that you"

All of a sudden, Ye Wentian turned a bit quirky, and guessed a certain possibility, and to confirm that, he turned his eyes towards Ye Feng and closely examined his facial expression, then after he sharply looked at Long Wan'er.

Watching these two people continuously looking towards each other, and exchanging visions. That sort of vision made him even more determined.

“You guessed right.”

Long Wan'er snorted lightly and said: “What do you want from me? Please feel free and speak out your mind, anyway, I'm not your opponent.”

“You truly deserve to be called as an extremely arrogant woman of Long Clan, even though you are confronting this old man, still how smartly you have maintained such a calm and composed stature.”

Ye Wentian snorted coldly: “I don't care what's going on between you two people right now, hereafter don't you dare think about coming here again, looking for my grandson, as you must be aware of the truth that my Ye Clan and your Long Clan are not on good terms with each other anymore.”

“What If I still choose to look for him? Then?”

She said that while staring at Ye Feng, and couldn't help but think of the scene, in the ancient tomb, under the hazy moonlight.

Immediately after that scene, wearing a mask, he suddenly appeared in the water to slay the strange fish, he then again saved her life by passing air directly into her mouth, later he stood firmly in front of her, in order to resist Heavenly Sword Tornado, and in return got seriously injured. he saved her life multiple times.

Didn't she know that his wounds hadn't been any better till now?

As she was busy thinking about these things, a pair of her bright piercing eyes automatically drizzled with a layer of mist.

Why the identities of both the parties were so embarrassing for her? In her eyes, the image of the Masked man was gradually overlapping with the image of Ye Feng, making her even more affirm that both were certainly the same person!

However, if this thought of Long Wan'er wouldn't be true, then, in the future, her prime goal would be finding out the Masked man and then killing him! Even if she couldn't succeed in her mission, she would ask the people of her Clan, to search him out from anywhere and kill him!

However, during the last incident, when Ye Feng stood in front of her and resisted with all his might, she had really noticed that he truly tried to withstand all the attacks of that perverted man of 'Heavenly Sword Palace' whose Cultivation was much higher than him. At that moment she had decided that this man was worth entrusting, since then she started admiring him.

Should I love him or hate him?

At present, she was 100 % confirmed that Ye Feng was definitely the Masked man, and she was unlikely to change her feelings for him. She loved him, so what was wrong in it?

Even if Ye Wentian would kill her now, she would die happily, without any complaints and regrets!

Ye Wentian snorted loudly: "If you keep on insisting like this, then I won't let

this young lady off-”

Shua!

Right at this moment, Ye Feng suddenly moved, leaving behind a faint afterimage in-situ, instantly rushed towards her, grabbed her by her waist, and immediately moved far away from his grandfather.

Without any prior warning, he promptly cast out Immortal Technique ‘Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’!

“You smelly brat, how could you dare snatch her away from the grip of this old man?”

Suddenly he became very furious, since he never had expected that a kid like Ye Feng would snatch someone away under his eyelids. When he turned his head then saw Ye Feng, holding Long wan’er in his bosom, had drifted far away from him!

“Grandpa, it seems like recently there has been a thief in the villa, why don’t you go back and see, whether anything is missing in the villa. By then, I’ll talk to her, and will be back soon!”

As soon as Ye Feng said that, he quickly grabbed her, and with a lightning speed, went far away from him.

All of a sudden Ye Wentian’s facial expression changed, was there a thief in the villa?

“Brat, just you come back home, then be prepared to learn a good lesson from me.”

He didn't dare to ignore this matter, the things preserved in the rooms of this villa, were really very important. Old man stamped his foot bitterly, then by taking small footsteps, he ran toward Qingfeng Park, all prepared to return to the villa and examine it thoroughly.

.....

From very far away, Ye Feng turned back and saw that his grandfather was not chasing after him, hence he took a breath of relief. Fortunately, he had guessed right, as there were several rooms in the villa, but nobody was allowed to enter them, which explained everything, there must be really something precious hidden inside them.

However, he didn't want to be careless and take a risk, therefore, wrapping his arms closely around her, he ran straight several km away, almost close to the bar street, and then stopped there, and loosened his arms from around her soft tender body.

“I already knew that it was you.”

Right after seeing Ye Feng's agility, would she still need more time to figure out that he was that Masked man “Mo Jiuge”? Excitedly, she already had stretched out her hands and circled them around his neck, firmly refused to let him go, while an expression of overflowing happiness quickly appeared on her pretty face, making her more beautiful.

“Yes, it’s me.”

Ye Feng nodded. Just now, when he saw that even though she encountered such a powerful opponent Ye Wentian, still she kept on insisting on this point, without turning a hair, then finally he gave up and decided that he should no longer hide this truth from her.

“Then what are you going to do?”

She raised her head and somewhat anxiously, looked at him.

She never had expected that she would find the right man so quickly, moreover, she had also never thought that Ye Feng would actually be that Masked man. During the incident which happened in front of the hospital, she had detected that there was no existence of Cultivation in him, and he was just a completely ordinary person!

If she hadn’t felt that Ye Feng seemed a bit familiar, then, she absolutely would not have doubted his smell, she would have never guessed that both parties would be the same person.

“You are my woman, nobody can dare to take you away from me.”

Still holding her in his bosom, Ye Feng continued saying somewhat regretfully: “Actually, earlier I thought, when you would find me, you would certainly kill me

“Originally I wanted to kill you, but now I like you very much.”

She said somewhat smartly: “But if I start hating you again, I will definitely kill you without any further delay.”

“I won’t give you the opportunity to hate me.”

Ye Feng smilingly said that.

“Then what about you, don’t you hate me?”

Although she somewhat hesitated, but finally asked out directly.

Ye Feng knew that the things she said just now, was related to her status, he shook his head and said: “I’ll ask you just one question, if some day, I kill your father, then won’t you hate me for that?”

In the eyes of other people, such words were entirely whimsical, a youngster who had just a few years of Cultivation, was thinking about killing the genius and most talented person of Long Clan, Long Mo’ran, could it be ever possible?

But she had already seen his strength numerous times, and also clearly knew that he wasn’t joking at all!

Just by relying on the strength of his five-year of Cultivation, Ye Feng already had beheaded and killed Hai Tang, of ‘Happily married pair of swords’, the story not ended here, he also had cast out Sword qi, making Li Hua run away cowardly from the battlefield, after losing one of his arms. Although he was nothing

before them, but still he defeated them. Over time, there was a high possibility, that he could easily kill his father, Long Mo'ran, whose name was more than enough, to tremble the whole martial arts circles, like a fallen leaf.

“Such a faraway affair which isn't going to happen soon, actually I don't want to think about it currently.”

She inclined her head towards one side, and with a sigh, said: “If really there would be such a day, then I will not prevent you from taking revenge, Long Mo'ran has been very cold and indifferent throughout his life, not even that, he even has killed his wife by his own hands If possible, I would rather not have him ... as my father. “

Chapter 93 -> Fairy of the East China Sea

In the shadow of the streetlight, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were quietly embracing each other, like a pair of young lovers. However, nobody knew how complex their situation was.

Fortunately, while keeping everything aside, they decided not to talk. Therefore, at present, their thoughts were very simple and pure.

“So, are you going back first? Otherwise your grandfather”

Long Wan'er was a bit anxious for him, therefore she didn't dare to stay any longer.

“Hmmm, anyway, you must be careful, don't run around like that again.”

Ye Feng hesitated a bit, but then warned her : “Even if your Cultivation promotes a bit slowly, but you must ensure your security first, ok?”

If she again ran into that perverted evil man of ‘Happily married pair of swords’, and if at that time, Ye Feng was not around her, then, it would become very difficult for her to escape from him, or to chase him down. In that situation, a tragedy might happen which would leave him with regret throughout his life.

He was just waiting for the right opportunity to show up, then he could easily help her in ‘Open Hole’ process, and with the help of her body of immortal arteries, her Cultivation could also rise straight up to the clear sky. At present, her inner qi was also totally insignificant.

As for now, he still didn't dare to rest assured and expose his secret of being an Immortal to her. This was what his master, Su Feiying, had taught him since his childhood, that no matter what happens, always keep a watchful eye, and always leave an escape route for oneself. In fact, it is actually a bitter fact.

"I'll return home"

She could easily feel that Ye Feng was being over concerned about her, hence she nodded, however, suddenly she asked: "By the way, just recently, what was going on in your family villa? That girl"

As these words fell from her mouth, Ye Feng's heart skipped a beat, as he expected, this young girl really mentioned Su Menghan's name.

Since she mentioned it, now he couldn't play dumb, hence said: "She is one of my classmates, because of some family issues, temporarily she is living in my"

"No need to explain."

A trace of hidden bitterness suddenly flashed through her beautiful eyes, she pursed up her lips gently, stood on the tip of her toes, and gently kissed him on his face: "Besides this, I also know that your engagement has already been fixed with the eldest daughter of Yanjing's Lin Clan"

After saying that, she sarcastically and very smartly smiled and said :
"However, I don't care anymore. When I won't be around you, then you can let them accompany you. Of course, if someday I feel that you don't want me, then

you.....”

“Rest assured, I won’t.”

Ye Feng felt a bit helpless.

Only Long Wan’er had the body of immortal arteries, therefore it was impossible for Ye Feng to abandon her. However, the surprising point was that she neither cared about Su Menghan nor Lin Shiqing, which truly startled him. If because of certain mishap, Long Wan’er got swapped with Su Menghan, then in that condition, Ye Feng was 100 % sure Long Wan’er would definitely become crazily jealous.

Hearing him pledging that he would never leave her side, she felt relieved and became a bit happy, gradually a smile appeared across her face. Afterwards, she turned around and started walking to finally depart. Although she was moving ahead, but somewhat reluctantly, and really hated this particular time, where she had to part with him.

However, suddenly a thought pierced through her mind, hence she immediately stopped and turned back, tilted her head and asked: “Can you tell me, why did you go to that ancient tomb.”

“To look for a person.”

Ye Feng said that frankly since he decided not to conceal this from her.

“Looking for someone? A man or a woman?”

She turned a bit nervous all of a sudden after hearing his words.

“A woman.”

Ye Feng sighed as he continued: “She is my master, but I haven’t seen her for quite a long time, someone took her photos when she was in that tomb. Therefore, I went over there, to have a look around

Just by mentioning that he had a master, it wouldn’t expose the existence of the World of the Immortals.

“Is she pretty?”

She asked.

“Yes, she is.”

Ye Feng nodded.

“She has very long hair? And she is a woman with cold temperament?”

She asked again.

He felt a bit strange, and replied: “Yes, but how do you know?”

She knitted her dense and black eyebrows and said: “It’s strange, but it seems like she is the same person as the rumour claims about the fairy of the East China Sea

“Fairy of the East China Sea?”

As soon as he heard that, it immediately piqued his interest.

“Ah, a lot of rumours have spread recently in the Martial arts world, regarding a woman who has appeared near the East China Sea, and she is called fairy. She has a very cold temperament and has already attracted the attention of lots of people of the martial arts world. Therefore, many people want to go and take a look at such an exquisite beauty. It is said that she is extremely beautiful, has long hair hanging down to her buttocks, and has always been very cold and indifferent.”

Whatever rumours she had heard so far, she vomited it out in front of him.

“Well, it’s likely to be her.”

Once again his interest crossed all limits and he turned super excited. Suddenly he thought of the last time, in the ancient tomb, where he completely failed to find any trace of Su Feiying. Therefore, now, he got some news of her quite soon.

“So, Fairy of the East China Sea?”

If it was really Su Feiying, then what would be she doing there? First, she was seen in the Changbai Mountains ancient tomb, and then in the East China Sea

Ye Feng shook his head, as he had never ever correctly guessed his master's thoughts.

"So now Do you want to go to the East China Sea?"

Somewhat anxiously, she asked that.

"Ah, I won't since I have something important to take care of, you just pay attention to your safety."

Ye Feng nodded his head, and thanked her from the bottom of his heart, for bringing this message.

"Alright then, I'm leaving."

Long Wan'er appeared to stay behind but had nothing to say. She finally turned around and proceeded to leave, but only after stopping and turning once to stare deeply at him.

In fact, she had a lot to ask, such as, how did he conceal his Cultivation, and so on, however, she didn't ask anything. After all, everyone has one's own secret, in her heart, she similarly had a secret which she didn't share with him

Just before she left, Ye Feng saw a wide spectrum of emotions in her eyes and he knew that he wouldn't be witnessing such a thing ever again.

"Master, I'll go right away to look for you!"

Ye Feng raised his head, looked towards the moonlight sky, and saw there was not a single star in the sky, which once again reminded him, that this place was not his former place the World of the Immortals.

In the World of the Immortals, regardless of wherever you go, the night sky uses to have innumerable stars all over the sky. How could this sky be so spacious and empty like this?

Of course, before going to the East China Sea, he must go back to his villa first, otherwise, his grandfather would burst out, and he would be forced to run away, to the ends of the earth to withstand it.

.....

When Long Wan'er turned around and departed from Ye Feng, she directly went towards Yanjing railway station.

To cover a long distance, naturally, the people of Martial arts world also used to take the train. When she arrived at the railway station, just wanted to find a place to stay today and buy a ticket tomorrow, but suddenly she noticed two familiar figures appeared outside the station.

Long Qing! Long Zi!

Those two were her uncles, now each of them had 30 years of Cultivation. Plus, they had already perfected the Long Clan's original techniques like – Dragon leg technique, Romantic sword technique and Noble palm technique!

“Dad sent them here to look for me?”

She thought, anyways they were her own people. Moreover, she must go back quickly, she didn't need to be afraid of the opposite party.

Hence she moved a few steps forward, and appeared before them: “Uncle Qing, Uncle Zi, how did you come?”

“Wan'er!”

Among them, one man who was called Long Qing, was clad in a green-coloured gown. He hastily came forward and looked her from top to bottom, and when he noticed that nothing was strange about her, then finally felt relieved.

“Wan'er, how can you silently run away like this?”

Long Zi appeared quite earnest, by holding a serious-looking face, he said: “Head of the Clan is very angry. This time, does your sister-in-law help you run away? Do you know that this will implicate her?”

“Hmmm.....”

She admitted her mistake, but she became quite gloomy and disturbed. Of course, she could escape because of the help of her sister-in-law, Shu Shu. However, if Long Mo'ran would know about it, he would definitely give severe punishment to both of them! Fortunately, Long Clan's people generally didn't let his kind of news pass up to him, after all, everyone was familiar with his temperament. For a little mistake, he might punish someone to his death.

“I want to see Dad, Uncle Qing, Uncle Zi, let’s go back home.”

She didn’t think much, just simply said that to them.

“Yes, it’s really important to return, however, you won’t see the Head of the clan.”

Long Zi said: “When we set off to look for you, afterwards the Head of the clan proceeded towards the East China Sea. He wants to find that rumoured woman, the fairy of the East China Sea, as you know that he didn’t remarry for so many years, if this time, he could find a beautiful woman, that would be really good

She remained stunned for a moment hearing that.

Her father went to the East China Sea to look for that fairy, so as to ask her to be his wife?

Wasn’t she Ye Feng’s master?

Chapter 94 -> Well done!

Ye Feng returned to 'Qingfeng Park' with a pretty good mood because at last, he had resolved one of his big concerns.

The matter of Long Wan'er needed to be handled on an urgent basis, although their union was still far away in the future, but at least now they knew each other's feelings.

Lights inside the villa were brightly lit, Ye Feng pushed the door and enter the room, and surprisingly saw in the hall, Ye Wentian was sitting on the sofa, drinking tea, as well as heard some strange sounds transmitting from the kitchen.

"Keke, Grandpa."

He ran thirty-two steps to the side of his grandfather, sat down and looked towards the kitchen: "Is Menghan inside?"

"Hmmm, I'm hungry, so that young girl is making something for me. How did your discussion go with Miss Long?"

Ye Wentian was not angry, instead, there was a beaming expression on his face. While talking he gently put down the cup.

"Don't ask me about the discussion Aren't you angry?"

Ye Feng was somewhat baffled, just recently this old man wanted to strangle

him to death, but now how was there such a big smile on his face?

“Am I looking angry?”

Ye Wentian suddenly lowered his voice: “Brat, well done! You even succeeded in establishing such a good relationship with Miss Long! If Long Mo’ran would come to know about it, his heart certainly would wish to die, ha ha ha!”

When Ye Feng listened to him, he remained thunderstruck, he didn’t understand how to react now, what to choose between laughter and tears.

Indeed, he took hold of the daughter of the old personal enemy of his clan, therefore, why wouldn’t this old man be in such a very cheerful mood? However, not to mention, if this thing would come in the knowledge of Long Mo’ran, certainly he wouldn’t feel well, and the unhappiness of this old man’s enemy wouldn’t clearly result in his happiness?

“Okay, get down to the business.”

Ye Wentian turned a bit serious and said : “The matter that you can practice, does that girl of Long Clan know about it?”

“Yes.”

Ye Feng nodded, “But I still believe her.”

Ye Wentian listened to him, but didn’t oppose, instead he agreed with his way: “Pretty good, that girl of Long Clan was a very determined person, with a very

crabby temperament, if she recognises this matter, not to mention her father Long Mo'ran, not even her ancestors can succeed in changing her irreversible determination."

Obviously, the illustrious reputation of Long Wan'er had even left Ye Wentian with the words of appreciation for her.

If she fell in love with Ye Feng, then it would absolutely not harm his interest in this matter. If not, then by her temperament, just after meeting with Ye Feng, she would have started to do everything possible thing to kill him.

"However, let this old man remind you of a little thing."

A dignified expression gradually took birth on Ye Wentian's face : "About that Long Clan's girl, you can only be tempted, can't get emotionally attached, got my point?"

Ye Feng frowned, as he didn't understand what he really meant.

"Stupid kid. What I meant is, you can have fun with her, but can't develop feelings for her, can't get sentimentally attached to her. Must know that your father was killed by the hands of Long Mo'ran, don't ever forget this, keep it alive in your mind!"

By holding a firm and serious looking expression, the Old man again warned him : "Since now you have started practicing, don't forget to pay a visit and say thanks to the great sage master Gao Renwei. If this matter will be handled carefully, our Ye Clan still has the hope of staging a comeback."

“.....”

These words of the old man left Ye Feng somewhat speechless, the point was, he was not with Long Wan'er just to have some fun, otherwise what would be the difference left between him and his own dead father?

Ye Yunfei played with the feelings of several people everywhere and forced several men to put on a green hat. Because of this character of his father, he later led to the destruction of his own Clan.

Ye Feng didn't want to repeat the same mistake by following his father's same disastrous policy.

Now, he finally understood why his father had turned into the playboy, and thus brought about the destruction of Ye Clan. Since there was this kind of old man, who had no respect for people, what kind of education he could give to his own son, wasn't it obvious now?

Of course, Ye Feng was unlikely to contradict his grandfather and argue with him now on this point, as he knew that a debate with this old man would never have any effect, so there was no need to waste any more words on this topic.

Neither it was important for Ye Feng, nor he was even the least bit interested in helping Ye Clan, in its sudden re-emergence. Even if he couldn't go back to the World of the Immortals, then the only thing he would like to do in his lifetime, was to protect those people around him, who were very precious to him, that was all.

Besides, there were lots of people, who were completely unable to accomplish

this matter including Ye Wentian, Long Mo'ran, and so on. Like them, even if he could do something to bring his Clan back to the life, but again how?

The desire to protect important people around him, that must be based on the pursuit of absolute power as the goal, like the Cultivation similar to the World of the Immortals.

Really, strength is the fundamental thing!

Ye Feng finally comprehended the words of this sentence very clearly, much more profound than the average person.

In the World of the Immortals, if the father of Mo Jiuge were not so formidable, how could he dare to force Su Feiying to get engaged with Mo Jiuge? Most importantly, that guy Mo Jiuge was extremely ugly, and was renowned everywhere for this, also this lecherous wretched guy was totally dependent on his father's forces and influence, and by using that authority he used to scourge and destroy the life of several beautiful Immortal women everywhere.

Such an ugly guy like Mo Jiuge with an exquisite beauty Su Feiying, together they were really completely two extremes! However, because of the power of the strength, Su Feiying had no other option left but to submit to Mo Clan, and was forced to get engaged with an ugly looking, weak and lecherous playboy, Mo Jiuge.

Because of a strange combination of circumstances, could she really come accidentally to the Earth, from a certain level? And on top of that, still to have Su Feiying together with Ye Feng, was really a good thing.

Seeing Ye Feng in a silent state, Ye Wentian didn't say anything more, just pondered about the same, and then slowly said: " Oh, that's right, since you came back, you are not allowed to leave Yanjing for the next two weeks, until the College entrance exam ends, till then I will take a good look at you."

Ye Feng heard that and was left bewildered.

He just thought to embark tomorrow to the East China Sea, in order to look for Su Feiying, but just now, by any chance did this old man just make him not probably leave Yanjing unexpectedly for half a month? If he would until the end of the college entrance examination, perhaps by then she might have changed the place!

"Although I have plenty of ways to get you into the Yanjing University, but if your score would be extremely low, then that would be incredibly shameful for me, the elder of Ye Clan"

Ye Wentian coughed, and continued : "Just recently, I had informed Lin's old man, to let his granddaughter meet with you tomorrow."

"What?"

This news gave him a powerful jolt, he was not at all unhappy : "Didn't you say earlier once you pass the university exam and get admission in Yanjing University?"

"Now this news has become a big uproar throughout Yanjing, we failed to conceal the truth, and now there isn't need to conceal the truth anymore."

The old man frowned : “Get prepared for this, make a good impression on others, if others can’t have a liking for you, then this old man will cut off your flesh alive as punishment.”

“.....”

This left Ye Feng totally speechless, but was actually thinking in the heart, just wait to see what kind of beauty this Lin Shiqing was, till then he would absolutely not speak a single word.

He had promised Su Menghan before, that he would certainly achieve, otherwise, what kind of man he would be regarded then?

Quite soon Su Menghan, holding a bowl of noodles in her hands, came out to serve it to Ye Wentian.

“Ye Feng, you came back”

She was a bit cautious, after placing the bowl of noodles on the table, she arrived at the side of Ye Feng.

Just an old man, out of the blue, crashed in the villa and started rummaging through chests and cupboards, making her have a scare, soon after she came to know that he was Ye Feng’s grandfather, which immediately little bit scared her.

She knew that Ye Feng’s grandfather was friends with Lin’s old man, moreover it seemed like Ye Feng’s engagement with Lin Shiqing had already been laid down by this two old man. As a result, Ye Feng’s grandfather would certainly not like her, right?

However, to one's surprise, when he saw her inside the villa, he didn't say anything, rather he kept on rummaging around everywhere for a while, perhaps he wanted to confirm that whether anything had not been stolen or not. After confirming that, he felt relaxed, and then said only one sentence "I'm hungry".

No doubt, Su Menghan had also an exquisite mind, she immediately ran to go to the kitchen, to make for him boiled noodles.

"Ok."

Ye Feng gave a smile to that Xiaohua, then took her hand and drag her to sit next to him, and at last comforted her.

Looking at the voraciously devouring Ye Wentian, he asked: "Well, what important things have been hidden in the other places of this villa?"

Ye Wentian put down the bowl, his facial expression looked serious : "Want to know? Wait till I finish eating, then come along with me."

Chapter 95 -> Ye Clan's Martial Arts

Regarding something hidden in the villa, Ye Feng had always been very curious to know about it since the beginning of his arrival in this world.

After finished eating a bowl full of noodles, Ye Wentian stood up and walked toward the bathroom, upstairs.

“The little girl can also come along, but must remember these are our Ye Clan's things, must not be told outside, got it?”

Since Ye Wentian greeted Su Menghan, which really left Ye Feng and Su Menghan somewhat overjoyed.

Just now whatever this Old man said, did that mean Su Menghan was also considered as one of the members of Ye Clan? Did that also mean he gave recognition to her relationship with Ye Feng? However, what about the matter regarding Ye Feng's engagement with Miss Lin?

However, Su Menghan didn't want to think much, she was already very delighted seeing that Ye Feng's grandfather had already acknowledged her.

Originally, she was in a state of homelessness, although she lived in Ye Feng's villa, but since the beginning, she never had that sort of feeling of being a family. For her, it was more like living under another person's roof, and this feeling often made her suffocate.

But now, after hearing these words of Ye Wentian, she immediately dispelled

all of her other concerns.

Secretly she glanced at Ye Feng and blushed a little.

Our Ye Clan

Ye Feng scratched his head and pulled her to keep up with the pace of his grandfather.

As far as Ye Wentian's thoughts were concerned, Ye Feng could correctly guess now one or two of them. Since his grandfather truly wanted to carry forward his Clan and bring it back into existence again, in that case, merely depending on a single person, 'Ye Feng' would definitely be a wrong idea.

Just now, Ye Wentian said that in favour of Su Menghan, just because he wanted to win over her heart. Certainly, Ye Feng would never believe that this old man would not have done a thorough investigation of Su Menghan before meeting her. Definitely by now, he would have been completely familiar with her present situation.

Perhaps, this thought was saved in Ye Wentian's heart, with this intention that in future he might ask Ye Feng to keep several wives, who could give birth to several children. This would really support Ye Clan, and would help it in its quick prosperity

This certainly was not a misdemeanour for Ye Feng, from any angle.

Although the secular law proclaims the common custom of monogamy, but in the martial arts world, some matters often take place which are completely

beyond the common customs. For instance – Twenty years ago, Ye Clan's complete destruction, or ten years ago, Scar suffered a huge tragedy, and even the recent example of Changbai Mountain, where so many people died. About all these matters, can the law govern them?

Most of the things of this country still rely on some commonly established customs.

However, if Ye Feng would be extremely powerful, and would really keep several wives, then in that situation, nobody in this entire country could dare to say anything to him.

Anyway, these three people went upstairs, there Ye Wentian punched and opened the bathroom's door, and went inside. The entire scene of the bathroom quickly caught the eyes of those two people. There were two densely packed rows of bookshelves, laden with heavy books, and were awfully covered in dust.

It could be clearly noticed, that not long ago this place had been flipped through thoroughly. Certainly after hearing those words of Ye Feng, the Old man couldn't help but get scared, and quickly came back to the villa, to examine everything carefully, just as to ensure that whether he really had lost something

Ye Feng casually looked over those bookshelves which were entirely piled up with several books covered with dust, and noticed that some of them were just ordinary books. Although he quickly understood how the way his grandfather used to think, certainly there must be some quite precious thing mixed up with these ordinary books, for example – Rare Books of Martial arts.

From the pile of books, Ye Wentian quickly picked out a book with a very

simple cover. By taking a quick look of it, it looked like it was an ancient book with wire binding, and on the cover of which four characters were written “Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique.”

“This is the foundation of our Ye Clan, the Primary-level Internal Core Technique ‘Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique.’”

Ye Wentian sighed : “Now in this world, this Primary-level Internal Core Technique is spread all over, however, the practice speed doesn’t have any difference. It is said that formerly, there was the intermediate-level Internal Core Technique, the practice speed of which was twice faster than the average man. And when it comes to the high-level Internal Core Technique, its speed was several times quicker than”

It doubles the speed of practice, that means by practising Core Technique, every year one can promote one’s Cultivation up to two years! This Core Technique can multiple the practising speed several times, isn’t it incredible. If someone practices for ten years, he can easily attain a hundred years of cultivation.

If coupled with a Immortals’ land, then practice speed would be similar to a rocket ride, which would directly move in the upward direction.

Ye Feng listened to that and nodded his head while thinking that this technique was almost similar to ‘Immortal Core Technique’ of the World of the Immortals.

When Ye Feng and his master Su Feiying were in Star Tomb School, there was the existence of only Primary-level ‘Immortal Core Technique’. However, Mo Jiuge belonged to Nanling, since Mo Clan had the greatest power in the range,

and the fundamental reason was because Mo Clan used to practice Intermediate-level Immortal Core Technique, the practice speed of which was twice faster than the ordinary person!

“Ye Feng, since you have already been practising Core Technique of the great sage master Gao Renwei, this Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique is completely useless and irrelevant for you then.”

The Old man said, while holding the book of Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique in his hands, as if he was holding a candy to tempt Su Menghan : “Little girl, I see you are shocked to your bones.....”

“Keke Grandpa, she has also been practising Core Technique of my master’s school, therefore, she also doesn’t have access to that ‘Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique’.

Ye Feng immediately coughed, and said that, as to remind him.

“What?”

The Old man frowned, quickly withdrew that Rare book, stretched out his hand and grabbed Su Menghan’s wrist, and felt it for a moment.

Indeed, a surge of somewhat strange force was running inside her body, very obviously it was the sign that she had already started practising. Although the force was somewhat strange, and her inner qi didn’t seem to be the same, but Ye Wentian still didn’t care.

In this world of the martial arts, there was the existence of various Core

Techniques, though they were out of practice, but there were different attributes of them, hence feeling a bit difference was also normal.

“Ok, Ok, I’ll just keep this book of Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique here, in the future will talk about it again.”

Ye Wentian shook his head, and placed the Rare Book in the corner of a pile of books. And then along with those two people, he left that bathroom of the second floor.

Afterwards, they came to the bedroom of Ye Feng, or it could be said that it was now Su Menghan’s bedroom. Originally, the opposite of which had one more bedroom, but now the entire room was covered with dust, a huge pile of old books like a garbage heap was scattered everywhere. It seemed like someone was too lazy and disinclined to even put them on the shelves.

Therein, the Old man had left something earlier, now he wanted to take a look and search for that right thing. Quite soon, he found out an ancient book list, and then laughed.

“Ha ha ha. Although you can’t use Ye Clan’s Flying Core Technique, but I have a very broad and profound knowledge of Ye Clan’s one Martial arts technique. This technique is called ‘Dragon Claw Hand Technique’ which stems from a martial arts school, however, my grandfather had changed the inner qi’s operation line, making it even more powerful than before. ”

After saying that, the Old man smiled and threw that ancient book list towards Ye Feng.

Ye Feng quickly put out his hand and caught it, afterwards opened it to take a look of it, Dragon Claw Hand Technique?

In the Immortals' World, he had practised several Immortal Techniques, but had never seen such sort of martial arts technique. It was almost similar to his Bagua boxing, a kind of Chinese boxing, however, it had very little value there in the Immortals' World.

While on the other hand, Su Menghan seemed like she was watching the strangest thing of the world.

Although she had already started Immortal Cultivation, but actually, she still didn't know a thing about practising. Earlier she hadn't expected that Ye Feng's Clan would be one the aristocratic Clans of the martial arts world. Even more than that, unexpectedly it also possessed the legendary Martial arts Rare Book in fable.

"Menghan, hold it."

Quite soon Ye Feng took a thorough look of that Dragon Claw Hand Technique, and then handed it over to Su Menghan.

Then after, very rapidly he took a step to cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique by using a hand gesture. All of a sudden his whole body's vehemence came out, which even startled nearby standing Ye Wentian and his facial expression immediately changed.

What did he think he was doing? Just by reading it once, did he want to cast it out proficiently? Kidding, how could he do that so quickly?

But soon, Ye Wentian's expression changed from suspicion to surprise, and then turned into joy!

“Come on!”

Ye Feng eyes were swift and fierce, he looked up to see his grandfather, simultaneously moved again and quickly displayed Dragon Claw Hand Technique one more time, and gave a hearsay evidence!

Chapter 96 -> Martial arts genius

Ye Feng's stature flashed, immediately a sudden gust of wind rushed towards Ye Wentian, gently caressing his face, it passed through lightly touching his robe's sleeve. According to the ancient chart, Zhenqi really circulated within his body with a very rapid movement.

Ye Wentian's Cultivation quickly sensed his formidable power!

Snapped! Snapped!

After two back to back sounds, Ye Wentian conveniently displayed another move of Dragon Claw Hand Technique, so as to withstand the aggressive attack of Ye Feng. However, his facial expression was still dignified.

With just five years of Cultivation, Ye Feng displayed such a powerful move a moment ago, which had actually reached more than a decade! It was such a situation where Ye Feng took a quick look of the ancient chart, just once, and then tried to cast out this technique. If he would really practice it diligently, wouldn't it become even more powerful?

This suddenly stirred up the emotions of Ye Wentian and he became very excited, heavenly unceasing Ye Clan!

How he hadn't thought that his own grandson unexpectedly turned out to be a Martial Arts genius, who learned such a complicated Dragon Claw Hand Technique very quickly, in just a single study!

As everyone knew, for Ye Feng, even a highly complicated Immortal Technique was also nothing, he could very easily comprehend it as well, let alone this Martial arts technique. However, in the process of displaying Dragon Claw Hand Technique, he also sensed a trace of an exquisite place, which he had never felt earlier while practising several Immortal techniques.

Dragon Claw Hand Technique had altogether ten different moves, and surprisingly just a moment ago Ye Feng had already finished browsing through all of these moves, in just one blow.

“After this fight, I can use this set of moves, which can be considered as much stronger than Bagua Boxing.”

Ye Feng could obviously feel that while dealing with the people, Dragon Claw Hand was much easier to control the strength than Bagua Boxing. Moreover, this technique was exquisite and its highest quality was, it was really flawless.

Unlike Bagua Boxing which generally had lots of loopholes from head to toe while displaying it, this technique was completely flawless. Moreover, using Dragon Claw Hand would make him appear more like one of the martial artists of this world, then nobody would be able to doubt him being an Immortal Cultivator.

“Pretty good, little brat, you have very much potential.”

Ye Wentian was extremely satisfied with him, as if he seemed to see a rising star of the Martial arts world.

In the Martial arts world, practising moves were also divided into several

levels, the highly talented person could practice moves of higher levels. For instance – Ye Wentian could only practice to the second level of this move Dragon Claw Hand. However, as compared with the power of the first level, his might was already twice powerful.

It could be said that on the basis of Ye Feng’s talent, if he could practice Dragon Claw Hand to the third level, and when he would have 20 years of Cultivation, during that time, in addition to Ye Wentian, who else in this world could dare to be his rival?

Then, dealing with a sharp weapon empty-handed wouldn’t be a problem at all!

On the second level of Dragon Claw Hand, the practitioner could directly suck in the target to his side, to the extent of assigning away the inner qi as well.

About the third level, what kind of terrible effect would it have? Regarding that, Ye Wentian didn’t have any idea, because, in the past, no one had ever reached the third level.

Now Ye Feng was his only hope.

“Little girl, what do you think about it?”

After being satisfied with Ye Feng, Ye Wentian turned his gaze towards another side, where Su Menghan was standing, simultaneously reading the technique, Dragon Claw Hand.

“I am unable to understand anything, it’s really quite complicated.”

Su Menghan was almost about to cry, what was this above drawn picture all about? Did we have meridians kind of thing within our body? She didn't understand a thing, not to mention learning Dragon Claw Hand Technique!

"Couldn't understand? Even most of the girls, who were hit and killed by this technique, were also not good."

The moment these words fell into Ye Feng's ears, he immediately rushed over to the side of Su Menghan, and snatched away the ancient chart of Dragon Claw Hand from her hands, and threw it back towards his grandfather.

In his view, this kind of thing, that used to kill people, wasn't important for Su Menghan to learn. Moreover, she was already learning Immortal Technique with his help, wasn't that more suitable for her?

Well, now the next person was Long Wan'er who must learn Immortal Techniques. A girl, using Dragon Leg Technique to kick people around, all day long, wasn't it highly improper? From now on, if she would continue doing such things, then obviously Ye Feng would be extremely worried about her getting exposed any moment, that was too uncomfortable.

"Do you have any other martial arts? Dragon Claw Hand is also pretty good, very subtle and exquisite."

Ye Feng asked that as he moved his hands and feet, to make a gesture of that technique.

"Other, even if I have for the time being, but they are the distinctive martial

arts of my Ye Clan, we can provide them to those people whom we recognise. He He He, our Ye Clan's Wild Devil Boxing is a most important in the Martial arts world. So, just wait, when you attain 20 years of Cultivation, then only I'll teach you. ”

Ye Wentian narrowed his eyes while saying that, accompanied with a smile.

“Don't teach then, forget about it

Ye Feng was feeling helpless, although he didn't choose to learn martial arts by his own free will, but he just happened to get in touch with this new type of sophisticated martial arts, and became a bit curious. If the power and usefulness of these techniques were compared with Immortal Techniques, then it seemed like there was a huge difference between them.

“Anyways, you can take it back this ancient chart of Dragon Claw Hand. This is my bedroom, I will tidy up now and sleep.”

Ye Feng looked around the room and said.

“What will you tidy up? You both have gotten room to sleep, that's enough! I warn you little brat, don't ever try to mess up things here.”

After scolding him, Ye Wentian again hid the ancient chart of Dragon Claw Hand in the ground below the heap of thick books. After that, he clapped his hands to remove dust, and then very swiftly he jumped out of the window and walked away. However, just before leaving , he left behind one sentence :

“Don't forget to go to school tomorrow, also Miss Lin will be waiting for you.”

Soon, Ye Wentian's figure completely disappeared before their eyes, leaving behind those two dumbfounded young people.

"Hey."

Su Menghan tugged at the sleeve of Ye Feng: "Are you going tomorrow to see that beautiful woman of Lin Clan?"

"He has forced me to see, rest assured, like I've promised, I won't say a word to her."

Ye Feng smiled.

"In fact, you don't have to."

When she listened to him saying that, she actually became somewhat embarrassed: "Elder has introduced you to meet her, if you won't talk to her, then that will be very impolite and ill-mannered, I won't blame you."

Ye Feng heard that and became a bit happy, because it seemed like this young girl had started to understand the given situation. Could it be because she had started Immortal Cultivation?

He squeezed her soft cheek, smiled and asked: "Now what do you think about practising"

"Not bad, but what is Immortal Cultivation? Just a moment ago, that Rare

Book, I couldn't understand a thing, is Immortal Cultivation also a Rare Book?"

She wrinkled her beautiful nose to make an appearance that she couldn't understand anything.

Ye Feng noticed that this was the only time they could talk about these things, therefore, he chose this time when she had to return to her bedroom, and started telling her about these things. Besides, he also mentioned Su Feiying.

".....In this world, Immortal Cultivators are not in large number, as far as I know there is just me and my master."

Finally, Ye Feng concluded everything and said : "Nowadays my master has appeared near the East China Sea, when the college entrance examination ends, then I will go to look for her."

"Hmmm."

Su Menghan probably knew that why Ye Wentian had prohibited him from leaving Yanjing, otherwise, wasn't it obvious that he would have dashed out to the East China Sea by now?

As far as the college entrance exam was concerned, it seemed like it was truly not that important for an Immortal Cultivator.

When Ye Feng finished talking about these things, Su Menghan's beautiful and attractive face suddenly turned a little red, a pair of her white hands pinched her skirt like a cat on the hot bricks, and then she said nervously : "YouYou tonight"

Seeing her like this, Ye Feng couldn't help but feel a bit funny, this little girl was definitely still thinking about what Ye Wentian said a few minutes back, that two of them should sleep in this room.

"I have some important matter to take care of. You first take rest, ok? Good night."

Ye Feng took her in her arms and got up to leave the room. When she would become a more skilled practitioner, then Ye Feng would take out another Lingshi, which he had accidentally obtained from the ancient tomb of the Changbai Mountain, allowing her to absorb it for the rapid elevation in her Cultivation. This type of privilege was only enjoyed by the disciple of big schools, in the World of the Immortals.

While on the other side, at present in Tianhua Casino, several people had died, the power and influence of Scar were almost completely plundered. It had become almost impossible for Scar to handle this situation efficiently. In such a critical situation, Ye Feng must go over there to have a look, and help him hurriedly.

"If I had a decade of Cultivation then it would have been great."

Ye Feng thought.

On reaching ten years of Cultivation, he could easily use the most basic attack of Immortal Techniques 'Red Flame'. It was used to burn the corpse and then completely destroy it, without leaving any trace. It was quite an appropriate attack.

Helping Scar would be a piece of cake for him, presently his mind was fully occupied by the thought of tomorrow's meeting. Actually, he was looking forward to tomorrow's meeting with Miss Lin.

Didn't matter how, but there was a very good reputation of her outside as if she was Miss Perfect. Even Su Menghan praised her unceasingly. So, it was really impossible for Ye Feng as a man, not to be curious. Also, he didn't know, if she was compared with his beautiful female master, then would she stand any chance?

Chapter 97 -> Scar's determination

Once again Ye Feng arrived at Tianhua Casino. At this time, it was completely surrounded by the several police vehicles from outside. There, Ye Feng saw Northwest Sub-Bureau Chief, that pot-bellied man Li Lihui, in the crowd.

The surrounding people were talking about this matter, that in Tianhua Casino dozen of people were slaughtered. This matter had already become noisily big.

As soon as Ye Feng along with Scar returned here all the way back from the Changbai Mountains, they saw that several guys holding firearms were waiting to kill them. Therefore, very conveniently, Ye Feng finished them up to end this trouble. In addition, he also killed Song Tianying along with his two attendants, by throwing them out of the window. Altogether, he put an end to the lives of seven or eight people, in a flash.

Such a big thing happened, Li Liu didn't arrive here personally, he didn't have such an authority.

"..... I just came back, how can I have any idea? What do you expect from me? For this matter, you should try to look for Song Hu."

Scar was giving an explanation to Li Lihui.

"This matter must be investigated in detail, just wait for the forensic results."

The Pot-bellied man, Li Lihui was assigned here at the crime scene. At present, he was holding an appearance as if he was being conscientious in discharging

official duties. When he saw Ye Feng coming over there, his eyes flashed brightly and hurriedly he ran up to him, while putting on a smile : “Ye Shao, what brought you here? In this kind of troublesome matter, Ye Shao mustn’t get involved

No one would dare testify Ye Feng, therefore, Li Lihui didn’t know that Ye Feng was also involved in this matter.

“Regarding other people, they don’t matter to me, but Scar accompanied me on a trip, and we used Hummer for this trip.”

Ye Feng pointed to the side of nearby parked Hummer H2.

“Yes.”

Scar nodded.

Liu Lihui couldn’t interpose any word, the only thing he could do currently was watching those two men advancing towards Hummer. He was little lost, so he shook his head and thought that this time such a big matter had happened, if he couldn’t find the murderer because of lots of complexities, then once again he would determine the nature of this incident as the fight within the Underworld gangs.

It seemed like, very soon, in Yanjing, the top three big reactionary gangs would have the convergence point.

Along with Scar, Ye Feng went towards Hummer, and noticed that Zhao Yibei’s corpse had already been taken away.

“Just a moment ago, I called someone to take his body away. There is no need to preserve him, since tomorrow is the cremation.”

Scar was looking very depressed.

“Give me a call during his funeral, I’m sorry for him.”

Ye Feng said that and remained silent for a long time. Since he hadn’t attained ten years of Cultivation, otherwise, he could have used Immortal Technique to preserve his soul

“No, you killed Song Tianying to help him get his revenge, that’s already more than enough.”

Scar said that, and suddenly a hint of determination flashed in his eyes : “Ye Elder brother, I have something which I want to discuss with you.”

“Huh? Then say it.”

Ye Feng nodded.

“Today, when this thing will be over, then I will give up this Heavenly Serpent gang and will tag along with you, what do you think about it?”

Scar said that somewhat apprehensively. As he clearly knew that earlier Ye Feng had a liking for him completely because of the power and influence of Heavenly Serpent Gang. If he gave up his Gang, would Ye Feng still need him as

his little brother?

However, he really wanted to practice martial arts with the help of Ye Feng. It was not because he wanted to give an account of the scar on his face or the death of his wife, rather because in the future, he wanted to protect the people who were important to him. He would never allow such a thing happen to any of his dear ones, like Zhao Yibei.

“At present, what is the situation of Heavenly Serpent Gang?”

Ye Feng didn't answer him directly, instead asked one.

“All the properties of Heavenly Serpent Public Security Company have been swallowed by Cai Wu and Song Hu. Apart from this, the majority of my members are now at the side of Song Hu. I am left with just twenty or thirty trusted men.”

Scar shook his head, obviously, he had a feeling that the current situation was not good: “Song Hu has handled this matter very smoothly and tactfully, not only he colluded with Black Dragon Association, but he also processed all legal documents of this company quite well. Moreover, I have a doubt that he also has even bigger backstage

“Mysterious organisation?”

Ye Feng eyes flashed with coldness, this was that organisation who sent someone to kill him secretly. He was already Ye Feng's enemy, now the time had arrived when Ye Feng must investigate thoroughly about him, to find out his true identity, and then eradicate him completely.

Otherwise, how a sharp edge on a person's back, continuously keeps on hurting him awfully, exactly that, Ye Feng was in an awfully bad mood.

"Should be."

Scar replied with a dignified look.

"Then leave this thing to me. Oh, by the way, how many assets do you still have now?"

Ye Feng asked again.

Scar listened to that and immediately replied : "There is a BMW car, a Hummer, Tianhua Casino warehouse, which probably has some cash and gold, altogether it would be more than ten million only these much. Tianhua Casino has already been designated under the name of Song Hu. "

"Enough, since this is the case, then forget about leaving Heavenly Serpent Gang."

Ye Feng shook his head and said : "You put things here processed, bring all of your trusted brothers and make a fresh start, *i.e.* start from scratch, and this time primarily with the low profile. When the right time arrives, I will teach you martial arts then."

"Yes!"

Scar nodded seriously.

To make it work out successfully, it would really need a very hard work. Moreover, to again achieve power and influence like earlier, which he had earned over a decade of hard labour, it was just simple to say, but actually not that simple to achieve. But it was not difficult as well. At least for Scar, the death of Zhao Yibei has made him set his firm resolve thoroughly.

He had a belief that Ye Feng would certainly lead them to glory!

“As for Song Hu, Where is he now?”

Ye Feng’s eyes flashed with coldness as he asked.

In order to get rid of a threatening opponent, he couldn’t afford even the tiny bit of dragging!

“In Imperial Palace.”

Scar said that, but when he noticed Ye Feng had some doubts, then immediately explained : “In the Southwest side of Yanjing, there is Imperial Entertainment Club, which is the headquarters of Black Dragon Association, and is popularly known as Imperial Palace.”

“Got it, now you hurry back to your work.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, as he asked position and the general situation of Imperial Palace. And then he got out of the car, moved sideways into a dark alley, and quietly put on the mask.

Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge were the same people, except Long Wan'er and Ye Wentian, nobody knew about this thing. Ye Feng still needed to wear the mask to hide his identity from the outsiders!

For this kind of activity which involved killing people, he was disinclined to ride in a car, so as to avoid leaving any kind of clue. When he displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, his speed was terrific – a speed of 120 km per hour in the city. Moreover, he wasn't at all afraid of traffic jams, very swiftly he kept on moving ahead.

In the shadows of the city, the blurred afterimage of Ye Feng was appearing and disappearing unceasingly. It seemed like Ye Feng, as a demon, was rapidly advancing towards the south-west direction, and soon saw a magnificent luxury building, on the roadside, just as described by Scar.

Imperial Entertainment Club!

As compared to Tianhua Casino, it was more luxurious. Unlike the bar street which was so noisy, it had the high-end atmosphere, because the business of Black Dragon Association was primarily established in the main city, which was totally dependent on senior official and rich merchants. Therefore, it was totally different from Heavenly Serpent Gang.

In the eyes of outsiders, Heavenly Serpent Gang was just a Public Security company.

Wearing a mask, Ye Feng, on the way to Imperial Palace, first went to a clothing store and bought a pair of casual clothes. After putting them on, he rushed towards his destination. Soon he reached there, and with a stride walk, he went inside.

As the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, it was quite natural for Scar to be familiar with the construction of Imperial Palace. Therefore, very conveniently, he roughly described its structure to Ye Feng all the way through.

Finally, he came inside the Palace, however without paying even the slightest bit of attention towards the front desk beautiful woman who was flabbergasted seeing him there, he directly went into the elevator and pressed the button on the fourth floor. The Imperial Palace occupied a broad land area, therefore it was not that high. The fourth floor was its top floor, but the facility available on each floor was very rich, various senior official and rich merchants liked coming to this place.

.....

In the building of Imperial Entertainment Club, on the fourth floor, there was a magnificent and dazzling conference room, in which a group of five people were sitting, completely involved in some kind of discussion.

There was the boss of Black Dragon Association, Dubang Long, along with his two high-level personnel. He was discussing matters with Heavenly Serpent Gang's Song Hu, along with Cai Wu's wife. Cai Wu was that man who used to originally supervise Heavenly Serpent Public Security Company. Altogether, there were five people, and all were looking quite dignified.

"My son was killed."

Song Hu put down the cell phone, and with a dark gloomy face, said:
"Moreover, that boy surnamed 'Ye' has not died yet."

Until now, the blocked news had finally reached his ears.

Chapter 98 -> Strange Master

In the magnificent conference hall, the facial expression of those five people was not looking quite good.

Dubang Long, the boss of Black Dragon Association, a tanned skinned man, wearing a big sapphire ornamental thumb ring, continuously tapping his rough and powerful fingers on the tabletop, and currently holding a gloomy facial expression, was looking incomparably powerful.

On the highway, the sniper missed his target, and the death of Tianhua Casino's Song Tianying, both of these incidents had baffled them. Therefore, finally, their people were assigned to thoroughly investigate these incidents. This failure also couldn't be completely blamed on their intelligence report, because Scar along with the Criminal Police team, had really done a great job, in maintaining an utmost secrecy.

"So, that boy surnamed 'Ye' must be eliminated as soon as possible, otherwise, he can move towards Lin Clan for help, then that would become more troublesome."

Dubang Long's voice was very infectious and super appealing, to be able to become the boss of a Gang, was absolutely not a mediocrity: "It seems that it is necessary to apply to Cai Shao, to call the Hidden Pavilion Master to come over here."

Hearing these words "Hidden Pavilion Master," many of them couldn't bear but shuddered, including that originally supervising the financial affairs of Heavenly Serpent Public Security Company, a 30-year-old, still attractive woman. As soon as she heard this name, her face turned deathly white, obviously, she

thought of something, which deeply frightened her from inside.

“For the time being, Cai Shao doesn’t want to be in the direct conflict with Lin Clan, so, making Hidden Pavilion Master deal with that boy surnamed ‘Ye’, will Cai Shao agree with this point?

The squared face man, Song Hu look dignified as he said that.

“Or should we pay money to look for a killer again?”

That charming young woman tightly frowned as she said that.

“Too late, this matter must be processed as early as possible.”

Dubang Long said with a very loud and resounding voice : “There’s a rumour, that the boy surnamed ‘Ye’ is closely related with a Martial arts expert, moreover, his engagement is already settled with Lin Clan’s eldest daughter, Miss Lin. Therefore, Cai Shao has already considered him as his prime target.”

After finished saying that, he immediately pulled out his cell phone and dialled a mysterious telephone number. After several switches over, finally, he heard a sweet female voice: “Hello, this is the Personal Secretary of Cai Shao, you are the boss of Black Dragon Association, Dubang Long, please report your Operation Code.”

“Four-Four-Three-Nine-Eight-Two.”

When Dubang Long reported these six digits code, the other side once again

transferred the call, but this time the call was transferred directly to Cai Shao.

“What’s the matter?”

From the other side, a male voice, processed from a Voice changing machine, immediately passed through the cell phone, so that nobody could judge his age.

“Cai Shao, Black Dragon Association’s Dubang Long, Four-Four-Three-Nine-Eight-Two.”

Dubang Long said that and then looked towards Song Hu.

“Song Hu from Heavenly Serpent Gang, Four-Four-Seven-Seven-One-Three.”

Song Tiger added a sentence.

“Applying for Hidden Pavilion Master to deal with Ye Feng, Cai Shao, how do you think about it?”

Immediately Dubang Long spoke out his purpose.

The other side of the phone was silent for a long time, it seemed like he was analysing the pros and cons of this measure. Almost a minute later, finally Cai Shao replied : “Code – Zero Five Five has already set out, ten minutes later, he will arrive at Imperial Palace, keep watch at the reception. Dubang Long, you can directly issue the order.”

“Yes, Cai Shao.”

Hearing that, Dubang Long became extremely delighted, then he heard the other person hung up the phone. Every time he called Cai Shao, he used to talk with him by holding a fearful and apprehensive feeling, because, an year ago, that incident of Southern Heavenly Gates’ complete destruction, had cast an indelible shadow in his heart.

“Wait, after ten minutes, I’ll order Hidden Pavilion Master, to directly go to the boy surnamed ;Ye’, and get rid of him quickly.”

Dubang Long said that, gradually a hint of malicious colour crawled over his face.

However, at this point of moment, suddenly an unexpected sound passed from the next door : “I’m truly sorry, I’m afraid that you have to go first.”

“Who is it!”

Dubang Long promptly responded, he quickly opened the drawer and pulled out a pistol!

This level of the secret meeting, he already had tight protection at several places outside the hall, then how could it possible that someone could secretly listen to their conversation from the next door? Moreover, the sound-insulated function of this conference hall was extremely good, how could a person hear them talking from the next door, and also could pass on the sound?

But he didn’t get any answer, instead, an ice blue ray of light flashed and

arrived before his eyes!

Sword qi!

An ice blue light as if Sword's ray of light, penetrated the wall, and cut the midair of the conference hall in just one fell swoop. Everything happened so fast, that nobody even got the time to respond, when it came and directly pierced through the heart of Dubang Long!

His heartbeat instantly stopped.

Immediately, that ice blue Sword qi disappeared, leaving behind the dead body of Dubang Long, whose chest was getting more and more bright red, since fresh blood was surging out of it continuously. The pistol in his hand fell on the table, and his whole body overturned. The big sapphire ornamental ring on his finger was reflecting a dazzling light. He died with his eyes wide open.

He didn't even know who had killed him!

Immediately, an orangish-red coloured, long sword cut opened a big hole on one side of the wall, by taking a broad view, one could only see a faint blurred afterimage of an individual, behind the wall.

"Ah!"

Immediately afterwards, a blood-curling screech of Song Hu rang out in the entire room. Sitting beside him, that charming young married woman turned her head to look towards the source of the sound, and shockingly saw Song Hu's chest was soaked with fresh blood. Terror-stricken, she turned and hurriedly

moved backwards while dashing with several nearby chairs.

Who was he after all?

The remaining three people quickly turned rattled by someone's presence. The two high ranked personnel of Black Dragon Association hurriedly raised their pistols, but actually they could only see several faint blurred afterimages frequently appearing and disappearing all over the rooms in front of their eyes, it seemed that he was a masked man!

That person certainly was Ye Feng, very tactfully he hid in the next door, and with his Zhenqi sword, quietly drew a hole in the wall, so that he could hear the discussion of the people present in the Conference hall. And the moment Dubang Long hung up the phone, he instantly chose this time to attack, and immediately brought his plan into action.

The degree of the sharpness of his Zhenqi sword was naturally extraordinary, not even a wall could block him.

By using his long ice blue Sword qi, he killed Dubang Long, and immediately after that, he activated his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace and instantly killed Song Hu. Thereafter, when he saw the other three people had pulled out their pistols, without a bit of hesitation, he moved quickly, and all of a sudden a red light flashed in the conference hall, and then immediately disappeared.

Those three people didn't even get the time to react, and suddenly, Ye Feng beheaded them, just at one fell swoop!

"This trip really turned out right for me, I can't think why Cai Shao has targeted

me as his most important goal, what did I do wrong to him?”

While thinking about this, and still wearing the mask, he quickly drew back to the next door, leaving the corpses of five people behind in the conference hall.

He must hide outside, because just after ten minutes, Hidden Pavilion Master would arrive. Ye Feng was very much interested in having a look at him, because he actually wanted to see how the card of Cai Shao was.

Since the opposite party was his opponent now, that was the reason why Ye Feng must know himself and his opponent! Now, both sides were in the dark, hence, the more he would know the opposite party, the more advantage he would get over him.

Generally Ye Feng used to expose Mo Jiuge's identity, and Cai Shao only exposed the identity of a skilled person from the underworld. The available data was extremely few which he could extract just from the previous telephone conversation, Cai Shao handled affairs very discretely.

“If I will know who Cai Shao is, it will become quite easier for me, and then I'll directly kill him and finish this matter.....”

Ye Feng shook his head, it seemed like he must continue to be careful almost everywhere.

Outside the building of Imperial Entertainment Club, he hid in the shadow of the thick bushes for around 10 minutes. He felt that the atmosphere in the club had tensed up. This news, that five people were killed including Dubang Long and Song Hu, had quietly spread among the high ranked personnel of Black Dragon

Association. But since, the matter was quite serious in nature, so it had not been formally disclosed.

When ten minutes passed, finally a strange figure appeared in Ye Feng's field of vision, and went straight towards the entrance of Imperial Entertainment Club.

The strange figure, dressed in a huge and heavy windproof coat, looked very tall and strong, his whole head was wrapped in a hat, and was entirely covered by cloth from head to toe, without revealing even the nickels and dimes. From this fellow, Ye Feng felt a faint trace of danger, was this so-called "Hidden Pavilion Master"?

"A martial artist from the Martial arts world? No, he is not, this kind of feeling, it doesn't look like"

As when Ye Feng was busy guessing about him, by keeping his stature completely motionless, at the same time, that strange figure suddenly turned and looked towards Ye Feng, and the next moment, a pair of his shining eyes suddenly met with the eyes of Ye Feng!

"Shinning eyes? What stuff is this"

Ye Feng's heart cursed loudly, immediatley he got up and set out to escape. At present, he had no idea about the strength of the opposite party, hence he couldn't act rashly.

But seeing this, that strange figure immediately changed his direction, and rushed towards the place where Ye Feng was, and then started chasing after him

with an incredibly fast speed!

Chapter 99 -> Dragon Claw Hand Technique Second level

When Ye Feng saw the speed of the opposite party, it blew up his mind.

“This speed, 100m in four-five seconds?”

Luckily his speed was not as good as Ye Feng, but since Ye Feng had already displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, which made him feel relieved : ” Then I’ll play with you.....”

He jumped aside to escape and maintain a distance from the opposite party, simultaneously also started circulating Zhenqi rapidly through his meridians, and thus became almost ready to display Dragon Claw Hand Technique any moment.

Earlier he had thoroughly read the ancient book, therefore he knew that the essence of Dragon Claw Hand Technique was in achieving the second level, then only he could release Zhenqi from his body in the form of a Dragon claw to grasp his target. Comprehending the second level of Dragon Claw Hand Technique was very difficult, however, for Ye Feng, it was nothing but just an ordinary trick.

As far as grasping the control of Zhenqi’s circulation within the meridians was concerned, Ye Feng could be said as on the Grand master rank.

Under the light footsteps, he pounded his both hands separately in the air, suddenly his Zhenqi rushed out from his body, and the next moment, his hands took the form of cloud-style Dragon claw hand!

(Lastvoice : There are different moves of Dragon Claw Hand Techniques, like Dragon Claw Hand -cloud style, bead style, moon style, etc.)

In a flash, Ye Feng caught the brown coloured hat of that strange figure, and with his one claw hand, gently lifted his hat, and directly blew it off!

Suddenly, an oily bald head appeared in front of him. By looking at him closely, Ye Feng noticed that his shining eyes were looking pale and emaciated, with sunken eyes, in short, his whole appearance was making him look like a drug addict.

“Is this?”

A sudden sight of that strange figure sent a shiver down Ye Feng’s spine, what is this guy? A zombie? A Phantom? Or a Drug addict?

If Ye Wentian would see this scene, he would be surprised to the extent of jaw dropping. Ye Feng comprehended the second level of Dragon Claw Hand Technique extremely fast! Truly a genius!

In fact, it was not only because Ye Feng was highly talented, but also because originally there was a huge difference between Zhenqi and inner qi. In case of inner qi, releasing out inner qi from the body was very difficult, but in Zhenqi it was as simple as eating food.

After uncovering the hat of that strange figure, he didn’t hesitate and moved rapidly, leaving behind an afterimage in-situ, while at the same time, he continued changing hand movements, displaying a series of Dragon Claw moves, revealing bead style and then moon style one after another!

The strange figure stayed around the blurred afterimage left behind by Ye

Feng, and waved his arms to grab that afterimage, but once again Ye Feng pounded his claw hands, and took the opportunity to lift his huge windproof coat and throw it away.

To one's surprise, his whole body was covered with long brown hair!

“Crap! A gorilla?”

This sight scared him for a moment, could it be that Cai Shao was one of the devils doctors from Zhuan Clan's, and was a genetic modification enthusiast?

Suddenly a thought flashed in his mind: Right, once Scar had said that those who were the victims of this new drug, after getting stabilised for one year, they all vanished later. Could it be that it was somehow connected with Hidden Pavilion Master?

There was no doubt that the physical strength of this thing was formidable, this thing could also clearly see Ye Feng's quick movement as well as his blurred afterimage, moreover, he was punching with a force of 500 kg. There was not much difference between the present strength of Ye Feng and this thing.

Unfortunately, this thing had low IQ, who clearly couldn't distinguish between the remnant shade and entity, moreover, he wasn't following any tricks or important composition while fighting.

“Such being the case, then, I don't need to be afraid of you.”

Ye Feng's heart turned a bit ruthless, and he decided not to escape anymore, instead he turned back, and suddenly his stature flashed. And in an instant, an

orangish-red Zhenqi sword emerged out in his hand.

Shua!

A metal crashing sound resounded since Ye Feng's sword had been blocked by the hairy arm of that strange thing.

"It's really hard."

Ye Feng thought that perhaps if this guy would face the submachine gun fire, he wouldn't be afraid of it, because the sharpness of his Zhenqi sword was no less than general firearms.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Ka! Puff!

However, Ye Feng didn't give up, quickly he moved towards his neck and hit on his neck continuously, after five strikes, he finally truncated the head of that clumsy strange person, leaving behind a headless body with flying head!

Then, he noticed that originally this strange figure's skin was very thin, which was covered with long brown hair. But hidden within his skin was a layer of steel, which was used for his protection and which had covered his whole body.

His head was sliced off, and he finally fell to the ground completely dead, still his blood didn't stream out much. He was simply similar to the dry corpse or could be said as the mummy.

"Really abnormal"

All of a sudden, Ye Feng heard the sound of footsteps coming from a distant place, hence he immediately put away his Zhenqi sword, and without staying there anymore, he instantly turned and left Imperial Entertainment Club.

Such a weirdo, Ye Feng wouldn't pay attention towards him if he was alone. However, if the number of this thing was more than one, then it would be extremely difficult to deal with them. Surprisingly, he didn't even know yet how did Cai Shao come around this stuff?

Without thinking much, he quickly left the spot.

This incident would certainly attract a group of police, but Ye Feng was not in the mood to get trapped in a trouble once again. Earlier, that incident with Miao Zhenqiang, he should have woken up by now, but still hadn't come to look for Ye Feng, and Ye Feng also had no clue why he didn't come after him.

Ye Feng didn't think about it, and directly returned to Qingfeng Park.

Quietly, he went to the side of the villa in the woods, as he just wanted to take off his mask, but suddenly he discovered something fishy. He saw the lights of his villa were turned off from a long time, under the moonlight, street light was looking calm and indifferent, insects were joyously chirping, and in the midst of this harmonious scenery, there was an individual, dressed in purple Chinese-style gown, standing on the street with his hands crossed, and was looking directly towards the entrance of the villa, as if he was waiting for someone.

"Who is this person?"

Ye Feng immediately tightened up his guard, and quietly moved a few steps aside. Soon, the front of that purple gown person appeared in front of his eyes, he was a 30-year-old man. The aura around him was very calm and steady, as if it was safe to deal with him.

“It’s not right, these facial features..... someone from Long Clan? He pretty much looks like Long Mo’ran

Ye Feng remained stunned seeing a person from Long Clan had come to look for him. Could it be that he knew that Ye Feng had returned from his trip, therefore he came over to track down the whereabouts of the Masked man?

This possibility was very high, however, why this guy, who was standing in front of the villa, didn’t dare to go in? If this guy entered the villa, then he would certainly find that Ye Feng was not inside, hence, highly likely he would very much suspect that he must have some sort of relationship with the Masked man.

“It seems like I need to attain ten years of Cultivation soon, then only I can display ‘Shadow Spirit Technique’.

(Lastvoice : to be present at several places at the same time.”

Ye Feng thought that once he would attain ten years of Cultivation, then he would be able to congeal his Shadow Spirit, and could easily use ‘Shadow Spirit Technique’, to be present at multiple places, at the same time. By displaying this technique, he could branch out a false body. Although this false body would be useless, but under some circumstances, it could be extremely convenient to deceive people.

Now he finally understood why Miao Zhenjiang didn’t come to bother him, originally a person from Long Clan had to come in person

Ye Feng carefully observed him for a long time and found that the man standing in front of the villa, didn't move even a half inch, as if he was a statue. He was just constantly staring towards the villa, who knew what was running in his mind currently.

"Not good, ah, if this guy continues standing like this until dawn, then I can't get into the house, can I?"

On the one side, a thirty-year-old man from Long Clan, whose Cultivation was undoubtedly higher than Long Wan'er, was constantly standing like this, while on the other side, Ye Feng, who really wanted to enter the villa, was still hidden in the woods, since he had a feeling that if he would try to go inside the villa, he would surely be detected by the opposite party.

"Who?"

Just at this time, the purple dressed man suddenly said in a soft voice, as he turned his head and looked towards Ye Feng's side.

"Not good, I just took one breath disorderly, and suddenly got discovered by him!"

That jolted Ye Feng's heart out, and he didn't dare to continue hiding.

"Ha ha ha."

Ye Feng chuckled, wearing a mask, he came out of the woods: "How come

someone from Long Clan appeared here? What's wrong, do you want to enter the domain of Ye Clan?"

He speculated that this villa was Ye Wentian's property, hence, Long Clan couldn't dare to go in, which was quite normal. Therefore, to frighten the opposite party was also very interesting.

"Myself, Long Zi from Long Clan, and, yourself Mo Jiuge?"

Purple-dressed man, seeing him stunned, felt surprised for a moment, as if he hadn't thought that it was so easy to see the Masked man.

"Yes, do you need any advice from me?"

Ye Feng asked that in a sinking voice.

"Ha Ha, Mo elder brother, wise people don't speak in code words."

Long Zi smiled steadily, he appeared very cordial and incomparably kind: "Your Excellency, whatever you have done to our Wan'er, presumably I don't need to mention it, right? Frankly speaking, I just want to discuss something with you, your Excellency"

As the voice fell, Ye Feng suddenly saw him in action, the purple dressed man's stature jumped high and immediately flung a foot towards Ye Feng!

"A test?"

Ye Feng looked dignified.

Long Clan had gained expertise in swordsmanship, there was a rumour that Romantic Sword Technique was the most aggressive technique of their clan. However, Long Zi didn't use a sword, instead used Dragon Leg Technique, which explained everything that he obviously didn't want to kill Ye Feng.

Defence style!

Ye Feng suddenly entered the state, and immediately pounded his hand in the air, instantly Zhenqi streamed out from his body and took the form of a cloud-style Dragon Claw Hand!

Long Zi hadn't ever thought that Ye Feng could be able to assign away his "inner qi" from his body, and would suddenly hold his ankle to block his attack. Seeing this, his complexion suddenly changed!

Chapter 100 -> Commotion at the school entrance

When Long Zi's ankle was caught by Ye Feng in the air, his heart skipped a beat. Earlier, he had heard that Mo Jiuge looked like a young guy, so was it really possible for him to actually assign away his inner qi from his body? Moreover, wasn't the move, just displayed by him, Ye Clan's Dragon Claw Hand Technique?

His qi immediately returned and restored in his Dantian, and by stabilising his balance, he stopped his stature stiffly, then smoothly he fell from the air and stood firmly to the ground! Otherwise, he must have been thrown down to the ground directly by Ye Feng, like a dog eating the food.

"Well, boy, assigning away inner qi from the body, is not a simple thing."

From the bottom of his heart, Long Zi appreciated him : "What is your relationship with Ye Clan?"

Earlier, Long Wan'er had said that Ye Feng was totally an ordinary human, therefore whether it was Long Mo'ran, or any other person of Long Clan, nobody had suspected him.

If he hadn't used on time the Covert Kill Technique, then regardless of who it was, everybody would have doubted him.

"My relationship with Ye Clan, just gratitude towards them, that's all."

Ye Feng replied in a low voice.

“It seems that the relationship is not shallow, unfortunately.”

Long Zi shook his head: “By seeing your talent, I must say, if you will be properly trained, then you must become the younger generation eminent in the martial arts world.”

“And how is that possible?”

When Ye Feng saw he stopped his stature, he asked that vigilantly.

“You are really courageous to ask that.”

By holding a gentle expression, Long Zi said : ” I don’t know how Wan’er have got attached to Your excellency, but if I allow Your excellency to join my Long Clan, then we will be considered as the relatives by marriage.”

Ye Feng listened to that, and almost laughed, he thought that actually, this guy had developed a liking for him only because he was at such a young age, still had the talent to release inner qi from his body. Therefore, he wanted now to draw him towards his clan.

“Are you representing Long Mo’ran?”

By putting on a very calm and composed appearance, Ye Feng lightly said: “I don’t think, Long Mo’ran will ever allow me for that.”

“Ha Ha.”

Long Zi laughed: “If the Head of our Clan knows their son-in-law’s incredible talent, inevitably he will be overjoyed since it’s a golden opportunity to enhance the strength of our clan. Moreover, Ye Clan has already quitted the Martial arts world entirely, and also, it no longer has any connection with Long Clan, therefore, joining our Long Clan, doesn’t mean being hostile towards Ye Clan. ”

“Thank you senior for this invitation, this matter is truly very important for me, so allow me some time to think about it.”

Ye Feng’s heart totally disagreed with him, but on the surface, he didn’t let him know about it, instead he asked for some time to think about it. Currently for him, the most important thing was to deceive this guy, and then go back to take a good rest and conserve his strength, as so to deal with possible threats from Cai Shao.

“Alright, I believe that this young hero is a smart guy.”

Long Zi smiled : “Oh by the way, if Your excellency makes a decision, then you may come to the East China Sea, recently including the Head of our clan, most of the young guys of Long Clan have left for the East China Sea. I will wait respectfully for you there.”

Ye Feng noticed that although he was very much satisfied and pleased with Ye Feng’s appearance, but there was a hidden trace of concern lurking around his forehead. In fact, Long Zi also knew that to convince Long Mo’ran to accept Mo Jiuge as his son-in-law, was really like biting iron balls.

However, the talent demonstrated by Ye Feng, really made him jealous, if he hadn’t tried to draw him towards his Clan, then that would be more regrettable for him. He thought he would invite Mo Jiuge to the East China Sea, where he

would take the opportunity to highlight his talent before Long Mo'ran, then it might change the perception of Long Mo'ran.....

Entire Long Clan was really not monolithic.

“Got it.”

In a sinking voice, Ye Feng said that, however, he was in the state of astonishment, and was also a bit perplexed hearing that Long Clan went to the East China Sea, what did they want to do there? Was it because they were looking for the fairy of the East China Sea?

After several random nonsense talks, finally, Long Zi turned around and departed completely satisfied. Unfortunately, in fact, Ye Feng had no intention to be a part of Long Clan. As far as the temperament of Long Mo'ran was concerned, Ye Feng didn't know after seeing his talent, Long Mo'ran would really appreciate him or feel jealous of him, it was really hard to predict yet.

Seeing that purple-dressed person finally left, Ye Feng felt relieved. Quietly, he returned to his villa, and without turning on the lights, he directly went to take rest.

He didn't even know that his meeting with Long Zi, had been thoroughly observed by someone.

“This kid, although he got an invitation from Long Clan, still, he is entirely unconcerned about it. His temperament is commendable!”

Huang Peirong, stood by the roadside, under the shadow of the trees,

excessively appreciated Mo Jiuge. He was the one who brought the news of Ye Feng's return to Yanjing, moreover, he also hurried to catch up with him, since he wanted to investigate about him. However, before he could stop Mo Jiuge, unfortunately, he had already been forestalled by Long Clan ahead.

Seeing Long Zi departed after admitting defeat, he also repressed his thought of jumping out in front of Ye Feng. The attraction of the influence of his Mt. Tianzhu paradise, as compared to the incoming messenger of Long Clan, didn't stand any chance, not even a least bit.

“This matter can take it's time, on the contrary, the East China Sea is actually being very lively recently, surprisingly Long Mo'ran's desire to marry, has mobilised the entire Long Clan

Huang Peirong was thinking this, while hiding his stature.

Finally around the villa, tranquilly thoroughly restored now, the ground was appearing like silver frost had spread out, the cool breeze was blowing, shadows of the trees were swaying, under the moonlight the cold weather was showing its colour.

.....

The next morning, Ye Feng along with Su Menghan, walked to the school together.

Half a month left for the college entrance examination, this was the last week for the students to go to the school for attending review classes. After a week, they wouldn't need to go to the school, since the school would provide them

leave, so that they could prepare for the exams.

Actually, in the last exam, Ye Feng had scored the lowest marks in his class. His rank was first from the bottom, which had made Su Menghan very anxious for him. And the main reason was, Ye Feng's heart was completely distracted and he seemed to be completely not in the study.

"Ye Feng, starting from today, I'll try my best to tutor you and help you with your study, you hear me?"

On the road, very earnestly Su Menghan said that.

"Ah How is the matter between Xie Clan and your Dad going on?"

Ye Feng nodded, and then shifted the topic by asking that.

"Certainly, will sue them."

Su Menghan said that bitterly, and then immediately turned a little embarrassed: "But I don't know how to do."

"I'll ask Scar to help you with this."

Ye Feng casually spoke that. Scar, as the boss of a reactionary gang, had enough social experience, hence helping Su Menghan to handle this kind of matter was extremely easy for him. Moreover, regarding prosecution, the court would make Su Xinchang appear in the court to testify, in that case, neither Xie Min nor Xie Chengye could run away from this trial.

Even though, if any problem would arise , that wouldn't be a big deal for Ye Feng, he could directly resolve it with his sword. However, that was not the case with Su Menghan, she would definitely not accept Ye Feng's way of solving things by killing people.

After saying that, Ye Feng gave a call to Scar, making him help to manage this matter, while being in touch with Su Menghan.

"Ye elder brother, don't worry about this matter. The chief justice of Yanjing court is the person of Lin Clan, in addition, we have Su Xinchang's oral confession, so consider it as all settled!"

Scar made a solemn vow to comply.

From his voice, Ye Feng could easily feel his sadness still mingled with his voice. In such a short time, such a strong man like Scar, became unable to recover from the shock of the bereaved.

"In the World of the Immortals, physical death does not mean an absolute death Unfortunately, in this world, because of my current Cultivation level, I am still unable to do anything."

Deep inside his heart, Ye Feng felt somewhat pity and guilt.

But the prime culprit of all these matters was that Cai Shao of the mysterious organization!

When Ye Feng came around the school's gate along with Su Menghan, suddenly he found that there was a huge commotion going on at school's entrance. There were lots of cars and people, moreover, in addition to the students, there were also many parents surrounded the school gate.

Was it because the college entrance exam at hand, so parents had come to send their children to the school?

However, soon those two understood that this was not the case, an old age youth pursued them from behind, and heavily patted on Ye Feng's shoulder. It was Ou B: "Small Bee, take a quick look, I have heard that Ms Lin has come over here looking for you, and everyone is just an onlooker!"

What?

Did that Lin Shiqing come to the school just to look for him?

Ye Feng and Su Menghan stood stunned in silence, and totally motionless with their eyes wide open.

Chapter 101 → A classy, goddess-like lady.

When these three people walked towards the school entrance, they really saw a slim and graceful figure standing there, attracting the gazes of numerous passing by students and parents.

Due to a sudden surge of the people, it had become very difficult for these three, to clearly see her, they could only see that she was clogged up by several people, and all were constantly trying to dedicate their affability to please her. Also, the parents easily recognized her identity as the daughter of Lin Clan, and even they also started trying to get close to her.

“Ye Feng!”

All of a sudden, a crisp and pleasant voice passed through the school gate. Soon after this voice, the crowd between these three people and the school gate, naturally started to get out of their way.

Ye Feng raised his head, and poured his gaze at her, all of a sudden he was stupefied by her beauty.

He saw a tall, beautiful, positive temperament girl, with a beaming face, was walking leisurely towards him. Her beautiful facial features were highly compassionate, so mesmerising as if making people feel the spring breeze.

Well, she was one hell of a classy, princess-like lady!

Just after pouring a single glance at her exquisite, impeccable and milky white

face, nobody could ever forget it. Especially a pair of her beautiful eyes, which were so limpid and rich with charm, and when she looked with those eyes, it seemed as if she was staring at the profound elusive starry sky.

Her clear pitch-black long hair like a waterfall, gracefully billowing around her shoulders, and highlighting her snow white tender neck and collarbone, making any man completely unable to bear but look at her several times.

Especially Further down, her snow white V-neck shirt chest folded wonderfully, as well as her deep ravines were looming between the two buttons, which could make any man have a parched mouth, that was a pair of stunning fullness, which was closely wrapped by the snow white shirt, plentiful and upright, quite vivid!

Underneath the thin shirt, there was a slender narrow waist, immediately followed by a black tight-fitting hip wrapping short skirt, which was sketching out her perfect body curves. Her slender legs, under a pair of her skin-coloured leg socks, were appearing quite beautiful. Her exquisite feet stepping on a pair of fine high-heeled sandals, revealing her delicate slim ankle to the extent where even the most demanding foot fetish couldn't see a shred of flaws in them.

And such a beautiful, classy and goddess-like lady was she, still, a sweet smile was lurking around her face all the time, which could easily become the reason of man's destruction, countless times!

"Hey, she just looked at me and smiled, ah ha ha!"

"Dream on, obviously, she smiled to me!"

Two boys already had been very noisy and quarrelling with each other at one

side, however, they still didn't attract much attention, because currently, the attention of each and every person was entirely on this point, that did such a pretty lady really come over here especially to look for that teenager, called Ye Feng?

Although Ye Feng had earned a little fame among the students' circle of Yanshan Junior High School, but still many parents didn't know him, they were just dying to know that how could such a beauty have something to do with an ordinary high school student, were they related?

"Hey, are you staring at her?"

Seeing Ye Feng dazing out and carrying a blank facial expression, Su Meghan couldn't help but pinched his arm.

"Well, no, actually she is a little bit different from what I had imagined"

Ye Feng helplessly smiled, earlier he had thought that Lin Shiqing's beauty should be on the same level as his female master, Su Feiying, like she would also look noble and elegantly glamorous type of beauty. However, it seemed like that wasn't the case now.

"Hmmm, have a talk with her, I am leaving first now."

Su Menghan lightly snorted as she pinched his arm softly once again. Actually, she was really a very sensible girl, hence she left first! Originally, Ye Feng had also thought that this girl was likely to become restless and might cause a little confusion. But seeing her leaving them alone, he really felt a little relaxed.

“Small Bee, put your best into it.”

Ou B sighed and said that, while patting his shoulder.

All along, Ou B had been hiding something from Ye Feng very deeply in his heart, that he was a little discontented with him. Particularly because of this fact that although his engagement had already been fixed with Miss Lin, still, he was hooked up with Xiaohua, it was such a waste of resources, quite greedy!

Seeing this reaction of Ou B, Ye Feng could only smile, since all of these things concerned with him, were totally incomprehensible to him yet.

When Ou B also left him and entered the school, the centre of attraction of that princess-like lady fell directly on Ye Feng, and with a smile, she extended her pure white delicate hand : “I’m Lin Shiqing.”

“Ye Feng.”

He also stretched out his hand to hold her hand which was quite smooth, exquisite and soft, as if it was without bones!

Students and parents were very enviously looking at Ye Feng from one side, he could hold the hand of such a beautiful attractive lady, he must be feeling extremely happy at the moment! They all were greedily staring at him and were feeling restless to rush and replace Ye Feng, so that they could hold her hand tightly and never loosen it ever.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng was different to what they had thought, he gently held her hand and then took his hand back, leaving several people stunned.

This boy was not too young, as he wasn't even the least bit interested in taking such a cheap advantage of her! Several people were thinking that Ye Feng must have come today completely well dressed, just to make a good impression, however, there were also several students who already knew the news of his engagement with Miss Lin. Hence, they were somewhat sneering while thinking that already their engagement was settled, so was it still necessary to carry out this kind of artificial things?

As everyone knew that Ye Feng would never think of doing anything so cheap, rather he would try to make a good impression by not doing cheap things. Nowadays, he already had Long Wan'er at one hand, and Su Menghan on the other side, and both of them were also quite classy, who would never lose to this top beautiful woman, Lin Shiqing.

He rather had mixed feelings, that Lin Shiqing was indeed attractive, her stature was quite good, and her disposition was also seemingly gentle, no wonder could be called as Yanshan's first beautiful woman.

She was a 21-years old, second-year university student. She was extremely beautiful, classy and goddess-like lady, with a little shy facial feature, overall which was quite enough to make countless men spurt out blood.

"Let's go, this is the first time we have met, let your sister take you out."

Perhaps, she felt that the crowd around was somewhat repugnant, therefore, with a smile accompanied by a blink of an eye, she pulled Ye Feng's wrist and walked outside.

Ye Feng listened to her and suddenly remained stunned, "sister"?

However, soon he somewhat understood the plan of Lin Shiqing. It seemed that this beauty came to see him today, by completely holding a clear goal, and that was she would make a clear distinction between the relations. Therefore, she took the initiative to get control over the situation, by putting forth the older sister and younger brother relationship between them, simultaneously she also clarified that she didn't want to have an engagement with Ye Feng!

"It seems that this beauty is indeed worthy of being Miss Lin. In the future, she could easily deal with numerous business, social and political confrontation, with this little strategy."

Ye Feng thought to himself, as he followed her all the way out of the crowd.

If Lin Shiqing would refuse this marriage on such a pretext of this siblings thing, then by doing this, she would not only achieve her goal quite easily, but by using this way, she would also not hurt the sentiments of Lin Clan as well as Ye Clan. For her, indeed it was the best choice to fulfil her purpose, without ruining the relationship between both the sides.

She was revolting, but just using a gentle way of resistance.

Was she tougher than Old man Lin?

Dreaming

"Get inside the car."

Along with Ye Feng, Lin Shiqing came to the roadside, next to a conspicuous red Lamborghini. She opened the handsome scissor-styled doors, and then explained with a smile: “Originally I wanted to go to your house to pick you up, but then thought that it would be a better choice to come to your school, to help you ask for a leave.”

Her idea was very thoughtful, but unfortunately somewhat had underestimated her own influence, as a result, she was awfully blocked at the school gate, and caused such a terrific scene just a moment ago

“You will help me to take a leave? Don’t tell me you want to take me out to stroll all day long?”

Ye Feng smiled and asked, as he stepped inside and sat in a red sports car, the smell of a faint scent of a woman was floating inside, which was very relaxing.

“Why, don’t you have the time?”

Lin Shiqing’s eyelashes curved, as she looked at him with a smiling face.

“Yes, I have.”

Ye Feng nodded, leaning comfortably on the seat.

However, at this moment, his mind was thinking about the mysterious organisation of Yanjing. He didn’t know whether Lin Clan had any relevant information about this organisation or not ? He just wanted to give a try, so as to draw out anything from Lin Shiqing’s mouth.

The red Lamborghini quickly left Yanshan Junior High School, leaving behind a group of envy, jealousy looking visions at the school's gate

Chapter 102 -> Cai Shaohong!

Regarding Lamborghini, Ye Feng didn't have much idea, however, he only knew one thing, that probably it cost several million. Anyway, if it was compared with Scar's Hummer H2 and BMW, then undoubtedly it was much more expensive than both of them.

Sitting in a grand car, and on top of that, sitting beside a classy, heavenly looking lady, could make any person extremely comfortable without a doubt. It didn't matter whether Ye Feng was or not, however, Lin Shiqing's mood was finally pretty good.

"Little Ye, that girl from before, is she your girlfriend? You really have pretty good taste."

They were in the car, and it seemed like she randomly asked that question from him with a smile. Her supple long hair was swaying by the wind, and gently provoking his heartstrings, her exquisite perfect oval-shaped face altogether had become an extremely pretty landscape.

"Hmmm, so you don't have to worry about anything."

Ye Feng chuckled softly and said : "I haven't heard of you before, it's only my grandfather you know."

"Oh, is it?"

She smiled gently, the corners of her mouth slightly turned upwards, making a

shape of an arc, as she showed her response towards Ye Feng's performance, which was a bit unexpected and surprising.

In fact, when she was all prepared to meet Ye Feng, at that time she had thought that he was just an ordinary high-school student. And when any ordinary high-school student would hear about his engagement with a campus queen of Yanshan University, then definitely he couldn't control his happiness and become wild with joy, wouldn't he be delighted beyond measure?

She had already prepared a lengthy speech for this situation, as she wanted to take the time of a whole day, so as to establish an elder sister's image in the mind of Ye Feng, making him dispel the thought of marrying her.

But now, it seemed that there was no need to carry out this act.

Ye Feng's disposition was very matured, even at the time of seeing her for the first time, he took her very lightly, with complete indifference, as if he saw an old common friend. This kind of psychological quality of Ye Feng forced Lin Shiqing to secretly appreciate him in her heart.

Not to mention the high school student, she had seen several young people from the high society, really it was very difficult in front of her to maintain a calm and composed stature!

However, she didn't have the least bit idea that currently Ye Feng's mind was completely occupied by the thought that how to dig some news related to Cai Shao out from her mouth, without causing her suspicions

"Keke, I personally feel that now in this new era and the new atmosphere, we

should worship free love. This sort of arranged marriages, we, as the youth of the new century, must resolutely resist this.”

Ye Feng said that shamelessly, as he thought that in order to extract something out of her mouth, he must establish a good relationship with her. And the method to be used to create a good relation was of course to 100 % agree with the meaning of the opposite party.

“Pretty good, you really have the rebellious spirit.”

Indeed as expected, Ye Feng had suddenly created a very favourable impression in her eyes by using this act, and as a result, her smiling face turned more delightful: “Little Ye, have you done your breakfast?”

“Not yet.”

Ye Feng replied truthfully, normally, he used to have his breakfast after going inside the school, since he used to buy something to eat from the school’s canteen. However today, he didn’t enter the school, naturally, he didn’t get the time to have his breakfast.

“Then eat something with your elder sister.”

She said that with a very clear and gentle voice : “Near Yanshan University, there is a café, which is quite good, and has been opened by my friend.”

“As you wish.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, simultaneously his heart felt very helpless. She kept on saying 'elder sister' over and over, might be because that was giving a little sense of security to her.

The distance between Yanshan Junior High School and Yanshan University was not far. Soon, the red Lamborghini stopped on the street near Yanshan University. The café she had mentioned earlier was not far away from there.

It was the time to get off, she stepped out of the car and then closed its door, simultaneously she lightly teased her hair with her fingers, very gracefully and naturally, which suddenly crazily jolted the heart of Ye Feng, making him couldn't help but look at her several times, and then he quickly turned his head to another side.

Although this beautiful lady was stirring up his manly emotions, but now he couldn't glance at her anymore, or else he would definitely be in trouble. Finally, he got success in creating such a pure juvenile like an image in her heart, which might be completely destroyed by him all of a sudden, if he kept on peeping at her like this.

"Let's go."

Suddenly a pure and sweet fragrance greeted his nostrils, immediately followed by a white hand latched on his shoulder. It was actually Lin Shiqing who circled her hand around his shoulder with a smile, since she wanted to lead him to the roadside café which was not far away.

Considering their height, she was only a little bit shorter than Ye Feng, that was why she rested her hand on his shoulder comfortably, without external help, which was actually appearing very harmonious. From their appearance, they

exactly looked like a pair of sister and brother, they totally didn't have the appearance of lovers.

On one side, a casually dressed Ye Feng, whose face was reeking of immaturity from head to toe, while on the other side, Lin shiqing, who had a matured temperament, and each and every action of her was matchless and highly attractive, even if she was being a little bit shy, still the gap between the two sides was enormously big!

From the roadside, many Yanshan University students and pedestrians were constantly throwing gazes at them, even more than that, few of them took out their cell phones and started taking their photographs from quite a distance.

As the number one beautiful and prettiest woman of Yanshan University, she was indeed fascinating, her popularity had even surpassed a lot of currently popular celebrities, to the extent that her gossiping post related to her current situation was sent to the campus forum, and instantly it spread everywhere like fire in the jungle.

Especially, because she had her hand rested on a shoulder of a guy, who looked like a high school student. Hence it had become a hot topic that was that the legendary fiancé of Miss Lin?

The news exploded out!

However, she wasn't afraid of being misunderstood, because she had already completed the overall plan.

While from Ye Feng's perspective, since he was extremely close to her,

especially a pair of her full, sticking out chest suddenly came so close to him, and then like adding fuel to the fire, the faint smell of woman's perfume floating around her body, made him unable to bear any more, and suddenly his heart started beating fast.

"Damn it, it seemed like I am getting worse more and more? I remember, back then when I used to face my master every day, it seems that this kind of feeling, did I use to have every day?"

Ye Feng criticised himself in his heart, as he tried to strongly self-stabilize himself.

"Come on."

Lin Shiqing smiled sweetly as she led him to go forward, and soon they arrived at the entrance of a family's managed "Qi Qi Tea restaurant".

At this time, several young college students were coming out of the cafe, and suddenly they saw right against their eyes, Lin Shiqing wrapping her hand around Ye Feng's shoulder.

"Is this a coincidence eh, has sister Lin along with her friend, come over here to eat breakfast?"

The youth leading the group, was a handsome young man. Seeing their intimate appearance, apparently, he was somewhat flabbergasted. By taking a close look of this handsome guy, it seemed like he looked almost like a celebrity, moreover, by listening to his voice which had a trace of femininity, it could be clearly said that he must be very popular in his school.

“Well, this is one of my relatives, Ye Feng. Soon, he is going to study in Yanshan University, therefore I’m leading him to make him familiar with the environment.”

Very politely, by putting a smile on her face, Lin Shiqing replied, her performance was really like a decent lady. Then she immediately asked: “Little Zhao, isn’t Shaohong with you?”

“No, brother Cai went to practice a ball game very early in the morning.”

That youth who was called “Little Zhao,” he glanced at Ye Feng somewhat puzzled, then with his friends, he left the entrance. It was clear that he obviously had respect for Lin Shiqing.

“Then we are going in, see you later.”

She waved his hand at those guys, and with a smile, she led Ye Feng into the cafe.

“Zhao brother, there is a problem, this Ye Feng, isn’t he Miss Lin’s fiance like we heard earlier?”

A young boy, while somewhat strangely looking at the back of those two people, said in a whispering tone.

“Sister Lin always has the discretion, then what should we worry about? I’ll report this to elder brother Cai, that’s the end, don’t care too much.”

The youth Zhao, who was the leader of the group, beckoned with his hand, then he pulled out his cell phone and sent a short note, after that he turned his head and with a smiling face, said to his friends : “This wimpy kid Ye Feng, how can he be a good match for Sister Lin? Sister Lin’s heart has already been taken away by elder brother Cai, so why are you guys flustered?”

As soon as they listened to him, they smiled and felt relieved. That was right, how could such a small wimpy kid compete with such a popular school idol?

.....

Ye Feng followed her and entered the café, however, his complexion had already changed.

Elder brother Cai Shaohong, Cai Shaohong!

Cai Shao?

The name ‘Cai Shaohong’ which was mentioned over and over by Lin Shiqing and that Little Zhao, was he the same ‘Cai Shao’, the boss of that Mysterious Organization?

Chapter 103 -> Lin Shiqing's beloved

The decoration of the cafe was very elegant, the environment was peaceful and beautiful, and its white background was making the whole café look very fresh and delightful.

On a seat close to the window, Ye Feng and Lin Shiqing sat down facing each other, incautiously Ye Feng's eyes got attracted towards her V-neck shirt, leading to her snow white attractive ravine, but quickly somewhat awkwardly, he turned away his face.

Lin Shiqing didn't care about it, instead with a faint smile, while sitting gracefully on the chair, she picked up the menu card from the table, and with a clear voice, asked: "What would you like to eat?"

"As per you wish."

Ye Feng wasn't familiar with this sort of café thing, moreover, he was also not picky about the food. Presently, his full concentration was just revolving around Cai Shaohong. This guy, did he actually have any kind of relationship with Cai Shao, of the mysterious organisation?

"What are you thinking?"

She saw him a bit lost and turned a bit curious, therefore she asked that, her rosy lips slightly turned upwards, forming a beautiful moving radian.

"I'm thinking about Cai Shaohong, who is this guy?"

He smiled and bluntly asked that.

When Lin Shiqing heard that, she showed a somewhat unexpected smile, but suddenly from behind, a voice like a skylark, very melodious, brisk, and pleasant to hear type, arrived : “Oh, so you don’t even know Cai Shaohong, how can you become eligible as Lin Shiqing’s fiancé?”

Ye Feng immediately turned back and saw a cute schoolgirl coming out from inside the restaurant. With a big stride, she quickly arrived at their table, and by putting on a sweet smile full of curiosity, she came closer to him and looked at him somewhat weirdly.

“Well, Xiao Qi, don’t scare him.”

Upon seeing this, Lin Shiqing smiled and said : “Well, Little Ye, she is the owner of this cafe, Xiao Qi, and Xiao Qi, he is Ye Feng, he is about to appear in the college entrance examination, therefore, I brought him here to Yanshan University, to roam around and familiarize him with the environment.”

The way she said ‘Little Ye’, it didn’t take long for this girl named Xiao Qi to see through the thoughts of Lin Shiqing. Obviously, Lin Shiqing didn’t want to talk about any stuff related to her engagement with Ye Feng, or else she wouldn’t have said “Little Ye”.

Xiao Qi was a member of a small clan of Yanjing, naturally her clan couldn’t be compared with Lin Clan, the number one Clan of Yanjing. However, it didn’t prevent Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi from becoming best friends and sharing everything to each other. Therefore, they used to understand each other’s thoughts right away.

For this Qi Qi Cafe, in order to pass her leisure time, Xiao Qi asked her Clan to invest money while opening it. Although, Xiao Clan was a small clan just like Xie Clan, but for them, money didn't matter at all, they really didn't pay too much attention towards it.

“Ah regarding this.”

Clad in a white lace short-sleeved shirt, and a pair of slim jeans, Xiao Qi generously sat down beside Ye Feng, her sweet ponytail was dangling around her neck. Then smilingly, she said: “Little Ye, Cai Shaohong is our Shiqing's beloved. ”

“Do you want to die?”

Lin Shiqing ridiculously said that: “it's too early yet.”

“How is that? Still not allowing us to speak about it?”

Xiao Qi said that while sticking out her small breasts, but how unfortunate it was, her size if compared with Lin Shiqing's, was not at all worth mentioning

“Hello sister Xiao Qi, you continue, I'm very much interested in hearing it.”

Ye Feng smiled.

Xiao Qi looked towards him and thought that he indeed was a child, so wasn't he jealous?

As it was already known that Ye Feng never got jealous of anything, he was just feeling a little funny.

If Cai Shaohong was really the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation, then right under the eyelids of Lin Clan, he had made one year of his petty action, moreover, Lin Clan couldn't even discover that actually Miss Lin was interested in this guy. It could be said that either Lin Clan was very stupid, or Cai Shaohong was very smart, since very intelligently he maintained utmost secrecy to operate his dirty job.

As for the partnership between the mysterious organisation and Lin Clan was concerned, it couldn't have any possibility, because, the opposite party didn't need to draw support from the crime world of Yanjing.

Also, he didn't even know that if Cai Shaohong was really a great guy, then up to what extent, since he made Lin Shiqing, who was considered as a heavenly beauty and the most prettiest woman of Yanjing, crazy for him.

When Xiao Qi noticed that Lin Shiqing didn't show any objection, she quickly understood that probably she had kept this point to hit Ye Feng. Therefore, she smiled and said: "Cai Shao is our Yanshan university's best basketball player and is an extremely handsome guy, although his father is Chinese, but he has the nationality of the USA, and currently he is the chairman of the board of directors of Pei Keang Group. Cai Shao also has the nationality of the USA, he is now studying abroad at Yanshan University. And just like Shiqing, he is also a second-year university student, but has already become our school idol. ~"

Ye Feng was listening to her, and was very much enjoying it. So, originally this guy had a foreign nationality.

As for Pei Keang Group, he had also heard about it, it was a very famous high-tech corporation in the USA. At present, the mainstream of the world's military electronics and communication products, were developed by this group only, of course, the most sophisticated product's circulation was firmly grasped in the hands of the mighty USA.....

“It's just his nationality.”

While looking at Ye Feng's face, Xiao Qi winked and said : “Actually, his parents are Chinese.”

“This problem is not a small thing.”

Lin Shiqing lightly said: “If he doesn't change his nationality, then it will be impossible for me to accept him.”

Her bright eyes revealed a hint of regret, as if they were expressing that each and every aspect of Cai Shaohong had made her already very satisfied, except this remaining nationality issue.

It could be said that Lin Shiqing represented the China's uppermost layer of the political image, and if she fell in love with a guy of the U.S. nationality, it would certainly cause a very bad effect. Hence, she definitely had to consider this point.

Soon, Lin Shiqing's ordered stuff, like two sandwiches, tarts and milk, were delivered to their table.

While having his breakfast, Ye Feng constantly made a veiled attack to draw out something more about that Cai Shaohong's usual habits, hobbies and so on. However, unfortunately, in the end, he didn't get success in arriving at a conclusion that whether this Cai Shaohong and Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation had any connection with each other or not.

Since he knew almost nothing about Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation, hence it had become very difficult for him to come to a valid conclusion. But whatever might be the outcome, he decided to start his research right from this guy, Cai Shaohong.

Seeing Ye Feng unceasingly inquiring about Cai Shaohong and the stuff related to him, both of these women looked at each other helplessly, with a bit puzzled expression. Obviously, they thought that in this game of drawing maximum information out to understand the opposite party a bit more clearly, Ye Feng was seriously trying hard, so as to defeat his opponent, Cai Shaohong.

What a pity, in the eyes of Xiao Qi, Ye Feng's present condition simply couldn't be compared with Cai Shaohong. And on the other hand, Lin Shiqing thought that she badly failed to profoundly engrave her image as an elder sister in Ye Feng's mind, hence she must continue to try hard, and soon she would make him understand that love relationship was impossible between them.

Ye Feng probably knew that these two women were thinking something, however, they weren't explaining it. However, he was 100 % sure that these women could never suspect that he was inquiring about Cai Shaohong because of some other purpose!

It could be concluded on the basis of discussion that Cai Shaohong was Yanshan University's basketball prodigy, a music genius, a great business-minded person, the vice president of the student council, had a cafe, and always used to

do charity

One after another, things related to Cai Shaohong were clearly indicating that he was indeed an extraordinary person.

“How about take me along with you to see him?”

After finished eating his stuff, and by keeping his composure calm, Ye feng asked.

As the word went out, it made Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi a bit startled all of a sudden, why did Ye Feng want to meet Cai Shaohong?

Could it be that he wanted to initiate the challenge directly?

It wasn't something Lin Shiqing had thought. After all, she didn't want to see Ye Clan, Lin Clan and Cai Shaohong got into any kind of confrontation, she just wanted to solve this problem peacefully.

Ye Feng saw her pondering something, smiled and added: “To see the future brother-in-law, should not have any problem, right?”

He said this in such a way, so that it became impossible and totally inappropriate for Lin Shiqing to refuse him again, hence elegantly, with a smile, she said : “Of course, it doesn't have any problem, however, this term has been used too early, at present there is a very little relationship between me and him.”

Noticing the calm and collected temperament of Ye Feng, Lin Shiqing still appreciated him a bit in her heart, but this didn't mean she would accept the engagement arrangement. If she would lead Ye Feng to see Cai Shaohong, simultaneously she would let him know the disparity between them, making him quit in advance before difficulties.

However, Ye Feng stood up, a vague smile gradually appeared on his face.

For him, Lin Shiqing and this marriage thing, both were completely irrelevant. At present, his prime focus was to personally see Cai Shaohong, then perhaps he could find any clue, and even could look for opportunities to hypnotise him. If the opposite person turned out to be the mysterious organisation's Cai Shao, then he would never hesitate, and would kill him with his own hands!

Chapter 104 -> The tracking plan

Since currently in the café, there were several important things to be taken care of, therefore, Xiao Qi didn't go along with those two people.

“He should still be playing ball right now, come along with your elder sister to the field.”

Lin Shiqing along with Ye Feng came out of the café and said that smilingly. Since, it was her vivid plan all along, to establish a gentle and caring big sister's image in the mind of Ye Feng, therefore, she must carry out this act all the way to the end.

Ye Feng walked along with her, meanwhile, he also felt that Miss Lin's popularity was indeed extremely high.

All the way, several people frequently greeted her, they were both men as well as women. As the Chairman of the Students Council of Yanshan University, her interpersonal skill was naturally worth mentioning, it was like wherever she went, there always was someone who was familiar with her, and also greeted her.

The faint aroma lingering around her body greeted his nostrils, simultaneously, when their arms rubbed against each other from time to time, it seemed like all these things together were making him feel so mesmerising. To be together with such a heavenly beauty, even if she wasn't his woman, was still pretty enough to make the mood of any guy, ecstatic.

It must be said that the charm of Lin Shiqing was astonishing. Even for such a

strong-willed guy like Ye Feng, merely walking together with her was enough for him to lose the control of his emotions. Suddenly he felt that his blood rushed to his head and made his heart beat a bit faster, and then it became all fiery.

If he were converted into one of the ordinary guys of Yanshan University, then it could be said that he was really pretty good, but perhaps, still to speak anything in front of Lin Shiqing, would be something very difficult for him.

Shortly, they arrived at the side of a broad basketball court of Yanshan University. Early in the morning, a lot of boys had already arrived there for practice, they were pouring with sweat on the ground, the entire court was overflowing with youth and vitality.

From a distance, Ye Feng saw that the place was already overflowing with lots of boys, however, still in that crowded court, he saw an extremely dashing guy who was in a short-sleeved sweatshirt. Right at this moment, that guy broke through several guys, and quite smoothly, scored on an easy slam dunk.

“Cai elder brother, good job!”

A group of people shouted up to cheer him up.

“Is that Cai Shaohong?”

Ye Feng thought to himself, as he together with Lin Shiqing gradually approached towards him. Seeing him smiling cheerfully, while the remaining guys were cheering for him, it appeared like he finally had won the game, and was ready to take rest.

Very ordinary clothes, ordinary sports shoes, and in the name of adornment, there was nothing on his body, still, he was looking very fresh, totally cool, charming, and dynamic. He was nearly 6.2 feet tall, his stature was almost perfect, had a stunning jumping ability, coupled with ultra-high skills in ball games as well as interpersonal skill. Hence, for him, it could be firmly said that being adored and admired by Lin Shiqing was by no means could be considered as a coincidence.

Suddenly, in the middle of the crowd, a familiar figure popped up and caught the eyes of Ye Feng, he was Lin Xiuwen, the Sanshao of the great Lin Clan.

{Lastvoice : Sanshao – third son.}

“Why is your younger brother also there?”

Totally baffled, Ye Feng directly asked from the great heavenly beauty, Lin Shiqing.

“Are you speaking about Xiuwen?”

She said with a smile : “He has a pretty good relation with Shaohong, furthermore, he also adores him a little.”

Ye Feng listened, and thought that was this little boy really serious? Was Cai Shaohong really so strong and influential, that even Lin Xiuwen, who was such an egotistical and arrogant son of a great Clan, could worship him?

After the end of the match, Cai Shaohong came to the side of the court to take rest, simultaneously he started chatting with Lin Xiuwen.

“Cai elder brother, Xiao Qi is still not willing to accept, what to do?”

While holding the appearance of modesty, in order to take advice from Cai Shaohong, Lin Xiuwen said : “This is m first time bumping into this kind of a girl, which in return she didn’t give me any value, and on top of that, my elder sister is also not willing to speak nice words for me

“Man should be always strong, so, what are you afraid of?”

Cai Shaohong smiled with ease, then he patted Lin Xiuwen’s shoulder, and while passing a business card to him, he said : “By seeing your present situation, I can advise that you can consult this personage. Well, your sister has come, I should go now.”

His voice was full of magnetism, which really had the powerful attraction to any age of women, especially here in the university where there were several flirtatious girls. Last year, when he had just arrived, during that time, in the top-notch singers championship of Yanshan University, his voice had directly conquered the presence of almost all the girls, and had made the entire scene appear almost crazy.

Henceforth, it seemed like suddenly he jumped up so high as if with the help of a spring! The name ‘Cai Shaohong’, started showing up frequently in the campus forum of Yanshan University, as well as in Yanshan university’s girls gossiping topic. It was rightly said that ‘the more one talks about something, the more popular it becomes over the time’, just in less than a half year, these things made him become Yanshan University’s popular idol, not only among the female students, but also among male students.

No matter from which perspective one would see, but one would notice that Cai Shaohong's everything was close to perfection.

At this point of time, he looked up, a very gentle smile was shining on his face then, as he saw Lin Shiqing walking along with Ye Feng towards him.

Merely the presence of Lin Shiqing was more than enough to gradually stop the movement of almost all the boys of the ground, especially seeing her bringing a guy along with.

Who was he?

Many people began to speculate Ye Feng's identity, simultaneously looked towards Cai Shaohong, since they had already become very curious to see what kind of gossip would take place among those three.

"Elder sister, you're here."

Lin Xiuwen was extremely happy, since he received a visiting card from Cai Shaohong. By putting it aside and while waving his hand at his sister, he ran up to her. On his hand, the Patek Philippe platinum wristwatch was shining brightly in the light of the morning sun.

That watch was representing the enormous money involved in it, which an average person could never earn throughout his lifetime.

Seeing Lin Shiqing together with Ye Feng, Lin Xiuwen's face turned dark all of a sudden : "Elder sister, how can you be together with this guy?"

“Xiuwen, zip it, don’t make a scene.”

Lin Shiqing smiled as she raised her white hand, gently ran her fingers through her beautiful long hair, then she kept her slender fingers on the shoulders of Ye Feng: “Little Ye is a very nice guy, later if you try bullying him, then your elder sister will not talk to you.”

Lin Xiuwen listened and immediately looked at Ye Feng with a look which was even more hostile than before. Then he glared at him, as if the unsaid words his eyes were trying to convey was : Fuck, how could you dare snatch away my sister from me?

Ye Feng also looked back at him, and while wrinkling his eyebrows he thought, what was this guy trying to show by his expression? Was he in such an awful mood because he didn’t like him as his brother-in-law, or because Ye Feng snatched away his sister? the playboy young master’s disposition was really hard to figure out.

“Shiqing, won’t you introduce us?”

Cai Shaohong smiled brightly, as he said that while taking a look at Ye Feng, as if he was very much interested in him.

“Little Ye, he is Shaohong.”

She said that smilingly, then to introduce Ye Feng to him, she continued : “This is Ye Feng, a grandson of my grandfather’s good friend. He has been treating me as an elder sister.”

Ye Feng's facial expression instantly turned gloomy as he thought – fuck, when did he treat her or saw her as an elder sister?

Certainly, still he was unlikely to jump out to refute, anyway, he also hadn't planned to keep following her from now onwards. Hence, by totally ignoring this matter, he just carefully looked at Cai Shaohong, surprisingly the opposite party also looked him back. While the both parties were directly looking at each other, Ye Feng tried to figure out something but he didn't see any positive result.

“Hello, I'm Cai Shaohong.”

By maintaining utmost politeness, the handsome youth said that with a smile, his smiling face was looking very bright then. Truly, he was worthy of being the popular campus idol, even in the face of the legendary love rival, he still had the higher side on almost everything, since he was very calm, mild-mannered, graceful and gentle.

“Ye Feng.”

Ye Feng smiled back, but didn't say anything further.

He had a prime goal, he just wanted to confirm whether this Cai Shaohong was the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation. And for achieving his goal, of course, he couldn't blindly rely just on the exchanging words between them. Secretly, he decided to execute a tracking plan! By frequently changing his Camouflage technique to change his appearance, and by completely relying on his five years of Cultivation, tracking a person wouldn't be a difficult job for him anymore.

He had finally seen Cai Shaohong, now he knew what he looked like. Therefore, for him, it was not necessary to stay there any longer.

“Alright, now we have become acquainted with each other. You guys carry on, I have to go back to school to attend my classes, so, I’m leaving first.”

Ye Feng smiled and waved his hand, then immediately he turned around and departed.

Lin Shiqing was too late to stop him from leaving, by then Ye Feng had already left the basketball court. She felt a bit strange in her heart, why did she always feel that this boy was somewhat strange?

“Little Ye, I’ll send you.”

Lin Shiqing said and tried to catch up with him.

“There is no need to, distance is not too far.”

Without looking back, Ye Feng continued walking, and right after taking two curved turnings, he disappeared without leaving any trace.

Helplessly, she just shook her head, but suddenly she thought of something, and turned her head towards Cai Shaohong, and asked: “Oh, that’s right, a couple of days back, those nationality students who sprang up in a throng to fight, was it handled well?”

“Certainly.”

The handsome Cai Shaohong smiled : “I personally funded to help those two people to pay their school fees. The genuine difficulty-stricken students don’t get the opportunity to attain Scholarship benefits, which explains everything that the school’s scholarship application management isn’t operating perfectly, we can talk to the school leader to mention his opinion.....”

.....

Nobody knew that at present Ye Feng was looking for an aloof place, where he could use his Camouflage Technique. Soon, by using this technique, he turned into an ordinary short and stout male student, and once again returned to the side of the field.

He was going to change his appearance into a variety of images, so as to track Cai Shaohong all day long!

Chapter 105 -> Yanxi Villa District

Ye Feng suspected that Cai Shaohong was the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organisation, and to prove this point, he had the valid reason.

It wasn't like just their names were similar, but the more important thing which exactly matched was 'time'. On one hand, Cai Shaohong came to this country and started studying in Yanshan University one year ago. While on the other hand, at the same time, the mysterious organisation showed up and exterminated Southern Heavenly Gates, which was one of the four big gangs of Yanjing, and this incident also took place exactly one year back.

Moreover, Cai Shaohong had the US nationality, his father, as the chairman of the board of Pei Keang Group, used to carry out experiments on a new type of drugs, and was also involved in several other activities like researching gene science, and so on. Hence, there was enough reasonable motivation for Ye Feng, which gave birth to a doubt in his mind.

As the law of the jungle of the World of the Immortals, if someone had rolled about many years of Cultivation, then he could become proficient in several Immortal Techniques. On that basis, Ye Feng's tracking and counter-tracking skills had already reached the proficient level. In addition, in a modern metropolis, no one could see through his Camouflage Technique, letting Ye Feng carry out his tracking plan very smoothly and quite successfully.

In the morning, Cai Shaohong played basketball, at the same time, he also answered a few phone calls. Thereafter, he opened a coffee shop 'Red Cross', and then along with a subordinate of Student Council, he sorted out an important matter. After finishing these things up, he still appeared quite busy.

During noon time, he went to the cafeteria to have a meal together with a bunch of boys. By looking at him, he didn't appear even a bit arrogant, instead was very amiable, like a modest gentleman. After finished eating his lunch, he attended an afternoon class along with several other boys.

In this process, Ye Feng noticed something, there was a guy who was very close to him, as if they were best friends. It seemed like he was the same youth from the morning, who looked like a celebrity, whom Ye Feng had seen outside Qi Qi Café, and to whom Lin Shiqing called "Little Zhao". After tracking them for one whole day, Ye Feng naturally came to know that this person was called Zhao Mingze. Although his disposition was a little girly type, but was very tall and handsome, his voice was like a very pleasant to hear type.

It appeared like Cai Shaohong had no connection with the mysterious organisation's Cai Shao, however, Ye Feng still recorded everything related to him in his mind.

In the evening, when they had their dinner, Ye Feng changed his appearance into an old man with the help of Camouflage, meanwhile, he also seized the chance to make two phone calls. However, while doing so, he was still close to his target, watching him attentively.

The first phone call he made was to Scar. However, after this phone call, Ye Feng had totally lost his mood and had turned a little anxious.

Regarding the prosecution of Xie Min and Xie Chengye, this matter was being handled by Scar perfectly without a hitch. Moreover, Scar had gathered his all remaining trusted men and started leading them, he also had rented a storied building for his office in the vicinity of Qingfeng Park, to ensure the better protection of Su Menghan. In addition, the incident which had taken place the day before yesterday, in Tianhua Casino, where several people were killed, that

had been completely pressed down by Liu Lihui.

However, there was one more message which had totally disturbed him, actually the corpse of Zhao Yibei had disappeared suddenly, right before his cremation! Besides this, Scar had also consulted with the relevant sources, and collected the information that recently nearby Yanjing, the occurrence of the disappearance of a lot of bodies had been happening frequently, but until now no one was found out. There were already numerous families of the deceased, who had become restless and started banging up.

Ye Feng thought that this affair needed to be clarified on the priority basis, because, after all, while protecting him, Zhao Yibei got shot and died. But the point was, who could dare steal the dead body of Zhao Yibei, and that also almost before his cremation?

However, he had no clue about this thing right now, hence he decided to postpone considering this matter for the time being.

Afterwards, he made a second call to Su Menghan, and asked the school beauty that if she wanted then she could ask her all three Uncles to come and participate in the trial of Xie Min and Xie Chengye. After all, wasn't Su Menghan's Grandmother their biological mother?

However, regarding this matter, Ye Feng let her think and take a suitable decision on her own.

They talked for a while, meanwhile, Ye Feng also informed her that he wouldn't return home tonight, which made Su Menghan very jealous. In the morning, he immediately vanished together with that beautiful woman, Lin Shiqing. Thenafter, the entire day, Su menghan didn't even see his shadow, and now was

he just informing that he wouldn't return home tonight?

Ye Feng was helpless, he had already planned to track Cai Shaohong in the evening, therefore, he really couldn't return home at any cost. However, it was not necessary to give an explanation to Su Menghan, he just kept on saying sweet words in a coaxing manner for a while, in order to console her, and soon he took hold of her finally and settled this matter smoothly.

When he finally hung up the phone, he noticed that Cai Shaohong, who had been in his field of vision since morning, had finally started his movement. He drove an Audi to come out of the parking lot, it seemed like he might be returning home!

Ye Feng's heart quickly changed its gear and shifted to the action mode. From quite a distance, he was watching attentively at the shadow of Audi, as soon as it left, he quickly cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and firmly followed him.

In Yanjing, there were many luxurious Villa Districts, such as Xishan Villa District, Aobei Villa District and so on. But the Yanxi Villa District was newly developed. In this Villa District, medical system and educational system were quite perfect, furthermore, hotel, golf, hot spring and other facilities were beyond imagination. Altogether, they had contributed towards making a superb surrounding and elegant living conditions.

Before, Su Xinchang and Xie Min used to live here in Yanxi Villa District

Cai Shaohong's car Audi, running all the way, finally pulled into the Yanxi Villa District.

Following him all along, Ye Feng also finally arrived there and looked at the entrance of that District. There was a formal security and gate guard, hence, now the point was, how should he go inside?

To still continue tracking Cai Shaohong efficiently, he immediately took a decision and quickly cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. And the next moment, he went close the edge of the wall and jumped up suddenly very high!

Considering his five years of Cultivation, to jump directly 4 or 5 meters high, was like a child play for him, he surmounted the infrared instrumentation easily, and then softly landed on a small cluster of trees in the Villa District, next to a small artificial lake. In the middle of that lake, there was a rockery, from where the gurgling water was appearing very soothing and elegant.

Without wasting any time in random observation, he quickly focused his vision on his target. He noticed that he wasn't very far from his car. Hence, after ensuring that he hadn't been found by the opposite party, he swiftly entered the Villa District. He couldn't just change into someone by using Camouflage, or else, on the basis of Cai Shaohong's IQ, he could certainly, quite easily see through his Camouflage.

Therefore, to keep on following him, Ye Feng could only hide in the side of the artificial woods. Soon Audi stopped in front of a luxurious villa which was surrounded by water from all sides. As soon as Cai Shaohong got out of the car, Ye Feng noticed that he had already changed into a western-styled clothing, into a suit and a tie. Anyway, without even realising that he was being followed since morning, Cai Shahong directly went into the house.

Ye Feng still wanted to keep up with him, therefore, he glanced around quickly. He saw a car, Mercedes-Benz galloped in from outside, immediately after them, however, it went ahead and stopped in front of another villa. The person on the

driver's seat, wasn't that originally the assistant as well as the driver of Su Xinchang, Hu Meimei? In the passenger seat, there was a fat person who seemed to have a very high and respected position. However, Ye Feng didn't know his identity, could it be that this person, who had taken charge of Hu Meimei now, was Xie Min's Uncle?

However, Ye Feng wasn't the least bit interested in paying attention towards them, instead, he thought that whatever they were doing here, that had nothing to do with him. Hence, for him, ignoring them was the right decision.

He swiftly moved to one side, and without making any sound, he quickly came to the edge of the villa Cai Shaohong had entered. This was the time when the Sun was taking its leave from the sky, Ye Feng, while leaning against the window, could hear the gurgling sound of water coming out from the bathroom, as if right after getting back home, Cai Shaohong wanted to take a bath first.

"A good opportunity!"

Without giving a second thought, Ye Feng jumped in, and decided to search this villa thoroughly, without leaving anything unturned! Taking advantage of the time while the opposite party was taking a bath, to thoroughly search the villa, and see if there was anything suspicious, was his prime objective for now.

The entire villa altogether has three floors, the outside wall had somewhat classical style tiles, there were all kinds of precious vegetation planted in the garden. At first glance, Ye Feng didn't notice anything suspicious.

He displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and ran through the villa, thoroughly.

“If I have reached a decade of Cultivation, then by using Soul Search technique, searching this villa would not have become too much troublesome. I could have swept away the entire villa, and would have gotten a panoramic view

Ye Feng regretted in his heart, but soon when he came to the underground floor, in front of the entrance of the basement, and suddenly felt something spiritual, which jolted him crazily.

Actually, a strong aura of divine spiritual influence was spreading out from inside the basement!

“What is there inside? If there would be divine treasure, which has such rich divine and spiritual energy, then that means, it would be more than sufficient to enhance one’s Cultivation up to 3 to 4 years, or even more!”

This feeling really startled him!

But right at this time, from the lobby, a strange sound passed on, it seemed like Cai Shaohong might have come out of the bath.

Therefore, Ye Feng immediately reacted.

Chapter 106 -> A wretched man

Ye Feng dodged and quickly left the villa without being discovered by anyone.

In such a villa, a sudden appearance of so rich divine spiritual influence was really very suspicious. There were two possibilities; first – Cai Shaohong was just an ordinary person, and he didn't know a thing about it, and second, Cai Shaohong had deliberately hidden something therein.

If the first possibility was true, then, in that case, perhaps Cai Shaohong wasn't Cai Shao of the mysterious organization, and the presence of that strong spiritual influence in the basement, must be the deed of some other person.

However, if the second possibility was true, then it could be said that this person turned out to be very suspicious. Almost 80 to 90 percent chance was there, that Cai Shaohong was the same Cai Shao of the mysterious organization. Under this circumstance, Ye Feng couldn't dare to take a risk and intrude into the basement.

At present, Ye Feng had just five years of Cultivation, moreover, he simply didn't have any clue what would be there in the basement. He just had a thought that like previously met "hidden pavilion master", if there would be a huge number of the same kind, inside the basement, then for Cai Shaohong, wouldn't it be like catching a turtle in a jar? Wouldn't he want to trap Ye Feng inside?

"I must thoroughly investigate this place as soon as possible, as I can feel such a strong divine spiritual influence, I can't give up at any cost."

Ye Feng thought and immediately left the place.

He was all prepared to wait for tomorrow. He decided that during the absence of Cai Shaohong, he would scout out here again. As for tonight, there was a channel which might be able to find any clue related to mysterious organization's Cai Shao. And to achieve that, they must be trying to find out the whereabouts of one of the top three big gangs of Yanjing, 'Tian Gang' which was considered as the most powerful gang among all!

Heavenly Serpent Gang's Song Hu and Black Dragon Association's Dubang Long, both had been already killed by Ye Feng. Nowadays, he was looking for the boss of Tian Gang, then perhaps, he could use his hypnosis on the opposite party, and would force him to make a phone call to Cai Shao.

Anyway, to go on a trip to Tian Gang was not a big deal for him, but at present, he also had some important preparations to do for tomorrow's action.

As he was about to leave the Yanxi Villa District, exactly then while passing through there, suddenly his eyes fell on the nearby waterfront villa. Although, he hesitated a bit, but he stopped his footsteps and decided to have a look at the scene.

Because something from inside the villa had caught his eyes. A fat man was there in a room, and while staring at a photo frame he had in his hand, he was almost drooling over it.

This fat man was the same man who came with Hu Meimei a few minutes ago by Mercedes-Benz. But the thing which made Ye Feng entirely stop his footsteps was the picture in that photo frame.

Su Menghan!

Although that was an old photograph of Su Menghan in which she was looking very young, probably it was clicked during her junior middle school, but by then, she had already turned out to be very sweet, pretty, slim and quite graceful girl.

“How does this fat man has a photograph of Menghan?”

Somewhat baffled, Ye Feng scowled at him defiantly.

In any case, seeing the wretched fat man staring at Su Menghan’s photo and on top of that, also drooling all over, how could Ye Feng stand it? Although this trivial fat man had developed this kind of cheap thoughts for Su Menghan, but wouldn’t it be a big shock for her if she ever heard about it?

Just when he wanted to turn around and go inside the villa, exactly then he noticed that the fat sudden froze to the spot, with his eyes wide open, as if he was hit by the storm all of a sudden. He saw, the door of the room, where the fat man was, suddenly opened silently, and the scene which appeared before Ye Feng’s eyes, made him totally speechless.

Semi-naked Hu Meimei!

Perhaps she just took a bath, her pitch-black hair was not blow-dried, her snow white captivating skin was looking beautiful all exposed, and her soft buttocks appeared very tight and erect. Very coquettishly, she threw a seductive and flirtatious look towards that fat man, as she entered the room, and all the way arrived in front of him.

“Indeed as expected, this woman, Hu Meimei, is so flirtatious in nature. It

seems that when she used to follow Su Xinchang, during that time, wouldn't she ever try to seduce him.....”

However, her semi-naked body couldn't attract him, because whether compared with Long Wan'er, or Su Menghan, or the woman from this morning, that Lin Shiqing, obviously Hu Meimei's figure was awfully inferior to them. He could ignore rest of her bodily features, but her obviously looking loose and saggy chest was looking very feeble, and very inharmonious.

Moreover, after taking off her make-up, Hu Meimei's face wasn't looking bright and clean, she had a slight freckle. If her facial appearance was compared with Ye Feng's top beautiful ladies, then it could be said that there was a huge difference between them, like they were totally the polar opposite.

“Director Xie, don't look at this picture ~”

While saying that, Hu Meimei arrived at the side of the dreadful fat person, and coyly, quite prettily said : “Come on, speak out quickly, this Su Clan's villa, how much money you could get by selling this villa, you've said that you would give it to me as a present.”

The fat man was really the person of Xie Clan! Moreover, Su Xinchang wouldn't have imagined that at present, his villa would have been occupied by these two fellows. Also, it looked like Su Menghan's photo, Su Xinchang must have forgotten it here.

“Darling rest assured.”

At this moment, that wretched fat man was in the bosom of Hu Meimei. All

excited, he put out a hand to make an effort to pinch her on her chest, and while doing so, he smiled and said: "Asset evaluation report hasn't come yet, so don't worry. Actually, this little girl, Su Menghan is so small, so attractive, tsk, tsk."

Seeing him so indulge in the photo, Hu Meimei turned a bit jealous, and a feeling of hate took birth in her heart. However, she couldn't do anything, only said: "Well, how did she become so interesting to Director Xie?"

"She has been very interesting to me, for a long time."

The wretched man's heart was all fiery just by thinking about her. He was simply unable to tolerate anymore, he had seen Su Menghan several times before, always wanted to get his hands on her, but never got the right opportunity. He was fond of this kind of fresh, pure and innocent young girl. In the past, he had played a lot with Su Menghan, however, never got the chance to have a taste of her.

Currently, he was busy imagining the fresh and charming face of Su Menghan, even more than that, he was visualizing a scene where to clean her body, Su Menghan smoothly slid down her cloth, which made his heart very fervent, and as an effect, suddenly he pushed Hu Meimei down on the sofa.

The beastly nature of that dreadful fat person overtook him, he quickly took off his clothes. His greasy big stomach exposed out, while he turned towards the sofa and threw his naked body onto her.

Bang!

Right at this time, from the side of the bed, Ye Feng directly jumped in, and

kicked hard in the big stomach of the wretched fat man, then after, he kept on kicking him one after another, several times until he was sent flying! His heavy body, like withstanding great pressure fell to the ground, and then he turned around and rolled to the wall, instantly he threw up foam from his mouth.

“Who are you!”

All of a sudden, panic-stricken, semi-naked Hu Meimei asked that, and immediately jumped up and opened her mouth to scream. However, Ye Feng had already done the preparation in advance. In a flash, he cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique, immediately his zhenqi sprang out in the empty space, and rushed crazily towards Hu Meimei, and the next moment it pressed her mouth firmly between the fingers.

Then quickly he waved his hand, and cast out Moon style Dragon claw hand. Immediately, by using it, he threw her directly on the body of that wretched fat man. Their bodies bumped into each other terrifically. As a result, she got hurt severely and immediately spat out a mouthful of foam.

“Who I am is not at all important, the important point is

At this point of time, Ye Feng displayed Camouflage technique and changed his appearance into a very ordinary person. While speaking that, he picked up the photo frame, which had just been cast aside by that fat man.

“Look into my eyes. Hereafter, whenever you see this girl, it’s like seeing the God, now you don’t have any evil thoughts of violating her!”

Ye Feng looked into their eyes, and by taking advantage of their

unconsciousness, he smoothly pulled them under his hypnosis. Such hypnosis could greatly damage the brain of the person who was under hypnosis; at least this could reduce his IQ by twenty percent. However, this wretched fat man and Hu Meimei were already the worst type, hence Ye Feng didn't have any scruple.

In the World of the Immortals, if someone would dare to visualise his woman like this fat man, then he would be absolutely beheaded by Ye Feng on the spot. At present, he just hypnotised them, that was quite an easy punishment for them.

Bang! Bang!

Immediately, he hit those two fellows and made them unconscious. Afterwards, by carrying Su Menghan's photo, he jumped out of the villa and came out of that beautiful District.

The dim light of night had gradually engulfed the entire Yanjing city, the moon also became visible in the sky now, and finally the cool breeze had also started blowing gently!

The dark and stormy night looked like filled with murderous intent. Ye Feng had a premonition that perhaps in the evening he might kill people, moreover, he wouldn't kill just one or two.

By using multiple masks, he covered his face again.

Tian Gang was active in the entire eastern side of Yanjing, and its prime business was gambling. It had set up several secret underground casinos, perhaps, others didn't know how to go there, but Ye Feng had the information

channel of Scar, naturally he didn't need to worry about that... ..

Chapter 107 -> Luring the snake out of its hole

Tian Gang, although if compared with Heavenly Serpent Gang, had a few letters less in its name, however, in terms of strength, it was a superbeing powerful gang. It was said that in addition to its own strength, it also had a strong support of the military, from behind the scene, therefore, it was considered as the most powerful gang among all the three gangs of Yanjing.

Although Ye Feng knew the location of several underground casinos operated by Tian Gang, but didn't know where the boss of this gang was hidden.

Therefore, he had no other option left but to go to an entertainment clubhouse, which was located in the eastern part of Yanjing. The underground second floor of this clubhouse was the largest underground casino of Tian Gang. Most of the powerful and influential officials of Yanjing from all walks of life, had formed the circle of high-end gamblers of this casino. That was the reason why it had become unusually famous.

"I have to go and take a look, then only, I can inquire about the whereabouts of the boss of Tian Gang."

Wearing a mask, Ye Feng moved towards this entertainment clubhouse. Soon, he reached there and directly found a young fellow standing at the entrance of this club. There was a secret password a newspaper reporter had secretly passed it to Scar. As soon as Ye Feng said that secret password to that clubhouse guy, immediately he was brought to a noisy and crowded place. He noticed that the underground second floor was brightly lit, and was echoing with a babel of voices. Obviously, the popularity of this underground casino was not hidden.

How many people would be there, who had lost almost everything in this

casino and had gone bankrupt to the extent where their undergarments were also taken away?

There were a lot of people who were capable of winning in this game of gambling, but in real, there were very few of them who could always win continuously. According to the theory of probability, if someone has been gambling continuously, the final result will be definitely losing everything, at most, it is just a matter of time.

As far as gambling was concerned, Ye Feng didn't know a thing about it, but if by any chance he had to gamble, then, he couldn't afford to lose a single penny. Although, he didn't have learnt Soul Search Technique yet, but merely relying on Camouflage was sufficient to beat several people, and turn this casino upside down.

While cutting his way through the crowd, Ye Feng arrived close to a gaming table surrounded by numerous people. The atmosphere around it was quite hot and was continuously surging upwards. The people were over excited and had their eyes fixated on that gambling table.

“So, Eldest Master Lin, have you lost everything? If you have really lost everything, you must leave quickly, don't affect the cheerful mood of other people.”

At this time, from one side, a gloomy sound with a touch of relish, passed to Ye Feng's ears.

Eldest Master Lin?

Ye Feng turned his head at once, and as expected he really saw a slightly fat guy, pouring with sweat, was sitting in front of a gambling table. From the side, he could see that he was a 27-28 years old a bit healthy youth, and his facial features were really a bit resembling Lin Xiuwen.

While sitting opposite to him was a young dealer of the casino, with green and yellow dyed dual coloured hair. He was appearing quite calm and careless even under the huge pressure, and was looking at Eldest Master Lin, with his corners of the mouth turned upwards, forming an arc.

There were many people around that gambling table, however, not a single one was putting up any stake. Obviously, they were letting Eldest Master Lin play.

“Well, isn’t it two hundred million? Two hundred million chips again!”

Eldest Master Lin seemed like he couldn’t swallow even one breath, by waving his hand, he commanded a nearby standing servant.

Ye Feng thought that wasn’t it a huge amount of money involved in it? It seemed like the status of the youth, who was playing against Eldest Master Lin, was not low in this underground casino. If Ye Feng had to ask him, then he could draw a lot, about the whereabouts of the boss of Tian Gang, out of his mouth!

He went towards that gambling table, and heard some people standing around were talking very slowly, as if they were whispering while pointing their fingers towards the back of Eldest Master Lin.

“Its true that Eldest Master Lin still has an enormous amount of money, he just

waved his hand for two hundred million, indeed, he deserved to be called as the person of Lin Clan.”

“Rubbish! Even if he is the member of Lin Clan, still it may be possible, that the other people of his Clan won’t give him so much money probably.”

“Right, this Lin Zhiqing, is the Deputy Director of Yanjing’s Finance Bureau, and is in the charge of tax administration, politics, customs duty and budget editing centre. As I can see, most probably he has diverted the public funds!”

The status of all the gamblers present on the scene was definitely not low, even though it wasn’t as huge as Eldest Master Lin, still, who didn’t know the truth and inside situation of Eldest Master Lin?

Ye Feng had also gotten a general understanding of the situation. Lin Zhiqing, who was known by this name ‘Eldest Master Lin’, was a 27-28-year-old man, had already acquired the position of Deputy Director of Yanjing’s Finance Bureau, and in this generation of Lin Clan, he was the oldest one on the basis of age, and had advanced into the political circle, as fostered by his Clan.

If compared with Lin Zhiqing, whether the person was Lin Shiqing or Lin Xiuwen, both were still young, hence, their future path was still uncertain.

Also, Ye Feng didn’t have any idea that how did Lin Zhiqing get infected with the disease of gambling and embezzling public fund to gamble in this sort of a noisy place? As everybody knew, this kind of news used to spread with a lightning fast speed. Soon, it would reach the ears of his political opponents.

He was one of the members of Lin Clan, so, who could dare mess up with him?

It wasn't so simple! Once he fell into the clench of his political opponents, then they would definitely find out some other way to topple him. Even if there was the shelter of Lin Clan, but still they couldn't guarantee to protect him at all times.

Moreover, he also didn't know that how Lin Zhiqing could be so blockhead, wasn't it like compelling himself towards the blind alley on his own?

Of course, Ye Feng wasn't even the slightest bit inclined to know the ins and outs of this guy, since anything related to this guy was totally uninteresting and irrelevant to Ye Feng in this given situation.

Ye Feng, wearing his mask, looked at the casino's young dealer sitting opposite to Lin Zhiqing, and thought that how should he trap him so that he could hypnotise him? But soon, Ye Feng shook his head, as he noticed that using hypnosis in this crowded place would be very suspicious. Because before using hypnosis, he must figure out that among all these people who were constantly looking at the gambling table, who was not a slick and smart customer?

What if he got exposed while doing so, hence it wasn't a nice idea at all. Moreover, he couldn't guarantee that among all these people, there wouldn't be certainly a single person who would be a Martial artist.

Therefore, Ye Feng finally decided to give up his idea and play some tricks on this table, and then lure the boss of Tian Gang out of his den! Casinos were the largest source of income for Tian Gang, so, he would make the casino lose hundreds of millions on this table, then only the opposite party would hurriedly make his appearance.

Soon, a new round began.

Lin Zhiqing together with the young dealer started playing, the game was all about throwing three dice, and then guessing whether the total points were big or small. In addition, there were specific points of betting. If the guessed number came below that specific number of points, then the financial loss would be very high.

Shua! Shua!

The young dealer threw the dice first, simultaneously his corners of the mouth turned upwards, revealing his iniquitous smile as he looked at the anxious face of Lin Zhiqing. Very quickly, he threw his dice on the table and said: "Place your bet!"

"Small!"

Without any hesitation, Lin Zhiqing promptly pushed out a ten millions chips, directly pressing them towards the "Small" side.

By putting on a very treacherous smile, the young dealer said : "Isn't it true that Eldest Master Lin has become very cautious now, as he didn't dare to bet on any specific point?"

Immediately he flipped over his hand and uncovered the lid of the small box in which those three dice were. At the same time, without wasting any moment in useless thought, Ye Feng's Zhenqi quickly sprang out beside him, immediately after, by using Camouflage, he suddenly changed those three dice into 1, 2, 3.

"Won!"

Seeing that, Lin Zhiqing's happiness suddenly burst out. While on the other hand, the young dealer tightly wrinkled his brow, because he was damn sure that he had thrown out 4, 4 and 6, how could they turn into 1,2 and 3?

He glanced around and suddenly his sight paused on the masked face of Ye Feng. For a while, he stared at him, but then he didn't care and turned away. Actually, there were a lot of people, who used to come to the Casino wearing masks, therefore, it wasn't strange for him seeing masked people. Ye Feng wasn't the odd one out there and really didn't deserve his special attention.

"Once again."

The young dealer shouted out : "Everybody can place bets. Eldest Master Lin, what do you think about this?"

He thought that he should wait to see who would win the maximum time, then he could be able to know who was involved in the dirty tricks. This guy was either a very prudent sinister, or he was very confident in his own skill, since he didn't believe that he would make any mistake. Therefore, while he shouted out to encourage people to bet, at the same time he also sent an SMS secretly.

Although, Ye Feng was indirectly helping Eldest Master Lin in this gambling game, but only because it was supporting his plan.

His prime goal, wasn't it to draw the boss of Tian Gang out of his hiding?

"Of course, no problem."

Lin Zhiqing nodded, his slightly fleshy face was sweating all over.

As soon as Lin Zhiqing's words fell, the bet on the table began to liven up. During the next round, Lin Zhiqing placed his bet on "big", however, several other people together with him also placed their bets, and detained the points.

When the lid was removed, again without thinking anything, Ye Feng hastily cast out Camouflage and turned those three dice into 4,5 and 6.

Indeed it was big!

All of a sudden, the complexion of that young dealer darkened, while Lin Zhiqing overwhelmed with happiness, back to back he hit two consecutive victories, so was this the time to break the rhythm?

In the next round, when the young dealer rolled the dice, Lin Zhiqing directly placed his bet on "18" point, by pushing out 200 million chips!

Upon seeing this, the group of people standing around, thought that Eldest Master Lin had really lost his mind. Though the chances of the loss would be ten times higher on point '18', but at the same time, it could be so easy as well, he just had to throw out three '6' points. However, the probability of three '6' was very low!

In response, that young dealer smiled, so much courage that he bet on point '18' and pushed out 200 million, did he by any chance lose his consciousness?

Nobody knew that seeing the same, nearby standing Ye Feng also smiled, his corners of the mouth curled up, as he could see that now the chance had finally arrived, when he could succeed in making this casino lose 200 million!

If this really happened, then it was crystal clear that the young dealer would definitely not continue sitting still, patiently.

Chapter 108 -> Another masked man

While smiling iniquitously, the young dealer uncovered the lid of the small box. However, he remained stunned when he saw the point.

The people standing around the table also looked at the point and were also similarly stunned!

There were really three '6', while adding them together, it was equal to 18 points!

Lin Zhiqing suddenly stood up, his face was glowing brightly with excessive happiness, however, he still had maintained a calm and composed stature. Was this like the Heaven was helping him? What kind of situation this was! This sort of small probability game had been luckily encountered by him today!

The young gambler's face immediately turned black, fuck, it ended up with a loss of 200 million, ah! As far as the case of other gamblers was concerned, since the amount was so negligible, that it wasn't worth pulling the attention of that young dealer.

But while talking about Lin Zhiqing, the young dealer's involved money was 200 million

His face clouded by a gloomy expression, and suddenly he pushed a huge pile of chips towards Lin Zhiqing.

Since the opposite party was Eldest Master Lin, so he couldn't dare to

repudiate a debt. Wasn't that 200 million? He wanted to play again! At his level, if no one would cause any disturbance, then he could win back in an instant.

He was frequently sweeping his vision all around, soon he noticed a masked man who was looking very suspicious. Because, when that masked person had arrived at the side of this gambling table, since then he hadn't spoken a single word with anyone, and hadn't bet even a single time. When that dealer looked at him once again more carefully, he felt a gloomy aura around him.

"Let's play one more time!"

The dealer quietly locked his attention at Ye Feng, and once again began to shake the dice!

"I bet on '9'.

It seemed like Lin Zhiqing had already considered himself as the Mandate of Heaven, therefore, without giving a second thought, he pushed forward 100 million chips directly while betting on a specific number. The frequency of loss at this particular number was three times higher, however, if he won, then he would directly earn 300 million, which would be a huge profit, an unusual profit!

(Lastvoice : Mandate of Heaven -> it's a political theory of ancient China in which those in power, were given the right to rule, from a divine source.)

From one side, Ye Feng looked at and sneered secretly in his heart. To him, Eldest Master Lin really didn't seem a logical and smart person at all, he was rather excessively greedy. Therefore, sooner or later, he would lose everything, including his undergarments.

However at present, Ye Feng was actually taking pleasure in helping him, after all, helping him was indirectly like helping himself. He was the only Eldest Master Lin, who could put forward such a huge amount, for gambling.

While opening the lid, that dealer quietly fixated his eyes on Ye Feng's action, simultaneously, sent an SMS to notify something to someone.

“It's really 9!”

A group of people exclaimed aloud, but Ye Feng was still standing and watching quietly from the sidelines, totally unperturbed. As for that young dealer, he wanted to see Ye Feng in action, as if Ye Feng would cast out Camouflage Technique in front of his eyes, how naïve he was.

But right at this time, Ye Feng felt two dangerous breath passing on, all of a sudden, directly from behind, which sent a shiver down his spine.

He promptly turned his head and saw two tall figures, clad in a huge deep brown and grey windproof coat, with their heads closely wrapped by the cloth hat, were moving towards him from two different directions, separately, quite quickly!

“Oh shit, not good, isn't this the same gorilla I had encountered before? Who have thought that it will actually appear again at a place like this!”

The razor-sharp mind of Ye Feng instantly came into action, as he knew that that the situation had changed at once. In addition, he didn't know the ins and outs of these gorillas, most likely he would just use Camouflage Technique

before these two fellows could realise anything.

Without thinking much, by using his foot as a pedal, he sprang up very high, and directly crossed the whole gambling table at once!

As a result, in astonishment, the surrounding people started shouting out loud. However, Ye Feng wasn't bothered by their screams, he just grabbed the collar of that dealer, and with slightly light footsteps, like a wind, he dashed towards the exit of the casino, and ran outside.

But those two tall figures, without uttering a single word, also chased after him while breathing vigorously.

Along with that young drunken dealer, Ye Feng was stumbled blocked on the road by them. But, quickly he hit one of the tall figures heavily, and layer upon layer that tall figure bumped against the road, and all of a sudden with a "Kacha" sound, his several bones were broken!

This sudden incident which took place in the casino, had turned almost everyone dumbfounded.

What was going on?

Lin Zhiqing's eyes were wide-opened, fuck, he was just about to win 300 million, why was that dealer caught by someone and was carried away? Now, who would calculate the result of this gamble?

Basically, the already noisy casino had become a bit more noisier now.

.....

However, outside the clubhouse, carrying the young gambler by his collar, Ye Feng had already put to use Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and had already covered over a hundred meters of distance. At this moment, his stature flashed and he jumped to a deserted park.

“Let go of me! You have dared to disturb the domain of Tian Gang, consider yourself dead

Although the youth was scared to death, but he still tried to threaten Ye Feng like this.

“Shut up.”

Ye Feng with a “Pa” sound flung a slap on his face, simultaneously, he snatched his cell phone from his hand, and looked at it. To his surprise, he found that this guy hadn’t sent any message to his boss, rather, had sent an SMS to other two men.

Those two men were the attendants who used to guard these two hidden pavilion masters.

“What these hidden pavilion masters are, merely four limbs of the body, but no brain, they are nothing but a kind of a simple-minded monster

Ye Feng thought that, as if he had probably made a conjecture of the present

situation.

This young dealer was originally the head of this casino. If he lost more, then that would be his own responsibility, it wasn't worthwhile to notify Tian Gang's boss. Let alone this matter, he just sent two hidden pavilion masters today, making the situation even more unscrupulous.

Ye Feng was quite aware that certainly because of the death of Song Hu, Dubang Long, and other people, the mysterious organisation had become somewhat cautious. That was the reason why it had arranged the so-called masters in this place, which was operated by Tian Gang.

Unfortunately, for Ye Feng, these two "gorillas" weren't worth paying attention to.

There was a secluded park in front of Ye Feng, he quickly moved towards it, at the same time, those two tall figures, wrapped in a huge robe, also immediately pursued him, all the way by crashing and damaging several street lights, making the already dim park, become darker.

Crash, bang!

Crash, bang!

As the crashing sound of street lights resounded, simultaneously the screaming voices of several men and women also resounded from the park, immediately various dishevelled youth jumped out, and escaped toward the distant place in abundance.

“It’s the time!”

Seeing almost everyone present in that park had disappeared quite quickly, and the whole environment was dark and alone now, Ye Feng suddenly stopped his footsteps and threw the young dealer aside on the ground.

Immediately, an orangish-red Zhenqi condensed sword flashed out!

Ye Feng, while wielding the long sword, raised his head and looked at those two tall figures. His mind was all prepared to take a move, he started condensing his Zhenqi in his foot, and quickly activated Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. Soon, the afterimage of Ye Feng was almost present everywhere in the entire dark park, making those two pursuing “gorillas” puzzled and helpless, and in confusion, they started randomly throwing hits foolishly.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Kacha! Puff!

With a lightning fast speed, Ye Feng moved, and his orangish-red Zhenqi sword flashed in the dark park, and soon, he truncated the head of one of the gorilla, making it flew and heavily fell to the nearby bushes!

“This is a human

The scene which just happened in front of that young dealer’s eyes, made him froze to the spot.

Earlier, he had witnessed with his own two eyes, that these two “masters”, who were sent by his boss, punched and shattered a marble table in just a second, they were absolutely the living proof of superior force! But now, how could this man in the mask be so flamboyant, that he chopped down the head of

one of the “masters”, as if he was not cutting a head, but a cake?

Although this young dealer was a high-level personnel in this crime world, but still he had never ever seen such scene, where a person chopped down the head of someone!

Fortunately, blood didn't spray out much, and the scene didn't turn out to be very bloody and heart-chilling. However, this incident bowed a seed of doubt in the heart of this youth, he thought that somehow these two “masters” were appearing very strange, was it a robot?

When Ye Feng's sword hit it's body, at that time, that young dealer had heard a metal intersecting sound, moreover, it had been beheaded yet no blood rushed out, no wonder that young dealer would guess so.

Puff!

This time, Ye Feng again cut off the head of another gorilla, and both of them collapsed to the ground heavily. That was the end, now they couldn't move again.

“Where do you want to run away?”

Ye Feng sneered as he turned back to see the youth, who was trying to escape, in the meantime, he congealed his Zhenqi sword, and immediately launched a Defensive move, that was Dragon Claw Hand-Cloud style!

It was the second move of Dragon Claw Hand, which directly grabbed the body of the dealer, and caught him in the empty space.

Being caught spatially like this, wasn't a rare experience everyone could experience here and there. Was it possible, that the young dealer would have ever encountered this kind of situation? Immediately, this thing jolted his heart out, and he got scared to the extent where he even peed in his pants.

However, unfortunately, Ye Feng had no time to pay attention to his facial expression.

Because, not far away, in the shadow of the bushes, a somewhat gaunt figure quietly appeared, and attracted the attention of Ye Feng.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

A clear applause passed on, and it turned out to be another masked man!

Who was he?

Ye Feng quickly grabbed the young dealer, and looked towards the opposite party vigilantly. That person's face, just like Ye Feng, had a mask on.

Chapter 109 -> My enemy's enemy is my friend

Two masked men, encountered each other, in a secluded dark park, not very far away from the casino of Tian Gang. The difference was, Ye Feng's face mask was a white grimace face, while the opposite party had a black skeleton face mask.

Through his mask, Ye Feng stuck his eyes at the opposite party, and in a sinking voice, asked : "Who are you?"

"Don't be so nervous."

The skeleton masked man stayed still, raised his hands, and with a chuckle, said : "As the saying goes, my enemy's enemy is my friend. So friend, may I dare to ask your ultimate goal, isn't it Cai Shao?"

As the word went out, the razor-sharp mind of Ye Feng started racing instantly.

This guy, how did he even guess that his ultimate goal was Cai Shao? Moreover, he also said that 'my enemy's enemy is my friend', after all what was his identity?

"In good faith, I would like to show you my identity."

The skeleton masked man smiled softly, as he took out a silver token from the bosom of his western-styled clothing suit. He tossed it twice in his hands, and then lifted it in front of Ye Feng's eyes in order to show him.

Southern Heavenly Gates!

These three characters made Ye Feng instantaneously understand the identity of this fellow.

A year ago, when the mysterious organisation had just come into light, by using his enormous power, it had immediately eradicated the complete existence of Southern Heavenly Gates, which was one of the big four gangs of Yanjing. And as the rumour spread, it not only eradicated this gang, but had also slaughtered its whole family, making the entire gang completely disappear from Yanjing.

Was this human skeleton masked man, by any chance, the member of Southern Heavenly Gates?

No wonder that the enemy's enemy is a friend. Because of that Cai Shao, this guy's hatred was certainly deeper than Ye Feng!

“Well, correct, the enemy's enemy is my friend.”

Ye Feng pretended as if he was now relieved.

Bang!

However, all of a sudden a muffled sound echoed everywhere, making the heart of Ye Feng skip a beat. Promptly he looked up and saw that skeleton masked man had pulled out a pistol and fired a shot directly towards him!

Of course, his target was not Ye Feng, but it was that young dealer, who was still in Ye Feng's clutch. Bullet precisely hit his forehead, making him perish instantly.

"After knowing my existence, it was impossible for me to still let him alive."

The skeleton masked man said faintly.

"The marksmanship is quite good."

Ye Feng smiled, and tossed the body of that young dealer off nearby dense bushes: "Perhaps we really can cooperate."

So easily, he could kill the man of the so-called great Tian Gang, Ye Feng was finally almost confirmed that this masked man was indeed standing on his side.

"Soon people will start arriving here, let's go to some other place first, then we'll talk about the rest of things."

The skeleton masked man said while looking around.

Although it was a remote park, but still it had been the favourite spot of a lot of young couples. Just a few minutes back, almost all people had run away out of fear, but soon some other new couples might come. And if they would notice the corpses, then Ye Feng along with that masked man, would certainly get caught in some big trouble. So, the early they would leave this place, it would be better for them.

In any case, because of the technique used by Ye Feng, the police could definitely not find out his identity, moreover, in this case, two gorillas were involved, it was quite normal that the general police wouldn't be competent to process this matter.

Both of them, after mutually arriving at an agreement to maintain a distance of ten meters between them, before as well as after leaving this remote park, finally left that place. The man in the skeleton mask was leading the way. He was walking towards the western side along a small alley.

Naturally, Ye Feng was calmly following him.

This skeleton masked man was hidden for a whole one year, so it was quite obvious that he might be knowing about Cai Shao much more than him, and most probably he would also be knowing where Cai Shao would be hidden right now.

If something went wrong, then Ye Feng would immediately wave his sword to flatten him then and there.

Threats must be resolved immediately, he wouldn't be lenient!

"Just now the guy I shot was the head of Tian Gang's casino, and was actually called as Fang elder brother. He used to kill several people every day, who weren't able to pay their gambling debts. He had also led several people towards the road of losing everything, which immediately followed by bankruptcy. He truly deserved to be damned"

While leading the way, the skeleton masked man slowly continued explaining things : “And tonight, his duty was to let Lin Zhiqing gamble and lose all public funds, and leave behind a big evidence, so that they could start their preparation for the big action”

“Is Lin Clan the prime target of Cai Shao?”

Ye Feng asked.

“More or less, yes.”

He smiled and in a very soft voice, said : “He has been sent by Pei Keang Group to China, with the assignment to control and nibble away the property of Lin Clan gradually, to disrupt the economy of the country China, so that they can develop prohibited drugs and drift them into the domestic market of China. Furthermore, their other plan is to nurture a group of loyal subordinates here in this country. ”

“Pei Keang Group as expected, Cai Shaohong is Cai Shao!”

Immediately coldness flashed in Ye Feng’s eyes.

“Correct, as for Lin Clan, Cai Shao’s plan is very detailed. His plan is to threaten Lin Zhiqing, to control Lin Xiuwen, and lastly for Lin Shiqing, his wants to completely take possession of her to resort to extreme measures!”

With somewhat regret, he continued : “Unfortunately, his secret effort is too perfect to the extent that even if these matters would be told to someone else, still no one would ever believe it.”

Indeed, such a grand plan, even someone would plan to implement like this, he would totally fail, because it was simply inconceivable. Must be said, if this planned came out successful, then the economy of the entire country China would collapse, making the person with high aspirations, seek the sudden huge profits from it!

Moreover, during weekdays, usually Cai Shaohong, with the help of his performance in Yanshan University, had also paralysed almost everyone, apart from the present guy, the man in the skeleton mask.

“So, how about you, how did you know about all these things including his plan?”

Overwhelmed with relish, Ye Feng asked : “It seems that you have that identity which can make him trust you.”

“Ha-ha, if you can get rid of him, you’ll know.”

That masked man chuckled softly and said : “Let’s take your current strength, even if you have huge power, still it would be best for you to not to butt heads with him, because just like the previously encountered gorilla, there are over a hundred of that kind, who are lurking around Cai Shao”

When Ye Feng heard that there were more than a hundred gorillas, his heart suddenly felt a chill. As per his current strength, to bump into a single one of them was really a bit difficult for him to manage. And now this shocking fact there was over a hundred of such strange thing. But the important point was, where had been they usually kept?

Without waiting for Ye Feng to fire his question once again, the skeleton masked man again continued : “Since, Lin Zhiqing’s things have been resolved, then let’s go nearby Yanshan University. It may be possible that he might try to accomplish one of his plans tonight.”

“What plan?”

Ye Feng asked that with some doubts.

“In some way, get control of Lin Xiuwen

The masked man chuckled and said: “Thus, from here onwards, you can see the calamity without end. There is a person, the young lady of Xiao Clan, she will be sacrificed in this plan. But, I, alone as a single person, just by relying on my strength, can’t dare to destroy this plan.”

The young lady of Xiao Clan?

The moment he listened to his words, suddenly a scene flashed in his mind, from today’s early morning, when Cai Shaohong and Lin Xiuwen were talking something , while they were on the basketball court.

Was it Xiao Qi?

Ye Feng suddenly again recalled another scene from today’s morning, when he was in that café, and had met that lively and pretty young girl as well as the owner of that case. For a while, he slightly pondered about her. Although at

present, he only wanted to deal with Cai Shaohong, but if Xiao Qi was involved in his plan, then no matter what, but his plan wasn't appropriate from any angle.

“Let's go to Yanshan University college first to have a look around, afterwards come along with me to deal with that Cai Shao, what say?”

In a sinking voice, Ye Feng asked.

He was still constantly thinking about the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa, where he had sensed divine spiritual influence.

“It depends on whether you have enough strength or not for that.”

The skeleton masked man also replied in a low voice and then said that he himself was just an average person, even if he had a pistol, but still he couldn't pose a threat to Cai Shaohong. Otherwise, he had been ambushing for one year, had long been personally killed Cai Shaohong.

In order to exterminate Cai Shaohong, he could only rely on Ye Feng!

“Don't take it wrong, but wait for an opponent, he is really worthy of consideration.”

In a somewhat dignified tone, the skeleton masked man said while holding a serious looking expression on his face: “If you have the sufficient strength to defeat him, then without further ado, let's go to deal with Cai Shaohong and resolve this matter once and for all, tonight!”

As for this match, Ye Feng thought that it was worth paying attention to his rival, could it be that his rival was a very powerful martial artist from the world of the martial arts?

However, he didn't ask anything. Not long after, they advanced towards the western side, and soon approached near an apartment close to Yanshan University, the environment around was pretty good and quite calm.

The night breeze was blowing gently, it was fairly peaceful nearby the apartment, after all, it was night, naturally the residential area couldn't be too noisy.

“The young lady of Xiao Clan has rented a house here”

As the skeleton masked man said that, exactly at the same time, Ye Feng's facial expression terrifically changed.

What he saw was under a street light, near the apartment, a lonely figure was standing, his body was wrapped in the tattered cloth, as if he was a beggar. But Ye Feng knew it wasn't a beggar, because the facial features of that figure under the ragged cloth, was actually –

Zhao Yibei?

Wasn't his corpse missing, then how did it appear here? Moreover, his face was pale and looking horrible, could it be that it also had something to do with Cai Shao's plans?

Ye Feng's heart shivered by this thought, while at this time, on the other side,

as soon as Zhao Yibei's figure seemed to have found these two people, it quickly jumped into a small alley nearby, and all of a sudden disappeared!

Chapter 110 -> The rising dead

Firstly, why the corpse of Zhao Yibei would appear here, and secondly, obviously it didn't have the vitality, but still how could it move?

Ye Feng's heart felt a slight chill, and in a sinking voice, he said:. "Where does Xiao Qi live? I'll go over there first."

"It's the fourth floor of the second building"

The skeleton masked man barely said that, and the next moment, without wasting even a single second, Ye Feng rapidly moved his footsteps, simultaneously he cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and quickly advanced towards the mentioned building.

In the World of the Immortals, there were lots of Immortal Techniques related to dead bodies, such as Dead Soul Control, which was used to control the corpses of all the living creature of the world. Moreover, it could also preserve their fighting strength before death. It is rightly said that fierce are not afraid of dying, Immortal cultivators, who used to practice this Immortal Technique, were used to be incredibly formidable.

But on this planet earth, was there the existence of this kind of thing?

Ye Feng didn't think about it much, he just ran quickly, and soon arrived in front of the second building. When he looked up, his eyes fell on something, which suddenly gave his heart a severe jolt. He saw a guy standing on the balcony of the third floor of that building, and was also wrapped in a ragged cloth, just like Zhao Yibei.

“Tornado Axe?!”

Totally thunderstruck, Ye Feng’s heart took a sudden jump. That tall and sturdy fellow, with a pale face, and clearly visible scars on his throat, wasn’t that the trace of him being struck and killed by the flying knife of Zhu Bainiao? Ye Feng still clearly remembered the scene from before, back then, Tornado Axe’s corpse was perfectly disposed of by Scar and Zhao Yibei. They had carefully thrown his body in the flowing river, then how could he be here?

The point was why on the earth he appeared here at this place. But still, Ye Feng couldn’t afford to waste a single second to ponder about it right now.

Without waiting for the Skeleton masked man to keep up with him, he directly made an effort, started condensing his Zhenqi under his foot and quickly leapt high. Coupled with the explosive force of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, he jumped directly to the third floor’s balcony!

If it was someone else from the world of the martial arts, then let alone five years of Cultivation, even if he had a decade of Cultivation, still it was next to impossible for him to jump so high, unless he used to practice any exquisite and incomparable subtle dodge. However, Ye Feng, merely relying on the strength of his Zhenqi, partnered with Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, easily enhanced his jumping ability, which was completely beyond the reach of ordinary people, and that also from several times.

Shua!

An orangish-red Zhenqi sword condensed out at once and immediately dazzled in his hand. By the moment Tornado Axe could react, his head was sliced off

from his body, and was immediately kicked off. As a result, he heavily collided with the wall of the balcony, and his entire body burst out, making his whole body turned into one handful of ashes!

Upon seeing this scene, Ye Feng's heart stopped beating for a while and his mind blanked out, wasn't the corpse of Tornado Axe an entity? Then, in that case, just a moment ago, that Zhao Yibei's

"As expected, he would be here"

Right at this time, an old and gloomy voice spread out from inside the room attached to this balcony, along with the cries of a young girl asking for help, as well as a snarling roar of a youth, as if he had lost his senses.

"Xiao Qi, Lin Xiuwen? And who is that old man?"

Ye Feng's heart was extremely vigilant at this moment, he immediately cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace once again, and by grasping his long orangish-red Zhenqi sword, moved fast and in one fell swoop broke open the balcony's door, and rushed in the room.

He saw a pink-coloured bedroom of a young girl, where Lin Xiuwen was standing in a very strange condition. His upper part of the body was bare, his whole body's skin was rising red, he was constantly making a sound like a general roar of a wild beast, while pushing a young girl to the corner. This young lady, wasn't she Lin Shiqing's best friend, the young proprietress of Qi Qi Cafe, Xiao Qi of Xiao Clan?

But right now, Xiao Qi's originally brightly glowing and lovely face was clouded

by the two obvious bloodstains and her snow white nightgown was totally ragged. Holding high-heeled shoes in her hands, she was continuously pounding towards Lin Xiuwen, as if she was trying to kick him out.

Very obviously, the beastly personality of Lin Xiuwen had completely taken over his mind, and had made him delirious. And in this delirious state, he was trying to harm Xiao Qi. However, Xiao Qi was not that kind of a girl, who used to sit and wait for her death, instead, on the one hand, she was crying for help, while on the other hand, she was protecting herself from him.

Besides those two people, there was no one else in the room.

“Just now, was that the voice of an old man?”

Ye Feng was still super vigilant, instantly leaving behind a remnant afterimage, his stature flashed and appeared in front of Xiao Qi, and in a fraction of a second, he kicked that crazy Lin Xiuwen, making his whole body flew, and with a huge force, “bang” he bumped into the wall.

“Are you all right?”

Ye Feng, wearing a grimace face mask, turned his head and by looking towards Xiao Qi, inquired.

“Don’t have is all right”

The girl was frightened to death, a pair of her water-laden eyes was looking at him fearfully, accompanied with vigilance.

Who was this man in the mask? How did he come from the balcony? Everything appeared very suspicious to her! Although this masked man saved her, by kicking the delirious and brutal Lin Xiuwen off her body, but perhaps it was like, just escaping from a wolf's den, and entering into the tiger's den.

Ye Feng noticed that she was being extremely vigilant and scared seeing all these strange things, but he didn't care about it, rather he walked towards Lin Xiuwen, while being very careful. Soon he discovered that really there was no other person in the entire room, which gave him a little relief.

He looked at Lin Xiuwen, and saw his both eyes were blood red, he was bare-chested, his skin was boiling hot, and he seemed to have completely lost his consciousness. Moreover, he was also making whooshing sound unceasingly. After being kicked by Ye Feng, he collided with the wall, and had gotten badly injured, to the extent where he was really struggling hard to crawl and get up.

“What happened to him?”

Ye Feng asked in a low voice.

“I don't know either.....”

That young girl, Xiao Qi had a lingering fear: “just a moment ago, an old man hurtled to come in together with him, he thought to me, to me”

“An old man?”

Ye Feng asked again.

“He iswell, human?”

Xiao Qi looked around, but didn't see any figure, which a bit startled her.

Bang!

Just at this point, not very far away from this building, a light sound of a gunshot rang, making Ye Feng's ears set upright suddenly.

“You take care of this fellow, I'm going out now.”

Without thinking much, Ye Feng directly threw a punch at the delirious Lin Clan's Sanshao, and made him unconscious on the spot. Then he jumped a step out from the balcony. This was obviously the sound of a pistol, without a doubt it would be fired by that skeleton masked man, did he encounter any enemy? Perhaps it would be that old man!

For a moment, Xiao Qi's mind was stunned by seeing Ye Feng jumping down directly from the balcony of the third floor.

She followed him and quickly ran to the balcony. When she looked downwards, she saw there was no one around. Quickly she turned around and looked towards the floor, where the collapsed Lin Clan's Sanshao was lying, all these things sent a shiver down her spine. Panic-stricken, she jumped towards a pillow and pulled out her cell phone, and hastily dialled the number of Lin Shiqing.

.....

While on the other side, Ye Feng jumped down from the balcony, and rushed towards the place from where the sound of gunshot transmitted a moment ago. That was an apartment community, in the centre of which there was an artificial lake, and was surrounded by a flake bamboo grove. As soon as Ye Feng arrived there, he saw a dozen of gloomy figures in the bamboo grove, and immediately his complexion changed.

Almost all these fellows were familiar to him!

He saw Zhu Bainiao, the two fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate, Luo Li and Luo Lei, as well as Zhao Yibei, and so on, altogether there were total eight pale-looking corpses wrapped in the tattered cotton robe. All these fellows had together encircled the Skeleton masked man, but since he had a gun, so for his self-defense, he shot in the middle of the forehead of Zhu Bainiao's corpse, but still he couldn't succeed in impeding the footstep of the other party.

Seeing the Skeleton masked man surrounded by a group of corpses, Ye Feng hurriedly rushed towards him, simultaneously started condensing Zhenqi under his foot, and hastily cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, in order to rescue him from this tight encirclement.

"These things..... what's going on here?"

Ye Feng stopped his footsteps near the artificial lake, and then in a sinking sound, asked that from the skeleton masked male.

"These fellows are being controlled by an old man, who have come from

Western Hunan, and who is a necromancer.”

Obviously, the Skeleton masked man knew the ins and outs of this thing, therefore in a dignified tone, he continued: “Since he couldn’t stay any longer in the church, so he came to Yanjing, and happened to meet with Cai Shaohong

A necromancer, the creator of walking dead?

Ye Feng didn’t know anything about this kind of sect, but he made a conjecture that he might belong to any martial arts sect. And as hinted by the skeleton masked man, he quickly understood the situation that his opponents were not these walking deads, but that old man.

“Ga, Ga, Ga.”

Suddenly, at this time, a gloomy and hoarse voice, echoed from all directions : “I am a necromancer! I was actually framed by a traitor, therefore I fled from there. Thanks to the kindheartedness of Cai Shao, who provided shelter to me. Now, I handle matters for him. By the way, I don’t know what’s your name, your Excellency?”

“Mo Jiuge.”

Ye Feng faintly replied to him, and as usual, once again he tightened up his guard.

Only the voice of that old man could be heard, he was hidden somewhere in the dark, which was very much disadvantageous for Ye Feng! Moreover, those

eight pale corpses, which were under the control of this old man, were also gradually approaching towards them.

Ye Feng looked at the pale face of Zhao Yibei and suddenly his heart sank.

This youth sacrificed his life for him, but even after his death, he had no peace. He got caught up by some necromancer, a creator of zombies, and now was being controlled to harm other people. This thought really left Ye Feng's heart with a very unhappy feeling!

Chapter 111 -> Black jar of souls

Ye Feng, while standing near the artificial lake, looked up and stared fixedly at the deadly pale face of Zhao Yibei, and thought to himself that just few minutes back, the moment he chopped off the head of Tornado Axe by his sword, that guy immediately turned into the ashes.

“That boy, Lin Xiuwen, just like all these fellows, is also brought under the control of that old man, and is being manipulated to take hold of Xiao Qi.”

The Skeleton masked man continued saying dignifiedly : “Mo Jiuge, if you can vanquish this old man, then with your real strength, we can launch a sneak attack on Cai Shaohong, and most probably, we’ll succeed!”

“Understood.”

Ye Feng nodded, however, he didn’t show any emotion, like laughter, anger, sorrow or happiness.

At this moment, by using all his strength, he was just trying to find the trace of the old man, but unfortunately, in the entire bamboo grove, in addition to these two people, and those eight deadly pale corpses, there was really no one around!

“If I had ten years of Cultivation, then by using Congealing Spellbound Technique, I could have been able to sense all the things, which happened to exist within a radius of hundred meters of range, not even a single thing could have been able to escape my awareness, but unfortunately

While keeping his eyes all alert, Ye Feng was secretly thinking that if he would really succeed in taking hold of the divine spiritual influence, which he had seen in Cai Shaohong's villa, then might be he could boost up his Cultivation up to 10 years in one fell swoop. In that case, he could go to the East China Sea to find Su Feiying, with certainly an increased level of confidence.

Cai Shaohong must be killed!

When those eight deadly pale corpses encircled them, then among them, Luo Li and Luo Lei, these fellow apprentices took initiative and brandished their clenched fists 'Paochui Fist', towards the artificial lake, aiming directly at Ye Feng. They had learned this technique during his lifetime, in God Fist Gate.

While dealing with these two fellows, Ye Feng couldn't be lenient. Immediately a long Zhenqi sword condensed out in his hand, and with a super fast pace, he instantly evaded the fist of the opposite party. And in return, very swiftly he engraved his sword in the heart of those two corpses, one after another, and with a sound "Puff" their bodies turned into dust!

Seeing this scene, the nearby standing Skeleton masked man's body trembled out. Obviously, he had a great confidence in the strength and fighting efficiency of Ye Feng. He had a pistol right now in his hand, but even though he would use it to fight with these walking deads, but still it wouldn't have any effect on them. However, this guy, "Mo Jiuge", he just used a random sword, and really succeeded in defeating these corpses so easily, he was really too domineering and aggressive!

Ye Feng blurred afterimages flashed all over the place, accompanied with his sword, which fluttered about in the air merely 2 or 3 times, and instantaneously annihilated seven pale corpses, making them turn into a handful of ashes and mix up with the bamboo grove. Finally, only one corpse left and that was Zhao

Yibei. But as usual, Ye Feng couldn't bring himself to finish him up, by his own hand.

As he was busy dealing with these walking deads, he was also paying equal attention to his surroundings. Though this bamboo grove was quite distant from the neighbourhood buildings, but still not a single suspicious shadow of any human figure appeared there, making him temporarily lost in thought.

It was close to impossible for that old man, to cast out a magic on his own body, to make himself Invisible. Besides, in this bamboo grove, there was no such place where anyone could hide. Since the old man was currently controlling these corpses, then obviously the distance between him and these corpses wouldn't be too far.

Finally, he had a feeling that now the appropriate time had arrived when the old man must be on the verge of coming out from his hidden position.

Ye Feng was thinking about this while pretending that he was dealing with Zhao Yibei's corpse, meanwhile, his whole body entered the garrison state!

While on the other side, when the man in the skeleton mask looked at the swiftly fluttering stature of Ye Feng while dealing with these corpses, then he finally heaved a sigh of relief. As he concluded after seeing Ye Feng's form that "Mo Jiuge" was such a powerful fighter with excellent swordsmanship, therefore, even if he would come directly in front of Cai Shaohong, then obviously he wouldn't necessarily lose.

Just after a while

While Ye Feng was just busy in his own thought process, suddenly, from behind him, a sound of a sudden burst of water passed on, followed by a fuzzy appearance of a person quickly leapt from the water, and threw a hit directly towards Ye Feng.

There was completely no prior indication of this move, and it seemed like this strike was as fast as the lightning!

“Dead Soul Claw!”

An old and gloomy voice suddenly rang in the ears of those people. No wonder, why this old man couldn't be traced out anywhere, since he was hidden beneath the artificial lake surface!

“Too good!”

From fairly a long time, Ye Feng had been waiting for the opposite party to show up!

He had already guessed that the opposite party must be hidden under the artificial lake, but since he didn't know the depth of his opponent's strength, therefore, he didn't dare to take the initiative into the water. However, just now, when the opposite party tried to sneak attack, he was immediately seized by Ye Feng. Somehow unintentionally Ye Feng established a superiority over him, all of a sudden!

The old man promptly turned around to free himself from the clutch of Ye Feng, however, Ye Feng didn't loosen his grip, instead, the Zhenqi within his body started boiling up and suddenly burst out. And just in a fraction of a

second, he activated Dragon Claw Hand Technique, and instantaneously grabbed the body of that old man who was totally unprepared, and hurled him heavily on the ground.

Bang!

Consequently, the dust flew upwards, making the sky covered with dust, accompanied by the water droplets, which also flew upwards from the body of that old man. At this time, the old man appeared incomparably distressed in this lonesome and quiet bamboo grove.

“Dragon Claw Hand Technique’s second level!”

Awestruck, the old man shouted out loud!

Nowadays, in this world, there was a handful of strong fighters who could assign away their inner qi from their bodies. Even though the old man had achieved two decades of Cultivation, still it was extremely difficult for him to reach that level.

Just now the old man used a technique – Dead Soul Claw, if by any chance, he had been able to release his inner qi out of his body, and had also known the second level of this technique, then by combining them with his Dead Soul Claw technique, he could have been able to easily perturb his opponent, by disrupting his listening and seeing ability, later on making him a walking dead! Unfortunately, this old man couldn’t attain that, or else Ye Feng would have become one of the corpses by now.

Bang Bang Bang!

The reaction time of the Skeleton masked man was also noticeably quick, immediately he raised his pistol, and slid on the ground in front of the old man, and opened fire on him.

“What a pity, your Cultivation is too low!”

The old man said that gloomily, at the same time, his the current of his inner qi started circulating crazily within his body, and very strongly he suddenly shaken off the fetter of Ye Feng’s Dragon Claw Hand, and hurriedly his whole body flashed and sprang towards another side, easily evading the three bullets fired by the Skeleton masked man.

Although Ye Feng had never thought that this old man would make him suffer a defeat, even though he had used the second level of Dragon Claw hand, but the disparity of Cultivation between these two sides was noticeably huge. When the old man used his force, then it really became very difficult for Ye feng to cope up with him.

Shua!

Ye Feng stature flashed and he waved his sword very forcefully towards the old man, however right at this time, that old man pulled a very hard thing out from his bosom and instantly blocked his attack. By looking at it closely, Ye feng noticed that surprisingly it was a black-coloured jar, just like a funerary casket. Although that jar suffered a very severe hit by Ye Feng’s Zhenqi condensed sword, but still, it was totally unscathed. Instead, it emitted an intense counter-shaking strength, which had almost thrown Ye Feng heavily on the ground.

“Could it be that it’s a magical instrument?”

Ye Feng's heart shivered at once.

This magical instrument already carries the divine spiritual aura, but it belongs to the lowest level of magic in the World of the Immortals. Although it is the most preliminary level of instrument, but whatever it is, it's still a kind of magical instrument, which if compared either with the strong fighters, or with the sharp weapons, still it is considered as completely reborn, with several other definite strange features!

“Boy, do you think that since you succeeded in killing Hai tang of ‘Happily married couple of swords’, so, you can deal with me, this old man very easily? Ga Gaga, too naive!”

The old man smiled hazily, and extended out his withered old hand, soon one after another, he shot that jet-black jar several times.

Buzz!

As a result, a dull sound rang everywhere, immediately followed by a burst of invisible energy drilled out from the jar, and gradually took a form of a human body in front of the old man, and in no time, it took a solid form.

A pale corpse again!

“Hai Tang?”

Ye Feng looked at the appearance of that corpse, and thought that didn't he

kill this crazy woman of Heavenly sword palace in the Changbai Mountains? This black jar, what was it after all?

“Mo Jiuge?”

The old man smiled gloomily: “You could rest assured that after you death, your soul will also be collected by this old man in this Black Jar of Souls. And when the time comes, I would make you a walking corpse like others, and then you would help this old man in running errands

The Black Jar of Souls?

Collecting soul of the people, if that being the case then obviously the soul of Zhao Yibei had also been captured in that jet-black jar?

If he could grab this Black Jar of Souls.....

Ye Feng slightly wrinkled his brows and quietly looked towards the nearby standing skeleton masked man.

Ye Feng’s Cultivation was not enough to deal with the old man, if he wanted to strike and kill this old man, the so-called necromancer, then at first he must join hands with the Skeleton masked man and should try to launch a joint attack on him. Although the man in the Skeleton mask had just a pistol right now, but still if it would be used smartly at crucial moments, then it could definitely also do wonders.

However, Ye feng must not forget this point, that although this necromancer dodged all three bullets very swiftly and effortlessly, but it didn’t mean that this

old man wasn't afraid of bullets. If he was shot in the head, then he would definitely die on the spot.

The Skeleton masked man knew the current situation quite well, therefore, he just gave a slight nod.

The two people must act together, it had become absolutely necessary now!

Chapter 112 -> Turned into a retard

The old man was a martial artist with 20 years of Cultivation, definitely, he was a challenging opponent for Ye Feng right now.

If Ye Feng had at least ten years of Cultivation, then he could have very easily defeated this old fellow, and had made him kiss the ground. But currently, the strength of his Zhenqi was insufficient to cope up with him, which had ultimately prevented him from acting recklessly before his opponent, the old necromancer.

“You two little babies, don’t exchange flirting glances with each other.”

When the old man saw Ye Feng and the masked man looking at each other, he gloomily grunted: “Cultivation disparity is quite huge, it’s not so easy to make up, therefore, must remember, next year, the same today, is going to be your death anniversary.”

His voice just fell, and instantly the corpses of Hai Tang as well as Zhai Yibei acted, they quickly advanced towards the skeleton masked mask. While on the other side, in order to get rid of Ye Feng quickly, the old man himself jumped into the battlefield and displayed his technique – Dead Soul Claw!

But this time, the old man was fully prepared, certainly, it hadn’t been so easy for him to decipher how to break himself free from the clutch of Dragon Claw Hand Technique of Ye Feng.

Ye Feng, on the other hand, was calmly analysing the whole situation and noticed that it had become a little unfavourable for him.

It wasn't like currently, the only threat to him was that old man with 20 years of Cultivation, but that skeleton masked man was also indirectly a huge threat to him. Ye Feng couldn't fully bestow his trust on him. Therefore, he needed to be very attentive all the time, and always keep his guard on, for his better protection from both the sides.

Hypnosis and Camouflage, these two techniques were his most preponderant Immortal techniques, which he could put to use with ease while facing a veteran martial artist of this world. If he launched these techniques at a crucial moment, then regardless of the fact that his opponent had 20 years of Cultivation, still his opponent wouldn't stand the slightest bit of chance against Ye Feng. These techniques would force that old man to prostrate himself on the ground in front of Ye Feng.

As for Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Ye Feng had already noticed that the agility of the opposite party was almost at the same level with his own, hence merely leaning against the strength of his speed to score a victory, wouldn't be apparently a good idea. In other words, his speed would only become a means

Ye Feng's heart had already made a firm resolve that by all means, he must constantly keep an eye on the Black Jar of Souls, which was in the hand of the old man. Immediately after setting his heart all prepared, he cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and the next moment, his remnant afterimages flashed all over the bamboo grove.

"Hmm, do you want to flee?"

The old man sneered and as a response, he also promptly cast out Dead Soul Claw technique. In a flash from the white layer of his withered hand, his inner qi burst out like a breeze, and instantly cut through the two blurred images of Ye

Feng, and started following his main body!

Merely relying on the speed of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was really not enough to cast off this old man from pursuing him, as Ye Feng's position was constantly being watched by him, quite attentively and unwaveringly.

But suddenly, under the mask, Ye Feng's facial expression suddenly changed, and the corners of his mouth curled upwards.

Naturally, he wasn't planning to run away like a scaredy-cat, instead, he quickly displayed Camouflage Technique, simultaneously, made a strategy that for the time being, he must continue running throughout the bamboo grove. By using Camouflage Technique, he might not probably succeed in concealing his breath from the opposite party, but if it would be used throughout the bamboo grove and for a longer period of time, then he might succeed in defeating this old man.

Bang!

Suddenly, a sound of a gunshot passed on from one side, again.

The masked man, while confronting the corpses of Zhao Yibei and Hai Tang, calmly and unhurriedly fired a shot, so as to stop the movement of the fast approaching figure of Hai Tang for a moment. Afterwards, he directly jumped into the artificial lake water, suddenly making a burst of water splashed out with huge force.

Although the two pale corpses chased him to the lake, but when they didn't find any trace of him, they suddenly felt somewhat helpless and distracted. As

they had been commanded by the old man to must take hold of the Skeleton masked man. But now, since the masked man had jumped into the water, leaving them totally aimless and helpless, so how could they follow the order and grab him now?

Since they had no option left, so they turned around and advanced towards the old man. Now they wanted to help the old man while dealing with Ye Feng. But at this moment, “Bang” again a sound of a gunshot echoed, actually that masked man peeped out from the water, and fired a shot directly into the head of Hai Tang’s corpse!

“Grrr grrr

All at once, both the corpses got attracted towards the artificial lake and they started pacing back and forth around it, by completing ignoring the existence of Ye Feng.

Ye Feng was already quite alert and had been paying attention to the situation around the artificial lake all along. He thought that the Skeleton masked man was really pretty intelligent, he knew how to pin down these two troublesome fellows. Meanwhile, Ye Feng had also found out that the Black Jar of Souls, which was in the hands of that old man, that was actually used for condensing souls out into the form of the walking corpse, besides that, the fighting efficiency of each corpse was directly proportional to its lifetime experience.

For example, currently, the congealed soul of Zhao Yibei was very weak, while on the other side, both the speed as well as the strength of Hai Tang were way bigger than Zhao Yibei.

In case the corpse of Hai Tang managed to besiege Ye Feng, most probably, it

would make him fluster. At present, the move of that Skeleton masked man had given a convenient chance to him to open the door.

In the hot pursuit of the old man, Ye Feng had already circled around the bamboo grove twice. However suddenly something hit his thought process, and soon a simple strategy, to deal with this perplexed situation, cropped up in his mind. Immediately his mind started processing everything, and the next moment, his Zhenqi sprang out from his body, making his strategy finally come into existence!

In the eyes of the old man, currently he was in this piece of a bamboo grove, but suddenly it turned into the clouds and mist, like a fairyland in general, making him feel a cold shiver in his heart.

What just happened?

Originally this was a big night, but, the sky over the bamboo grove had a strange brightly illuminating light, wasn't this also too weird?

Not good, was it done by that masked man, Mo Jiuge?

The old man immediately reacted, as he quickly noticed that the situation had become a little different now. Hence, by applying his full strength, he quickly launched his technique Dead Soul Claw. Immediately two withered arms appeared, as if they were enclosed in a layer of deathly-pale inner qi.

Forest of bones!

Dead Soul Claw Technique was a martial arts' technique, which was used to hit

the target and kill him terribly. The old man finally decided to enter this battle with his full might, since he had a feeling that something was wrong, and this boy, Mo Jiuge was not normal, he was a little strange. If the old man didn't come up with his full force today, then, sure enough, he would lose this fight awfully!

He stamped his feet heavily, one after another!

Soon, from the ground, his inner qi suddenly jumped out and quickly condensed to take the form of the Forest of bones. The scope of this technique was quite broad, to the extent where it captured the entire bamboo grove, with its non-discriminatory attacks.

"You are late."

Ye Feng chuckled, at the same time he climbed up a relatively more robust bamboo, and then he looked downwards, at this terrifying killing technique displayed by the old man.

In fact, the whole bamboo grove didn't change a bit, just because Ye Feng used his Zhenqi to flow in a particular direction, which had formed an imaginary picture of fairyland in the eyes of the old man. But when the old man used his technique, and instantly his inner qi released from his body, and took the form of the Forest of bones, exactly at the same time, Ye Feng disappeared from the ground and climbed up a bamboo. If he hadn't acted fast, he would have died by now.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng had already done his preparation beforehand, quickly he climbed up the bamboo and jumped upward.

The moment the Forest of bones appeared, it seemed like it just flashed for a second, and then instantly disappeared in the bamboo grove, under the moonlight without any trace.

Without thinking much, Ye Feng jumped down from the bamboo, and with a lightning speed, he arrived in front of the old man, waved his sword, and directly jabbed it into his chest!

.....

After getting done with the old man, naturally, Ye Feng and the Skeleton masked man didn't return to Xiao Qi's apartment, since for them, killing Cai Shaohong was the most important thing for them, at this moment.

However, there in Xiao Qi's residence, finally twenty minutes later, Lin Shiqing rushed over. As soon as her red Lamborghini arrived there and got parked outside in the neighbourhood, she quickly ran like the wind to the third floor, her pretty figure was appearing very fascinating.

"Xiao Qi, what's the matter, is everything fine, are you alright?"

Lin Shiqing pushed open the door, burning with anxiety and impatience, she shouted out loudly.

But soon she noticed that there was no trace of Xiao Qi anywhere in the room, only her younger brother, Lin Xiuwen was there, lying on the ground totally unconscious.

She quickly ran up to him, and swayed his shoulder in order to wake him up. As

expected, soon Lin Xiuwen woke up from his stupor by hearing her loud words.

“Xiuwen, speak out quickly, where is Xiao Qi?”

Anxiously, very impatiently, she hastily asked that. She had received a phone call from Xiao Qi few minutes before, asking her to immediately rushed over to her apartment. But now Xiao Qi had disappeared, then how could this thing make Lin Shiqing feel at ease?

But fairly soon, Lin Xiuwen’s reaction made her dumbfounded.

“Ah, ah, ah?”

Lin Xiuwen slowly sat up, and with an expressionless face he looked at Lin Shiqing, at the same time, saliva slid down his mouth, as if he had lost his mind. Moreover, he was looking extremely sluggish, with incomparably delayed facial expression.

“Xiuwen, what happened to, Xiuwen?”

Suddenly Lin Shiqing remained stunned.

Her brother, Lin Clan’s Sanshao, had turned into a retard?

Chapter 113 -> Frames him

Soon, Lin Shiqing informed this matter to her father, Lin Detian.

Currently, the head of Lin Clan was Lin Detian, and as for Lin Shiqing, she was the only daughter of him. While the other young masters like Lin Zhiqing, Lin Xiuwen, and so on were the children of other family lines of Lin Clan.

Although the resources of entire Lin Clan was mostly in charge of Lin Detian, however, his several other brothers couldn't be ignored as well. The only reason why Lin Clan had been considered as the number one family of Yanjing was because the Lin people of his generation, used to work collectively, and their joint efforts were totally inseparable.

“What, Xiuwen, him?”

When Lin Detian heard the news that Lin Xiuwen had somehow lost his senses, he couldn't just sit still and ignore this matter.

This was indeed a very important matter!

Who didn't know that Lin Xiuwen, who had somehow turned into a retard, was the most lovable and favourite grandson of Lin's Old man. Certainly the old man, Lin Hongchuan would go crazily when he would hear this news, and would absolutely raise a Tsunami throughout Yanjing city and turn the entire city upside down!

After having a talk with Lin Shiqing, Lin Detian hung up the phone, and decided

to immediately rush over to the residence of Xiao Qi and personally examine this matter more closely. Since this matter would have a tremendous effect on several things, therefore, he just couldn't let it publicise everywhere.

But at this moment, again Lin Shiqing made a phone call to him immediately.

“Dad, Cai Shaohong just now gave me a phone call.”

The crisp voice of Lin Shiqing passed through the phone.

“Huh? So what did he say?”

Lin Detian slightly wrinkled his brows.

“It was a masked man who came to Xiao Qi's residence.”

In a very dignified tone, she continued : “Not only Xiuwen was injured by that masked man, but Xiao Qi had also been abducted by him, there is no trace of her anywhere

Some time before, when Xiao Qi had called her, before she could tell her anything about the current situation, she was forcibly interrupted by someone to hung up the phone. So, Lin Shiqing didn't know any detail, like what exactly happened there.

“How does he know?”

Quite intelligently, Lin Detian pointed out this crucial point.

“Because, Xiao Qi had called him first, for the help.”

Although Lin Shiqing had also some doubts, but still didn’t want to think much.

Since Cai Shaohong normally used to act very perfectly, making the girls have the feeling of utmost safety around him. Moreover, because of Lin Shiqing’s relationship with Cai Shaohong, Xiao Qi used to follow him very closely, hence they had become familiar with each other. Therefore, her making a telephone call to him and asking him for the help, was by no means seemed inappropriate.

“A masked man

Lin Detian heard that, and pondered for a moment:. “I got it, you immediately take Xiuwen to the hospital, let’s see how the situation is.”

“I’m already on the way.”

She said: “Oh, by the way, one more thing Dad, Cai Shaohong said that the ultimate goal of this masked man is most likely him, so Dad you see

“Got it.”

For a while, Lin Detian thought about this matter and nodded his head.

Obviously, he knew who the masked man was. Wasn’t he that genius martial

artist who had a good friend of Ye Feng? Most likely, Ye Feng wanted to succeed in this love battle, as who didn't know what Cai Shaohong was for Lin Shiqing and what were her feelings for him?

"I won't let your beloved have an accident."

Lin Detian said that and then hung up the phone. Afterwards, he immediately started the arrangements by assigning people to go and stay around Cai Shaohong's villa. At the assigned place, they were supposed to just sit back and wait for the target to show up! It wasn't only to ensure the safety of Cai Shaohong, but the prime motto was also to capture the masked man.

After having a talk with her father, she thought something while being a bit confused.

Although Cai Shaohong was said to be her lover, but for her, every time she thought of him, she never felt any sweet and happy kind of feeling, instead her feelings for him was the same as her feelings for everyone, just numb and nothing else.

Was this the feeling of love?

No, definitely not.....

As the member of Lin Clan, each and every action of her should be taken very cautiously, even if it was love. She must place the family benefits at the highest priority than anything else.

Cai Shaohong, though he seemed to be perfect, but she didn't feel anything

special for him. Actually, she had no attraction towards him. Just for the sake of her family, she considered him as the most appropriate candidate for her.

She couldn't help but recall her first meeting with Ye Feng, which took place today in the morning.

Could it be that she could only either choose Cai Shaohong for her family interests, or Ye Feng in order to please her grandfather?

Did she have just these two options left?

She took a quick glance at her brother who was lying on the passenger seat, dead asleep and was still salivating, as if he had no control on his brain. She shook her head, since it was really very difficult for her to believe. The only thing she knew that if by any chance, the masked man was really Ye Feng's companion, who had taken away Xiao Qi, and was also responsible for this miserable condition of Lin Xiuwen, then she would never forgive him at any cost.

.....

While on the other side, at present Ye Feng naturally didn't have any idea that he had already been framed by Cai Shaohong, as he very smartly shifted the blame onto him completely.

In that bamboo grove, Ye Feng laid a spell all over the grove in order to confuse that old man, and then very smoothly he exterminated him and grabbed his Black Jar of souls. After the old man's death, he instantly killed Hai Tang and Zhao Yibei's pale corpse, making them turn into ashes and scatter on the ground.

When all these things came to an end, then the Skeleton masked man finally came ashore from the middle of the artificial lake.

After killing the old man, they threw his body in that artificial lake, and without wasting any further crucial second, they dashed towards Yanxi Villa District with an extremely fast speed. Whether it was the masked man or Ye Feng, both of them knew the location of Cai Shaohong's villa very well, and they had a feeling that most probably he would be in his villa at the moment.

They just wanted to rush over to his villa as fast as possible, and then erase his existence from this world!

However, the ultimate goal of Ye Feng was to get his hands on the divine spiritual influence, which was hidden in his basement. Regarding this, he certainly couldn't tell this to the skeleton masked man.

All the way, he continued examining and exploring the Black Jar of souls, however, he couldn't discover the mystery. It was just an ordinary looking black jar, which was filled with some bone's ashes.

"There must be the soul of Zhao Yibei inside this Black Jar of Souls, but most importantly, it can't be preserved for a long time. So, I just need to wait for my Cultivation to hit at least ten years, then I'll be able to use Gathering Soul Technique, to summon his soul from this jar....."

Ye Feng also thought that this jar would be definitely a very precious and unique tool of that zombie creator. Moreover, it seemed like the status of that old man was really very lofty, since the quality of this jar was indeed extraordinarily high.

However, he was not the slightest bit interested in using this thing, for the time being, he would just preserve it, and wait for the day when his Cultivation would reach 10 years or more. Then he would summon the soul of Zhao Yibei.

As for the souls of others, did that really matter to him?

With a lightning fast speed, together with the skeleton masked man, he advanced towards Cai Shaohong's villa which was situated in the Yanxi Villa District.

"It seems like something is fishy."

The man in the Skeleton masked said in a dignified tone : "You have killed the old man, this news would have been certainly known to Cai Shaohong, moreover, he must be also aware that after finishing things up here, we would immediately head towards Yanxi Villa District. So, we must be extremely careful, otherwise, our plan might fail very terribly."

"Could it be that he will be all prepared?"

Ye Feng slightly frowned: "You first tell me, what is that so-called Hidden Pavilion Master thing?"

"Those are just like us, the ordinary people, however after taking the new drugs for almost one year, the cell mutation has occurred in their bodies, and as a result, they transformed into this kind of senseless thing."

The skeleton masked male explained : “At this time, so long as they are injected with some gene medicine in their bodies for cell mutation, they would eventually turn into that shape, and simultaneously, their strength also increases greatly, and their bodies turn as hard as iron.”

Ye Feng listened to him and thought that under the layer of their skin, there was really a very strange layer of steel, was that the result of cell mutation?

It seemed that indeed Pei Keang Group’s technological and scientific level was impressively high. And if it would act unreasonably in this country China, then definitely it would bring a catastrophic situation all over this country. Not only that, but it could also result in immeasurable losses. Surprisingly, Lin Clan didn’t notice this plan all along.

“Finally arrived.”

The skeleton masked man said that gently, as they had finally arrived outside the Yanxi Villa District within half an hour. In order to completely conceal their actions, without leaving behind a single trace, these two people couldn’t afford to hire a taxi. Therefore, they came all the way by running on their feet, so as to procrastinate the point of time.

Quietly they entered, and hid behind the rockery, separated by an artificial river and then poured their visions at Cai Shaohong’s villa. They took a broad view of the area as far as they could see, and noticed that there was nothing threatening and suspicious around it, however, they didn’t dare to be negligent.

“There is an ambush around the villa.”

Ye Feng observed carefully and quickly said that. As he noticed that around the villa, there were shadows of many people hidden in the bushes, dressed in camouflage clothing, and holding a very dignified facial expression.

“Let’s split up.”

The man in the skeleton masked looked at the brightly illuminated lights in the villa, and made a prompt decision : “These are certainly the people of National Security Agency, who must be sent here by Lin Clan. I am going first to distract these people, meanwhile, you enter the villa, and try to quickly look for the opportunities to kill Cai Shaohong, once and for all!”

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and nodded.

Was it really Lin Clan who had sent these people of National Security Agency to protect Cai Shaohong? Indeed they were raising the tiger to bring disaster!

Chapter 114 -> Cai Shaohong's trump card

While standing in-situ, Ye Feng saw that the skeleton masked man jumped, and quietly ran towards another direction. Then a moment later, he raised his hand holding a gun, and fired his last bullet into the open sky.

Bang!

The sound of the gunshot wasn't very loud, but since it was such a quiet night, so it resounded in all the directions, simultaneously making the camouflage clothing soldiers, waiting in ambush around the villa, notice all of a sudden.

Ye Feng carefully observed that really these camouflage clothing soldiers were the members of the National Security Agency, and their mission objective was to protect the national security. Their psychological quality was naturally so high that not any average person could be compared of.

When the sound of the gunshot rang not very far away, still no movement or activity started around the villa. However, in Ye Feng's line of sight, he saw that several soldiers in camouflage uniforms quickly rushed towards the place from where the sound of the gunshot originated.

If Ye Feng and the masked man hadn't done a careful observation earlier, then it would have been impossible for them to discover these extraordinary camouflage clothing soldiers.

In that split second of the gunshot, Ye Feng, without any hesitation, quickly sprang up high, and jumped out the rockery. Immediately, he cast out Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace together with Camouflage technique simultaneously.

Not only his speed was incredibly fast, but with the help of his Camouflage Technique, his appearance had also become translucent, and had almost attained the stealth effect!

To use the true magic of making oneself invisible efficiently, at least ten years of Cultivation was considered the best. That way one could cover the ambient light of one's body completely, to the extent where no one could see him, not even any camera, surveillance camera, or any other electronic devices could detect him.

However, the current situation of Ye Feng was, he was only able to make him translucent, and there was a risk that he could easily be caught by any electronic device. Moreover, even a cautious observation with the naked eyes could be able to see him in this condition.

But, in this chaos, the mind of camouflage clothing soldiers was already pulled towards the source of the sound of gunfire right now. Hence, very smartly, Ye Feng seized the opportunity, and broke through the blockade line of opposite party at once, without getting discovered by anybody!

After setting his foot in the villa, he quickly assigned away Zhenqi from his body so as to display Camouflage Technique, and to conceal his stature, while maintaining this translucent form continuously.

The villa was brightly lit, but there was no trace of Cai Shaohong anywhere. Ye Feng directly stormed towards the basement entrance, and again felt a really strong divine and spiritual aura spreading outside.

Since there was no one around, so without any hesitation, Ye Feng ran along the staircase and arrived in front of the basement's door. Promptly an orangish-

red long Zhenqi sword flashed out in his hand, and in the next moment, he waved his sword twice and cut open a big hole directly in the wooden doors of the basement.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

Ye Feng didn't hesitate and cast it out once again, and then quickly rolled in the basement.

Shua!

Indeed, a gust of strong wind, roaring approached in front of Ye Feng's face, and had almost crushed his head into fleshy pulp. But Ye Feng was very cautious, instantly he sensed the danger approaching towards him, and he easily dodged the opposite party's attack. When his footsteps stopped, he raised his head and looked around the dusky basement.

"You really arrived."

A faint voice resounded.

Wearing a western-style suit, Cai Shahong appeared in front of Ye Feng. At that moment, he was standing almost in the basement terminus and there was a hint of sardonic expression all over his face, while he looked at Ye Feng, who just now had intruded into his basement.

At the side of Cai Shaohong, the kidnapped girl, Xiao Qi was also there, properly tied up, with her mouth tightly covered. There was a look of anger visible on her face as she was struggling to make herself free, while a pair of her

clever eyes were tightly staring at Cai Shaohong.

But apart from these two people, there were also several other figures present in the basement, dressed in a huge windproof heavy coat. By looking at them it became clear that they were really the same strange fellows whom Ye Feng had encountered before. This kind of strange thing whose gene had been transformed by injecting them new drugs. They were waiting for Ye Feng in ambush just at the door.

“So that’s how it is.”

Seeing Xiao Qi here in this situation, Ye Feng immediately understood the previous situation. It seemed like they had intentionally delayed some time on the road, this really gave a fair chance to Cai Shaohong to make some prior arrangements.

Moreover, it also appeared that when he, along with the other masked man, was busy fighting with the necromancer old man, during that period, very cleverly, Cai Shaohong happened to assign people to go to Xiao Qi’s residence, and bring her to him.

The soldiers of National Security Agency, who were assigned outside the villa, also acted as a very good explanation, certainly Cai Shaohong had falsely accused the masked man and would have proven him as a culprit before Lin Clan. In other words, at present, Ye Feng was not only just facing Cai Shaohong, but also the huge strength of the entire Lin Clan!

But, just for the sake of Cai Shaohong, didn’t Lin Clan muster a large force for his protection?

So far, Ye Feng didn't know this thing that Lin Xiuwen had lost his senses somehow, or else he wouldn't have been surprised. But he also didn't know that it was entirely normal, after all, wasn't that fellow was beaten up by Ye feng, which had made him lose his mind and turn into a retard

"You must suffer to death."

Without the slightest pause, Ye Feng quickly moved and ran towards Cai Shaohong!

Shua!

At the same time, the figure of those strange fellows also flashed. They not only just blocked the path of Ye Feng, but his strike as well, making his sword strike similar to striking at the wall. As a result, after that forceful strike, Ye Feng bounced a few steps back.

This strange and eccentric things' eruption speed was surprisingly way faster than Ye Feng!

"Do you think I, Cai Shaohong is a stupid person, because he is constantly sending cannon fodder to die?"

Cai Shaohong crossed his hands behind his back while standing calmly, suddenly his corners of the mouth curled upwards : "Previously, those guys were just to make you a bit careless. Now, here I have five guys, who are the elites, and have been created by the second generation drugs. If they are compared with the previous one, then it is like, one is equivalent to 10 of the previous one!"

These five elites were the trump cards of Cai Shaohong!

Therefore, he neither escaped nor was afraid of Ye Feng, he just waited for the right time when Ye Feng would himself walk into his trap. As for asking the help with Lin Clan, it was just guarding against any contingency, Cai Shaohong couldn't fight this battle, since he couldn't hold any weapon.

In case Ye Feng really turned out extremely powerful, then at the right time, he could at least notify the people of National Security Agency to come and protect him.

Cai Shaohong glanced around and shot his vision at nearby standing Xiao Qi.

The moment he had caught her, since then he had no intention to put her back alive. Just prior to disposing her of, he thought that such beauty shouldn't be wasted like this. These five elites were very fierce type, and he believed that this beauty could become a good toy for them, and would let them enjoy very much

Cai Shaohong was very much interested to know that how long this beauty could last under the devastation of these five second-generation elite fighters?

Ye Feng held his sword firmly, as he noticed that these five so-called second generation elites had already encircled him firmly.

These five eccentric elites, they were over two meters tall, and were looking very dominant and powerful. Whether it was their speed, strength or reaction timing, all were several times higher than those previously met strange fellows.

Let alone to cut down their neck, five sword strike was needed, he was afraid that even fifty swords hit would also be completely unable to finish them up!

“My strongest attack technique is Ancient Dragon Sword qi, and I believe that one sword would be enough to break through these strange fellows.”

Ye Feng’s mind was running at its ultimate speed : “But, Ancient Dragon Sword qi really consumes too much Zhenqi, and its a fact that I only have one chance to use that technique!”

He raised his head and looked at Cai Shaohong, who was standing ten meters away from him.

Cai Shaohong also leisurely, quite confidently, was looking at him, his elegant looking face was suddenly filled with a ridiculing expression : “I’d really like to see that what kind of a face is there beneath this mask. You have killed my several subordinates, today I’ll put an end to this story.”

“All right, I surrender.”

Ye Feng said that and then instantly congealed his Zhenqi condensed sword, and raised his hands.

His action made Cai Shaohong gawked slightly.

What, surrender?

These five elites, who were just about to begin, their stature also stopped at

once.

However, at this moment, Ye Feng quickly grasped his sword with his one hand, and in an instant, a long sword condensed out, immediately followed by an icy-blue ray of light, which emerged from the surface of this sword. Soon, this icy-blue ray of light turned into an ice blue Sword qi, and it rushed towards one of these five elites, and in a split second, it penetrated through his head, making him disappear in just one fell swoop.

But, this Sword qi's castration didn't reduce here, it quickly advanced towards ten meters away standing Cai Shaohong, with an intention to also get rid of him, then and there!

It was rightly said, all is fair in war. Even if Ye Feng was a very formidable Immortal, still he resorted to extreme measures in a battle with this devil's big shot. Ye Feng said nothing just feigned his surrender, and distracted the attention of the opposite party, even if it was just for an instant, it was still enough for him to use various means!

Chapter 115 -> A rare heavenly stone bead

The might of this icy-blue Dragon Sword qi was extraordinary.

It was said that originally the penetrating might of the red Zhenqi sword was almost equal to the ordinary bullet, and the destructive power of the orangish-red Zhenqi sword's was double of the previous one. However, if the might of the icy-blue Dragon Sword qi was compared with these two, then it could be said that its power was ten times higher than those two!

One must know, using this technique meant condensing out whole body's Zhenqi, by channelizing it into one move.

Considering the present level of Ye Feng's Cultivation, it could be believed that after displaying Sword qi, his entire body's Zhenqi would have been dried up by now, and it would have become very difficult for him to cast any other Immortal Technique at this moment. Furthermore, even maintaining his Zhenqi Sword of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, or displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace would be like close to impossible for him at this moment.

His swift and fierce sword penetrated the head of one of those five elites in just one fell swoop, and blew it off into a dozen of pieces. Then his qi, while cutting through the vast sky, instantly appeared in front of Cai Shaohong!

Suddenly facing the Sword qi, which had approached towards him in an instant, Cai Shaohong's pupil immediately contracted.

He had never thought that Ye Feng would be actually able to release his inner qi out of his body like this, which would take the form a strange technique,

Sword qi!

Cai Shaohong was just an ordinary human being, obviously, he was too late to make any response. However, in this split second, right before his death, a series of complex expression flashed on his face.

He recalled the time when he used to live in the U.S., his father was the chairman of Pei Keang Group. Wherever he used to go, he was always respected by the surrounding people. Furthermore, he had been considered as a great human being in the eyes of several ordinary people, for instance – some big shots of the certain military work group, always used to invite him to have dinner together with them, and he was in a very good relationship with all of them.

When he arrived in this country China, by virtue of his excellent education background and his inherent charm and affinity, again he equally, very quickly, obtained a great number of achievements, and also succeeded in attracting the focus of a large number of people towards him.

Once he shared his secret ulterior motive with his father. By harbouring countless lofty ambitions, he came to this country China, and by staying on the safe, he kept fighting steadily for whole one year. Soon, his harvesting time had eventually arrived.

But right at this time, he was in the middle of killing Ye Feng, the masked man!

However, Ye Feng surprisingly had a relationship with Lin Clan, and the rumour of his engagement with Lin Shiqing, both of this news terribly affected and delayed his plan to some extent. But when the masked man killed Song Hu, Dubang Long, and his several meticulously nurtured Hidden Pavilion master, on whom he had invested almost one one year, and had made them his first

generation fighters, then he was ticked off, and this made him speed up his strategy, and spend a lot of energy to process things hurriedly.

Because of this kind of thing, he was forced to clear somebody else mess, because as the matter stood, he was engaged in something which was more shameful than the masked man

Cai Shaohong knew that in China, there were many state-owned outstandingly people who used to practice martial arts, even he had some people of that kind at his side. But he really never expected that a trivial young man wearing a mask, could go so far like assigning away his inner qi from his body.

Puff!

Sword qi pierced through his heart.

And suddenly fresh blood gushed out of his heart, and with a “thump” sound, he tumbled onto the ground.

“Ahh!”

While on the other side, the moment Xiao Qi’s eyes fell on the fresh blood splatter, she couldn’t help but screech, then after her head tumbled at a crooked angle, and she passed out, directly.

Seeing the flowing blood, this girl actually felt sick and fainted.

Ye Feng had no time to pay attention to her, since he was also engaged in

keeping his eyes on the other side, where the remaining four strange elites were, but soon he found that these four strange fellows had no movement at all, as if they had lost the control, and had become completely motionless.

What might have happened?

Ye Feng walked towards Cai Shaohong who was lying on the ground, and found that there was a remote control in the place when his chest was. But, because of the attack of his Sword qi, that remote just happened to be crushed together with Cai Shaohong. It must be the tool which was used to control these strange things.

However, Ye Feng was totally disinclined to take notice of this high technological tool of Pei Keang Group, in addition, he was also incapable of deciphering it on his own.

Exactly at this moment, Ye Feng suddenly felt a little movement in the Black Jar of Souls which he had placed in his bosom. Therefore, promptly he took it out, and saw a burst of blue smoke drifted out from the body of Cai Shaohong, and was absorbed by this Black Jar all of a sudden.

“Can this stuff also suck in the soul automatically?”

Ye Feng thought that and was somewhat flabbergasted. However, he wouldn't use this Black Jar of Souls to summon a corpse and make it fight. Apparently bringing this thing was almost useless for him.

When the Black Jar of Souls absorbed the soul of Cai Shaohong, afterwards it didn't show any reaction at all.

“Although Cai Shaohong’s soul doesn’t hold too much importance and usable value to me, but still I am waiting for my Cultivation to hit ten years, then I’ll summon him, and will interrogate him to drag out something important

Ye Feng thought that and then put away the Black Jar of Souls.

Then he glanced at Xiao Qi, whose both hands were dangled and her mouth was also covered. He quickly waved his sword, and cut off the rope by which her hands were tied, simultaneously making her petite stature gradually, very softly fall down.

“I rescued this girl twice, but the fact is, it was purely coincidental.”

Ye Feng thought this and left her there as it is.

At present, he was worried about only one thing and that was the divine spiritual energy which was leaking out from the another secret room in the basement, which probably let him promote his Cultivation up to five years!

He still had little Zhenqi left in his body, so by slightly pushing it out into a form of Zhenqi condensed sword, he quickly walked to the wall, and without thinking much, directly sliced the wall, making a passageway that could make a human enter inside it.

Suddenly, he felt a strong presence of richer divine and spiritual influence quite close to him!

“What is this thing after all?”

Ye Feng was really taken aback by this strong presence, hence, without further delay, he quickly entered the secret room.

The entrance of this secret room was originally a hidden password space, but since Ye Feng could feel a strong presence of the divine spiritual aura. So, no matter how it was concealed, it couldn't escape his sensation ever. Perhaps a martial artist might not sense it, but for an Immortal Cultivator, the divine spiritual influence was like fireflies in the dark night, which they couldn't ignore.

This private room was probably around one hundred square feet, the surrounding walls of this room were painted with white colour, and the room was quite spacious. There were several fine iron password-locked boxes kept in the corners of this room, and there was no clue that, what would have been there inside these locked boxes.

But suddenly Ye Feng's heart felt something and he remained startled. Actually he could feel the presence of spiritual energy emanating from one of these password-locked boxes!

He ran few steps towards a box, suddenly brandished his sword and sliced open the lid of a password-protected fine iron box, while maintaining utmost vigilance.

After cutting open the lid of that iron box, no sudden accident took place, which made him feel a little relieved.

He moved close to it and took a look inside, all of a sudden something pulled

his attention. That was a fist-sized irregular stone, and there were anomalous patterns on its surface. Moreover, its entire body was presenting a translucent green, and was exuding inexhaustible spiritual energy.

A rare heavenly stone bead!

His mood was immediately piqued!

In the World of the Immortals, there were not much heavenly material treasures present, which could be used to enhance one's Cultivation. And the several treasures, which were easily found there, were effective only during its first use. This heavenly stone bead was the apex kind of treasure among them!

There was a case in the World of the Immortals, Nanling's Mo Clan could never obtain even a single heavenly treasure ever. If this kind of rare heavenly stone bead would appear there, and this news would spread out, then definitely it would raise a tsunami of a large group of hundreds of years of Cultivation possessing old monster, who would try to make a move and snatch it away.

The key reason was because this kind of rare heavenly stone bead could let a cultivation practitioner enhance one's cultivation by five years, at one fell swoop.

Five years, even is an Immortal Cultivator possesses just five years of an intermediate level of Cultivation, but still, it isn't a small figure. The lifespan of a human being is limited, if it could raise a person's cultivation instantly up to five years, couldn't it make people jealous?

"Now, it seems like I really can achieve ten years of Cultivation in a single blow!"

From the bottom of his heart, Ye Feng felt a pleasant surprise, it seemed like his luck was very favourable nowadays.

Although he didn't have any idea how Cai Shaohong obtained this kind of precious thing, but a rare heavenly stone bead appeared in front of Ye Feng was an indisputable fact.

If he was really interested to know the background, then the only thing he could do right now was absorbing the spiritual energy from this stone bead. Afterwards, he could easily cast out Gathering Soul Technique, and would drag the soul of Cai Shaohong out from the Black Jar of Souls, and then he would inquire as much as he wanted in detail.

He repressed his overflowing excitement in his heart for the time being, as he knew that this was not the right time to relax.

But exactly at this moment, he heard a series of dishevelled footsteps' sound from behind.

“Xiao Qi!”

A crisp and intense sound of Lin Shiqing passed from outside, followed by a sound of tidy and emollient steps of a group of people, and soon they blocked the entrance of that private room, making Ye Feng trapped inside.

Ping!

A clear sound of an ear-piercing gunshot rang.

Since the entire Zhenqi of Ye Feng's body had already depleted completely, therefore he failed to dodge the bullet, and suddenly felt a severe pain in his right thigh. Immediately fresh blood splashed out, since he was hit by a shot, which had unexpectedly made a big hole in his right thigh. At the same time, this shot had also affected the meridian of his right leg, somehow his meridians had started to receive a strange force, which was making his meridians erode gradually.

What a gun, could it be actually this much powerful?

Ye Feng knelt down on his one knee, and immediately turned around!

Chapter 116 -> Ten years Cultivation

Ye Feng knelt down on the floor by leaning against his one knee and looked around coldly.

He coldly looked at the narrow and small doorway in that secret room, which he had created just a few minutes back. At that entrance two heavily armed soldiers, wearing camouflage uniforms, each carrying a strange shape of firearms, wearing hard helmets and electronic eye-shades, were standing cautiously. Moreover, there was a pattern of five-star on their camouflage clothes, right on their chest, which was representing their loyalty towards the country.

Just a second ago, that bullet, which pierced through his right leg, was shot by one of them.

But right behind those two soldiers, a middle-aged man, with a shallow black beard and holding a very dignified look, was standing and looking at Ye Feng constantly. Even though Ye Feng was that kind of a person who was 100 % ignorant towards politics, but still he could easily recognize who this man was!

On the television, he was often seen at various national conferences, even more, the news broadcasts used to also frequently show his form. He was the father of Lin Shiqing, the most important member of Lin Clan, and one of the most powerful person in the entire country China, who was called by the name Lin Detian!

But actually, he showed up here out of the blue, was it because he wanted to personally deal with the masked man?

Ye Feng felt a little funny seeing him there, soon the crisp voice of Lin Shiqing spread in that secret room, and it seemed like since she was unable to awake Xiao Qi, so she was taking her out, so as to send her to the hospital.

Right after seeing Cai Shaohong's blood, Xiao Qi fainted, so why was she taking this long to wake up from her dizziness?

Ye Feng suddenly felt that his luck was really so unfavourable, because if this girl, Xiao Qi would have woken up now, then she would have explained everything very clearly, and his case would have been easily solved

Of course, what happened if his luck was not standing by his side at the moment, there was still a heavenly stone bead in his hand, so as long he strived for few minutes, he could still find out many ways to break through this tight encirclement.

“You have been surrounded, surrender now.”

Lin Detian said that lightly to raise his hands and surrender, it seemed that his decision was completely based on one thing, as long as Ye Feng would revolt, he would directly order to fire a shot again.

At present, Ye Feng was enduring a severe pain in his right leg, actually, that gunshot had not only blown his entire right leg, but had also made half a fist-sized hole in it, from where his blood was constantly splattering. But still it was nothing, what more frightening was because of that bullet, the meridians of his entire right leg had started corroding bit by bit, and was gradually losing his strength.

“National Security Agency, indeed they have some specialized weapons to deal with the people of martial arts world, no wonder there was quite a few martial artists who would dare to act recklessly

Ye Feng tightly clenched his teeth, raised his masked face, and swept his glance at Lin Detian as well as those two soldiers, who were standing at the door.

Shua!

His stature flashed, and instantly by using his one leg, he sprang up and directly charged into the narrow entrance of the secret room, by holding an almost gradually dissipating Zhenqi sword in his hand, he finally entered the room, simultaneously waved his sword.

“Fire!”

Seeing the sudden action of Ye Feng, Lin Detian’s eyelids suddenly tightened and without any hesitation, he ordered at once.

Ping! Ping!

The sound of the gunshots was crisp and ear-piercing, but it was closely followed by a comparative louder bellow. Actually after several sword strikes made by Ye Feng, the entrance door of the secret room had finally collapsed, and as a result, several huge stones rolled down and firmly blocked the narrow entrance of the secret room!

As a consequent, it led to even wider scope collapse. Since the secret room was in the basement of that villa, so when its door completely collapsed, it caused an empty place below the villa, which later lead to a huge destruction.

The quality of the villas of Yanxi Villa District wasn't indeed worth mentioning.

But tonight, half side of the villa actually caved in, leaving behind an intense deafening sound!

However in this chaos, very intelligently Ye Feng switched off the lights of that secret room, leaving only a culminated stone bead in his hand, which was emitting a green ray of light, and was simultaneously adding a mysterious aura to the entire room.

But at the entrance of that secret room, two soldiers of NSA along with Lin Detian were blocked outside. What would have been going on outside currently, Ye Feng neither knew that, nor he had time to pay attention towards it.

At this point of time, for him, the matter of vital importance was, he must absorb this spiritual energy of this rare stone bead, as fast as possible!

When the entire room was still under the effect of fierce shaking, at that time, on the other side, Ye Feng, while enduring a terrible pain on his right leg, and holding that heavenly stone bead, started revolving his Dantian, simultaneously making his Dantian to start absorbing the spiritual energy of that stone bead.

The value of this precious stone bead was more than hundred times higher than any other Lingshi. In other words, if someone would want to sell this piece of stone in the martial arts world, then naturally he would at least charge 100

million for this, which was extremely high. Of course, even if it would pay Ye Feng 100 million, still it was impossible for him to sell this rare and precious stone bead.

However, the true wealth is not in the money, since money could never enhance his Cultivation. The most important thing was the supreme power, which was not only considered as an extremely precious thing in the World of the Immortals, but was also considered important in the modern city. And above all, Ye Feng also used to believe this point.

When life and death were totally controlled by powerful people, then at that time, was there any use of having a huge amount of money?

Of course, the real strength didn't only lie in having the highest level of Cultivation, but it also based on something else, such as holding a great influence and so on in this modern city. Then after one could display one's personal connection, family background, and other ability to show his dominance.

Ye Feng clenched the rare stone bead tightly, and pacified the revolution of his Dantian at its utmost speed, at the same time, a wisp of spiritual energy flew out of that bead, like a boundless sea wave, and made its way directly into his Dantian. Immediately his Dantian transformed that energy into Zhenqi.

Fortunately, while searching Su Feiying in the Changbai Mountain, Ye Feng had almost used half of the time in broadening his meridians, to the extent where we could easily accommodate a decade of cultivation now. After absorbing all the spiritual energy of this stone bead, even if he got a lot of other Lingshi currently, he wouldn't be able to immediately lift his Cultivation.

Gradually, he broadened his meridians, so as to forcefully made them capable

of holding and absorbing a huge amount of spiritual energy, which would simultaneously help him in enhancing his Cultivation.

Six years!

Seven years!

Eight years!

Each time he took several minutes, to increase his Cultivation by one year. However, in this last ten minutes of time, the NSA troops, who were standing outside the room, had already thought of a way, and brought some explosives.

Soon, a huge sound of the explosion echoed everywhere, and blew off the entrance of that secret room entirely!

Because of this huge blast and its jolting effect, Ye Feng, who was on the ground, in a squat form, was lifted up and thrown him towards the wall, and he bumped heavily against the walls. As a result of this blast, several password-protected iron boxes were buried inside by a huge pile of crushed stones and building materials, leaving behind a mystery that what was locked inside them.

However, Ye Feng didn't get distracted by this, because due to the absorption of the spiritual energy, his senses had become very sharp, to the extent where he had now easily sensed that in these 56 boxes, there was only one box which had something useful, and that was this precious stone bead, while the rest of them didn't worth to risk his life as well as time.

Nine years!

Right at this time, one after another, dressed in camouflage clothing uniform, National Security Agency's soldiers, holding the precision firearms, dashed into that dark and dust-laden secret room. They had several big flashlights on at this moment, in this dim-lighted room.

Fortunately, by this time, because of so much absorption, the green light of that stone bead had gradually become dim. In addition, this secret room was already filled with dust and debris, hence surprisingly, Ye Feng wasn't discovered by the opposite party.

At this point of time, Ye Feng was hidden against a megalith, and his Dantian was crazily revolving and sucking the divine energy continuously, quite speedily.

The meridians of his whole body had also started swelling up and suffusing Zhenqi, continuously giving him a feeling of rising strength throughout his body. Not only that, originally, he had exhausted his Zhenqi completely, which was also fully restored, and the wound on his right leg, also stopped bleeding.

"You have already been surrounded, come out at once and surrender! No matter how much years of Cultivation you have, possibly you can never be a match for NSA's elite men!"

A rough voice suddenly reverberated throughout the room, apparently, it was not Lin Detian, it seemed like this was the voice of a team leader of the National Security Agency. For them, at present, this room was extremely dangerous. Hence, naturally, it was impossible for Lin Detian to risk the lives of several innocent people.

Merely a single sword could trigger the collapse of the entire villa, this kind of

super power was rarely seen in the entire martial arts world!

“Is it?”

Finally, at this time, Ye Feng’s corners of the mouth gradually moved upwards, as he smiled secretly.

Ten years Cultivation!

The level of Cultivation he had before his rebirth on the Earth, he finally attained that again. As a result, he felt like his whole body had become very handy and flexible, as if he was a fish in the water. At this moment, he felt that again he was in the World of the Immortals, and again he was following Su Feiying, while facing enemies, one after another

He shook his head, as he knew that this was not the proper time to think about this thing.

He had finally attained ten years Cultivation, now he could cast several other Immortal Techniques quite easily, like Red Inflammation, Invisibility, Gathering Soul Technique, Holy Cure Technique, and so on. Moreover, he could also display Soul Search Technique, by which he could sense any kind of sound or activity which would take place in his surroundings.

Presently, Ye Feng didn’t have much time to cast out Soul Search Technique, however, he was able to display Invisibility!

Quietly, the stone bead finally lost its lustre completely, so Ye Feng dropped it on the ground, and in this dark room, his stature gradually disappeared

Chapter 117 -> A quiet departure

The bright light of flashlights gradually illuminated the entire underground secret room of the villa, there was dust all over the place, and the place was completely piled up with several crushed stones.

Although, ten soldiers of NSA searched everywhere over and over, but didn't find anyone, not even a shadow.

"Didn't you make sure that nobody could escape from here during this period?"

The facial expression of Lin Detian wasn't appearing quite good, he wanted to hear the activity report of the basement's entrance, hence he inquired that directly from the Captain.

(Lastvoice : I'll use Captain in place of team leader from now onwards.)

"No, when we exploded open the entrance of this room, at that time, our three men were standing just outside the entrance, blocking the way, so it is impossible for anyone to escape."

The Captain said that in a sinking voice, it seemed like he was a 35-36-year-old man, from head to toe, he was emitting the aura of being a very vigorous person with resolute temperament. And because of his this trait, he was popular with this name 'Thunder'. He was the primary assistant of Lin Detian and had handled countless, excessively intractable and tricky affairs.

But today this matter had really completely puzzled his mind, a masked man, trapped in a perfectly favourable condition, how could he still so disappear?

Thunder was somewhat a dark skinned man, after reporting to Lin Detian, he again proceeded with his thorough and cautious inspection of the outside area of the semi-collapsed basement.

Very quickly, he searched through the corpse of Cai Shaohong which was still lying on the ground, and found a wrecked sophisticated remote control, which had a very complexed structure. However, various kinds of its sophisticated components had already been slivered and smashed by some kind of sharp weapon.

“These five strange people, could it be that these fellows have also been brought by that masked man?”

Thunder, while looking towards those five strange fellows, who had already been properly placed against the wall, tightly wrinkled his brows and thought for a while. By looking at the broken fragments of that sophisticated remote control, he gradually began to feel that things were not as simple as he thought it should be. Then he pondered for a while, and suddenly felt that the objective of this action was likely to be miscalculated by them.

While being completely indulged in his thought process, he shifted his gaze towards Lin Detian, who was still standing at the basement’s entrance at the moment, and thought that if at present, he would talk about this to his Chief, then most probably, the other party would turn a deaf ear.

“Report the Captain, still, we couldn’t find anyone!”

Soon, a team member quickly ran out of the secret room, and with overflowing enthusiasm, reported : “But we have found several fine iron password-locked boxes, and with our full strength we have dug them out from a heap of rocks and stones.”

“Got it.”

Thunder waved his hand, signalling the other party to continue, then he walked towards Lin Detian, and by lowering his voice, said: “Chief, we must ask Miss Xiao Qi about this matter, because what exactly had happened here, only she is the one who knows everything clearly

“That girl, every time she sees blood, she becomes unconscious for several hours.”

There was still a very ugly looking expression stuck on Lin Detian’s face.

Right now, he was thinking about Lin Xiuwen, who was in the hospital now, and it had already been ascertained that because of some unknown causes, his intelligence had terribly deteriorated. In fact, his IQ dropped to the level of two-year-old baby, furthermore, the likelihood of his recovery was very low.

And as for Cai Shaohong, who was not only the most respected and famous boy of Yanjing University, but was also the beloved son of Pei Keang Group’s Chairman. However, at this crucial time, his body had already turned icy-cold and he was lying all dead on the floor of this room.

And most importantly, all these were the deeds of that masked man. In this circumstances, he could never let off that masked man.

“Some people come over here, and follow me.”

Since he had previously investigated, so he knew that Ye Feng and that masked man were somehow related. But the point was, he neither dug in further nor paid attention to this matter, because this thing wasn't obstructing him in any way. But now, the masked man had actually started targeting Lin people, could he really endure this thing anymore now?

There was still a few hours left till Xiao Qi regain her senses, and he was an impatient kind of person, it was impossible for him to wait by then.

At this moment, he just wanted to quickly rush to Qingfeng park to look for Ye Feng, and then he would directly interrogate and torture him, to draw out something crucial, like who this masked man was and other related information.

“You guys, follow the Chief.”

Thunder waved his hands towards few soldiers, and immediately six soldiers moved forwards and marched to go along with Lin Detian.

Afterwards, Thunder himself, with the rest of his men, started processing on the scene: “These password-locked boxes, take them out, collect all the broken pieces of this sophisticated remote control, there are also some other strange fellows and they are also the same kind. Inform the forensic team for autopsy, Cai Shaohong's status is appearing somewhat dubious

Regarding the death of Cai Shaohong, if this case wasn't handled properly, then it might lead to an international dispute!

This made Thunder be utmost careful while dealing with his case.

Thunder and his remaining eight soldiers, they all were considered as the veterans in handling this kind of affair. Instantly, all of them started processing things in the basement, as directed by their Captain.

And Ye Feng, who was still hiding in this secret room all along, until now, finally he left this place quietly.

Just a few minutes ago, when the three soldiers of NSA firmly blocked this room and exploded its entrance, even though Ye Feng was in invisible form, but still he didn't disturb anyone to escape from here. But now, since the opposite party was occupied in their own investigation, so he finally found the opportunity to escape.

Ye Feng could such quickly reach ten years Cultivation, it was indeed a coincidence. But if he hadn't broadened his meridians, by his extreme measures and severe effort, then, even though he had this precious stone bead, but still he couldn't use it, all he could do was staring at the stone bead miserably.

It was all about his luck accompanied by his commendable effort. But the crucial point was, from now onwards, it wouldn't have been so easy for him to upgrade his Cultivation.

At present, for Ye Feng, the top priority was to find an appropriate place to hide, and then as soon as possible, he must bring into action his Soul Search Technique. With the help of this technique, he could easily sense anything within a radius of 360 degrees, kind of a full range radar, and when in this hundred meters scope, even the slightest sign of trouble would crop up, it couldn't

escape his sensation.

Even if someone would make himself invisible using this technique Invisibility, just like him, but still Ye Feng could easily sense his presence, by relying on this technique, Soul Search!

As a consequence, regardless of any kind of situation, its safety coefficient would become extremely high. For instance, like the previous time, when Zhao Yibei was shot dead by the sniper, such kind of incident could never happen again. Suddenly, the thought of this bright and lively boy, turned Ye Feng a bit worried, since he didn't know that his technique of summoning the soul of the deceased, could really work here or not, he could succeed in summoning his soul out from the Black Jar of Souls or not.

However, even if he turned out successful in summoning him, he was still incapable of making his resurrection exactly the same, as he was before.

If this place was the World of the Immortals, then it would have been absolutely suitable to use this Immortal Technique

In the darkness of the night, Ye Feng carefully looked around, but he didn't find that other masked man. Also, he didn't know that what the identity of that man was, he lurked around Cai Shaohong for whole one year, but didn't reveal his cloven hoof. So for now, Ye Feng should bear it patiently. But if in future, he would be able to use that masked man again, then he wouldn't hesitate, since he knew how talented that man was.

Ye Feng shook his head, and decided not to think much, if they were predestined friends, then, eventually they could see each other again someday.

He immediately cast out Invisibility, and quietly left the Yanxi Villa District, until he went several kilometres away from this area. Then after, he deactivated Invisibility, suddenly making his personal stature become visible again.

Taking his present level of Cultivation, he had been able to maintain Invisibility perfectly, but couldn't surpass even half an hour. Although he was loaded with the abundant amount of Zhenqi, after it was fully restored in his body, but he must save his Zhenqi, so as to use it at the essential time, moreover, his recovery was also too slow.

The blood hole on his right leg, was clearly visible under this moonlight. After a while, he had to display Heavenly Cure Technique, simultaneously had to calculate how much could be restored. Also when he was in Changbai Mountains, he had received several scars which were left by Heavenly Sword Palace's Li Hua, this time, he could also erase them all.

Ten years Cultivation, it was really too big to bring about a variety of changes in the texture of his Cultivation!

.....

But at this moment, on the other side, in that semi-collapsed villa, along with his eight soldiers, Thunder was still intensely engaged in searching through the entire place. His field of action was not only limited to the basement area, but had actually expanded to the whole villa, in order to gather any kind of related evidence. Soon, all of his men dispersed all over to search more attentively.

“Who is it?”

On the second floor of the villa, a camouflage clothing soldier suddenly was alarmed. He could see 360-degree view of his surrounding, through his sophisticated electronic eye shades, and at that moment, he saw a dark shadow suddenly flashed.

He acted decisively, by holding a gun he turned around, the blue light was shining on the precision barrel of his gun, by aiming it, he suddenly jumped in the room, all prepared to shoot the target on the spot, but he was too late.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Suddenly, a flying knife came towards him and hit him in his throat. It was thrown by that dark shadow very exquisitely. Once again, that shadow, threw few more knives, one after another very forcefully, directly aiming at his throat!

Chapter 118 -> Masked man's shadow

When a blood-curdling screech passed on from the second floor of the villa, it literally shocked everyone in this dark night. As a result, the Captain, Thunder, who was in the basement at this moment, promptly responded and rushed towards the second floor.

“Be prepared for action!”

He shouted out fiercely, and immediately examined his fighting equipment, at the same time, several other men also rushed upstairs, following him.

This villa of Yanxi Villa District was quite luxurious, which had several large rooms on the second floor. Everyone immediately rushed towards that luxurious room from where that pitiful yelling voice was transmitted. They saw one of their team members was lying on the ground, and the fresh blood was streaming out.

Seeing this scene, suddenly Thunder's heart was taken aback and he quickly ran up to him. While the other men, who were also in a state of shock, carrying their sophisticated weapons, started searching the entire room thoroughly, simultaneously they were extremely alert, since they had a feeling that again a surprise attack might happen at any time.

All the members of the country's National Security Agency used to be a veteran warrior. In addition, they were fully sophisticated armed soldiers, and each of them could easily deal with ten strong men at the same time. Since because of their status, they had always been given several difficult missions, and during these missions, they often used to get injured, but they have never seen deaths.

But actually one of his team members had died here!

By taking big strides, Thunder hurriedly arrived in front of the deceased, examined him a little bit, and immediately drew a conclusion : The throat of his team member was lacerated by some kind of sharp weapon, and as a consequence, he died!

On body equipment of the NSA members' were also used to be chosen perfectly. All team members used to carry a small-sized real-time video recorder with them always.

Without a bit of hesitation, Thunder quickly opened the collar of his deceased team member. But to his surprise, he saw that the small video recorder, which was supposed to be there on the collar, was actually badly crushed into pieces now.

Fresh blood was constantly dripping out from his throat. Although he could see blood, but there was no trace of the weapon which was used in this murder. However, he could certainly see that a sharp weapon was used to cut his throat.

A sword? A dagger? Or a hidden weapon?

Although Thunder was looking very calm and composed by his face, but his brain was constantly making conjectures, like could the culprit kill his team member instantly, could he affirm that the opposite party was definitely someone from the martial arts world.

From the technique he used to kill his man, it could be said that his Cultivation

would be quite high. Moreover, it was also apparent that he was very much familiar with the equipment used by the members of the National Security Agency. At least he knew about the small video camera, therefore he crushed it, so as to erase all evidence.

But currently the issue was, did he arrive here just to kill his team member, who could be the opposite party? What was he up to?

“It’s not good, quickly run downstairs!”

Immediately the facial expression of Thunder changed, and he stood up hastily. The dead had already died, he couldn’t stick to him for so long, because he still had a lot of relevant proofs and information of this case lying in the basement, which he had to protect at any cost.

When a group of people rushed downstairs and arrived at the basement’s door, from quite a very far distance, they felt a heat wave, which was blowing and hitting directly on their faces.

The fire was soaring in the basement, shockingly it was set on fire!

Seeing that, Thunder lost his control and started burning with fury. He shouted loudly, commanding his two soldiers to promptly open their fire-fighting equipment with the maximum speed, which they used to always carry with themselves, and then immediately burst into the basement to extinguish this fire.

Apart from all these things, one must know that one of his team members was still in the basement, who was assigned there to take care of the things!

“Oh, that’s right, our vehicle is outside!”

Suddenly Thunder remembered something, and he couldn’t control himself and turned too overwrought. They had just processed the scene, but all their evidence, like those five Stange fellows, Cai Shaohong’s corpse, and that sophisticated remote control, all were still in the basement, since they didn’t get adequate time to shift them somewhere else. But, they had already transferred five fine iron password-locked boxes to a military truck, which was parked outside the villa.

“Half of the people follow me, and the rest of people, you people take care of the things here, extinguish the fire of this basement, simultaneously, be always on your guard against sneak attack, or anything else. In case you notice any kind of suspicious thing, then send me a signal immediately!”

After finished saying that, along with his three members, he quickly rushed outside the villa.

When they arrived near their green-coloured military truck, they saw a dark shadow was carrying few boxes down the truck. But then instantly his stature flashed and he ran towards the nearby artificial woods. Extremely soon, he went very far away from them, his speed was extremely fast!

“Fire!”

Thunder passed the order without any hesitation, by raising his hand in his direction, and instantaneously, all of his three members responded and raised their firearms in hand to shoot.

Ping! Ping! Ping!

After three crisp and ear-piercing sound of gunfire, these three bullets, mixed with blue light of their gun barrel, drew a very beautiful and profound arc light, under the moonlight, as if a poisonous snake pursuing the dark shadow, who had fled into the woods, and its speed was far more than an ordinary bullet!

“Naive.”

A gloomy but a deep voice in a lower tone burst out from the direction where that dark shadow was.

They only saw that the figure of that dark shadow sparked, and tapped his footsteps thrice on the ground, then after, very smoothly, while carrying some password-locked boxes, he went through the woods, and in a blink of an eye, disappeared, leaving behind those three blue-coloured bullets, which at last hit the ground and then immediately disappeared.

The special firearms of NSA were specially designed to cope up either with the people of the martial arts world, or with the ghost or soul kind of supernatural thing. Their penetrating might was enormously high, coupled with a tremendous destructive power. Moreover, they also had a very special kind of meridian erosion feature.

But regardless of the enormous might of these weapons, if they still failed to hit the target, then that would be considered as a complete waste of power.

“SHIT!”

Seeing the opposite party easily escaped, Thunder couldn't bear but cursed loudly. He thought in his heart that the agility of that fellow was very fearful. In his ten years of duty, he had never come across any martial artist, who was as quick as this fellow was.

But just before the disappearance of that shadow, soldiers had actually seen through their sophisticated electronic eye-shades, that there was a white grimace mask on the face of that shadow.

“Really that fellow was the masked man.”

Thunder became very agitated seeing this, hurriedly he rushed back to the military truck along with his men, where he found that one of his team members, who was also assigned there for keeping an eye on the truck, was already dead and lying on the back seat. His throat was also punctured by a sharp weapon in a similar way like others. In addition, all iron boxes, which they had shifted before, had already vanished without a trace.

Soon, the other team members, who were in the basement, spread the news that the fire was also artificially caused by someone. The entire basement was filled with gasoline and the fire intensity was also very enormous, to the extent that not even the precision equipment of NSA was capable of suppressing the fire quickly.

It was an estimation that all the evidence present in the basement, like five strange fellows, Cai Shaohong's corpse, sophisticated remote control, and so on, all would have been disappeared by now in this fire. Also, they didn't get any information about their team members, who was left behind earlier in the basement. Might be, he had also been killed similarly.

A shadow had caused such a big loss to them, not only he had broken the whole trail, but had also slaughtered their three team members!

“So formidable, it’s granted that if the entire people of the martial arts world would line-up, then he must be able to stand at number one place in that line, because of his strength.”

Thunder was known for his incomparable dignity, however, such a big matter happened, and he, as the Captain of the National Security Agency, hadn’t been able to deal with it efficiently. Quickly, he pulled out a small and exquisite communicating device, which was just a thumb-sized device, and then by pressing a button, he made a call to Lin Detian.

.....

While, at this time, Lin Detian, along with the six members of the National Security Agency, boarded on a green military truck, and directly headed towards Qingfeng Park, and soon arrived outside it.

When the young security guard of the community saw them, he quickly ran out to block their way. But the truck driver flung a document towards him, making him scare away. And as a result, he really didn’t dare to say a single word, and silently slipped away back to the security room.

Finally, the military truck pulled into Qingfeng Park, and stopped outside Ye Feng’s villa.

“..... What, wearing a mask again?”

Lin Detian got the phone call, while he was getting out of the truck. His complexion had already become even more ugly than before.

All the evidence of Yanxi Villa District had been completely destroyed by the masked man! Moreover, three team members of the National Security Agency had also fallen prey to him and mercilessly killed. One must know that all the members of NSA used to be very carefully chosen, and that also, after the most rigorous training of five years, which cost lots of millions!

That was too much, it really went too far!

Lin Detian was shaking all over with rage, if he still didn't capture that masked man, then how could he show his face to the country?

However, if he really wanted to find out that masked man, then at this present stage, he could only rely on his "good relationship" with Ye Feng.

"Go inside and search!"

As soon as Lin Detian waved his hand, immediately four members of the National Security Agency jumped down the truck, and hurtled to enter the villa.

"What are you doing?"

A pretty figure opened the front door of the villa. She was actually Su Menghan, who was tossing and turning but couldn't fall asleep.

She saw that those four soldiers, carrying heavy and fully loaded rifles, were trying to burst into the villa and carry out their search operation. But suddenly she felt that it was not good, since there were lots of rare martial arts books of Ye Feng's grandfather, hence, she couldn't let them go inside and search!

Chapter 119 -> Su Menghan is captured.

Lin Detian walked upto the door of the villa and firmly stood there, with his hands crossed behind his back, but when he saw that surprisingly Su Menghan appeared in front of him, he was somewhat taken aback.

“Call out Ye Feng to come outside.”

The order he left was completely unquestionable.

“He is not here right now, but why are you looking for him?”

Su Menghan was also standing at the door, blocking it, and a pair of her beautiful eyes were looking at him. Obviously, she had recognized the identity of the opposite party. But she had some doubts, what did Ye Feng do tonight outside, which had caught the attention of such a great personality?

If Su Menghan had seen Lin Detian before, standing at her door like this, then definitely she would have been extremely startled. But now, since she had begun practising Cultivation, therefore, her vision had naturally broadened.

“Not here?”

Lin Detian sneered, and immediately waved his hand : “Take hold of this young lady and ask her to be our guest, meanwhile, I am going to inform Ye Feng to come over.”

After finished speaking, he turned around and walked away.

Of course, it was an unconditional compliance for the members of the National Security Agency, but as soon as they heard his order, immediately they stepped forward and took Su Menghan under their custody directly, so as to take her away.

“What are you doing? Why am I being arrested?”

Su Menghan got angry and also started struggling to free herself, but all of her efforts were completely useless. Facing four members of the National Security Agency wasn't a child play, even if they would appear before Ye Feng, still it would be quite difficult to suppress them. Not to mention she just had started practising Cultivation, she hadn't learnt even a single Immortal Technique so far, basically, she didn't even have the slightest bit of fighting strength presently.

“Sorry, we just obey orders, young lady, don't make things difficult for us, or else we can only knock you down.”

One of the members of the NSA, while looking at her through his electronic eye-shades, said in a sinking voice.

“Where are you taking me?”

Su Menghan snappily asked that.

“For everything, we must listen to our Chief's instructions.”

One of them replied, and then he looked at his other team member, as if they

were mutually thinking that it was too troublesome and really annoying.

“Bang” with a sound, he immediately hit on the back of Su Menghan with his hand knife, very precisely, directly aiming at the exact position, making her easily faint.

Shortly after, she was carried to their green coloured military truck, and from there, she was directly escorted to Lin Clan’s Villa, which was in the Changping District.

While on the other side, Lin Detian took out his cell phone, and on the basis of his former investigation about Ye Feng, quickly drew out his number and dialled it.

.....

At this point of time, Ye Feng was at the Weiming Lakeside of Yanjing University, and was quietly preparing to launch his exquisite Soul Search Technique, while switching on his cell phone. Actually, this phone was given to him by Scar, when he had returned from the Changbai Mountains, and Scar had gone to pick him from the village.

The moment he switched it on, immediately it rang up, leaving Ye Feng with some doubts. When he looked at the number, he thought that did he know this number?

Without thinking much, he picked up the call, however, didn’t speak first.

“Ye Feng?”

From the other side of the phone, a very dignified voice of a middle-aged man, passed on.

“Lin Detian?”

Ye Feng heard it and instantly recognized whose voice this was, wasn't he heard it before, in the basement, it was the voice of Lin Detian, but, why did he call him?

A random thought suddenly hit his mind, he guessed that since the opposite party certainly couldn't find the masked man, so he was trying to find him.

“Yes, it's me.”

Lin Detian seemed condescending, bluntly asked: “Your friend the masked man, where is he now, and what is his identity?”

“Sorry, he's just my friend, not my servant. It's already too late, how would I know where he should be right now?”

Ye Feng also replied that coldly.

“Well, I'm not inquiring you, but ordering you!”

Lin Detian lightly groaned : “He is concerned with our military action, therefore, I am really sorry to say but from now on, your each and every movement will be a part of military action. It doesn't matter where you are right

now, must member, within an hour must come to Changping District, and accept the military investigation. In addition, Miss Su Menghan is also coordinating with us, and is already under investigation now. If you don't come"

The thing which baffled Ye Feng was why he didn't take his own initiative to find the whereabouts of Ye Feng, was it because Su Menghan was an easy option? Otherwise, with his jurisdiction, he could have very easily traced him out through the phone signal, but he was too lazy to use this way.

"She didn't know anything, you started your interrogation with her, isn't it strange?"

Ye Feng's complexion immediately changed.

"She lives with you, of course, she must be knowing something. Once again, this is a military operation, you must not do anything irrational to resist."

Lin Detian stressed this with the numerous expressions, afterwards, his tone changed into a scolding : "Even though you are Old man Ye's grandson, but I can still deal with him if it is needed. Do you know that this time, because of that masked man, Pei Keang Group's key training object Cai Shaohong, was killed in our country China? Moreover, he didn't stop here, he not only somehow made Xiuwen lose his intellect, but had also killed three elites of NSA" "

Ye Feng heard that and remained stunned for a moment.

Lin Xiuwen became a retard?

Three elites of NSA were killed?

What relationship did these have with him? He had only killed Cai Shaohong, but that guy was planning something dangerous to harm this country China. There were already lots of evidence related to his plan, in the secret room of the basement. So, didn't the National Security Agency investigate it properly?

It was simply like eating plain rice free of cost!

Snapped.

Lin Detian, after finished saying everything, immediately hung up the phone.

Ye Feng thought that and tossed his cell phone into the Weiming Lake.

Imagine, if he didn't arrive at that Changping District within one an hour, then not only Su Menghan would be embroiled, but also the opposite party would find his location, via cell phone signal, with 100 percent guarantee.

He was looking cold, without a thorough investigation, Lin Detian randomly arrested people at his own will, it was simply baffling, and really annoying. If anything wrong would have to Su Menghan, then he would certainly turn the entire Lin Clan upside down!

He just had one hour of time, but it was still enough for him to condense out Soul Search Technique. He must rush to Lin Clan as soon as possible, but if he didn't go over there completely prepared, then he couldn't be able, to make other things clear to them, and convince them to restart their investigation in a new light.

Lin Xiuwen turned into a retard, three soldiers of NSA were killed, it seemed like that particular person definitely knew that all these things would stir up problems for Ye Feng.

Was someone deliberately trying to frame him into this mess?

Ye Feng knew that he was really being framed by someone, but he didn't have any clue who it could be. Supposedly, Cai Shaohong was not that person, then was it his accomplice? Quite possible.

He stood up, and took several jumps to leave the Weiming Lake. Soon he came to a deserted playground, and directly went towards a thick grove maze to hide and start his operation, uninterrupted. Thereafter he crossed his legs, sat down, and started condensing Yin Soul out.

(Lastvoice : Yin means negative and Yan means positive in the Chinese language.)

Yin Soul is a primordial spirit, which is divided into two forms, Yin Soul and Yang Soul. If a person possessed ten years of Yin Soul and 100 years of Yang Soul in the World of the Immortals, then he would become extremely popular there.

With the help of ten years Cultivation, one could easily pour out Yin Soul, and could use it to sense everything around him in a certain range. The higher the Cultivation, the bigger the scope of sensation. A decade of Cultivation could make a person capable of sensing everything which came in the range of his 100 meters, regardless of whether it was static or a fast moving thing, anything could be easily sensed.

A hundred years Cultivation was needed to pour out Yang Soul, and that ability was really much bigger. However, Ye Feng had never thought about it, since he was very far away from that level yet.

By using his full strength, he revolved his Zhenqi very fast under his Dantian, and as a result, very soon a translucent empty Shadow emerged out from the top of his head. Since he had reached ten years Cultivation, so it had become extremely easy for him to condense Yin Soul out of his body smoothly! However, he had an edge, because he was already very much familiar with this Soul Search Technique, since when he was in the World of the Immortals.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Three consecutive arrays of chilled wind proliferated all around Ye Feng's body and then they blew towards a thick grove, while producing a strong rustling sound.

Soul Search Technique finally succeeded!

At this time, when he closed his eyes, he felt everything which fell within a radius of a hundred meters.

Crying insects, spider web, pedestrians outside the playground, a few flies in the sky, mosquitoes swarm, ants under the ground, centipede almost everything, as long as he wanted to feel, he would be able to sense it into his mind, just like how the naked eye could see picture clearly!

He opened his eyes, stabilised his whole body's Zhenqi and then heaved a sigh of relief finally.

Finally, it was the time when he could be completely fearless, no matter what kind of situation he was in, he didn't need to live in fear anymore. Until now, the gap between a martial artist and an Immortal Cultivator really began to show up.

His eyes flashed with coldness, so now he had to rush to Lin Clan's residence. In addition to making Su Menghan free from their custody, he also had to clarify things to Lin Clan. He would have to make them know that the main culprit was not him but Cai Shaohong. And besides this, it seemed like someone was trying to frame him. So instead of interrogating him, they must try to grasp that particular someone promptly.

Chapter 120 -> Soul Sealing Technique

Ye Feng stood up, lowered his head and looked at the wound which was there on his right leg, but it had already dried up.

“The firearms of NSA are really amazing, especially the bullets, not only their collision speed is too fast, but their destructive power is also remarkably enormous, to the extent where not even my Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace could succeed in escaping it Fortunately, now I have Soul Search Technique, if any kind of situation crops up like before, then, this time, I won't give any opportunity to the opposite party to open fire again.”

Ye Feng thought in his heart, simultaneously, he turned over his hand, and immediately his right hand began exuding the golden colour ray of light.

An Immortal Technique – Holy Cure Technique!

This technique was considered as a type of fundamental Immortal Technique in the World of the Immortals, because literally, almost everyone used to have ten years of Cultivation there. The main function of this technique was a potent treatment of some skin related external injuries, moreover, it had also shown a terrifically good treatment result in restoration of damaged meridians.

Ye Feng was shot by the people of NSA on his right leg, which had terribly blown his leg and caused half a fist-sized blood hole. But now, he wanted to restore it, and that was not a big deal for him anymore.

By bringing the golden ray of light of his right hand close to his wound, he gradually pressed it on that blood hole. Instantaneously, the whole blasted place

started recovering up super fast, even the naked eye could see how rapid its restoration was!

Not long after, his right leg, which had suffered a big injury, basically fully recovered, leaving behind only a blood dried huge hole on his trousers. Then after, again he pressed his right hand's golden ray of light on his chest and another thigh, and as expected, they also recovered soon with a terrific speed.

Gradually, that golden ray of light vanished.

"It has consumed almost half of my Zhenqi, but again, I have already anticipated it."

Ye Feng nodded with satisfaction, and then immediately stretched his hand and took out the Black Jar of Souls. It was a black-coloured box of almost two fist-sized, and basically, it looked like a cinerary casket, with a bit of spooky aura around it.

The zombie creator old man used to conveniently use this device to summon corpses and make them fight. This Jar was his medium to fetter one's souls into it. The Corpses which were summoned out of it, once they encountered serious damages, they used to immediately turn into the blue smoke, without leaving any trace.

As for Ye Feng, he wouldn't use it ever, since he was totally disinclined to use this kind of strange device. However, before going to meet Lin people, he just wanted to ascertain few things with Cai Shaohong.

So, when he waved his hand, instantly a wisp of translucent dark gray, cold

wind appeared and gently brushed away the Black Jar of Souls. This Immortal Technique was called Gathering Soul Technique!

Moreover, this technique was not considered as an ordinary technique even in the World of the Immortals, because it was not like anyone could learn it easily. Although he used to follow Su Feiying, but even before meeting her, he randomly learnt this technique on his own, through his experience.

Gathering Soul Technique was further divided into three parts, Summoning Soul Technique, Sealing Soul Technique and Releasing Soul Technique.

Summoning Soul Technique is precisely used to summon a soul within a range, which immediately turns into a translucent shape as soon as it is summoned. In addition, its translucent form is even clearly visible to the naked eye. In case a person has just died, and shortly after his death, his soul is summoned, then, in that case, his soul appears with his completely awoken consciousness.

Sealing Soul Technique is also used to summon a soul, however, it can only summon the already sealed soul. It doesn't matter whether it has been sealed a moment ago, or hundred years ago, what important is, after breaking its seal, its consciousness can still remain to a awoken state.

And as for Releasing Soul Technique, it is used to directly disperse the soul of an ordinary human, who has stayed in this human world. In other words, it grants salvation to the souls. Of course, it can only aim at ordinary souls.

Having this Immortal Technique meant to be able to collect all kind of information of any place, extremely fast, after all, which place doesn't have deceased people, and then their souls?

Once Ye Feng waved his hand, and a dark gray cold wind emerged and stroke the whole Black Jar of Souls, right after that, that jar began to vibrate fiercely, and was immediately followed by a translucent imaginary shadow of human figure, which flew out of it. Soon, one after another, several other souls also emerged out, however all of them were firmly fettered by Ye Feng's body.

Souls, which were summoned by Gathering Soul Technique, were generally unable to leave their summoner's body, beyond a certain range.

There were not several souls collected in this Black Jar, might be because in the modern city, seeing the dead people would not have been so common. Places like crematories, mortuaries, and so on, they had dead bodies, but again, these dead bodies were there from a long time ago, therefore, their souls had also already dispersed.

Cai Shaohong's soul was with him, with the same appearance which he had, right before his death. But at present, it had become as light as a feather and had taken a translucent form. Surprisingly, there was still a trace of an inconceivable and panic-stricken look on his face.

The soul of Zhao Yibei was also summoned out along with others, which still had that delicate appearance. But his soul seemed a little incomplete and badly damaged, furthermore, his face had also suffered a heavy loss. When he saw Ye Feng, he was surprised.

Then after, there were several other souls as well, like the soul of Heavenly Sword Palace's pretty and flirtatious woman, Hai Tang, Tornado Axe, God Fist Gate's fellow apprentices, Luo Li and Luo Lei, and so on. However, all of them were looking same like Zhao Yibei's soul, incomplete and badly damaged. Moreover, the soul of Zhu Bainiao somehow didn't appear.

Ye Feng just wanted to clearly understand everything.

“It seems that gathering corpses to fight, in return damages their souls. And if this trend continues, and if they continue appearing over and over, then gradually this will affect their souls, making them disperse and then disappear

He couldn't see Zhu Bainiao, this made him feel somewhat a pity. Moreover, if his soul had been still available in that Black Jar, then Ye Feng wouldn't have needed to go to the East China Sea to obtain his hidden martial arts core technique or Crying Ghost Blade Technique. He could have made Scar begin to practice ahead of time.

Besides this, the soul of this man Zhu Bainiao could have been sealed up, so that if in the future, he got the opportunity to become a Soul Cultivator, then he could have become a big helping hand for Ye Feng.

Ye Feng glanced at the soul of Zhao Yibei, who was looking somewhat lost and incomplete, which left him with a feeling of uneasiness in his heart and ruined his mood, after all, Ye Feng owed him. And naturally, it was not the appropriate time to talk with him about the old days.

“Yibei, don't be puzzled, at present, you are in a soul state, I will use Soul Sealing Technique on you first. Then just wait for Soul Core Technique to awaken you again, after that you will be able to exist in this world, in the shape of soul!”

Ye Feng solemnly explained that.

Zhao Yibei was originally in a state of semi-consciousness, so when he heard Ye Feng saying 'Soul', he was taken aback, Soul? Soul Sealing Technique? He thought that could it be that somehow he arrived in a strange world, where people's consciousness was normally sealed away?

He still remembered that at a critical moment, he jumped in front of Ye Feng, and then he lost his consciousness, and until now, he was still muddleheaded. However, he really hadn't expected that actually he would be awakened one day, even more, he had never thought that why Ye Feng seemed to be a Daoist priest or something like that?

Certainly, Ye Feng also had no time to explain everything to him carefully. He just smiled happily, then waved his hand, and cast Soul Sealing Technique on the crippled soul of Zhao Yibei!

Sealing Soul Technique needed a medium to seal a soul, and obviously, Ye Feng wouldn't seal Zhao Yibei's soul again in the Black Jar of Souls. Actually, he stretched out his right hand, as he decided to use Ancient Dragon Sword Ring as the medium for this technique.

Since Zhao Yibei's soul had been summoned out frequently by that necromancer old man, therefore his soul had become somewhat damaged. Ye Feng had placed his hope in this idea that if he would seal him in his ring of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, then it might turn out somewhat advantageous for his soul.

A cold wind blew and gently caressed the light soul of Zhao Yibei, which was similar to a blue smoke, and instantly he was pulled in his ring and disappeared.

This scene was actually being seen by all other souls present there at the

moment, who were looking at him strangely, including Cai Shaohong, Hai Tang, Luo Lei, Luo Li and Tornado Axe.

Ye Feng swept his eyes towards those people, and then stuck his eyes on Cai Shaohong: “Cai Shao? Sorry, I had to take your life at any cost, however, at present, I still hope that you will answer me a few questions honestly.”

“So it turns out like this, that you really wear a mask, I should have thought about this earlier.”

Cai Shaohong lowered his face and noticed that his translucent soul was floating around Ye Feng, and was looking very gloomy.

“Yes, but why?”

Encountering several souls at present, who were under his absolute control, making Ye Feng feel that now, he really didn't mind revealing his identity in front of them. But this acknowledgement, how many people would be equally shocked seeing that at present, this young man, standing in front of them, wearing a mask, was called “Mo Jiuge”?

Suddenly, all of them clenched their jaws, and the reason was quite clear. Why wouldn't they hate him, when they already knew that all of them, whether it was Hai Tang, Luo Li or Luo Lei, were killed by this masked man? As for Tornado Axe, of course, he still remembered that his close friend, Wolf Sword had been killed by Ye Feng's friend, the masked man, by a hidden weapon!

Chapter 121 -> Lin Clan!

As Ye Feng noticed the fuming with anger facial expression of several souls, it planted a smile on Ye Feng's face in return.

He then glued his eyes directly on Cai Shaohong : "Cai Shao, right? Whatever you were trying to stir up in this country China, I know it now all along. Tell me now, how many accomplices you have, and where are they?"

Cai Shaohong gloomily just stared at him, while maintaining a silent form.

"Still, you are being stubborn."

Ye Feng said that faintly, as he raised his hand, immediately a sudden gust of cold wind blew, "pop" and with a sound, the soul of God Fist Gate's Luo Li dispersed, and immediately turned into a burst of cold breeze, without leaving even the slightest bit of trace.

Henceforth, this person no longer existed in the world.

"If you won't speak out, then you will also end up like him, and will vanish from this world, forever.

Once again Ye Feng fixated his eyes on Cai Shaohong, and threatened him.

"Do you think I would be so stupid?"

While still holding a very calm expression on his face, Cai Shaohong replied to him contemptuously.

He was already dead, even if he spoke out everything, still, it was impossible to resurrect him. Hence, what was the point in answering to his questions now? Besides, for Cai Shaohong, cooperating Ye Feng was totally unacceptable, it was like wasting his time on this cheap person, Ye Feng.

On the other side, when the incomplete and badly damaged soul of Luo Lei saw that his brother Luo Li was immediately exterminated by Ye Feng, he turned a bit scared.

Ofcourse, the words of Cai Shaohong was making Luo Lei very uncomfortable. Just as he expected, Ye Feng lifted his hand and once again cast Releasing Soul Technique. Consequently, before Luo Lei could even think something, he felt that his already floating light soul, scattered in the air all of a sudden, making his consciousness return to nihility at once!

As for Luo Li and Luo Lei brothers, Ye Feng was not even the least bit considerate of. Although these two people's malevolent scheme had indirectly helped him and Long Wan'er, but the opposite party dared to set up a drug against Long Wan'er, how could this evil behaviour of these fellows imprint a good impression in Ye Feng's heart?

Thus, the souls of these two men finally disappeared from the world, leaving behind a serious warning to others!

“So really, you won't say anything, will you?”

Ye Feng tilted his head, and stared at him indifferently.

“You really have gotten guts there, so do I start?”

Cai Shaohong smirked.

Puff!

Without any mercy, Ye Feng, right away, cast his Releasing Soul Technique on him, making his soul scatter, and immediately turn into a smoke!

Soon, Ye Feng’s mouth slightly curled upwards, this guy really had nothing to fear of, hadn’t he? Unfortunately, Ye Feng didn’t have any interest to carry on any kind of idle talks with a deceased person. For him, if the opposite party wasn’t ready to cooperate him and speak anything, then his soul would be directly dispersed of.

Under the state of the soul, Ye Feng’s hypnosis couldn’t show any effect. As for the highest level of Gathering Soul Technique – Searching Soul Technique, he had to wait at least 20 years before he could use his Cultivation. As of now, he had no other choice left than to extinguish the soul of Cai Shaohong, and then forget about him forever.

Who the associates and the back supporters of the opposite party were, if he hadn’t received this answer yet, then wouldn’t he have any other way to investigate it? So long as he found out the skeleton masked man from before, he still believed that all these unanswered things would be 100 % answered by him.

But he had few regrets left, like why Lin Xiuwen became a retard, and how the

heavenly stone bead appeared in his secret room. These issues didn't have the means to be resolved now.

Ye Feng raised his head and looked towards the souls of Hai Tang and Tornado Axe.

Could these two people still dare to provoke him at this moment? Both of them were fluttering in the sky, quite away from Ye Feng, but still, they actually couldn't leave the body of Ye Feng, beyond the scope of around three meters. Because of the current incident, a terrified look had taken birth on their faces.

Regardless of whether it was a fierce an evil name of one of the Jiangsu Duo's Tornado Axe throughout the country China, or one of the members of Heavenly Sword Palace and Happily Married Couple of sword's Hai Tang, both of them were terror-stricken at the moment, because, at present they were facing the real threat of getting disappeared from the world, a kind of a natural fear!

Not to mention how resolute Ye Feng was, as far as the case of Cai Shao was concerned, he just asked something from him twice, and when he didn't get any reply, he directly exterminated him

All of them were deceased people, precisely, since they had already died once, therefore, they had become more terrorised by the true death.

"You can ask anything from me, and I promise that I will certainly answer everything! Just begging you, let me off."

The beautiful face of this seductive woman, Hai Tang was appearing a little damaged, she said further : "Or, perhaps save me, then from now onwards, I will

be always at your service

After saying that, her floating soul started stroking her hair coquettishly and making various actions for enticement.

Unfortunately, all these things were completely useless to Ye Feng, not to mention the fact that presently he didn't have any means to save her. Although, just now, he cast Sealing Soul Technique on Zhao Yibei, but in return, this technique consumed a tremendous amount of his Zhenqi. As of now, he had to immediately rush to the residence of Lin people, hence, in such a crucial time, he didn't want to let his Zhenqi get consumed, by any other useless activity

“You people, just go inside it for now, and when I need your help, I'll summon you out again.”

Ye Feng waved his hand, making the souls of both the people dragged inside the Black Jar of Souls instantly. Behind keeping the soul of Hai Tang, certainly Ye Feng had some reasons, probably he wanted to ask a few things about Heavenly Sword Palace. As for keeping Tornado Axe's soul, he thought that this guy probably might be aware of any good martial arts' consultant. Hence in the future, he might turn out quite useful.

Thenafter, he put away the Black Jar, and looked up towards the north direction.

Changping District of Yanjing city, it was in the north, about 20-30 kilometres away from Yanjing University, where the residence of Lin Clan was situated.

Ye Feng clenched his fist tightly, thought that tonight indeed was a sleepless

night. Anyways, this matter with Lin Clan, he must try to do everything to resolve it and dispose it of, once and for all, completely tonight!

.....

In Yanjing City's Changping District.

The land area of the villa's park was quite broad, and was brightly lit as well, at this point of time. Furthermore, several Lin Clan's people had gathered here tonight, because what happened tonight, was really too shocking for everyone.

The Sanshao of Lin Clan, Lin Xiuwen somehow strangely became a mentally retard, and the one who was responsible for his this miserable condition was the masked man!

In the conference hall of the villa's spacious park, Lin Detian, Lin Zhiqing, and almost a dozen of Lin people, along with Thunder, the Captain of NSA, were sitting around the conference table, waiting for something.

"Second Brother, where is our Shiqing?"

Lin Xiuwen's father, Lin Rentian was a generation younger to Lin Detian, had a pair of glasses on his face, which was making him look very refined and decent man. However, there was a sullen look on his face at the moment. He was just quietly sitting in front of Lin Detian, when he asked that.

"She is in the hospital, taking care of that young lady of Xiao Clan."

Lin Detian looked dignified as he said: “In particular, what exactly the matter is, when Xiao Clan’s girl will wake up, then we’ll know about it clearly. However, as of now, most probably, that masked man is behind all this chaos. I have already given the order to trace the whereabouts of Ye Feng in the entire city, by using his phone signal. Just finding him out means there is still a hope to find that masked man. ”

“I actually think that the kid will himself come over here.”

Someone said: “His girlfriend is in our custody, even though if he doesn’t dare to come over, won’t it mean he is no less than a coward, and is ruining the name of Ye Clan?”

“Hmm, talking about this is triggering my angry, it was that Old man Ye, who had led his own son to such a miserable path, or else how could he turn out so?”

Lin Detian said that with a bit of irritation.

“Now the time has arrived to consider how we should deal with this matter, if my son doesn’t get cured, then I will definitely turn over my face and fall out with Ye Clan!

Lin Rentian said that with a calm and collected face, this time, the most important thing for him was his son had turned into a retard. As for Cai Shaohong’s death, did he have any kind of relationship with Lin Rentian? Similarly, the death of those three men of NSA, had also nothing to do with him, since the NSA’s soldiers weren’t his men.

“No matter how, but I’ll certainly find that masked man out, even from all

corners of the world. This matter has already threatened the national security.”

Lin Detian frowned, and angrily pounded on the table.

The Captain of NSA, Thunder was also sitting there, he wanted to say something, but had some hesitations, hence he couldn't bring himself to share his views. As per him, there were already lots of questionable points related to this matter, and he could say that with 100 % guarantee, because he had done a thorough inspection of the spot, in every way possible, and on that basis, he had concluded that somehow Cai Shaohong seemed a bit suspicious character.

However now, all evidence had already been destroyed by the fire, so without any evidence, he couldn't dare to utter a single word casually, in a baseless way.

Suddenly, at this moment, a roaring sound passed on from the conference hall's door, bang!

“Where is Su Menghan?”

A young voice, filled with anger, resounded everywhere.

Everyone present in the conference hall, altogether turned back and looked towards the entrance of the room, which made them stunned for a while, when they noticed that the door was kicked open by a guy, who was slowly coming inside, however, that person was not Ye Feng, then who was he?

Seeing him proudly coming inside, ticked off the anger of Lin Detian, and he angrily pounded on the table once again, at the same time, he stood up, and angrily said : “Thunder, take him under control!”

He was threatened by Lin Detian to come to the residence of Lin Clan, still, how could he show such arrogance? Did this kid seriously think that he was the true grandson of the Old man, Ye Wentian?

Chapter 122 -> I am the masked man.

Ye Feng came all the way to the Changping District rapidly, where he made some inquiries to know the location of Lin Clan's residence.

Finally, he reached outside the campus of Lin's Villa, and then by activating his Soul Search Technique, he swept around thoroughly, and soon found that many soldiers of the NSA were hidden around the villa, carrying fully-loaded rifles and heavily armed. Apparently, because of today's incident, the entire Lin's residence was under tight protection.

Having Soul Search Technique under command was making everything extremely convenient for him now. The situation within a radius of hundred meters of the range was now crystal clear to him, as he could easily sense that the surroundings had several people, guns and even dogs. Besides, it would take just a fraction of second for him, to check them out thoroughly with the help of this technique!

Immediately, by activating his Immortal Technique – Invisibility, he entered the villa's campus, where he strolled around for a while, and quite soon arrived at that area, where there was a hotel-styled building, which was situated almost in the middle of the campus.

Again by putting his Soul Technique into action, he explored the entire building in an instant, and sensed that currently, Su Menghan was in a room, on the third floor, of this hotel-styled building. In addition, there were two fully-armed NSA members standing at the room's door, guarding it. The whole scene was making it appear like she was kept under house arrest.

After a moment of careful observation, he concluded that the altitude of the

floor of this building was extremely high. The third floor had already thirty meters of height, which was making it impossible even for Ye Feng to jump up directly to the third floor. Even if he jumped up, but still he couldn't succeed in intruding into and taking her away.

One must know that at present, he had taken the identity of Ye Feng, hence he couldn't expose his Cultivation at any cost!

As for putting on the mask to save others, it could only be said that he really liked to do that a lot. But in this tightly guarded place, he came over relying on the identity of Ye Feng, even more, he also had to ensure his safety. In case, he changed into the identity of the masked man, then wouldn't he be shot on the spot, by NSA's soldiers?

Therefore, before he arrived in front of the door of that hotel-styled building, he released his Invisibility. Thenafter, he kicked open the front door, and walked in!

“Where is Su Menghan?”

Ye Feng opened his mouth and shouted out loud. Although he shouted this sentence, but actually he didn't want any answer, it was just like he wanted to gain the upper hand by showing his strength in front of them.

As for the current situation in that assembly hall, he already knew about it clearly by using his Soul Search Technique earlier. He already had sensed that there were more than a dozen people inside, and most of them were Lin, besides Thunder, the Captain of the National Security Agency was also there.

As he stormed into the hall, all roaring, almost everyone stood up together.

“Thunder, put him under control!”

Lin Detian was the first one to respond. Fuming with anger, he pounded his hand on the table, and then immediately rose up, pointed his fingers at Ye Feng and said that.

“Come on, I’m not here to fight, then what’s the use of controlling me? Can’t we better discuss the things related with the masked man?”

Ye Feng waved his hand.

As his words came out, it really changed the facial expression of everyone. At present, in Lin Clan, who wasn’t interested to know who exactly the masked man was?

“Who exactly is this man, whom from the martial arts circle is his master, which martial arts school does he belong to?”

Lin Rentian, the father of Lin Xiuwen, was certainly the first person who was most concerned about this issue. Still, by holding a calm face, he fired those questions in a stern voice, his gentle and refined bespectacled face had some distortions at this moment.

Very obviously, his son had turned into a retard, this thing had really hit him hard.

“He is a friend of mine, as for the rest of the things, I’m sorry, but I really don’t know anything.”

Ye Feng said that in an unusual manner, like a hoodlum, meanwhile, after walking thirty-two steps straight, he at last arrived forward next to the conference table, and sat down.

“Since you don’t have the sincerity, then it seemed like we don’t have anything to talk about right now.”

All of a sudden, the facial expression of Lin Rentian turned even more unsightly, basically, his intellectual form had completely vanished at this moment, and he was looking like a bison of a doting parent.

“No, no, in fact, I mean to say that your target for retaliation, don’t you think you have made a mistake choosing it?”

Ye Feng cleverly changed the thread of discussion, and asked that in a very calm and composed manner.

“Hmm, there is authentic evidence of this matter, then how might I make a mistake?”

Lin Rentian coldly snorted, as he pushed his spectacles up the bridge of his nose.

“Quite good.”

From aside, Lin Detian also continued : “Before his death, Cai Shaohong had given me a call, and said that not only Lin Xiuwen was injured by the masked male, but Xiao Qi was also abducted by him. Later on, in his own villa, he was killed by someone, and I am 100 % sure that it was the same person, that masked man. Furthermore, after that, the masked man also set off fire, and destroyed his corpse, along with all evidence ”

“And the motive?”

Ye Feng calmly asked one.

“His motive is temporarily not clear, however, on the basis of our preliminary investigation, I can say that he did this for something in Cai Shaohong’s villa.”

This time, Thunder couldn’t help but stood up and said that from the fair standpoint.

“Like I said before, he attacked Xiao Qi as well as Lin Xiuwen, but for what?”

Ye Feng shook his head and continued asking questions, back to back.

“This is exactly the place where I have some doubts.”

Without waiting for others to jump in, Thunder grab the opportunity and replied first, then he looked towards Lin Detian and Lin Rentian, and in a low voice, said: “Just heard the news, in the apartment community, where Xiao Qi lives, there, a corpse of an old man was found, and it seems that he should be from the martial arts world, and had about twenty years Cultivation ”

At present, there were many key figures, who held an enormous power in this country, present on the scene, and they all had a sort of good understanding of the martial arts world, to a certain extent.

Depending on the limited information, presently, no one could figure out that afterall, at that time, what exactly had happened there. As of now, there were basically two most crucial characters who could solve this case in a tweak, and they were Xiao Qi and that masked man. Unfortunately, one was unconscious and lying in the hospital, while the second one was missing.

“This matter doesn’t need too much speculation for the time being.”

Lin Detian knocked the table, and in a sinking voice, said: “Although after the death of Cai Shaohong, Thunder was sent to make a thorough search throughout the villa for evidence, but the masked man appeared again, and not only he killed three elites of NSA, but also destroyed all the evidence.”

“It’s hilarious.”

Ye Feng smiled : “Ok let’s assume, even if my friend was responsible for the destruction of evidence, and on top of that, the destruction of the evidence inside the Cai Shaohong’s villa. But why don’t you think, what things would be there in his villa which had been destroyed by him?”

Thunder looked at him as he said: “Indeed, there were a lot of things in the basement, which was very suspicious

“Enough.”

While pushing his glasses up, Lin Rentian stood up and pointed at Ye Feng: “Don’t try to change the subject, currently, both Xiuwen and Xiao Qi are lying in the hospital, Pei Keang Group’s Cai Shaohong and three elites of NSA have already been killed by the masked man. It is the fact that he is the only one to be blamed for, therefore, he must be restrained according to the law. ”

Then he looked all around, and continued: “Does everybody think so? That masked man, not only he destroyed our country’s friendly relations with Pei Keang Group, but also posed the threat to the national security, he must be definitely regarded as the provocation to those military people!”

Those military people, Lin Rentian used to looked down upon them very much, because they were also the mediators of the martial arts world.

However, compared to Lin Rentian, other Lin people were still relatively rational, or it might be because, they had lost nothing in this incident. Hence, it was easy for them to stay calm, moreover, they also didn’t want to involve in such a troublesome matter.

“Ah, this thing, it still needs a careful discussion in detail.”

“Yes, a lot of things which haven’t been investigated thoroughly, or just wait for Xiao Clan’s girl to wake up and explain everything correctly.”

This kind of matter was generally handled by Lin Detian, the head of the Clan, as well as the head of NSA, who was held responsible for maintaining national security, as well as handling the contradictions between the secular world and the martial arts world, and blending them efficiently.

However, Lin Detian was different.

“Ye Feng, still just tell us the whereabouts of the masked man, you are the grandson of Old man Ye, I, your uncle, won’t embarrass you.”

Putting on a dignified look on his face, Lin Detian made his way through persuasion.

However at this moment, Ye Feng chuckled, as he pulled out a white grimace face mask from his bosom, and suddenly put it on his face: “I am that masked man, do you believe it?”

This act surprised everyone present on the scene, terrifically!

Even the Lin people, who had been originally calm all along, had their eyes wide open at this moment. What, was it a joke, was Ye Feng really the masked man?

“You just look at your reaction, cracking a joke in such a critical situation, as for what?”

Ye Feng smiled, took off the mask, and then swayed it a couple of time: “It’s just like whosoever wears the mask, is my friend, right? With your brain, can a mask only represent the identity of a person? Anyone who wants to become the masked man, can buy a mask from the roadside stalls at ten Yuan per piece. ”

Chapter 123 -> Xiao Qi's abduction

These words, said by Ye Feng, were equivalent to giving a slap to the face of Lin Clan, on the scene. After all, merely relying on a mask to identify the identity of the person, didn't it mean, their IQ had also reduced a bit?

But the fact was if Lin Clan could become the leading Clan in the entire Yanjing city, then naturally, the members of Lin Clan might not be as idiotic as they posed to be.

Regarding the other Lin people present on the scene, they didn't much consider this matter, because firstly, since this matter was not directly related to them, and secondly, they also didn't personally experience this thing. Hence, whatever they heard from the mouth of Lin Dentian and Lin Rentian, naturally, they didn't go deep into thinking about this. Because, their energy and thoughts were still moving around other relatively more important affairs, as well those things which could fulfil their own interests.

However, in the case of Lin Rentian, because his son turned into a retard, so he flew into a rage out of humiliation. His son's IQ became like a baby, this point actually didn't matter to him that much.

As for Lin Dentian, being the head of Lin Clan as well as the leader of the National Security Agency Department, he was bound to deal with this thing, to give an account to everyone, including the higher authorities as well as Pei Keang Group, which was also an extremely important burning issue currently.

In this kind of circumstances, regardless of anything, an essential point was must seize a scapegoat anyhow. It no longer mattered whether Cai Shaohong had done anything wrong or not, what mattered was the masked man had killed

him, and this had become an undeniable fact!

Actually, Thunder was the only one among all, who was being a little uncomfortable seeing all this. He was an honest man, unlike this kind of politician, Lin Detian. Moreover, as the captain of the National Security Agency, he must do everything to protect the national security.

Based on his intuition, Cai Shaohong was involved in something dangerous, and soon he was about to bring his dangerous plan into action, which could have been a serious threat to the national security of this country China. But unfortunately, he couldn't find any evidence to prove this point.

“There can be several people who wear masks, but the skill that masked man has, can't be seen everywhere.”

Lin Dentian said lightly : “To be able to escape in the secret room, even more than that, killing the three elites of National Security Agency, as well as, destroying the evidence completely, quite intelligently, this sort of skill is generally rarely seen in the entire martial arts world.”

“Despite everything, since you have insisted on thinking like this, therefore, nothing can be done now. However, what I actually expect, when Xiao Qi wakes up and speaks out everything clearly, then, at that time, where would you go to hide your face?”

Ye Feng smiled and changed the subject : “Right Su Menghan, the magnificent and dignified Clan of Yanjing, Lin clan, probably only knows how to bully a high school girl, right?”

“The whereabouts of the masked man, just say it and I will let her go.”

Lin Dentian said.

“You let her off first, then I will reconsider whether I want to betray my friend or not.”

Ye Feng raised his head and while looking at him, said : “You also know this kind of betraying a friend matter, any person can suffer a huge mental pressure because of it. If I don’t see Su Menghan before, I won’t consider this matter.”

A wrangle? Ye Feng could also do that!

“Hmm, then you are considered to be that sort of useless friend.”

By pushing his eyeglasses aside, Lin Rentian contemptuously said : “What can he give you? What can you give him? You both are just a sort of useless friends. And here you are talking about betraying! Even if you don’t betray him, will he even think of coming over here and help you save your woman?”

Ye Feng immediately fired his glance at him, naturally, he would never agree to this kind of standpoint.

“Just put Su Menghan out, otherwise, it’ll be just a waste of time, for both of us, that’s all.”

Just like a rogue, Ye Feng crossed his legs, while sitting around the conference table, and roughly said.

Lin Dentian was also a very decisively figure, seeing this argument going on in a more complicated direction, he finally waved : “Thunder, send someone to fetch her down here.”

If this kind of stalemate situation continued, then it wouldn't be advantageous to him. Anyway, he caught Su Menghan just to attract Ye Feng over here. Although he showed up now, but if he wouldn't cooperate with him, then his whole plan would be ruined. In his opinion, Ye Feng was just an ordinary high school student, although had a very good psychological quality, but since a girl was involved in this case, therefore, to slip away from here was almost impossible for him.

Lin Rentian wasn't feeling well, he just sat down. There was an ashtray in front of him, on the table, which was already full of cigarette ashes, anyone could guess by seeing it, how anxious he was right now.

Soon, two members of the National Security Agency, fully armed, led Su Menghan down from the upstairs. At this moment, clad in a white one-piece dress, Su Menghan was looking gorgeous, very pure and delicate, with a pleasant face like always. The moment her eyes fell on Ye Feng, her heart jumped with happiness, and she ran 32 steps straight, to come close to him.

Seeing her finally in front of his eyes, Ye Feng finally smiled from the bottom of his heart, and embraced her into his arms: “Are you all right?”

“Yes, I'm ok, they didn't capture me for Actually you”

In the middle of saying something, Su Menghan looked around, and suddenly an anxious looking expression crawled on her face.

“Relax, all these people are on our side.”

Ye Feng comforted her by stacking up a soft smile and patting her shoulder.

“Well, now you can say, where is that masked man?”

Impatiently, Lin Rentian broke off a cigarette with his hand, and covetously looked at him.

“My apologies, but I still really don’t know. I’m sorry for deceiving you.”

Ye Feng said that again like a rogue. At this moment, there was a very ugly appearance on his face, like a dead pig who does not fear the boiling water.

“You!”

Lin Rentian pounded on the table, and suddenly stood up, even his eyeglasses almost fell to the ground.

This kid, how could he be so shameless?

“Ye Feng, you are trying to take advantage of your status as the grandson of Old man Ye, how dare you try to make a din in our Lin Clan.”

A touch of coldness appeared on the face of Lin Dentian : “As I can see, you are not afraid of creating lots of confusions here, I assure you, even your

grandfather can't protect you from me!"

"Afraid, I'm extremely afraid. Therefore, you better let us go quickly, then I won't cause more trouble for you people."

Ye Feng softly pulled Su Menghan's little hand and smiled.

"Don't even imagine that."

Lin Rentian straightened up his eyeglasses, and fiercely shouted out loud :
"Seize him and also hold him here, if the relationship between him and that masked man is really that good, then he will certainly walk right into our trap!"

He actually wanted to capture Ye Feng and held him as the hostage.

Ye Feng shrugged his shoulders as if he indicated that it didn't matter to him. This kind of nonsense talk and delay would continue like this until Xiao Qi would wake up and clarify the things. Then only the truth would come into the light. The masked man had saved her twice, she wouldn't definitely speak anything venomous about the masked man, would she?

Moreover, Xiao Qi was taken to Cai Shaohong's basement, where she was supposed to be killed, since she had already seen a lot of things, like that strange fellow, which was one of the secrets of Cai Shaohong.

For Ye Feng, all these points were very beneficial evidence to solve this case

However, right at this time, when both the sides were caught in a deadlock

situation, all of a sudden Lin Dentian's cell phone rang up and he quickly answered the phone.

"Dad, not good."

A clear, pleasant and familiar female voice, with a hint of anxiousness passed on, it was Lin Shiqing : "Just a moment ago, Xiao Qi was carried away by a masked man from the hospital!"

At this moment, Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique was already active, therefore, he heard everything from quite afar, which made him wrinkle his eyebrows tightly.

Correct, as expected, just like how Cai Shaohong's accomplice destroyed all the evidence, similarly, he couldn't let Xiao Qi off like this!

Unwise!

Ye Feng turned very dignified at this moment, and somewhat despised the opposite party.

"But, he has left behind a note, with an address written on it."

Lin Shiqing continued.

"Tell me the address."

Lin Dentian said without a bit of hesitation.

Very quickly, she said the address, it was the address of an abandoned factory which was situated in a remote suburb area of Yanjing, and had already been uninhabited. However, Ye Feng couldn't understand what the plan of the masked man was, behind leaving a note with the address.

“Thunder, bring your squad and start preparation for action.”

Lin Dentian waved his hand and hurriedly passed the order, then he turned his gaze towards another 27 or 28 years old young man, who was present on the scene : “Xiuwu, you also bring your group, and get prepared for an urgent military operation, on a standby.”

“Alright!”

That 27-28 years old youth, named Lin Xiuwu, had an unusually valiant appearance, was the Regimental Commander of the fourth Security Regiment of Yanjing's military region garrison force. This group was called as the fast contingency troop, and they always used to be in light adornment. Basically, they were responsible for the security of Yanjing, and were usually sent out in a small group.

“Thunder, seize Ye Feng and take him along with us, we'll now set out.”

Lin Dentian said that, as he shot a glance at Ye Feng, and thought that the opposite party had Xiao Qi as the hostage, hence, he would also capture Ye Feng to use him as their hostage.

For Ye Feng, actually, this didn't matter.

He just wanted to see very much, who the opposite party was and after all what he was trying to pull out!

Chapter 124 -> Lin Rentian's job

The operation was jointly led by Thunder and Lin Xiuwu. The plan was, on one hand, with a bunch of people, Thunder would rush towards Military District Hospital for proper investigation of the scene. While on the other hand, Lin Xiuwu would lead the fourth Guards Regiment, by keeping them on standby, moreover, their target location to assemble wouldn't be very far away.

Confronting such a terrible masked man was not something anyone could handle, even the fourth elite guard regiment could only act as a scout, while the real fighting thing would be literally done by the NSA members, directly under the leadership of Thunder.

The sophisticated and precise firearms equipment along with the superior personal qualities, were the specialities and assets of the National Security Agency, and the so-called the mediator of the martial arts world.

“Let's go and have a look together.”

Ye Feng pulled Su Menghan close to him, since, at this crucial moment, he must stick to her side, in order to ensure her safety. He was just waiting for this matter to end soon, thenafter, they would return to their villa, where he would give her a Lingshi and make her begin the absorption process, to promote her Cultivation, so as to help her build even a little self-defence capability, to face a dangerous situation, like the current one confidently.

While at this moment, the other Lin people were mostly scattered, leaving behind only Lin Detian, Lin Rentian and Thunder's NSA squad, who were about to go to the hospital first.

Altogether thirty people, fully armed, were present on the scene, who were able to bring out their best fighting strength, directly under the command of Thunder. While the rest of the people must stay in the Villa's campus, all alert. One must know that his small team had more than forty people altogether.

Ye Feng and Su Menghan together boarded on a green coloured military truck, and sat next to Lin Rentian, which made Lin Rentian stare at them somewhat maliciously, through his eyeglasses.

At this moment, his son was lying in a hospital, but this pair of young lovers was actually talking and smiling merrily, so, how could he be in a good mood?

Ye Feng also glanced at him, while thinking that Lin Xiuwen must be a sex maniac person, he had listened to Cai Shaohong's slanderous talk, how could he appear so late in Xiao Qi's room, and then turned into a retard?

However, Ye Feng's mind was at peace now, because, this matter had nothing to do with him.

Su Menghan also sat beside him, and tightly held his arm. She never had thought her life would become such mighty waves, but still believed that it would certainly calm down before her college entrance exam.

However, suddenly she thought of something and her mind changed, the moment Ye Feng taught her Immortal Cultivation, since then her life was destined to be no longer ordinary. Such a thing happened today, perhaps it was just a trifle thing, like a trailer

Soon, two green coloured military trucks, carrying more than twenty people, pulled out all the way roaring towards Yanjing's Military District Hospital.

The medical system of Yanjing city was incredibly excellent in the whole country, especially the military hospitals. Only because of the powerful influence of Lin Clan, Lin Xiuwen was admitted here normally, and as for Xiao Qi, just because she had a good relationship with Lin Shiqing, she also got admitted here.

But how unfortunate these two people were, one became a retard, and other was kidnapped. What more surprising, a people could be kidnapped from this military district hospital! It proved that the masked man was indeed extremely talented !

The vehicle barely stopped, and immediately an anxious-looking face of Lin Shiqing popped up. Actually, she was waiting for them outside, at the entrance of the hospital.

Still holding the arm of Ye Feng, Su Menghan got down, however, seeing Lin Shiqing standing there, she couldn't help but pinch him secretly. She thought that Ye Feng couldn't disappear today along with Lin Shiqing like the previous time, because, didn't so many mind-baffling things have happened here today? However, at present, Lin Shiqing was looking so attractive, which forced Su Menghan to feel extremely jealous of her.

Ye Feng had been pinched by Su Menghan, but he didn't have any alternative. The only thing he could do right now was to wait helplessly, until he finally got a free time to make things clear to her, including the matter related to Immortal Cultivation. He also had to tell her about the masked man's identity, Cai Shaohong's issue and so on, although they were not so important matters.

Clad in a shirt and short skirt, Lin Shiqing was looking so exquisite and alluring, her beautiful, fuller and plump bosom, which was shaking rhythmically at the moment, was making Ye Feng unable to bear but throw several glances towards it.

“Little Ye, how did you come

Lin Shiqing ran up to him and stood still beside him. While gently teasing her hair a bit, she noticed that Ye Feng was looking a little strange.

“Because I am related to that masked man, therefore, I was brought.”

While putting out his hands, Ye Feng said : “Oh, by the way, that person who kidnapped Xiao Qi, what kind of mask had he worn? Something like this?”

He asked that, while taking the white grimace face mask out.

This question was supposed to be asked by Lin Detian, therefore, he didn't interrupt into their conversation. He just looked at his daughter, as if waiting for a reply.

“It was not so, he has a black human skeleton face mask.”

Lin Shiqing shook her head and explained a bit.

Ye Feng heard that, and instantly realized who this man was, originally!

At present, the Skeleton masked man was the only person who knew the ins and outs of Cai Shaohong to a great extent. He must have already guessed that Xiao Qi might be in danger, therefore, he came here early to take Xiao Qi away beforehand, and left a note.

Now Ye Feng was quite certain that the address written on the note, must be something big. That suburb abandoned factory must have some hidden secrets of Cai Shaohong. So long as they would go over there and examine the scene to ferret out something, the truth would definitely come into light!

“The Skeleton masked man knows nothing about the martial arts, therefore, he can’t kidnap anyone like this, from the military hospital, which uses to be under such a tight supervision, then he must have used some smart means. Indeed he is a talented person.”

Ye Feng couldn’t help but think so.

While, at this time, on the other side, Lin Shiqing was busy inquiring something from her father Lin Detian. And when she came to know that not even Cai Shahong’s corpse could be saved, she slightly frowned.

“If this being the case, then wouldn’t it be very troublesome? The influence of Pei Keang Group in the international arena is not so small, besides, it also has plenty of seats in the United States Senate and House of Representatives

She said with a clear voice, although her tone had a touch of little concern, but it was enough to make her father, Lin Detian listen to her somewhat strangely. At such a critical moment, how could his own daughter be so calm, and on top of that, still could calmly think about the relations between the two countries? The

death of Cai Shaohong, didn't it hit her hard, and grow a feeling of sorrow in her heart?

Lin Detian immediately glanced at Ye Feng, and thought that if he would let his father, Old man Lin know that Ye Feng had a connection with that martial artist, who was responsible for this miserable condition of Lin Xiuwen, then what would have, whether his father would still insist on the engagement of these two people or not?

Who didn't know, Lin Xiuwen was the most beloved and favourite grandson of his father, Old man Lin! But Ye Feng was also a grandson of someone else afterall, so could he be compared?

“Or, we should go directly to the abandoned factory.”

Ye Feng raised a suggestion : “As long as we find out some evidence to prove Cai Shahong's secret operation in this country China, Pei Keang Group will absolutely not dare to turn over its face from our country.”

Whether it was gene experiment, or the use of new drugs, weren't they internationally explicitly banned? Pei Keang Group could never dare to come forward, by putting these affairs on the table!

“Secret operation?”

Both Lin Detian and Lin Shiqing gawked together, they really didn't know that Cai Shaohong had set his foot in China with a secret operation.

Seeing their reaction, Ye Feng could only sigh with sorrow that Cai Shaohong

had also been in disguise all along. He always had entirely dependent on his subordinates to handle matters as per his instructions, and had never appeared himself, making Lin Clan never doubt on him, not even the slightest bit.

“Chief, I also have some doubts about this thing.”

Nearby standing Thunder, with a serious looking face, said dignifiedly: “In the basement of Cai Shaohong’s villa, we indeed noticed many suspicious things there. So instead, how about if we better go directly to the abandoned factory?”

Actually, the unspoken implication was, they didn’t need to stay at the hospital anymore. Only Lin Xiuwen would be left in the hospital, as he didn’t need anyone to watch him attentively.

“It’s not a good idea, my son must have someone to protect him!”

Lin Rentian immediately stood up, wearing a square-shaped eyeglasses, his face appeared so dangerous, as if fuming with anger.

“This thing can be handled by the police.”

Lin Detain took the decision instantly, then waved his hand, making the men of Thunder, along with Ye Feng, Su Menghan, Lin Shiqing and the remaining Lin people depart together!

Protection of a retard, did it really need the NSA’s elite soldiers?

Although Lin Xiuwen was the member of Lin Clan, but usually Lin Detian never

liked his rampant and lecherous nature. If he were his own son, then he would have already beaten him so much, until his bottom burst open.

Lin Rentian didn't keep up with them, instead, he bitterly stamped his foot, while looking at those two military trucks quickly departing, which in return triggered his anger even more than before.

At this time, suddenly a thought hit his mind. He correctly remembered that a while back, didn't someone mention about the case, saying that a few years ago, someone killed an old woman? Ah, this criminal case of that private prosecution, wasn't it filed by Su Menghan's people, against a pair of Xie Clan's siblings?

Lin Rentian's face suddenly brightened up just by recalling this case, he would never let anything good happen to Su Menghan and in her favour.

There was no mistake about Lin Rentian's job status, he was the President of Yanjing's first People's Court, and the committee member of the Judicial Commission!

Chapter 125 -> Wilderness attack

Two green coloured military trucks, along the rugged path, advanced towards the destination place where the abandoned factory was.

“Report the Chief, 450 people of my regiment have already encircled the target location, they have surrounded the abandoned factory in the range of two kilometres!”

Soon, a soldier of the Fourth Guard Regiment delivered a letter, carrying an information report.

“Be on guard, don’t act rashly.”

Lin Detian said that and immediately hung up the phone.

Then his eyes shifted towards Ye Feng : “Ye Feng, if your friend is playing with us, then I am certainly going to be very impolite and rude to you.”

At present, Lin Detian was not as confident as Ye Feng’s firm belief that something important would definitely appear in the abandoned factory. In case, such a huge force was mobilised there, but in the end, they ended up empty-handed with zero results, then certainly Lin Detian would hold Ye Feng responsible for all this.

Ye Feng didn’t say anything, just smiled gently.

He still strongly believed in the skeleton masked man, as per him, since the

other masked man was directing them to proceed towards the abandoned factory, then certainly that abandoned factory would have something noteworthy. Moreover, he was himself quite sure about this, therefore he led Xiao Qi there to hide and wait until a crucial moment came up, and they were forced to appear. It seemed like he was just using Xiao Qi to expose the evil plans of Cai Shaohong out.

Of course, the prior condition was that Skelton masked man indeed cooperated with Ye Feng, therefore, there was 90 percent possibility that something fruitful might happen there.

The location of the abandoned factory was not very far away from Changping District. Those two trucks howled around ten minutes, and already arrived at the scene.

Under the darkness of the night, one could faintly see from quite a distance that the soldiers of the Fourth Guard Regiment were standing there, forming an encirclement ring outside the abandoned factory, at a distance of two kilometres of range.

“Chief.”

Lin Xiuwu marched forward, came in front of the truck, and then while facing the truck, he saluted Lin Detian as a formality and honoured his position, since the position of the Chief couldn't be avoided.

However, suddenly his eyes got attracted towards similarly sitting on the truck, Lin Shiqing. Under the faint moonlight, her appearance was looking even more beautiful. As for this young lady, always being harsh Lin Xiuwu could never allow anything wrong happen to her. He thought that in future, whoever would be

able to marry her, would have an enormously big fortune.

But, at such a dangerous place, why did she come and what did she want to do?

“Xiuwu, you continue to be on guard, if there will be any critical situation or information, report me anytime, instantly. Thunder, we will proceed towards that factory, and we will stop, when we will be one kilometre away from it.”

Lin Detian commandingly said that.

“Chief, approaching close to it might be dangerous, you

Thunder hesitated a bit, while at the same time, he also gazed at Lin Shiqing, who was sitting upright nearby. He just wanted to make both of them stay in the periphery of the outer encirclement ring.

“All right, since we have you for our protection, so I can feel relieved.”

Lin Detian smiled.

“Yes.”

By clenching his teeth, Thunder nodded. He wasn't complacent because of Lin Detian's trust on him, instead, he felt increased burden on his shoulders now.

No matter what kind of dangerous situation Lin Detian would encounter

ahead, he would still stand firmly on the front line, and would never plan to shrink back because of the danger. And this was his special trait which was highly admired by Thunder.

“Young lady, you

Lin Xiuwu looked at Lin Shiqing, as he wanted to make her get off the truck and stay here in the outer circle.

“No need to say that, I will stay together with my dad.”

Lin Shiqing firmly said, simultaneously looked at Ye Feng and Su Menghan, and thought that if these two people didn't flinch, then how could she retreat in the midway? Wasn't it an abandoned factory where the masked man was, what was there to be afraid of?

However, when she noticed that the relationship between Ye Feng and Su Menghan was very intimate, an inexplicable sour thought immediately took birth in her heart. The engagement which her Grandfather had arranged earlier, if it involved some other man, then most likely without demur, she would have gone wild with joy and had also agreed to it, but this wasn't the case with Ye Feng.

Su Menghan was really lucky since she had this kind of man.

What a pity, Lin Shiqing was that sort of person, who always used to wear a mask to live peacefully, when would she meet with the right man who would truly make her heart beat for him? It was very strange, regarding Cai Shaohong's death, she wasn't sad a bit, on the contrary, she was very curious to know that who would have such a big enmity and so much hatred for Cai Shaohong, that he

went so far and even destroyed his corpse without leaving any trace?

“Protect the Chief and Miss Lin. Everyone get ready for the battle, Let’s go!”

Thunder waved his hand and issued the order.

Both military trucks quickly started and proceeded towards the inside circle of the abandoned factory. Ye Feng, Su Menghan, Lin Detian and Lin Shiqing, all of them were sitting in the backseat of the open-air truck. In front of their truck, there was the first truck, which was being led directly by Thunder.

Under the dim light and silence of the night, the sound of the trucks, running on the road, was very obvious.

Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search Technique all around, simultaneously became all prepared to alert the surrounding people at any moment.

Enormously overgrown huge weeds were widely spread and had already captured the surrounding area, the entire abandoned factory was also surrounded by wilderness. This place was too far away from the city, even if someone wanted to develop this region, but how to do that, it would be a big problem.

Under the dim light of the night, when all sides were surrounded by the darkness, in such a case, special tools were required, otherwise, it was simply impossible to see things too far away. Only a man’s height tall weeds could be seen in this darkness, almost everywhere, swaying in the icy-cold night wind, like ghosts and demons.

The gloomy environment, along with the repeatedly blowing heart-chilling, icy-cold night wind, making Su Menghan shrink her body, and lean upon the arms of Ye Feng.

However, suddenly, several strange things, with an extremely fast speed, rushed out from the huge weeds present on both sides of the road, and with a lightning fast speed, they fired toward the two trucks.

Altogether there were eight hairy strange freaks in front of them right now!

Ye Feng immediately reacted, subconsciously enclasped Su Menghan, and became all set to immediately act as per the required situation.

“Enemy attack!”

Besides Ye Feng, the NSA soldiers, who were also responsible for the security, they also similarly discovered the silhouette of the invading enemy, and made a loud noise at once to alert everyone. Unfortunately, their quick reaction was still too slow, the speed of the opposite party was beyond their imagination.

Bang!

Altogether eight long-haired strange fellows, in tattered windproof long coat, crossing over hundred meters distance in just 32 steps, had already arrived at the side of those two military trucks. And then, immediately few of them abruptly came in front of the truck and obstructed the momentum of the advancing truck!

Bang!

“Roar!”

In the astonishment of the vigorous strength of those strange creatures, the two trucks, without prior indication, overturned and rolled away with a massive velocity. The incredible strength of these freaks was actually very dreadful and instantly caused a predicament!

“Protect the Chief!”

Two members of the National Security Agency, immediately supported Lin Detian with their arms, and directly jumped down the truck along with him, and safely rolled to one side! Moreover, Lin Shiqing also got the similar treatment, after all, she was also a very important personage, so, the first priority was to ensure their safety.

Soon, the entire truck was completely overturned in the field, however, the NSA members onboard, including the driver, showed a rapid reaction, and consequently, no casualty took place.

However, after getting off the truck, the warriors promptly raised their precision firearms in their hands, and immediately fired in a split second. More than a dozen of blue-ray bullets, with a terrifying speed, which was three times higher than the velocity of sound, were shot towards those long-haired strange fellows, who had originally overturned the truck.

Ping! Ping! Ping!

Those strange freaks, who had just overturned a heavy truck, were already

staggering. At this moment, it was quite impossible for them to escape, hence, when they were shot all of a sudden, the might of huge bullets exploded and formed several holes all over their body.

As a consequence, six of them fell to the ground on the spot, and were no longer moving. However, one of them was still struggling to get up, without any extra effort, he smoothly pounded down a punch towards one of the members of the NSA.

Bang!

Under the night sky, the fresh blood splashed out, just like how the watermelon juice splashed, it was really a horrible sight.

A strange force, which was capable enough to overturn such a heavy truck so easily, if used to smash the head of the person, then what would be the scene?

But surprisingly, another strange creature, who was a little hurt and was unable to stand up, since he was the one who tried to stop the momentum of the running truck, roared at once, and rolled on the ground, advancing directly towards Lin Shiqing, like a crazy beast.

“Protect Miss Lin!”

Several members of the NSA immediately reacted by putting out their guns and all set to shoot.

However, the speed of that long-haired giant was way too fast!

Almost within an instant, when Lin Shiqing was just trying to turn over and stand up, suddenly she smelled the stench smell, and the next moment, an ugly hairy freak, arrived in front of her and stretched his hand to grab her.

As a quick reaction, the beautiful pupil of Lin Shiqing suddenly contracted, what was this monster afterall?!

Chapter 126 -> The golden sword!

Before coming to this place, Lin Shiqing hadn't thought that she would bump into such a strange scenario.

Originally she thought that this abandoned factory would be just an ordinary hiding place, where the masked man would have hidden Xiao Qi after abducting her. And he did so, just to threaten Lin Clan and talk about his conditions at this place. However now when she looked back, she felt that she was really completely mistaken.

The whole body of this strange fellow was covered with hair, he was looking very scrawny, with deep eye sockets, but still his strength was surprisingly huge, even his eyes were emitting the terrifying green light. What actually was this thing?

Could it be that indeed this abandoned factory had some hidden secrets about Cai Shaohong and Pei Keang Group, just like how Ye Feng had pointed out earlier?

She couldn't help but make a quick conjecture, however, the present situation didn't allow her to think much.

It was really frightening to see how that long-haired strange fellow overturned such a heavy truck like a toy. And now, just within a fraction of second, he appeared in front of Lin Shiqing, almost very close to her body, that now she could even smell an odour of his mouth, which was extremely disgusting and almost made her puke.

Before she could get the time to get up and run, she was suddenly caught by him. Her slender white thighs were already grabbed by that strange person.

“Roar!”

He roared loudly, simultaneously he made an effort with his hands and lifted her whole body up, thenafter he quickly placed her in front of him, as a shield.

This guy actually knew how to hold her as a hostage!

“Don’t shoot!”

Immediately Thunder ran over, his facial expression also immediately changed!

A hairy freak, who was already disabled, still had the power to smash the head of one of his team members into bits, like smashing watermelons. Although he was instantly killed by other members, but the death of his team member couldn’t be reversed, he couldn’t be brought back to life again.

At present, the situation was very risky, Lin Shiqing was already grabbed in a tight grip of one of the hairy freaks, and was being used as a hostage!

“Shiqing!”

Seeing the chaos caused by the sudden appearance of these strange fellows, Lin Detian was long thrown into a flustered state, but the moment his eyes fell on his daughter, he couldn’t bear it and his heart suddenly somewhat tightened.

As soon as these strange things came in front of his sight, he already understood the present situation and also guessed a number of possibilities. Not only that, he also secretly blamed himself for this carelessness. In case, something bad happened to Lin Shiqing here in front of his eyes, he would never forgive himself for this, and would always rebuke himself throughout his life.

At this moment, the heart of almost everyone present on the scene jumped to their throat. In this bafflement, they didn't afford even blinking their eyes, they were just constantly, very fixedly staring at Lin Shiqing and that long-haired strange person.

“Hmm

They saw how Lin Shiqing was strangled by that hairy weirdo and was lifted up in the midair. Because of that, she was feeling suffocated and was continuously struggling to release herself. However, all of her efforts went into vain. This strange fellow, who had the capability to overturn a truck, how could he be compared to a mere college-going girl?

“Everyone retreat.”

An eerie voice with a touch of haziness reverberated in all directions like a voice of ghosts and demons in general : “Otherwise, I will let you see a good play, TSK~! Such a soft skin and tender flesh young girl she is, my treasures would definitely love this toy very much, however, I don't know she can withstand it or not.....”

“Who are you?”

Lin Detian heard the sound, and very calmly asked that.

Very proficiently, he tried to establish a peaceful interaction with the opposite party, since he was already afraid that in the absence of proper exchange of words between the bilateral parties, his daughter would have to ultimately suffer a lot.

“You don’t need to control anything, just do as I say!”

That gloomy voice burst out again, but this time, he shouted very loudly, immediately followed by a boorish move by that long-haired weirdo, he raised his hand to tear Lin Shiqing’s clothes apart from her body.

“Everyone draw back!”

The complexion of Thunder paled down , he didn’t wait for Lin Detian to react and immediately passed the ordered.

As a result, all the members of the National Security Agency present on the scene immediately complied with his order and retreated.

“TSK, also withdraw the troops who were assigned outside this place, in the outer ring, otherwise, my special play might begin immediately, and as for your knowledge, I always keep my promise

The hazy sound still continued passing on.

The big hand of that hairy freak actually didn’t stop a bit, it was already just

one centimetre away from the chest of Lin Shiqing, and it seemed that any moment her clothes would be ripped off.

The heart of each and everyone present on the scene, including Lin Detian, literally stopped beating, if anything happened to Lin Shiqing, then the consequences would be simply unimaginable!

What did he want to do? Could it be that in this kind of place, he wanted to defile her?

Extremely hateful!

Shua!

As when Lin Detian was about to order Lin Xiuwu, making him leave the place along with his group, exactly then, suddenly a golden light flashed right behind the head of that hairy weirdo.

Puff!

In a blink of an eye, the swift and fierce sword light cleft the hairy strange person from top to bottom into two parts. That golden light was incomparably bright, which dazzled the eyes of everyone.

This strange thing, who had the capability to overturn a truck, was so easily cleft into two halves merely by a sword!

Bang.

After getting hit by the sword, that freak loosened his hands and softly dropped Lin Shiqing. Although she fell, but in the hands of another figure, in the midair.

A split second was more than enough to change the table, however, the reaction speed of the people was not as fast as the occurrence of the incident. They quickly looked towards that direction with a rapt attention and saw a man, with a white grimace face mask, was standing in front of them, holding a golden sword in his hand.

The Masked man!

Surprisingly, this kind of dangerous situation took place, but still, they didn't move!

However, this incident jolted the brain of both Lin Detian as well as Thunder, and they remained stunned for a while. They felt that the action they took beforehand was simply absurd.

The masked man was certainly Ye Feng.

Just when the truck was being overturned by that hairy freak, during that period, Ye Feng quickly held Su Menghan, and cast out Invisibility and Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace at the same time. After that, very quietly, along with her, he rushed to the distant place, where they couldn't be found by anyone.

Thereafter, in order to hide Su Menghan properly, he cast Camouflage Technique on her, to ensure that no other person could find any trace of her.

Furthermore, he also exhorted her not to come out from this place at any cost.

Afterwards, by putting on a mask, he ran out and suddenly the scene appeared before his eyes, where Lin Shiqing was caught by that strange freak.

Quietly, he arrived behind the long-haired person, and started condensing Zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. As a result, immediately the golden sword light flashed and sliced that weirdo into two halves.

After reaching ten years Cultivation, the colour of his Zhenqi sword actually turned into golden!

“Are you all right?”

Ye Feng looked at her, as he asked that in a sinking voice. He actually noticed that she had already suffocated long enough to pass out. However, fortunately, she still had retained a trace of consciousness, which let her know that she was saved by the masked man.

Her condition was so miserable, it wasn't just because that freak really made a huge effort to choke her neck badly, but also his smell was really intolerably disgusting. Luckily, Lin Shiqing could sustain it till now, and didn't lose her consciousness.

“Thanks for

Lin Shiqing said that somewhat weakly.

“We have the common enemy.”

In a low voice, Ye Feng said that. One hundred meters of the range were already under the radar of his Soul Search Technique, but still, he didn't find any suspicious traces. That loud ghastly man's voice, which had appeared just a moment ago, was actually transmitted from very far away.

Was he one of the accomplices of Cai Shaohong?

Now Ye Feng could almost affirm that this abandoned factory was Cai Shaohong's secret place, where he used to hide his army of strange fellows. Moreover, he also believed that his other accomplices were also present here, at this moment.

“This person is our friend.”

Lin Detian throat somewhat dried up, seeing the masked man holding his daughter in his arms, he didn't dare to be negligent, and at once made a loud voice : “Excuse me, may I ask

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

At this moment, Ye Feng suddenly reacted, since he sensed something strange appeared in the scope of his Soul Search Technique. Soon a figure flashed under the dim light of night, immediately followed by three sharp flying knives. These hidden weapons were thrown directly towards Lin Detian.

“Are they targeting Lin Clan? Also, the hidden weapon was played pretty well.”

Ye Feng sneered, instantly he loosened his grip and let Lin Shiqing fell to the ground. Thenafter, he promptly made a stance, it was Dragon Claw Hand Technique! In a flash, his Zhenqi sprang out spatially from his body, and by coordinating Soul Search Technique, he easily captured the trajectory of those three sharp flying knives.

Shua. Shua. Shua.

With his one hand, he pulled all the three hidden weapons and totally nullified this sneak attack in a tweak. If Ye Wentian would have seen him doing so, he must have exclaimed aloud and would have branded him as a genius, since he was able to apply a second layer of Dragon Claw Hand in this way!

Chapter 127 -> Zhui Hun, the armed escort

The incident was so sudden which left everyone, including Thunder and Lin Detian stunned for a moment. They actually couldn't even react, only heard the sound of three hidden weapons fell to the ground.

“What just happened?”

Even though they had night vision device, but still they totally failed to catch these flying hidden weapons in the darkness, whose speed was equal to the speed of a bullet in general. However, if it were not Ye Feng, who had made a prompt move and got rid of them, then the life of Lin Detian should be considered as done for, since these hidden weapons had certainly targeted his life.

Until the landing sound of these weapons echoed everywhere, Thunder and the remaining NSA soldiers couldn't even notice a thing. After that sound, they looked down through their night vision devices and saw few weapons lying on the ground, around Lin Detian's feet, which immediately brought a huge change in their complexion.

Someone wanted to assassinate Lin Detian!

Although, the remaining 29 NSA soldiers didn't get any direct order from Thunder, but still, they instantaneously ran up to the side of Lin Detian at the same time and surrounded him tightly. Meanwhile, they also withdrew their various kinds of precision equipment, and thus by this way they immediately entered the highest garrison state.

Soon, a high-altitude flashlight bomb shot, which lit the surrounding several kilometres of area up in a flash. Now, it could be clearly seen that the area, almost a kilometre away from the factory, was extremely shabby and had totally deteriorated, the entire periphery was also piled up with tall overgrown weeds.

In addition, those eight hairy freaks had been shot and slain, and their corpses were sprawled on the ground, accompanied by two overturned military trucks, which were also in a huge mess, with several parts scattered everywhere.

While on the other side, intelligently, by taking advantage of this light, Lin Detian lowered his head and as soon as he saw three sharp knives lying around his feet, he gawked.

“The armed escort, Zhui Hun?”

Actually, he recognised the identity of the opposite party at once!

“Chief, did you recognize him?”

Thunder’s complexion suddenly dignified : “I had heard around five years ago, there was a man, named Zhui Hun, who was known as the great armed escort, was a cut-throat killer of this arena, and had a very special expertise in killing people while being invisible. Later on, especially, he was listed by the government as the most wanted criminal, however, ever since that announcement, he vanished without leaving any trace

“Correct, I had never thought he would unexpectedly appear at a place like this.”

Lin Detian frowned as he said that, then he raised his head and looked ahead around twenty meters away where Ye Feng was. This young masked man had such a terrific capability to stop the sneak attack of that armed escort, and on top of that, in the midair, and that also quite easily, his martial arts skill was indeed remarkable!

The armed escort, Zhui Hun?

At this moment, Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique was still active, therefore, he easily heard the conversation between Lin Detian and Thunder, from quite afar. Now he was aware that this time, the enemy was the master of hidden weapon, and was also the most wanted criminal. Apparently, he must be one the puppets of Cai Shaohong.

Cai Shaohong must have known this armed escort from quite a long time, and most probably, he would have relied on him at the time of the extermination of Southern Heavenly Gate. As a profound cultivator and the great master of the hidden weapon technique, exterminating a gang of the secular world, wouldn't have been a big deal for him.

Holding a long golden sword, Ye Feng was looking around, all alert from the surrounding, so that if any suspicious character would enter his 100 meters of range, he would immediately act!

Moreover, just a moment ago, Lin Shiqing, who was thrown on the ground by him, got hurt in her buttocks, and as a reflex action, she couldn't endure but lightly produce a "hissing" sound.

However, she was not that kind of pampered and spoiled young lady. She recovered at once, by propping her hands against the ground, she stood up, but

her captivating silhouette appeared somewhat weak. Immediately she threw her glances all around, and shouted out: “Where is Xiao Qi?”

She had already caught her breath by now, and at this moment, a thought hit her mind all of a sudden. Her best friend Xiao Qi, wasn't she brought here, then she would be certainly in danger, right?

Seeing his father, Lin Detian was almost assassinated, her heart was already hopping crazily, so how couldn't she think of Xiao Qi, who was already going through lots of sufferings? If it were not that nearby standing masked man who rescued her, she would certainly have also suffered a mishap.

Quietly, she looked at Ye Feng who was standing nearby, holding a long golden sword, and she thought that having this kind of courageous masked man around could really render a very strong sense of security.

Who exactly was he after all?

Why did he wear a face mask?

She was really ashamed of herself for completely misunderstanding him before.....

“Jee Jee.”

Zhui Hun's gloomy voice echoed in all directions, like a ghost : “Where is that young lady of Xiao Clan, shouldn't you ask this from the person who is standing next to you, Miss Lin?”

As soon as she heard his words, she turned her head and looked sideways towards Ye Feng, her beautiful facial cast at once got infected with a hint of doubt.

Without waiting for the people to respond, he continued saying hazily : “Mo Jiuge, indeed your stratagem and strategy are worth praising, who could have thought that you have been planning this for quite a long. However, in the end, you betrayed Miss Long, didn’t you? Now, your new plan is to take hold of this young lady of Lin Clan, right? Pretty good, Jie Jie, whether it is martial arts world or common world, you want to be on the top in both areas, by reaching the highest power point, which is just round the corner

These words fell and all of a sudden gave a powerful shock to everyone present on the scene.

Subconsciously, Lin Shiqing drew back a few steps, simultaneously, somewhat alarmed, she gazed at Ye Feng with a bit of bewildered expression. However, not very far away, Lin Detian, Thunder and all the soldiers of the NSA suddenly buckled up, their spirit also rose up all at once, even more than before.

Could it be that this masked man and that armed escort were fellow accomplices?

It seemed that everything was already vividly explained!

Killing Cai Shaohong? Destruction of evidence? And currently, at this moment, he appeared to rescue Lin Shiqing, didn’t he?

No matter what Cai Shaohong had done here in this country, at present, the goal of this masked man was crystal clear: Approaching Lin Clan! Hearing the rumour that Cai Shaohong was Lin Shiqing's beloved, this kind of hindrance for the ambitious masked man, Mo Jiuge, was certainly very baffling, so naturally wouldn't he try all means to get rid of him?

However, no one could see that under the white grimace face mask, Ye Feng was also little disturbed and suddenly frowned.

It was obvious enough that Zhui Hun's words had instantly implanted the conflicting views in the minds of everyone and had also distracted their focal point, making the attention of everyone including Lin Detian shift from him to Ye Feng. It was an undisguised trap, and he also turned out very successful in establishing it!

However, this guy, how could he know the relationship between Ye Feng and Long Wan'er? Could it be that this guy had seen Li Hua of Heavenly Sword Palace before?

Since it was totally impossible for Long Clan to publicise this matter outside. Besides, his relationship with Long Wan'er, it was also known to Ye Wentian, but it was highly unlikely that he would leak this matter out. Hence, it could only be inferred that this matter had spread only from the mouth of that crazy and perverted man, Li Hua. It seemed that soon the whole martial arts world would know this matter

Naturally, this thing didn't matter to Ye Feng at all, as he could see that it was the identity of Mo Jiuge which was misunderstood here. At present, the vital matter of this moment was he must find and kill Zhui Hun, otherwise keeping such a profound hidden weapon master, lurking around in the shadows, would definitely let people have sleepless nights.

“Cut the crap.”

In a lower voice he said that and hurriedly grabbed Lin Shiqing standing nearby him. Then he looked ahead towards Thunder and Lin Detian : “Don’t move heedlessly, just ensure your safety, that would be pretty enough.”

Ye Feng was disinclined to explain anything, just uttered two or three sentences which were also inexplicable. He believed that as one of the senior officials of the country, Lin Detian would have understood by now that what he was supposed to do in this situation.

“Remain on standby, and stay alert all the time!”

Indeed as expected, Lin Detian was very an experienced and attentive person, therefore, without further ado, he promptly issued an order. Even though he saw his daughter, Lin Shiqing was captured by Ye Feng right before his eyes, but still, he maintained a calm face, without letting any disturbing thoughts take over his mind. Whatever the goal of this masked man was, at least for now, he was on the same side where they all were.

And the current situation was their opponent Zhui Hun was hiding somewhere in a secret place!

Meanwhile, Lin Shiqing, whose arm was tightly held by Ye Feng, also started struggling : “You let me go!”

Afterall, she was young, her temperament wasn’t as calm as her father, Lin Detian.

“Less wordy.”

Naturally, Ye Feng had grabbed her, as he wanted to use her as a hostage, so as to avoid the attack of any advanced hidden equipment of the NSA soldiers, which could make him incautiously meet with a disaster.

He slipped his hand around her soft slender waist, and immediately his Zhenqi started moving under his foot, and the next moment, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was cast out.

Since it seemed that Zhui Hun wouldn't show up on his own, therefore now, Ye Feng really needed to act on his own initiative, to track him down. He already had Soul Search Technique in his command which was equal to having the precision radar of hundred meters of range. As soon as the opposite party entered his hundred meters scope, he could never escape from his keen sensation.

Holding her body, all of a sudden Ye Feng's stature vanished right in front of everyone, just like a ghost in the night sky.

“Over there!”

Hastily, Ye Feng dashed towards the direction of the factory, by depending upon his Soul Search Technique, instantaneously he sensed the presence of a person hiding in the thick bushes, besides, his position was quite covert. Undoubtedly he was Zhui Hun!

Chapter 128 -> Factory explosion

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Ye Feng had barely approached that covert place, but immediately sensed the presence of a person's silhouette hiding in the dense bushes. However, incisively, back to back, three flying sharp knives were fired towards his face, making him a little surprised. A surprise attack!

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Promptly, his long golden sword brandished in his hand, by relying on his Soul Search Technique, instantly, very precisely, he hit those flying knives and nullified that sneak attack. After that, he raised his head, looked ahead, and saw that the person's shadow was setting out to escape.

The armed escort, Zhui Hun had been terrorising the whole world for so many years, furthermore, his primary cultivation skill was Hidden Weapon Technique. And as a trivial result of his practice, his agility had already reached a high degree of proficiency to the extent where even after displaying Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Ye Feng turned out totally incompetent to catch up with him.

Instantaneously, that figure sprang a dozen meters towards the direction of the abandoned factory, just like a crafty fox in the night.

"Does he want to run away?"

Without further ado, Ye Feng once again abandoned Lin Shiqing and promptly

released Dragon Claw Hand!

In a short while, his Zhenqi sprang out from his body and fled towards Zhui Hun's direction, like a virtual Dragon Claw. Soon, it grabbed his shoulders and waist firmly and started pulling him back.

However, unfortunately, the opposite part was already well prepared, after all, he must have seen Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand Technique a moment ago, when Ye Feng had tried to block those flying knives advancing towards Lin Detian

At this critical moment, suddenly that shadow's inner qi burst out, making his stature turn at once, and very smoothly, he slipped out of the clutch of Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand. Now, Ye Feng could feel that this person had definitely more than two decades Cultivation, might be even up to thirty years!

Zhui Hun had been moving across the country for last five years, and had also handled plenty of ruthless and pungent affairs. Moreover, he was listed as the most wanted criminal by the government, naturally, his Cultivation was beyond one's imagination.

If Ye Feng hadn't possessed ten years Cultivation at present, he would never have dared to pursue him rashly.

"My Cultivation is still extremely low, or else I would have solely relied on Dragon Claw Hand Technique and would definitely have stopped him from running away"

Seeing the opposite party still running away, Ye Feng didn't hesitate and again held Lin Shiqing as a hostage. While embracing her soft and delicate body in his

arms, he hastily cast out Invisibility and Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace at the same time!

As for Lin Shiqing, since she was once again thrown by him, which made her heart already very annoyed, but she couldn't flare up at this moment. Her beautiful face turned red, as she thought that how shameless this masked man was, although he was pursuing that armed escort, but why did he still bend on having her as a hostage?

She also felt that in this chaotic situation, her whole body was constantly being taken advantage by this masked man over and over again. The thing not ended here, because of him, every now and then, the weeds were slapping on her smooth face and exposed thighs, making her strongly feel that tonight was really one of the worst nights ever since her birth.

As for Ye Feng, it had become a necessity for him to take her as a hostage, just to ensure his safety. Because he couldn't guarantee that whether it was Lin Detian or Thunder, ever since they had listened to Zhui Hun's words, they would trust him or not.

Also, the NSA soldiers, who were capable enough to deal with a martial artist, would definitely have some hidden means with them right now, therefore Ye Feng had to ensure his security by all means. He thought that using her as a hostage would demotivate them and would also prevent them from acting rashly.

Carrying Lin Shiqing in his arms, his stature vanished, and with a breakneck speed, he rushed behind him to chase him down. The more he got closer to the abandoned factory, the more he turned cautious, like not to touch any weeds or wildflowers, also not to produce any sound of the footsteps.

The dark shadow of Zhui Hun escaped all the way towards the door of the factory and hid behind the edge of the half-collapsed wall. But he was still cautious, since he had abundant of bubbling doubts going on in his heart right now.

Where did that masked man disappear?

Had he given up?

Sneakingly, he stuck his head out to see outside the factory. Under the dim light of the night sky, the towering dense weeds were billowing in the wind. However, neither he noticed any trace of a person's shadow, nor heard any suspicious sound.

But somehow, he always felt a chill in the air invading his whole body, making him still maintain the vigilance.

He had a huge trust on his instinct, and on that basis, he felt that he was still in danger!

"Hmm, I am a proficient Cultivator with three decades Cultivation, but still am I afraid of him, a fledgeling little guy?"

He felt a little funny, but the fact was, indeed the talent of the masked man, Mo Jiuge was extremely formidable and frightful, which was at a whole new level. He had already heard a lot of things about the masked man, like he was a young guy, but could still assign his inner qi away from his body spatially, and could also display the second layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique very easily,

like a genius.

Zhui Hun thought that in case he had to deal with this masked man face to face, then, in that case, his odds of success were emphatically not high. His area of expertise was literally assassinating people while being in the shadow, if he couldn't make a proper utilisation of his agility, then the situation would definitely turn out very unfavourable for him.

“It appears that nobody is chasing me.”

He waited for a moment, and when he saw that no movement took place outside, he felt a little relieved and thought: “Based on my skill, escaping from here won't be a problem for me. Since the assassination of Lin Detian has failed because of that guy, I can't stay here any longer.....”

He stretched his hand towards that semi-collapsed walls and dug some mud for a while, shortly after he pulled a sophisticated remote control out. By holding it in his hand, he finally made up his mind that he had to escape from here as soon as possible.

But right at this moment, a faint voice suddenly resounded in his ear.

“Do you really want to escape? But it's too late now.”

Zhui Hun felt a surge of terrible pain on his thigh like something had been pierced there!

“Shua!”

And the next moment, a blood-curdling screech echoed everywhere but again he turned gloomy, bowed his head, looked towards his wound, and remained surprised for a moment by seeing a golden sword, which attacked him from behind, had actually stabbed his thigh at one fell swoop, and had caused a deep wound there, making his blood rush out crazily

This sneak attack was certainly done by Ye Feng, he came all the way while being invisible and abruptly pierced his sword to cripple the agility of the opposite party.

At present, it had become absolutely impossible for Zhui Hun to flee from here. In the martial arts world, regardless of what kind of dodging agility one possessed, he still had to completely rely on his both legs. The current situation was, his one leg was injured, so how could he still run?

Ye Feng moved closer to him, and carefully observed him for a moment, dressed in skin-tight black clothes, Zhui Hun's stature appeared very thin, his face was covered with a black hood, like a bank robber, and his eyes were very gloomy, resembling a ferocious wolf.

"This remote control, is it used to control these strange people?"

All of a sudden, a sophisticated remote control, which was in Zhui Hun's hands, popped up in Ye Feng's eyes. It was a silvery metal thing, and just by looking at it, anyone could say that it was a high-tech product. But the point was, it seemed that it wasn't the same gadget which was there in Cai Shaohong's basement?

"Wrong, this is the remote control of a bomb!"

Was held under duress by Ye Feng in his bosom, Lin Shiqing looked at that thing and responded right away.

“Bomb?”

Ye Feng’s face turned pale.

“Indeed Miss Lin is very acumen, as she instantly figured this thing out.”

Half-knelt on the ground, Zhui Hun continued saying in an eerie voice : “What a pity, since I have been caught by you, I don’t want to protect my crappy and rotten life anymore.”

His voice barely fell, and Ye Feng saw his hand moved and pressed a red button on the remote control.

“Not good!”

Immediately Ye Feng responded, and while putting his golden sword away, he quickly embraced Lin Shiqing, as he wanted to quickly leave this abandoned factory.

Unfortunately, the opposite party had not only planted bombs in the abandoned factory but had also buried several bombs in the weeds around the factory. As soon as Zhui Hun pressed a button, all the hundreds of bombs got activated at once.

Suddenly, with the loud bang, the flame soared to the heaven!

In this deathly stillness, outside Yanjing city, at such a desolate place, something happened which changed the whole scenario. In a twinkling of an eye, the entire abandoned factory along with its surrounding hundred meters of area, instantly turned into a sea of fire.

“It’s not good, Chief!”

Thunder, who was leading everyone to go forward cautiously, saw a terrible surge of flame in front of him, not very far away from his members, and immediately his complexion changed.

While on the other side, Lin Detian’s complexion also ashen.

The NSA soldiers, based on their search, had figured out that the masked man along with Lin Shiqing had rushed towards the factory. Who would have thought that just in a split second, the entire factory would explode?

Seeing the explosion of this scale, Lin Detian didn’t dare to continue moving on.

Therein, the possibility of Lin Shiqing’s survival had become almost zero now!

Chapter 129 -> Capture the masked man alive!

All of a sudden, Ye Feng's heart skipped a beat and instantly he proliferated his Soul Search Technique, as he saw Zhui Hun's hand pressing the red button.

Soul Search Technique was not only used to observe the surrounding situation within a range, but also to examine the underground situation as well. But, in normal times, there was no need to do that, since it used to heavily consume his Zhenqi.

However now, Ye Feng would certainly not think much.

Because of the proliferation of Soul Search Technique, he immediately found out that several bombs were buried under the ground, around this place. Fortunately, he didn't sense any bomb under his feet. In such a short time, it was impossible to destroy all these bombs, his mind immediately started racing with a lightning speed, and the first thought which crossed his mind was the protection of Lin Shiqing. Therefore, he tightly squeezed her body in his arms, simultaneously waved his long golden sword a few times.

Shua! Shua!

A mere sword gashed opened the ground, which was immediately followed by a sudden eruption of his Zhenqi, causing a terrible airwave, which raised a big layer of mud land!

Without further delay, Ye Feng put away his long sword and pushed Lin Shiqing down directly on the ground, and then he also jumped onto her. Immediately after, a big layer of mud, which was brought about by him, fell down and deeply

buried those two people together underground.

This time, Ye Feng had to ensure her safety at all cost, it wasn't because she was Miss Lin, the daughter of the great Clan, but because she was an innocent person. Therefore, Ye Feng would never allow himself to just watch her helplessly dying like this.

“Ahh.....”

Since she was thrown on the ground and her body was pressed down by Ye Feng, she exhaled a sound out of pain, however, a thick layer of mud had already covered them up, therefore her voice completely got concealed.

Bang!

The sound of a series of bombs detonation burst out, even if they were buried by the thick mud, but Ye Feng could still feel that the ambient temperature suddenly rose up.

“Don't flail about.”

In the meantime, Ye Feng also felt that Lin Shiqing was constantly struggling, therefore he hugged her more tightly, and pressed her heavily under his body.

There was a five-centimetre-thick layer of soil covering their body, but this couldn't 100 % ensure their safety. Might be, there would be some bombs buried around them, already there were altogether more than hundreds of bombs buried everywhere, and if they all exploded together, then not even a shield of five-centimetre-thick soil layer could block the collective power of the

explosion.

The fire was already soaring to the sky, making the surrounding more prone to danger. Unfortunately, just in a moment, the layer of that soil was lifted up, making almost half of the back of Ye Feng bare and soon got exposed to the fire.

Bang!

Out of the blue, one solid steel bar, which was actually sent flying by this explosion and was already burning red in this intense flame, suddenly flew straight towards the place where Ye Feng was.

If by any chance, this steel bar would stab Ye Feng's back, then definitely not even Lin Shiqing, who was pressed beneath him, would be able to escape this blow.

Bang!

However, again at such a critical time, Ye Feng relied on his Soul Search Technique and instantly sensed this flying steel bar which was advancing towards him. Hence, without turning his head, he simply stretched his hand out to grab this burning steel bar and then threw it aside.

Immediately with a loud bang, it got crashed in the semi-collapsed wall, making it suddenly collapse to the ground, while all the broken bricks and tiles caused by that crash, actually rained on Ye Feng's body.

They were surrounded by a huge chaotic situation, but still Ye Feng was stubbornly lying on the ground pressing her under his body. However, at this

moment, he suddenly felt a burning pain in his legs and back, but he couldn't do anything right now except endurance.

Fortunately, there was no buried bomb under their feet, or else they would have been dead by now.

As for that armed escort, his leg was already stabbed and badly injured by Ye Feng, but still, he tried to escape. He merely ran two steps, and suddenly got submerged in a sheet of flame, his whole body instantly caught fire, and he fell to the ground heavily. Soon, the fire turned him into a grilled armed escort.

“Hey.....”

Since Lin Shiqing's body was tightly pressed under Ye Feng's body, therefore she felt a little pain in her chest. Also, why wouldn't she feel this pain, a pair of her beautiful front was quite majestic, and at this time since they were being pressed firmly by Ye Feng, then how couldn't they be in pain?

She could clearly feel how desperately Ye Feng was trying to protect her, however, the present situation was.....

“Hey, your back has caught fire!”

Lin Shiqing was struggling desperately, however, her efforts were of no use, since the strength of Ye Feng was incredibly huge, how easily he sliced that strange person in two halves, a few minutes ago!

“Don't move.”

Ye Feng said in a sinking voice, since she was bothering him a lot, and he clearly knew that her struggling wouldn't do any good for them. If they would jump out then definitely would be burnt to ashes. As for him, since he was an Immortal Cultivator, he had a certain immunity to the ordinary flame, although he would be burnt, but somehow he wouldn't be burnt to death.

On the one hand, the flames were rapidly spreading, while on the other hand, Lin Shiqing was in a very terrible condition, being heavily pressed by Ye Feng, making her more and more suffocated. And quite soon, sweat started oozing from her fair and smooth face.

Hot!

However, Ye feng just looked into her eyes, while still maintaining complete silence, even though his back had caught fire and he had been in a severe pain, but he didn't panic.

But as for her, she simply couldn't dare to imagine that if it were not Ye Feng who had protected her like this, then in what kind of situation would she have been now? The same thing must have happened with that armed escort, Zhui Hun, he would have definitely burnt to crisp by now.

The pain and sufferings of being burnt alive, this mere thought had already shudder her heart from inside. Currently, in front of her, this masked man was not only desperately trying to block the flame approaching her, but had also caught fire and his back was burning badly. And here the stunning point was he still didn't let her suffer the slightest bit

“Although I can't see his expression, but he would certainly be in a severe pain,

wouldn't he?"

At this moment, Lin Shiqing's beautiful pupils were already completely occupied by his white grimace face mask.

It just took a few minutes, and his entire back flared up and completely turned him into a Burning Man!

Bang! Bang!

But, at this moment, the sound of two ammunition explosion passed from the sky, immediately followed by a burst of rainwater, which was actually falling down from the sky. Now, they could feel even from the underground place, that after a few minutes the surrounding fire intensity had started gradually weakening, and finally, only little-scattered flames left.

As the member of the National Security Agency, they had to carry rainfall bomb at all times!

As one of the top fighting force of China, the equipment of the members of the NSA was absolutely top-grade. Under this kind of situation, they finally made use of their equipment, which really turned out very successful. The flame that Ye Feng had carried on the back from quite a long time, was finally extinguished by the pouring caused by the rainfall bomb.

Otherwise, if the fire had continued to go on like this, then it could be assumed that even Ye Feng would have been burnt badly, and barely survived.

"Miss Lin!"

Along with his team members, Thunder rushed towards that direction while shouting loudly. Meanwhile, the fire fighting guns were also being used by them to speedily extinguish the peripheral remaining flames.

Sooner, the NSA members found the corpse of Zhu Hun, who was burnt to ashes. However, this scene instantly made their hearts sank. If such a proficient martial artist Zhui Hun, who had 30 years Cultivation, failed to escape this explosion and was burnt to death, then was there any possibility that Lin Shiqing would still be alive?

Everyone was stunned and their hearts were also overshadowed!

“How is it?”

After the confirmation that there was no danger now, burning with impatience Lin Detian ran up to Thunder and immediately inquired.

“The situation is far from good, since the explosion is very violent, and Miss Lin had been seen in this area, therefore the possibility that she would have luckily escaped, is extremely low.”

Thunder said by keeping his voice down.

But the voice just fell, and one the members of NSA shouted out loudly :
“Captain, Chief, over there, someone is on the hoof!”

As soon as he said this sentence, instantly the eyes of everyone shifted

towards the said direction, where they saw a big pile of bricks and roof tiles. However, immediately after, they again saw a masked figure crawled up, he was the masked man, Ye Feng.

The moment Lin Detian saw him, his blood rushed to his head and his fury suddenly tore his mind apart. If the masked man had shown up here, then didn't it mean Lin Shiqing was also brought here by him? Perhaps, this masked man was lucky enough, as he survived this terrible explosion, but Lin Shiqing

“Catch him alive!”

Without any hesitation, Lin Detian issued the order!

Puff! Puff!

Two unknown strange bullets were almost immediately shot out from the muzzles of the two NSA soldiers.

It seemed like since the masked man had just gone through a massive explosion, therefore he was unable to respond and was shot back to back twice, by two bullets, one on his shoulder and other on his chest. Originally, he wanted to stand up and escape, however, he failed, as he was jolted by those two shots, and soon his all strength was suddenly dropped down to the ground.

Capturing the masked man alive, succeeded!

Thunder waved his hand, leading the several members of the National Security Agency to rush towards the masked man.

Chapter 130 -> Mask uncovered!

Ye Feng felt that carrying on his back, the intense fire had finally got extinguished, which gave him a huge relief. However, without paying much attention towards Lin Shiqing, who was still pressed under his body, he raised his head and shrugged all the broken pieces of bricks and tiles off from his back, and then stuck his head out.

Without looking back, he got the idea who the person was, as he already knew that he was Thunder, advancing towards him, along with his people. Although, without a bit of hesitation, he wanted to use his skills to immediately depart from this place, but at this time, the only thing running in his mind was a feeling of a deep pain in his shoulder and chest.

Actually, he had been shot!

For a moment, Ye Feng's heart was petrified, as he felt that those two bullets had some kind of strange force, which immediately spread throughout his body and pinned down his Zhenqi terrifically.

"His Cultivation was half-suppressed!"

His Cultivation had been shackled for the time being and it had dropped to a five-years of degree. Therefore, originally he wanted to cast Invisibility, but now it had become next to impossible. Fortunately what he had was Zhenqi, if he were an ordinary martial artist with inner qi inside, then as soon as these bullets entered his body, the whole internal forces running within his body immediately failed to respond.

Without thinking much, he struggled to emerge out of the debris. But he failed to grab the chance to leave, since the moment he set his foot out, he was pressed down from his shoulders by the members of the NSA, and immediately the precision rifles were pointed at his head.

"Don't move!"

Standing ten meters away, Thunder pulled out a pistol and also pointed at his head.

Just a moment ago, he had gone through such a violent explosion and had also suffered a heavy injury. Immediately after that, he didn't even get the time to breathe and was immediately shot twice. Therefore, for the time being, he didn't have the ability to resist. He could only raise his head and looked at Thunder and Lin Detian, coldly.

“Where is my daughter?”

Lin Detian walked to the side where Thunder was, and looked at Ye Feng, when he saw a severely burnt injury on his back and his tattered black cloth, his complexion darkened at once.

Although this guy survived this fierce explosion, but could it be because he was buried in a huge pile of bricks and stones at that time? Everything was burnt, then Lin Shiqing

“Dad cough...Keke”

Right at this moment, a faint sound passed from that debris, followed by a white arm stretched out reluctantly, which looked very smooth and exquisite, without any burnt marks, but just had got tainted with some mud.

“Shiqing!”

“Miss Lin!”

Immediately a pleased expression crawled over the faces of a group of people, not only that, Lin Detian's anger instantly changed into joy. Hurriedly people ran towards her, and pulled her up since she was still buried in the huge pile of crushed bricks and stones.

“Keke, Keke”

She was coughing constantly, although was neither burnt nor wounded as she was shielded by Ye Feng, but still she was in discomfort because her chest had been heavily pressed by him and fumigation had also made her suffocate all along.

By this time, she had been finally pulled out. After coughing several times and taking several deep breaths, her condition gradually improved.

“How are you now?”

Lin Detian supported her, as he asked anxiously.

“No, it’s nothing he?”

She shook her head and wiped the oozing sweat from her forehead, as she swept her eyes around the place, and soon noticed that the NSA members had already fallen upon Ye Feng.

“Did you get hurt, go back to the hospital first, here I have your uncle Thunder, who will go along with you.”

Lin Detian said that, as he greeted two National Security members, because he wanted to make them see her daughter off to the hospital first.

“There is no need to do that, I’m all right.”

Lin Shiqing firmly replied, then set out and arrived in front of Ye Feng. While standing still, she looked at him, her beautiful eyes glittered with a complex look, like a starry sky : “No matter who you are, thank you for protecting me, but this can’t become the strong reason for us to let you leave peacefully. ”

Surprisingly, this masked man had protected her, but afterall, wasn’t she taken away by him to the abandoned factory? Besides, this masked man was the pivotal character of this incident, therefore he must be strictly taken under control.

Was this masked man really friends with Ye Feng? Did he already have the relationship with Miss Long, who belonged to the aristocratic Clan of the martial arts world? Still, he wanted to get close to Lin Shiqing, and acquire her favourable impression, so that later on, he could take the control of her entire Clan under his clutch, like boarding the pinnacle of power?

His ambition was truly big.

Although whatever Zhui Hun had said wasn’t true at all, but if one would think logically, then would feel that this possibility was on higher side. Speaking of which, even if there would just be a little possibility of this story, still, Lin Clan could never take a risk and release him easily.

“Inform Xiuwu to make a wide scope search throughout this exploded area, and if he marks anything suspicious, then must immediately report me.”

After issuing this order, he arrived at the side of Lin Shiqing, with his heart overflowing with some doubts.

Had the masked man really saved her daughter?

He glanced at the heap of debris from where these two people crawled out and immediately understood the whole situation, which forced him to admit the fact that this masked guy was still a little manly.

“Thank you for saving my daughter.”

He said that and instantly his thread of conversation took a sudden revolution : “But if you really want to get close to my Clan to fulfil your ulterior motives, then you are gravely mistaken. As of now, just follow us, the truth will be thoroughly investigated, and if you turn up innocent, then I assure you that we never tarnish a genuine person. ”

These words, whether they were said to comfort Ye Feng, or he really meant it, nobody could figure it out. However, he was not so stupid afterall. It seemed that even though he heard whatever said by Zhu Hun, but still treated his words as a possibility. He only had some doubts, since he couldn't bring himself to believe it thoroughly.

Ye Feng heard his statement and his thought process instantly changed the direction, by lowering his voice, he said : “We just have a common enemy. Now the evil person has already died, and since I fall into your hands, apparently it will be very difficult for me to escape.”

“I know fairly well.”

Lin Detian nodded his head to express that he was truly very satisfied with Ye Feng's understanding, he then continued : “First give him two shots again, then send him to the hospital.”

These words fell, and in a flash, changed the colour of Ye Feng's face, this person Lin Detian, he was really handling this affair cautiously, very intelligently. Although Ye Feng was already under their clutch, but still was it really needed to shot him twice again? Ye Feng was actually counting on his strength, which would restore soon, then he could go back and pick Su Menghan up, but now it looked like he must have to draw some other plans.

Puff! puff!

Once again, the same kind of two bullets were fired, which were instantaneously shot on his arm. This kind of bullet had been especially designed to paralyze the meridian points, so that it could temporarily suppress one's Cultivation. After entering the human body, it used to melt and become some kind of strange energy to put down one's power. Besides making the people of martial arts world totally unable to resist, it didn't have any other side effects.

At present, he didn't have the strength left to dodge those bullets, as for now, he could only allow himself to be trampled upon. In a flash, his Cultivation was suppressed and dropped to three years all of a sudden. However, the story not ended here, soon he felt that now he needed a rest of whole night to restore

"Excellent."

Lin Detian said that and then walked away with Thunder, while discussing with him something in a whispering tone: "Four bullets have been shot and what I think is they would be more than enough to suppress his inner qi for at least one week, this way he can't become a threat to us. For now, you carefully search the vicinity and try to find out any suspicious thing, which can be used as the evidence, as you already know that Cai Shaohong's death has become an international issue, therefore we must give a proper explanation to it. "

"Alright."

Thunder nodded and quickly began to arrange his subordinates, to coordinate with Lin Xiuwu's Fourth Guards Regiment soldiers, in their thorough search.

Meanwhile, Lin Detian also nodded, as he felt that a big stone, which was stuck in his heart, had finally fallen to the ground, so long as Lin Shiqing was all right, other things were just like the floating clouds.

Although Ye Feng's Cultivation had been suppressed, but whatever might be the reason, his Soul Search Technique was still active, and with the help of which, he was listening to the whispered conversation of those two men, and thought that the Immortal Cultivator couldn't be compared with an ordinary martial artist. And as a proof, even though four bullets were shot at him by the specially designed guns, but they couldn't have any huge effect on him.

Usually, a martial artist took almost a week to restore his depleted inner qi again. But in his case, it was his Zhenqi which had been suppressed, so he could easily restore it within a night, this was the huge disparity.

While he was occupied by his own thoughts, he felt a sweet fragrance greeted his nostrils all of a sudden, and as a reflex action, he immediately raised his head and a pretty face of Lin Shiqing appeared before his eyes.

“Why don’t you go to the hospital first? Your injury is not minor.”

Her lips slightly moved, and a crisp voice resounded, apparently there was a visible hint of concerns peeping out from her eyes.

“Hang on, take off his mask first.”

Right at this moment, suddenly Lin Detian’s voice burst out, as he cautiously said : “We must see who he really is before sending him to the hospital, it won’t take lots of time.”

Ye Feng heard that, and his heart shivered with his sudden statement.

Now he had only three years Cultivation, so in order to get away from here, he at least needed a rest of few hours to get the job done! Literally speaking, for the next few hours, he had to go through lots of sufferings.

A member of the NSA pulled his mask conveniently and uncovered his white grimace face mask.

Instantly, all the surrounding people, who were already making guesses regarding his face from quite a long time, gawked as soon as his true appearance appeared in front of their eyes.

Chapter 131 -> Xiao Qi shows up

Once the white grimace face mask was taken off, the face appeared in front of them, made everyone present on the scene gawk for a moment.

Very Ugly!

Just a glance was enough, and anyone could say that his facial features were almost similar to a pig, one eye was gigantic while the other was quite small, not only this, they were quite afar from each other, which made them look extremely wretched and dreadful. The things not ended here, the bridge of his nose was caved in, however, the nostril was upwards in the air, making his nose hairs visibly clear. Furthermore, his mouth was also of enormous size, and the two rows of his teeth were black and yellow in colour, merely looking at them could make any person puke on the spot.

The people present on the spot could easily dare to pledge that there couldn't be anyone in this world who could be uglier than him!

This world could actually have this much uglier person!

The gorgeous black eyebrows of Lin Shiqing immediately wrinkled, even though she usually didn't judge people solely by their appearances, however at present, she really couldn't withstand seeing his disordered facial features. His appearance was indeed way too shocking.

Meanwhile, Ye Feng also observed the expressions their eyes reflected, and secretly chuckled in his heart, could they understand his Camouflage? Indeed as expected, he changed his appearance into Mo Jiuge's, which all of a sudden made everyone dumbfounded including Lin Detian. Regarding this strategy, Ye Feng hadn't planned earlier to use Mo Jiuge's appearance when he would be trapped in such a critical, because once he used this appearance than wouldn't he be forced to appear with the same face before Long Wan'er

"Ahem, well, take him to the hospital first."

Without further ado, Lin Detian beckoned with his hand, also there was a touch of embarrassment in his tone.

Even he also thought that the reason why this man always wore a mask was because he wanted to hide his identity, however, had never expected that it would be just to cover up his ugliness. Indeed, there was nothing wrong in having an awfully ugly face, but it was also not right to scare people with such a face, no wonder he developed the habit of wearing a mask.

Unless he chose to get plastic surgery done in order to fix his face, or else Lin Detian really thought that not a single girl would ever fall for him. However, with this pair of countenance, even if he would go for plastic surgery, he might baffle a group of plastic surgeons for sure

But the bewildering point was, in the martial arts world, did Miss Long have seen his face and already knew how he really looked like?

Lin Detian had a very strange expression on his face right now.

“Just put it on.”

Lin Shiqing couldn't stand to continue watching him any further, and felt that it was too disrespecting for him. Therefore she snatched the white face mask from the hands of one of the members of the NSA and put it back on his face.

Upon seeing this, Ye Feng's tears suddenly started streaming down his face, this beautiful girl really was very considerate, could it be that she already knew that his Cultivation had been suppressed, therefore he couldn't maintain his Camouflage for a long time?

However, the action of Lin Shiqing actually proved that the appearance of Mo Jiuge was really ugly. In addition, this guy Mo Jiuge wasn't only a big playboy, but had an awful skeleton type personality. Therefore, Ye Feng once again felt that if his beautiful master, Su Feiying had married this guy Mo Jiuge, then it would have absolutely left countless people with broken hearts.

Ye Feng was still under the control of two members of the NSA, and at this time, when Lin Detian was about to wave his hand, making those people take him away, suddenly Thunder, who was standing beside him, received a search report from one of his men, and he promptly shouted:

“Just wait for a moment.”

Thunder, this 35-36 years old man, covered with a kind of vigorous and

resolute temperament, stared at Ye Feng with a dignified look and then said: "Evidently your injury is not very grave, besides, there are several key issues with us, rather you might help us now in clarifying those points. "

"What did you find?"

Lin Detian asked.

"A half part of a white grimace face mask, which is exactly the same as his mask."

Without beating about the bush, Thunder directly said : "That mask has not been completely destroyed in the explosion, most likely that armed escort, Zhui Hun had made preparation in advance, in order to pretend to be him at times."

"Is it right?"

Lin Detian glanced at Ye Feng's face mask, as his eyebrows slightly wrinkled.

"My friend, we are now moving towards your all actions for security consideration, still asking you to don't mind too much."

Thunder turned his head, and fired a question at Ye Feng : "Now may I ask, wasn't it you who injured Lin Xiuwen?"

Although Thunder was directly under Lin Detian, as his subordinate, but still had his own thought process, and also the information gathered by him was way more than Lin Detian, therefore he firmly believed that he could make a more accurate judgment.

"No."

Ye Feng shook his head decisively. Although during that time, he had grabbed and hit Lin Xiuwen until he passed out, but that was not sufficient enough to turn a human into a retard. Certainly, someone else was responsible for this.

"In the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa, we fired a shot and hit someone's thigh, was it you who were shot?"

Thunder inquired again.

"Yes."

Ye Feng nodded, and lightly said : "I admit that I was the one who killed Cai

Shaohong, I don't have any reason to conceal it."

With his full strength, he started operating Star Tomb Tactics in order to dissolve his Zhenqi throughout his body, which would immediately help him in quickly releasing his suppressed Cultivation. And surprisingly, the result was even better than what he had expected earlier. If this trend continued, it wouldn't take even two hours, and he would be able to restore his Cultivation at its peak!

When the time would come, and he could be able to activate his Invisibility, then who could impede his footsteps? Thus under this circumstances, he could speak whatever he wanted with his full energy.

Thunder heard him and somewhat surprisingly gazed at him, as he thought that wasn't he hit by the blue-ray gun? But was it still not enough for him? How could he show the signs of recovery so soon? It seemed that this kid had an amazing healing power.

However, on the other side, on hearing that Cai Shaohong was really killed by him, Lin Detian finally heaved a sigh of relief. But he couldn't control his emotions and immediately threw his glances at Lin shiqing, to his surprise, he discovered a very complicated look was there all over her face. Even though he was her father, but still couldn't figure out that what his daughter was thinking at the moment.

Logically speaking, Cai Shaohong was Lin Shiqing beloved, at least this was what he had heard outside as rumours. But now Cai Shaohong had been murdered and surprisingly the person who had killed him was present in front of her, then in such circumstances, what might be going on in her mind right now? Besides this, just a moment ago, this person had put his life on the line just to protect her life. Didn't it become more complicated now for her?

"So, afterwards, returning to the villa, destroying all the evidence and also slaughtering our three soldiers, wasn't it you who did this?"

Thunder continued firing questions one after another, if this man had really killed three members of the National Security Agency, then in accordance with the special regulations, he must be given death penalty! Regardless of what crime Cai Shaohong had done, but killing the NSA member was definitely an inexcusable offence.

“No, it wasn’t me again.”

Ye Feng shook his head, and continued saying in a sinking voice : “If I didn’t guess wrong, then that person must be Zhui Hun, the armed escort.”

“Well, the last question, regarding Xiao Qi’s kidnapping, were you behind it?”

By this time, a dignified expression had already taken birth on Thunder’s face.

“Once again no, he must be the same person who holds a grudge against Cai Shaohong, and he would have taken her away so as to protect her.”

Ye Feng shook his head, as he placed his own speculation on the platter.

“I hope, whatever you said is true, and you turn out innocent.”

Thunder said that while nodding his head. Then he took a screen device out, pulled out a photograph from the top of it and handed it over to Lin Detian to have a look.

As a result, Lin Detian’s complexion immediately took a 360-degree turn, that picture, which was clicked by a member of the National Security Agency in the factory ruins, had abundant of long-haired freaks who were already blown to pieces in this explosion! Certainly, this fierce explosion had roasted these hairy freaks, but their hairs didn’t get burnt completely.

Was this the proof that Cai Shaohong really helped Pei Keang Group in carrying out the gene medicine’s experiment in this country China?

Unfortunately, there was no evidence to prove that Cai Shaohong was related with all these things. This matter must undergo thorough investigation, they couldn’t merely rely on the masked man’s one-sided statement.

“I hope you can help us in finding the evidence together.”

Lin Detian shifted his vision towards Ye Feng, and faintly said : “I believe you are well aware that we don’t have a single evidence, therefore, we will certainly push you out in front of Pei Keang Group to give an account of everything to them.”

The thought of a true politician, apparently he placed the national interest on top over everything.

However, Ye Feng wasn't at ease at all, so long as he could drag on for some time, he could cast Invisibility and like a heavenly bird, he would fly high, then who could dare stop him?

Right at this time, suddenly a sound of the car passed on from quite afar, in this dark night its dazzling headlights which were on full beam, attracted the attention of surrounding all people.

“Shiqing, Shiqing!”

A lively and cheerful young girl's voice, but with a touch of concern, suddenly burst out from the car.

And as soon as they heard this voice, immediately a pleased expression appeared on their faces, wasn't this the voice of Xiao Qi?

Chapter 132 -> Irrefutable evidence

An ordinary yellow Santana rental car, carrying Xiao Qi, pulled up and moved speedily while getting all jolted along the craggy and rugged weeds, and rapidly approached towards those people.

Meanwhile, Ye Feng also proliferated his Soul Search Technique, and in an instant discovered that the driver of this rental car was actually the skeleton masked man from before, which all of a sudden made his heart calm down, it really was him. Now that he came over along with Xiao Qi, so now it could be considered as the right time had arrived to reveal the truth.

Zi Zi!

Soon Santana stopped not far away from them, and as soon as the vehicle's door opened, Xiao Qi leapt and frisked about to get off the car and ran over joyously, in the meantime, when she noticed that Lin Shiqing as well as Ye Feng, both were also present right now, she finally took a breath of relief.

"Shiqing, you are all right, fortunately."

Quickly, Xiao Qi ran up to her and while patting her chest, said.

"Xiao Qi, I still worry you a lot, right?"

Lin Shiqing moved forward to meet her, however, there was a touch of deep concern hanging on her face: "How about you, didn't you have any accident?"

"No, everything is all right, luckily"

Xiao Qi happily nodded her head, simultaneously; a lively smile bloomed on her face. However, at this moment, she poured her glance towards nearby standing Ye Feng, who was actually being under the clutch of the NSA members, which turned her a bit indignant : "Why have you guys caught him? He is my saviour, if it were not for him, then Cai Shaohong's scheme would already have made its way to the success! "

"Cai Shaohong's scheme? Quickly tell us more about it in detail."

Although, Lin Shiqing was startled by her words, but still, she asked that

hastily.

“All materials are over here.”

Xiao Qi spoke, as she opened her side bag, and drew out a stack of materials. Thereafter, while gazing at Ye Feng, she said in a ringing chuckle : “Relax, everything will be all right, there are lots of evidence with me, they will not embarrass you now.”

However, for Ye Feng, these words sounded like she was trying to comfort a child, making him ultimately unable to bear and his corners of the mouth curled upwards, as he thought that this girl was also very adorable.

“Where does this evidence come from?”

Lin Shiqing received the material, and together with Lin Detian and Thunder, she also followed those materials closely for a while, and with the passing seconds, her facial expression also gradually changed.

These data, they were much more than only a piece of paper, it also had hard disk, USB, and so on. Merely a glimpse of these materials was enough to notice that Cai Shaohong’s name was mentioned all over them, besides that, Pei Keang Group, their evil plans, and several related schemes, which they had planned to implement in this country, were also there in those materials!

Anyone could notice that this evidence couldn’t be gathered in just one day.

“Shiqing, you don’t know that Xiao Zhao, Zhao Mingze. A year ago, his whole family was slaughtered by Cai Shaohong’s people!”

As Xiao Qi said that, the colour of dislike took birth on her lovable young face: “Therefore, this year he changed his surname intentionally to get close to Cai Shaohong, so that he could take his revenge

Actually, it turned out to be him!

The moment Ye Feng heard that, suddenly the thoughts of the daytime banged in his mind, when he had decided to track Cai Shaohong down together with that effeminate guy. That guy, who had been actually lurking around Cai Shaohong for last one year, was one of the members of Southern Heavenly Gate!

However, this effeminate guy and the skeleton masked man, both were the

polar opposite, simply speaking, this guy didn't resemble the skeleton masked at all! Not only the skeleton masked's tolerance ability was splendid, but his thoughts were also exquisite, he had the ability to hold everything in his hands. Most importantly, he knew very perfectly how to seize the opportunity; this talent had made him capable enough to cooperate with Ye Feng successfully while dealing with Cai Shaohong.

“What is the true identity of Xiao Zhao? A year ago when his whole family was killed, only then

Lin Shiqing asked that as she raised her head and looked towards her father, Lin Detian.

However, at this time, Lin Detian and Thunder, both of them simultaneously looked at each other, as if they saw the hidden meaning, the eyes of the opposite party was reflecting : “Regarding the extermination case of Southern Heavenly Gate, so surprisingly the true culprit turns out to be Cai Shaohong, who had pulled strings of Zhui Hun to get this job done!”

“There are plenty of video materials on this hard disk, containing the video recordings of Cai Shaohong's various mysterious actions

Xiao Qi continued explaining that there were these video data, which were entirely related to Cai Shaohong's evil plans, and they would certainly serve as an irrefutable proof!

On the one hand, she kept on explaining things one by one, while on the other hand, she was constantly casting her grateful eyes toward Ye Feng, with this feeling that if he were not there to protect her, her life would have been destroyed by Cai Shaohong. Even now, although she would have been on the hoof, but it would have become a big problem

The graciousness of saving someone's life, this was something which was hard to dismiss from one's mind! Especially to a young girl, who was right onset of puberty, even more than that, for her it was like she had run into the hero, and her tender heart had already framed a picture of admiration for him.

While on the other side, just by looking at the expressions Xiao Qi's eyes were emitting, Lin Shiqing rightaway noticed that something was strange with her. This girl, could it be that she had started getting attracted towards him?

By this time, she had no clue about the situation Xiao Qi had bumped into, at first she was attacked by Lin Xiuwen in her own house, while the next day, she was carried away to the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa, where she confronted with five hairy monsters crisis. One must know that she had been living in the relatively secure area of Yanjing city, in short, she had never seen how people even fight. Now, abruptly she went through this kind of heart-chilling situation, her psychological barrier had collapsed ages ago.

However, during these critical moments, it was Ye Feng, who appeared before her twice wearing a mask, and rescued her from such a dangerous situation, wouldn't it obviously let her have this kind of strange thoughts?

Naturally, Ye Feng didn't notice it at all, because rightnow, his 100 % attention was towards maximum utilisation of even the last bit of his strength to efficiently operate an Immortal Technique "Star Tomb Tactics" to the fullest. Soon by taking advantage of this time, he really succeeded in promoting his shackled Cultivation to five years!

Now the time had knocked the door to go for an action.

He didn't want to go through the tortures and sufferings the NSA might cause to him soon, also Su Menghan would have been still waiting for him.

"Just do so rightaway!"

Finally, he made up his mind, immediately his Zhenqi started seething in his whole body, and then got accumulated in his both legs.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

Under his foot, the huge force suddenly gushed out, making him shrug off the fetters of two National Security Agency members in a flash. Immediately his stature flashed, and leaving behind only a blur afterimage in-situ, he quickly disappeared in the dim light of night!

However, right before leaving the place, he gazed at the skeleton masked man sitting in the yellow Santana car. Coincidentally, the opposite party simultaneously looked at him and made a gesture of thumbs-up. Afterwards, he stepped on the accelerator, moved the steering wheel, and instantaneously started the car, and then unexpectedly turned the car towards the place where

Lin Shiqing and other people were!

“Be careful!”

This instant turn of events, forced the complexion of the people presents on the field, to take a sudden change.

They hadn't thought at all that not even the four bullets could be capable enough to press down his Cultivation for the time being, surprisingly, he was still able to use his inner qi and display a martial arts skill to escape! They certainly didn't have noticed by now that what Ye Feng used to practice was not inner qi, rather it was Zhenqi.

They were already too late to react and think about doing something, and suddenly right at this moment, the skeleton masked man, driving a yellow Santana car, quickly hit to come over!

Hurriedly, a bit anxiously, the people started dispersing to avoid any accident which might happen, who knew that the yellow rental car would arrive in front of them, just to take a rapid turn, and by placing the car buttock towards them, it pulled away all the way super fast.

“Stop him!”

Thunder immediately passed the order, and at the same time, nearby standing NSA soldiers raised their sophisticated firearms in their hands, all set to fire at him.

“Hey Hey, don't act recklessly!”

On seeing this, Xiao Qi stood up at once , blocked their way, while her eyes fixedly stared at them: “They didn't do anything wrong, so, on what ground do you want to catch them?”

As soon as she jumped before them and blocked their path, all NSA soldiers looked at each other in blank dismay, while mutually thinking that fuck, what the crap was this matter?

“Xiao Qi, you

Lin Shiqing said that and suddenly her gorgeous black eyebrows wrinkled up tightly, as she looked towards Xiao Qi, apparently, she had realised something

about this girl by now, could it be that she had reached an agreement with Xiao Zhao ahead of time?

Obviously, by now, she had known that the skeleton masked male of the yellow Santana rental car was Xiao Zhao, Zhao Mingze. And right now, he clearly did this purposely to shield “Mo Jiuge”, and quite obviously, also helped him in escaping. Furthermore, Xiao Qi also stood up to stir up more troubles and prevent the NSA person from pursuing them.

Naturally, at present everyone knew that Zhao Mingze was not Zhao Mingze, but he was the survivor of Southern Heavenly Gate extermination incident

To sum it up, presently these two masked men as well as Xiao Qi, these three people stood in the same battle line!

Due to the strange behavior of Xiao Qi, Lin Shiqing entered the deep thinking phase while looking into the eyes of Xiao Qi, and suddenly a strange thought flashed in her mind, consequently she stood up hastily and blocked the movement of National Security people: “Come on Dad, let it pass, don’t pursue them.”

However her words were little unexpected for her father, Lin Detian, as a result, immediately he frowned, since he couldn’t understand his own daughter’s standpoint: “Why are you acting impetuously today?”

Chapter 133 -> The East China Sea will be in a huge wave

It was indeed unexpected for Lin Detian.

In usual times, his daughter always dealt with any kind of problems very rationally, but right now, it was quite obvious, neither Mo Jiuge nor “Zhao Mingze” were important people to her, then why did she come out and stood firmly, saying not to chase?

Although because of the help of these two men, they would turn out successful in raising the curtain from Cai Shaohong’s crafty plots and machinations and then making them publicly known, but still, they couldn’t let them go!

Even though it appeared now that the evidence was very authentic, but it was still far from true determination, therefore, a more precise investigation would be preferred in this case. Furthermore, in case something went wrong, and these two people couldn’t be found, then what would they do?

“It’s not like I am acting impetuously.”

Lin Shiqing glanced at Xiao Qi, as she smiled, then she shook her head and said: “There is a possibility that Mo Jiuge and Miss Long are in some kind of relationship, therefore, if we grab him, wouldn’t it make Long Clan at loggerheads over this matter? This kind of matter still needs to be dealt safely, if a thorough investigation will continue in the dark, then the decision won’t be late again. ”

She said so, obviously, there was a reason.

Firstly, what Zhui Hun said that Mo Jiuge had a relationship with Miss Long, this was the fact for them as they would prefer to believe this story, rather rejecting it completely. In addition, temporarily they didn’t know anything about what kind of attitude Long Clan generally possessed, so they couldn’t act blindly without thinking.

Secondly, she intentionally raised this topic in front of Xiao Qi, so as to make things clear to her, and dispel her small thoughts. Ye Feng already had an affair

with Miss Long, therefore, Xiao Qi shouldn't try meddling with him!

Lin Shiqing didn't like to judge people by their appearances, but now the point was, Mo Jiuge's face was really something very difficult even for her to digest. Besides, what she had experienced just now, on that basis, it seemed that the character of this guy was also not up to the mark.

The moment she recalled that just now how badly she had been taken advantage by him, immediately blood rushed to her mind. However, when she thought that she had to save her best friend at all cost, immediately her anger was pressed down.

She had never been an unreasonable and persistent person, but somehow she couldn't control herself and turned a bit annoyed. After all, from childhood to maturity, she had never portrayed that something like this would have to her, like how Mo Jiuge pressed her under his body heavily, to the extent where it cause a severe ache in her chest

Lin Detian listened to her explanation, and sighed a bit : "Anyway, you are such a trouble, we are supposed to chase after them, it can't be skipped."

She heard that and a self-satisfied smile spread on her face, it seemed that her father really cared about her viewpoint very much.

What was there within the scope of this country China which couldn't be caught up by the collective strength of Lin Clan and the National Security Agency? Apparently, Lin Detian agreed to her viewpoint and decided to change his current strategy.

"Lin Shiqing, just"

On seeing them giving up, Xiao Qi finally took a breath of relief, however, her heart soon became a little restless, therefore, she ran over and quietly asked: "What did you just say about Miss Long?"

"The masked man, Mo Jiuge has an affair with her, a great beauty. But what's wrong, does this little girl get jealous, ah?"

Lin Shiqing giggled tenderly and tried to tease her.

"How can it be, neither I know him for a long time, nor have any clue how he

looks like, then how possibly with him

Although Xiao Qi said that, but her cheeks immediately turned bright red, she raised her head and looked towards Lin Shiqing's face, and by throwing a giggling smile, said : "By the way, what happened to you just now? Look, there is little mud on your face."

While saying that, she lifted her small hand and stroked on Lin Shiqing's face lightly, so as to brush away the residual mud from her pretty face.

"It's nothing"

Lin Shiqing felt a little embarrassment, definitely, she couldn't bring herself to narrate her everything, like how she was pressed by the masked man under his body, and so on. Therefore, she changed the subject and immediately asked: "This evidence, does Xiao Zhao give them to you."

"Hmm, he said that ultimately he has taken his revenge from his enemy, and the effort he had exerted whole one year in ambushing him, finally paid him off."

While Xiao Qi said that, she was somewhat moved: "Perhaps, later we couldn't see him again."

"Hmm?"

It sounded little strange to Lin Shiqing, how she couldn't see him again?

"He said that he will seek for the new life."

Xiao Qi smiled : "I think, if I were him, I would have also done so, after all, he had taken his revenge, Zhao Mingze, this identity now doesn't need to exist anymore."

"What's his real name?"

Lin Shiqing asked.

"Ah? This, probably I haven't asked"

Xiao Qi gawked as she replied.

Lin Shiqing looked at this sweet, lovable little girl, and thought something while shaking her head helplessly. This little girl was indeed a naturally stupid person.

"In the end, who exactly is he? Last year, when Southern Heavenly Gate was

wiped out completely, there were still two people who survived this incident

Lin Shiqing looked towards the direction where the yellow Santana had vanished, and couldn't help but think about this.

However, at this time, on the other side, both Lin Detian and Thunder were occupied in their own things. They already had assembled people to validate whether the videotape was genuine or fake, besides this, they commanded the soldiers of the Fourth Guard Regiment, to cordon off the vicinity so that they could perform a thorough investigation again tomorrow morning.

In case, any useful evidence fell into their hands, then they could bravely conduct an international confrontation with Pei Keang Group's capital!

"Oh, by the way, Thunder."

Lin Detian thought something and called Thunder aside to discuss over something, his eyebrows slightly wrinkled as he said: "Regarding the East China Sea, is that area fall under the control of Li Feng's squadron presently? Since, Long Clan has already assembled there in the East China Sea, therefore, in my opinion, this kid, Mo Jiuge perhaps will also pass."

"Pretty good."

Thunder complexion sank : "It is said that a fairy has appeared in the East China Sea, therefore several people from the martial arts world have already rushed towards it."

"Well, let's do it like this, using merely a single person Li Feng perhaps won't be enough to resolve this matter."

Lin Detian said that, and thereafter, he submerged himself into a deep thinking mode for a moment. However, promptly he made a one shot decision: "By the time the complete investigation of the things is completed here, you also place your team there in that area. At first, ensure the public security, it doesn't matter who the person is, as long as he dares to disrupt the social order, will be arrested rihtaway."

"Yes, Chief."

For the arrangements made by Lin Detian, Thunder didn't have any objection.

Now the situation of the East China Sea seemed to be more tensed up, the team of Li Feng was insufficient since there were less than 100 people in his squad, and with that small group, how could they confront with Long Clan? Let alone this matter, there were already various kinds of martial artist present on the spot.

To send a group of people as reinforcements before any accident took place, was absolutely not a wrong decision. In case any big problem popped up there, then that would be harder to resolve with such a small group of people.

.....

While these things were going on one side, on the other side, Ye Feng, who waited for the right opportunity to act, and then escaped at one fell swoop, easily sensed with the help of Soul Search technique that the other masked man drove his car towards the direction where Lin Detian was along with the other group of people, obviously because he tried to create a chaotic situation, to help him escape in this chaos.

Thereafter, Xiao Qi bravely stepped forward and stopped the action of the NSA people, this incident was also seen by Ye Feng. Now he apparently knew that this whole arrangement was done by the other masked mask beforehand.

Seeing the NSA people didn't pursue him, after running around half a kilometre road, he stopped. But as soon as he stopped, a yellow Santana caught up and stopped beside him.

"We met again, brother."

Skeleton masked man softly chuckle, as he pushed open the door and got down.

His voice was very ordinary, which was making it difficult to recognise his identity. However, it was quite obvious that now Ye Feng didn't need to listen to the sound to identify the identity of others.

Since, he had the ability now to even penetrate through the mask, and see the appearance of the skeleton masked man.

Indeed his appearance was worth praising, he was a handsome young man, not the sissy Zhao Mingze type guy. Come to think of it, this Zhao Mingze's appearance was something which he had been generally using while changing his identity.

This explained that how talented this person was!

“Walk with me for a moment.”

Ye Feng smiled while referring to the direction, also Su Menghan was left by him on that side. As for this car, of course it was impossible to leave it open and depart, after all, it would sound too conspicuous.

What was the reason, nobody knew, but every time Ye Feng acted together with this skeleton mask man, always there had been an inexplicable and bewildering tacit understanding between them, however, obviously in the heart of the opposite party, there was a feeling of being on guard at all times.

Perhaps it was because the opposite party was very smart.

“Hello, I am called Nan'fang.”

The Skeleton masked man held his hand out, as his corners of the mouth curled upwards : “Ye Feng, right?”

Ye Feng heard and immediately his eyes got narrowed, this guy, how could he guess his identity so affirmatively?

Chapter 134 -> He was just the first

Although Ye Feng was taken aback, but on the surface, he still maintained a very serene stature. He stretched out his hand and lightly patted the hand of the opposite party : “Are you really so sure that I am Ye Feng?”

“A guess.”

Nan’fang smiled while pulling his hand back.

“Oh?”

Ye Feng remained noncommittal as he serenely looked at him.

“As the rumours say, Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge are good friends.”

Nan’fang smiled : “But the fact is, actually nobody has ever seen them together at the same time, therefore, in my opinion, very likely both are the same person, what do you say?”

“Maybe.”

Under the mask, Ye Feng’s corners of the mouth slightly curled upwards, he neither properly admitted it nor denied it completely. However, his this attitude made Nan’fang more convinced.

As for Nan’fang, he would never rely merely on the martial arts skills and outside appearance to distinguish two people.

At first, Nan’fang wasn’t a martial artist himself, therefore, he couldn’t be like Long Wan’er. Secondly, Ye Feng was perceived as an ordinary person, so on that basis, he concluded that he couldn’t practice martial arts. Moreover, he was also proficient in appearance changing skill, so he had a more solid understanding of the fact, that appearance could never represent anyone.

He raised his hand and cast his black skeleton mask off from his face.

Suddenly a delicate and pretty young man’s face appeared before Ye Feng, perhaps because of all year round he was under the mask using a new identity, therefore, his face turned a little pale, but it was still looking very elegant.

Nan’fang was one of the survivors of Southern Heavenly Gate’s extermination case which happened a year ago. After Cai Shaohong was killed, he again saw the

light of the day finally!

“I had been secretly gathering all materials related to Cai Shaohong.”

His voice was very refreshing and crisp like sunlight, but at this moment, he said with a bit of emotion: “Originally, I had thought that it would take more time to expose his evil plot, but never thought he would be killed so fast, thanks to you for this.”

While saying, he raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng’s face, his white grimace face mask appeared incomparably gloomy and very strange under the moonlight.

“No need to mention it, one reaps what one sows, he really deserved it.”

Ye Feng smiled as he patted his shoulder: “Come on, let’s talk while walking.”

“Your wound

Suddenly burn marks behind Ye Feng’s back appeared before Nan’fang’s eyes.

“It’s nothing that critical.”

Ye Feng shook his head, as for this injury, he was just waiting for the full restoration of his Cultivation, then he could use Holy Cure Technique to cure it. As long as it wasn’t the injury of lethal crippling, Holy Cure Technique could easily cure it. However, to treat his wound, this technique would consume some of his Zhenqi.

Naturally, if his head was exploded, or his hands or legs were chopped off, not even this Holy Cure Technique could do anything.

Their figure soon disappeared in the darkness, leaving behind the yellow Santana rental car still standing at its original position, waiting to be towed away by the army next morning

In the cluster of weeds, walking two people were appearing exactly like the wilderness ghosts.

“You had grasped so many evidence, but why didn’t you report directly to Lin Clan?”

Ye Feng asked.

“Because if Cai Shaohong hadn’t died first, then he would have figured out plenty of ways to deny them.”

Nan’fang answered as he thought that since Cai Shaohong had died now, therefore, he dared to feel relieved and handed all the evidence over to Lin Clan, without a bit of fear that Cai Shaohong might think of a way to resolve it!

“Usually, in the school, there should have a lot of opportunities to kill him, don’t you think?”

Ye Feng had some doubts, presumably, as per Nan’fang’s methods, killing Cai Shaohong in the school wasn’t a difficult job, was it? Then that meant, he wanted to bravely face dangers and grab him.

“He was just the first.”

Nan’fang said, as his eyes flashed a hint of cold awn : “He was my first personal enemy, even if I had to put my life on the line to grasp him, I would have done that. Unfortunately, he was just the first, I have to be more careful now, can’t throw away my life like this, and that also so early.....”

Ye Feng listened to his explanation and probably understood his hidden meaning.

However, he did not dig in the detail to ask who the opposite party was. Although they had worked together very happily and cooperatively, but something was still there which Ye Feng couldn’t ask him to clarify, just like how Ye Feng did, similarly Nan’fang also didn’t give all of his cards in the hands of the opposite party.

“Maybe we can also continue to cooperate.”

Nan’fang went into a deep ponder for a while, and then by putting on a smile, said : “No matter how, this first time cooperation had been quite delectable. Tomorrow I will set out for the East China Sea, so it’s like a destined goodbye. ”

“Going to the East China Sea?”

Ye Feng said as his eyebrows automatically turned into a frown.

“Hmm, my next personal enemy, it is said that these days will appear in the East China Sea Of course, you don’t misunderstand.”

Nan'fang waved: "My personal enemy is not someone from Long Clan."

"Did you already know that I have relation with Long Clan?"

Ye Feng asked.

"Now I'm afraid, perhaps the whole country knows about it, right?"

Nan'fang helplessly smiled : "Just a rumour, you got on top of Miss Long Keke Keke."

"Has it been spread by the person of Heavenly Sword Palace?"

Ye Feng pondered for a moment and felt a bit puzzled, this thing finally happened.

"As per my intelligence report, just recently, one of the persons of 'Happily married couple of swords' was killed, if I haven't guessed wrong then it should be you?"

Nan'fang guessed that while gazing at Ye Feng's strange white face mask.

"It's me."

Ye Feng smiled : "In addition, I will also go to the East China Sea."

"Oh? Is it because of Long Clan, or to accompany me?"

Nan'fang tentatively asked that.

"At present, I can't leave Yanjing."

Ye Feng said while thinking that he didn't have any clue where his grandfather, Ye Wentian would be currently. As he still remembered that his grandfather had strictly prohibited him from leaving Yanjing for the certain time period. Ye Feng was still very afraid of him since he knew that he was no match for him, even his Invisibility would completely fail in front of him.

"Then I'll go ahead tomorrow first."

Nan'fang said with some regrets : "This is my telephone number, you can contact me when you arrive at the East China Sea, meanwhile, I'll go first and will try to find out some information."

As for the identity of the sissy type man, Zhao Mingze, naturally, it was no

longer needed!

“Thank you very much.”

Ye Feng didn't decline, instead, he quickly wrote down his number. Since the opposite party would certainly head to the East China Sea tomorrow, so didn't it mean that his next enemy would be certainly someone from the martial arts world? Hence, by judging his own strength, wouldn't it be very difficult for him to strike his enemy down?

The plan was like this, at first, Nan'fang would carry out a proper investigation by the time Ye Feng arrived, then both sides would cooperate with each other again, which in return would result in the mutual benefits and achieving common progress!

On the one hand, they were having a friendly interaction, while on the other side, Ye Feng was moving step by step closer towards the location where Su Menghan was. It was less than one kilometre when these two people had parted their ways.

They just walked together, because they really needed to exchange some words. However now, it was obviously impossible for Ye Feng to take him further towards Su Menghan's location.

“The cooperation was delectable.”

Just before his departure, Nan'fang raised a fist towards him.

“Pleased.”

Ye Feng smiled, similarly made a fist and bumped with his. Not only the thought process of Nan'fang was meticulous, but had a very strong logical reasoning ability also. Things not ended here, he was proficient in hiding his identity. After going to the East China Sea, he could perhaps become Ye Feng's big boost!!

Soon, Ye Feng looked at the rear view of Nan'fang fading away in the bushes, then after, he displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, and advanced towards that place where he had hidden Su Menghan. Two minutes later, finally by using Soul Search technique, he detected his Camouflage magic array.

But right at this moment, his facial expression suddenly took a huge change.

Su Menghan had gone!

His heart was a bit startled, where could she go? The Camouflage magic array which he had set up was still there, even the Camouflage jacket was also there. Before leaving this place, he had to take his Camouflage Jacket off so that he could pretend to be the masked man, or else if wearing the same clothes he had appeared before the people, even the fools could have understood that Ye Feng and the masked man were the same person.

He ran three steps around the edge of that magic array, but really didn't find Su Menghan's figure anywhere.

Suddenly at this time, a thought hit his mind, the explosion which happened in the abandoned factory, could it be that this little girl had also seen that big bang and would have become extremely worried about him, because of that, she would have run out of this magic array?

Chapter 135 -> The Sword tip falls from the heaven!

This was just excellent, if Ye Feng couldn't find Su Menghan, then naturally it was impossible for him to go back alone.

"If I'll keep on running like this all over the place, I might get caught by the NSA or military people, mightn't I? To say it like this, I must put on some clothes rightnow to go back"

He contemplated for a moment, using the identity of the masked man to appear again, would be clearly inappropriate. Therefore, the only option left with him was to take off his mask and resume Ye Feng's identity once again.

"Women ah, they are really very troublesome."

Ye Feng wondered, but no matter what, he couldn't abandon her.

He picked up a jacket which was thrown in the magic array, as he wanted to drape it over his body and go back where Lin Detian was, so that he could arouse his interest and make him launch his troops to find her. However, he just had run a few steps and suddenly sensed a strange appearance popped up on the radar of his Soul Search Technique.

Actually, around hundred meters away, he felt the presence of Su Menghan in some underground place! She actually hadn't run far, but the question was, why in the world was she in such an underground place?

Without wasting his time in further thinking, he immediately threw his jacket down and burst into a quick run like the wind. With every step, he got closer to that place, simultaneously the picture of the current situation of that underground place also got clearer to him.

This place was actually a basement again. Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique swept around the whole area, even inside the basement and soon found something, which forced him to admit that something was there, which was indeed a pleasant surprise for him!

In addition to Su Menghan, the basement not only had a guy with a broken arm, but several password-locked iron boxes were also placed in its corners.

Weren't these boxes the same which he had seen in the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa?

As for that broken arm guy's identity, of course, he was that perverted man of Heavenly Sword Palace, Li Hua. Previously, he had fifteen years Cultivation and had been a very challenging and strong opponent for Ye Feng. However now, wasn't it obvious enough to say that Ye Feng would certainly look down on him?

It didn't matter that currently Ye Feng's Cultivation had been in a suppressed state, he still had Soul Search Technique as his trump card. Just by relying on it, he could never come out weaker than that broken arm man, Li Hua!

"No wonder how that guy Zhui Hun from before knew my relationship with long Wan'er. So, it turns out like this, this guy has been hiding here, definitely, there will be a motto behind it."

Although Ye Feng was engaged in this own thought process, but at the same time, he swept his Soul Search Technique once again and soon noticed that Su Menghan was absolutely fine there. This mere thought that nothing had happened to her, finally calmed down his heart. Obviously, if he had come to this place a bit late, then this wouldn't have been the case.

However, shortly after, he again sensed that there were also the corpses of two other women in that basement, evidently they had just died, but before dying, they really had been trampled upon badly. Ye Feng didn't want to think about this, as he already had an idea that this was certainly done by that perverted man, Li Hua.

"This place, come to think of it, doesn't it look like it has been prepared by that armed escort, Zhui Hun as a hiding place for Li Hua? Fortunately, I have the Soul Search Technique under command now, or else meeting with him again"

Ye Feng coldly snorted, he simply couldn't dare to imagine the consequences that might have happened since Su Menghan was now in his clutch.

However now, the things were crystal clear.

So far, Li Hua hadn't made his move on Su Menghan, and he wouldn't have this opportunity always!

.....

On the other side, in the basement, Li Hua was busy playing with his connected arm, which had been joined to his body not long ago, but how couldn't he feel uncomfortable? It was entirely not as good as before, that sort of flexibility and an unobstructed feeling was still missing.

“Little bastard Mo Jiuge, don't get caught by me, otherwise, you will be certainly shredded into one hundred and eight pieces, to vent my hatred hidden in my heart!”

Li Hua bitterly bah and spat out his saliva.

Suddenly he thought of his severed arm, after that incident when his arm was chopped off, he soon bumped into Zhui Hun, who gave financial aid to him. However, he was badly struggling through his extreme hatred, which took the form of a determined intention, to slaughter that guy who left him with one of his arms chopped off.

Because of his notoriety in the martial arts world, a warrant had been issued by the secular world to arrest him as the most wanted criminal. Therefore, obviously he wouldn't dare to appear in the hospital, all he could do was to look for some good and reliable old friends, who could help him.

The series of explosions which took place just a moment ago, although Li Hua would have certainly sensed it even from such a distance, but he wouldn't have thought that Zhui Hun would have already died in this explosion.

“Bah, it seems that Zhui Hun's plan also paved its way towards failure. Crap, also I don't have any idea why did he sell his life for helping others, isn't he like a dog in the end? Even if he ran away from this country, and received financial aid by Cai Clan, still he didn't need to be so obedient like the dog

These muffled thoughts were running in his mind, making him very puzzled. This guy Zhui Hun, why did he use to take orders from Cai Clan of Pei Keang Group. After all, no matter how it could be said, but they were all foreign devils.

Each martial artist always had some of their own perseverance.

Li Hua, although he was submerged in all kinds of evil deeds and also had a very perverted behaviour, but still he was very patriotic. But for Zhui Hun, nothing mattered to him, he just knew one thing, and that was the graciousness

of the dripping water, which acted as a gushing spring for him!

When he had been listed as the wanted criminal in China, he fled from this country to overseas, however, if it were not for Cai Shaohong's and his Clan who had given financial and other aids to him at times, he would have been already grasped and given death penalty by the people of China. Because of this, for the lifetime, he dedicated his life in the service of Cai Clan.

This kind of insistence, Li Hua naturally couldn't understand.

Li Hua rested for a moment, then raised his head and looked towards a young beautiful girl, whom he had just accidentally caught. His gloomy and eerie face suddenly revealed a lascivious look, making his facial expression gradually appear more perverted.

Although, he had already played with those two dead women yesterday, but those two, how could they have such a captivating and pretty aura like this young girl had?

"Beauty, what's your name?"

Li Hua opened his mouth and asked indecently.

"Humph."

Su Menghan didn't want to think about him, so she looked away. Currently, her hands and feet were fastened with a rope, therefore she had no way to escape, which was making her extremely anxious.

If she had known earlier and listened to Ye Feng, then wouldn't it have been good if she had stayed in that magic array all along? However now, the situation had changed, the terrifying flame of that explosion led her to come out of that hidden place, and unfortunately as soon as she stepped out, was caught by this guy, and was brought on the verge of death.

Looking at those two female corpses sprawled in the corner, Su Menghan could only guess that if nobody arrived here soon to save her, then her fate would be exactly like those two female corpses.

However, this closed basement had more than two meters of depth from the ground, and there were steel plates clamped in the middle of it. The things not

ended here, the worst part was, it had a very subtle entrance, blocked by the clumps of weeds.

In this kind of gloomy place, would someone really come to rescue her?

Li Hua looked at her flustered appearance and his heart blossomed with great enjoyment.

Actually, Zhui Hun made him guard those iron boxes here, since he usually got bored soon, so his only pleasure was to go out and grab a woman to have fun with her. Obviously, he didn't dare to go too far, or else in case he left the place and was accidentally caught by the investigating NSA people, then that would definitely be the dead end for him.

Obviously, he was very confident that his technique was full proof, to the extent where not even those idiots NSA people could succeed in finding his trail.

Regarding Li Hua, what he liked the most was to see the nervousness and fear of a woman, but certainly, this was not the end, his most favourite thing was to see the tears of a woman, coupled with her blood!

He stood up, and tightly gripped two long swords in his each hand. Afterwards, he slowly advanced towards tied Su Menghan, as his corners of the mouth curled up and formed a hideous smile.

Shua!

He raised his intact hand and waved his sword, and while gazing at her with nearly crazy vision, he gradually licked the blade's edge, and then suddenly, he moved his sword towards her face, to strike and hurt her.

Under the pale yellow light of the basement, Su Menghan's beautiful pupil showed the reflection of his long sword. All she could do was clenching her teeth, while thinking that just like how Ye Feng had taught her, if she could use Star Tomb Tactics with her full strength, then she might succeed in shaking these fetters off. However, right at this time.

Roar!

From above those two, a burst of the sound suddenly transmitted, followed by a golden long sword tip directly descended from the heaven!

Puff!

Li Hua hadn't yet responded and all of a sudden, his raised arm instantly started spouting fresh blood and immediately his long sword with a loud sound, also fell to the ground.

This pathetic child, not long ago, his one of the arms had been chopped off, which hadn't been even fixed yet properly, and again he got his another arm severed.

"Cultivation is suppressed, but I am still able to congeal the golden sword out, it seems that the suppressing meridian firearms have really no effect on me."

A leisurely voice resounded, immediately followed by a figure descended right in front of Su Menghan, wearing a white face mask. By directly piercing through the steel layer, which was above those two people, that figure jumped down. Obviously, he was none other than Ye Feng, who pierced the ceiling and caused a large hole, from where the beautiful night sky could be clearly seen.

"It's you!"

The moment Li Hua's eyes fell on Ye Feng's face mask, his facial expression took a 360-degree turn at once, coupled with the severe pain caused by striking his arm down. Immediately, he clenched his teeth with overflowing hatred while looking at him!

Chapter 136 -> Asura Tactics!

When Su Menghan saw a figure appeared in front of her, she couldn't help but be stunned for a moment, as her jaw automatically dropped. How could it possible that someone had really arrived at this sort of place to rescue her?

However this person was also already in a very miserable condition, it seemed that something had scorched his back intolerably through his clothes. Although, he had held a long golden sword very gracefully but something was not right!

Su Menghan reacted suddenly, wasn't this guy Ye Feng?

Since at present, the appearance of Ye Feng was too distressed, she couldn't recognise him immediately, but when she gave a closer look at him, she didn't take long and immediately understood the situation. How did his appearance turn like this? Did he get injured in this explosion?

"Ye Feng"

Su Menghan couldn't help but speak out restlessly.

"Relax, everything is all right."

Ye Feng said that while looking up, and immediately activated his Rapid Shadow immortal Trace. In an instant, his stature flashed, accompanied by a golden sword light and suddenly it pierced through Li Hua's chest at one fell swoop.

Li Hua literally couldn't get the time to even react, but even if he had reacted, he wouldn't have been able to pick up his sword without hand. Finally, he died, but before dying, his gloomy eyes fixedly stared at Ye Feng, he died with injustice and remaining grievance.

Afterwards, Ye Feng kicked his corpse and it went rolling directly towards the corner of the basement, soon there was no longer any movement in his body.

Shua Shua.

Immediately after, without turning back, he brandished his long sword twice and cut off the rope with which Su Menghan was tied. Since his Soul Search

Technique was still active now, therefore, he didn't need to rely on his eyes to see things.

“Be prepared, we'll immediately leave this place.”

Ye Feng spoke, as he advanced towards another corner of the basement, where he lowered his head and closely looked at those four password-locked fine iron boxes.

He still remembered that in the basement of Cai Shaohong's villa, these four password-locked fine iron boxes were there together with that rare Heavenly Stone Bead. However, at that time, he hadn't gotten the chance to know what actually was there inside them?

Without further ado, he instantly swept his Soul Search Technique and found that there were something like books stored in those four iron boxes. And as for what jotted down on their cover, not even his technique turned out successful in figuring it out.

He waved his long golden sword and cut open the top of those four boxes very easily, in a flash. This kind of material was considered as incomparably hard material quality in the secular world, even if they fell into the hands of the NSA, they still would need a huge effort to open them. However, as for Ye Feng's sword, they seemed like a bean curd, which couldn't even withstand its single blow and immediately got collapsed.

“Asura Tactics?”

The thing appeared before his eyes were four books, which made him gawk at once. He couldn't control himself from hurriedly taking them out of those boxes.

These four books were like the rare books of martial arts. Furthermore, they were fine wire-binding books, and it seemed that they were locked there for some years. In addition to Asura Tactics, there were also other three books, and they were 'A Thousand Miles Chasing Soul Blade Technique', 'Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave' and 'Ghost Shadow Soul Step'.

“Where do these come from?”

Ye Feng frowned as he went into a deep thinking, could it be that Cai Shaohong, together with that rare heavenly stone bead, had prepared this thing

to make himself prepare for practice? Or did he want to ship them abroad to carry out their research?

He couldn't correctly guess what the goal of Cai Shaohong was, but it was quite obvious that these things had been obtained by Cai Shaohong not long ago. No matter what he wanted to do, but as for now, these things finally fell into the hands of Ye Feng.

"As for reading the books, I will wait until I return to my villa, for now, we should leave this place as soon as possible."

Ye Feng had made the decision to go back without wasting any single moment, he turned around and saw that actually Su Menghan had already stood up and looking at him eagerly.

"Keep these martial arts books properly, we'll go now."

Ye Feng said that, as he tossed those four books towards her, making her hold in her arms, then he went forward and slipped his hand around her slender waist to hug her. Simultaneously, Zhenqi under his feet started moving, and all of a sudden he jumped and came out of the basement.

Right after getting outside, Ye Feng waved his sword and cut open a big hole on the ground. By this way, he intentionally opened the chance for the NSA people to quickly discover this place. Now, better they should leave this place as soon as possible.

Regarding Li Hua's corpse, Ye Feng was too busy to think about it.

If his Cultivation hadn't been surprised by those special bullets, then he could have actually used an Immortal Technique 'Red Flame' and would have burnt his corpse down completely by now, without leaving any trace. However now, it wasn't actually possible.

Moreover, if he had the Black Jar of Souls right now, then again he would have absorbed the soul of Li Hua, so that he could make a good use of him by drawing something important out from his mouth in future. But what a pity, before heading to Lin's residence, he had left that Black Jar outside Qingfeng Park, since he wasn't in the mood to carry something like this two fist-sized thing, on his body all along as a burden.

Come to think of it, if he had that special storage ring of the World of Immortals, then that would have been also nice

Shortly after they left, the soldiers of the Fourth Guards Regiment really showed up there while searching through the area.

“It’s really very strange, how we are looking for that pair of high school students, but still can’t find any trace.”

“True, we are really unable to crack this case. Let’s assume that after the truck was overturned, they would have suddenly run away, but still, it can’t be possible for them to penetrate through our tight encirclement and escape.”

A line of ten individuals was discussing while searching all over. Their searching goal was not only to search and find out some evidence against Cai Shaohong, but they had also received a notice from their Chief that they had also to search the whereabouts of Ye Feng and Su Menghan, unfortunately, they didn’t get any achievement so far.

Soon, they found that place, which actually had a huge hole and underneath of which, there was the dim light shining out!

Several people hastily stepped forward, and saw that in the basement there was the body of Li Hua with a severed arm, as well as two female bodies were also sprawled there, which made their complexion suddenly changed.

.....

The affairs of the suburban area, currently they didn’t hold any importance to Ye Feng.

How to collect more information to expose Cai Shaohong’s crime, international negotiations with Pei Keang Group, things like these, which were supposed to be taken care by Lin Clan, were completely irrelevant for Ye Feng, neither he had spare time to think about, no he wanted to take any initiative.

At present, after casting off his mask and putting on his coat, he resumed the identity of Ye Feng properly. Thereafter, while holding Su Menghan in his bosom, he returned all the way back to Qingfeng Park by using Rapid Shadow immortal Trace.

However, he didn't enter the villa community, instead at first he separated from Su menghan, afterwards, he turned towards the community entrance and walked towards the nearby office building, which was not far from this entrance.

Actually, Scar was there with his men.

After killing Cai Shaohong, when he returned and thought to use the Black Jar of Souls, right at that time he saw Scar burning with anxiety and waiting at the doorway of his office. Afterwards, soon he saw the Green military truck appeared and captured Su menghan, but he couldn't do anything!

Therefore, he threw the Black Jar of Souls towards scar, making him take good care of it and also told him a little about this stuff along with Zhao Yibei's case. Before heading to Lin Clan's residence, he left Scar alone in the office, guarding the Black Jar.

After getting back here again, when he felt that now there would be no danger, he casually flipped through the book of Asura Tactics for a while and almost got an idea. Therefore, he made Su Menghan return to his villa first along with those four martial arts book, and then he went to his office.

Nowadays, Scar was leading ten trusted friends, who were very dedicated to him. Currently, they all were on shift duty, to maintain a proper watch.

"Elder brother Ye."

As soon as Ye Feng's silhouette appeared in Scar's line of sight, he promptly set out alone to give him a warm welcome. He had a stony and valiant temperament, even if he was no longer the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but still he had been exerting an all-around effort to still exists.

"Now , let me tell you two good news."

By the time, Ye Feng had arrived at the corridor alone with him, where he straightforwardly said: "First, just now I had found one Core Law of martial arts 'Asura Tactics'. I casually flipped through it and found that the Core Law had a little shortcoming, so, once I modify it, you all can start practising. "

The words hardly went out, and it aroused the excitement of Scar at once, which instantly appeared on his face, wasn't it so fast? Not only that, but Ye Feng said "you all" instead of "you", didn't it clearly mean that besides him, his

trusted henchmen could also practice now?

That way, in the future, how formidable they would become!

“Of course, this matter is extremely important.”

Ye Feng said while holding a plank face : “Once you enter the threshold, your identity would be completely different than now

The people of the martial arts world had an awful tendency to give a great significance to their own things, and they usually never agreed to share their Core Law with outsiders, but for Ye Feng, he had completely no scruples. As long as this could enhance his powers, he wouldn't hesitate a bit to do it, of course, he must not go against his conscience.

Chapter 137 -> Astonishing Tactics

Scar listened to Ye Feng's words and immediately nodded his head with a straight face, as he said: "Elder brother Ye, you rest assured, I will certainly keep a proper check before picking someone up, and the unqualified person will be rejected at once!"

This way, Ye Feng finally bestowed his trust on him. Giving him one martial arts technique to practice, in addition, making his trusted friends also to practice together with him, apparently, he wanted to train them with the intention to induce his own strength. Furthermore, interestingly Scar already knew that they were going to be the first group of people, who would become Ye Feng's earliest power!

At the same time, Scar used to very much admire him. In the evening, Ye Feng just ran out for a while and suddenly had gotten his hands on one Core Technique of martial arts, which was too formidable!

"Hmm, regarding the second matter."

After saying that, Ye Feng considered for a moment, then said : "Actually, I have found the soul of Yibei, but temporarily can't let you meet him. So later on, once I get hold of Soul practising technique, I will then awaken him. Although he doesn't have the body, but his consciousness still exists, therefore when the time comes, he can also fight together with us! "

Soul Cultivation Technique, which had been considered as a very precious technique in the World of the Immortals. But currently, the point was, Ye Feng didn't know how long he had to wait to finally grab this technique. Though, it was certain that he would do everything possible to grab it as soon as possible.

"What, soul? Practice?"

Scar heard that and suddenly froze to the spot.

Could he also practice Soul Cultivation Technique? There was no mistake! If Ye Feng could get hold of Asura Tactics, let them practice martial arts, made him feel very flamboyant, then how could it be strange if now he could also practice

the Soul Cultivation Technique?

“Because Yibei had always been an ordinary person during his lifetime, and had never practised the foundation, therefore, he has also the ability to practice the Core Technique of Soul Cultivation.”

Ye Feng shook his head: “As for the details, you don’t need to know about it temporarily, besides, must not disclose this matter to anyone.”

In the case of an Immortal Cultivator, if he died, but he had known the Core Technique of Soul Cultivation during his lifetime, but still he wouldn’t be able to practice this. So now how could Ye Feng make a martial arts practitioner practice this technique? Ye Feng didn’t know the answer yet, because he hadn’t practised so far.....

“Understood.”

However, his complexion sank, although he usually had a very ferocious look, but at present, he was appearing matchlessly firm. This kind of secret matter, it might be assumed that if it were not for Zhao Yibei’s relationship with him, Ye Feng probably wouldn’t have told him anything, right?

He would naturally keep it a secret!

Now that Scar had recognised Ye Feng as his elder brother, so now he would always follow his words, without any objection!

Seeing him nodding, Ye Feng continued : “Go back to start your selection, must first ensure absolute loyalty, then only tell them anything about the matter of the martial arts. Now I will go back first.”

“Elder brother Ye, take care of yourself.”

Scar respectful said.

Ye Feng smiled and patted his shoulder: “There is no need to treat me as an outsider, we are all brothers.”

After finished saying, he entered the room to take the Black Jar of Souls and then immediately departed.

Scar stood at the doorway and from behind he looked at Ye Feng entering Qingfeng Park, at this moment, his eyes were shining with extreme excitement.

The martial arts, could he also start practising it finally?

.....

After getting back to the villa, Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search Technique and found Su Menghan currently taking a bath, which instantly made his heart all fiery. Although with this technique he could see her bathing, but not as good as seeing her directly. It was just an imagination, but was still enough to make a person's heart bubble up with a burning passion.

Interestingly, at the time of his rebirth to this world, Su Menghan was the first person he had seen, and that also when she was bathing. Currently, he just casually associated her that captivating and exquisite figure for a moment, and immediately that thought made his nose bleed almost spurt out.

Since he was into that sort of relationship with Long Wan'er in the Changbai Mountain, he felt that he was getting easily excited in this aspect, which was absolutely not a good phenomenon.

All alert, Ye Feng secretly entered the villa while shaking his head to kick this stupid thought out of his mind. Almost after taking thirty-two steps upstairs, he found the book of Asura Tactics, along with the other three books, which had been carefully hidden by Su Menghan.

Su Menghan was not stupid, such an important thing, obviously she couldn't just casually throw them in the hall. Even though she hid those four rare books into the closet of the bedroom, but still it didn't take long to Ye Feng to find those books, by using his Soul Search Technique, he discovered them without any difficulty.

As he entered the bedroom, he felt the sweet fragrance of this young girl immediately greeted his nostril. However, by completely ignoring it, he sat down on the sofa, holding those four books in his hands, finally all relaxed.

Finally, he got the time to relax, once the effect of those special bullets completely disappeared, then he could cast Holy Cure Technique to heal the burn injury on his back. Afterwards, he would take a bath and then would finally hit the bed.

A series of incident happened this whole evening, had made him physically and

mentally totally exhausted. However, the thought of his injury, he couldn't bear but remember that time when he was on top of Lin Shiqing's body, heavily pressing her below, the feeling of her that full and soft chest

"Keke, I must think something else, or let's study this Asura Tactics first."

He shook his head, as he tried to cast off the beautiful figure of Lin Shiqing from his mind.

Randomly, he just flipped through the pages and soon found that the foundation of this Asura Tactic was inappropriate. Asura Tactics was called Asura, it might be because this technique reeked of blood, while the other three rare books, it was estimated that they were also necessary for supporting martial arts repertoires.

Precisely speaking, just because of its bloody overbearing characteristics, Ye Feng felt that it had a flaw.

As these thoughts rolled through his memories, he suddenly remembered that he had already seen several modifications in some of the Immortal Techniques. The moment he remembered this fact, quickly he took a pen and a notebook, and wrote down his revised Asura Tactics.

The modified Asura Tactics would be perfect for Scar! Originally practising this Asura Tactics to a certain extent would likely to very much affect the person's intelligence, but after the modifications, it wouldn't have such a problem.

If Ye Wentian would see the current action of Ye Feng, he would certainly be astonished once again to the extent where his jaw would also automatically drop.

Fuck, the Core Technique of martial arts could be easily modified as per one wish, couldn't it?

This technique, did it need to go against the heaven's will?

Too astonishing!

However, this kind of thing was completely a trifling matter for him. Whether it was primary martial arts Technique, or Immortal Techniques, in both areas, he just needed to pour a single glance and that was enough for him to easily see a

doorway, which used to encourage him to bring the appropriate desired modifications.

However, when it came to intermediate Core Technique or even the high-ranking Core Technique, he would feel completely helpless, since he had never bumped into any intermediate or advanced-level Core Technique

When Ye Feng had completely rewritten the whole Asura Tactics, just after that Su Menghan happened to finish her bath and blow-dried her long hair. By now, she didn't have any idea that Ye Feng had already returned to the villa. Therefore, as soon as she opened the bedroom's door and her eyes fell on Ye Feng there, she was taken aback, and a bit scared she said : "You're back?"

"Hmm."

Ye Feng put aside the pen, looked back, and what he actually saw was she was standing there in front of him, wrapped in a pink nightgown as if she was going to take rest. Since she had worn a very thin cotton cloth, therefore, his eyes unintentionally got trapped into her almost visible snow white and fuller chest, which was appearing very conspicuous, extremely attractive and quite alluring at the moment.

However, when Su Menghan noticed him looking at her strangely, instantly her complexion turned red, she quickly ran and got into the bed, and concealed her slender white body under a quilt, only leaving her pure and lovely face out.

"What are you doing?"

She saw that just now Ye Feng probably was writing something, so she couldn't help but ask him straight.

"Modifying the foundation of Asura Tactics."

Without thinking much, he thoughtlessly replied.

"Eh? Modifying the martial arts technique?"

Su Menghan heard that and felt a bit strange, but did Ye Feng really have this sort of flagitious ability? If he made a mistake during its modification, then the people who would be practising this modified technique, wouldn't they be possessed by the devil or something like this?

Ye Feng put away the book and decided to give this thing to Scar tomorrow.

“I’ll go to take a shower, by the time I come back to you, till then you take a nap.”

Ye Feng threw a smile towards the wrapped in the blanket Su Menghan, and then turned around to leave the bedroom.

This sentence made Su Menghan’s cheeks turn bright red, as if they were ‘painted’ with red colour.

After a while, why would he come back to look for her again?

What was he planning to do?

Chapter 138 -> Tang Clan's Tang Qingling

Ye Feng went downstairs, where he took out the Black jar of souls and waved his hand to cast Gathering Soul Technique, so as to call the souls of dead people out. Consequently, the souls of Hai Tang and Tornado Axe soon appeared out.

Only after a little interrogation with them, he could hit the bed peacefully, with ease.

As the souls emerged out, immediately two virtual shadow figures appeared in the villa's hall, which looked very gloomy and strange against the background of the surrounding.

"There are several questions boiling up in my heart right now, so just answer them honestly."

While looking at those two semi-transparent souls floating in the air, Ye Feng lightly said : "How much you know about Long Clan?"

These words barely fell, and Hai Tang reacted at once, and said : "I'll speak, I'll speak first, so far as I know, Long Clan is considered as one of the three big forces in the entire world, which has not only occupied Mt. Wangwu Cave, but Mt. Luofushan Cave as well....."

However, right after saying that, a trace of fear crawled across her face, because she already clearly knew that this Mt. Luofushan Cave was originally under the command of Ye Clan, however now, Long Clan had taken hold of it. Therefore, she was scared that Ye Feng would certainly lose his temper hearing that.

"Continue."

Ye Feng nodded and indicated her to go on with what she was speaking. However, regarding the former matter, basically neither he had any clue about it, nor wanted to pay much attention to it.

"Yes."

Seeing that, Hai Tang couldn't dare to be hesitant, although her charming face had already taken the panic-stricken expression, but still she confidently said :

“Reportedly, the ancestors of Long Clans have already surpassed 100 years Cultivation. And it is also widely known that there are more than ten people in the entire Long Clan, who had over 50 years Cultivation. The story does not end here, currently, the head of the Clan, Long Mo’ran, who is only in his forties, still has Cultivation over fifty years. Shockingly, at present, he is the first person in the entire martial arts world, who has a terrific talent, he has already grabbed the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique..... ”

The third layer of the sword technique?

Ye Feng heard that and immediately scowled, as per her story, it seemed that Long Mo’ran was obviously something not good to deal with. Moreover, if this development continued, then that day wouldn’t be so far, and soon in just another twenty to thirty years of time, he would definitely become the first most powerful martial artist in the martial arts world!

Most importantly, even such an extraordinary and magnetic martial arts scholar of his time, Ye Wentian had been only able to grasp Dragon Claw Hand Technique to its second layer.

“Who are another two big forces?”

By raising his chin, Ye Feng asked that.

“They are Tang Clan and Taiji Palace.”

Hai Tang respectfully replied.

“Oh? So your Heavenly Sword Palace is not one of them?”

Ye Feng asked doubtfully.

“Humph.”

But nearby Tornado Axe, couldn’t bear it and contemptuously snorted: “Heavenly Sword Palace, although it has also occupied one of the top ten Caves, but if compared with those three big forces, it’s not even close to them.”

But this statement ticked Hai Tang off, she heard that and immediately retorted with sarcasm: “But still always much better than the wild and wandering solitary soul of yours.”

“Bah, that’s bullshit, can you make your Heavenly Sword Palace come and

rescue you now?”

Tornado Axe contemptuously said.

“You!”

She got pissed off, and angrily stretched her hand, forming a fist and waved towards Tornado Axe, but nothing happened. Because their void, semi-transparent soul intersected with each other and didn't have a mutual touch, exactly like the blue smoke punched spatially, in general.

“Shut up, stop you two.”

Ye Feng shouted loudly, making them immediately close their mouths.

The present he had very clearly understood that the best opportunity of any matter in the martial arts world. The reason why he had left those two, naturally because he wanted them to corroborate each other, so as to avoid lies and misleading facts, but without letting them quarrel.

“Hai Tang, you speak first, if there is anything incorrect in your statement, then Tornado Axe can go ahead and supplement with his point. Anyway, in the end, only one of you will leave behind, while the other will be exterminated. And on what basis that would happen, for that you need to pay attention towards your own words.”

Ye Feng said that and motioned her to carry on.

Upon hearing that, Hai Tang's soul suddenly shuddered with fear, and she immediately began to explain honestly about the things related to the martial arts world, like Tang Clan, Taiji Palace, Long Clan's relative strength, and so on.

On the one hand, Ye Feng was listening to her carefully, while on the other, he also kept on recording all important information in his mind, so that if in the future he bumped into these details ever, then he could refer to these data mentioned by Hai Tang.

“Perhaps brother Ye, there is something you still don't know.”

When Hai Tang said that, immediately Tornado Axe shot a glance at her and said aloud : “Tang Clan is that Clan where your mother belongs to. But this fact hasn't been brought into the light by this seductive attractive woman so far,

naturally, she must be scheming something.”

“Huh?”

Ye Feng heard that and immediately gawked.

Was his mother still alive? Was it really true that the people of Tang Clan were considered as one of the three big forces of the martial arts world?

“Nonsense, in those days, since Tang Clan couldn’t afford to lose their honour, so they already had expelled Tang Qingling long back

All of a sudden Hai Tang’s anger burst out and she set up the rebuttal, however, after reaching halfway, suddenly she realised that Ye Feng was also there, constantly listening to her. This thought trembled her heart out and she immediately put a full stop in her mouth, while looking at him frightenedly.

“My mother had been expelled from Tang Clan? Why didn’t you mention that earlier?”

Burning with anger, Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows, probably now he knew a little about the matter, that his mother was called Tang Qingling. However, since she got married to his playboy father Ye Yunfei, so, she really made her entire Clan hit by a huge embarrassment, accompanied by a sudden fall of its reputation.

However, such a thing happened, still, Tang Qingling was expelled from her own Clan, could it be that Tang Clan was also extremely weak? If this thing had taken place in the World of the Immortals involving an influencing Clan, then instead of kicking his mother out of her Clan, they would have already extinguished Long Clan in return! Of course, there was a terrifically huge gap between the World of the Immortals and this martial arts world, perhaps Tang Clan also didn’t necessarily have anything to be afraid of

“I was afraid that brother Ye will get angry.”

Hai Tang hastily piled up a charming smile on her face.

“Where is my mother now?”

Ye Feng asked.

“ThisI really still don’t know about this”

She replied meticulously, since she was very much scared of the thought, that out of anger, Ye Feng might extinguish her.

“One more question, ten years ago, a visitor swordsman had shown up and had created a huge massacre in Yanjing city, by slaughtering dozens of people in a tweak. Do you have any idea who that person was?”

Ye Feng frowned as he asked that, since he wanted to draw out the identity of Scar’s personal enemy.

(Lastvoice : This swordsman was the one who had caused scar on Scar’s face.)

“That person is my teacher’s younger brother, his name is Situ Zangdao, but ever since the country has been sealed off, he hasn’t shown up

Although Hai Tang answered that a bit hesitatingly, but her heart suddenly felt a cold shiver, as she thought that that did by any chance Ye Feng also have grudge against her teacher’s younger brother, Situ Zangdao?

“Got it.”

Ye Feng nodded his head and conveniently waved his hand to dispose of her soul!

But, as soon as Hai Tang saw that, her complexion instantaneously changed into a surprised and virulent look. She didn’t even get a second to say anything and her void, semi-transparent soul suddenly turned into the blue smoke, and finally completely dissipated!

If Ye Feng hadn’t obtained Asura Tactics before, then perhaps he would have kept her a bit longer, and would have slowly interrogated her to make her vomit out about the core technique of Heavenly Sword Palace, along with other martial arts techniques. However now, he was totally disinclined, since he had already grabbed such an excellent Asura Tactics now, so he didn’t need to know Heavenly Sword Palace’s Core Technique anymore!

Moreover, Heavenly Sword Palace was kind of an abnormal school, if one would practice its modified Core Technique, then obviously it wouldn’t have any good result.

Afterwards, he turned conveniently towards Tornado Axe, to also exterminate

his soul!

However, on seeing that, Tornado Axe immediately turned furious and shouted out loud: “Bastard! You didn’t keep your words!”

He hadn’t finished speaking yet, and suddenly his entire void soul was dispersed by Ye Feng, turning him into the blue smoke and then he instantly dissipated!

Ye Feng lightly sneered, keeping words? As for the evil person like Hai Tang and Tornado Axe, was it really needed to keep words? He wanted to dispose them of, so as to avoid future troubles. However, prior to extinguishing them, he wanted to squeeze some more information out of their mouth

After done dealing with them, he shifted his attention towards his injury. Therefore, he cast Holy Cure Technique, and soon a touch of golden light finally shone from his hands.

The suppression effect of the NSA’s arteries gun, finally completely vanished!

As per his plan, at first, he took the Black Jar of Souls and established a short conversation with those two souls. Afterwards, he used Holy Cure Technique and quickly treated his burn injury which was on his back. Thereafter, he went into the bathroom, all relieved, he finally took a bath comfortably.

After finished bathing, he took a Lingshi out from the cabinet, which he had found through his thorough two weeks search in the Changbai Mountains, as his only achievement. Now, as per him, the time had finally arrived to let Su Menghan absorb its spiritual energy.

She should be able to achieve three years Cultivation at one fell swoop, shouldn’t she?

Some time before, Ye Feng had inspected her meridians, although they didn’t have thoroughly expanded, but were still more than enough to accommodate three years Cultivation.

Holding that Lingshi in his hand, he hastily went upstairs. Besides, after bathing, Su Menghan was also waiting for him.

Chapter 139 -> The midnight thief (Uncensored)

Wearing the night clothes, when Ye Feng went upstairs and pushed open the door to enter the bedroom, at that time, he was already aware that Su Menghan hadn't fallen asleep yet.

"Girl get up and absorb this Lingshi first, afterwards go back to sleep again."

Holding Lingshi in his hands, while passing through the door, Ye Feng said that. Although it was already too late, but since he had already noticed it earlier that this little girl had been totally incapable of protecting herself today, and just because of that, he had gone through serious anxiety all day round. So ultimately he decided that she should start this absorption process as soon as possible. And it is rightly said-the sooner, the better.

If she would have three years Cultivation, then he could easily teach her Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, so that if by any chance, she bumped into any dangerous situation, and felt that this situation was far from good, so she should better escape, then, in that case, her escape would be much easier with the help of this technique.

"Eh?"

She heard the sound and instantly understood that Ye Feng had entered the door, which made her even more nervous than before. Instantaneously her whole body shrank inside the quilt, only revealing a pure face, while a pair of her nimble and resourceful eyes strangely stared at Ye Feng.

"Here."

He tossed that small Lingshi towards her and then wanted to leave the room, but right then he gave a second thought and pondered that this girl, could she absorb the spiritual energy of this Lingshi on her own?

As expected, she really stretched her hand out and caught the Lingshi firmly. However, panic-stricken, with somewhat baffled expression, she gazed at that small piece of stone. Although he wanted to make her absorb the spiritual energy of this small Lingshi, but for her, the point was, how to absorb it?

Could it be that it should be eaten up?

On seeing her being all perplexed, Ye Feng couldn't help but helplessly turn around to come back to her: "Come, hold it."

He spoke, as he sat on the quilt and supported her to sit and set out the process. In the meantime, he also explored inside her body, to attract her Zhenqi and set her meridians into motion, so that her meridians could start revolving rapidly following the path of the Star Tomb Tactics. Then only he would let her start the rhythmic accumulation of the spiritual energy, while holding the Lingshi in her hands.

At this point of time, suddenly, Su Menghan was drawn close and embraced by him, which turned her face bright red with embarrassment, as if red clouds were floating all over her face. Besides, her thoughts had also become all wild, leaving her completely helpless, as if she didn't even know where her own thoughts were running.

"First step is quick absorption then the revolution of your Zhenqi by following the path of Star Tomb Tactics."

Ye Feng quickly noticed her sudden changing expression and felt little funny, therefore promptly urged her one.

On the other side, Su Menghan wasn't that stupid, she quickly took it as a reminder by Ye Feng. As a result, she promptly reacted and exerted her full strength to stimulate the movement of Core Dan as per the method of the Star Tomb Tactics. Gradually, she began the absorption of the spiritual energy of the Lingshi into her body, simultaneously kept on rapidly revolving her meridians like how Ye Feng had instructed her. Ultimately, after a short while, her Core Dan transformed into Zhenqi!

But in this whole absorption process, her cheeks had already turned red, and she was being very restless. However, because of the rapid promotion of her Cultivation, she could also clearly feel that her body was probably getting hotter now, even her heart had also started to stir restlessly.

"Concentrate on that a bit more."

Ye Feng said that, however, he couldn't bear anymore but swallow his saliva.

He just lowered his head and the thing which appeared before his eyes was Su Menghan's beautiful neckline, peeping out from her loose pink nightgown. Apart from that, those two groups of her snow-white mountain peaks, which were also squeezing out a deep ravine, quite beautifully, also appeared to him quite alluring.

Her light and delicate fragrance had already made him totally capricious to the extent that he was almost unable to control himself anymore.

"It seems like – it's dead now."

After a short while, Su Menghan whispered, as she could notice that the dark green coloured Lingshi which she had in her hand, had completely lost its lustre and had turned into an ordinary stone now.

However now, she could clearly feel the changes in her body, as if Zhenqi in her meridians had become more solid. Didn't that mean – if she encountered any danger now, then she would be now able to run faster?

"It's dead now, just throw it away."

Indifferently he said that, then turned over his body and directly pushed her down into the flexible bedding. Then he quickly climbed onto her, tightly pressing her under his body.

"Ah, what are you doing?!"

Seeing this sudden change in Ye Feng's behaviour, she exclaimed aloud as she felt that a pair of thief's hands had suddenly slipped into her clothes, which not only startled her but also gave her a scare.

"I'm afraid you might face danger at night, so let's sleep together."

Ye Feng solemnly said.

"How come there would be danger, the biggest danger is you, a big pervert, a coloured wolf"

Her voice seemed very tiny like that of a mosquito, her black and bright long hair, which was there around her shoulders before, was now spread all over the pink pillow and making her glossy red face appear conspicuously fresh and pure.

Just a moment ago when Ye Feng was taking a bath, at that time she had been

struggling a lot in her mind for a long time thinking that in case Ye Feng would come to her with that naughty intention, then what should she do? Did she want to revolt?

She had pondered over this point for a long time, and finally drew the conclusion that she shouldn't resist and let nature take its course, by forgetting about everything. Moreover, she had a very ample reason to jump to this conclusion, and that was, first, even if she wanted to resist, but could she really resist this? Second, Ye Feng shared his most important secret with her about him being an Immortal Cultivator, just because he had a blind trust on her.

Since the relationship between these two had already been so intimate, so a little more intimacy wouldn't matter at all.....

At this moment, her beautiful captivating eyes were tightly closed, while her long eyelashes were slightly quivering. Softly, she raised her head, as if she wanted to reveal her snow-white long and beautiful nape of the neck, which all of a sudden seduced Ye Feng and became his first target place for kissing.

By now, her heart, which was already bubbling up with intense passion, started beating heavily. She was already very nervous, and now she could also clearly feel the temperature of Ye Feng's fingertip on her body, which was constantly transmitting a strange feeling throughout her body, making her pair of soft and small hands tightly grab the bed sheet.

Their bodies were tightly stuck to each other, as if they had been glued up, and because of that, the temperature inside the quilt started elevating rapidly.

On seeing that she wasn't resisting at all, Ye Feng's movement started to become more outrageous, as if he got the signal from her side. In any case, this little girl was going to be his woman sooner or later, so what was there to fear of?

After his rebirth into this modern city, the first person he saw was Su Menghan, in addition, the first person whom he taught Cultivation and who became similar to him, an Immortal Cultivator was also Su Menghan once again. Therefore, it was already established that their relationship would be the most intimate type

Soon, her pink nightgown and Ye Feng's night clothes were thrown by him on

the bedside sofa while their stark naked bodies hugged each other on the bed.

Ye Feng lowered his head and saw her blushing hard with an utter bashful look spread all over her face, which again ended up instigating his large beast down there. His beastly instincts were stimulated high to the point of no return. His hands grabbed the two elastic and soft miracles, without any fabric hindrance, giving them a much smoother and milky texture.

“Ah.....”

The young girl recited a tender moan that was filled with pleasure as her soft body instinctively stuck to him. In the bed, her two smooth and exquisite thighs were tightly clutching his lower body as if she going to let him prevail in this so easily.

However, all here efforts were in vain because this was Ye Feng she was dealing with.

He looked directly into her eyes and finally gave a passionate yet hypnotizing kiss to her, bringing her completely under his control.....

Just imagine a divine pink elegance in the bedroom when the two souls began to recite a song of love and passion in the form of a wonderful symphony of wheezing cries and moaning, coming straight from their hearts and souls which were drowned completely in an ocean of passion and coquettish love for each other.

Under the fierce impacts by Ye Feng, Su Menghan felt powerless and totally surrendered to intense pleasure. She was ineffectively pursing her lips while tightly holding his shoulder with one hand and clutching the bed sheet with another. Her legs were tucked tightly while experiencing a majestic feeling that was constantly sprinting throughout her body and escalating toward an imminent climax. It was as if her whole body was on fire but only a little bit of pain that lasted for a while in the beginning but was ultimately overtaken by immense pleasure.....

Having the modesty of a young girl, she was deliberately suppressing the desires and lust exploding within her body and trying her best to croon in a soft voice, but obviously, she couldn't stop the delicate drops of desire dripping gently yet persistently.

If Long Wan'er was quick like a leopard then Su Menghan was docile like a sheep. The two girls had entire different dispositions. However, at present, she was his only woman and he wanted to give his all to her without making any concessions whatsoever!

A while later, their cozy and gentle moaning along with their rhythmic breathing, had turned the atmosphere of the room all fiery.

On the one side, after a persistent squally shower, this young girl softly cuddled up in his arms quite smartly and gently, just like the waterfall in general. And her long luxurious hair was spread on the pillow, as if a light fine gauge was exhibiting unique aroma of this young girl.

"Sleep."

While on the other side, Ye Feng, cuddling her snow-white shoulders close to him, lightly kissed her forehead.

"Ok."

Simultaneously, she also gently rubbed her body against his and comfortably sank herself into his arms.

In this quiet room, where occasionally the sound of the insects was spreading in from outside the window as if making the entire room appear more lonesome and quiet, these two people were submerged into their most intimate relationship.

On this day, Ye Feng and Su Menghan, these two people became the most intimate and finally laid the foundation of the relationship between them.

Henceforth, Su Menghan had also become an Immortal Cultivator just like Ye Feng. Now, she was not only able to practice various Immortal Techniques, but could also easily circulate her Zhenqi within her body as per her desire. Furthermore, now she had the ability to become more formidable presence if compared with a Martial artist.

As for his own woman, Ye Feng wouldn't be certainly parsimonious, only making her also step into the world of an Immortal Cultivator, was enough for him to finally go all the way to the end together with her.

The terminal point of his life and where it would be, Ye Feng didn't have any idea regarding these things.

However, in any event, Su Menghan would definitely accompany him to the end of his journey. She already had become one of those people, who had occupied a great importance in his life.

But at this moment, the thought of here suddenly reminded him of his master. Actually, he didn't know where his master would be nowadays?

Just like how his master held a huge importance in his previous life, similarly, Su Menghan also had now in this new life of him. Actually, she had already become indispensable to his life. No matter what kind of course he would have in his later life, he could pass through it easily together with her now!

In the pin drop silence of this moonlight night, two love birds were floating in the romantic atmosphere. When Ye Feng, hugging her smooth and soft body in his bosom, finally decided to sleep, exactly then, his Soul Search Technique suddenly proliferated and he found that there was an individual sneaking and trying to climb up the water pipe from outside the wall, evidently wanted to steal things!

“A martial artist? With ten years Cultivation? And on top of that, is a thief who has come to steal things

Nowadays in the modern society, burglary had actually become a very common matter. However, this case was a bit peculiar, there was a martial artist, with a decade Cultivation, still trying to break in and steal! Such case rarely shows up!

.....

Chapter 140 -> The hapless thief

Now, Ye Feng really wanted to know what those precious things were there in the villa?

And there was only one answer, Ye Clan's Core martial arts techniques and the rare books.

Perhaps because Su Menghan was extremely tired, she quickly fell asleep into Ye Feng's arms. While on the other hand, at this moment, Ye Feng sensed someone and quietly got up, put on his night clothes, cast Invisibility and silently left the bedroom.

That stealthy thief was also dressed in the night clothes and it seemed that he often used to climb up along the water pipe like today. At this time, he suddenly turned towards the second floor's balcony very softly, without making any sound. Besides, his stature was also very covert.

However, unfortunately, he bumped into Ye Feng, who possessed Soul Search Technique. Hence, no matter what covert technique he would use, could never escape from Ye Feng's exploration radar.

Invisible Ye Feng, under the spell of his technique 'Invisibilty', went next to that fellow, and by taking advantage of the faint moonlight, he found this thief had a black hood on his head, had a very slim stature and appeared fairly professional. After looking around cautiously, when that thief didn't notice any danger, he finally went into an action.

Moreover, this guy's agility was also amazing, just in a flash he arrived in front of the bathroom of the second floor, where he observed the surrounding for a moment, and then all of a sudden drew a string of tools out from his waist, so as to break into it.

"The only thing hidden in this bathroom is Ye Clan's Core technique, so as expected the target of this guy is indeed the rare books of Ye Clan?"

Ye Feng thought this in his heart and prepared himself to act any moment.

With his ten years of Cultivation, coping with a martial artist who also

possessed a decade of Cultivation, had always been fairly effortless, let alone this stealth attack of a thief. However, actually Ye Feng didn't want to kill him so quickly, at least he should ask few questions like his motto behind his sudden visit.

Or should he tie him up, and wait for Ye Wentian to come and deal with him?

The plan was pretty good.

Just when that thief was trying to do everything possible to break in, right then Ye Feng threw his foot at his side!

Thud!

Ye Feng's foot severely kicked him in his knees, immediately his kicked leg got broken and he partly knelt on the ground.

"Who!"

Panic-stricken, he looked around helplessly and suddenly his incisive male voice resounded!

His infiltration was already so covert, then how could someone found him? And on top of that, that person also arrived at his side to sneak attack him. Actually, his mind had already ceased working, could it be that Ye Wentian had returned? That was totally impossible! That old man, Ye Wentian, he wasn't in Yanjing presently, was he?

That thief while enduring the pain, tilted his head to look and actually saw a masked man wearing a shirt, looking at him very gloomily.

What the fuck, who this fellow was, wasn't it said that only a senior high school student lived in this villa?

The thief didn't want to think about that yet, promptly he took a tool out and threw it towards Ye Feng's face, at the same time, relying on his another leg, he jumped towards the balcony and after taking 2 to 3 steps, he finally jumped out of the balcony, since he wanted to escape at once!

But unfortunately, Ye Feng's movement was quicker than him, he fended off that tool very conveniently and in an instant arrived at the side of the balcony, where he saw that the thief had already jumped down the balcony, and was

about to fall to the ground.

Without further delay, Ye Feng immediately formed a stance and cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique!

Since he had a decade of Cultivation now, therefore casting this technique wasn't a difficult matter for him anymore. Immediately, his Zhenqi sprang out of his body spatially and took the form of two Dragon Claw Hands. Using those hands, he grabbed the thief in the air, which was immediately followed by a sudden outbreak of his power, and the next moment, he pulled that thief up and flew him back to the balcony. This way he performed a marvellous sight of flying trapeze!

Bang!

With a huge force, his whole body fell down in the balcony and badly knocked against the ground. But things didn't end here, all at once that thief's mind blew away.

"The second layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique!"

At this moment, the thief was in an inexplicable terror. Since as the matter stood right here in front of him, it was apparent that the old man, Ye Wentian wasn't the only person who had the talent to reach the next level, right?

"Pretty good, so scared of it? Give me the honest confession, who you are and who has sent you here. Then only, I can consider to let you off."

Leaning against the balcony, Ye Feng carefully said.

"I am a nobody, just wanted to earn some extra income"

He promptly replied.

"Rubbish, to earn extra money, why would you come here like this?"

Ye Feng glared at him, immediately flung his both hands and displayed Dragon Claw Hand Technique. Immediately, his Zhenqi went out in the air, in the form of those hands and grabbed the thief once again and threw him down the building! After letting his body freely fall for more than ten meters, he pulled him up once again, like a flying trapeze!

Bang!

The thief had been grasped again and was again thrown heavily in the balcony. As a result, he spat a mouthful of foam. This feeling of suddenly throwing down and then pulling up could absolutely make people enjoy the ultimate pleasure!

“Yes, I saw the list of human arena, actually they have issued the task to obtain Dragon Claw Hand Technique of Ye Clan from this villa, besides Enchanted Volume Technique and Mysterious Mother Sword Technique rare books were also there

His enunciation wasn't clear.

“What is this list of the human arena?”

Ye Feng asked.

“The human arena often issues the task, and any martial artist can take up the job and as soon as he completes the task, he gets rewarded for that

The thief, putting on a distressed look, said that.

“The things of Ye Clan, how could you also dare to think of a plan, are you tired of living?”

Ye Feng viciously asked.

“It is said that every year today, Ye Wentian leaves the city Yanjing

The thief had already submitted to his fate and consequently had confessed everything.

He just wanted to earn some wealth, as for him, it was not at all worthwhile to lose his life for this reason!

The moment Ye Feng heard his words, his bubbles of happiness burst into his heart. What! Ye Wentian was not in Yanjing? This was a good news ah! Now that the old man was not in the city, then could it still prevent him from going to the East China Sea?

He thought that while carrying that thief in his hands and throwing him into a utility room. Although he wanted to tie him up with a rope, but when he spread his Soul Search Technique, he found that there was no rope available anywhere in this villa, however, it had two iron chains.

“The iron chain is better, hey.”

Ye Feng got the chains and firmly tied him in that utility room. Thereafter, he turned around and left that room. Now, by taking his mask off, he continued to return to the bedroom, so that he could again hug that attractive girl, Su Menghan before falling asleep.

If he hadn't had that sexual intercourse with Su Menghan just a moment ago, then by now, he would have already rushed to the East China Sea to take advantage of Ye Wentian's absence.

What a pity, just for her sake, he couldn't leave here at this moment!

However, he just broke somebody else's body to prevent him from running away, did this make sense?

The poor thief, he was currently iron chained in the utility room, had gotten his one leg broken, although he wanted to cry but had no tears to shed. In this world, was there any other more unfortunate thief than him? At least he hadn't seen such a miserable fellow so far!

.....

While on the other side, at present, Ye Wentian together with Lin Hongchuan, had come to Quyang County at the same night, which was in the south-west area of Yanjing city.

Within the scope of China, apart from those top ten big caves, there were also another thirty-six small caves, as well as seventy-two dwelling places, many of which were some martial arts schools now. Besides, those thirty-six small caves were totally mysterious and were located nearby Quyang County.

Zizen Sword Faction, which was hidden in this mysterious cave near Mt. Hengshan, had now become a well-known martial arts school in today's human arena.

But presently, Ye Wentian, as well as Lin Hongchuan, together arrived at Quyang County, just to meet with another old man.

A teahouse, quiet, beautiful and secluded, where Ye Wentian, crossing his hands behind his back, was standing on the second floor's window and was

constantly looking into the distant sky in this dark night, who knew what was going on in his mind currently. Next to him, another old man was also there, with white beard and hair, round face, his stature was all short and stout and had a high temple. Although he was shorter than Ye Wentian in terms of height, but when it came to his imposing manner, Ye Wentian didn't even stand any chance against him!

Lin Hongchuan was all carefree and enjoying the tea which was served by the restaurant owner to calm one's mind.

“Old Tang, want to drink the tea that your daughter makes, but again it is not that easy.”

Lin Hongchuan sighed with emotion as he said: “According to me, you all just move to Yanjing and forget about it.”

“Keke, this matter doesn't need to be raised again.”

The short and stout old man, with round face, coughed : “In those days, I and Qingling really indebted to Zizhen Sword Faction for taking care of us. However now, I am lending a hand to run this teahouse, life is also quite good and peaceful here. Anyways, Old Ye, just a moment ago you said that you have an important matter to inform us, so what is it? ”

By taking his eyes back from the distant sky, Ye Wentian glanced towards Old Tang and Lin Hongchuan, and solemnly said : “Ye Feng practices martial arts.”

These five words barely fell and all of a sudden changed the colour of Old Tang and Lin Hongchuan's face at the same.

Ye Feng could practice martial arts?

Finished, wasn't it like courting death?

Chapter 141 -> Agility skill comprehension

Lin Hongchuan was about to take a sip of his tea, but right at this moment, he heard those words and all of a sudden his mind was blown away.

Ye Feng could practice the martial arts?

This kid, wasn't he studying? Then, how could he come into the contact with the martial arts field?

He knew merely few details related to Ye Feng's life, such as he was just an ordinary high school student, he not only had made the boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang help him occasionally in carrying out his several tasks, but had also surprisingly never displayed any fear while facing such a ferocious man like him, instead with a lofty temperament he used to deal with him. Interestingly, he had already started practicing the martial arts!

His complexion clouded over all at once.

He had seen before only one side of Ye Feng's life, but still hoped to make his granddaughter Lin Shiqing marry him, now what should be done? Ye Feng had started practicing martial arts, if this news anyhow spread in the world, then immediately various group of personal enemies' and their Clans would start seeking for him, then how should it be handled?

The round-faced old man, Old Tang similarly knitted his eyebrows : "If you are saying so, then do we old decrepit people need to come out of obscurity to take the lead? Old Ye, you handle this matter, absolutely don't let people stir any trouble for him, by the way, how did he get dragged into the world of martial arts?"

"I can't say that."

On the contrary, Ye Wentian was not at all worried, instead somewhat complacently said : "When did he start practicing martial arts, I don't know about that. But for me, he went through Ye Clan's Dragon Claw Hand Technique just once and immediately cast it out, such a great talent he has, unique in the world, unrivalled! "

“What!”

Immediately the facial expression of both people, Old Tang and Lin Hongchuan simultaneously tremendously changed.

“Are these words real?”

Old Tang himself had been a great martial artist since ages, therefore compared to Lin Hongchuan, he had a clearer idea about the difficulty level of Dragon Claw Hand Technique. However, what was this? Ye Feng looked at it once and grabbed it instantly, what was this talent? Literally, in the martial arts world, it was such a talent which could hardly be seen in a hundred years of period!

“Do you think that I, Ye Wentian can still lie?”

Ye Wentian proudly said, since his grandson was flamboyant now, which naturally brightened up his grandfather’s complexion.

“If such being the case, then we old and decrepit people should really need to go into action.”

After pondering over this issue for a moment, the round-faced old man lightly said that.

Old Tang, Tang Xuefeng was equally famous and formidable like Ye Wentian in the martial arts world because of his profound Cultivation. Although twenty years ago he had suffered a serious inflicted loss, but still his twenty years of training didn’t go into vain, his strength hadn’t receded a bit, instead he could still advance into the first-class master rank.

Even now, just a little age of people of the martial arts world knew that Ye Feng’s mother Tang Qingling was the daughter of Tang Xuefeng. Twenty years ago, when Ye Clan was totally wiped out, this father and daughter then had lodged under another person’s roof and had also developed a really good relationship with Zizhen Sword Faction.

“Anyway, my grandson can’t let people bully or humiliate him.”

Tang Xuefeng eyes suddenly revealed a hint of coldness.

“Hey, fortunately, only he has bullied people, not other people have bullied

him so far.”

Ye Wentian smiled : “However, if his identity as a martial arts practitioner is somehow exposed to the world, the trouble will start attacking him rightaway, for that you and I are required to do proper preparation beforehand.”

“And if the critical moment really arrives, I will make the people of Taiji Palace also make their move.”

Nearby Lin Hongchuan said that at a moderate pace.

“All right Old Lin.”

Tang Xuefeng stared at him as he said : “Your human sentiment, no need to actually say that you will make Taiji Palace get into action, your Lin Clan has merely a cooperative relationship with them

“Still, no matter what, we ought to always attempt.”

Lin Hongchuan smiled while shaking his head, and continued : “That boy Ye Feng, whom I have also seen as my granddaughter’s husband and whom I have a liking to, if I still can’t help him, then whom I will be able to help in my lifetime?”

The detail conversation continued among these three old men all night. Besides talking about their old days, their whole discussion was pinpointing Ye Feng and the matter related to him. The key question was, the time when Ye Feng being a martial artist got exposed, then undoubtedly Tang Xuefeng would go out to protect him, during that time what should be done with Tang Qingling?

This question was the most baffling one for these old people, after a long discussion, they finally figured out a way

.....

Yanjing, Qingfeng Park.

When the first wisp of morning light knocked the window and peeped in, Su Menghan comfortably moved her body, raised her hand and touched the bed, but suddenly felt empty.

“Ye Feng?”

All of a sudden, she partly sat up, and looked around panic-stricken, where did

Ye Feng vanish?

“What happened?”

A familiar voice immediately rang, it was actually Ye Feng.

She then noticed that he had been in the bedroom all along, but since he had woken up first, so he started reading those four wire-binding books.

He turned around, and the next moment, the snow white and smooth shoulder of the young girl caught his eyes, making him unable to bear but recall the last night, when they were inside the quilt completely wrapped, along with the delicate touch of this young girl's fragrant body

On seeing his eyes stuck on her body, her cheeks reddened at once, and she hastily retracted the bedding : “Don't look this side, or better you go out first, and let me wear my clothes, ok?”

“What, you are being bashful?”

He chuckled and put away those four books, went up to the side and gently pinched her tender cheeks, afterwards left the room.

This made her blush right up to her ears, but when she saw his rear view while he was leaving the room, a touch of sweetness emerged in her mind rightaway. From now on, this man was the one whom she would depend upon throughout her life

He stepped out of the bedroom, shook his head so as to shrug this sweet and gentle scenery off his mind.

After his three steps down the stairs, he again continued browsing through the book – Ghost Shadow Soul Step. With the help of this rare book, he could actually comprehend how to break through the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace up to some extent!

Ghost Shadow Soul Step, if coordinated with Asura Tactics' agility technique, it could certainly make people instantaneously erupt with an extremely quick speed, but it couldn't be sustained longer.

This reminded him of the World of the Immortals, once when Su Feiying had displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace's second layer, during then, in that fast

running process, she could similarly instantly broke out with a lightning fast speed. However then, unfortunately, Ye Feng didn't get enough time to comprehended this second layer.

“This meridian operation line, so long as both sides are integrated

Ye Feng rolled through the pages of Ghost Shadow Soul Step's book and quickly patted his head, as if the divine miraculous light flashed through his mind.

Without wasting any further precious second, he started the revolution of his Dantian rightaway, soon making his Zhenqi stream down into his legs and fill his several remote acupuncture points up. And the next moment, a terrific eruption!

Swish!

Just in an instant, he ran all the way out of the villa's front door, leaving behind a row of blurred afterimages! This instantaneous eruption of his speed had surprisingly hit hundred meters in just two seconds rightaway, which was twice faster than the speed of his usual Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace!

“Such frightening eruption, although it can last only for a few seconds, but still it can be a huge lifesaver at the crucial moment.”

All of a sudden, his mood piqued up, and the reason of this sudden mood delectation was the mere thought that how easily he comprehended the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace. Besides this, the higher the level of his Cultivation, the longer the duration of his eruption speed. As long as he had the lightning fast speed, he would have enough capital on any occasion, since the onset and retreat would have the leeway.

Presently, his eruption speed was already way faster than that perverted man, Li Hua and the armed escort, Zhui Hun. Moreover, in the martial arts world, already classified as the first class martial artist, that Mt. Tianzhu's old man, Huang Peirong could be equally matched with Ye Feng's current speed.

Possessing such a great Immortal Technique – Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace already, there was really no essentiality to practice Ghost Shadow Soul Step. However this skill if coordinated with Asura Tactics, then it seemed to show better results.

At this moment, he finally thought to return to the bedroom so as to continue studying the another three books.

This Asura Tactics was the primary martial arts technique, in which inner qi used to involve extreme blood, accompanied with enormous overbearing. However after passing through the transformation process made by Ye Feng, it's violent bloody part was extracted, but it doubled the overbearing part, which became fairly suitable for Scar to practice Cultivation.

Furthermore, if 'Thousand Miles Chasing Soul Blade Technique' was combined with Ghost Shadow Soul Step, then it could have a miraculous effect as well.

Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave, this was a bit less alluring. In case it wasn't within the realm of assigning away inner qi from the body, then this skill was undoubtedly a complete waste. However, if it fell within the realm where Zhenqi could be assigned away from the body, then as the title page actually hinted "a roar can shake the yellow spring," seemingly was quite domineering.

(Lastvoice : "Yellow springs", in Chinese culture, this term often refers to the underworld, a place where spirits of the dead live.)

Ye Feng decided to learn this 'Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave', perhaps it would turn out very useful during any critical moment. However, as for the knife technique, he was not even the least bit interested in grasping it.

These four rare books would be handed over to Scar for peremptory action and he would have to immediately find the time to give it a go, after all this was treated as the beginning to create his own force.

Ye Feng was occupied in his own intense thought process, exactly then, suddenly the sound of telephone bell rang in the villa.

At first, Ye Feng didn't care, but upstairs, soon Su Menghan picked up the phone: "Hello?"

"Hello, may I ask to call Ye Feng on the phone?"

A somewhat unexpected female voice passed through, on the other side, Ye Feng, using Soul Search technique, also heard the voice of the other side and immediately recognized her, actually, it turned out to be – Long Wan'er!

Doomed, actually letting Su Menghan receive the phone call of Long Wan'er

.....

Chapter 142 -> East China Sea's Coral King

The impression Ye Feng held of Su Menghan all along was she was the kind of girl who still relatively got jealous of other girls quite easily. That was the reason why he couldn't bring himself to openly share the matter related to Long Wan'er with her, and just waited for the propitious time to ripe.

However now, Su Menghan answered the phone call which was actually made by Long Wan'er, this

"Excuse me, although I tried to hit his personal number first but couldn't get through, therefore I was forced to dial your family's fixed phone number."

The voice of Long Wan'er sounded as sweet and melodious as an oriole, accompanied with a light and lively tone, apparently, she was in a pretty good mood.

As for Ye Feng's cellular phone, last night, in order to prevent Lin Clan from tracking him down, he had intentionally thrown it in the Weiming Lake. Therefore, naturally, no one could get through to him. And so far as how Long Wan'er knew the fixed phone number of their villa, it was not at all strange and surprising, since it was already crystal clear that by using the influence of Long Clan, drawing out a number was not a difficult job for her.

Perhaps because of these words "your family", Su Menghan turned a little embarrassed: "Ok, I call him over the phone."

"Thank you."

Immediately Long Wan'er's laughter passed through the phone.

Soon, from downstairs, Ye Feng answered the phone: "Hello?"

"Hey little foe, did you ever think of me?"

Long Wan'er perceived that Su Menghan would have certainly hung up the phone by now, so she couldn't help but lower her voice, and said just like a spoiled brat in general.

"Think of you... where are you rightnow?"

Suddenly, a warm and sweet sensation filled his heart, as he thought that this girl, how brisk and adorable she was.

“I am still at home.”

By suppressing her voice, Long Wan'er continued : “Look, I am under strict supervision, can't run away..... However about the East China Sea, recently, again a news has become like a fire in the jungle, about the emergence of the Big Coral King in the East China Sea, which is about to mature soon.”

“Big Coral King?”

Ye Feng felt a little strange.

“Hmm, actually this matter has already become a bubbling uproar in the entire martial arts world.”

To give a detailed explanation, she continued : “It is said that the Big Coral King can increase one's Cultivation up to five years at just one fell swoop. Currently, various forces are guarding it, waiting for two weeks to pass, until the Big Coral King matures. Really it has caused such a huge commotion there.”

Half a month, this time was actually just around the corner!

Ye Feng thought that regarding the other college entrance examination, he didn't need to worry about. However, he didn't get any information about his master, Su Feiying so far, whether she would still be there or not.....

“Isn't there any news concerning my master?”

He asked straightforwardly.

“The last time someone caught sight of her is one week ago, when her chartered ship advanced towards the sea. Ever since that day, she has never appeared again.”

she was well-informed since she knew that Ye Feng really cared about this matter, therefore she carried a discreet inquiry of this matter in detail.

“Hmm.”

Although Ye Feng nodded his head, but her statement left his heart piled up with lots of doubts, and one of them was, why did Su Feiying advance towards

the sea? Moreover, such a long time had rolled on, but still, she didn't show up, did she encounter any accident

He shook his head and kicked this thought out of his mind, for the time being, then he asked : "Where is your house?"

"Why are you asking this?"

She heard that and immediately turned a bit tensed : "I'm fine now, you don't need to come. Even if you try to come, certainly you won't be able to leave then. By the way, don't you have to go to the East China Sea to look for your master?"

"Umm, just believe me."

Ye Feng solemnly said : "I'll defeat your father inevitably one day."

"I believe Well, I'm hanging up, someone is coming."

All of a sudden she lowered her voice and abruptly disconnected the phone.

Through the microphone "beep" sound transmitted, making his train of thoughts drift towards that night when he was in the ancient tomb along with Long Wan'er, and suddenly his heart filled with desire for power. As long as he could triumph over Long Mo'ran, then the trivial Long Clan would absolutely be incapable of doing anything to prevent him from getting together with Long Wan'er!

As for Long Mo'ran, having less than sixty years of Cultivation currently was not something which could be easily overlooked. In addition, his talent was also incredibly awesome, as he had already gotten expertise in the third layer of Romantic Sword.

To vanquish Long Mo'ran, the crucial point for Ye Feng was not Cultivation, rather it was Immortal Techniques. All he needed to do was to attain two decades of Cultivation, then after not only his comprehension would be at peak, but his level would also be soaring into the sky. The greater the comprehension, the higher the level of his Immortal Techniques, then triumphing over the opposite party wouldn't remain a big problem for him anymore!

And to achieve this success, the big Coral King in the East China Sea, was certainly a propitious opportunity.

During this half a month period, he would give his all round the clock, to broaden his meridians. This way, he could raise the upper limit of his Cultivation to about thirteen or fourteen years, so that once he obtained the big Coral King, he could easily enhance his Cultivation upto fifteen years at one fell swoop.

And for that, he must obtain the big Coral King at all cost!

Although if compared with the martial arts world, his Cultivation would be certainly treated as on the lower side, but with the help of Invisibility and other Immortal Techniques, it wasn't necessary that he would certainly fail in getting his hands on the big Coral King.

On the other side, after thinking for a moment, Su Menghan already well-dressed walked downstairs.

"How about your pain, does it still hurt?"

Ye Feng came around her and squeezed her into his arms, as he asked that with full of concern.

"Last night it was but not now."

Immediately, her complexion turned as she blushed, she couldn't help but think of last night's scene, which made her heart fill with bashful thoughts.

At that auspicious moment, she finally became a woman from a girl

This guy was really so hard last night, he was such a big colored wolf, a pervert although she thought that in her mind, but fortunately she had also turned into an Immortal Cultivator, and because of that her body recovered quite faster, making her all pains and uneasiness vanish, which she had the last night.

"Well, now I'll teach you two things, the first one is broadening the meridians, and the second is an agility technique, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace....."

Ye Feng smiled and said that, as he touched her head gently. About the revolution of meridians and Zhenqi, Su Menghan was completely a layman. And now that he wanted to make her learn how to broaden her meridians, as well as Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, naturally it was not something which could be achieved in a short period of time.

Therefore Ye Feng took advantage of the time while they were going out

together, and started explaining things. Besides this, she had that legendary luminous pearl in her side bag, which Ye Feng had obtained from the ancient tomb. He wanted to show this to Ou B and ask him to sell it at a good price!

Today, it would be Scar who would personally drove them to the school. When these two people boarded on the car, Ye Feng immediately handed the book of Asura Tactics over to him, along with the other three rare martial arts books.

“Asura Tactics is the foundation of the another three techniques. Basically, Ghost Shadow Soul Step will be the technique you will mainly rely on, while ‘Thousand Miles Chasing Soul Blade Technique’ is gonna be the auxiliary knife technique. As for ‘Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave’, naturally it is also an interesting one, so you can also learn it.”

Ye Feng added further : “Do keep in mind, in case any problem pops out, must give me a call rightaway

“You have lost your cell phone.”

Nearby standing Su Menghan gently reminded him.

“Well, then you can call on Menghan’s number.”

With somewhat awkwardness, Ye Feng said : “Scar, you arrange a cell phone for me again, but with the same original number.”

“Understood, elder brother Ye.”

At this moment, after receiving these books, Scar was already in the seven heaven out of excitement.

The rare martial arts books were with him, so that meant he could really start practising Cultivation! It seemed like following Ye Feng all along was indeed the right choice he had taken.

He glanced at Ye Feng, as well as sitting right next to him, Su Menghan, from the demeanour and appearance this pure beauty had currently, didn’t it seem that she had already been eaten up? However, wasn’t elder brother Ye and Miss Lin’s engagement had already been set?

Well, Scar quickly tossed this thought out of his head, since he knew that such an overbearing man like elder brother Ye, how could he possibly have just one

woman?

As soon as he stepped on the accelerator, silver BMW paced up and galloped towards Yanjing Senior High School.

In the car, Ye Feng inquired randomly about Su Menghan's grandmother's case, and Scar also coordinated with him, and explained everything smoothly, quite clearly. The trial was scheduled after the college entrance examination and when the time would arrive, Su Xinchang would appear in the court to testify.

Ye Feng originally thought that this was just a trivial thing, however, he was totally wrong. The moment they set their foot in their school, shockingly they found that this matter had actually blotted out the sky!

This matter that Su Menghan had sued Xie Clan's siblings had already spread throughout the school. The reason why, they barely got off the car, and several people, standing around the school entrance, started pointing at her.

From their expression and conversation, it didn't take long to Ye Feng to understand what they were thinking. The daughter of a disgraced entrepreneur had actually filed a case against Yanjing's Xie Clan, this was indeed a wishful thinking, wasn't it?

Even though she got close to Ye Feng, but in the eyes of other, Ye Feng was totally dependent upon his grandfather, and had already his marriage set with Miss Lin, then didn't it mean he was just a playboy? Moreover, Su Menghan not only provoked Xie Clan, but had also snatched Miss Lin's man away from her, didn't she also court her death?

Almost everyone was secretly feeling sorry for this Xiaohua.

Chapter 143 -> A slap on the face

Along with Su Menghan, Ye Feng barely entered the school gate and suddenly his eyebrows got all wrinkled up.

This kind of matter, how did it get unfurled in the public? Indubitably, there would be certainly someone in the dark who publicised this matter, and his purpose would be definitely to discredit Su Menghan, but who could it be?

“Small Bee!”

All the way running from the school gate, Ou B came pursuing him, however on seeing him and Su Menghan walking together and exhibiting an aura of intimacy, he shouted hastily.

Immediately Ye Feng turned back and saw a familiar white hair youth running towards them, it was Ou B whom he was actually looking for.

“You really arrived at the right moment, there is something I want to ask.”

Ye Feng grabbed and pulled him to the wayside, simultaneously, a bit cautiously, he swept all around and then whispered: “Why does this matter that Menghan has filed a case against Xie people, get spread among the people?”

On listening this word “Menghan”, which was an intimate form of addressing her, Ou B immediately shifted his glance towards the school beauty and couldn’t control himself from wondering that these two people, hadn’t their relationship probably become a lot closer than before?

Naturally, he wouldn’t have any idea how many things had happened last night.

“Neither I know where does this come from, but very early in the morning, someone had dropped a short message to several groups, making the whole school know about it.”

Ou B said in a scolding manner : “You Bastard, in short, now the situation is very disadvantageous to you.”

“Relax, nothing will happen.”

Ye Feng's eyes flashed with coldness : "I just don't know who that particular someone is, but if I catch him, will surely make him know my real power and ferociousness."

"Well, Small Bee, I m already clear about your ability, but the crucial point is we don't know exactly who is involved in this propaganda"

Ou B shook his head, and while changing the subject, said : "Oh, by the way, yesterday you were with that beautiful lady of Lin Clan"

However after reaching half the way, suddenly he realised that Su Menghan was still there standing next to them, which made him zip his mouth instantly.

"Keke, excuse me, oh that's right, literally speaking, she wanted to be my elder sister. So now the situation is like this, she is like my elder sister."

Ye Feng coughed and a bit embarrassedly said, then held Su Menghan's hand. Also, he said that just to make her feel at ease, let alone it was also the fact.

Su Menghan's fingers were now in his palm gently held, which all of a sudden gave birth to a sweet smile that gradually crept over her pure face, making him feel relieved that this small girl wasn't angry at all.

"Oh boy, I, Ouge is with you, my friend."

(Lastvoice : Here Ouge stands for Ou elder brother.)

Ou B threw a mischievous smile, as he patted his shoulder and praised him loudly. Accepting Miss Lin as his elder sister? This was really good, this way not only he prevented Xiaohua, Su Menghan from getting sad, but also preserved a big powerful supporter, Lin Clan in his favour!

"Oh, that's right, this thing, while getting back home, let your Dad have a look at it, so that he can determine its genuine value. Besides, also ask him to help me sell this thing."

Ye Feng said that, as he unwrapped the packet and made Ou B look inside it, where he had kept the legendary luminous pearl.

Ou B stretched forward to take a look and surprisingly the sight turned his eyes wide open at once, such a big legendary luminous pearl? To one's surprise, it was actually thrice bigger than a size of an adult's fist, besides, the picture of two

dragons was also carved on its surface, apparently making it look like a very extraordinary stuff.

Even by his eyes, he could see that the value of this huge pearl would be at least more than five million. In case an auction was done, then extracting tens millions wouldn't be impossible!

"There is still a good news, that good for nothing youth Lin Xiuwen turned into a retard yesterday evening suddenly."

Ye Feng smiled.

"What?"

By this time, Ou B hadn't drawn himself out from the shock of this luminous pearl, and once again his mind was blown away by this news.

Lin Clan's Sanshao became a retard? He still remembered the incident which had taken place last time in Oushi Antique Store, when his father reluctantly suffered a triple compensation. Indubitably then, his personal attendant would have purposely crumbled the antique, and virtually trapped his father to compensate them, but why did he compensate?

Such a rampant, arrogant and despotic playboy turned into a retard, this news would absolutely turn anyone deleted. Actually, it was indeed an exciting matter, worth setting off firecrackers to celebrate!

"How can he become a retard?"

The only problem was, Ou B couldn't think through it, just guessed that could it be that this good and justifiable thing was done by Ye Feng?

"Don't misunderstand."

Ye Feng looked at him incredulously and somewhat puzzled he wondered, although he always used his sword to strike and kill people right on the spot, but could it possible for him to descend to such a low level where he would like messing up with people's brains just to trouble them?

"Perhaps it's true "a life of sin ends in sorrow sooner or later". He might have done lots of wicked things, that's why not even the God could stand to continue watching him."

Ye Feng waved: "This thing, we will discuss it later, I hope you won't mind, let's walk fast rightnow, we have classes to attend, you remember, right?"

If he wanted to pass the entrance examination for Yanjing University, then on that ground, his current level was certainly considered as far from enough. Even in Yanjing senior high School, he awfully scored and got the first rank from the bottom in his class, therefore getting admission in Yanjing University was like a distant dream for him currently.

Naturally, for Ye Feng, there was nothing like pressure, because as per his current memory, he could pass the university entrance exam now in a tweak.

The short conversation among these three people ended soon and they walked together towards the classroom.

They left the stairs and advanced towards the classroom's door. However right at this time, they saw something at the end of the corridor, which simultaneously made these three people gawked at once, why so many people were gathered there? Moreover, a lot of people didn't look like students, could it be that some kind of troublesome situation had popped up there?

"It's her?"

Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search Technique and sensed someone, making him frown rightaway.

Actually blocking the doorway of the classroom, those two Xie Clan's siblings Xie Min and Xie Chengye were there, although the others Xie people were also there casually dressed, but Ye Feng recognised them at a single glance. Besides them, those soldiers from the previous time, who had blocked him in Jingcheng restaurant, were also there, they were actually the subordinates of Xie Chengye.

Again asking for trouble?

Ye Feng snorted coldly and tightly clasped Su Menghan's hand, then strode to go over there.

"Hey, hey Small Bee, don't go over there first, what if they will be actually seeking you for troubles? Let me go and have a look first what's the matter....."

Panic-stricken, Ou B outstretched his hand and tried to stop them by blocking their way.

“Rest assured, nothing will happen.”

Ye Feng could easily mark that his face was clouded over with genuine worry and concern, which really deeply touched his heart. However, in order to deal with these little vagrants, his friend Ye Feng was also not ready to flinch back.

Despite Ou B's all efforts and advises, Ye Feng along with Su Menghan, soon arrived at the classroom's door!

“Look, Ye Feng and Su Menghan have arrived.”

“Really arrived, this time, everything will be done for, Xie people, hurry up and come to the door.”

“Should we inform the teacher about this?”

“Inform your ass, even if the principal arrives, can he really dare to touch these Xie people?”

The students around the classroom's door were whispering about this matter, and their talks were easily heard by Ye Feng using his Soul Search Technique.

While at this moment, Xie Min and Xie Chengye simultaneously turned around and suddenly the sight of Ye Feng and Su Menghan appeared before their eyes, making their eyes all light up.

“Oh, finally arrived, the college entrance examination is almost around the corner, Ye Feng you are still together with this slutty girl. Ain't you afraid that you might fail in the examination?”

Xie Min immediately came out and by putting on a contemptuous look on her face, she directly set her face towards those two. Her whole body was bedecked with jewels and loaded with beautiful makeup. She had gotten such a powerful back supporter that not even Ye Feng could imagine, therefore, again she became all swaggered up.

“Wasn't the last lesson enough for you?”

Without further ado, Ye Feng also stepped ahead and engraved a slap on her face.

Snapped!

As for his movements, the people present on the scene, nobody could see anything, not even his movement, until Xie Chengye and his subordinates reacted. After being slapped, immediately Xie Min' cheek turned red and swelled up. But the interesting part didn't end here, a mere slap held such a huge power, which threw her several steps back and she heavily got crashed into the crowd.

Actually, a slap on her face could send her flying!

“Whish!”

The surrounding students immediately burst into an uproar, this guy Ye Feng, barely got the support of Lin Clan and had really already turned so arrogant and blunt altogether!

“You dare hit my elder sister! Now no one can appear to save you!”

On seeing that, Xie Chengye clenched his teeth and without any hesitation, he pulled up his sleeves, directed his subordinates and a row of seven-eight well-trained soldiers, suddenly rushed towards Ye Feng!

Chapter 144 -> A ruthlessly beaten face

When the surrounding students saw Xie Chengye, leading several people, rushed towards Ye Feng, their eyes went wide open. They didn't want to even blink their eyes and miss this splendid scene.

These people, with the strong build and extraordinary temperament, were definitely not the ordinary street punks, they all looked practised men! Despite the fact Ye Feng had already knocked down a few small punks of Heavenly Serpent Gang before at the school gate, still, those trivial punks, were they truly capable enough to be compared with these practised men present at the moment?

The people with discerning eyes looked at Ye Feng, as they thought that this time he would be certainly violently thrashed by these people!

However, the thing which happened the next moment was far beyond their expectations.

On seeing those people advancing towards him, Ye Feng just lightly snorted and quickly pulled Su Menghan close to him. By still exhibiting a calm, relaxed and carefree look, he effortlessly threw several kicks towards them.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Along with his seven subordinates, even Xie Chengye didn't have the ability to resist his kicks. In an instant, he was kicked and thrown by him directly to the end of the corridor, where covering his stomach, he became totally unable to crawl up again!

This was just the matter of split second, but had already turned Ou B all shocked, standing behind with his mouth open.

This was precisely that frightful state one achieved after practising the martial arts, wasn't it?

As for the crowd of other students, they entirely had no idea what martial arts was. Upon seeing this scene, all they could do was gawk, with their eyes wide-open, while being completely motionless. Simply, they couldn't believe their own

eyes, was this guy Ye Feng so formidable all along?

However at this moment, Su Menghan was the only one person, who wasn't affected by this incident, she just stood next to him, gently smiling. Presently, she was the only one in the world who knew his identity as the Immortal Cultivator. If he couldn't resolve these ordinary people, then what was the meaning of being an Immortal Cultivator?

By totally ignoring the shocked expression of the crowd, Ye Feng strode towards Xie Chengye, who was still lying on the ground, then stamped his foot on his chest, and said: "Whom you have found as the powerful supporter, and also how could you dare seek me for trouble?"

Xie Chengye hadn't thought before that he would be crushed like this. At present, he was not only stepped on by him, but had also started suddenly spitting out a mouthful of blood, his face had already been coloured with a terrorised expression.

If he had known that earlier, this thought would have never crossed his mind to approach Ye Feng to trouble him!

But now it was too late.

He listened to Ye Feng's interrogation first, then by coughing a fresh blood off, said : "You have provoked Lin Clanyou will have to pay for that surely."

Provoked Lin Clan?

Ye Feng heard that and immediately scowled, when did he annoy Lin Clan? If it came to Lin Clan, everyone knew that they didn't hold any favourable impression of him. However, when he gave a second thought, then he assumed that it might be Lin Rentian.

He was Lin Xiuwen's father and younger brother of Lin Detian.

Immediately this thought ran through his mind, then he turned around towards Su Menghan and asked: "Menghan, who is the President of Yanjing's first People's Court, do you know that?"

Su Menghan immediately gave a 'No' by shaking her head, however, she immediately dug out her cell phone, her white, slim and tender finger rapidly hit

on the screen, and soon with a delightful sweet smile, said : “Lin Rentian.”

Nowadays, the network had become so advanced, Lin Rentian was such a renowned public figure, obviously, he would be found easily on the internet if searched.

Indeed, it was him!

The name of Lin Rentian barely fell into Ye Feng’s ears and instantaneously his eyes flashed with coldness, a person, holding a high position like Lin Rentian, could really keep on causing trouble for him everywhere, couldn’t he? Lin Xiuwen became a retard, although Ye Feng had nothing to do with this matter, still, Lin Rentian actually aimed at him everywhere, simply like a crazy dog.

Undoubtedly, Xie Min, Xie Chengye and this group of people were stirred up by Lin Rentian to come and cause troubles, but unfortunately, they had underestimated Ye Feng. Because as per Ye Feng’s method, suppression needed direct violence!

After getting the reply, holding hands with Su Menghan, Ye Feng advanced towards the classroom’s door.

“Don’t come, don’t come over

A mere slap on the face had thrown Xie Min towards the classroom’s entrance. So, on seeing them approaching, she hurriedly got up. But then she thought something and felt that now they had gotten the support of Lin Rentian, therefore, she didn’t have to be afraid of these little brats. In return, she pointed at Su Menghan : “You slut, revoke the prosecution at once, otherwise not even Lin Clan could save you! As you know that Lin people stand by my side now..... ”

Ye Feng snorted coldly and completely ignored her words, instead, he moved close to Su Menghan’s ear and taught her some amazing uses of Zhenqi : “Just condense Zhenqi in your palm, this way you can enhance the power of the palm, this is the simplest and easiest use of it. ”

Since Xie Min dared open her mouth to scold and humiliate Su Menghan, this truly made her firm to personally resolve this issue!

Su Menghan gritted her teeth and gradually started condensing Zhenqi in her palm, just like how Ye Feng taught her, simultaneously she raised her head and

glared at Xie Min.

Although she had never been in favour of violence, but this woman Xie Min, the so-called her “stepmother” had not only trampled her for last so many years, but had also conspired a car accident and killed her grandmother. Even now, she was still insatiate and constantly calling her slut.”

Even though such a good temperament and courteous girl Su Menghan was, but now she was also completely unable to stand her!

She stepped forward and arrived in front of Xie Min.

“What do you want to do? Slut. I tell you people, if you don’t withdraw

Xie Min’s half face had already swollen up, besides this, although she was already extremely afraid of Ye Feng, still, she was boldly facing Su Menghan, just like a tigress, with a razor-sharp tongue. She must retrieve her influence in front of everyone now, or else, where could she show her Clan’s face?

Moreover, she also firmly believed that in front of Lin Rentian’s strength, Ye Feng didn’t have any chance to be compared of. To put it like this, he was just a kid, although she could make a good show, but today she was actually beaten up by him. Therefore, certainly some another day, she would make him know that what would be the tragic consequences of hitting her.

“I won’t revoke the prosecution.”

Su Menghan stood before her holding an unwavering determination, while constantly looking into her eyes, then she lifted her small hand.

Snapped!

A slap, again forcefully landed on another side of Xie Min’s face, making her directly repel several steps, staggeringly she dashed against the wall and turned all dizzy!

Once again this scene turned the surrounding people totally stunned, except Ye Feng.

What just happened, clearly didn’t this pure and innocent school beauty abruptly hit a person? And that Xie “aunt” was also too weak, she actually got slapped by a school girl, but still, why didn’t she fight back?

How could anyone imagine that this young girl Su Menghan, standing before them, was now an Immortal Cultivator, and after absorbing a Lingshi, she had already promoted her Cultivation by three years. So her unmatched speed and power were entirely beyond Xie Min's imagination.

Furthermore, her Cultivation had barely hit three years, and the present situation was very crucial for her, otherwise Ye Feng would never have dared to make her beat someone. In case she had five years of Cultivation, and she hadn't known how to keep her strength under shackle, then most probably she would have killed an ordinary people just by a slap

"You also hit me! Smelly whore, you're screwed now!"

Xie Min touched her face and immediately an inconceivable expression crept over her face, as she looked at Su Menghan. She had never thought that this docile girl could become so decisive this fast.

Snapped!

Su Menghan didn't utter a word, just stepped forward, and engraved a slap directly on her face and threw her out of the way.

A radiant drop of tears rolled down from the corner of Su Menghan's eyes, as she thought how the opposite party had schemed against her grandmother and ultimately killed her a few years back. This thought instantly transformed her into a merciless person. Even though she had ruthlessly slapped her, but still what was the use of it? Could slapping her bring her grandmother back to life?

Two palms, they had not only suddenly shattered Xie Min's prestige, but had also sent her to see stars in this daylight, also making her realise that if she would still continue saying bad words like this, then definitely she would be left with huge humiliation.

At this moment, she also didn't want to think much. Therefore, she just turned around and started running away.

For her, to escape was a lot better choice than being here and got beaten up over and over, therefore she ran to one side, while fishing her iphone out of her bag, as she intended to call someone for help.

But by this time, she had barely reached the stairway, and suddenly a figure

appeared right before her out of the blue, readily raised his foot and kicked the phone she had in her hands. Then that figure turned and immediately stepped on it heavily.

Kacha!

Let alone her cell phone was iPhone, even if it had been Nokia, still would have been 100 % unable to withstand the pressure of being crushed under the foot, because that figure was –

“Grandpa?”

Originally Ye Feng was also looking towards the direction where she was advancing, however suddenly, that figure came in the line of his sight, making him totally unable to bear but gawk at once.

Ye Wentian, how did he appear here?

Chapter 145 -> Can you take the responsibility?

When a group of students noticed an old man suddenly appeared before them, aggressively kicked iPhone from Xie Min's hand and crushed it under his foot, at that time, each and everyone gawked on the spot, while letting their eyes and mouth wide open, who was this old man?

The grey sturdy attire, straight eyebrows slanting upwards like a sword, swift and fierce vision like an eagle, was almost similar to a fierce tiger choosing a human to devour!

"How did Grandpa arrive here?"

As soon as Su Menghan's eyes fell on him, she immediately took her hand back, panic-stricken, she ran to the side of Ye Feng and pulled his arm tightly, while quietly watching Ye Wentian in the front.

"I don't know either."

Ye Feng was in a stunned state by his sudden appearance, therefore he scowled and shook his head. The whereabouts of Ye Wentian had always been very elusive and unpredictable. Although the last night, the thief had told him that the old man wasn't in Yanjing currently, but only God knew where was he the last night?

"Humph."

Ye Wentian removed his foot and lightly snorted, then after, without even pouring a glance at Xie Min, he crossed his hands behind his back, all calm and composed took a step and walked towards Ye Feng.

En route, he looked towards Xie Chengye and his several subordinates, then faintly said: "Being the soldier and show unity at all times is really a good thing, but like a promiscuous manner, helping a tyrant carrying out his evil deeds is actually not right, go back and reflect upon yourself."

Ye Wentian had a rich experience of life, therefore, naturally he knew the way the thought process of those subordinates used to act. Helping Xie Chengye everywhere to "bully" people and being the part of showing off his influence, as

for this matter, nobody knew who was wrong! Literally speaking, their eyes were truly smeared, therefore, they didn't understand what they were doing was justifiable or not.

With that preaching, Ye Wentian arrived before Ye Feng and Su Menghan, and said something which was quite astonishing for them : “Brat, starting today, I, the old man will be personally guarding you

The moment Ye Feng and Su Menghan heard what was said, they remained stunned for a moment, a personal guard?

“Now that the Old man Lin doesn't need me for his protection, naturally I have gotten my hands free now, so I'll be by your side to prevent this little brat from running around.”

Afterwards, he looked at the gentle, smart and well-behaved Su Menghan, and nodded his head with satisfaction. The brat's speed was not slow, he was away from Yanjing just for a night and this little girl's body was already defiled by this brat.

Depending on her disposition, wouldn't she surely become Ye Feng's good wife from now on?

Currently, Ye Wentian's mind was whirling around this thought, the more he imagined this, the more satisfied he felt.

As an old and genius martial artist, certainly, he could easily see the subtle changes Su Menghan's body had.

“Protecting Old man Lin?”

Ye Feng asked one all of a sudden, Lin Hongchuan had been given protection all along by THIS mysterious dab hand, his Grandfather? No wonder their parents' relationship was so good!

“Correct, he is now with your grandfather at the same place, in a good health, completely without any worry. Now, this old man just needs to keep a watch on you to ensure your safety and well-being.”

He went on, meanwhile slightly knitted his eyebrows, so many students were around surrounding them, naturally, it was something he really was not

accustomed to.

Last night, he had a very long and detailed discussion with Lin Hongchuan and Tang Xuefeng, finally they arrived at a decision, making Lin Hongchuan stay in Quyang County, together with Tang Xuefeng in the same place, and letting Ye Wentian free to come and keep watch on Ye Feng.

Presently Lin Hongchuan, although had a very grand influence in this country China, but he didn't need to handle any matter. Therefore, he was free to enjoy his later years of life, carefreely, regardless of what place it was.

“Grandpa? Tang family?”

Ye Feng heard and instantly his expression changed: “That's where my mother belong to, right? Where is she now?”

On seeing him responding like this, Ye Wentian lightly said : “Your mother is suffering from amnesia, but she is living a very good life, you don't need to be concerned about her”

The word went out, and Ye Feng and Su Menghan glanced at each other.

Did Tang Qingling really lose her memory?

As if in order to comfort Ye Feng, Su Menghan made an effort and clasped his hand firmly, leaning against him more tightly.

“Well, you two go and attend your class now. And as for these people, this old man will solve this issue before leaving.”

After finished saying, he waved his hand and turned around, facing Xie Min and Xie Chengye!

“Let's go.”

Ye Feng repressed the palpitation of his heart, and by pulling Su Menghan, he advanced to enter the classroom. However, on seeing that still a group of students were gathered around, he coughed and shouted loudly: “You guys haven't gone back to study? What so interesting is going on here?”

A group of people saw him speaking, and all of a sudden they zipped their mouth and a pin drop silence spread in the classroom.

This guy Ye Feng could hit people and sent them flying so easily, now nobody could dare mess up with him!

Moreover, that old man probably was Ye Feng's grandfather, and seemingly was more dominant and arrogant, with huge strength, couldn't afford to stir him up as well! The little kids would study by themselves, the college entrance examination was already around the corner. In case they provoked this pair of grandfather and grandchild, they would also be thrashed by them and then they wouldn't have any way to enrol the college entrance examination. This way, it would become a matter for a lifetime regrets

Soon, in the corridor outside the classroom, Ye Wentian arrived with his hands still crossed behind his back, and then stood firmly.

By this time, Xie Min also finally reacted and noticed that her iPhone was badly trampled by this old man! She was already in a foul mood, but the condition of her phone triggered her anger even more. However on seeing her brother Xie Chengye sprawled on the floor, constantly whining, her heart shivered with a little fear.

Also, it was really scary, how could a high school student beat so forcefully?

"You are completely useless, couldn't even cope up with a mere high school student."

Xie Min contemptuously looked at her brother, as she said that. However, right at this moment, her eyes got attracted towards the stairway and suddenly her face lit up with a delightful smile, the reinforcement had finally arrived!

"What's the matter?"

She saw that wearing the uniform, several policemen came all the way running towards them, and surprisingly they were actually headed by Miao Zhenqiang! However, seeing the scene in the hallway, Miao Zhenqiang couldn't help but scowl, this Xie Clan, was it still suffering so badly?

Very obviously, these policemen were not those who were called by someone, but had already arrived all prepared to appear at the right moment. In short, they had joined hands with Xie Min for this time. Otherwise, it was impossible for the department to send Miao Zhenqiang personally on this mission.

“There is this high school student named Ye Feng, who had hit the people, in addition, this old man also stepped on my cell phone and trampled it. This kind of scum of society must be caught and given a severe punishment!”

Xie Min pointed her finger at Ye Wentian and ferociously, a bit arrogantly said.

Following her finger, Miao Zhenqiang also looked towards the classroom’s door, although he had already planned to seize Ye Feng right on the spot, but when Ye Wentian fell in his line of sight, he was suddenly taken aback.

It was him, wasn’t it?

His plan was completely doomed, this old guy couldn’t be trifled with!

Suddenly the heavy presence of Ye Wentian sent a shiver down Miao Zhenqiang’s spine.

Seeing him all stunned, standing completely motionless with his eyes wide open, naturally the policemen, who were tagged along with him, also didn’t dare to act. In addition several school leaders, who had also arrived at the scene after getting informed of this whole incident, they also didn’t dare to act rashly. Miao Zhenqiang, the provincial and ministerial level senior official, if such a great personality couldn’t dare to move, then could the rest of the people even think of moving an inch?

“What are you looking at? My grandson and granddaughter-in-law are here to study, don’t come to disturb them.”

Ye Wentian continued saying faintly : “If because of you their college entrance examination is delayed, then can you take the responsibility?”

As soon as Miao Zhenqiang listened to his words, he burst into a cold sweat straight down.

He hadn’t thought that unexpectedly he would bump into this old man here. Wasn’t it a rumour that this old man had been continuously protecting Old man Lin, how did he get the free time to show up here?

“Officer Miao, he is just an old man, why are you still scared of him, just go and quickly seize this culprit!”

Xie Min didn’t understand the true situation, therefore she shouted from one

side, her red swollen cheeks were looking very funny.

“You shut up.”

Miao Zhenjiang scolded her one and thought that this matter had already reached such a critical condition, did this young married woman want to add fuel to the fire, didn't she have the brain?

“Officer Miao, this?”

The potbellied principal of the school also arrived at the scene and seeing an old man blocking the door of the classroom, he also started cold sweating. Even such a high ranking officer Miao didn't dare to crash one's way through? What was the identity of this old man? And how didn't he ever notice that his school had such a great deity?

The present group of policemen was all embarrassed, they didn't know whether to retreat or advance.

“All step aside.”

Right at this time, another very commanding voice passed on from the staircase. Soon, a group of ten fully-armed mysterious people, headed by a vigorous and resolute temperament man, around 35-36 years old, dashed in.

“Now the National Security Agency will handle this matter, the loitering persons, all leave this place rightaway.”

The man took out a credential, making the surrounding people glue to the spot.

NSA had arrived!

And the man was Thunder, evidently, he was also looking for the same target and that was undoubtedly Ye Feng as well as Ye Wentian.

Immediately the surrounding people turned their attention towards the old man, who was still standing and blocking the doorway, as they thought that this time how long could he continue blocking the door? The NSA had always refused to accept the tyranny!

Chapter 146 -> The Old man's aggression

Soon, along with the NSA's ten-man squad, Thunder arrived in front of Ye Wentian.

"Old man Ye, I'm sorry but Ye Feng is concerned with a murder case, so I have to bring him back."

As the Captain of the National Security Agency, naturally, he knew the identity of this old man as the highly respected person in the martial arts world! After all, every day, the NSA had to deal with the human arena. If he hadn't known who Ye Wentian was, then he should have died with embarrassment.

"Who died?"

Ye Wentian eyes stared as he asked.

"Cai Shahong, Yanjing University's first-year foreign student."

As for the truth, Thunder spoke out everything in front of Ye Wentian in a somewhat serious tone, while standing firmly, eyes all fixated at him, however still a bit caution at all times.

The human arena and the martial arts world, it could be said that they were the two polar opposite world. Although usually, they were on good terms, but every now and then, the conflict occurred between them usually always because of some martial artists, who couldn't control their anger and initiate a stormy situation.

However now, in the case of Ye Wentian's sudden appearance here, it had already piled up a lot of tension in Thunder's mind. Such a powerful old man was standing in front, of course, it wasn't at all easy to deal with him, even if he was there leading ten members, but probably they still had to plant there!

"It's him?"

Ye Wentian's eyebrows slightly wrinkled.

Regarding the identity of Cai Shahong, he had also heard before, but not because of his status, rather purely because of Lin Shiqing. Wasn't it a rumour

that he was Lin Shiqing's beloved, who was actually now murdered. The old man was not in Yanjing just for a night, and so many things had already happened?

As for this student Cai Shahong, who had the United States origin, naturally, Ye Wentian didn't have a liking to, let alone the opposite party wanted to snatch away Lin Shiqing.

Dream on!

He was now in the heaven, indeed the old man loved to hear this news.

At present, Ye Wentian's heart was overwhelming with the feeling of self-satisfaction and proud. The story didn't end here, he was also feeling more and more satisfied with Ye Feng: This brat is really decisive enough, the first day he saw Lin Shiqing and decided at once to get rid of his love rival!

In his opinion, definitely, when Ye Feng would have met Lin Shiqing, would have fallen for her on the spot. However, when he would have heard that Cai Shaohong was her beloved, he would have taken a decision instantly to wipe him out of the scene! Enough ruthless! He truly deserved to be his grandson.

So many thoughts abruptly bubbled up and crossed his mind, but actually in a split second, he resumed his normal form like nothing affected him, and lightly said : "My grandson has entirely no connection with this case, Cai Shaohong died so what? What evidence you have to prove that my grandson is involved in this?"

By putting on a calm and composed expression, he said leisurely, while his footsteps were still motionless like a pine, still steadily standing outside the classroom's entrance, with unwavering determination!

"Old man Ye, don't embarrass us and make things difficult for us."

Thunder frowned.

"Ha ha ha, a joke."

Ye Wentian laughed out loudly : "Currently, obviously you are embarrassing this old man. Want to grab my grandson? No way?!"

"Captain, this"

A member of the National Security Agency could not stand to continue

watching it, hence softly uttered a few words.

“Wait, let me ask for instructions from the Chief.”

Thunder didn't dare to make a decision without authorization, therefore he hastily ran up to the side and pulled a communication device out to contact with Lin Detian.

Just in a short while, he returned and waved his hand : “Retreat team!”

Thunder had always been very vigorous and resolute, immediately after getting instructions from superiors, he no longer entangled there. He simply nodded his head to hint Ye Wentian and then led his team to leave the place.

Although the NSA people showed up there, but they left the place just within a period of five minutes.

This scene left everyone watching from a distance, like Miao Zhenqiang, Xie Min, school leaders and others, completely dumbstruck. This old man still had such a high pulse energy, that not even the NSA could dare to force a breakthrough and arrest the person? Moreover, Cai Shahong had actually died, this was a big news!

“You people haven't gone yet?”

Revealing an absolute aggression and domineering, while standing in front of the classroom's door, facing Miao Zhenqing, Xie Chengye and others, Ye Wentian roared in a high tone to scold them.

His words burst out and instantaneously shuddered the hearts of standing people. As a result, immediately, by clamping their tails between their legs, they vanished.

The school principal had been watching this all along, he wanted to come up and pull a conversation with Ye Wentian, but then he noticed that he was also being actually glared by him to retreat, making his heart indescribably dubious, so all he could do now was similarly slipping away in disgrace.

One after another, everyone left the spot after getting yelled by Ye Wentian.

.....

On the other side, Ye Feng entered the classroom together with Su Menghan,

then they divided and went towards their own seats, after all, their seats were not together.

Through Soul Search Technique's proliferation, he had been constantly paying attention to the situation outside the classroom, and noticed that Ye Wentian's aggression had already driven the NSA people away, which brought a delightful smile on his face, this old man had really an astonishing power.

Moreover, Ye Feng had already anticipated that Lin Detian would definitely send people to look for him, after all, the effect of Cai Shahong's death was too big. Even though he was not a murderer, still he would be grasped, so as to use him as the witness or so on.

Anyways, just now such a heart-chilling trouble had cropped up outside the classroom, but propitiously was instantly sorted out by a few words of Ye Wentian, and the reason was obvious enough, because of his grandfather's magical strength.

If Ye Feng also had that kind of strength, did he still need to hide his identity being a martial arts practitioner?

And the answer was certainly a big 'No'.

Hope this day wouldn't be too far, he thought in his heart, after all, nobody liked to wear a mask throughout one's life. Even the Skeleton masked man - Nanfang, reverted to his original form after solving Cai Shaohong's case.

This thing reminded him that also he didn't know who could be Nanfang's next personal enemy?

Although currently, his body was in the classroom, but his train of thought had already fluttering around the East China Sea. Now that Ye Wentian would be guarding him round the clock, so going to the East China Sea wouldn't be so easy

But the interesting point was, today's incident didn't explode widely in the school like a bomb, because people soon had a more shocking news which had already turned into a breaking news.

Yanxi Villa District area was set on fire, an outstanding foreign student – Cai Shahong died, not even his skeleton could be saved!

Lin clan's Sanshao turned into a retard!

The suburban area of Yanjing city went through a severe explosion last night, which later on unexpectedly turned out to be a genetic experiment base!

Although these three things seemed totally unrelated, but no matter how, still were extremely shocking news, which soon caused mighty waves in the entire Yanjing.

Furthermore, what so strange was, Cai Shahong died, but neither the United States nor Pei Keang Group showed any reaction, as if they didn't know about it yet, entirely leaving this matter for people with high aspirations to take note of it.

Almost simultaneously, a lot of smart people tried to link this thing together with the suburban explosion. This could force such a strong organisation Pei Keang Group never dare to disclose this matter. Thereafter, only one possibility left, and that was, in this matter Cai Shahong's death couldn't wipe out the crimes.

Was that suburban area's gene experiment base somehow related with Cai Shaohong and Pei Keang Group?

But regardless of what the truth was, in the eyes of the outside world, it could only be considered as a guess, the real inside information must not be spilt out, not even a little bit. This was an extremely confidential information which should be sealed off within the boundary of this country China, or else if leaked then it would certainly pave the way towards the international conflicts!

Henceforth, Yanjing University would be missing a bright and brilliant foreign student, making a lot of people sigh in regret. Besides, this incident turned countless young girls of the university feel all dispirited. But actually, no one knew what the true face of Cai Shaohong was and what he had tried to pull out secretly.

The time started to roll on.

Perhaps because of Ye Wentian, Lin Detian dropped the plan to pursue Ye Feng to trouble him, now Ye Feng's life had become very calm and smooth.

Under the strict supervision of his grandfather, he began to study round the

clock. However, whether to talk about Ou B, other school student or the teachers, in the eyes of everyone, he didn't have any hope.

He had already scored the first rank from the bottom in his class, so now no matter how harder he try after buckling down, it was still impossible to make up the gap this time in the real entrance exam.

In addition, Su Menghan, who had also become an Immortal Cultivator, obviously felt a sudden memory enhancement, and for that, she thanked Ye Feng from the bottom of her heart. She was the only one person who had full confidence in Ye Feng and also believed that this time, he would certainly score well in this college entrance examination.

Therefore, she didn't give up the hope and started helping him every night in the room. She started giving him private tuition, which somewhat baffled Ye Feng in the beginning.

He wanted to take private tuition but not for the schoolwork, but he loved to do that.....

Certainly, Su Menghan was firm determined to make him take tuition, and he was also not good to shirk, he had to from her.

On the other side, in order to fix things up, Ye Wentian made these two people live in two opposite rooms, and also strangled Ye Feng firmly so as to minimize the probability of his escape.

And for Ye Feng, ever since his rebirth in this modern city, this half month was going to be the most miserable two weeks for him!

Chapter 147 -> College entrance exam ends

Half a month later, the date of college entrance examination approached on tiptoe.

Bubbling with full confidence, Ye Feng entered the examination room, completely disregarding the gazes of the surrounding students, which was infected with a feeling of despise.

Now, he could confidently go for the test and definitely hit the same high score as Su Menghan. Most importantly, Su Menghan had always been the first rank holder, not only just in her class, but also in the entire school. Now that she had turned into an Immortal Cultivator, which had already significantly enhanced her memory, so now it wouldn't be a huge problem for her to take the college entrance exam and score the highest numbers once again.

Moreover, now the gap between Ye Feng's and Su Menghan's level didn't remain that far!

However, merely relying on his memory was still not enough for him to achieve such an enormous progress in just half a month. The key was purely Su Menghan and her determination; she followed him all the time and spent a lot of time in home tutoring him. And if in return, he didn't show any good result, then he should better hurl in the river and kill himself.

The entrance exam was going to continue for the next two days. Ye Feng passed through the people holding a supercilious look, no one thought that he could ever get the good grades.

Everyone knew that Ye Feng had already gotten the first rank from the bottom in the class before, even in the entire school he was the last rank scorer! The whole school had the expectation that the last rank scorer would certainly give up the college entrance examination. But surprisingly not only Ye Feng actually showed up there for the exam, but also made a group of people feel very surprised.

Certainly, whatever these people were thinking about Ye Feng's poor performance was one aspect, in addition, they were also very jealous of him,

who had actually made him live together with Xiaohua, Su Menghan? Furthermore, his engagement was already set with Miss Lin, so for them, if he scored zero in the college entrance examination, then they would be delighted since this was what they all were wishing all along!

Obviously, Ye Feng ignored all these.

In the afternoon, after finishing the last exam, Ye Feng went out of the examination room and just ran into Su Menghan, who was also coming out from the next door's examination room, her pink one piece dress was embellishing her freshness and charm, making her a beautiful landscape in the campus.

"Ye Feng!"

Su Menghan waved and welcomed him with a sweet smile : "How was the test?"

"What do you think?"

Ye Feng smiled, as per his situation, certainly hadn't displayed the abnormal possibility.

On this day, almost all third-year senior high school students across the country had gotten out of the abyss of misery, the hellish sort of their painful life eventually ended today. However, those whose exam results didn't turn out good , they would certainly burst into tears, and those who would hit a good score, would be in a state of extreme merriment.

From a hell to another hell, or from now on they had finally entered the heaven? Everything was totally dependent on how the final outcome would be, they just needed to wait for the college entrance examination's result to be declared, to finally draw a conclusion.

"Come on, let's go home."

Ye Feng stepped forward and held her soft and small hand, then gave her a mischievous smile. Today, he was also equally in an extremely cheerful mood, because the pain of being under tutoring had finally ended now, he could finally be with her

On seeing his smiling face, harbouring a naughty intention behind that smile,

regarding which she didn't have any clue what he was thinking, suddenly made her blush and her pure face turned red.

This scene suddenly attracted the eyes of other male students around, making each and everyone one of them secretly sigh, because, for them, it was just a total waste of such a nature's beautiful gift. Such a pretty and attractive pure beauty, had actually fallen in the hands of Ye Feng, this wasn't at all nature's justice.

However, naturally, Ye Feng didn't care about how other people thought about them. Ignoring everything, he just walked side by side with Su Menghan and left the examination place, all set to go back home and finally take a good rest.

He looked around, since he didn't know where his grandfather, Ye Wentian was. He just planned to wait until tomorrow morning, when Xie Min and Xie Chengye's trial would come to an end, then he would consider the way to get rid of the old man, so that he could go to the East China Sea.

In these last two weeks, Ye Feng noticed that Lin Rentian did everything to publicize Xie Min's case everywhere, not only he ignited this matter in the school, but had also spread this matter everywhere, making a lot of people in the society know about it. Now, many powerful public figures often used to discuss that with the backing of Lin Rentian, the person who sued Xie siblings, most probably wouldn't have the good end.

Naturally, Ye Feng had nothing to fear of.

Anyways they had Su Xinchang at their side to testify, who could play the effect of giving the final word. In worst case scenario, even if this man was bribed by the opposite party, still Ye Feng could rely on his Hypnosis, making him reveal the truth, even could make Xie Min confess everything on her own!

Together with Su Menghan, he arrived at the school gate, where suddenly he noticed a familiar car, with a familiar figure actually waiting at the school gate. Surprisingly, it turned out to be Lin Shiqing, clad in a classy long-sleeved floral shirt, she was looking graceful.

However, just like the last time, again she became the centre of attraction. Seeing Ye Feng and Su Menghan walking together while holding hands with each

other, she promptly moved ahead to meet up with them.

“How was the test, Little Ye?”

Lin Shiqing smiled, as if making the people bath in the spring wind.

“Pretty good.”

However, Ye Feng wasn't got affected a bit, in fact, in this last half a month, Lin Shiqing had been frequently approaching him and had been inviting him to dinner, but had always been turned down by him on the ground of his college entrance exam.

“Today you are free, right? The elder sister invites you to have a meal with her, what do you think?”

She really didn't want to give up, she looked at Su Menghan, then continued.

“Sorry, just finished the test, we are extremely tired rightnow, so we will directly go home.”

Ye Feng shook his head, pulled Su Menghan's hand, directly bypassed her, the first beauty of Yanjing, and then moved towards his silver BMW.

He didn't know the reason why Lin Shiqing had been chasing him for dinner, logically speaking, she didn't have to pester the opposite party, since the matter of Cai Shaohong had already been resolved. Then didn't this mean the first beauty of Yanjing still kept on thinking about him?

On the other hand, while looking at those two people leaving the place, a trace of frustration immediately crawled over Lin Shiqing's face and she thought: This boy also has such kind of individuality, sorry Xiao Qi, I have no way to help you out by inviting him and making him totally drunk, so as to draw some information out about the whereabouts of Mo Jiuge

Then suddenly a thought crossed her mind and she couldn't help but slightly curled her corners of the mouth upwards, actually, she just had to wait for two months, then after Ye Feng would automatically arrive at Yanjing University, wouldn't it be certainly very interesting?

This kid, although superficially he looked so ordinary, but that wasn't the case.

.....

Next morning, Ye Feng woke up quite early and then advanced towards Yanjing first people's court along with Su Menghan. Last night they rolled all the time in the bedroom, still, both of them were remarkably lively and full of enthusiasm, looking all radiant, an Immortal Cultivation was really something very different.

Ye Feng opened the door of silver BMW and saw Su Xinchang was also led by Scar, who sat next to him in the passenger seat. Then he lightly asked: "You know what you have to say when the time comes, don't you?"

"I know."

Although Su Xinchang looked a bit disturbed, but still nodded his head. He looked at the bright and gorgeous Su Menghan and suddenly felt uneasiness in his heart. The condition of his daughter was entirely because of him, she had been infected by the drug addiction only because of his evil plans. Besides, he had also heard Scar speaking recently that it had been extremely painful for her, but also she couldn't quit.

However then, he remembered that recently Lin Clan had also put forward a condition before him. As long as he overruled this trial and proved that Su Menghan had falsely accused the opposite party, Lin Clan would return the shares of Su Sheng Group to him

Suddenly, Su Xinchang fell into the dilemma of choices.

Scar personally drove them to the court and soon they arrived there.

Along the way, Ye Feng constantly kept on scouting out, but didn't find Ye Wentian's figure anywhere. But when he got off at the entrance of the court, suddenly noticed him leisurely standing aside, as if he had been following him all along.

This left him with a bit of puzzled feeling, it seemed that escaping from the evil clutches of this old guy was too difficult.

Afterwards they moved ahead and walked towards the courtroom, naturally, Ye Wentian also followed them with his moderate pace, and as soon as they entered the courtroom, he quickly disappeared. Not even Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique could feel his presence, as if he was wrapped in a shroud of obscurity.

But Ye Feng knew that he would be certainly always staring at him, to prevent him from running around.

“Squeak” sound echoed.

Everyone arrived at the courtroom door, and the moment they pushed the door, the situation inside left them with a huge surprise.

Fuck, even the visitors’ seats were fully taken!

Wasn’t it just a murder case involved a hired person to kill someone, then why so many people were there?

Ye Feng arbitrarily swept around and sensed the presence of a lot of familiar figures there. Not only he noticed the presence of Su Menghan’s uncle and aunt from Langfang, but also sensed a bunch of Xie people, several people of Lin Clan, as well as Xie Chengye’s several military subordinates, were also there, presumably, they all were at Lin Rentian’s side.

Almost everyone present at this moment turned around simultaneously and looked towards them.

Nobody believed that Su Menghan might win this case!

Chapter 148 -> Adverse situation

Together with Scar and Su Xinchang, Ye Feng and Su Menghan slowly entered the courtroom.

Ye Feng raised his head and noticed that sitting on the presiding judge's position, was bespectacled Lin Rentian. Originally Lin Rentian's facial cast was exhibiting a very refined and cultured appearance, but the moment Ye Feng appeared over there, his expression suddenly changed and became somewhat gloomy.

His son had turned into a 2-year-old baby, obviously, it was very difficult for anyone to bear this blow. However for Lin Rentian, luckily he got the favourable opportunity to finally give vent to his anger on Ye Feng and Su Menghan together.

Whether it was the masked man Mo Jiuge or Cai Shaohong behind the miserable condition of his son Lin Xiuwen, Lin Rentian had no way to punish the culprit. All he could do was grab Ye Feng and Su Menghan intelligently right now to vent his anger, after all who let Ye Feng have the friendly relationship with the masked man?

Originally, inside the courtroom everyone was talking in whispers, however as soon as they saw Ye Feng arrived there, along with the other three people, immediately they all zipped their mouths and a sudden silence spread everywhere, while their fingers raised one after another and pointed at them.

Moreover, several Lin Clan's people were also sitting together, obviously, they all were in favour of Lin Rentian. Besides them, some other people were also there, probably they were Lin Xiuwen's friends. On seeing Ye Feng arriving there, a malicious expression slowly crawled over their faces.

Actually, they had never thought after half a month of drumming up support, Ye Feng and Su Menghan could actually really dare to show up in the court. However, they really did the right thing, in front of these many people, it would be good enough to make them completely lose their honour, even eventually, in return they would be sued for a false accusation!

On the other side, perhaps because of the support of Lin Rentian, Xie people including Xie Pinghui were already extremely elated with the feeling of success. Even though Xie Min and Xie Chengye were currently in the defendant's seat, but still there was not even a little sign of worry or nervousness on their faces. In fact holding an expression of ridiculing others, they were looking at the doorway from where Ye Feng along with his people was stepping in.

Did they really want to harm Xie people? Too tender point!

However, at this moment, Ye Feng's silhouette suddenly reminded Xie siblings of the incident when they were slapped twice by Ye Feng, and they couldn't help but suddenly feel the burning pain on their cheeks. At this gathering place, they would certainly make sure to pay him back for this!

Furthermore, several subordinates of Xie Chengye had also made their presence there, they were also sitting together in a group, their faces were clouded with righteous indignation, and were holding, even more, hatred and hostile feeling towards Ye Feng and Su Menghan now than before. Because in their eyes, Xie Chengye had always been a very good buddy, who was very loyal, how could he make an incitement to murder someone?

Not to mention hiring someone to kill an old lady, it was too absurd!

They could never believe this story, since they were absolutely sure that Ye Feng and Su Menghan must have falsely accused Xie siblings. Just because Ye Feng was on good terms with Old man Lin, this didn't give him the right to do whatever he wanted to. Fortunately, Lin Rentian, a perspicacious president, was still on the side of justice, and today was the presiding judge to carry on the trial of this case personally, so it was expected that he would surely make the truth revealed.

As for the three maternal uncles of Su Menghan along with the married ladies of the family, altogether 10 people were also present there, sitting in a group. When their eyes also fell on Su Menghan, immediately the expression of hatred took over their faces. Most probably they would have thought that not only she had provoked Yanjing's Xie Clan as well as Lin Clan, but had also pulled them in, making them very unhappy with her this stupid action.

Especially, that Dai Gen's aunt from the last time, she was showing even more

contemptuous look, accompanied by angrily gnashing her teeth with hatred.

Not long ago, because of the drug addiction, Dai Gen had been carried away by a mysterious organisation, and there was still no news of him so far, and how would he be, this also remained a mystery. So in the opinion of Su Menghan's Aunt, Ye Feng had a relationship with Heavenly Servent Gang, that gang which was the main culprit, who dragged Dai Gen into this world of drug addiction. She really had fairly enough right to hold a good reason to blame him.

Apart from them, there were also some public figures, as well as an official dispatched by the People's Procuratorate, since according to the stipulation, they were needed to participate in this kind of a trial. However similarly most of them were again not in the support of Su menghan in this lawsuit. A few days back President Lin Rentian had said that this prosecution was really trying to establish a false accusation, in that case, the final result was inevitable and this trial was nothing, merely a set of procedures.

Moreover, to Ye Feng's surprise, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, both of these beautiful women were also actually present in the court. In this crowd, only these two beautiful women were the only one who didn't gloat over the disaster of others.

From a distance, Lin Shiqing smiled sweetly and greeted Ye Feng along with Su Menghan. However when she saw that one of the two men following him was Su Xinchang, immediately a strange expression flashed in her beautiful eyes.

It seemed like today's key was Su Xinchang.

As for Xiao Qi, perhaps because of the masked man, she held a very favourable impression towards Ye Feng as well. She thought that Su Menghan, who was just a high school girl, how could she support this crime, so there was nothing wrong in suing the Xie people, right? This thing was most probably true!

Unfortunately, it seemed that Lin Rentian had already decided to make Su Menghan lose this lawsuit, so this matter didn't remain quite easy to handle

The cute and lovable face of Xiao Qi suddenly revealed a hint of little anxiousness.

Su Menghan had just finished her college entrance examination and in no time

she would turn into a university student. In case she really lost this lawsuit now, and instead was charged with the false accusation to frame up the opposite party, that would be definitely become a major blow to her, even could ruin her whole life.

If the joint strength of Xie Clan and Lin Rentian was really exerted, and they really took this case seriously, in that case, it was quite possible that they could make Su Menghan receive several years of set term imprisonment!

Xiao Qi looked towards the collegiate bench of members headed by Lin Rentian, and thought that these might be from Lin Rentian's department, so whatever Lin Rentian would say, they would definitely go along with him.

(Lastvoice – collegiate bench of members can also be called as panel of judges.)

Then she shifted her vision towards the defendant lawyer, not only he was a veteran lawyer but was directly under Miao Clan's influence. It was said that his defence capability was unbeatable and was one of the best in the whole Yanjing. Asking him to appear in the court would have been really very expensive for Xie Clan.

Therefore, at present, the situation was very disadvantageous for Ye Feng and Su Menghan!

"Come on, we will surely succeed."

Ye Feng was not even the least bit concerned about the other people's gazes and thoughts, he just smiled and tried to cheer Su Menghan up. Then, along with Scar and Su Xinchang, he finally found the last few vacant seats, where he sat down with them.

Su Menghan, as a private prosecutor, needed to sit on the front seat of the private prosecutor.

When she took her seat, immediately her eyes drew towards those Xie siblings, she noticed the feeling of disdain and banter in their eyes, which in return turned her a bit anxious. Although she had always received good grades in the school, but this was her first time sitting in this situation, as the private prosecutor.

The entire court was solemn and respectful, but there was no one on her side,

making her have a feeling of being at a loss. Consequently, she couldn't bear but tilt her head to look at the side of Ye Feng.

Seeing Ye Feng constantly smiling to encourage her, Su Menghan's mind finally settled down and she became calm.

Then after, she raised her head and soon noticed various kinds of sneerings, Xie siblings' sneering, the sneering of defendant lawyer, presiding judge Lin Rentian's sneer, as well as sneering of numerous collegiate bench member, as if they were piled up with infinite confidence that they were going to hit the victory today.

Having Ye Feng at one side was certainly a good support for her!

Since all people had finally arrived, Lin Rentian at once announced to begin the court session.

According to the convention, naturally he read out loud the Rules of the court first, then after announced the case origin, the prosecution cause of action, as well as the list of collegiate bench member hearing the trial, such as secretary, private prosecutor, defence lawyer and a series of personnel. Afterwards, he immediately informed the litigants in the lawsuit process that they had some rights in accordance with the law, such as they could apply for other people to avoid applying for the witness to show up on the scene, and so on.

After finished reading the whole process, the image of Lin Rentian wearing eyeglasses actually appeared extremely solemn and respectful, but his cloudy eyes and cold smiling face actually couldn't escape from Ye Feng's keen eyes.

"Be well prepared, you are the most crucial witness here."

Ye Feng sitting on the seat, said lightly to nearby sitting Su Xinchang.

"Hmm."

Still holding a complicated expression Su Xinchang simply nodded his head.

He threw a quick glance at his daughter and then embarked on a private prosecutor's seat, such a beautiful but again her somewhat helpless silhouette, made him unable to bear and he again started struggling up in his heart.

Chapter 149 -> An assured victory

After holding the court session, Lin Rentian schematically read out the indictment loudly, afterwards signalled the accused persons to state their points.

Firstly, Xie Min relaxedly said: “She sued me on this ground that a few years ago I hired someone to drive and hit a person, it is purely fictitious! I had completely nothing to do with her grandmother, then why would I hire someone to hit and kill her!?”

Right after that Xie Chengye also added : “Even I have been also unjustly accused, one must know I’m a soldier, totally dedicated to our country, can a soldier ever do such a thing to do harm to the society?”

His words barely fell, and immediately turned his several subordinates excited, as if they almost wanted to shout out loud to applaud him, because for them whatever he said was right!

In the indictment, Scar had written everything clearly that six years ago, Xie Min conspired with Xie Chengye to hire an outside man to deliberately cause a car accident. Moreover, because of Su Xinchang’s proper explanation, plenty of details were there in the indictment, which were very clear.

However, when Lin Rentian interrogated the facts of the crime mentioned in the indictment, not only Xie Min and Xie Chengye completely denied the contents, but also blamed that Su Menghan was trying to establish a false accusation on them.

“She is clearly talking nonsense, how could it be possible that she didn’t know my grandmother!”

On seeing Xie Min’s flat denial, Su Menghan immediately raised an objection : “Once at the entrance of Qingfeng Park, she had stated everything clearly with her own mouth, I still have that cell phone recording!”

Ye Feng used to often lose his cell phone, but Su Menghan’s conservancy was quite good.

She dug out her cell phone directly and played the voice recording, soon the

phone resounded an acrid female voice, it was really Xie Min : “..... What did you say, saw your grandmother? In those days, she had really greatly opposed your dad’s marriage with me, I have a vivid memory. What a pity, you went there only to see her grave

A few words of voice recording was broadcasted, which was sufficient enough to reveal Xie Min’s rampancy and overbearing personality!

Xie Min had never thought that Su Menghan would actually save this kind of recording, her complexion suddenly darkened. But then she looked around and felt surprised to find that including Lin Rentian, almost everyone was still self-poised, which made her mind feel relieved.

“What is this? This is what I found in my subsequent investigation that the old woman died many years back, who still remembers her?”

However, Xie Min still continued to deny the fact and kept on sarcastically replying.

“I have other recordings as well.”

Su Menghan gazed at Xie Min and thought that as expected this woman was indeed too shameless. However, fortunately, Su Menghan had already done her preparation beforehand, at that time when Su Xinchang had spoken out everything about the fact that happened six years ago, she had recorded down everything quite intelligently only for this day.

She had waited quite a long time for this day!

This time, the recording was a little long, although it was played for more than five minutes, but was still enough to bring into the light the clear details of the fact which Su Xinchang had confessed in front of Ye Feng and Su Menghan that evening.

Once the recording was aired, the audience turned completely silent.

Most of the people simultaneously threw their glances towards Ye Feng and Su Xinchang, but as for Su Xinchang, he hadn’t expected this, so he was in a daze all of a sudden.

This girl really used to handle things so carefully, she even recorded his

statement as well, didn't she?

The impact of this was, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, these two beautiful women suddenly remained astonished, seeing this recording. For them, Su Menghan, who looked like a gentle high school girl, actually had such an exquisite mind! Unfortunately, having this voice recording didn't represent anything. The distance to be covered to win this lawsuit was still quite far!

Still holding a self-composed stature, Lin Rentian pushed his eyeglasses on the bridge of his nose : "The authenticity of this recording is waiting for evaluation, please hand over the recording to the experts, later they will draw the conclusion."

Lin Rentian, an old and crafty fox, had already expected the emergence of this situation, therefore had hired the specialised expert in advance, and had also made sure the opposite party must stand on his side! As long as the sound recording was in the clutch of the experts, he would regain his control on everything soon.

On the other side, it didn't take long for Su Menghan to understand this situation, but the situation she was in rightnow, could she have the right to refuse? Soon, her cell phone was handed over to the experts with specialized skills, and the process immediately began to establish the authenticity of the recording.

Although Su Menghan was not convinced, but when she looked at Ye Feng smiling and boosting her up, again resumed her calm stature.

Soon the courtroom started buzzing with the whispering sound of the people, making Lin Rentian knock the gavel : "Silence. Now, first call the litigant to appear in the court, the main person involved in this accident case back then, Li Dagou."

Immediately, a dark skinned, but also a good middle-aged man was brought to the court.

It was clearly mentioned in the indictment that in those days, the man who drove to kill Su Menghan's grandmother was this man Li Dagou. It was said that during that period, he was just a temporary worker, however now, apparently he had already become chief labour contractor, and that also in Su Sheng Group.

Even if his status had changed, but his appearance and temperament couldn't change, even if he was dressed in a western-styled suit, but still looked like a nouveau riche.

Su Menghan looked at Li Dagou who was taken along to the court, soon a trace of hatred gradually appeared in her beautiful eyes. This was the man who drove the vehicle back then to deliberately kill her grandmother!

Right after arriving there, Li Dagou took a quick glance of Su Menghan first, it seemed like his eyes were overflowing with incomparable disgust for her.

Li Dagou, do you admit that in the past, you were hired by Xie Min and Xie Chengye to deliberately create a car accident, causing the death of the victim?"

One individual from the collegiate bench of judges asked.

"I don't admit it, by the way, this case had already been resolved earlier, hadn't it?"

Li Dagou said that in a strong voice, afterwards shifted his vision and stared at Su Menghan : "I wasn't careful back then and suffered an accident. Young girl, you shouldn't wrongly accuse innocent people like this."

"Nonsense!"

Su Menghan immediately refuted.

"Silence."

Lin Rentian secretly sneered, but still maintaining an extremely solemn face, he continued asking questions one after another from Li Dagou. And every time he fired a question, Li Dagou replied in such a way, as if he was completely fixated to the point all along that Xie Min and Xie Chengye had nothing to do with this, it was just an accident.

"Now, invite the victim's son, Huang Ande as the witness to appear in the court."

Lin Rentian continued.

Immediately after that announcement, one of the three uncles of Su Menghan got up from his seat and was brought in front. Huang Ande was Dai Gen's father, he looked a little vicissitude, his eyes were also flickering, apparently he wasn't

resolute at this moment.

En route, without even looking at Su Menghan, Huang Ande directly went straight and confronted the collegiate bench of judges.

After taking the oath that the witness wouldn't perjure, finally, a bit slowly he said : "Six years ago, my mother was already a little mentally disturbed. Whatever was mentioned in the indictment of that accident was absolutely true, she wasn't careful, rushed the red light and was hit "

"Uncle, you!"

This was really something beyond Su Menghan's understanding, including her family members, even the son of her grandmother could dare stand on the side of the outsiders!

"Whatever I said are the facts, although the victim was my mother, but the facts are the facts, and I"

As Huang Ande said that, his eyes flashed with a hint of anxiety, actually all along he couldn't dare to confront Su Menghan's pitiful eyes. Confronting the collaborated strength of Xie Clan and Lin Rentian was something which nobody could handle easily, that was totally out of the question! Besides, prior to the hearing, Lin Rentian and Xie people had already grabbed him and had carried on combining threats with inducements.

Quickly, the interrogation of the two witnesses was completed, and so far the balance of victory had already tilted towards Lin Rentian side!

"Presiding judge, after a thorough evaluation, this recording has been identified as a counterfeit recording, which can't be used as an evidence."

Soon the evaluation report of specialised experts came out, apparently, it insisted on the fact that Su Menghan had used a forged evidence. A false accusation and now the false evidence, if these two big charges were together charged on her, it was sufficient enough to force her behind the bar for several years!

"Hmm, please ask the father of the private prosecutor, Su Xinchang to appear in the court as the next witness."

Lin Rentian's eyes revealed a complacent look.

A little girl wanted to fight with him, no way!

When Su Xinchang stood up, Lin Rentian felt that it was now certain that he was going to grab the victory any moment now, because he hadn't even left Su Xinchang alone, they threatened him as well, therefore, he had a feeling that Su Xinchang would never dare to reveal the truth!

"You will help your daughter or your personal enemy? I hope that you would have already considered about it clearly."

When Su Xinchang got up, Ye Feng reminded him this sentence, then raised his head and looked towards the dock where Xie Min and Xie Chengye were.

If it really didn't go well, then hypnosis should be done rightaway.

Nobody knew that Ye Feng was already sure of his success, from the beginning to the end!

Chapter 150 -> Astonishing reversal!

Su Xinchang gradually stepped onto the witness seat.

On one side there was his daughter Su Menghan, when he looked at her, then he noticed her beautiful eyes had a touch of little expectation as well as fear. Her expectation was that certainly, Su Xinchang would speak out everything truthfully, making Xie Min and Xie Chengye convicted of this accident; and her fear was, most probably Su Xinchang could let her down again.

Su Xinchang's heart was really in a state of entanglement and he was constantly struggling hard with his own thoughts, all puzzled he finally took the witness seat.

On the other side, his wife Xie Min was there whom he had married ten years ago and who was the key person who had helped him a lot in obtaining various achievements all along.

Moreover, in front of him, Lin Rentian was also there who could make his second half of life remarkably splendid.

While behind him, in the visitors' seats, there were numerous people just enjoying watching this bustling scene and wondering how Su Xinchang would present everything into light.

And there was also Li Dagou, who was sitting aside and showing a satisfied smile, it was simply impossible for him to admit this thing, otherwise wouldn't he be sent to the prison? However, he collaborated with President Lin on this agreement that he would receive one lack money once this case would come to an end, how cheap this matter was!

By now Huang Ande had also occupied his seat and sat together with the ten other relatives of Su Menghan's maternal Clan, just a moment ago he made his testimony, which could get him two hundred thousand money to improve his present life, as well as if Dai Gen could swear off the drug addiction and come back, then this money could also be used in getting him married and settle down.....

Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi were somewhat anxiously looking at Su Xinchang standing in front.

This man, after all how would he make a choice?

“I take an oath in the court: I will faithfully fulfil the obligations prescribed by the law for testimony, will only speak the truth that I know. If I disobey the oath, I would like to undertake the corresponding legal liability and moral condemnation

Su Xinchang, according to the firm voice of justice, began to take an oath.

Meanwhile, from one side, Xie Min signalled him with her eyes, the meaning of which was quite obvious.

Su Xinchang looked into her eyes, also glanced at the solemn and respectful appearance of Lin Rentian who was in the front and ultimately his heart set a firm resolve.

“I can prove that the matter which had taken place six years ago, Xie Min and Xie Chengye has nothing to do with it! Although one side is my former wife, while the other side is my daughter, but

Holding a very resolute facial expression, Su Xinchang finally said aloud.

The words went out and stole away the complexion of Su Menghan rightaway, her face turned white as she thought that really, in the end, this person Su Xinchang showed his true colours, he had always been such a disloyal person all along, how did she anticipate that he might change?

However, Su Menghan's suddenly changed complexion couldn't escape Su Xinchang's eyes, he noticed that she had immediately turned deathly white, although he was feeling restless in his heart, but was still very resolute. What drove him to make this choice was very clear in his mind, now that Su Menghan had fallen in the clutch of this new type of drug addiction, her lifespan had already reduced, she couldn't live more than a year, since this being the case, better he should discard considering him as finished.

If he succeeded in defending Xie Min and Xie Chengye, then from now on they could also help him a little in the future, and as for Lin Rentian, like what he said, he would return Su Sheng Group's shares to him positively.....

Finally, Xie siblings heaved a sign of relief; Lin Rentian naturally brightened up; almost everyone present on the scene was all relieved, really the final result was similar to their speculation.

“Su Xinchang!”

Right at this moment, a resonate voice from the visitor’s seat suddenly rang up, which shivered the heart of everyone present rightnow in the courtroom for hearing this trial!

Everyone spontaneously turned one’s attention towards Ye Feng who was currently standing.

“Immortal Technique, Hypnosis!”

Ye Feng saw that Su Xinchang, Xie Min and Xie Chengye simultaneously turning around towards him, and in a split second he looked into the eyes of those three people, one after another, super fast, simultaneously cast hypnosis on them and implanted a thought in their minds at once!

Such hypnosis usually caused a substantial injury to the human, since Su Xinchang didn’t know anything about repentance, hence all trapped Ye Feng had to take this step.

Invisible and several wisps of Zhenqi, directly sneaked into Su Xinchang’s brain. And the next moment, the man directly knelt down on his knees.

“Menghan, I made a mistake!”

His tearful voice suddenly reverberated!

This astonishing scene, made everyone present on the scene gawk, they thought that this man, in general situation, decided to remain dumbfounded, then what happened to him now that he knelt down towards his daughter suddenly?

“Your grandmother was really murdered by the person hired by Xie Min and Xie Chengye, I have a lot of evidence, including the proof of transaction which had happened with Li Dagou. Later, it was me who went out with money to compensate Li Dagou

“I have been always unfair to you my daughter, Menghan forgive me!

Whatever I said just now is 100 % true!”

Under the influence of hypnosis, all of a sudden Su Xinchang forgot everything and knelt down towards Su Menghan, confessed everything!

This scene suddenly blew away Lin Rentian’s mind, as if he was hit by a huge shock!

He couldn’t properly think through this sudden occurring of Su Xinchang’s action. Fortunately just a moment ago, he had really done a good job and spoke everything just like the plan, so now suddenly what happened to him which made him break out in this kind of bewildering action?

On the other side, on hearing this baffling statement, panic-stricken, Li Dagou stood up at once. And he had to be anxious, in case this matter was brought to the light like this, obviously, he would be charged with the murder case and would be forced to spend his entire life in the prison!

“Awesome!”

Xiao Qi’s face lit up with the joyous expression, she hadn’t expected at all that at a critical moment such a startling reversal could take place. It seemed that this man Su Xinchang still had a bit of conscience thing left, right?

Somewhat puzzled, Lin Shiqing gazed at Ye Feng who had occupied his seat by now, and thought that this boy shouted loudly, which really had such an enormous power, that it even forced Su Xinchang to suddenly thoroughly rectify his old misdeeds and turn into a reformed man?

Ye Feng felt her vision and understood that he was being observed.

Besides, what Ye Feng noticed was a trace of curiosity and suspicion Lin Shiqing’s eyes were revealing, which left his heart a bit puzzled, this girl Miss Lin, why did she come here? He couldn’t guess properly.

At this moment, Su Menghan also turned her head and looked towards her maternal relatives, gradually she felt tightness in her heart, Su Xinchang was indeed neither honest nor kind, how did he strike back at such a crucial moment?

“Silence Silence!”

Lin Rentian's bespectacled face suddenly darkened a bit as he knocked the gravel.

He was indeed a crafty old fox!

Then he gloomily glanced towards visitor's side where Ye Feng was and said : "This student, the court is such a serious place, it doesn't allow you to threaten the witness, I think that you should leave this place first. Security!"

"All right, I walk by myself, no problem."

Ye Feng got up and smiled, anyway, he had already implanted a thought in the minds of those three people, Su Xinchang, Xie Min and Xie Chengye. Even if he wasn't there, these three people would still acknowledge their guilt one after another!

"Come on."

Ye Feng stood up and waved his hand to Su Menghan by piling up an encouraging smile, then he turned around and left the courtroom.

Upon seeing him so calm and relaxed, Lin Rentian felt a little strange, he thought that this boy, how oddly he always turned out to be everywhere, it was indeed a little unusual.

However, when Su Menghan saw Ye Feng leaving the scene, her heart felt a little lonely. Fortunately, Su Xinchang had admitted the facts truthfully now, making her heart feel a stream of warmth. Now that Su Xinchang had testified everything, so it should be enough, right?

"Witness Su Xinchang, since he was threatened in the court, therefore his current testimony becomes invalid. Now please re-testify and say the truth you know."

Wrapping himself with a calm and composed expression, Lin Rentian said that, his bespectacled face revealed a trace of the threat as he looked at Su Xinchang and said : "Committing perjury in the middle of the trial in this serious court, the consequences of which would be equally serious."

"Moreover, if for a moment let's consider whatever you just said thoughtfully is the truth, then not only you have constituted the perjury charge, but also it is

proved that you have also committed the crime of harbouring culprits!”

Meanwhile, the defence lawyer of Miao Clan finally found the opportunity to display his performance, he stood up and said : “If this case of hiring a person to murder turns out to be true, then it’s clear you have withheld this information so long, harboring criminals for six years, the situation is very serious

Obviously, this was an open threat to Su Xinchang!

In the general course of the trial, such threats were not at all permitted. But in this game, since Lin Rentian was leading, therefore Miao Clan’s lawyer didn’t consider this thing.

Su Menghan heard that and immediately her face turned white again, how could this lawyer be so shameless?

While everybody thought that the situation would go to the right path, in the process of the development of the situation, something unexpected happened and completely turned the table instantly, making the whole situation beyond everyone’s expectations.

“No, I have to stick to the facts, not only Xie Min and Xie Chengye are guilty but Li Dagou is also one of them!”

Su Xinchang determinedly said that.

His statement fell and really surprised the present people for a moment, while their eyes got fixated at Xie siblings. When everyone thought that this sibling would soon go all out to refute this completely, exactly then an astonishing thing happened again.

“I made a mistake! I am guilty!”

Xie Min and Xie Chengye, both simultaneously knelt down in front of Su Menghan!

Thunderstruck, Lin Rentian suddenly stood up, his face was revealing an extremely annoyed expression at this moment, these three people, what the hell had gotten into them!

Chapter 151 -> Look at the God

Ye Feng left the hearing scene and soon arrived at the entrance of the court.

But by proliferating his Soul Search Technique, he could still feel the current situation inside the hearing room. When Xie Min and Xie Chengye took initiative and acknowledged their charges on their own, immediately the entire trial room burst into a chaotic situation, even the old man, Lin Rentian couldn't keep his calm.

Originally an adequate arrangement had been done beforehand for this kind of matter, however, these three people were truly morons, how foolishly they admitted their guilt. This was not at all advantageous for them, by any chance did they want to be thrown behind bars?

Since the Procuratorate's people were still on the scene, naturally, Lin Rentian couldn't make any obvious action that might prove his noticeably biased move. Therefore, after the acknowledgement of guilt done by Xie Min and Xie Chengye, helplessly Lin Rentian made the record, after interrogating a series of specific circumstances, promptly he passed the verdict.

As per the national law of China, there was no such charge like hiring a person to murder, therefore now that Xie Min and Xie Chengye had admitted their crime, so were convicted of "intentional homicide" and were sentenced to life imprisonment, in addition to stripping them of their political rights for the lifetime.

So far as Li Dagaou's intentional homicide, as well as Su Xinchang's judgement, was concerned, processing was postponed for another day retrial, because it wasn't the main case. Furthermore, it was quite certain that Li Dagou would be sued and would at least suffer the fate of life imprisonment. However, since he had even made the perjury charge of the first class, so it might possible that he would get death penalty.

Talking about Lin Rentian, he used this case entirely to take revenge from Ye Feng and Su Menghan. If because of this case, his solemn and respectful image was defiled in front of the public, then not any gain could be able to make up for

his this huge loss.

Therefore, he was determined that he had to carry out resolute and unbiased processing at any cost now. On that basis, it was fair if he didn't sentence death penalty to Xie siblings.

Once the statement of the verdict came out, Lin Rentian felt extremely unhappy as he thought that his son was still in the hospital, even his treatment didn't turn out effective. This thought suddenly darkened his complexion and he became more and more unsightly

Seeing Xie Min and Xie Chengye under arrest, Su Menghan's tears rolled down her face. She couldn't repress the joy blooming in her heart. She quickly ran out of the trial room and went straight to Ye Feng, so as to immediately report him the good news.

However, there were also several people present in the courtroom, whose facial expression had already tremendously changed.

One of them was Xie Pinghui, burning with fury, he tightly clenched his fist, suddenly his blue veins stuck out and became clearly visible. The Xie people, who were already in blank dismay, were also totally unable to digest this sudden incident. Xie Pinghui was also not in the condition to properly consider this incident, how his children could be so stupid and could actually admit their guilt on their own!

This was an intentional homicide, it wasn't a fun, was it? Moreover, this case had also been concealed for almost six years, therefore it became a more serious crime! The story didn't end here, although Xie siblings had acknowledged their guilt, but no matter how good the relationship was between Lin Rentian and Xie people, Xie Pinghui was still unable to protect his children. Besides this, it was also impossible to use his all means and strength to protect them.

It was simply crazy!

How did these two fools take birth in his Clan? This time, Xie Pinghui wanted to do everything to get these two fools out of this thing. Even though it was Xie Clan, still the money needed to do some arrangements and set them free was quite a lot, and still, there was no guarantee that they would turn out 100 percent successful.

Nearby standing Li Dagou also understood that the matter was far from good, therefore he wanted to just find a propitious opportunity to escape, however soon he was also grabbed by the security guards. Now there was no way he could escape. Deep inside his heart, he was constantly cursing Xie Min and Xie Chengye for their stupidity. For him, these two big fools were really the big suckers.

Moreover, Xie Chengye's subordinates were already in a perplexed state and were looking at each other in blank dismay. So it seemed that the declared result was something which they hadn't expected at all. In their hearts, Xie Chengye was not only the senior official, but also a good buddy, with an extremely high sense of loyalty and responsibility. Then how could he get involved in this incitement to murder incident a few years ago?

Could it be that they had really misjudged Xie Chengye until now?

They thought that how foolishly they helped him twice while dealing with Ye Feng and Su Menghan. It didn't take long for them to understand that they were really wrong, they were gravely mistaken. Originally they thought it was Xie Chengye who was being bullied, but now it clearly appeared that they really helped a tyrant in carrying out his evil deeds!

This boy Ye Feng, after all what was his identity? Not only he was very strong, but it also seemed that everything was under his control. At such a critical moment he stood up and shouted, immediately making Su Xinchang and the other two people kneel down and acknowledge their crime

Su Menghan's relatives were also no exception. Her maternal relatives, including Huang Ande, were similarly in a shocking phase at the sight their eyes saw just now.

This incident really stood shocking for them, not only that two hundred thousand money got slipped away from Huang Ande's hands, but most likely he also committed a perjury charge. The current situation of Huang Ande was probably like he tried to gain an advantage, but ended up worse off!

"That lowly slut!"

All of a sudden Huang Ande's wife flew into a rage and started acting hysterically, also completely refused to see the facts, her hatred for Su Menghan

also got multiplied! In her opinion, Su Menghan was a clever seductress, who not only used to seduce men everywhere but also used to harm their Clan miserably.

She must go to bring back some compensations from Su Menghan before departing!

Actually, she hadn't thought that this matter would, later on, turn out like this and reach such a critical point, who was the main culprit

On the other hand, naturally, the sudden occurrence of this thing also piqued the mood of some people present on the scene, they were Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, who were very much delighted with this judgement.

“What's this all about, simply inconceivable”

Xiao Qi saw Xie Min and Xie Chengye were taken away, which made her feel somewhat strange, it was really shocking and unbelievable.

“Why don't you go and ask Ye Feng about this?”

Lin Shiqing's mind was already clearly aware that although these three people acknowledged their guilt on the own, but actually it happened right after Ye Feng shouted on the scene. To say that Ye Feng and this strange phenomenon were totally irrelevant, Lin Shiqing absolutely couldn't accept this point.

Interestingly, this thought wasn't only limited to her mind, there were also several other people, like Xie Clan, Lin Clan, Xie Chengye's subordinates and so on, whose minds were also hit by this thought. When Lin Rentian announced the end of the trial, one after another, each and every person walked out of the trial room, holding this thought to use all means and inquire about it.

...

By this time, Ye Feng had arrived at the court's entrance.

Now that the trial result had been declared, he didn't have to waste any further second here, he was just waiting for Su Menghan to come out, so that they could return home together. Afterwards, he would try to figure out a way to get rid of Ye Wentian's tight supervision and rush to the East China Sea!

He just stood at the entrance of the court for a while, at the same time proliferated his Soul Search Technique, swept around and suddenly felt

something which made him frown immediately. Actually didn't it seem like in the parking lot, some strange situation was going on currently? The whole car was shaking.

This was not the style of Ye Feng to pry into other people's privacy, but he must ensure his safety along with Su Menghan. Therefore to find any suspicious circumstances appearing in his radar, he used to sweep around constantly using his Soul Search Technique, so as to set his mind at rest.

"So actually who are those two individuals?"

Ye Feng swept his Soul Search Technique and suddenly sensed some sort of embarrassing situation.

A red sedan with six passenger seat, inside of which there was a wretched fat man constantly shaking his obese body. And under his body, there was a sexy-dressed woman. They were Hu Meimei and Xie Min's second uncle whom Ye Feng had seen last time in Yanxi Villa District!

Ye Feng recognized them and immediately lost his interest. After a little while, the shaking of the car finally stopped, apparently the things going on between that wretched fat man and Hu Meimei finally ended. After tidying up a bit, they walked out of the car and suddenly their eyes got stuck on Ye Feng, which brought a contemptuous look on their faces.

"This time that young girl must have falsely accused them, he he."

The wretched fat man said that while thinking about the beautiful appearance of Su Menghan, and as a result, his saliva almost flowed out.

"Hmm, standing against Xie people and suing them, certainly she doesn't have the good end."

Hu Meimei, while holding the arm of that fat man, said that in a somewhat coaxing voice.

Ye Feng was certainly disinclined to pay attention to them.

They walked straight completely ignoring him, it seemed that they wanted to enter the court. However, right at this moment, a voice passed out from the courtroom's door.

“Ye Feng! Ye Feng!”

It was Su Menghan who ran out first hastily.

All of a sudden the beautiful image of Su Menghan appeared before their eyes and their eyes turned wide open as if they saw something shocking.

“Oh God! Quickly look at the God!”

The fat man and Hu Meimei exclaimed aloud and hastily fell on their knees, in front of Su Menghan!

Upon seeing this, Ye Feng’s corners of the mouth slightly curled upwards, because he had already expected this situation. When he was in Yanxi Villa District, he had used hypnosis on these two people and implanted a thought, making them feel that seeing Su Menghan was similar to seeing the God!

The moment Su Menghan got outside the courtroom, she froze to the spot seeing this strange scene.

What kind of situation was this! The former secretary of Su Xinchang, Hu Meimei and Xie Min’s second uncle, both of them knelt down in front of her out of the blue, while calling her the God?

Lin Shiqing, Xiao Qi and other groups of people, who were also leaving the courtroom, suddenly viewed this astonishing scene and their eyeballs almost popped out of their head in amazement. Especially Xie Pinghui, his heart was almost blown up.

Just now Xie Min and Xie Chengye had admitted their guilt in the court, wasn’t that humiliating enough for Xie Clan, so now why one more Xie person knelt down on his eyes in front of Su Menghan, calling her the God?

This world is really crazy!

Just retired Xie Pinghui couldn’t accept this fact and all of a sudden fainted on the spot!

Chapter 152 -> To the East China Sea

All of a sudden Xie Pinghui lost his consciousness and fell down on the spot, which also added fuel to the fire and led to an even more chaotic condition in the crowd.

However, upon seeing this, Ye Feng quickly pulled Su Menghan's arm and asked Scar to leave here as quickly as possible.

In the meantime, on the other side, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi also saw them departing hastily and they promptly advanced towards them since they wanted to catch up with them. However before they could get close to them, the silver BMW car, carrying them, already left the scene, leaving behind those two ladies with bitter face and angrily stamping on the ground.

"This guy Ye Feng, I must investigate about him once properly."

Lin Shiqing bitterly said, that kid had never respected her, naturally she shouldn't be blamed for being impolite!

"Together we will."

Xiao Qi promptly added one, this little girl was certainly very much concerned about the masked man all along. And the only clue she had now was Ye Feng, so naturally she would also stay nervous around him.

Lin Shiqing gazed at this lovable best friend of her and helplessly shook her head.

...

They finally returned to the villa, after finished eating lunch, Su Menghan took the initiative and put forward a proposal to help Ye Wentian in massaging his shoulders.

He also thought that his granddaughter-in-law was truly a sensible girl, hence accepted her proposal with great pleasure!

Following the method taught by Ye Feng, she started the circulation of her Zhenqi with her small hands. Shortly after, her comfortable massage made Ye

Wentian fall asleep on the spot, his head got tilted and he started snoring right on the sofa.

Quietly, Ye Feng looked upstairs and gradually a mischievous smile took birth on his face, all settled!

Instantly his stature transformed into the invisible mode and the next moment, he sprang out of the villa and promptly moved towards the office building opposite Qingfeng Park, where Scar had already parked the silver BMW car, waiting for him for a long time. Hence, as soon as Ye Feng arrived there, he set out on his journey without further ado!

The two people's routes were already well decided, at first they would go to Shanghai city from Yanjing, then, from there they would advance towards the seashore County town which was located on the seashore of the East China Sea. According to the news, nowadays several public figures from the martial arts world were already assembled there in that seaside County, which was known as Xiangshan County town!

For safety reasons, obviously, Ye Feng couldn't let Su Menghan tag along with them. As the matter stood, one must know the place was already swarmed with the great martial artists, therefore, a little bit of carelessness could easily lead to a life threatening situation for anyone!

Although presently Su Menghan had already learnt Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace under the initial guidance of Ye Feng, but still going to that sort of place was extremely dangerous for her. In case she ran into some evil person like those 'Happily Married Couple of Swords', then obviously it would become impossible for her to escape.

The silver BMW car like a silver streamer, galloped all the way from Yanjing to the southern side, with the maximum speed.

"Scar, how about your recent practice?"

In the car, Ye Feng asked one directly.

"Asura Tactics has already been revolved by me smoothly, however, last night I tried to comprehend Ghost Shadow Soul Step, however, unfortunately, my level of Cultivation is not that high, because of which my eruption speed is also not

fast enough.”

Scar replied while driving the car.

“Hmm, good.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, the period of half a month to comprehend Ghost Shadow Soul Step, and on top of that for that person who had never been in contact with such martial arts practice, was really remarkably good. However, truly speaking Su Menghan had such a talent that in just half a month of her initial training, she had already grasped Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace quite easily.

Obviously, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was way more difficult than Ghost Shadow Soul Step, which clearly proved that Su Menghan’s talent must be somewhat higher than Scar’s.

“Moreover, I have carefully chosen eight confidants and have also made them practice together. They all are very trustworthy people, while the other people have been disbanded by me.”

Scar continued to report the situation: “Currently, they have begun the revolution of Asura Tactics, however still not a single one of them has appropriately comprehended the style.”

“Well, no need to worry about it.”

Ye Feng thought: “If they continue practising in Yanjing city, it may lead to unnecessary suspicion. So, let’s do it like this, inform them to find some another place to be covert. In addition, must send one million to each one of them.

“One million? Ye elder brother, this”

Scar felt somewhat awkward, eight people, if one million was sent to everyone, wouldn’t it be eight million altogether? Then their property wouldn’t be actually eroded away!

“Anyway, everyone has a family, isn’t it? This way, they can be considered to be removed from their worries.

Ye Feng smiled: “As for the money, do not worry, soon we will have a large hit.

That legendary luminous pearl, Ye Feng had already handed over to Ou B,

making his father estimate it's appropriate value. During the period of summer vacation, there would be a jewellery trade fair in Yanjing and Ou A had decided to sell it at this trade fair, where he could sell it absolutely at the high price.

As for that legendary luminous pearl of the ancient tomb, regardless of any perspective, Ye Feng could easily claim that the age of that superficial dragon was obviously old, and its ornamental value would certainly be of first-class! The rough estimation was, selling it at 5 or 6 million would absolutely not a big problem, and if the luck would be also at his side, then, it could be easily sold at ten million or even more.

“Then it will be all right, let's do so.”

Scar nodded his head and showed his agreement with Ye Feng's statement.

Just because of the help of Ye Feng, he finally got the opportunity to begin the practice of martial arts, which he had been desiring since ages, then in such case, how couldn't he obey Ye Feng? Moreover, the money was entirely an external thing, he had a belief that for Ye Feng money making ways were quite easy.

According to the massage technique taught by Ye Feng, Ye Wentian must remain asleep atleast for several hours.

During this period, Su Menghan made a phone call, her said words were brimmed with her unwillingness to let him go. But she actually also knew that for Ye Feng, looking for his master was certainly imperative, therefore all she could do rightnow was just stay in Yanjing, otherwise definitely she could get him into trouble.

Therefore, she could only get secretly worried for him.

In the evening, the silver BMW, passing through several provinces, finally entered the scope of Shanghai city. Because of the hurry, Ye Feng decided that they shouldn't stay in this city, until the Xiangshan County located at the seashore of the East China Sea arrived, in any case, not much distance left.

However, at this time, what he most afraid of was once Ye Wentian would wake up, he would certainly fly into a rage and would try to pursue him, which wouldn't be a fun

After entering the scope of Shanghai city, the silver BMW, with the extremely

high-speed, galloped towards Shanghai city.

But right at this moment, suddenly Ye Feng's phone rang up, and as he looked down, he noticed that it was a strange landline number. His eyebrows slightly got wrinkled, as if a little doubt had suddenly hit his mind, could it be that Ye Wentian had already come all the way from Yanjing to here just to attack him?

Immediately he hung up the phone, then browsed through the Internet to search something, soon found that the number actually turned out to be the number of the East China Sea's side.

"Who is it?"

Ye Feng pondered for a second and then called the number back.

"Hey, Ye Feng!"

The phone rang and was soon picked up by the other side, a sweet female voice like the sound of an oriole passed on, it was actually Long Wan'er.

"How are you? You scared me, how did you reach the East China Sea?"

At first, Ye Feng felt a little relief, but immediately turned a little anxious on thinking that wasn't Long Wan'er confined to the four walls at her own house by Long Mo'ran? Then how did she run away to the East China Sea?

"My sister-in-law helped me in getting out of there where are you rightnow? I missed you."

Long Wan'er's voice was really filled with joy, in addition, from her expression it was quite obvious that she had really missed him a lot, making Ye Feng's heart suddenly get hit by a feeling of warmth.

"I also missed you, as soon as I reach the East China Sea, will meet you, just wait for me."

Ye Feng returned one.

"Hmm, I am staying in a hotel near Xiangshan County's flyover, come quickly."

Long Wan'er said that but somewhat shyly, then hung up the phone.

On the other side, while driving the car, unavoidably Scar heard the contents that they talked over the phone and secretly praised Ye Feng in his heart. For

him Elder brother Ye was the great Elder brother Ye, wherever he used to go, he always had a beauty accompanying him. Even in the Xiangshan County, already a beautiful woman was waiting for him with her room all open!

While he was busy thinking this, suddenly noticed that a red sports car in the front, quickly fled out, making him hurriedly step on the brake.

Unfortunately, as per the instruction of Ye Feng, the speed of the silver BMW was already incredibly fast, even presently with the extremely fast reaction speed of Scar, he didn't get enough time to fully stop it.

Zi Zi!

The two cars simultaneously hit the steering wheel and finally slightly brushed passed each other. Although they avoided the direct collision, but actually still friction occurred, making the red rear-view mirror of that red sports car hit to fly directly.

“Just stop the car!”

That red sports car immediately stopped, a delightful and interesting to listen female voice passed on, with a touch of indignation.

Chapter 153 -> The East China Sea meet

The silver BMW also stopped.

Ye Feng turned his head and found that there was a matured looking very beautiful woman, clad in red coloured clothes, sitting inside the red sports car. Her whole body was revealing a mature temperament and had approximately 20-30 years old appearance.

Immediately he made a bet, no matter which man it was, once he poured his glance at her, his line of sight would certainly get attracted towards her chest!

Even he himself was no exception at all.

The red dressed beauty had a fiery hot, matured and alluring physique, from top to bottom her striking stature was sparkling with a captivating aura, especially her front two mighty and magnetic peaks, which were wrapped in the red coloured fabric. Those two majestic mountains were sufficient enough to make Ye Feng admit the fact that he had never come across this kind of magnificent thing before until now.

Her beautiful long hair was hanging down her shoulders, but her exquisite and perfectly oval face had a touch of annoyed expression. Very obviously it was because of her beloved sports car, not only it was badly knocked against, but its rear-view mirror was also hit to fly, maybe there would be some other damages as well, because of that she was currently in an extremely foul mood.

However on seeing the silver BMW also stopped, the beauty in red immediately flung the car's door, then got down, while her pair of eyes were unwaveringly fixated at Ye Feng along with Scar. Her anger had also influenced her chest, making it move up and down constantly as if the mighty waves were surging forth.

"Ye elder brother, regarding this, I shouldn't be blamed for."

Scar was feeling all helpless.

"I'll get down and discuss with her."

Ye Feng's eyebrows slightly wrinkled as he thought that this must be resolved

as fast as possible, since he couldn't afford letting the old man catch up with him.

"This car is Audi TTS-Roadster, probably seven-eight million"

Naturally Scar already knew that Ye Feng didn't understand a thing related to automobiles or something related to that, therefore he continued by wrinkling his eyebrows up a bit more tightly : "Certainly, the most important thing rightnow is that woman, it seems that it's not too good to mess with her"

"Not to mess with her, then how should this matter be handled?"

Ye Feng chuckled a bit, pushed open the car's door and directly got out of the car.

As for handling this sort of matter, Scar thought that he was naturally more experienced enough than Ye Feng. However since Ye Feng insisted on to take initiative and also got down the car, so he decided not to meddle with him. In his opinion, Ye elder brother had definitely developed a liking for that beauty in the red, driving the car, therefore he wanted to take advantage of this opportunity to strike up a conversation with her.

If by any chance Ye Feng got to know what was going on in his mind, he might get angry to the extent of spurting blood. As of now, he just wanted to quickly settle this issue, how could he think of striking up a conversation with that beauty at such a crucial moment? Letting Scar handle this matter might take a long time.....

Now that it was quite obvious that the red dressed beauty already wanted to come over and start an argument, therefore Ye Feng took the initiative to stride ahead and do the needful.

"I'm in a hurry."

Ye Feng observed the rear view mirror that the red Audi car had, which had been hit to fly : "Well, I'll leave a phone call to you, how much money will be needed to repair your car, I'll pay you that.

Since he was really in a rush, if he stayed there to let this matter process in its natural pace, then who knew how many days it would take, and when the time came, he might also get caught by the old man Ye.

Hence he must reach the East China Sea before then!

Although his statement was heard by the beauty in the red, but it seemed like a foul trick for her, he was trying to give a phone number and leave this place, how could it be so easy? Although this fellow was riding the seventh series of BMW car, which made it look like he really had a lot of money, but who knew whether this car belonged to him or not? What would she do if she couldn't find him when the time would come?

“No way, let the traffic police come.”

She stared coldly at him, soon her melodious voice again burst out, which had a touch of arousing maturity : “Hitting a car first, then giving a phone number to settle this matter and leaving the place like nothing happened, how can such a cheap thing really exist in this world?

She leant against the car, then folded her hands and embraced her chest, which was like a grand and fuller pair in the eyes of Ye Feng and was obviously her majestic and impressive looking two peaks. Her peaks set off out, plentifully fuller and upright!

Ye Feng couldn't control himself from gazing at those two and unfortunately, he was immediately noticed by her seeing her front, making her secretly sneer in her heart : All men are of the same kind, sex maniac.

However right at this moment, he thought of Long Wan'er, who would be still waiting for him in the East China Sea, making him immediately withdraw his line of sight from her two grand peaks.

However he was too disinclined to care about what the beauty was thinking about him, he directly asked one : “Your phone number? I'll certainly call you, remember it.”

Actually he didn't want to take responsibility, this incident was right or wrong, who was responsible for it, he didn't want to argue about these matters anymore, as long as he got to know how much money was needed to get her car fixed, he would give a phone call to her and would also compensate to the opposite party.

However, for her, this was an evil trick to obtain her number and was actually

considered by her as using the opportunity to start a conversation with her!

“No way, just wait for the traffic police to come over, why are you being so anxious?”

The beauty in the red said that as she shrugged her shoulders, accompanied with a smile, reflecting a look as if very intelligently she dodged his smart trick just now. Using this sort of trick to hit on her and start a conversation with her, by extracting her number smartly like this, this kid was truly a bit too inexperienced.

“Well, then excuse me, I’m a bit in a hurry.”

Ye Feng similarly shrugged his shoulders back, then turned around, immediately his stature flashed and appeared inside the BMW car : “Scar, drive.”

Without thinking anything, Scar instantly hit the accelerator and the silver BMW suddenly soared out!

This sudden incident all of a sudden blew away her mind, this kid, what was he engaged in? To strike up a conversation with her, however without achieving his goal, how could he run away like this?

She stamped her feet bitterly, her mighty fuller chest were also trembling with anger and her heart was also in a very unhappy and dissatisfied state. Actually how careless she was just now that she even let the opposite party run away right before her eyes so easily. However, based on her personality, this matter wouldn’t be considered as finished from her end!

What she cared was not the issue of money, rather it was that she couldn’t swallow a single breath.

Thus it could be seen that huge chest could also turn out to be a big disadvantage, easily hit by tightness

“Yanjing’s license plate, isn’t it great?”

She had remembered the silver BMW’s license plate number, however, her heart was still bubbling with a variety of contemptuous feelings. It wasn’t like she despised the city Yanjing, the fact was she herself belonged to Yanjing originally, but now she used to work in Shanghai.

If she would still rely on the traffic police to handle this matter, then who knew how many months she would be needed to wait to achieve the desired verdict. Therefore, as for this thing, she finally decided to take this matter completely in her hand and by using her network, finding out the whereabouts of the silver BMW wouldn't remain a big deal for her.

Of course, it was imperative to get her car all repaired first, but since she had really worked hard for two years and had lost everything to buy this car, therefore her heart couldn't bear to see it incomplete.

...

The silver BMW galloped towards the southern direction. All the way it didn't receive anything which could block its way.

And after three hours of high-speed driving, they finally arrived and stopped in Xiangshan County in the East China Sea.

"Scar, you find a place to stay."

Ye Feng got off the car and said : "If that woman wants to stir up unnecessary trouble, you are responsible for the further processing, however after finished processing, you can go back to Yanjing and then together with your trusted people, find a place for concealment.

"Alright, Elder brother Ye."

Scar nodded at once, losing a few million for his sake was really nothing for him. However, going back to his eight men and giving one million to each later on, it was a bit difficult for him rightnow. Although he was the former boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but was currently in a poor-stricken condition.....

Without a bit of hesitation, Ye Feng advanced all the way towards the place which was mentioned my Long Wan'er before on the phone call.

The centre of Xiangshan County was relatively quite developed, since all kinds of industrial modernization could be seen there. However, it was just that walking on the streets here was making him have a kind of strange feeling, as if stormy clouds were soon approaching him. Therefore he rightaway swept his Soul Search Technique and immediately felt that in the roadside hotel, there were probably one or two martial artists having shelter in it!

Relying on his Soul Search Technique, he didn't notice any suspicious characters on his way. Soon he arrived in front of a five-star hotel alone.

Long Wan'er had taken shelter here.

Ye Feng thought that shouldn't he get in contact with Nanfang first, anyway, there would be no action tonight, therefore he would surely make a phone call tomorrow early in the morning to ask him how the situation in the East China Sea these days.

He sat on the elevator to ascend the seventh floor, soon he arrived in front of the door of Long Wan'er's room, then he knocked at the door.

"Ye Feng!"

The door opened and a pretty figure immediately appeared before him.

Without waiting a single second for him to respond, all of a sudden he was hauled into the room by her, immediately the door was shut and her fragrant stature tightly got wrapped around him.

Chapter 154 -> Asura Tactics (Uncensored)

Ye Feng was suddenly pulled into the room, immediately the fragrance the young girl's body was emitting, gently greeted his nostrils, followed by a warm and nice body which was all of a sudden threw into his arms.

Leaning against the door, Ye Feng also drew her close towards himself: "How long have you been here?"

At this moment, like always, Long Wan'er was looking very adorable and lively. In addition, clad in a white short-sleeved shirt, embroidered with a pair of cute little white rabbits, making her look even more captivating.

"Just arrived today."

Long Wan'er joyously said: "Originally my Aunt wanted to live with me in this room, but when you said on the phone that you would definitely come she moved to the next door.

Aunt? Next door?

Subconsciously he proliferated his Soul Search Technique and sensed a woman taking a bath in the next room. A bit alarmed, he withdrew his Soul Search Technique hastily

"Then, does your Aunt also know my identity?"

He took back his Soul Search Technique as he asked one.

"She doesn't."

Long Wan'er shook her head: "I told her that Mo Jiuge is going to come today, however even if she knows your identity, still it doesn't matter, she has been always nice to me since my childhood.

"Tell me about her?"

Still wrapping his arms around her, Ye Feng left the door and walked towards the room, which was quite large, with double beds properly arranged. However, in his eyes, it was nothing but a complete waste.

Although Long Wan'er had a very large room, but did she still need two beds?

They met again, their hearts were already brimming with joyous feeling. However, at this moment, Ye Feng wanted to know that when Long Wan'er's mother was killed and beheaded by her own father, then after how she managed all these years. Apparently, it seemed that it would be definitely her Aunt, who would have contributed a lot towards her brought up, which couldn't go unnoticed.

“Her name is Shu Shu, my mother's younger sister.

Long Wan'er, still leaning on his arms, while embracing his neck with her hands, finally spoke about her own matter : “Because of the magnetic charm, my mother got attracted towards Long Clan. Afterwards, just because she wanted to be a part of Long Clan, my mother got married to Long Mo'ran and my Aunt to my father's younger cousin. However that war which had taken place twenty years ago, during then not only my mother was bitterly killed by my father, but my father's cousin was also killed in that battle ”

Ye Feng heard her and somewhat understood the whole story, originally her mother and her sister Shu Shu didn't want to marry and get attached to Long Clan, rather they just developed a liking for it and then was forced to do so!

However considering the disposition of Long Mo'ran of now, could he have the so-called love for such a woman? Obviously not, so after the marriage, Long Wan'er's mother went through a huge hardship and also gave birth to her. Perhaps at this time, she might have bumped into Ye Yunfei, since Ye Yunfei had a strange kind of charm, which attracted her mother towards him... ..

And the later matter was quite logical.

And as for Shu Shu, since her sister and her husband, both were killed, she devoted her whole life to look after Long Wan'er, and there was nothing strange in it. However, the point was she couldn't get away from the cage of Long Clan till now.

“So now, do you have any plan what you have to do next? If you are going to the sea to look for your master, then I'll also tag along with you.”

She said so while being still very tightly squeezed by him into his arms.

“Don't worry.”

Ye Feng, with his both hands, lightly fondled her body as he said : “She vanished from there around half a month ago, until now there is no news. Even if I go to the sea now, it’s not necessarily to find her. Actually, I’m not going there to look for her, rather because I have to obtain the Big Coral King first. ”

“What, the big Coral King

Her mouth remained a bit open in amazement while a pair of her beautiful eyes also exposed a hint of shock simultaneously.

Now the East China Sea also had the big Coral King, but plenty of martial artists were already there scattered everywhere, including her own Clan! If Ye Feng really wanted to take hold of the big Coral King, that possibility was already at an extremely lower side. In addition, if something went wrong and he didn’t succeed in his goal, then he might as well lose his life!

“In order to beat Long Mo’ran soon, I have to obtain this big Coral King at all cost.”

Ye Feng said that with a firm face, then smiled : “But you can rest assured, in any case, I will definitely put my life in the first place. Otherwise, if I lose my life, then can’t be with you

“What do you want?”

Long Wan’er softly smiled, just now she asked something, but she already knew the answer of it. Right at this moment, she quickly turned over and all of a sudden pressed him under her body as she sat on his waist: “Really very fast you are, your Cultivation already catches up with me”

Obviously, she easily felt Ye Feng’s ten years of Cultivation, when a fledgeling boy so quickly grew to her level, it was really sufficient enough to surprise anyone.

“By chance, I obtained a stone in Yanjing

Then Ye Feng described the appearance of that rare heavenly stone bead.

“A heavenly stone bead!”

She heard it and was startled a bit : “Why was it in Yanjing?”

“Why, what’s wrong, what origin does this stuff have?”

Ye Feng's heart was set in movement and he directly asked one.

“Hmm, a few days ago a rare heavenly stone bead was unearthed in the north-west desert, and now when a huge number of the great martial artist had already gathered around the East China Sea, unfortunately, that heavenly stone bead disappeared for no reason. I hadn't expected that it would be in Yanjing.”

Although she uttered only a few words, but it was enough for Ye Feng to feel the heat, now he could easily feel that at this time, in the Northwest desert, just because of the disappearance of this heavenly stone bead, how many martial arts people would must have harboured a grudge against this desert? This stone bead was similar to the big Coral King, since it had the feature to promote one's Cultivation upto five years in a single blow. Naturally, the competition was extremely fierce!

Ye Feng could affirm that the stone bead he had absorbed a few days back was certainly the one from the north-west desert, after all, this kind of thing was definitely rarely seen in the world. So it turned out like this, there must be someone sent by Cai Shaohong to obtain this stone bead, who would have taken advantage of the prevailing disordered situation and succeeded in shipping it back to Yanjing.

The heavenly stone bead suddenly reminded him that it was kept together with Asura Tactics, those four rare martial arts books, so what would be their origin?

He thought that she might also know about them, therefore once again he asked a question.

“The martial arts technique, Asura Tactics?!”

As soon as she heard that, once again she was taken aback : “The person who had mastered Asura Tactics, had become a bloody good killer. Around thirty years ago, it was destroyed by the martial arts people in a crowd. How can you have their martial arts rare book?

Martial arts technique, Asura Tactics?

It seemed that this Asura Tactics was also one of the popular tactics back then. However now, after listening to Long Wan'er's words, everything was quite

apparent, it had already been exterminated from this world, then how could that place have the rare martial book of this Asura Tactics?

Ye Feng pondered for a while, then he put forward a detailed description of the whole incident related to Cai Shaohong's case which happened that day, however, it was basically revolving around Lin Shiqing as a whole.

"So that's how it is."

After finished listening to the whole incident, an evil smile infected with malicious feelings crawled across her face : "Weren't you tempted towards that girl, Miss Lin?"

She said so, it wasn't because she harboured a feeling of jealousy in her heart, rather because when she heard him talking a lot about her, she couldn't help but think to tease him a bit. It wasn't easy to see a side of him when he might turn a bit embarrassed and could show his embarrassed-looking face. Hence for her, a little bullying was just fine.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng didn't have the slightest embarrassment-like performance to display!

"Of course not, the person who can make my heart beat heavily is presently you, Wan'er."

He then spilled a soft smile as he stretched his hands and squeezed her soft and tender body into his bosom. It was easy to feel her embrace was brimming with intense affection.

"It seems that I haven't seen you in ages, you missed me, didn't you?."

Ye Feng flirtingly said.

"Screw yourself, a dog mouth can never spit out the ivory."

(Lastvoice : "A dog mouth can never spit out the ivory" – it's an idiom which means "no good words can be expected from a scoundrel's mouth.")

Still being tightly held by him in his bosom she said that as her cheeks slightly turned a bit red.

"Shall we do something shameful now?"

Ye Feng continued saying in a flirtatious tone.

“You want to, ah, that’s out of the question, you must pass through my consent before that.”

Spontaneously, a cute giggle piled up on her pretty face as she said that. Although her mouth said these words, but the fact was that a pair of her soft arms had actually already taken initiative and had closely wrapped him up in her arms.

Immediately after, the two bodies slowly and comfortably tumbled down on the bed.

Ye Feng smiled as he turned over and pressed the young girl under his body, whom he hadn’t seen since ages. Now he couldn’t bear but lower his head and deeply kissed her, making her utter soft “hmm” out of pleasure, which led to a sudden jerky heat up.

They were entangled on the soft bed together, their hands were gently stroking each other casually as if they were trying to convey their feelings and thoughts to each other like this.

They were like this for the first time, after such a long time they got to see each other now. Naturally, both of them were blazing romantically with intense passion. Once they started, it would be very hard to control their feelings. Back then in the ancient tomb, she had a fuzzy consciousness, because of that she didn’t know what was going on with her . However now, she would definitely engrave Ye Feng’s feelings deep within her heart and mind.

If compared with the gentle and considerate Su Menghan, then definitely, Long Wan’er was significantly different, her whole body was hot and lively and her tender stature had the infinite explosive power.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng was more ferocious than her, and very quickly he made the first move!

He didn’t take long and immediately took her white embroidered short sleeved shirt off, and the next moment a cute pink bra appeared before his eyes, tightly wrapping her body, making them appear perfectly round and flexible, the shape was looking amazingly cute and lovable with a well-defined shape.

Her alluring snow white ravine dazzled in front of his eyes, making his heart beat rapidly. Eventually, his gun took its form on the battlefield!

Chapter 155 -> Ye Wentian sets out

After numerous rounds of war and trying out a number of different moves, the two people comfortably laid on the soft bed. Finally, Long Wan'er was defeated, her tender body softly fell on the bed, without a bit of intention to move anymore. After a long time, the rising wind inside the room finally stopped raining and they finally fell into the lap of rest.

Ye Feng lying on the side, still hugging her soft and smooth skin, really loved this lively and passionate girl.

“Or else just now ...”

He thought in his heart that whether he could really rely on his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring to also make her an Immortal Cultivator? However, he hesitated a bit and didn't begin the process.

It could be anticipated that quite soon the East China Sea would have a series of the reign of terror, therefore at this time, making her become an Immortal Cultivator didn't seem an appropriate decision at all. If by any chance they encountered Long Mo'ran or someone like him, then they would easily notice the change, which would never be a good option.

Literally speaking, the body of Immortal Arteries used to stockpile a plenty of spiritual energy to carry out the Open Hole Process, however, it had an incredibly massive and threatening force, therefore it couldn't be casually carried out anywhere and anytime. He should actually wait for the East China Sea's matter to end, then he should find a quiet place to do it slowly and properly.

At present, Long Wan'er had already softly melted in his arms, completely motionless, resembling an extremely lazy little leopard after eating its fill.

Ye Feng's hands were also still gently caressing her smooth back and feeling the warmth of her body. The fragrance of her body was also constantly greeting his nose. However, on seeing her beautiful white skin, arrogant front and well-defined buttock, his dishonest little friend once again stood upright.

But he was afraid that she would be unable to withstand, therefore he could

only persist in enduring patiently

“If this could always be this much good.”

She twisted her body to turn over, then circled her arms around his neck, as her beautiful sparkling eyes like stars, got fixated on him, simultaneously his eyes also penetrated her eyes deeply.

“That day won’t be too far.”

Ye Feng, while still hugging her tightly, thought that if this time he could find his master Su Feiying, then he would immediately follow after her. And when the master would be at his side, then what would be the status of Long Mo’ran in front of her? No matter what the rumours said about Long Clan’s elder that he had a hundred years of Cultivation, still he couldn’t stand any chance against Su Feiying.

In the World of the Immortals, Su Feiying was not only considered as an ultimate beauty, but was also a highly talented Immortal Cultivator, who had already mastered several Immortal Techniques of Star Tomb Tactics on her own. The story didn’t end her, she had also long been aware of the third level. There was almost no one who had the ability to stand against her despite being at the same level as her.

When the two were entangled with each other in a tight embrace, continuously loving each other, then Ye Feng secretly swept his Soul Search Technique and suddenly found that four martial artists went inside a room downstairs, which in return made him a little anxious.

The people of God Fist Gate!

Still holding her in his tight embrace, he started secretly listening to their conversation who were downstairs, by using his Soul Search Technique.

.....

When Ye Feng was getting warm together with Long Wan’er, at the same time, the night of Yanjing was being particularly lively.

In Yanjing, several dignitaries were enjoying together, eating and drinking while gossiping with each other. However, they had one thing in common, and

that was their topic of discussion. Their discussion only had Lin Rentian all along, who was the presiding judge of the trial.

The defeated loses!

This phrase was used to describe that Lin Rentian's battle was not an exaggeration.

At this moment, Lin Rentian was in the military district hospital, listening to the doctor in-charge's report. After a number of diagnoses done by the doctor, he eventually came to know that the possibility of his son's recovery was less than 0.1 percent.

This information suddenly changed his facial expression and it turned extremely gloomy. Could it be said that from now onwards his son would remain foolish like this? As a member of Lin Clan, Lin Rentian took it as a huge humiliation.

As per what that girl Xiao Qi had said back then, Lin Xiuwen was under the control of an old man that night and wanted to enter the inner room to force himself on her. However, the corpse of that old man was actually found in artificial lake of the apartment community.

After passing by the repeated diagnosis and various treatments, the reason behind Lin Xiuwen's miserable condition was finally determined. As a result of thorough investigation, it could be said that a drug was involved in this case, which was generally used to stimulate one's desire. However, in his case, his desire couldn't get to give vent to his feelings, and was finally suppressed, which later on led to his this condition.

"Well, Miss Xiao is indeed unable to tell good from bad!"

At this moment, Lin Rentian's heart was raging with fury, wearing a very gloomy facial expression on his spectacted face he said : "If Xiuwen doesn't get cured, then over the time, we will go to Xiao Clan with a marriage proposal, making that little girl Xiao Qi obediently become Lin's daughter – in – law!

Since he badly failed to retaliate on Ye Feng and Su Menghan in the court, he really needed he let his anger out, therefore he vented his spleen at Xiao Qi. If this girl Xiao Qi hadn't let his son on, then his son wouldn't have turned into an

idiot, right? So, let her bear the consequences of it.

In his opinion, if his son had developed a liking for anyone, or he wanted someone, that was considered as an honour for the other side. However, this Xiao Clan's girl actually didn't appreciate the kindness rendered by him, leading his son to turn into an idiot, therefore she should make compensation for that!

This kind of robbers' theory, it seemed that it was actually considered as quite natural, inevitable and right in the dictionary of Lin Rentian.

While on the other side, at this time, Xiao Qi together with Lin Shiqing, was occupied with her own world. They were constantly accessing the Internet as if trying to look for someone, frequently making telephone calls, checking data and so on. There was no mistake, indeed they were actually trying to find some information related to Ye Feng.

It was almost afternoon when Lin Shiqing suddenly discovered something.

"Could it be that Ye Feng is Mo Jiuge and Mo Jiuge is Ye Feng?"

Her eyebrows tightly wrinkled up as she was constantly pondering about this possibility that if what she had just guessed was true, then that explained everything, didn't it mean that her best friend had actually developed a liking for Ye Feng, who was her fiancée?

No, this is absolutely impossible.

The truth was, although Lin Shiqing had never regarded Ye Feng as her fiancée, but now literary speaking, Xiao Qi fancied him very much, which was not an important issue, but still why Lin Shiqing's heart had a contradiction for this, even she also didn't know about it.

Suddenly a train of thoughts hit her mind and reminded her of that day when she was trapped in the explosion which happened a few days back in that abandoned factory, where she was heavily pressed under his body on the scene. During then, she was really deeply touched.

If the masked man was really Ye Feng, which meant that ugly-looking appearance was also a false one. In this case, the marriage her Grandfather had arranged for her, it wasn't like it couldn't be accepted ever

While sailing through her thought process, suddenly Lin Shiqing's beautiful face was taken over by a bright red colour and soon a cute blush took birth on her face.

"Hope that they aren't the same person."

She sighed slightly, shook her head and looked at the side where high-spirited Xiao Qi was. This girl, it seemed that she wanted to go through the materials of the National Security Agency whole night, to identify the identity of Mo Jiuge.

Xiao Qi was the only witness and litigant of Cai Shaohong's case presently, so naturally, she had all the right to examine the jurisdictions of these materials freely.

"I'll surely find who you are."

Xiao Qi's heart was all firm!

In Qingfeng Park.

Unknowingly slept in the afternoon, Ye Wentian finally woke up, as he casually turned around. Immediately he raised his head to look outside and quickly noticed that it was already night and the moon had also already climbed up high on the tip of the branch. This scene all of a sudden alarmed him for a while.

So this was how he was, actually had fallen asleep?

"Grandpa, are you hungry? Have supper."

Su Menghan had already cooked several side dishes beforehand. Seeing him finally awake, she started placing them on the table as she said beamingly.

"You – where did that little brat go?"

Ye Wentian asked rightaway.

"He"

Su Menghan hesitated a bit, she didn't want to tell this thing to Ye Wentian, but at the same time, didn't want to deceive him as well. For a while, she couldn't understand what she should say in this situation.

"Did he go to the East China Sea? Little brat!"

Ye Wentian suddenly got up!

“Grandpa don’t be anxious ah, he really has something important to take care of, he has to find his master”

Su Menghan promptly took Ye Feng’s side and explained everything.

“Do you know how dangerous the East China Sea is now?”

Ye Wentian, holding a firm expression like iron, said: “You are also helping him, don’t you fear that your husband might not come back ever?”

As soon as she heard these words, her face flushed and she haltingly said : “No not at all, he is so ferocious”

“Ferocious, nonsense!”

He angrily continued : “You just call someone from that Heavenly Serpent Gang and ask him to drive and deliver us. Now run – wait, forget about it, after dinner, we’ll think about it.

“Oh!”

Su Menghan nodded her head!

Actually, at this moment, she was laughing secretly in her heart, because Ye Feng had already instructed her that when the time came, she would have to make a trusted person of Scar drive Hummer to send him to his desired place. And as for Hummer’s fuel, travelling all the way from Yanjing to southern direction, they would have to stop from time to time to get it filled, which would definitely delay a lot of time

“Oh, that’s right, you can also come along with me, or else stay here in the fear of having danger.”

In the process of eating, Ye Wentian said that without leaving any room to refuse.

Su Menghan heard that, and immediately her heart was hit by a feeling of surging warmth. It seemed that grandfather really used to consider her as his own people, didn’t he?

Chapter 156 -> Luo Feng, Nan Feng!

Ye Wentian wanted to go to the East China Sea, not only to look for Ye Feng, but he had also another goal as well. Actually, he also wanted to inquire about the situation and see who in the end wanted to encroach on Ye Clan's rare books of martial arts.

Before, he had already carried out a proper interrogation of the thief Ye Feng had caught a few days back, however the thief actually didn't know anything. He had just picked up the list issued by the martial arts world. Therefore, Ye Wentian waved his hand to make him leave his villa soon.

In order to be safe, he took the four rare books of martial arts, Flying Core Technique, Dragon Claw Hand Technique, Crazy Devil Boxing Technique and Electric Black Sword Technique, along with him, and then together with Su Menghan, he boarded on Hummer H2.

At the time of boarding, he thought that this car was pretty imposing, however, he certainly didn't know that the fuel consumption of this car was also enormously high even though there was a backup fuel tank. In order to reach Xiangshan County, more than 1500 kilometres was needed to cover, so it was estimated that it must take a whole day and night of time to reach there.

All along Su Menghan was indirectly helping Ye Feng in deliberately delaying the time

.....

While at this moment, Ye Feng, who had been in the East China Sea, was currently eavesdropping the conversation of those four martial artists who were downstairs.

“Brother Luo Feng, are you all right?”

This was actually said by a youth who relatively had a lower level of Cultivation.

“Of course, no problem at all.”

Another youth, probably 27-28-year-old, said in a lower voice just like a brave tiger waiting for the appropriate opportunity to act. Ye Feng could clearly feel that this young man's Cultivation was the highest among the four people present

there, actually, he had 25 years of Cultivation!

Apparently, he was just like the other person, “Brother Luo Feng”.

“That boy Nanfang, he actually dared to sneak attack on us.”

Brother Luo Feng said faintly : “It can be said that he was lucky this time, however, the next time we bump into each other, my Paochui Fist will inevitably make him die, leaving behind his intact corpse!”

Nanfang?

Ye Feng heard his name and immediately his eyebrows slightly wrinkled, the name ‘Nanfang’ which was mentioned by them, could it be that he was that Skeleton Masked man from before?

“He he he, indeed, who doesn’t know that Brother Luo Feng’s Paochui Fist has just recently reached its second layer, making him able to easily assign away his inner qi from his body, isn’t he incomparably domineering now?

Immediately rest of the men started thinking highly of Brother Luo Feng. Even across a layer of the strong sound insulated floor, the sound could be very clearly heard by Ye Feng, this was the so-called extraordinary and wondrous use of his Soul Search Technique.

Ye Feng listened to their conversation and soon knitted his eyebrows to make a grand frown.

“Wan’er, do you know who Luo Feng is?”

While hugging her closely, he quietly asked.

“Which Luo Feng?”

She asked lazily.

“The one from God Fist Gate.”

He replied.

“God Fist Gate’s Luo Feng?”

Long Wan’er heard this name and was left flabbergasted for a while, still leaning on his body, she moved a bit more closer to his arms : “He is the leader of God Fist Gate’s younger generation, I heard that he was formerly called

Nanfang, who had been brought back from the secular world to start practising Cultivation”

Luo Feng, Nan Feng, so that was how it was!

Ye Feng suddenly realized something.

It seemed that these people should be doubtlessly the people of Southern Heavenly Gate and as for the other enemy Nanfang had, regarding which he had mentioned earlier in front of Ye Feng, he should be this guy Luo Feng, shouldn't he? Unfortunately, Lu Feng had not only achieved 25 years of Cultivation, but had also reached the second layer of Paochui Fist. To deal with such a great martial artist like him, Nanfang didn't have the slightest bit of stratagem which could ensure his success. Moreover, he hadn't been caught by now, that was entirely because of his favourable luck.

Ye Feng, even more, wanted to give a phone call to Nanfang rightaway. However it seemed that currently, he had to be a bit extra cautious, in case the other situation took a critical turn, then he would surely repent on calling him at this odd time. Wouldn't it be like to have one misfortune after another for him then?

Or actually he should wait for tomorrow to make him a call, in any case having Long Wan'er at his side, Ye Feng wasn't a bit anxious to draw out any information from Nanfang.

“Let's go to the southern seacoast first early morning tomorrow, there should have a Linhai cliff.

Ye Feng moved closer to her ears and said softly in a lower voice.

“What are you going to do there?”

She wrapped her arms around his neck and softly kissed his face, then asked somewhat curiously.

“The lost technique of Hidden Immortal School, Crying Ghost Blade Technique's rare book should be hidden there somewhere on that cliff's top.”

Ye Feng explained things to her that previously Zhu Bainiao had drawn a map to him. Now that he recalled it, he realized that actually, the location of that

drawn map was somewhere in the vicinity of this place. Must say, this was indeed a great coincidence! Now he didn't need to deliberately go to look for that place.

Now Ye Feng could never look down upon the place of martial arts, because he had merely used one technique of martial arts, that was Dragon Claw Hand technique, which had a remarkably high value. Just because of it, he got the power to assign his Zhenqi from his body and catch people or grab things spatially. At least in Ye Feng's cognition, he hadn't seen any Immortal Technique with this kind of terrific effect till now. Now he felt that knowledge and experience of some other martial arts techniques might prove very advantageous for his future practice.

"Crying Ghost Blade Technique!"

Long Wan'er heard that and was suddenly taken aback and her heart also skipped a beat: "How do you know that?"

"Do you know Zhu Bainiao?"

"Ye Feng asked.

"Ah, prior to the news of the Changbai Mountains' Telepathic Grass, wasn't this person send out?"

This made clear that she had already heard this name 'Zhu Bainiao' before.

Ye Feng put Zhu Bainiao's matter briefly, then inquired : "What is so special about this Crying Ghost Blade Technique?"

"Hmm."

She solemnly said: "Formerly, there was a Hidden Immortal School, which was one of the three big influences of the martial arts world, just by totally depending on its master technique – Crying Ghost Blade Technique! But thirty years ago, it was heard that this technique had been lost, afterwards that Hidden Immortal School also gradually deteriorated over the time" "

"So it was this much formidable?"

This time it was Ye Feng's turn to be all shocked.

Originally he thought that Crying Ghost Blade Technique was just an ordinary

martial arts technique of the hidden immortal School. However, it seemed that he was totally mistaken. Once the Hidden Immortal School lost this technique, it moved towards the path of its deterioration gradually , that was how formidable this technique was!

“However we gained in a big way.”

Ye Feng notoriously smiled as he pinched her pretty and upright chest gently, so as to stir up her anger and make her pout playfully.

“Even if you learn it, still don’t dare use it.”

While acting coquettishly, she continued : “If you let the people of Hidden Immortal Faction see you using it, then certainly they will chase you down to the ends of the earth and will kill you.”

“If we take hold of it, still won’t be able to use it freely, then it would be better to sell it to anyone, and I don’t believe we wouldn’t have anyone who would like to buy it.”

Ye Feng wasn’t a bit worried about being killed, and the fact was, weren’t there very few people who wanted to kill him? There was only Long Mo’ran who was enough to deal with, while there were several Hidden Immortal Schools, but still, they couldn’t stand any chance against Ye Feng.

“If you sell it to the Hidden Immortal School, you might receive at least several billion for it.”

Long Wan’er giggled loudly: “Genuinely speaking, this way we don’t have any shortage of money to spend throughout our life.”

“Indeed.”

Ye Feng smiled mischievously, whether it was the modern city or the World of the Immortals, money was always considered as an indispensable thing. Making their women spend money endlessly, this should be considered as the dream of most of the men in this world as well.

The whole night, the two of them rolled over and over again, until late night, then they finally fell asleep while holding each other in a cozy embrace.

The next day, Ye Feng woke up early in the morning and felt that the little girl

was still in his arms, holding an appearance of a drowsy look, which was appearing extremely cute and lovable.

Ye Feng was a little soft-hearted, he wanted to make her sleep a little more, but right at this time, suddenly someone knocked at the door.

“Wan’er, you haven’t woken up yet?”

A mature gentle and soft voice spread into their ears, who were still lying under the blanket.

“Oh, Aunt.”

In a split second, Long Wan’er woke up, suddenly sat up and lifted her quilt!

Ye Feng subconsciously looked towards her and all of a sudden his line of sight refused to listen to his order and move, he was fixedly staring at the soft and tight chest of Long Wan’er, where a pair of her snow white, huge and straight balls were, which were sufficient enough to be called as a big killing device for any man !

“What are you seeing, haven’t you had played enough last night?”

She groaned softly, surprisingly she wasn’t being bashful a bit, they had been so intimate last night, so why would she feel shy?

She flew her leg and threw a kick directly towards Ye Feng, making him fall down the bed.

Ye Feng smartly got up to escape, thought: played enough? Absolutely hadn’t played enough! The so-called play could never be enough during a lifetime!

Since someone was knocking at the door, he didn’t have much time to crack a joke, therefore soon they got up and started wearing their clothes.

Long Wan’er, while combing her hair in front of the mirror, turned around and said: “You go to open the door, Aunt is outsideRemember to put on a mask, besides, she is a very nice person, so rest assured, she won’t embarrass you.

Ye Feng squinted his eyes to look and saw two masks had already been kept ready in advance, one was white while the other one was black. Immediately a wry smile spread on his face as he thought that this little girl was indeed quite thoughtful.

Chapter 157 -> She is called Xiao Yue

Ye Feng, wearing a black face mask, stepped forward to open the door.

Standing outside, her Aunt Shu Shu immediately entered his line of sight. Actually, with the help of Soul Search Technique, he could even imagine the facial contours of the opposite party pretty easily.

She had a very attractive physique and was herself a charming, beautiful and young married woman. Her hair was tied up in a bun, while her beautiful eyes had a gleaming reflection of waves in sunlight, very docile and gentle, which could easily make anyone looking at them, have the feeling of warmth.

According to what Long Wan'er had said about her Aunt Shu Shu earlier, when she was forced on Long Clan, she was only sixteen years old. Now twenty years had passed by, but her body and skin, everything was maintained very well and didn't have any effective change because of growing age.

Indeed, she was a beauty!

Ye Feng couldn't help but acclaim, no wonder why Long Clan had grabbed Shu Shu and her sister back then. On looking at the present Long Wan'er, he could now imagine what kind of style Shu Shu and her sister would have back then. However now, Shu Shu had a special charm that Long Wan'er didn't, not even the slightest bit.

That charm was totally different from this young girl. A matured appearance accompanied with a plentiful stature, still, she completely didn't have the slightest bit of shyness that a young girl usually had.

Ye Feng's eyes barely fell on her for the first time and suddenly he realized something out of the blue, no wonder why nowadays in the city, people were fond of this kind of young married woman.

"Mo Jiuge?"

Shu Shu opened her mouth and lightly seasoned, accompanied with a supple smile, while her beautiful eyes were gazing at Ye Feng gracefully, which somewhat aroused his curiosity a bit more.

“Yes, it’s me.”

Ye Feng smiled: “Aunt, it’s our first time meeting each other.”

“Good, no need to be formal.”

Shu Shu smiled as she waved her hand, making him feel like bathing in a spring breeze: “I have heard Wan’er saying many times that your Cultivation skill is pretty good, but in my eyes talent is totally unimportant, what important is you must not turn your back on her ever, do you know that?”

“Well, I won’t.”

Ye Feng turned his head and looked at Long Wan’er, who was still dressing and applying makeup on her eyes with a gentle touch.

She was his own woman, in any case, he couldn’t abandon her!

“Wan’er believes you, so Aunt will also believe you.”

Shu Shu smiled and lightly sipped her lower lip: “First let’s do it like this, hope it won’t bother you. I have heard the big Coral King is going to mature tonight, when you go out, don’t think about going towards the southern seacoast, besides must be careful at all times.

“Hmm.”

Although Ye Feng nodded, but his heart actually had a sense of disapproval, because his first goal behind this trip was to grab the big Coral King, then how couldn’t he go? However just for Shu Shu’s honour and care, naturally he couldn’t let her words pass his ear like a wind, therefore his action must not be careless!

Shu Shu didn’t have Cultivation skill, she was just an ordinary human being.

Relying on the knowledge of Soul Search Technique, Ye Feng perceived something, it seemed that Long Clan was stingy, since it didn’t teach the core technique of martial arts to Shu Shu. Conceivably in Long Clan, how bitter Shu Shu’s life would be?

She couldn’t leave Long Clan so far, might be because it wasn’t actually approved by Long Clan. In her entire lifetime, there was only one person and that was Long Wan’er, who she had at her side to look after.

“Long Clan.”

Ye Feng then looked at the beautiful and attractive back of Shu Shu, as she turned back to return to her own room. Now he had a feeling of disgust in his heart for their Clan. As per his view, such an ugly place it was, no wonder why Wan'er didn't want to stay together with her Clan.

“Well, let's go.”

Soon Long Wan'er also finished dressing and conveniently put on another white face mask on her face, matching with Ye Feng's black mask. This pair of masks had been specially prepared before she came here, this proved that her thoughts were really exquisite.

She jumped and quickly arrived at the door and then she intimately clung onto Ye Feng's arm. Since she met with him again after a while, therefore she had let herself enjoy every moment of their precious time till her heart content.

He smiled and slipped his arm around her shoulder and they finally went out the door to go to their planned location. The big Coral King was in the southern seacoast and coincidentally Crying Ghost Blade Technique was also hidden somewhere similarly in the southern seacoast. But there was a pinch, the distance between the two places was quite afar, still, hope this trip might turn out the best one for them.

While departing, he swept his Soul Search Technique a bit and sensed that downstairs, the people of God Fist Gate were not in their room, also he didn't know where they would have gone this early in the morning.

Long Wan'er took the elevator down the stairs, soon the masks of these two people really attracted the attention of the elevator. However Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were not the average people, naturally, they didn't mind their gazes.

Ye Feng took out his cell phone, since he wanted to make a phone call to Nanfang to ask what the situation outside there. But at this time, the elevator's doors opened up and two people appeared right before their eyes standing in the hotel's lobby, where one person was known to them!

Wasn't this woman that red beauty from before, who had that Audi – TTS Roadster?

Ye Feng felt strange seeing this beauty here, could it be that she had been following him all the way by checking the license plate number and finally caught up with him here? However at this time, the centre of attraction of everyone was shifted towards a very young guy, standing beside the red beauty, having a stylish hair, wearing white shirt and coat with black vest, while there was a piece of dog-shaped ancient jade hanging around his neck, making people seeing this guy think that he certainly was something.

“Xiao Yue, I have been inquiring for so long, let’s get room to take rest first.”

A dog-shaped ancient jade of the youth was hanging at one side when he said, while trying to reach out his hands and hug the red beauty.

“Wang Shaodong, I have arrived here just to find someone, I don’t have any leisure time to spend with you rightnow.”

At this moment her eyes were revealing a hint of disgust, however, while still remaining all calm and collected, she quietly tried to stay away from his reaching hands towards her slender waistline.

“It’s not exactly finding a person, you have me Wang Shaodong, still you think looking for that person would be very difficult for us?

That youth’s eyes were greedily stuck at the fuller chest of the red beauty, however somewhat disappointedly he took his hands back : “But Xiao Yue, did you have a big enmity with that guy called Ye Feng? Didn’t that BMW’s driver already pay for your damages?

“You won’t understand.”

The beauty in the red said impatiently, then she rushed to the hotel’s front desk and immediately started inquiring something.

Ye Feng clearly heard what she asked, and as expected there was no one called Ye Feng staying here in this hotel.

“Originally she is called Xiao Yue, but how can she know my name? Does she have any relationship with Yanjing’s Xiao Qi?”

Ye Feng felt a little strange.

Logically speaking, it seemed that they had already checked the BMW car’s

owner, then, in that case, they could only find Scar, not more than that. On listening to their conversation, it appeared that they not only had found Scar, but had also received compensation for their damages. But then the point was, why was she still looking for Ye Feng?

It was completely impossible that Scar would provide any information concerned with Ye Feng, then there was only one possibility left, Xiao Yue really had some kind of relationship with Yanjing's Xiao Qi!

Were they from the same clan?

Whether or not, Ye Feng would certainly not jump out to admit it, hence he didn't want to pay attention to them. Hugging Long Wan'er, he just wanted to leave the hotel.

"Hey, wait you two, stop right there!"

However at this moment, that youth with a dog-shaped ancient jade, actually noticed them wearing the masks and hurriedly pointed his finger at them while staring : "You people in the masks, just take it off! "

He looked at Ye Feng while holding a look of suspicion in his eyes! Then he shifted his gaze towards Long Wan'er and stared her as if examining her from head to toe, his eyes were revealing a strong desire to possess her. It was quite obvious that her alluring figure would have certainly aroused his interest.

His statement also caught the attention of several people present in the hotel's lobby. Consequently, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er also stopped their footsteps.

However, when Ye Feng noticed the look that youth had in his eyes right now, he immediately snorted coldly.

Although he didn't know who this guy was, but he dared to look at Long Wan'er with such frivolous and disrespectful eyes, how could Ye Feng walk away ignoring it?

"Keep respect in your eyes."

Ye Feng snorted coldly, then stepped forward and threw a kick towards him, "bang" soon that guy Wang Shaodong was kicked to the ground, Immediately

after, Ye Feng caught up with him and placed his foot on his chest, right in the centre of that dog-shaped ancient jade!

“Someone was hit! Someone was hit!”

“Quickly press the alarm!”

No one present in that hotel’s lobby had expected that the man in the mask would actually hit a human, therefore everything turned so chaotic all of a sudden.

“Hey you, stop right there!”

By this time, the beauty in the red, who was busy inquiring at the front desk, also recovered and quickly ran over to prevent Ye Feng hastily.

When she was running, her beautiful fuller chest was rhythmically moving up and down like a mountain range, making the peripheral man unable to bear but swallow his saliva.....

Chapter 158 -> Coastal Cliff

In the hotel lobby, Ye Feng placed his foot on the chest of that rampant youth and coldly said: “We have worn masks or not, that has nothing to do with you, don’t just go asking for trouble.

Since his foot wasn’t so heavy, therefore that youth called Wang Shaodong didn’t have any major injury. However he was trampled upon all of a sudden in front of so many people, that stood really humiliating for him.

“You stop right there!”

Suddenly at this time, clad in a red dress, that beautiful woman quickly ran over and arrived in front of Ye Feng. Her charming face was infected with a touch of concern. Besides, a burst of light and subtle fragrance, fluttering from her body, smoothly rushed towards Ye Feng’s nose.

“Remember, there are a lot of people in this world, you should never dare provoke them.”

While stepping on Wang Shaodong’s chest and crushing him under his foot, Ye Feng said that, then his intense gaze swept over the matured and attractive looking Xiao Yue, as he took away his foot and turned around to leave :
“Goodbye.”

“Wait, do you know the person you hit just now is who?”

Xiao Yue shouted out loud.

She was fixedly staring at Ye Feng’s rear view while thinking more and more like: As per what Xiao Qi had said before, a guy wearing a face mask was called Mo Jiuge, although he didn’t have the same height or body structure, but still wearing a mask?

“I don’t know, neither I want to know.”

Ye Feng returned to the side where Long Wan’er was, then he conveniently wrapped his arm around her shoulders and stepped forward to leave the hotel at once.

“Are you not Mo Jiuge!”

Xiao Yue again shouted loudly.

However, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er didn't give her any response and left the hotel's entrance very hastily, without leaving any trace, as if they totally disappeared.

Xiao Yue was all helpless, suddenly they disappeared in front of her, making her very agitated and in anger, she stomped her feet bitterly. It was said that Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge had some relationship. Since Ye Feng was in Xiangshan County at present, then naturally Mo Jiuge would also be here.

However now, she couldn't pursue him to ask everything and understand the whole situation, because –

“Xiao Yue, help me, support me quickly with your hand.”

After being crushed by Ye Feng under his foot just now, Wang Shaodong felt like his whole body had dispersed into several pieces, he was even totally unable to get up. However Xiao Yue was at his side, whom he could call and make her help him, meanwhile, he could also take the opportunity to be a bit naughty with her

“Wait for the ambulance.”

However, instead of giving him support, she snappily said the sentence, then ran to the side to dial 120 and call the ambulance.

Wang Shaodong was the son of a wealthy entrepreneur in Shanghai. Before, Xiao Yue had taken his help to inquire about the whereabouts of silver BMW, so that she could personally pursue it. However now, Wang Shaodong clung to her and was totally unwilling to part with her.

As for Wang Shaodong's thoughts, how couldn't Xiao Yue understand them? They were nothing but just his intense desire to play with her till his heart content. However, unfortunately, she was not that kind of young female student who could be easy to cheat on, how smartly she didn't let him have his way.

She raised her head, her beautiful eyes swept around the hotel, as if she was recalling the scene which had happened just now.

Last night at the time of her car repair, she gave a call to her younger sister Xiao Qi and asked her about the recent situation. On listening to her tone, it sounded like she very much liked that masked guy who was called Mo Jiuge.

During that phone call, Xiao Yue also mentioned about how her car was hit by the silver BMW car, which somewhat aroused Xiao Qi's interest and in return she said that originally that silver BMW was the property of Yanjing's Heavenly Serpent Gang, but presently Heavenly Serpent Gang not only belonged to a High school student called Ye Feng, but was also under his direct control!

In addition, Xiao Qi also added that she had a favourable impression that the masked man, Mo Jiuge and Ye Feng had something to do with each other

Xiao Yue thought and felt that something was not appropriate, just from seeing the current situation, it could be said that the masked man obviously had another woman, therefore she could never let her younger sister fall into his evil clutches!

Hmm, must be prevented!

She then turned head and looked at Wang Shaodong while thinking that Mo Jiuge was also very rampant, without knowing the others' background, he dared to hit him randomly. If this were looked up by Wang Shaodong's family member, wouldn't they certainly put him to death?

She gracefully stood aside while crossing her hands around her chest, as if embracing it. Her red skirt sketching out her attractive figure had already caught the attention of countless eyes.

However, by this time, Wang Shaodong had already pulled out his cell phone and had also begun to contact Shanghai city's pack of rogues, making them send people to Xiangshan County to provide assistance. Even if the County was turned upside down, still he would surely do everything to find that masked man and then severely humiliate him!

.....

At this time, on the other side, Ye Feng along with Long Wan'er rushed all the way to the south, soon they left the centre of the bustling area and had advanced towards the seashore cliff where the rare book of Crying Ghost Blade

Technique was hidden.

Half an hour later, when they were not very far away from the destination, right then, Ye Feng thought something and took his cell phone out, then pressed a number by extracting it from his memory and made a phone call to Nanfang.

Du – the first call wasn't answered by anyone.

Beep – beep –

However, after several consecutive sounds, the opposite party finally picked up the phone and suddenly a huge noise around the opposite party was transmitted to Ye Feng's ears.

"Nanfang, you have now no way out, obediently embrace your death!

"Smelly brat, stop right there!"

Surprisingly it turned out to be the voice of God Fist Gate's Luo Feng and his three fellows! The howling sound of the strong wind, accompanied with the sound of ocean waves whipping the cliff, making it seemed that the situation in the southern coastal region wasn't good right now.

"Where are you?"

Without further ado, Ye Feng straightforwardly asked.

"The southern coastal cliff, there is one big vividly rooted tree nearby.

The panting sound of Nanfang passed through the phone, Ye Feng could clearly hear him running at an extremely high speed, however surprisingly his tone still hadn't lost its calm! Moreover, he didn't ask Ye Feng where he was at present, apparently, Ye Feng was the one who gave him a call, then certainly he ought to be in the East China Sea.

"I'll be there right away."

Ye Feng's heart felt a cold shiver, there was a large tree in this vicinity, wasn't that the same marked place that Zhu Bainiao had drawn on the map?

Presently, Nanfang went into hiding somewhere in the vicinity of that rare book!

"No, you are not Luo Feng's opponent!"

Nanfang immediately declined him : “I will jump into the sea, if I’ll be lucky, then I might survive, if couldn’t you find a time to come here to take hold of the badge of our South family and bring it back to Yanjing... ..”

(Lastvoice : Here South family means Southern Heavenly Gate.)

“Nonsense, wait for me.”

Ye Feng cursed him loudly and immediately hung up the phone.

The honorific badge of his gang, Southern Heavenly Gate, could it help him in taking care of his damn things? By no means, he would think about taking care of it. Besides, wasn’t one of them had twenty-five years of Cultivation? However, he had even pursued Zhui Hun the armed escort, who had thirty years of Cultivation and had also finished his chapter by killing him!

Wearing masks, Ye Feng together with Long Wan’er, quickly rushed towards the southern direction.

Soon, cold and refreshing but somewhat fierce sea breeze started blowing right against their faces, which made Ye Feng immediately understand that the coast was not very far away from there. Since they were advancing directly towards the direction of the coastal cliff, that big vividly rooted tree had already appeared in the line of their sight.

“Do you want to fight with God Fist Gate?”

Long Wan’er, although didn’t know what just happened on the phone call, still she asked quickly to understand what she had to do now.

“Yes!”

Ye Feng nodded.

In the front cliff, gradually the shadows of five people appeared in their field of vision, as expected, it really was Nanfang, who was being cornered by God Fist Gate’s four fellow apprentices to the cliff. Under the sheer precipice, raging waves striking the shore were looking very terrific, under the violent sea breeze, the wild tide looked like a huge monster devouring people. If an ordinary person jumped down, he wouldn’t have any way out!

“Good luck

Ye Feng had no other choice but to sigh with sorrow, the direction that youth Nanfang had chosen to run away was right, otherwise, even if Ye Feng wanted to rescue the opposite party, he couldn't have caught up with him.

“You hold up the weaker one, I assassinate the big one.”

Ye Feng said that and immediately his stature quietly faded away!

Long Wan'er, who was running together with his side by side, when saw him suddenly disappearing right in front of her eyes, it gave her a scare and she couldn't help but was taken aback, what flagitious ability this was, invisibility? But she couldn't even think about it for a second and suddenly her stature was already discovered by the front four people of God Fist Gate.

Seeing that, she clenched her teeth and chose to believe Ye Feng. Then quickly she walked half step and shouted one, Gentle Palm Technique! Lining clouds, overturning sea, capsizing earth and rocking the heaven, these were the four styles Long Clan's Gentle Palm Technique had, which were a set of specialized moves and were used to fight with several martial artists at the same time.

They saw her waving her hands and suddenly the next moment, her pretty and delicate stature fled and appeared in front of them, not only that, she had already thrown her palm towards those four men, a sudden rattling palm of wind!

If Ye Feng abandoned her rightnow, not only she would be definitely captured, but would also get killed by them, this would be the final outcome because the bilateral disparity was too big!

This sudden act made the handsome youth, Nanfang, who had already retreated on top of the cliff, all blind with the bright charm, what kind of situation this was, suddenly a woman showed up to kill his enemy, was she helping him deal with the people of God Fist Boxing?

This was illogical!

Chapter 159 -> Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!

Gentle Palm Technique was considered as Long Clan's one of the most exquisite three sets of martial arts techniques, because this technique had some beautiful and wonderous moves, which made its user capable of defeating a huge force alone quite easily.

However if it was Long Mo'ran who had used this technique just now, then he just needed a single move, which would have been sufficient enough to make Luo Feng along with his three fellow apprentices fly to the dregs. It was quite natural that Long Wan'er couldn't reach this level so early.

Although she was a very talented girl, but still she couldn't comprehend the second layer of this technique. After all, she was still young and had merely 10 years of Cultivation. In case Luo Feng and the other God Fist Gate's disciples besieged her, certainly, she couldn't withstand them.

However Luo Feng, who had twenty-five years of Cultivation and had already comprehended the second layer of Paochui Boxing, naturally his talent was remarkably high! At present, he was just 27-28 years old, but had already made his position among his peers in this martial arts world and had stood in the pinnacle of his character.

And as for his three young fellow apprentices, they were not so highly talented like him and naturally they didn't have too many practice resources. Presently they were 27-28 years old and had only achieved ten years of preliminary Cultivation skill, but their individual fighting strength wasn't as good as Long Wan'er.

However, the three together were more than enough to capture Long Wan'er alive.

Ye Feng would certainly not let this thing happen.

The moment he transformed into the invisible form, he saw Long Wan'er rushed towards those four people, displaying Gentle Palm Technique to attract their attention. Right at this moment, Ye Feng quietly arrived behind Luo Feng's back, instantly his Zhenqi started condensing crazily and the next moment, a

golden sword from his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring flashed out in his hand, with surging strength.

Immediately after, the golden sword light flashed and directly jabbed into Luo Feng's chest!

One shot succeeded!

Poof!

The fresh blood splashed out, however, it somewhat startled Ye Feng, at such a crucial moment, this man Luo Feng had actually averted from the vital part heart, and as a result, the sword only pierced his shoulder.

“Who is sneak attacking!”

Luo Feng bellowed, then trod a step and suddenly turned around accompanied with his two fists!

The appearance of that guy was somewhat similar to Nanfang, however, his face had a hint of an intense insolent expression. Now that he was unexpectedly stabbed by Ye Feng's sword, he was in a little pain, which also affected his facial muscles and they had started slightly trembling.

Paochui Boxing!

“God Fist Gate,” these three words were not as pure as it sounded like, just on the basis of his Boxing Technique, Ye Feng had clearly understood by now that in case he was smashed by those fists, even he couldn't do anything, except harbouring a grudge against him on the spot.

Indeed as expected, Luo Feng was an incredibly talented man, since he had the ability to comprehend the second layer of the martial arts technique, obviously, his intuition of danger would have been certainly stronger than any other ordinary warrior. As for the armed escort, Zhui Hun, although he had thirty years Cultivation, but still he couldn't sense Ye Feng's sneak attack. However surprisingly, Luo Feng actually evaded his sword which had the might to kill him then and there.

This was the first time for Ye Feng encountering such a formidable life and death fight!

“This man Luo Feng, I don’t think that I can be a suitable match for him!”

Ye Feng’s mind was fully alert, he quickly receded few steps back.

“Can you really run away?”

Luo Feng’s corners of the mouth suddenly curled up, he roared loudly and pounded his both fists finally in the midair, immediately followed by two invisible fists, which a naked eye couldn’t see!

However Ye Feng relying on his Soul Search Technique, quickly sensed that there were two strong fists, holding destructive power, were rapidly approaching him. So now it turned out like this, Luo Feng could also assign his inner qi away from his body surprisingly!

If Ye Feng had been an ordinary warrior with a decade of Cultivation, then these two fists would have been enough to kill him on the spot, but was Ye Feng an average person?

“Dragon Claw Hand Technique!”

He gloomily shouted one, instantaneously his both hands turned into claws and all of a sudden his Zhenqi sprang out from his body and grabbed the opposite party’s approaching two destructive fists.

“Bang” a loud noise reverberated, produced by a massive collision of inner qi and Zhenqi in the air, the violent hit erupted a circle of invisible airwaves. While at this time, on the other side, Nanfang, who was being protected by Ye Feng all along, was already too late to show any reaction, his clothes swirled in the air and the whole person was almost lifted and thrown down the cliff.

Shua! Shua!

Two powerful fists, with a terrifying speed and catastrophic might, were advancing towards Ye Feng as if they were going to completely engulf him. Afterall, Luo Feng had twenty-five years of Cultivation, which was obviously higher than Ye Feng,

Bagua Boxing!

On seeing the might of his two fists, Ye Feng couldn’t dare to be negligent, similarly, he also waved his both fists at once.

Bang! Bang!

In a split second, the vigour of Luo Feng's two fists was totally nullified by Ye Feng's fists.

Ye Feng stood still, the pressure of the airwave caused by that terrific collision suddenly blew his hair. He then raised his head and firmly gazed at the opposite party, Luo Feng.

He didn't know that Luo Feng could also assign his inner qi away from his body, or else he would have been vigilant enough in advance to dodge it if needed. However, if Ye Feng had dodged Luo Feng's blow, then Nanfang, who was still standing on the edge of the cliff, would have been finished by now.

Keep aside what others said, but the fact was Ye Feng still appreciated Nanfang.

In this world, everyone wants to have enough strength to protect their loved one around and in order to achieve that, they need to set up their own forces, because only having the individual power alone is absolutely useless.

However, in order to set up own forces, what is most important?

Certainly, it's the talented person!

"Mo brother."

Nanfang shouted one while still standing on the edge of the cliff, suddenly his black shirt was lifted to fly, the strong airwave, filled with flying pebbles and sand, was almost making him unable to open his eyes, but he still had the confidence that in this critical moment, Ye Feng would certainly come to rescue him.

Surprisingly right at this time, Ye Feng also launched a move equally powerful as Luo Feng's, how stronger he was after all?

Even if he knew Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge were the same guy, it was still impossible for him to call out his name in public, naturally, he used "Mo brother" to call him.

"Today, I'll help you in taking revenge."

Although neither Ye Feng knew nor he had ever asked Nanfang about the past

events which would have happened between him and Luo Feng, but seeing Luo Feng chasing after him to track him down, he immediately understood that the two were definitely totally irreconcilable.

The golden sword which he had in his hand, he flung it away, accompanied by a strong sea wave from behind the proudly standing cliff!

“Hmm, so what move you are going to use now, sneaking behind me?”

A smile with a touch of arrogance immediately crept over Luo Feng’s face, although fresh blood was constantly bubbling out from his shoulder, but still he didn’t care a bit. It must be admitted that he was indeed a tough guy, or probably was one crazy man.

“You don’t have to know that.”

Ye Feng snorted quickly, then glanced at the side where Long Wan’er was.

Because of the surprise attack launched by Ye Feng on Luo Feng a few seconds ago, his three fellow apprentices had already been drawn in a state of shock and had also stopped acting in astonishment. Although they had dragged Long Wan’er in the middle, but hadn’t started to play with her yet. While on the other side, Long Wan’er was also somewhat startled by this sudden action, and was fixedly looking at those two people fighting with each other.

Although the names of these two people didn’t have much difference and their talent was also equally terrifying, but still, Ye Feng had clearly more potential, he was just at ten years of Cultivation, still, could enter into a battle with Luo Feng on the same level

Suddenly a surge of arrogance gushed out from Long Wan’er’s heart as she thought that her man was definitely destined to be stronger than that man, Luo Feng!

Nowadays in the world of martial arts, there were a handful of people who had the ability to release their inner qi out of their body and Luo Feng was one of them. However, along with his three men, Not even Luo Feng was regarded as the martial arts genius.

But Ye Feng was the fourth one she knew.

“Boy, you’re too wild.”

Luo Feng burst out laughing : “Since you insist on meddling in this matter, I, Luo Feng, won’t let you down and will certainly make you suffer to death!

He flung his both fists in the air, immediately his inner qi started boiling up and got condensed, taking the form of his Boxing Technique.

Paochui Boxing, the first fist was the Left fist! And the second fist was the Right one! And these two fists were sufficient enough while fighting against the general opponent. But if he would put forth the third layer ‘Core Fist’ then his penetrating power would be greatly strengthened to the extent where he could be even able to fight with a wild bull, besides its speed was also extremely fast!

Luo Feng was the most proficient in the third layer of this Core Boxing Technique.

“Brother Luo Feng must act seriously!”

“Hmm, let’s say this boy has really a good luck, since he can experience the Boxing Technique of our senior apprentice, Luo Feng.”

“Brother Luo Feng, quickly take hold of him and smash him to a pulp!”

Those three fellow apprentices of Luo Feng, while still holding Long Wan’er in the middle, began to mock and crack jokes.

“Mo brother, be careful, run!”

Once Nanfang noticed Luo Feng’s attitude, his complexion immediately changed and he shouted one promptly.

“Be careful!”

Long Wan’er also shouted one softly, her beautiful eyes were all wide open, constantly staring at the boss of the group. However, she was very clear about God Fist Gate’s Paochui Boxing as well as the might of the fist of the third layer of this Boxing Technique!

At this moment, among the people present on the scene, only Ye Feng was all calm and collected.

“Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!”

As soon as he turned over his hand, a ball of fire immediately emerged out of his hand, then after by taking advantage of Luo Feng's startled and distracted mind, he flung it directly at him.

Bang!

Luo Feng hadn't had enough time to move and the whole person all of a sudden turned into a fireball!

Chapter 160 → A man's decision

When Ye Feng congealed out a fireball, and the whole body of Luo Feng was set on fire, this scene suddenly gave a huge shock to the surrounding people.

Could a person really release a fireball so conveniently?

How was this possible, after all, it wasn't a fantasy movie!

Nan Fang was dumbstruck with astonishment and simply couldn't believe that this thing actually occurred right before his eyes. Although he was standing far away from Ye Feng, still could clearly see how Ye Feng merely waved his hand and a fireball emerged out of nowhere.

While the other three friends of Luo Feng were just blankly looking at the scene, completely motionless, as if they saw a ghost. The intensity of atmosphere scared them and made them yell right away. Not even in the martial arts world had they ever seen anyone who could emit fireballs like Ye Feng did just now. What the hell was this masked man, a monster?

The story didn't end here, not even Long Wan'er was left unaffected. When she saw this scene, she spontaneously covered her mouth, her beautiful pupils were left wide open while her mind was busy figuring out the identity of the martial technique that had just been used by Ye Feng. However, she had been together with him since morning and even got up with him in a completely naked state. She had been with him all this time but never saw him hiding anything then after along with him she went out, ran all the way to arrive at this place, but all this time she hadn't seen him hiding anything, ah!

"Ah ah ah!"

Luo Feng never thought that his opponent would turn out to be so strange and would suddenly release a fireball.

His whole body was burning, forcing him to utter a blood-curdling screech. At this time, he finally understood that this situation was far from good therefore he promptly set his inner qi into action to resist against the fire while rapidly running towards the edge of the cliff to jump off.

“So you wanna jump into the sea to quench the fire?”

Ye Feng quickly read the intention of the opposite party and couldn't help but secretly praise Luo Feng for his quick-wittedness. At present, his Immortal Technique 'Red Inflammation' had only reached the first layer, although the flame's temperature was quite high, but was actually still like an ordinary flame which could be easily extinguished with water. So naturally anyone, who would be in this situation, would choose to jump into the sea.

“Dragon Claw Hand Technique!”

Ye Feng promptly cast out this move, and immediately, Zhenqi rushed out of his body and grabbed Luo Feng's bleeding shoulder while his another hand grasped his thigh and dragged him back!

Luo Feng had already jumped down the cliff and was in midair. Soon, he was about to fall 10 meters down the high cliff. However, right then, he was suddenly caught by Ye Feng in midair and was almost pulled back to the cliff.

Fortunately, his cultivation was very profound. Even though his whole body was surrounded by flames, still, he quickly responded by immediately jolting his inner qi. Hence, when Ye Feng grabbed his body, his Zhenqi was immediately dispersed. Afterward, even without using a proper base in mid-air, he managed to jump far away by making use of the propelling force generated by the dispersed Zhenqi.

Puff!

Shortly after, a human fireball fell from the cliff into the mighty waves of the turbulent seawater and instantly disappeared.

If an ordinary person had jumped down the cliff, there would certainly be no way out for him. Even if there was seawater under the cliff, it had a depth of more than 30 meters which was sufficient enough to engulf anyone. However, Luo Feng wasn't an average man, he was a genius who had a profound Cultivation of twenty-five years !

Even in this state, he could conveniently use his inner qi to protect himself, which proved that certainly, he would also be able to slow down his falling speed. Obviously, he wouldn't plunge to his death.

“He ran away.”

Ye Feng’s complexion turned gloomy and he immediately ran to the edge of the cliff, then looked ahead, but there was no trace of Luo Feng to be seen anywhere. Not even his Soul Search Technique could feel anything, it seemed that he had been carried more than 100 meters away by the sea waves.

“Brother Mo , thank you for protecting me.”

By this time, Nan Fang had already calmed down: “Luo Feng has certainly been seriously injured. And if the storm starts soon, then he won’t get a chance to come ashore and would surely die in the end. If we start looking for him in the nearby areas, then, should be able to intercept him

While saying, he turned his head to look around and noticed Long Wan’er and the three fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate were still glued to the spot where they were standing. Which in return forced him to think that since these three guys had seen Ye Feng’s secret, so they should certainly be silenced.

However, he had a little doubt in his heart actually, how in the world was that fireball used?

Besides, now he was also one of them who had seen Ye Feng’s secret, in that case, was Ye Feng also going to eliminate him? He could understand that Ye Feng really wanted to save him, but when Ye Feng discovered that he couldn’t beat Luo Feng, then helplessly, he had to use the Assassin’s mace.

However, even if he was killed by Ye Feng now, he still wouldn’t have any complaint because, in any case, he made Luo Feng to suffer a major loss, almost to the extent of coming very close to live cremation. Therefore, ending his life this way was definitely much better than getting killed by Luo Feng’s hands.

“Wan’er, come over here.”

Ye Feng waved his hand, immediately his Zhenqi burst out, Red Inflammation! Instantly three fireballs, one after another, rushed towards those three God Fist Gate’s disciples with a lightning speed, and in a blink of an eye, set them on fire.

Those three had merely 10 years of Cultivation, facing Ye Feng’s Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation, without having even the basic resistance capability was truly heart-chilling. They didn’t last long enough like Luo Feng to

be able to jump into the sea and burned to crisp, without even getting enough time to scream in pain.

Although the flame was like an ordinary flame, but the temperature was much higher in comparison.

In a matter of few moments, they disappeared from the face of the earth!

While on the other side, Ye Feng had displayed Red Inflammation four times at a stretch and his Zhenqi had already depleted to a significant extent, but he had no other options to choose from. Red Inflammation was the only method he had currently that could destroy corpses without leaving any trace. For him, it had become a necessity to get rid of those three disciples.

Long Wan'er immediately ran over to his side and swept her hands around Ye Feng's arms: "Are you all right?"

"It's nothing, I am all right."

Ye Feng nodded as he gently patted her shoulder.

Then he turned his head around and glanced at Nan Fang, soon noticed that his eyes were emitting the feeling of gratitude accompanied with an expression of shock. In the cold wind, Nan Fang's somewhat pale looking face was actually covered with several wisps of confused expressions.

"Many many thanks to Brother Ye for your help."

As per the custom of the martial arts world, he cupped his fists and gave a formal salute to Ye Feng! Now he was sure that Ye Feng wouldn't kill him to eliminate a potential informant, which made him a bit relieved, however, his eyes still had a hint of visibly clear yet complex look.

As a man, relying on others to confront one's personal enemy was simply unacceptable to him. The prime culprit who exterminated his whole family (family means gang) was Cai Shaohong, but he was also eliminated by Ye Feng. Not only this, even the armed escort Zhui Hun wasn't spared by him. And just a few seconds ago, Luo Feng was nearly killed by him. So in the end, what really was the use of Nan Feng's existence now?

"Those who are on our side, don't need to be formal."

Ye Feng waved his hand: “Managing one’s business properly is always important, what kind of hatred you harbor against that man Luo Feng?”

On the one hand, he inquired about this issue, while on the other hand, he arrived at the side of that cliff, where that vividly rooted big tree was. Soon his golden sword flashed and directly cut open the tree’s roots!

Just as expected, the two ancient rare books were deeply buried in the soil surrounding the tree’s roots, nobody knew since when had they had been there. However, the underground pests had been unable to damage the books, obviously, because the quality of the material these two books had was of some special kind.

Nan Fang heard that and while looking at Ye Feng’s actions, said: “He is my older brother but was sent to God Fist Gate in his childhood. Last year when Southern Heavenly Gate was completely destroyed, I went to seek help from him, but not only he remained unmoved, also threatened me that I was not at the same level as him. He even told me that he would let me off this once, but afterward, I am prohibited to look for him ”

His manner of speaking had a touch of intense hatred! Being the member of Nan Clan, not only his brother Luo Feng entered God Fist Gate, even changed his surname. More disgusting was the fact that he exterminated his whole Nan Clan. What kind of evil human this Luo Feng really was?

Ye Feng almost knew what the matter was, anyways, he picked up the two rare books.

“Hidden Immortal Technique and Crying Ghost Blade Technique, both are indeed very useful techniques.”

“Here you go.”

Ye Feng conveniently tossed them into the hands of Nan Fang.

However, Nan Fang was taken aback by Ye Feng’s unexpected action.

He looked at those books and suddenly his mind was blown away, not only Ye Feng didn’t kill him, but also handed him over two very valuable looking rare martial books , and that too so conveniently?

Nan Fang was not that kind of a person who would like to be put under another person, however, right now the enticement he had before his eyes was really quite huge, therefore he was unavoidably tempted.

He also deeply understood that nowadays in the arena of the martial world, consisting of several major schools, if a trivial being like him would intend to obtain a rare martial arts book, how much difficult it would be for him! Moreover, in case, Luo Feng wasn't dead yet, he still had a fair chance to take his revenge on his own!

But again he was very clear that Ye Feng rescued him obviously because there was a purpose behind that, to train him to become his subordinate.

Nan Fang pondered for a while, then raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng.

Today, he must make the decision like a man!

Disclaimer : Hi guys, there are few points which confused me earlier. Therefore, I decided to make this clear to you guys as well. Kindly read these below-mentioned points to get the clear picture :-

1. The word 'Nan' means South, which has been used in this novel in three contexts – for Nan Fang, for 'Nan Clan' and for 'Nantian Gate as Southern Heavenly Gate after translation'.
2. Nanfang <- I have been using this name since the beginning. But now, after the arrival of his brother' Luo Feng' and his clan 'Nan Clan,' I got to know that originally his name was Nan Fang, where Nan is derived from his Clan.
3. Luo Feng was called Nan Feng before, but he changed his surname after joining God Fist Gate.

Chapter 161 -> Radical member

Three people were standing on a tall cliff, feeling the strong wind blowing from the remote horizon. Although it was still morning, but the sun was actually covered with black clouds, making it appear very hazy.

The violent surging waves were rushing forth, constantly whipping the rock under the cliff. All these signs were indicating that very soon a storm was about to hit.

Nan Fang raised his delicate white face and looked towards Ye Feng.

“I’ll study.”

He said in a muffled voice.

After considering this matter for a long time, he finally made the decision he would be proud of throughout his life.

Even though he became ready to follow Ye Feng, but the point was how?

Cai Shaohong was already dead, while Luo Feng was also not a suitable match for Ye Feng. His great hatred was doomed to be already reported. Suddenly his mind went blank since he didn’t know that in the future which course he should follow.

At this moment, Nan Fang’s heart was hit by a somewhat strange feeling, since he arrived in this world as a man, how couldn’t he leave anything behind? He believed that Ye Feng wouldn’t let him down.

“Hmm. Where should we go, to the seacoast to look for Luo Feng?”

Ye Feng finally smiled and nodded his head. Currently, Luo Feng was in a seriously injured state, if Ye Feng didn’t kill him now, didn’t it mean leaving a trouble to return in the future? Just a moment ago he used the Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation, but surprisingly it seemed that Luo Feng was already prepared to some extent, indeed he wasn’t so easy to succeed.

“Well, is this my older brother’s wife?

Nan Fang looked at Long Wan’er wearing a white face mask, as he inquired.

“Pretty good. But concrete thing first, don’t rush to say anything, have received the rare books, now first try to find Luo Feng.

Ye Feng nodded, then looked under the cliff, the coastline wasn’t that long, probably only a few kilometres long with winding twists and turns. The entire Xiangshan County was a peninsula and currently the place where the three people were standing was located in the southern peninsula’s island reef.

Trying to find Luo Feng was presumably not at all difficult.

Those three people mutually saw each other, as if they wanted to detour to the bottom sea beach to seek for Luo Feng’s trail. However right at this moment, Ye Feng’s Soul Search Technique indicated him something and suddenly he tightened his guard.

In the woods of the northern background, unexpectedly a group of people rapidly appeared and peacefully encircled the cliff where these three people were.

They were the people of National Security Agency!

Ye Feng’s technique was very keen and sensitive, therefore he saw through the status of the opposite party at once.

“Hey, you three people, all raise your hands.”

A gloomy but powerful male voice passed on from the woods, making the three people feel the danger exactly like being attacked by the scorpion!

A team consisting more than twenty National Security Agency soldiers, fully armed, suddenly showed up and formed a semi-circle on the cliff to encircle these three people. While standing behind the team members, was a young Captain, with a thin stature, wearing a western-style suit, accompanied with a pair of gold edge eyeglasses. He crossed his hands behind the back and stood firm while holding a cajolery expression on his face.

“The things you have in your hand, hand them over to me.

His command sounded a bit ordinary, through his golden eyeglasses, he looked towards Nan Fang and read the name of the two rare books which he had in his hands.

“What will you do with them?”

Long Wan'er couldn't think through, a bit puzzled said : “National Security Agency is only responsible for arresting the criminals present in the world of martial arts. We haven't threatened any ordinary person from the secular world, still, why did you block us?”

“Ah.”

The Captain chuckled and pushed his eyeglasses up : “Is it? Whether threatening the ordinary people or not, National Security Agency has its own way of judgment, so we are not bothering you. You martial artists always bully small and weak people, even our country can't do anything to control you people. However, if everything happens according to what I wish, then I'll eliminate each and every one of you, without exception!

“You are Li Feng!”

Long Wan'er heard that which reminded her something and she tightened her grip to grasp Ye Feng's arm.

Li Feng?

What was this character?

Obviously, Ye Feng didn't know this fellow, therefore carefully he looked at him and soon discovered that the eyes of the opposite party had an intense look, a look clouded over with a contemptuous and loath feeling. From his words, it was quite apparent this fellow looked down upon the martial arts people very much, didn't he?

Besides, he actually threatened that he must remove all martial artists from the face of this world

“Oh, it seems to me that Li Feng's fame is still pretty huge.”

Li Feng smiled faintly, then raised his hand : “All raise your hands, I am giving them eight minutes to consider, otherwise will resort to open fire.

These words barely fell and immediately standing in front all twenty National Security Agency soldiers simultaneously lifted their precision firearms in their hands and aimed at Ye Feng along with the other two people!

The firearms of NSA were top notch, therefore shouldn't be overlooked. And Ye Feng already had a profound experience of this fact, therefore he admonished his heart to be alert at all times. However, the strange point was, why did the opposite party want to give them a period of eight minutes for consideration?

"This is Li Feng's usual trick."

Long Wan'er, while still leaning on Ye Feng, said softly: "It is said that Li Feng is hostile to the martial artists since childhood. Now that he has become the Captain of NSA, if any single martial artist falls into his hands committing any crime, absolutely wouldn't have the good end. Moreover, he has also been advocating all along to exterminate the entire martial arts world without exception" "

"Arrogant enough."

Ye Feng narrowed his eyes and gazed at him from across his mask.

Li Feng pushed up his eyeglasses, a strong wind was blowing around his body, making his cloth flutter. However, wearing a western-style clothing, his appearance was looking very imposing.

His eyes were also revealing a trace of ruminating look.

Every time he ordered to arrest a martial artist, he always used to give eight minutes to the opposite party for consideration, so that in this short period he could carefully observe the opposite party from the beginning of his pride to the time of his submission, and could final see him crawling like a dog in front of him.

"Eight minutes ..."

This time, this short period had special significance for Li Feng!

In National Security Agency, he was considered as a radical member without any doubt, since consistently he had been insisting on the suppression and extermination of entire martial artists from this world. This was the reason why he held a very high reputation in the martial arts world. Certainly, this fame was infamy.

At present, on that towering cliff, both sides had begun the confrontation!

"Li Feng is indeed an interesting person."

Ye Feng chuckled loudly, then comfortably embraced Long Wan'er while looking towards Nan Fang. Those two rare books were buried underneath the tree for so long, still wasn't damaged by the insects. In that case, could it be that they shouldn't be also afraid of the water? Ah, so after jumping into the sea, they wouldn't need to be worried about them.

In his mind, Nan Fang was very suitable for practising this kind of hidden weapon martial arts technique, because he was good at hiding and camouflage. As per the rumour, this martial arts technique 'Crying Ghost Blade Technique' once paved the way of a hidden Immortal School towards success, so naturally its effect wouldn't be disappointing.

Presently the key question was, how to protect Long Wan'er and Nan Fang, since jumping down from such a high place would be surely dangerous for them.

There were merely eight minutes to consider.

Ye Feng's train of thoughts started running wildly, in such a small and narrow space, if the other party started firing indiscriminately, then these three people would certainly get killed. Moreover, neither his Invisibility nor Camouflage would work in this situation. So if he wanted to escape, then only had one option left and that was jumping into the sea.

.....

At this time, on the other side, Luo Feng had grabbed the opportunity to swim to the shore of a small fishing village.

All martial artists had started gathering in this small fishing village because the big Coral King was nearby. In addition, its maturity time was tonight.

When Luo Feng landed there in a totally tattered condition, accompanied with burnt skin, immediately stirred up a group of martial artists, turning them all shocked!

"Who has hurt you like this?"

God Fist Gate's the great elder Xu Xiaoyu, who dared to speak satirically before Long Mo'ran in the Changbai Mountain, was also there waiting for tonight. However, when his eyes fell on his beloved disciple, who was in such a miserable condition, he immediately lost his cool.

Xu Xiaoyu's status was next to one of the two main elders of God Fist Gate, and had a reputation of "Nandou god fist", in order to rely on the gentle and soft boxing technique, one needed to be sturdy with ample strength, since it was quite hard to deal with. At present, he already had reached 80 years of Cultivation!

And as for Luo Feng, he was his most favourite disciple. In today's martial arts world, Luo Feng's talent was sufficient enough to make him stand in the top three.

"A masked man on the cliff can release fireball"

After running for a while, Luo Feng finally fell down on the beach.

Could release fireball?

At this time, Xu Xiaoyu was burning with fury, in the end, who was responsible for Luo Feng's condition? How could someone in this world release a fireball, he thought that he must not be Harry Potter, right?

Chapter 162 -> Approaching hardships

In the world of the martial arts, Luo Feng's status was extremely illustrious.

Although God Fist Gate wasn't considered as one of the three big influences but was still next to the three big martial arts school. As for Lu Feng, his talent was already well known, besides he also had a huge support of "Nandou God Fist", Xu Xiaoyu. Interestingly, just because of his backing, Luo Feng's conduct was totally unrestrained in the martial arts world.

However today, not only he was badly beaten up by someone and got serious injuries, but was also severely burned. This unexpected sudden incident was sufficient enough to make any person feel surprised.

'Nandou God Fist', Xu Xiaoyu was a white-bearded old man, however, his body was healthy and robust, while his fighting strength was unambiguous. At the moment, he was bubbling with wrath, indirectly making the people of that small fishing village immediately support Luo Feng and carry him inside a house. Besides this, he also immediately led more than a dozen disciples of God Fist Gate, brimming with enormous power, to leave this village at once and head toward the towering cliff located on the western side of this village.

This small village was not only swarmed with several God Fist Gate's people, but numerous people from various schools and Clans were also gathered there, including Long Clan.

At this time, Long Mo'ran wasn't standing very far away from Long Zi and Long Qing, who were presently discussing matters while standing far from the crowd, watching Luo Feng struggling to run. However as soon as his eyes fell on the white-bearded old man, Xu Xiaoyu, he could not help but immediately frown.

"A masked man who could release a fireball?"

Long Mo'ran's heart was immediately stirred up, he snorted coldly, waved his hand and said : "Long Zi and Long Qing, you people come along with me, I must have a look to affirm whether the man in the mask was that kid or not!"

"Yes."

Long Zi and Long Qing, both of them looked each other and immediately replied.

Long Qing looked like a twenty-seven-year-old man, with a face which always had an expression of being idle. When this swinging son of Long Mo'ran's elder brother heard that they had to go looking for the masked man, he immediately turned somewhat excited.

While nearby standing Long Zi actually knitted his eyebrows. He was once caught by Ye Feng's invisible Dragon Claw Hand in the midair from quite a distance, therefore was very clearly aware how strong the mask was, an incredibly talented guy! Moreover, Long Wan'er had also already recognised the opposite party

What a pity.

Long Zi just looked at the back of Long Mo'ran and secretly shook his head while thinking in his heart that the head of his Clan was such a narrow-minded person.

The last time he came to the East China Sea, it was just to speak with Long Mo'ran about this matter. However, after listening to his views, Long Mo'ran said back then that no matter what kind of talent that masked man had, he still didn't want to accept him as his son-in-law. And the reason was only one and that was his connection with Ye Feng.

The matters of twenty years ago, Long Mo'ran could never forget it during his lifetime!

"Since that guy is on the cliff, the girl will also be there definitely. So when the times comes, look tightly and grab the two of them.

Long Mo'ran commanded one holding a firm looking facial expression, afterwards, he turned around to go out of this village. A simple looking sword scabbard was hanging around his waist which was quite noticeable.

Long Zi and Long Qing also followed him, however in front of these three people was 'Nandou Fist Gate', Xu Xiaoyu, as well as a big group of more than ten God Fist Gate's disciples.

However, Long Mo'ran wasn't afraid of confronting Xu Xiaoyu, because in his

view, only after finding the masked man, he would qualify for judgement. As for God Fist Gate? Same thing applied to them.

Although Long Mo'ran definitely had less than sixty years of Cultivation, however, due to his strange talent, he could even practice the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique shockingly. Even if he stood against 'Nandou Fist Gate', Xu Xiaoyu, who had a mighty eighty years of profound Cultivation, he wouldn't look inferior to him, not even the slightest bit.

This was one of the three big influences, the strength and domineering of the head of the family of Long Clan!

Two groups of people started rushing towards the towering coastal cliff, which was five kilometres away. By this time, this chaos had also attracted the attention of several other figures of the martial arts world and gradually aroused their curiosity one after another, making them also think to start following them.

They wanted to follow them just to enjoy watching a bustling scene but were afraid of being dragged into the cyclone of disaster. Hence they chose to stay far away from this, but still to keep watch from a distant place.

The violent surging waves of the sea and the dark cloudy sky, accompanied with a storm of great figures of the martial arts world, running all the way, was constituting an epic classical landscape.

...

Five minutes had passed so far.

Still hugging Long Wan'er, Ye Feng was standing calmly, waiting for a propitious opportunity to jump into the sea to escape.

While, Li Feng just wanted to see them submitting in front of him, but judging from their looks on their faces, it didn't seem like happening. This made him secretly unhappy. Obviously, as one of the Captains of National Security Agency, he still had some patience left in him so he leisurely pushed his golden eyeglasses upward and continued to wait.

Beyond the towering cliff, there was the vast East China Sea and it seemed like its stormy waves were piled up with a huge amount of snow and ice while the raging waves were constantly bombarding them towards the cliff, causing the

smooth erosion of the rocks.

The strong winds blowing from the distant horizon were getting more and more violent, accompanied with a layer of dark clouds, rapidly advancing towards them to engulf them.

The storm was approaching fast.

Several seabirds which were occasionally seen in the sky were taken aback and to avoid this disaster, they flew away into the coastal woods and quickly disappeared. While at this time, lightning had also begun to suddenly appear from the distant horizon, and it appeared like they would engulf everything quite soon.

The clothes of these three people were fluttering in this cold sea breeze, while the leaves were swirling in the air under their clothes, which were looking particularly dreary.

“What should be done?”

Long Wan’er, while leaning on Ye Feng’s arm, said that. Since she couldn’t see the expression he had then on his face, therefore she asked that in a soft voice, accompanied with a bit of nervousness surging in her heart.

Li Feng, this name was really very popular in the entire martial arts world like the thunder piercing the ear.

Even if a martial artist didn’t commit any crime, but still he fell into his hands, then absolutely he wouldn’t have any good result in the end. As for their present situation, not only their masks would be torn off for sure, but those two rare martial arts books would also be seized by him.

As for the resistance?

While confronting the people of National Security Agency, there were just a handful of people who dared to resist and even killed a National Security Agency’ soldier for his safety. However, after that, they were sentenced to death in accordance with the special regulations. Luckily even if they escaped, then soon they were declared as the most wanted criminal throughout the country.

Such as Tornado Axe, armed escort Zhui Hun, and other wanted criminals.

They all confronted this kind of situation and then, later on, became quite miserable.

Long wan'er thought that from now on there was no existence of leeway for them in this country China.

"Relax."

Ye Feng softly replied. However, right then, his eyebrows suddenly wrinkled upward, since he sensed from quite a distance using his Soul Search Technique that a group of people were running fast towards them from the eastern side.

A huge flock of martial artists!

"God Fist Gate's people?"

Ye Feng very quickly discovered that the group was being headed by the person whom he had met once in the Changbai Mountain, who also had the guts to mock Long Mo'ran and speak satirically right in front of him, and that was the white-bearded old man with cold irony.

All of a sudden, he felt that the upcoming situation would certainly worsen everything. Who would have thought that Luo Feng could run this fast, not only that, he even crossed five kilometres in such a short period of time and also drove the people of God Fist Gate towards them.

The silhouette of the white-bearded old man and his group of disciples were quickly approaching, but suddenly another character also appeared within Ye Feng's radar and accelerated his heartbeat. Actually, he sensed an appearance with a hanging old scabbard around his waist, that was none other than that cold and indifferent man, Long Mo'ran!

"Your father is here."

Ye Feng said to her in a whispering tone.

"What?"

She heard that and immediately turned a bit nervous, Long Mo'ran had arrived there, what if they were caught

Nan Fang was also standing beside them, holding a solemn but respectful expression, but his mind was constantly thinking about some countermeasures.

However after much deliberation, meeting the radical member of NSA, Li Feng, on top of that at such a place, now he didn't have any word to say.

However, right at this moment, suddenly the members of NSA similarly found that the people of God Fist Gate, as well as Long Clan, had also arrived there.

Li Feng supported his golden eyeglasses while staring at the white-bearded old man, who was then leading more than ten people to rush towards them in a threatening manner. Therefore, he immediately, a bit coldly shouted: "National Security Agency will handle this matter, so other people evacuate at once!"

The originally leisurely atmosphere, immediately changed, since they were now at daggers drawn!

"Good opportunity."

Without hesitating a bit, Ye Feng turned around, immediately pushed Nan Fang's body and made an effort to jump down the cliff quickly.

Although the people of National Security Agency immediately responded, but didn't get sufficient time to act. While by this time, Ye Feng along with Long Wan'er had already jumped down, and the three shadows had finally disappeared from that cliff right before their eyes.

On the one hand, there were surging waves under the cliff, while on the other hand, the lightning storm, rushing from the horizon, was also getting closer!

Chapter 163 -> Long Mo'ran's sword

In an instant, Ye Feng took the lead and pushed Nan Fang down the cliff, immediately after that he closely grasped Long Wan'er and also leapt along with her.

Just within a fraction of seconds, the three figures quickly fell from the cliff towards the surging waves in front.

“Dragon Claw Hand Technique!”

Although Ye Feng was in the midair but he suddenly grasped the rapidly advancing downwards Nan Fang, making his declining trend stop abruptly. Afterwards, he started proliferating his Zhenqi and quickly formed a layer of very soft Zhenqi cushion on the sea surface.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

One after another, the three people fell down into the mighty waves of the choppy sea. On the one hand, he had been continuously holding Long Wan'er all along, so that she didn't get flushed away by the turbulent current, while on the other hand, simultaneously he also congealed his Zhenqi out into two Dragon Claw Hands, pulling Nan Fang close to him all the way.

Now at this moment, suddenly his Zhenqi burst out and he started swimming rapidly toward the shore while constantly resisting the turbulent current under the sea surface.

Having similarly a decade of Cultivation, however, Ye Feng's strength was much stronger than Long Wan'er. The storm was approaching fast, with every passing moment sea waves were getting stronger and fiercer. Although Long Wan'er had ten years of Cultivation, still was completely unable to freely move in the water, not to mention the condition of Nan Fang.

Immortal Technique – Dragon Turtle Holding Breath!”

Ye Feng also felt that the pressure was really awfully huge, therefore immediately he displayed an Immortal Technique to turn his stature more agile and free in the water. As a result, all of a sudden his back inflated out, which

immediately drew the attention of Long Wan'er and reminded her of that time when she was in the bottom of the lake together with him in the Changbai Mountain

The violent current entered bravely!

In a split second, the three people were already far away from the towering cliff and were constantly carried farther and farther away by the sea.

The mighty waves were surging wave after wave, while the sky was completely occupied by the black clouds, accompanied by the thunder lights which were frequently flashing and roaring from all around! The storm quickly hit the shore, even though Ye Feng was in the water, but still had a feeling of draining physical strength and unable to endure anymore.

Considering his present level of Cultivation, fighting against such a natural disaster was obviously extremely difficult for him as well. However, fortunately, they were not very far from the coast, or else it would have become even difficult for Ye Feng to survive.

After swimming quite a distance, the three people finally landed in the vicinity of another island reef, then after they took the breath of relieve. This island was farther away from the small fishing village, even Ye Feng didn't know the location. However, on judging its lush vegetation, it seemed that this place was very remote and there was certainly no existence of other people living on it.

Still holding the completely drenched body of Long Wan'er tightly in his arms, Ye Feng immediately said: "Walk inside, light a fire to rest."

He was not a bit afraid that they might get discovered by Long Mo'ran because of the evidence left by lighting a fire. Anyway, they were just taking a break to rest and then would leave, so there was nothing to be afraid of.

"Hmm."

Even though Long Wan'er had ten years of Cultivation, still now at such a crucial time, because of ice-cold seawater, she was shivering hard, besides her long dress was completely drenched and had stuck close to her body, making her exquisite body appear extremely vividly, while her beautiful and long, dripping wet hair was spread all over her shoulders. There was even a sign of little

inclination on her white face mask.

Nan Fang just glanced towards her and immediately turned away his line of sight. He had a very clear understanding that presently, in such a situation, not seeing Ye elder brother's woman would certainly be a good choice

However, if compared with Long Wan'er, his condition was also not much better than her. There was a layer of thin frost gathered on his eyebrows, making him look very miserable.

The storm was almost about to hit, even the temperature of the East China Sea had abruptly plummeted, the sea water had already turned icy-cold, which was totally different from the usual form it had generally in the month of June.

Three people started looking for a shaded place, while Ye Feng displayed the Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation and promptly lit a huge pile of firewood just like a bonfire. The extremely warm temperature caused by it, instantly made the three people feel all warmed up.

However Long Wan'er as well as Nan Fang, both felt very strange deep inside their hearts, after all, how could Ye Feng create a fireball out of nowhere? But they didn't ask anything since they very clearly knew that Ye Feng would certainly share this secret with them at the right time.

While after being all warmed up, Nan Fang opened the tightly protected two rare books, which he had kept in his bosom before jumping and then started studying it under the instructions of Ye Feng.

...

On the towering coastal cliff, Xu Xiaoyu and Long Mo'ran, along with their own people rushed over there, but suddenly saw Ye Feng along with the other two people jumped down the cliff right before their eyes.

"Search everywhere!"

Xu Xiaoyu fiercely shouted out loud, while his white beard appeared incomparably elegant floating in the cold wind.

"Slow down."

Upon seeing several martial artists ran over there out of the blue, the National

Security Agency's radical member, Li Feng's golden edge eyeglasses shone up like a thundering-light of the black cloud, while his corners of the mouth revealed a trace of ruminating look : "Those three kids, must be handed over to us, the National Security Agency. Do you want to cause trouble? At present, must know your place and obediently accept the arrest!"

Seeing only his graceful gesture, four members of the National Security Council immediately dispersed to go, all prepared to jump into the sea to go along the coastline to look for Ye Feng along with the other two people.

Very obviously, Li Feng really harboured the deep-rooted old grudge against the people of the martial arts world.

"Hmm, Li Feng, not even my Nandou God Fist will scare you, hmm."

Xu Xiaoyu snorted coldly. While remaining completely unmoved, he simply waved his hand, immediately making more than a dozen disciples of God Fist Gate, who were standing behind him, disperse right away and similarly start seeking for the trails of Ye Feng including other two.

"You dare run away?"

Li Feng contemptuously smiled : "Three teams, stop them!"

His world barely fell, and the four members of the National Security Agency immediately obeyed his order and lifted their hands carrying precision firearms at once, and as soon as the blue light blinked, instantly pulled the trigger!

However it was not the usual blue-ray bullets, rather was a special trait huge net, which spread just like a fishing net and rapidly advanced towards them with a lightning speed and soon trapped those God Fist Gate's disciples inside it.

These nets were usually used by the National Security Agency to capture the martial arts criminals special equipment, even the ordinary sharp weapons were unable to cut it apart.

"You!"

Xu Xiaoyu hadn't thought that Li Feng would start his action rightaway, his both eyes desperately glared at him. Confronting the National Security Agency, he still didn't dare to revolt against them, besides, he practised the gentle and

soft boxing technique, hence was also unable to destroy this kind of fishing nets.

Right at this moment.

Shua!

In the cold wind, suddenly a light flashed.

A natural and unrestrained stature suddenly fled from behind Xu Xiaoyu, immediately after a sword flashed and instantly cut the net into several pieces which had been actually projected by the National Security Agency.

Long Mo'ran was in action now.

The sword of his waist finally came out of the sheath.

"This is the matter of the martial arts world, there is no need for any bystander to come and take care of it."

Long Mo'ran's stature suddenly stopped right in front of Xu Xiaoyu, then he calmly said, raised his head and pointed his long sword directly at the golden spectacled man, Li Feng. While confronting such a character like Li Feng, Long Mo'ran chose to maintain the martial arts common human honour, rather than following the tit for tat attitude of Xu Xiaoyu.

However before Li Feng could react, his stature once again flashed, his superb and strong skill, multiplied with a terrifying speed, even the National Security Agency's firearms couldn't target to catch his movement.

A little cold awn instantaneously arrived in front of Li Feng.

Kachak!

His golden edge eyeglasses were cracked, while the stature of Long Mo'ran drifted far away, leaving only an unruly view of his back behind.

"Long Zi, Long Qing, immediately scatter to find them. Elder Xu, I hope that in case you find any one of them, you will certainly notify me sooner, that man in the mask is my, Long Mo'ran's personal enemy!

Long Mo'ran densely said.

Xu Xiaoyu heard that and secretly chuckled in his heart since he already knew what the viewpoint of Long Mo'ran was. Long Mo'ran was really an extremely

unlucky man, twenty years ago his wife was abducted, and now her daughter was, and on top of that, again this issue was related with Ye Clan.

If Xu Xiaoyu exchanged places with him, then having such a gorgeous daughter, who had such a great connection with the masked man with terrifying talent, he would have been already very glad to grin from ear to ear. In that case, why would he act like how Long Mo'ran acted just now?

Naturally, Long Mo'ran's skill was already extremely exquisite, which had even gone against the heaven's will, therefore it seemed that he didn't need to keep such a focus on a fledgeling boy.

"Rest assured, if that being the case, we will cooperate to find them."

Xu Xiaoyu snorted lightly, then turned around to depart. As for Long Mo'ran, he already had made his move by helping him breaking the siege, the favour he had done, this must be paid back to him for sure. No matter how to say it but Elder Xu was a very old man in the martial arts world, certainly he wouldn't see through this point.

On seeing that both Xu Xiaoyu, as well as Long Mo'ran had left the place leading their people, suddenly a gloomy expression crawled over Li Feng's face since he couldn't forget how his golden edge eyeglasses were cut into pieces by Long Mo'ran's sword.

The head of Long Clan, Long Mo'ran was really like a thorn He thought that one day he must catch the whole lot of these martial artists and would finish them up at one fell swoop!

"All advance towards the front fishing village! Disband the residents, this time no casualties should take place!"

As the Captain of the National Security Agency, obviously, Li Feng couldn't forget his responsibilities. Therefore he moved into action right away! Besides he also couldn't let this incident slip away like nothing happened, he would surely take his revenge from Long Mo'ran one day.

Chapter 164 -> Bluffing and blustering.

By this time, along with the other two people, Ye Feng had left the island reef and had returned to the original seacoast.

At a distance, not very far away from that small fishing village, Ye Feng set up a magic array behind a megalith with the help of his Camouflage Technique, then after, these three people closely leant against it. From there they could see that a huge lot of martial artists were all over the place and were finding someone along the beach, naturally, without any doubt, they were looking for these three people.

Fortunately, they were in the magic array, hidden behind a huge boulder, so not even the precision instruments of the National Security Agency could sweep their traces.

“You guys stay here, in the meantime, I am going in the vicinity of the big Coral King to have a look at it.”

Ye Feng said to them.

“Hmm.”

Nan Fang nodded his head rightaway, besides, now he had also started obeying everything said by Ye Feng quite seriously.

“I’ll go together with you.”

However, on hearing that he was leaving alone, Long Wan’er didn’t feel relieved, hence said that out of concern.

Originally Ye Feng didn’t have any intention to take her along since was afraid of encountering any danger which might cause trouble to them. However now, he changed his mind as he thought that she was quite familiar with the people of the martial arts world, if by any chance they ran into any martial artist, in that case taking her along would always be a better option than a random guess.

“Well, that’s good. Then, Nan Fang, you stay here and continue studying the core technique of the Hidden Immortal School, while she will accompany me.

Ye Feng solemnly said.

Apart from only focusing on the activity and news related to the big Coral King, he also had to think up every possible method to kill God Fist Gate's disciple, Luo Feng, otherwise leaving a trouble rightnow might return in the future with increased intensity.

Immortal Technique – Invisibility!

Instantaneously Ye Feng's Zhenqi dissipated and directly enveloped them completely.

Displaying Invisibility Technique to walk outside the magic array, this might not be a good idea than staying in the magic array for the time being to ensure their safety. Since the possibility of getting discovered either by the NSA people or by the other martial artists with profound Cultivation would be on the higher side, therefore Ye Feng needed to be vigilant at all times.

They quietly left the boulder and proceeded towards the location where the big Coral King was with an extremely fast speed.

"The big Coral King is somewhere in the vicinity of the seabed. Around two weeks ago it was found, however, its maturity day is tonight, because of that there are a lot of martial artists around the big Coral King, guarding it.

While running parallel to Ye Feng all along, Long Wan'er explained things to him in-between.

He heard that and nodded his head, he just wanted to obtain the big Coral King at all cost and propitiously the opportunity to fulfil his wish was tonight. Once the night passed, he might not get the second opportunity to grab it.

The two people ran along the seacoast. However at this time, continuously the surging waves were whipping the shore, simultaneously causing little splashes of sea water, accompanied with water sprinkles aiming directly on the two of them, making them feel as if the iciness had stabbed their bone.

The strong winds were continuously getting stronger and fiercer; while the thunders' lightning was also getting more and more bright. Besides, the pea-sized raindrops finally began pouring down in torrents. On taking a broad view of the scene, it seemed that the entire sea waves were surging, accompanied with

the torrential downpour, making the entire world look like hanging up a curtain of water, layer by layer probably. Consequently, the visibility was badly disrupted and it sharply declined.

One after another the bursting sound of thunder, letting Ye Feng know that this storm would continue like this for quite a long period of time.

He took off his coat and draped over Long Wan'er body, then continued to move on along with her. Although he could use his Zhenqi to impede the raindrop, however, that was a total waste of his energy. What if after a while he bumped into any kind of unexpected fighting, for that he should always keep a contingency plan ready, so at present he needed to be a bit economical.

The big Coral King was not far from the location.

Very quickly, they covered three kilometres of distance away from the small fishing village. Now, from a distance, it seemed that there was a flock of people, looking like extremely strong martial artists. Altogether seven people were there, sitting in repose on the shore with eyes closed. Although torrential rain was pouring down in torrents everywhere, but on judging their expressions it seemed that they were not the least affected by this heavy rain.

“Finally arrived, but the big Coral King is away from this seacoast, probably two kilometres down in the bottom of the sea.”

Long Wan'er, while leaning against Ye Feng closely, whispered: “These people are sent to guard the powerhouse of the big Coral King, every one of them at least has fifty years of Cultivation. Tang Clan, Long Clan and God Fist Gate, all of them have sent one person here to represent them”

Ye Feng glanced at the pile of seven people and quickly noticed that each and every single person was an old man without exception.

“Are they just guarding the shore?”

Ye Feng saw them and couldn't help but feel delighted deep inside his heart. As the matter stood, the possibility of him getting hold of the big Coral King was on the higher side now!

Now in this condition, only his Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique could allow him to continue staying in the bottom of the sea for quite a long period of

time. While the other martial artists, no matter how profound their Cultivation was, still they couldn't continue to keep watching every single second inside the sea.

“Hmm.”

She thought for a while, then nodded her head and said: “Let's go back, the big Coral King is being monitored by nearby installed electronic equipment, we can't succeed.”

To put it this way, she was still not optimistic about Ye Feng's success, but again this was pretty normal, after all, she didn't know the identity of Ye Feng as an Immortal Cultivator.

“Hmm.”

Ye Feng also nodded his head, the big Coral King hadn't yet matured, so the better option was to go to the fishing village first and quietly settle Luo Feng.

To take advantage of one's illness and finish his life, this was the only survival principle in the World of the Immortals.

The two hidden stature quietly ran back towards the direction of the village. On the one hand, Ye Feng was running hastily, while on the other hand, he cast out Camouflage, so as to promptly change his and Long Wan'er's cloth, height, mask and so on, just to guard against any contingency.

Finally, they arrived in that small fishing village, from quite afar Ye Feng could clearly see that currently this small village was actually flooded with several people of the NSA and under the leadership of so-called radical member Li Feng, they were strolling around the whole village with an exaggerated swagger.

In this small village, it seemed that all the original residents were already disbanded, leaving behind only a huge lot of people from the martial arts world strolling there everywhere.

However seeing the bluffing and blustering squad of Li Feng, nobody dared to stand and say anything.

“We will go inside directly without using Invisibility, or else we will surely attract people's attention and will get found.”

Ye Feng had already made up his mind, so just stated that to her.

“Ah? Isn’t it so”

Long Wan’er was startled by his decision, wouldn’t it be extremely dangerous then?

“Nobody can recognize us, moreover your father and God Fist Gate’s people haven’t yet arrived here.”

He said that to comfort her.

Having the Camouflage on, both of them turned into totally different persons. If compared with the appearance they had previously in front of Li Feng, rightnow the only thing in common was there were again a man and a woman, hiding under masks.

However in the world of martial arts, wearing a mask was a common matter. Ye Feng simply swept his Soul Search Technique and immediately discovered that there were several people wandering around in this village while wearing masks, so that meant they didn’t need to be worried about it anymore.

Anyways, they walked inside to find the whereabouts of Luo Feng, so as to kill him on the spot and then quickly retreat!

In this torrential downpour, while holding each other’s hands, these two people eventually entered the small fishing village.

Soon a muffled thunder resounded, letting Ye Feng discover that nearby Li Feng’s golden edge eyeglasses were cut into pieces, the reason why he seemed a little distressed in this heavy rain, while his mood was also not very favourable.

“You, take off your mask!”

Li Feng said that as his finger pointed at a youth standing at the entrance of a peasant household, his voice seemed very dangerous just like a dangerous scorpion.

“Sorry, the mask can’t be taken off.”

That young boy immediately replied in a sinking voice, his voice sounded quite immature as if he was just a seventeen-eighteen-year-old boy.

“He is from Taiji Palace.”

Immediately Long Wan'er stuck close to Ye Feng's ear and explained in a soft voice: "The main force of Taiji Palace usually handles matters at other places, it is said that although several people of Taiji Palace have been in the East China Sea nowadays, but only to snoop the news, not to plunder the big Coral King"

Ye Feng nodded as he thought that Taiji Palace was one of the three big influences in the martial arts world, but still they didn't participate in robbing the big Coral King, that explained there must be something more significant than this matter, right?

“Oh, you dare to resist, open fire, arrest!”

As soon as Li Feng heard that the youth in the mask refused to uncover his mask, he immediately waved his big hands.

Puff! puff! puff!

The soldiers of the National Security Agency immediately lifted their firearms and started firing at the youth, but again they weren't the blue-ray gun, rather were the suppressing arteries guns, which were currently used to suppress that youth's inner qi.

The masked youth tried to dodge them, but was immediately hit by three bullets and in a matter of few seconds his Cultivation was suppressed!

Immediately after, two members of the NSA stepped forward as they wanted to uncover the mask of that powerless youth.

Upon seeing this situation, one by one each and every martial artist standing around turned a blind eye, since in their view, either they had to face Li Feng, or they could just ignore this matter and walk away. Moreover, every single one of them also knew their place fairly well in front of these precision instruments!

At this moment, Ye Feng suddenly felt Long Wan'er's small hand tightly held him while she was silently walking parallel to him.

Chapter 165 -> Warm-blooded martial arts world!

Ye Feng narrowed his eyes to carefully watch the activity and behaviour of Li Feng as well as the other NSA people, actually he didn't want to meddle in this affair.

“Ah, Pooh!”

As soon as Li Feng saw that the mask of that Taiji Palace's youth was taken off, he spat out. Since the face appeared in front of them was an immature burnt face, which was extremely ugly and dreadful.

Now that the mask of that boy was cast off, he went crazy and started hitting and kicking two of the soldiers of the NSA, but since his inner qi had already been quelled, under this circumstances, in spite of whatever effort he made, it became merely a burst of futile effort.

“So ugly, you scared me.”

Actually, Li Feng hadn't expected earlier that something like this was about to unfurl, therefore he spat out contemptuously, then raised his foot and kicked that boy forcefully, making him turn over on the ground.

Upon seeing this, the surrounding martial artists couldn't help but despise him deep inside their hearts. Why did he want to uncover somebody else's mask? Or was he still scared to go and blame some other people? Even if that was the case, still no one took initiative to speak up for the boy.

As for the elders of Taiji Palace, none of them was available in the East China Sea currently. This boy arrived here just to scout out some information about the ordinary disciples.

However, even Taiji Palace couldn't dare to stand against the NSA. At this scene, nobody would be actually willing to substitute for the youth and offend the NSA, especially Li Feng, he couldn't be taken lightly.

Not everyone could be Long Mo'ran, that sort of abnormal man!

At present the youth was in a very miserable state, not only the youth was kicked to the ground, but was also completely drenched from head to toe due to

the torrential downpour, while his entire body was also daubed with crushed stones and sand of the sandy beach, making him appearing very battered and exhausted.

His hand suddenly grabbed some sand from the ground and then he tightly clenched his fist, because of which his skin was bruised and started bleeding.

He was totally unwilling to reconcile!

Taiji Palace, in the entire martial arts world, commanded a very illustrious prestige and was very famous for its outstandingly fighting prowess. Whenever Taiji Palace issued an order, no matter which clan it was, Long Clan, Tang Clan or so on, they had to give some respect to them. But when it came to confronting the precision weapons of the NSA, they had no other choice left but to admit their defeat and be terrified.

He couldn't be reconciled!

This fellow was called Li Feng, but for what reason did he uncover his mask? Even the elders of Taiji Palace wouldn't be able to balance an account in this way. However, at present, such a thing happened, even if the elders came to know about this incident, still they might not go out looking for the NSA to take revenge.

Surprisingly, not even for the sake of that youth, Taiji Palace would ever dare to offend the National Security Agency.

"Hmm, totally boring."

Li Feng snorted coldly, subconsciously wanted to push his golden edge eyeglasses, but then he actually realized that his eyeglasses had already been cut into pieces by Long Mo'ran's sword, which made his heart feel extremely annoyed.

He came around that youth, then raised his foot and trampled him down his foot badly.

Since he couldn't cope up with Long Wan'er just a while ago, so now he had to vent his anger in any form on this fellow.

Snapped! Snapped!

In this heavy rain, the youth was being trampled upon, whether it was his personality, dignity, or other things, all things were heavily crushed by Li Feng's foot.

"This man Li Feng, he has crossed his limits."

Long Wan'er almost clenched her jaws.

Although they walked into this village from outside, but still nobody had noticed them. It was definitely because of the scene over Li Feng's side which was kind of too "splendid".

However, having felt the mood Long Wan'er had then, Ye Feng immediately entered into his pondering mode for a while, then said: "This man Li Feng, he is truly so hostile to the martial arts people, on top of that, since he holds a very high position in the National Security Agency, so from now on he will certainly bring a lot of trouble to us, might as well we should teach him a lesson, let me converge him"

This was totally a rash decision! That man Li Feng, his eyes just fell on a person wearing a mask and he couldn't control himself and did everything to uncover his mask. In case Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were also caught by him, then certainly they would have to go through the similar situation.

Rather than continue waiting until being pointed to the nose by Li Feng, might as well they should try to catch him off guard and give him a proper lesson. Moreover, since there was sufficient reason to take this step, hence Ye Feng didn't have even the slightest bit of psychological burden.

"Let me deal with him."

Ye Feng said in a whispering tone to her.

"But still you can't kill him."

She quickly stopped him : "Actually the position of Li Feng is kind of very high throughout the country, besides he is a very important and prominent personage in the country. If he dies, our entire martial arts world can never live in peace"

"Then I'll chop one of his arms down."

Ye Feng lightly snorted.

Then he shifted his gaze towards those people of the martial arts world who were there, simply watching Li Feng's actions from the sidelines, but nobody dared to come out and stop him. This thing forced him to have a contemptuous feeling in his heart.

Although these people were martial artists, still not a trace of courage and uprightness could be seen from their disposition, they were kind of too weak. If this were the World of the Immortals, then it was absolutely impossible for such incident to take place, instead, by now the people would have moved into action and have also killed him at one fell swoop. In worst case scenario, running away to the other end of the world would be the best option, since no one could do anything then.

At this point of time, on one side Ye Feng's Zhenqi suddenly started condensing in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. While on the other side, the boy who was being trampled upon by Li Feng, suddenly grabbed a handful of sand and tossed it towards Li Feng.

However, Li Feng had a flexible body, therefore, he immediately dodged it. Besides, as one of the Captains of the NSA, his physical fitness should be always up to the mark. Apart from this, since the inner qi of that boy was already in a suppressed state, therefore the speed of throwing sand wasn't that quick, it couldn't even touch Li Feng's body.

"Oh, still throwing sand, you really have courageous spirit!"

A sinister smile immediately spread on Li Feng's face, while his tone turned, even more, colder. He quickly snatched a blue-ray gun from the hands of the National Security Agency soldier standing aside and aimed directly at the boy's head: "I am giving you eight minutes, just kneel down and apologize to me, crawl in front of my eyes, otherwise I'll hit to explode your head!"

Eight minutes again!

Upon hearing this, the facial expression which had suddenly appeared on the faces of the surrounding martial artists then, truly exposed that Li Feng was exactly like the rumours, like giving people eight minutes of time for consideration.

The youth struggled a bit, his burnt facial cast appeared very fearsome, but in this heavy downpour, his emaciated stature didn't help him a bit and he felt very helpless.

“Pooh!”

But then all of a sudden he spat out a mouthful of saliva aiming at Li Feng, symbolising him that he would never compromise!

Li Feng quickly got out of the way where he spat, as an effect, immediately a trace of coldness flashed in his eyes as he thought that this kid really didn't deserve to be given any other chance to survive, he was too stupid, and today –

“This person showed disrespect to the senior official of National Security Agency, so in accordance with the special recuperation, we have the right to impose a death penalty on the spot!

He lifted the precision blue-ray gun and directly aimed at the head of that youth. Now the time had certainly come to pull the trigger!

All of a sudden, the surrounding martial artist couldn't bear continue watching the scene, since they all were already aware of the power of the blue-ray gun. Once this gun hit the head, there was no chance of survival. If he pulled the trigger, it would certainly explode that boy's head and lead to his death, in that case, not even the God could save him.

However, even if this was the situation, nobody stood up to oppose him.

In this world, every day several people die, why should they offend the NSA just to defend a kid who didn't even know the difference between good and evil and went so far like humiliating the people of NSA?

Seeing him raising the gun, the eyes of that boy contracted, could it be that his tragic life was going to be put to an end today? However, the point was, up to now he really didn't know that how and when did he annoy this evil star of the NSA!

Was it because of the mask? Or because of his ugly-looking face? Or because he humiliated him by fighting back?

Whatever might be the reason, he really didn't have any intention to reconcile!

However, at this time, a trace of cruelty flashed through Li Feng's eyes as he thought that now it was necessary to pull the trigger.

Puff!

Suddenly the blood gushed out like a violent wind!

A golden sword flashed and instantly cut off one of the arms of Li Feng. And the next moment, his arm heavily fell to the ground, immediately followed by severely splashing blood which soon spread on the sand.

“Ah—”

This sudden incident left the entire audience completely shocked, they all were in an absolute silence state, only Li Feng's blood-curdling screech resounded all around, which appeared extremely irritating to the ear in this heavy rainfall.

Bang!

Thunder and lightning were crashing frequently, but they also actually failed to cover Li Feng's pitiful screams. Surprisingly someone still survived even though his arm was actually cut off, after all where exactly was the God?

Everyone present on the scene was truly thunderstruck by this sudden incident and they threw their gazes towards Ye Feng's back.

A masked man, clad in a black dress, just like a spectre suddenly appeared before them out of nowhere, holding a golden sword in his hand, with dripping fresh blood, which was making it appear very bright and sparkling in this heavy rain.

The people of the martial arts world were really warm-blooded, so they deserved it!

(Lastvoice : Warm-blooded people means those who don't get affected by the surrounding environment.)

The boy raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng who was also in a mask, this boosted up his spirit and his eyes revealed a look of surging excitement.

He really hadn't expected that at such a critical moment, someone would actually come out to rescue him!

Chapter 166 -> Aunt is captured

The scene of the entire small fishing village seemed like was confined in this one act.

The heavy rain, just like a water curtain, was pouring crazily, a masked man, wearing black coloured clothes, holding a golden long sword in his hand, was quietly standing behind Li Feng, whose arm was just been cut off. But then suddenly Li Feng opened his mouth to scream out loud because the pain caused by chopping down his arm was not something the average person could endure.

In front of Li Feng, that burnt face boy was there whose eyes went wide open, while the motion of his heart was hard to return to its normal state, instead, it was surging more and more.

Indeed the martial arts world was warm-blooded!

The dripping blood was quickly washed away by the rainstorm, leaving behind only little traces. However, once again Ye Feng raised his right hand and placed his Zhenqi condensed golden sword directly in front of Li Feng's neck.

"The people of National Security Agency, don't act rashly or else my sword will truncate his head without a bit of hesitation, and for your information, I always live up to my words."

Ye Feng indifferently said so in order to put his control over Li Feng.

Having heard that, the surrounding more than 20 members of the NSA immediately entered the highest alert state, but since their Captain was under Ye Feng's control, they didn't dare to move into action.

On the other side, at this moment, all the martial artists present on the spot one by one stood up, completely thunderstruck they held their hearts and started discussing this incident.

All of a sudden one of the arms of the lunatic Li Feng of the NSA was cut off, this was actually an extremely important matter! Moreover, this matter hadn't yet finished, in case something bad happened to him or he was killed today, then the entire martial arts world would be turned upside down.

“Everyone, encircle him!”

Li Feng gnashed his teeth with extreme anger while enduring the severe pain, he roared loudly.

The NSA soldiers obeyed him and immediately surrounded Ye Feng holding the precision firearms in their arms, while Ye Feng and Li Feng were in their middle.

“What do you want to do, not afraid of getting killed?”

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and tightened his grip on the sword which was in his hands, could it be that Li Feng was a psychotic?

“Ha, ha

Li Feng smiled bitterly: “You really have courage to kill me? Kill me then, but remember you also can’t stay alive, ha, ha

He raised his another intact arm, seemingly because he wanted to give an order, making the soldiers of the NSA open fire directly at him. Literally speaking, he didn’t have any intention to capture him alive, the reason why he wanted to kill him on the spot.

His hatred and old grudge against the people of the martial arts world had always been pillared by his extreme proud, making him never compromise to the martial arts people!

“Then you will right away descend to the hell.”

Suddenly coldness flashed through Ye Feng’s eyes.

A moment ago whatever Long Wan’er said to him, he still remembered that, therefore he didn’t want to let the martial arts world move into chaos, but that didn’t mean he didn’t have the courage to kill him. Now only a sword could resolve, instantaneously Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’s second layer burst out, which was sufficient enough to grab Long Wan’er and take her away from the clutch of the NSA soldiers!

In addition, because of the effect of Camouflage, the NSA could never find the slightest evidence to prove that Ye Feng and Long Wan’er were together related to this incident.

When Ye Feng’s hands just wanted to catch him up and slaughter him then

and there, exactly then another familiar voice but actually with a hint of gravity passed on.

“All stop!”

All of a sudden another group of the NSA under the leadership of Thunder walked over there in an imposing manner!

If in the NSA, Li Feng was a radical, then Thunder was a conservative who had been consistently advocating the peaceful coexistence of both martial arts world as well as the secular world.

As soon as Long Wan'er saw someone from behind came over there, she immediately flew to the side where Ye Feng was. She didn't care a bit that a gun's muzzle was pointed at her by the member of the NSA. For her, staying together with Ye Feng at the same place was much more important than her life.

“This lunatic really knows how to stir up trouble.”

Thunder coldly shot a glance at Li Feng whose arm had been severed from his body, then turned his gaze towards the youth who was in a very difficult situation in this pouring rain, besides he also noticed a mask which was there thrown aside on the ground. Upon seeing this scene, now he didn't need to know what exactly was the matter.

“All the members of the NSA were assigned outside the village for guarding purpose, where they were also busy in carrying out the coastal residents' evacuation mission!

In this torrential downpour, he issued an order at once in a loud voice : “Take Li Feng and retreat, after that deliver him to the emergency hospital first. Hey brother, also please hit and make this man Li Feng unconscious.”

“Thunder, you are worsening the situation!”

To endure pain, Li Feng bit his tongue, then bawled out : “Open fire and kill him

Bang.

However, all at once, with a hand knife, Ye Feng hit his head really hard and immediately threw him into the lap of dizziness.

“Now he is handed over to you.”

Ye Feng said faintly as he slowly released Li Feng: “However don’t blame me for open slaughter.”

In a flash of an eye, his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’s second layer again burst out while its eruption speed was terrifically high, which was dangerous enough for him to kill and behead a group of the NSA people on the spot. And in worst case scenario, he could easily run away from the scene, afterall Ye Feng was an unusual hoodlum who could do anything.

“Everyone retreat, also take Li Feng along.”

Thunder’s mind was brimming with deep thoughts as he gazed at Ye Feng, simultaneously passed an order to his people.

On seeing the appearance of that masked man, Thunder felt that he was totally an unfamiliar fellow. However, from his golden long sword, he right away understood that this masked man was the same masked man whom he had seen before in the suburban area of Yanjing city.

“Also, respectfully informing you all martial arts’ towering figure.”

Before turning around to leave, Thunder left few words behind : “The weather forecasting office of the NSA has reported us that this time, the rainstorm is different from the usual one, because of which the temperature is also dropping sharply and abruptly. If you people still have to continue staying in the seacoast, then must take care of yourselves.

“Let’s go.”

Soon after, he sent all the NSA people along with the unconscious Li Feng and his severed arm outside the village not very far away by a green military truck, which roared away speedily.

Quite soon all the people of the NSA left the place, leaving behind an air of silence blowing throughout that small village, only the sound of the pea-sized rain drops hitting the ground was resounding everywhere.

While currently in the centre of the village, Ye Feng put away his sword and stood there silently along with Long Wan’er, while in front of these two people

was that young boy who was struggling to get up, simultaneously groping about to find the mask and put it on again.

“Thank you

The boy’s voice sounded a little hoarse.

“It’s nothing, I was just passing by.”

Ye Feng said lightly, he wasn’t too much concerned about the boy, rather he was busy sweeping his Soul Search Technique around and soon he sensed something.

Currently, Luo Feng was in the house of the common people, completely unconscious lying on the bed, while the two people of God Fist Gate were guarding him. These two God Fist Gate’s people were middle aged men, who actually had forty years of Cultivation!

It seemed that Luo Feng was really very precious to God Fist Gate, otherwise, it wouldn’t have left such strong protective force there.

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows as he thought that as per the situation, trying to kill Luo Feng wouldn’t be that easy.

“Long Mo’ran, as well as that white bearded old man along with their people, will soon return to this place, in that case, we shouldn’t act carelessly, instead we should leave here as soon as possible”

Ye Feng said that and immediately drew Long Wan’er close to him and embraced her in his bosom since he wanted to depart right away, but then again he swept his Soul Search Technique and sensed something shocking in a single storied house of a common resident, which made him gawk on the spot.

Actually, the matter was, in that house a familiar person was shut off and surprisingly it was Long Wan’er’s aunt Shu Shu, who was locked in a bedroom. In addition, she was also being guarded by an obese man who also had shockingly 30 years of Cultivation!

“How can you Aunt be here?”

Immediately Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows and said that to Long Wan’er in a whispering voice.

“What? It shouldn’t be”

Long Wan’er was startled for a while: “Was she discovered by my father? It’s not good!”

She was deeply aware of the fact that if Long Mo’ran would come to know that her aunt had helped her in running away from the house, then that would be the end for her. Considering Long Mo’ran’s personality, who could dare to defy his words!

“It’s indeed not good.”

Ye Feng’s complexion a bit darkened.

Since he again sensed that the obese man, who was in that bedroom, flashed a contemptuous smile at Shu Shu.

“... .. you bitch. Anyway, the head of the clan has already ordered me to execute you, but before your death let me play with you for a while merrily”

Obese man stacked up a sinister smile on his face as he started trying to untie his belt.

However at this moment, once again Ye Feng’s Zhenqi condensed out in the form of a golden sword.

He had a feeling that even if Long Mo’ran came back rightnow, still he would certainly not protect Shu Shu and would ignore this matter completely!

Chapter 167 -> Long Mo'ran shows up!

A lightning flashed, immediately followed by a thunderclap which exploded in the sky near the small fishing village, making the entire village suddenly light up.

At this time, in the village, almost all of the martial artists were in a state of astonishment, even their eyes had an amazed looking expression in them. Ye Feng softly loosened the body of Long Wan'er and immediately after that, the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace suddenly broke out.

Just in a flash, he arrived in front of that common person's house about hundred meters away, leaving behind a series of blurred afterimages all the way.

Buzz!

In this torrential rain, his golden sword once again congealed out and was wielded towards the house, accompanied by a sudden burst of his Zhenqi, and the next moment, the roof of the house was pared to fly, making it crash loudly!

At this moment, the obese man was all prepared to take off his pants, but was all of a sudden exposed in the field of vision of the villagers. Through the swirling dust and sand in the air, he swept his eyes around and remained dumbfounded for a while.

What was going on? He just got ready to have fun with her, but who was this damned wretch who collapsed the house?

Instantly, the blood rushed to his head and he started burning with fury, he was a very important figure in Long Clan, so who would dare to ruin his mood like this, didn't he want to live!

Clang!

He pulled his sword out from his waist, then raised his head and gazed at Ye Feng who was standing outside the house, letting the torrential rain pour down on his body, while his eyes were revealing a fierce and malicious expression.

"Be careful!"

Immediately, Long Wan'er shouted from behind. Ye Feng could easily notice how scared she was from this fat man, besides, other than fear, her tone also

had a touch of disgust for that man.

The surrounding martial artists also began to whoop.

“He, he, isn’t that man Long Wuren from Long Clan?”

“Right, I have heard that this fatty is addicted to sex, just look at that beauty sitting in the corner, but wait, is she married into Long Clan?”

“Isn’t that Shu Shu? What I have heard, around twenty years ago her husband died, look at her petite appearance, she still looks pretty and delicate, even I want to taste her ”

In the collapsed house, Shu Shu’s whole body was brimming with a matured and graceful charm. By this time, she had almost given up all hope, but after that sudden collapse, she raised her head and the figure that appeared in front of her eyes was Ye Feng, leaving her completely shocked for a moment.

Although his outward appearance wasn’t quite same, but she still somehow felt that at present, this masked man was quite intimate with Long Wan’er and thinking about his unexpected appearance there to save her, immediately hit her heart by a kind and cordial feeling.

“Aunty!”

Without paying attention to other people around, Long Wan’er immediately ran over and wrapped her arms around Shu Shu, supporting her in the process. In order to protect her from the rainstorm, she immediately took her to the next door, under the roof.

Although Long wan’er was in the mask, but the moment Shu Shu heard her voice, she immediately understood who she was.

Shu Shu raised her head and saw Ye Feng holding a long sword, all prepared to confront the obese man. Upon seeing this, Shu Shu’s heart suddenly tensed up, while a trace of anxiousness appeared on her gentle face. Once she had heard Long Wan’er saying that ‘Mo Jiuge’ had only ten years of Cultivation, but right now, Mo Jiuge was standing against Long Wuren who had thirty years of Cultivation. The disparity was indeed extremely huge!

However on the other side, Long Wan’er didn’t panic a bit, after all, she had

already seen him fighting with Luo Feng, and as compared to Luo Feng, Long Wuner was still unqualified to be his opponent. The only thing to be worried about was in front of so many people, Ye Feng certainly couldn't expose his secret techniques like the fireball.

"I must resolve this battle in the shortest time possible."

Ye Feng grasped his sword a bit more tightly because he clearly knew the intensity of the present situation.

On the other side, Long Mo'ran along with the white bearded old man was searching for him in the vicinity, but now had appeared in the village, that meant he would definitely hurry back. By the time they would return, if Ye Feng couldn't resolve this fat man, then he might get into a huge trouble.

His opponent had thirty years of Cultivation, while his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace had already hit the second layer with a terrific eruption speed. In such case, his speed should be almost similar to the opposite party, but if he coordinated it with Camouflage, then he should definitely be able to kill the enemy in one fell swoop.

Right now, Long Wuren's long sword was placed horizontally, all prepared to set about. Soon after, he took the initiative and jumped into action.

"Brat, you asked for it!"

Long Wuren said holding a hideous and fierce expression on his face. Immediately after, the long silvery white sword flashed in his hand, tainted with the rainstorm and was wielded horizontally, simultaneously he hit his foot heavily on the ground and the next moment, his whole stature swept forward towards Ye Feng.

Cutting through the air, his long sword speedily moved forward. Under the effect of his inner qi, even the pouring down rainstorm rolled up into a wave of water, just like a quick and fierce fire hose, accompanied with the coldness of the long sword, rapidly advancing towards Ye Feng.

"Romantic Sword Technique, sweep away the scattered clouds!"

Since he already knew the quality of this technique, therefore, immediately exclaimed aloud.

Long Clan's exquisite martial arts technique, Romantic Sword Technique, was also considered as the sharpest killing technique. Even if an ordinary person with good talent was to learn this technique and display its first layer, still the might of his sword would be invincible.

"This is Romantic Sword Technique?"

Ye Feng felt a cold shiver in his heart as he thought that Long Mo'ran had already reached the third layer of this technique. If there was enough time in his hands, he could have gotten familiar with this technique, but what a pity, presently, he had no time to play with this fat man.

Even in the first layer of this sword technique, inner qi could be conveniently swept both horizontally and vertically, just like how whirlwinds can scatter clouds so easily.

This was a simple, swift, sharp, fierce and relentless sword technique!

Ye Feng's footsteps moved quickly and the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace once again burst out with a terrifying speed, and all of a sudden, he took a half-turn in a flash to avoid the direct hit with a piercing blow of the fate. However, he was still hit by the long sword directly on his face and the fresh blood was immediately spurted out of his mouth.

The speed of his sword was seriously extremely fast. Although Ye Feng had Soul Search Technique, his ordinary ten years of Cultivation was absolutely not enough to help him avoid such a sword attack.

Ye Feng then turned around towards the opponent and conveniently waved his sword, however, the coldness of his long golden sword accompanied with some water droplets, pared the stamina of the obese man.

Clang!

The reaction speed of the fatty was incredible, in a split second he turned his sword around and blocked the blow of Ye Feng's sword.

In this torrential rainstorm, the two swords collided with each other. At this time, Ye Feng right away felt the formidable inner qi of the opposite party conveniently sweeping through the long sword.

Clatter Clatter.

In this downpour, he couldn't help but retreat, two steps back, the disparity between their Cultivations was making him unable to cope up with his opponent.

"Flower falls, the autumn frost."

Long Wuren smiled as the corners of his mouth curled up, as if his smile had a brutal meaning behind it. Immediately then, his stature flashed and from behind, he aimed his sword at Ye Feng and stabbed him directly in his chest.

"Give me a break!"

Since Ye Feng had Soul Search Technique, he sensed the whereabouts of his opponent instantaneously and then immediately started condensing more Zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and the next moment, he turned around and thrust his golden sword forward.

Bang!

Silver light flashed and Long Wuren's silvery white sword was chopped by him directly into two equal halves, while the sword tip soared high into the sky, then soon after, it fell down heavily and got stuck into the sand and was thoroughly covered by the heavy rain.

Puff!

However Ye Feng's chest was still being pierced by Long Wuren's semi-broken sword, immediately after Long Wuren's icy-cold inner qi passed through the sword and penetrated his bone marrow.

Fresh blood very quickly incarnadine his chest, this scene immediately made Long Wan'er's heart tight and without thinking much she scolded tenderly, immediately her pretty figure twinkled and she displayed Dragon Leg Technique and kicked on the tip of the broken sword.

Shua!

Her foot broke the tip of the broken sword and it suddenly roared towards Long Wuren.

Since Long Wuren's sword had suddenly been cut off, he was in a state of shock. He thought that his sword was in the rank of the Sharp Weapon category,

how could it be so easily cut off? However seeing Long Wan'er's shot, he immediately responded and moved aside to avoid the flying sharp tip.

Upon seeing this, Ye Feng thought to take advantage of his unpreparedness, so while enduring the pain in his chest, he held the sword and stepped forward, instantly the power his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace's second layer erupted and in a flash, delimited Long Wuren's throat!

Puff!

Although Long Wuren succeeded in avoiding the sharp tip of the broken sword, he actually failed to avoid Ye Feng's close fatal blow that happened at a point-blank range. His head was severed from his body by the sword and his obese body tumbled down heavily on the ground and stuck in the already drenched sand, while his eyes were wide open. He never thought of his own inexplicable death and that too in such a way.

"You okay?"

Long Wan'er quickly ran up to him and supported him, simultaneously tried to examine his injury.

Bang!

A startling thunderclap resounded in the vicinity once again.

Not far from the roof, three shadows quietly appeared, led by Long Mo'ran with a terrifying pale complexion. Behind him, in the sky, a lightning flash piercing the sky as if complementing his cold complexion.

"You killed the member of my Clan, now you wait and see what happens to you. Don't even think of leaving here alive!"

Long Mo'ran's angry voice was complemented by the roar of the thunder, casting an ominous shadow on the villagers!

Chapter 168 -> Draws lightning!

Long Mo'ran finally showed up.

Ye Feng clenched his teeth, then, by taking the support of Long Wan'er, he stood up. Immediately after, he raised his head and looked ahead towards the roof where the three shadows had appeared.

Long Mo'ran, Long Zi and Long Qing.

He hadn't thought he would put together his injury to be a bit faster to resolve Long Wuren, or else he didn't have sufficient time to finish him up. Now the situation was far from good, if he wanted to compete fiercely with the opposite party, then his speed should be absolutely no more than Long Mo'ran.

"You killed the member of my Clan, now you wait and see what happens to you. Don't even think of leaving here alive!"

Long Mo'ran's facial expression was dense and firm while his eyes were staring at Ye Feng and Long Wan'er standing together. Besides, his one hand was already on the sword which he had around his waist.

Behind him, Long Qing was there holding a careless appearance, as if all these things had nothing to do with him. However, Long Zi's eyebrows were already tightly locked, making a deep frown as he looked at Ye Feng in a strange way as if he was pondering something.

Right then, Ye Feng suddenly waved his hands gently and his Camouflage quietly dissipated. Still hiding under masks was completely worthless now. Now, wearing a black and white mask Ye Feng and Long Wan'er's true form finally appeared in front of everyone, including villagers.

"What, Wan'er?"

Originally Long Qing, who never cared about anything, was now all of a sudden hit by a huge shock. They were standing far away, in addition, under the effect of Camouflage Technique, they really couldn't recognize her. However now, they had resumed their original forms, even if wearing a mask, still, anyone from Long Clan could easily recognize her right away.

“Bastard.”

Upon seeing this, Long Mo’ran’s complexion turned gloomier. His daughter actually collaborated with the outsider to kill Long Clan’s person, this thing made him seethe with extreme anger.

As for Long Wuren, although his importance in the military force was almost negligible, but was actually the bridge between Long Clan and the modern metropolis! This obese man used to plough money abundantly, besides he also had connections with a lot of big influences. Interestingly, Long Clan’s huge fund was generally also used to be controlled by him.

Now that he was beheaded like this, how could Long Mo’ran swallow this incident? Even if he killed Ye Feng today, it was still difficult to eliminate the hatred from his heart!

“I’ll block him, you leave first.”

Long Wan’er’s heart was already panic-stricken on seeing that Ye Feng was actually finally caught by Long Mo’ran and that also red-handed, now would certainly die without any doubt. However now, her staying back to delay sometimes for Ye Feng could only help her in fighting for a little chance of survival for him.

Even if she died at the hands of Long Mo’ran, still she wouldn’t have any regrets or complaints, as long as Ye Feng could continue living, could remember her

“Fool, I won’t abandon you.”

Thunder was bursting repeatedly and the rainstorm was still pouring in torrents, in this backdrop, Ye Feng’s wearing a face mask was making his appearance look incomparably terrible. But unfortunately, a broken sword was still stuck in his chest, as well as his front portion was dyed with red, both of them were together demonstrating that the injury he had received was not that light.

Owing to the last move of Romantic Sword Technique which was displayed by Long Wuren in the end – “Flowers fall, autumn frost,” Ye Feng’s chest meridians were suddenly penetrated by his icy-cold inner qi deeply. And in such a short

period of time, he didn't have the means to handle it.

Grasped.

Ye Feng stretched out his hand out and pulled the broken sword out from his chest, soon the dyed blood washed away and lost in the wet sand. Then he lifted his foot at once and stamped it on Long Wuren's head heavily, making it deeply stick into the sand pit.

Afterwards, he raised his head and looked towards the roof where Long Mo'ran was.

The weather was getting more and nastier, lightning and thunder were making his heart all prepared as if he was aware of the current situation.

Bang!

He lifted his right hand and the golden sword condensate out, directly pointing at Long Mo'ran : "Then meet my one move, if you can still continue, I'll surrender without any fight!"

"Ha ha ha ha!"

It seemed as if Long Mo'ran heard a ridiculous joke all of a sudden which forced him to laugh out loud : "The present you are still qualified to discuss the condition with me? However, in case you die before your last request, then I actually can satisfy you.

Seeing his real strength, he was brimming with absolute self-confidence, not to mention a single move, how could even ten moves of the masked man help him achieve his goal?

Since ages, in the martial arts world, such martial arts talent like he had, had rarely been seen. Even Xu Xiaoyu's 80 years of Cultivation couldn't scare him so far, then how could a young boy wearing a mask scare him?

Today, he would surely not let this masked man escape again, he had already lost his face recently, therefore this time, he must make the opposite party repay!

"You go quickly!"

Long Wan'er saw him in this condition, started burning even more with anxiety

and impatience.

“It’s nothing, believe me.”

Immediately a cold look flashed in his eyes, he gently pushed her to one side and then looked up again towards Long Mo’ran.

Under the lightning and thunder, their confrontation made everyone around hold their breath!

At this moment, Ye Feng felt that the temperature, raindrop, lightning flashes, thunderclap, all were giving him the feeling of the World of the Immortals. In such an extremely adverse condition, many Immortal Cultivators often learnt a deeper layer of Immortal Techniques!

“If I’ll use the first layer of icy-blue Dragon Sword qi, its might would be probably ten times greater than the normal slash. But if it is integrated with various nature’s energies, it might enter the second layer, then its might will also enhance ten times again

Lava! Cold ice! Hurricane! Lightning!

Every kind of nature’s powers could be integrated into it.

Luckily, the rainstorm happened to hit the place today, if he could display Dragon Sword qi by integrating the lightning’s strength into it, then defeating Long Mo’ran really wouldn’t remain that impossible.

Shua!

The golden sword was again pointed at Long Mo’ran, although the two people were separated by tens of meters distance of confrontation.

Suddenly in this rainstorm, a lightning flashed and collapsed near a house, however, Ye Feng was still proudly standing, while his whole body was drenched by the rainstorm. On the other side, at this moment, Long Wan’er had already tightly gripped her hands, since she was extremely worried and now had almost started trembling a bit.

If Ye Feng died here now then what would she do?

Two talented people just met an evening, now were going to confront with such life and death situation

She helplessly stood still in the rain, while the tears, accompanied by the raindrops, were rolling down her cheeks, however, she actually didn't act like this willfully to stop Ye Feng. Deep inside her heart, she still believed that he could beat Long Mo'ran, although this possibility was extremely low

This small village was surrounded by the crowd sheltering under eaves, constantly staring at the confrontation of these two people, while secretly regretting that this masked youth, who easily defeated Long Wuren, now his future was doomed for being too impulsive and today he would be certainly killed.

Nobody had thought that he could display a technique to kill Long Mo'ran!

Because presently, in the East China Sea, Long Mo'ran could be said to be the strongest one, no one could dare point his sharp tip at him. If a masked kid could beat him, then wouldn't he lose his self-respect among other martial artists?

At this time, the youth of Taiji Palace, who was just rescued by Ye Feng, carefully observed the situation and secretly clenched his teeth.

While charming and matured beauty, Shu Shu just stood under the eaves, however, a trace of anxiousness could be seen across her face, while her eyes were stuck on Ye Feng. In this situation, a weak woman without any martial arts skill couldn't play any important role to turn the table.

But she still had a hope that Ye Feng would certainly kill Long Mo'ran and then she as well as Long Wan'er would have complete freedom, but again this possibility was on the extremely lower side

Clang!

All of a sudden, Ye Feng's stature moved forward, his black clothes fluttered in the air and dispersed a little bit of water. Immediately, he waved his golden sword in midair and formed an ice blue, half-moon shaped Sword qi.

Bang!

Immediately after, the Zhenqi drew a lightning as it dropped from the sky and then instantly integrated with his Sword qi. At this instant, it seemed as if this small and gloomy village was suddenly illuminated by a flash of bright sunlight.

The intensely dazzling light instantly forced everyone around, including Long Mo'ran as well as Ye Feng, subconsciously closed their eyes.

The entire fishing village suddenly lit up with a bright light!

Chapter 169 -> A True Lightning Sword qi

Due to the dazzling light of the lightning, the surrounding people could only see the faint silhouette of a person, even Long Zi and Long Qing find themselves unable to clearly see even Long Mo'ran, who was standing close at hand.

In the entire village, screaming and shouting started rising from all around!

“Lightning Sword qi!”

Ye Feng secretly roared in his heart, simultaneously swept his Soul Search Technique around and felt that his Dragon Sword qi had already integrated with the frightening lightning, hence he immediately loosen his Zhenqi.

Zi Zi Zi!

A lightning flashed for an instant, immediately after, a half-moon-shaped lightning sword light congealed out a true Lightning Sword qi, which was similar to a crazy ferocious viper and swept away as many things as possible toward the roof aiming at Long Mo'ran, while along the way, also set off a gust of strong wind!

The water curtain formed by the rainstorm, all of a sudden also got attached to the Lightning Dragon Sword qi and immediately formed a close vacuum zone.

Now, the people could clearly see the situation on the field finally. Consequently, in succession, alarmed and terrified expression spread on their faces as they saw the Lightning Dragon Sword qi rapidly advancing toward Long Mo'ran.

Anyone could sense the terrifying might of this technique – Sword qi.

This masked man could actually release Sword qi!

As for the true Lightning Sword qi, Ye Feng was really lucky that he could use this technique in this kind of weather, besides his Zhenqi could also draw and make use of nature's energy, naturally, its formidable power would be extraordinary.

Long Mo'ran's eyes contracted since the Lightning Sword qi arrived too fast!

He could dodge it quite easily, but dodging in front of the young generation was highly improper and unacceptable to him, because then how could he show his face? Although he didn't have any idea how the opposite party pulled a lightning, but he had self-confidence that he could still resist this move.

Obviously, he had to use some cheap tricks.

Immediately he stamped his foot heavily, simultaneously threw his both hands towards Shu Shu, who was standing under the eaves and grasped her. Since Shu Shu was away from him recently, consequently became his target.

Actually, he instantly assigned away his inner qi from his body and captured Shu Shu, who didn't have any resistance capability. Then he pulled her close to him, so as to block the quickly advancing Lightning Sword qi on the way.

“Aunt!”

Long Wan'er shouted loudly as she saw everything clearly and turned all alarmed and annoyed at once. Long Mo'ran was too shameless, actually, he used a weak woman as a shield who knew nothing about the martial arts techniques.

Ye Feng's complexion also suddenly changed, since he never thought that Long Mo'ran would turn so vicious and sinister like this!

Since Shu Shu helped his daughter secretly run away, this actually made Long Moran want to kill her, so much that he even handed her over to Long Wuren to defile her chastity. And now surprisingly, again he took hold of her to use her as a shield, simply disgusting.

Now that Shu Shu was suddenly grasped by him, she immediately flew high up in the sky. At this moment, her gentle beautiful eyes were reflecting how rapidly she was getting close to the Lightning Sword qi, making her already panic-stricken.

She already had the plan to die, but such cause of death, she didn't want to accept it. By this incident, not only she would hinder Long Wan'er and Ye Feng's plan, but this way she would also rescue Long Mo'ran at such a critical moment, how did this make her resign herself?

Thud!

Abruptly, an agile and vigorous figure rushed out from one side and all of a sudden pushed Shu Shu away from midair.

That person was actually the recently rescued masked youth from Taiji Palace!

At this critical moment, he jumped out to help Ye Feng to return his favour, however

Lightning Sword qi was incredibly fast!

Puff!

In the rainstorm, all of a sudden, the masked youth's thigh was pierced badly by his sword and he heavily fell to the ground. Lightning had really caused severe injuries all over his body, making his whole body convulse.

Actually having sacrificed himself, he tried to save Shu Shu!

True Lightning Sword qi, accompanied with a "Zizi" sound, speedily continued proceeding forward and in an instant, arrived in front of Long Mo'ran's eyes.

Shua Shua!

Romantic Sword Technique!

A dense look all at once appeared on Long Mo'ran's face, without further ado, he waved his long sword and cast out three moves one after another – Sweep away scattered clouds; Flowers fall -autumn frost and Snow Reflecting Sunset!

Three different characteristics of Sword qi instantly condensed out from his sword's tip and greeted Ye Feng's Lightning Sword qi in succession.

Usually, not to mention a youth with a decade of Cultivation, even an old man holding 40-50 years of Cultivation, could be easily beheaded by Long Mo'ran's sword. However now, while confronting this true Lightning Sword qi, he actually wielded three moves at a stretch.

If compared with nature, even the strength of Long Mo'ran was not worthy of mentioning.

Although Ye Feng borrowed a small part of the strength of the lightning, still couldn't reach the extent of going against heaven's will.

Bang, crash, boom!

Three consecutive explosions roared on the roof. When the Lightning Sword qi and Sweep away scattered clouds collided with each other, a strong light erupted again, just like the ordinary bright fireworks.

Every time his Sword qi collided, the explosion distance got even more close to Long Mo'ran, while the last explosion took place less than one meter away, projecting his incomparably pale complexion and simple looking white long gown fluttering in the air.

The frightful wind pressure immediately blew away those three people from the roof.

Long Zi and Long Qing didn't say that they were lifted by the air pressure all of a sudden to fly a while and then heavily fell to the sandy beach. As for Long Mo'ran, since he had already released his inner qi out in the air, therefore his footsteps lightly pointed in the midair and a moment later, he fell to the ground steadily.

“Coughs.....”

However, immediately fresh blood flowed out of his corners of the mouth, the last violent explosion took place very close to him to the extent that it actually made him receive an internal injury. For him, this kind of thing had never happened to him since ages.

On the other side, for Shu Shu, suddenly a masked youth appeared and blocked a blow in the middle, this was really shocking. The Lightning Sword qi really made his body suffer several severe injuries!

After a series of violent explosions, one by one, several houses were blown to pieces. Everything was in a complete disorder, the dust rose from all around and blocked the line of sight of the numerous people.

“Aunt!”

However Long Wan'er didn't wait for the rising dust to dissipate, she ripped off Ye Feng's black coat from his body and immediately ran towards Shu Shu who was pushed to the ground. Then she draped the coat over her plentiful stature so as to help her block the storm.

At this moment, Ye Feng also didn't stay idle, he took advantage of the

surrounding chaos and straightaway arrived in front of the injured legs of the youth and cast out an Immortal technique, Holy Cure on him!

A golden light sparkled on his hand and he helped him quickly stop the blood.

“Wan’er, quickly run!”

Ye Feng supported the boy to rise up as he looked at her and hastily said.

“What’s wrong, do you want to escape?”

At this instant, Long Moran’s dense voice suddenly spread through smoke and dust.

The rainstorm was getting stronger as the time rolled on and it seemed as if it had taken the form of a waterfall in general, making the entire village completely soaked.

The dust raised by the collapse of houses also started quickly precipitating in the rain.

Ye Feng raised his head and glanced towards Long Mo’ran, who had stood up by now and was wiping the blood from the corners of his mouth and soon a serene sneer crawled over his face as he looked at him.

“Still want to lead my daughter to run away, I’d actually like to see that where can you two run to escape from me”

His voice sounded very cold and gloomy, which immediately affected the people around and sent a shiver down their spines.

“Don’t call me daughter.”

Long Wan’er raised her head and tossed her mask away. Immediately an elegant pretty face accompanied with a trace of hatred appeared. Then she looked at Long Mo’ran and said : “You are such a person who doesn’t deserve to be a father!

Actually, Long Mo’ran had never been close to her heart since childhood, instead, for her, aunt Shu Shu was the most intimate person. However, just now, her father used Shu Shu as a shield without caring about her life, which finally triggered her anger and made her see the true nature of her father.

Anyway, she couldn't escape now, besides she also didn't mind revealing her identity anymore and tore open her face!

Although Shu Shu was just an ordinary person, but no matter what happened, Long Wan'er would always protect her.

Whenever she was bullied by other children for being a child of Long Clan, Shu Shu always stood in front of her, quietly bearing their supercilious and cold stares.

As a child whenever she caused any trouble and got punished, Shu Shu had always stood before her as a shield.

Even not long ago, when she was confined, regardless of anything, only Shu Shu helped her run away secretly.

It could be said that Shu Shu had made her place directly in Long Wan'er's heart, seemingly equally close to her like a mother!

"Right."

Holding a very light tone, without any special expression, he said : "I also don't want you to be my daughter, you just discard your Dantian to abandon all the martial arts techniques of our Long Clan, then I'll let you leave."

His words sounded very cold to the surrounding people.

However, having heard that he would let them go, a ray of hope suddenly emerged in her heart.

As long as she discarded her Dantian, it would be fine then?

Chapter 170 -> Self-discarding Dantian

Hearing Long Mo'ran speaking out indifferently, all martial artists present on the scene, one by one started talking in whispers.

In the younger generation, Long Wan'er's martial arts talent was splendid. And could be said that once she reached Luo Feng's age, perhaps could comprehend that level in which inner qi was assigned away from the body. She had always been a very talented person in her Clan's younger generation.

However now, Long Mo'ran made her self-discard her Dantian and he was earnest when he said that, still forcing her to make a choice?

As for the matter of Long Clan, obviously the surrounding martial artists were the worldly people, so had long been obtained the news from various sources that masked man "Mo Jiuge" had some connection with Ye Clan's Ye Feng, still he was Long Wan'er's man.

Whether she wanted her Cultivation or a man, Long Mo'ran smartly compelled her to make the choice!

In the martial arts world, it seemed that in case she really threw away her Dantian, then that masked man, "Mo Jiuge," would still want her? Definitely, heartlessly he would abandon her! However if their respective situations were replaced with each other, then, certainly she didn't have to discard her Dantian and would definitely choose to keep Cultivation and stand on the side of Long Mo'ran.

Ye Feng squinted and look toward Long Wan'er.

He didn't utter a single word so far since he also wanted to know what kind of choice she would make in the end. His intuition told him that she would choose to discard her Dantian to fight for these two people's freedom.

If she really abandoned her Dantian, then, it was the right time to let her know things related to Immortal Cultivation.

"Discarding martial arts Cultivation, it means now there is no need to be worried about the conflict which might take place between her Zhenqi and inner

qi.”

Ye Feng’s mind was constantly thinking, because having the back route prepared, there is no need to stop her.

Dantian was considered as both the key to and core of Cultivation for the martial artists. Once it was abandoned, it might cause despair to the martial arts world. However, for the Immortal Cultivation, Dantian was regarded as nothing, because in the World of the Immortals, Core Dan was the core, while Dantian was just a vessel since they didn’t have same Cultivation.

Having Core Dan inside, then Dantian could be regenerated again!

All around the village, lightning flashes, thunder, rainstorm, everything was making people have the painful taste. Besides, the sea was merely one kilometre away, which had now started howling even more than before, accompanied by the tide surging wave upon wave.

Looking at the appearance of the mighty waves overturning the entire village, it seemed that soon, the entire village would be submerged by the tide for sure.

“This time storm

Ye Feng was a little restless, because the words left by the NSA captain Thunder before leaving here, were still resounding in his ears.

Could it have any relation to his master? In the world of Immortals, the weather had never been normal, because anyone with even an above average Cultivation talent, could overturn seas and rivers and cause the drastic change in the weather.

So now, could Su Feiying

He squatted down next to the unconscious Taiji Palace’s youth, while constantly thinking about such scenario.

Meanwhile, Long Wan’er supported Shu Shu in getting up. At this time, Shu Shu seemed a bit embarrassed, not only she was completely drenched, but also was fully wrapped with sand dust. In addition, it seemed that she had also caught a cold since was coughing constantly.

Her delicate and pitiful appearance, however, aroused the hidden desires of

some people around who were staring at her intently, as if wanted to swallow her right away.

“Isn’t that called self-discarding Dantian?”

Long Wan’er supported her Aunt first, then raised her head and looked towards Long Mo’ran holding a perverse look on her face : “You remember the words that you just spoke.”

She raised her chin, the rain water was continuously slipping down her smooth and delicate face. Her supple but drenched beautiful hair was draped over her white shoulders, while her long skirt had stuck close to her body. In this rain, she was looking particularly attractive and together with Shu Shu was constituting a beautiful landscape.

“Coughs Wan’er.”

Shu Shu was constantly coughing, however now she just wanted to urge her : “Considering his degree of tolerance, if you really abandon your Dantian, I am afraid, this would certainly make him fly into a rage out of humiliation, then he would absolutely not let you go”

“In front of so many people, the martial arts world’s first sword, Long Mo’ran will certainly not renege on his promise, right?”

Long Wan’er said as she looked towards him, who still had his sword in his hand and then suddenly, a contemptuous smile spread on her face.

“Hmm.”

Long Mo’ran lightly snorted without uttering a single word.

Long Wan’er had finally made up her mind.

In the present scenario, she could only hope that he would abide by the agreement. After discarding her Cultivation as well as Dantian, she decided to take Shu Shu and Ye Feng along and leave this place.

Seeing her as if had already decided to discard her Dantian, over a hundred of martial artists present in the village then, shook their heads and sighed secretly.

After all, she was still a young girl, too young, ah!

For the sake of a man, sacrificing one's own life, did it worth it? Because the consequences of discarding one's Dantian were extremely serious! Not only her Cultivation would be destroyed in a moment, but also throughout her life she couldn't practice martial arts, even her future physical fitness wouldn't be any better than an ordinary person!

And that masked man "Mo Jiuge", although was so young, but could still release his inner qi out of his body like nothing. In addition, he could also direct the thunder to display the sword qi. Even Long Mo'ran barely withstood his blow. Such an unusual talent he had, so henceforth, could he stay with her "a disabled person" from now on?

Long Wan'er turned her head and looked at Ye Feng.

She just wanted to hear and see whether there was even a little bit of feeling left in Ye Feng's heart to stop her, then, she would feel satisfied and proceed without a bit of hesitation.

However, he didn't notice anything.

Ye Feng's chest was stained with bright red colour, besides his wound was appearing very horrible, it looked like he was very seriously injured. At this moment, he looked towards Long Wan'er, slightly nodded and firmly said :

"No matter what happens, I won't leave you."

Long Wan'er thought for a while to understand what he said, then, clenched her teeth and nodded. Immediately after, she ran thirty-two steps forward and stopped in the middle of Long Mo'ran and Ye Feng.

It was certain that if she didn't make her choice right now, then they all would certainly die. So might as well, she should fight for their freedom. Even if she discarded her Dantian and lost her Cultivation completely still as long as Ye Feng stood by her side, the future days wouldn't be too miserable, right?

Besides, she firmly believed that Ye Feng would certainly not throw her down no matter what.

A thunder roared loudly, at this moment, Long Wan'er was away from the water curtain, staring at her father fixedly. She wanted to capture this scene today and firmly engrave it deep inside her heart!

Long Mo'ran also looked at her but holding a cold look, as if the girl standing in front of him wasn't his daughter but a stranger. In addition, at this moment, the surrounding martial artists held their breath, all prepared to even get drenched in this rainstorm but still continue witnessing the impending scene with their own eyes.

No matter what kind of choice she would make, that would surely set off a burst of mighty waves in the entire martial arts world.

Gradually Long Wan'er started condensing her Inner qi, simultaneously her meridians also started revolving. Afterwards, inner qi advanced towards her lower abdomen and gathered in her Dantian. Self-discarding Dantian was a very simple process, all she had to do was gather all her inner qi in the Dantian and then detonate it.

Ye Feng was also all prepared in his heart to display Dragon Claw Hand Technique any moment and pull her to his side. Although he didn't come out to stop her for various reasons, but his heart was actually extremely anxious.

The current situation was like even a slight negligence would be beyond redemption!

"Puff —"

She lightly groaned, soon from head to toe, she started shaking and spouted fresh blood from her mouth.

Her adorable face all of a sudden turned pale, accompanied with her apathetic facial expression. In this downpour, her body was on the verge of collapse.

"She really discarded her Dantian!"

The surrounding martial artists were all shocked!

In the beginning, they all thought that she would never arrive at this determination. However looking back now, it seemed that they really very much underestimated this young girl. Now the point was what could be the reason behind her choosing this option with such a determination?

For love?

Bullshit, who still believed in love nowadays!

Long Mo'ran saw that and suddenly his complexion sank, while blue veins immediately popped up on his forehead.

Chapter 171 -> The body of immortal arteries, open up!

Bang!

A violent thunder roared.

Near the eastern coast, the storm was getting more and more violent along with the lightning, which was flashing continuously in the sky. One kilometre away from the sea, the first wave of the dreadful sea waves finally set off and flooded in, close to the sandy beach of the small fishing village.

Perhaps, soon the mighty waves would entirely submerge this small village!

When the act of Long Wan'er discarding her Dantian came into sight, suddenly a blue vein stuck out from Long Mo'ran's forehead and once again he tightened his grip on his long sword.

How couldn't he think before that she could really abandon her Dantian and that also for the sake of this masked guy? Hateful, too abhorrent!

Shua!

Immediately, he pointed his sword directly at her and while holding a gloomy tone, said : "Very well then, your success had enraged me, you all four people, don't even think of leaving here alive today!"

He swept his cold and dense eyes over Long Wan'er, Ye Feng, Shu Shu and the collapsed masked youth, one by one.

After spitting out a mouthful of fresh blood, Long Wan'er's delicate body had already weakened and now also started crumbling. In addition, her complexion also suddenly turned pale as she listened to these words of her father.

Long Mo'ran had really reneged on his promise!

When he raised his sword, a cold look peeped out from behind his face in this heavy rain, making everyone around including all martial artists hit by a sudden bad feeling.

Looking at his this temperament, everyone felt that he really was extremely annoyed and if they continue staying there continuously staring at them, then

they might suffer severe consequences as being an innocent bystander! In addition, constantly increasingly violent waves were hitting the shore nearby the beach continuously and it seemed that they would soon engulf the whole village, indirectly forcing them to set a firm resolve.

Must leave this place!

Because, even a huge bustling excitement, could never be compared with their own precious lives.

Immediately, some people ran fast to go outside the village and soon their stature twinkled and disappeared. Then after, one after another, everyone present in the village started departing gradually.

“He really reneged on his promise?”

Ye Feng snorted lightly as he had already correctly guessed this act of Long Mo’ran before, so this act didn’t panic him a bit. The time when Long Mo’ran forced his daughter to self-discard her Dantian, simultaneously he also had made the worst plan. Even if the opposite party went back from his words, similarly he also had a surefire plan to escape from here.

Under the rainstorm, wearing a black grimace face mask, his stature appeared incredibly calm, at the same time, formed a striking contrast with the other martial artists, who by now panicked and immediately started fleeing from the village.

Snapped!

All of a sudden his stature moved and he cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique towards Long Wan’er and softly grabbed her and drew her gently towards his side, close to him.

Her completely soaked and weak body couldn’t withstand it and was immediately pulled back by him and then was wrapped by his arms.

At this moment, she opened her beautiful eyes but didn’t have the strength left to make any movement. Now she had completely become an ordinary person, even weaker than any average person as if had a serious illness.

She leant against his bosom, without looking at her father even once. Then she

raised her face and stretched out her hand since she wanted to cast off his face mask.

Anyway, Long Mo'ran had reneged on his promise, that meant they were going to die any moment, but before that happened, she wanted to look at Ye Feng's face and engrave it deep inside her heart

“Don't worry, just leave everything to me.”

Ye Feng said softly. Then all of a sudden, his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring lit up brightly. Even in this torrential downpour, this beam of bright light looked especially glorious and very eye catching.

A faint trace of mysterious airflow gradually flowed out from his Ring and entered directly into Long Wan'er's body. This Ring once again played a very important role for him.

Now, within her body, it gradually started congealing out Core Dan!

Her beautiful eyes opened up as soon as she felt a sudden change taking place within her body. Holding some doubts and some strain, her hand gently touched Ye Feng's mask and caressed his masked cheek, however, couldn't lift open his mask.

Just now, because of self-discarding her Dantian, her body had suffered enormous damage, making her unable to hold on anymore and soon her beautiful eyes closed and she lost her consciousness.

In this sweet torrential downpour, her long, slender and white hand powerlessly slid down, but a happy smile was still hanging on her adorable face.

Ye Feng put out his hand and tightly gripped her hand, suddenly a look of determination flashed on his face under the mask. This girl discarded her Dantian and gave up her Cultivation just for the sake of him, so now he didn't have any hesitation left.

In his lifetime, no matter how the future would be henceforth, even if extreme dangers or hellish difficulties, still he wanted to take her along and walk through them together!

Under the effect of mysterious airflow of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, finally a

complete Core Dan was congealed out within her body and this way, she moved one step closer to step into the world of Immortal Cultivators.

“Die!”

Long Mo’ran’s complexion was still dense, however, at this instant, his sword again flung and his footsteps made a long-range raid towards them lightly, making his simple white and long gown flutter in the storm.

In this torrential downpour, he and his sword were in great synchronisation as if they were one and were rapidly approaching Long Wan’er and Ye Feng in order to stab them straight away!

Shu Shu knew that the situation was extremely bad, but actually, she couldn’t do anything. Besides, in this downpour, her line of sight was also totally disrupted, so all she could do was just to watch helplessly a blurred figure approaching them, at a lightning fast speed.

Long Mo’ran’s sword was getting closer to them, wearing an icy-cold brightness along with it!

One hundred meters.

Eighty meters.

Fifty meters!

“It’s finally the time, the body of immortal arteries, open up!”

Ye Feng roared loudly in his heart and instantly condensed his remaining Zhenqi, though it wasn’t much left in his body. Afterwards, in an instant, he transported it into the seven hidden acupunctures points present within her body. Her body, which had stored almost two decades of spiritual energy, suddenly got activated and just like how a tide generally rose, similarly, it rushed forth to enter the middle part of her Core Dan.

Zi Zi Zi!

Her body’s meridians soon started brimming with the Zhenqi produced by the transformation of her Core Dan, resulting in a dramatic change which might soon arouse the resonance of the surrounding nature!

Zhenqi was originally the bridge that used to connect an Immortal Cultivator

with the outside world.

When the body of immortal arteries was carrying out Open Hole Process, it needed more and more intense spiritual energy, which could definitely trigger nature's resonance and in such a thunderstorm weather, the effect was even more obvious.

As the spiritual energy condensed, the manic air flow suddenly burst out from her body!

Seeing this, Long Mo'ran all at once turned paled with a big shock.

What kind of terrifying energy it was, actually it was so violent? Moreover, she discarded her Dantian just a few moment ago, so how could she still have such a formidable strength left in her body?

Long Mo'ran 's complexion turned even denser than ever. Today, he must get rid of all these people, or else it would become hard to erase the hatred he had in his heart!

His graceful stature wrapped in a white gown flashed in the rain and instantly arrived in front of those two people.

At this moment, he condensed his whole body's inner qi in the tip of his sword and flung it, which instantly produced a sword qi out of the blue and it advanced toward Long Wan'er to stab her in the chest. This sword was good enough to penetrate her heart, making her unable to survive even for a single moment!

However, when he was about to succeed, right then, a circle of strong whirlpool energy burst out from her body, making the wild and fierce airflow immediately unify together with a powerful and vertical hurricane tornado, on the top of her head!

Scoffs!

A violent lightning flashed and declined from the horizon and instantly merged with the hurricane tornado and changed the countenance of the world at once!

Finally started, the spiritual energy which was condensed within Long Wan'er's body, started to resonate with the nature, however, such eruption of resonance would continuously arise seven times in a row!

As a result, the attack of Long Mo'ran's sword tip was immediately blown away by the hurricane tornado, even his Sword qi failed to move forward even a half inch.

“Go to hell!”

Relying on his more than 50 years of Cultivation, he wanted to force a breakthrough, so he wielded his sword again towards her to chop her down, holding a very gloomy expression on his face just like a devil.

The next moment, a Hurricane Tornado broke out once again!

But Long Mo'ran wasn't the slightest bit prepared for it, hence in a flash, the violent hurricane tornado rolled him up into it along with his sword and then threw both of them together to the high altitude!

Chapter 172 -> Retribution

If it wasn't for such weather, Long Wan'er's body containing immortal arteries wouldn't have shown such a terrific effect after its activation. However now, the storm had turned very violent while the spiritual energy also shook off the fetters and had produced an extremely strong resonance all of a sudden.

In the world, the power of nature was the most fearful one, even a formidable Immortal Cultivator couldn't dare easily raise his weapon against it, not to mention Long Mo'ran.

Once he approached close to Long Wan'er, immediately was drawn into the hurricane tornado and then the whole person was rolled up and thrown high into the sky. The white gown figure, such as candles in the wind, quickly disappeared without leaving any trace.

Under the cover of spiritual energy, the tornado which arose from the centre of Long Wan'er's body, finally calmed down, making her long skirt float in the air gently, just like a fairy!

Although she was in an unconscious state, still was constantly transforming the spiritual energy into Zhenqi within her body, to promote her cultivation.

A burst after burst, several eruptions spread from her body, altogether seven times in succession and it happened to just correspond to her seven hidden accupunture points present within her body. Each time one of her accupunture points was unlocked, it caused a hurricane with a more extended circle on top of her head.

Ye Feng had foreknowledge, carrying Taiji Palace's uncouncious masked youth along with completely drenched and shivering Shu Shu, he left the small fishing village immediately and ran one kilometre outside the village in the woods.

Seeing that the situation was far from good, other martial artists also scattered in all directions to flee!

"What's the matter?"

Both middle-aged men of God Fist Gate, who had 40 years of Cultivation,

didn't notice anything until this time. But when they realized the situation was extremely bad, one of them immediately rushed out of the house.

Originally, they were personally guarding Luo Feng's security, even if there was a little sound or movement outside, they still didn't dare to leave him arbitrarily. However now, the noise caused by the hurricane was noticeably loud, along with the tides rising wave after wave, making both of them feel surprised and alarmed.

Therefore one of them went outside the house, but instantly noticed the edge of the hurricane tornado right against his face. He didn't have enough time to respond and was drawn completely into it.

"Ah—"

Panic-stricken, he shouted loudly, but soon disappeared, his stature was instantly carried away to somewhere.

"What's going on?"

Another person heard him yelling and felt a cold shiver in his heart. Promptly, he ran to the second floor's window and looked outside, however shockingly he saw a vertical tornado soaring in the sky, rapidly approaching, making him totally unable to react and was thunderstruck on the spot.

What was this?!

It wasn't strange having a tornado in such weather, but even if there was a tornado, it shouldn't emerge in this small fishing village, it was quite shocking.

He quickly collected his mind, then looked toward the central part of the village, where he actually saw a young girl wearing a long skirt, was quietly floating in the midair, connecting the mighty hurricane tornado, as if it was centered on her and was continuously spreading.

Bang!

Just when he was in a shocked state, a sound of gunfire rang.

"Not good!"

His heart skipped a beat, immediately he turned around, but instantaneously his facial expression turned pale.

Actually what he saw was already unconscious Luo Feng was almost roasted to the coke, the fresh blood was also gurgling out of his temple at this moment. Actually, someone took advantage of the opportunity to open fire at him, making him fall into the lap of death again.

Who was it!

Luo Feng died, as a personal guard, it was absolutely difficult for him to run away from this blame. Now, even if he returned to God Fist Gate, he was bound to face a severe punishment.

However before he could respond, the hurricane tornado broke out once again and spread about half the size of this small village. The intense wind pressure blew away the house he was in, even the trees were uprooted and rolled up to high altitude!

“Ah—”

Panic-stricken, that man screamed out loud just like how his partner did before and then was also thrown into the sky.

All those martial artists, who couldn't escape from the village by now, were soon caught in the hurricane just like those two men. Along with various bricks, rooftiles, plants, sand and junk items, they also started dancing within the tornado.

The lightning and thunder were still going on, the weather near this small village was constantly getting worse. However, in this chaos, the NSA's Thunder had some people already assigned to carry out the evacuation of villagers. Indeed it was a very right choice he made, or else the people's death and casualties were hard to count on fingers.

A sort of judgement day scene!

A long time, after a series of seven violent eruptions, the hurricane tornado gradually dissipated, leaving behind the entire village in complete disorder. At this moment, trapped in the hurricane, Long Mo'ran waited for his people who had completely disappeared, meanwhile also noticed that there were several houses which had completely collapsed.

Moreover, Ye Feng also waited for a moment, then immediately took a stride

and went to the field. There he gave support to Long Wan'er and hugged her in his bosom.

“Nan Fang!”

At this instant, he proliferated his Soul Search Technique and found that actually under a collapsed house, Nan Fang was buried, which made him somewhat dumbfounded.

This guy was indeed quite tactful, while the village was trapped in a chaotic situation, he took advantage of this confusion and quietly sneaked into the house to grab an opportunity and fire a shot to kill Luo Feng, retribution! But unfortunately, he didn't get time to escape and was pressed under the collapsed house.

However, there still remained a last trace of Zhenqi in Ye Feng's body, so at this time, he again stirred it up and congealed out the golden Zhenqi sword, so that he could use it to cut the stone into pieces under which Nan Fang was suppressed.

“Ha, ha ha ha!”

Even though he was badly crushed under a huge stone and was spitting out blood, he was still laughing out loud after getting rescued.

Finally, he was all relaxed, not only he took revenge, but also removed his Clan's unwanted scum personally!

Father, mother, younger sister, younger brother

Are you all right over there?

In this torrential rain, Nan Fang laughed his heart out since he couldn't control his overflowing happiness. However, along with a smile, there were also two lines of tears rolling down his face. Gone people could never come back, even though he had avenged today, still, he had no way to see his family members again.

“Leave here quickly.”

Ye Feng could clearly understand his current feelings, however now was not a good time to express his emotion. Therefore, he kicked him so as to kick him out of his memories and regrets : “You should be hiding in the magic array, currently

our state is not good, running into an enemy again would be the worst encounter now.”

“Ok.....”

Nan Fang recovered at once and felt that whatever Ye Feng said was right.

Shu Shu, wearing Ye Feng’s black jacket, quickly ran over to have a look at Long Wan’er who was still unconcious, and then anxiously asked: “How is she?”

“She is all right.

Ye Feng said gently to comfort her: “We first find a place to hide.

After saying that, he looked at the masked youth of the Taiji Palace who was not very far away.

“I’m going to take him along with me, walk quickly.”

Nan Fang stepped forward to support that unconscious boy, then he looked back and saw around the distant seaside, there was a huge group of people who were running everywhere since they knew that they had to immediately leave this place.

In this stormy weather, people’s vision had been reduced several times, visibility was extremely low! However, it didn’t have any affect on Ye Feng’s Soul Search Technique’s sensation.

“That white bearded old man of God Fist Gate’s has come back.”

Ye Feng’s heart felt a cold shiver, he immediately held Long Wan’er from her waist to pick her up and then along with the people, he left that village.

.....

“Nandou God Fist”, Xu Xiaoyu was burning with fury right now.

He went out to seek for the masked man, however actually he didn’t find any figure, how could this make him satisfied? Such a talented man Luo Feng was, but he was thrown into this condition. If he didn’t take revenge from his enemy, then how could he maintain God Fist Gate’s prestige from now on!

Leading the people, he returned to the village fianlly, but even from far away, he could see the situation in the village didn’t seem quite right.

When they arrived outside the village, they saw the whole village was upside down, which blown away their minds and they were glued to the spot in astonishment, while their jaws dropped. It was truly unbelievable, what would have happened here?

Bang.

A figure suddenly fell from the sky, directly in front of Xu Xiaoyu.

Xu Xiaoyu lowered his head and instantly his blue veins popped out on his forehead, wasn't that Luo Feng? Moreover, his temple also had a muzzle, what was all this about? Didn't he assign two guards to protect him personally, then how could such a thing happen?

The surrounding lightning, thunder, rainstorm, all were constantly rising, even the mighty sea waves were getting more and more dangerous now.

Perhaps because of the hurricane tornadoes, finally, a burst of around ten meters high tsunami rolled up towards the coastal region of the small fishing village to engulf everything

Chapter 173 -> Head of the Clan returns alive

The East China Sea coast soon set off the monstrous and mighty sea waves everywhere. Consequently, several small island reefs were suddenly submerged in it, while the already destroyed small fishing village also welcomed the tsunami with its open hands. Simultaneously, the entire coastline also rose a few meters up and became a vast body of seawater, full of mighty waves, surging continuously.

Xu Xiaoyu, along with the people of God Fist Gate, quickly left the coast while carrying Luo Feng's corpse along.

Towards the northern side of the village, several martial artists gathered there in the woods. While looking at the raging waves sweeping outside the woods, they started talking in whispers about the incident which happened just now in the village and which was really extremely mind-baffling.

How could Long Wan'er actually trigger that kind of hurricane tornado, which even engulfed Long Mo'ran and carried him away somewhere without leaving any trace?

Moreover, as for the masked man, while facing Long Mo'ran, didn't he have any fear?

Long Mo'ran's personality was already publicly known for being indifferent, so there was nobody who could dare talk about it much. However his strength was also similarly recognized and was already considered as the most formidable figure in the entire martial arts world.

But even so, that masked man wasn't the slightest bit afraid of him. Wasn't it really strange?

Everyone looked around, but neither could find Ye Feng's figure nor could his people, this thing made him appear even more mysterious.

"Returning to the county in such monstrous waves, besides, without having 40-50 years of Cultivation, still thinking of going to the sea means purely courting death."

“But tonight the big Coral King is

“Nonsense, you want your small life or this big Coral King? Roll back with me.”

Continuously similar conversation was going on among the martial artists while looking at the constantly rising coastline and it was true to have this feeling of being “powerless and incompetent”

“After all, where was Long Mo’ran carried away?”

When Xu Xiaoyu heard these rumours, his mood was finally lifted up. He thought that it was the best thing happened ever and that was Long Mo’ran was finally killed, because God Fist Gate wasn’t on good terms with him.

Unfortunately, his thought didn’t become a reality.

“The head of our Clan has come back, he is right there!”

Among the Long people, Long Qing had very sharp eyes, he quickly noticed him and pointed at him who was not far away from the sea shore.

Long Zi accordingly also gazed towards the pointed direction and really saw a white gown silhouette, swimming all the way from the sea and was about to approach the shore finally, wasn’t that Long Mo’ran?

A group of people ran hastily to support him.

The head of the Clan had returned alive!

This was kind of a good news for them since they had also started thinking that in case Long Mo’ran died like this, then, what would they do. However, fortunately, even after getting badly drawn into that dreadful hurricane tornado and then after being thrown to such high-altitude, he still survived, such a powerful person he was.

Long Zi and Long Qing supported him and finally brought him back to the shore. However, he was in an exhausted state, accompanied with a huge embarrassment which was clearly visible on his face. In addition, his body was completely soaked, hair was all messy and shockingly, his sword had also disappeared from his scabbard, which was hanging around his waist!

“Head, your sword?”

Long Zi's complexion immediately changed, Long Mo'ran's sword was regarded as the top grade in sharp weapon's category. Moreover, it wasn't only belonged to the superior level in Long Clan, but was also treated as a symbol of status!

"Hmm."

Long Mo'ran's dense face which was completely covered in water droplets, exposed a look of unforgettable hatred. However now, to avoid this embarrassing situation, he waved : "All return, start the preparation to grab the big Coral King tonight!"

"Head, such a big storm"

Long Zi somewhat hesitated, this kind of catastrophic situation was there, still, he was wanted to return and grab the big Coral King. Then in that case, perhaps, lots of Long people would die facing this disaster!

Confronting this sort of natural disaster, even the martial artist were totally powerless.

"I am the head of the Clan or you are?"

Long Mo'ran snorted coldly, then, floated away.

Long Zi shook his head since he saw himself standing in a very helpless position. However, he was forced to give up. Leading his Clan's people, he immediately followed him.

In such a heart-chilling storm, Long Mo'ran wanted to sneak into the seabed and snatch away the big Coral King. Only those martial artists who had over fifty years of formidable Cultivation and at the same time were well prepared, could only think of returning safely.

And among the entire Long people present over there right now, apart from Long Mo'ran, there were just two more such elders who had such level of Cultivation. However, the people of God Fist Gate, Tang Clan, Heavenly Sword Palace and other martial arts school also had soaring Cultivation and were extraordinary warriors as well.

"It seems the intention of our Clan's head is to deploy the rest of us to

constrain the other strong parties

Long Zi thought about this and felt a little discomfort in his heart. As the matter stood, this thing would surely cause lots of sacrifices. If he really wanted to plunder the big Coral King, then, then in that case, if the ordinary martial artists of Long Clan stood with their ordinary weapons, against the martial arts experts in order to block them, how could those experts show mercy on them?

However there was no way out, Long Mo'ran still held the position of the Clan's head, therefore, Long Zi had to listen to his words at all cost.

...

At this moment, on the other side, Hummer H2, which had started from Yanjing, once again broke down on the road.

"After all, what's the matter with this car? Why isn't it getting started?"

Inside the car, Ye Wentian was all flustered and exasperated. Under normal circumstances, he would have already reached the East China Sea by now, however, he took the car, which made him still stuck in the halfway!

"Grandpa, don't be anxious."

Although Su Menghan repeatedly comforted him, but actually, she was smiling proudly in her heart. This way, she should be able to get some more time for Ye Feng to carry out his work in the East China Sea freely, right?

"I'm not anxious."

Ye Wentian started fuming with anger : "Little girl, you did this deliberately, didn't you?"

"And how is that?"

Su Menghan immediately put on a look of suffering from injustice and being miserable on her pretty face.

He saw that and all of a sudden became depressed and completely speechless. While facing his own granddaughter-in-law, he really couldn't vent his temper at all!

.....

Similarly, at this time, on the third side, away from Xiangshan County, outside the nearest airport, Xiao Yue, wearing a red skirt, was sitting in a Red Olympic-styled sports car, while her beautiful black eyebrows were tightly wrinkled.

She couldn't think why her younger sister Xiao Qi, who had casually inquired about the whereabouts of the masked man, would actually book a flight ticket early in the morning, to fly over there immediately.

"It's not good, I must not let Xiao Qi contact him again."

By now, Xiao Yue's heart had taken a decision, throughout her life she had always very much despised those men who straddle the fence.

Her gorgeous eyes glanced at nearby parked a silver Mercedes-SLS AMG sports car. Even though Shanghai City was an international metropolis, but still this car appeared a very eye-catching model there. And now it's being here was, even more, attracting people's attention.

The person sitting in that car was Wang Shaodong.

Wearing sunglasses, Wang Shaodong threw a smile at Xiao Yue. Actually, he was somewhat enjoying the people's shocking vision outside the airport.

"Hey, handsome."

While departing from the airport, two very fashionable women, having top-notch charm and looks, greeted Wang Shaodong. On looking at their appearance, it seemed that apparently, both ladies wanted to hook up with him.

Unfortunately, he still wanted to get his hands on Xiao Yue, so he couldn't accept their greeting, thus he completely ignored them.

Those two women turned their eyes and looked at Xiao Yue sitting in a red Audi car nearby. Her matured appearance, as well as her pretty face without makeup all of a sudden made them feel inferior to her and they hastily departed.

Although they were not ugly, even in this crowd, they were really attracting people's attention. However, if compared with Xiao Yue, the disparity between them was noticeably enormous.

Wang Shaodong wanted to win over Xiao Yue and he had the valid reason for this. Since he knew that she wasn't the kind who used to rely on make-up, to

disguise herself as a beautiful woman.

“Xiao Qi and Lin Shiqing want to come over, it seems that the identity of that masked man is really very susceptible.”

Actually, she didn't care about the outside situation, rather while holding her soft cheeks, she tightly wrinkled her eyebrows and indulged herself in a deep thinking mode.

Obviously, she knew Lin Shiqing but hadn't seen her for a long time.

Suddenly, she turned a little curious, when Wang Shaodong would see Lin Shiqing, the first beauty of Yanjing, who knew what kind of expression he would have then? Certainly, she would have a glance to see his expression. However, what a pity, Lin Shiqing was such a woman, who couldn't be seduced by a young guy of Shanghai like him. She hoped that quite soon, he would know himself a bit more.....

Chapter 174 -> Iceberg Islands

Approaching noon, a group of five people consisting Ye Feng holding Long Wan'er, along with Shu Shu, Nan Fang and the unconscious masked youth, was moving ahead, bravely facing the rainstorm to arrive at Xiangshan County, a southern village.

As for Ye Wentian and Lin Shiqing's soon arrival there, Ye Feng didn't know anything about it so far.

"This place is around more than ten kilometres away from the coastline and it seemed that perhaps the villagers have been already evacuated."

While stepping into the village, Ye Feng felt a strange silence, so he immediately proliferated his Soul Search Technique and sensed that within a radar of hundred meters of range, there wasn't even a shadow of a single person.

"It seems that this storm is really unusual, perhaps now, only the NSA people exactly know the current situation.

Nan Fang said in a lower voice.

"Hmm, let's first take a rest."

Ye Feng nodded, again he swept around and found a relatively clean building nearby, then made them advance towards it.

Since they took the advantage of the tsunami at that time or else they could never get here. Now these five people must hide from the rain and take a rest therapy.

These five people's condition couldn't be considered well.

Ye Feng was stabbed by a sword directly in the chest, that one move used by Long Wuren 'Flowers fall, autumn frost', made his chest's meridians completely freeze. So, if he didn't hurriedly take a rest therapy, most likely, it would leave behind a residual effect.

As for Long Wan'er, she just went through the process of self-discarding

Dantian. Although she had already condensed the Core Dan within her body and had become an Immortal Cultivator now, but actually was still weak and stupor, definitely cannot continue to be drenched.

And that Taiji Palace's masked youth, since his thigh was pierced by Ye Feng's Real Thunder Sword qi, hence he lost his consciousness straightaway. He was now the most serious one among them. Besides, he rescued Shu Shu's life at such a crucial moment, naturally, Ye Feng could never throw him down no matter what.

Nan Fang was originally all right, but during the assassination of Luo Feng, he was actually pressed under a collapsed house, which caused a hematocele in his chest, because of which he was suffering from a little shortness of breath.

Regarding Shu Shu, she had always been a feeble woman, since now she was in a dripping wet state, therefore she finally caught a cold and fever, along with a frequent cough.

They continued entering the house in succession to avoid the rainstorm.

"Everyone, find your own room and take rest."

Ye Feng continued : "Nan Fang, you take care of this guy, awhile later, I see him again.

However these words left Nan Fang a bit puzzled, Ye Feng could take rest while holding Long Wan'er in his arms, however, he had to take care of an unconscious boy while resting

"Wait a minute, Mo Jiuge"

At this moment, Shu Shu suddenly opened her mouth wearing a bit troubled look. She thought that presently everyone was like a huge burden on him, therefore, she wanted to try her best to help the crowd in dealing with their wounds.

In Long Clan, she was often responsible for such things, like preparing medicinal herbs, dressing, healing and so on, she was relatively an expert in this field.

"Call me Ye Feng."

Ye Feng removed his face mask and threw a smile at her : “Aunt, you take care of your own first.”

Shu Shu and Nan Fang saw that he took off his mask and a very handsome face appeared before them immediately, which left them surprised for a moment.

Ye Feng!

Now Ye Feng had really started trusting Nan Fang along with Shu Shu, hence no longer concealed his identity.

“Now you people can feel relieved and rest peacefully, if there will be any danger, I’ll alert you right away.”

After finished saying, he turned around and went upstairs still embracing Long Wan’er.

There were several rooms in the building, along with several bathrooms, however, bedrooms were relatively few. Nan Fang and Shu Shu soon found their own rooms. Then after trying a bit, they also found that there was still hot water

Ye Feng also got a room, he went inside it and locked the door. There was no hurry to treat his wounds immediately, hence he decided to look after Long Wan’er first.

They already had a very intimate relationship, so naturally, they didn’t need to mind it too much.

Keeping aside the distracting thoughts, he stripped her down to clean her body. After that, he went to the bathroom to look for a clean towel, then wiped and dried her snow white and tender body. Finally, he gently put her down on the bed and covered her with a quilt.

Subsequently, he threw their wet clothes into the washing machine, so as to dry them first before anything.

Thereafter, he went to the bathroom again, to begin his rest therapy.

Just a battle had entirely drained away his whole body’s Zhenqi. If he didn’t rest a bit now to restore his Zhenqi, then he couldn’t cast out Holy Cure Technique.....

The rainstorm still continued, there were still numerous martial artists continuously running back from the beach. However, radically, nobody could notice that there were still some people taking shelter in the village. In any case, these five people continued resting and started recovering gradually.

.....

On the sea surface of the East China Sea, the storm was continuously getting stronger.

Two military helicopters, from a distance, were circling around the storm. Thunder was sitting in one of them, carrying a telescope, continuously surveying the scene around the surface of the East China Sea.

According to the report of Special Meteorological Observatory, the area nearby sea would suffer a sudden abnormal weather, which aroused the attention of the NSA. Since Li Feng was in a seriously injured state, so all the matters concerned with the East China Sea were taken over by Thunder, coordinating with the higher authorities to carry out an investigation.

“Captain, the meteorological observatory has transmitted the latest image.”

Next to Thunder, a fully armed adjutant lifted the image receiver in his hand and displayed it to Thunder.

Thunder immediately put down his telescope, then holding a solemn expression, he slightly frowned and lowered his head to look at it.

That was a weather chart, places which were only 20 nautical miles away from the sea coast, had a white and shiny strange big piece. Moreover, it had a kind of mystical strength which cut off the detection of meteorological satellites.

“What is that?”

Thunder tightly wrinkled his eyebrows, forming a huge frown and then immediately ordered the helicopter to change the direction at once, by carefully avoiding the intensive areas of the thunder clouds, while constantly keeping watch at the direction of the wind and its speed.

Two helicopters respectively from two directions flew towards the white region shown in the weather chart. But since, the sky was very cloudy, so in this

bad weather, operating helicopters meant absolutely risking their lives.

However, the NSA had always been in the action, by continuously dealing with the God of death. Besides, they had experienced several severely dangerous circumstances, which was much riskier than the current one, but they never shrunk back.

At this time, only the NSA people were in action nearby the seacoast. Besides them, a huge number of martial artists having profound Cultivation, were also there in order to rob the big Coral King. While the rest of the people were evacuated by the NSA in the morning so as to ensure the minimum casualties.

Two helicopters were howling over the sea, gradually getting close to the destination.

The more they were getting closer to the white area, the fiercer the lightning storm was turning accordingly, causing more difficulty for the helicopters to get close to the destination.

“Ahead, there is a turbulent flow, we must change the direction!”

The pilot’s voice passed on.

“Wait a second, move ahead a bit more!”

Actually, suddenly he found something, therefore, he immediately adjusted the focus of his precision telescope to see the clearer picture of the scene, even far from the sea.

Actually, a group of iceberg islands surprisingly emerged out of thin air on the sea surface!

No, it didn’t emerge out of thin air, rather there was some kind of ultra-low temperature, which had converted the water near the sea into a huge piece of ice, eventually formally such huge iceberg islands. The sky over these iceberg islands was covered up with the mysterious energy, which was around the size of the whole island. Probably the size of this white area was still slowly expanding in the meteorological observatory.

“God, what kind of strength does this thing want to achieve?”

Thunderstruck, Thunder shouted out loud!

“Captain, can it be related with the East China Sea’s fairy which was rumoured in the martial arts world?

His adjutant similarly tightly wrinkled his eyebrows and made a conjecture.

“Temporarily, I still don’t know.”

Then he immediately ordered wearing a solemn expression: “Helicopters will return first, then, quickly arrange a yacht, we’ll attempt to register from the sea!”

Presently, the environment around the East China Sea’s surface, especially in those areas which were closer to this island, was extremely bad. Hearing the howling from the central part, it seemed that there must be the 16th level typhoon. Still carrying out an investigation in such a dangerous weather certainly involved an enormous risk.

However, not advancing there was out of the question for the NSA. Because, if by any chance, this iceberg island expanded much more than expected, then, only God would know what would be its consequences!

After a perfect preparation, the most equipped squad of the NSA took the specially-made speed boat from the seashore and proceeded towards the mystical iceberg islands, penetrating through the storm

Chapter 175 -> Imparting Immortal Techniques

Time rolled on, Ye Feng rested for more than two hours and finally restored almost more than half of his Zhenqi in his Dantian. Afterwards, he immediately cast Holy Cure Technique on his chest to cure the injury caused by the sword.

The second layer of Romantic Sword Technique – Flowers fall, autumn frost, could make a person's meridians immediately frost, surprisingly its effect was also pretty good, even Ye Feng was forced to spend some time to recover.

If he didn't guess wrong, then the third layer of this sword technique would certainly have a much more intense freezing effect. After all, "Frost" word was used in its name, but unfortunately, Ye Feng hadn't yet experienced it.

"Considering Long Mo'ran's Cultivation, Ye Feng feared that he couldn't die that easily. In that case, he might come to compete for the big Coral King today in the evening, perhaps once again"

He thought in his heart that he should wait till the evening to set out again. However, before that, he must do a good preparation first, to ensure his safety.

Suddenly his Soul Search Technique detected something and he felt that unconscious Long Wan'er finally woke up.

Consequently, he got up and immediately ran towards her, where he noticed that her both eyes were open. now However she was still hiding under a quilt, probably she was in a shocked state and was like completely unable to understand what the current situation was.

Wasn't she in the small fishing village when she had discarded her Dantian? Long Mo'ran reneged on his promise, so didn't he kill them all? Then why was she lying here like this in such a room?

She could clearly feel that the meridians within her body were flowing with a very strange force and her former practised inner qi seemed to be a bit different now. However this strange strength wasn't running according to a certain specified line, instead, it was following a chaotic way, aimlessly flowing in her meridians just like the beginning of the world in general.

Although she had already carried out 'Open Hole Process' through her body of immortal arteries and she also had more than 10 years of cultivation, but still since she hadn't actually practised any Immortal Technique so far, so naturally, her Zhenqi would act like this.

Not good.

She suddenly realized that her body seemed to have nothing on it and was lying completely naked?

All of a sudden she panicked, wanted to get up quickly and examine what exactly happened after all!

"Wan'er, are you awake? Do not you worry, it's me."

Ye Feng ran upto her and said in a soft voice, then he supported her stature and embraced her in his bosom : "Don't worry, everything is all right."

At this instant, her beautiful eyes opened widely and saw that Ye Feng was similarly totally naked just like her, making her cheeks suddenly become all red.

"What happened?"

However, all of a sudden she responded as she thought that certainly, something strange happened in the village regarding which she didn't know yet, which might have forced Long Mo'ran let them off safely. Otherwise, as per her opinion, it was absolutely impossible for them to escape the murderous intention and violent treachery of her father.

It was natural to think like that, anyway, now she was with Ye Feng, hence nothing mattered to her anymore.

Her hand made an effort and suddenly pulled him into the bed!

Ye Feng was helpless, this young girl, how could she still be so aggressive?

On the bed, under a quilt, wrapping his arm around her soft and smooth stature, Ye Feng slowly narrated the whole incident which had taken place in that small fishing village, however, it took him a lot of time: "..... So, now you are an Immortal Cultivator, as for the previous Long Clan's Core Techniques, you can't use them anymore.

"Immortal Cultivator, who?"

Her elusive eyes revealed a trace of surprise.

The more she listened to the words said by Ye Feng, the more she felt inconceivable, was she really the legendary body of immortal arteries? Did her body really have seven hidden acupuncture points to store a huge lot of spiritual energy? Did this spiritual energy really erupted from her body and caused a huge storm resonance, which later on produced several hurricane tornados and blew away Long Mo'ran to somewhere unknown?

These were not important issues, the most important thing was did this world really have Immortal Cultivator?

She believed that Ye Feng wouldn't deceive her!

If such being the case, then it wasn't at all unusual and surprising if Ye Feng could cast Invisibility and release a fireball. So, it seemed that these were Immortal Techniques.

"Now, just like you, can I also cast Invisibility and release a fireball?"

She asked that being a little sceptical.

"Well once you comprehend them, then certainly you can."

Ye Feng smiled as he clung onto her and kissed her on her face fiercely, then moved towards her ear : "Come, now I teach you.

Literally speaking, Immortal Cultivation was similar to the martial arts Cultivation, even the use of Zhenqi and inner qi was almost the same except for minor differences. He believed that considering Long Wan'er's talent, she could easily comprehend Immortal Cultivation in no time.

If compared with Su Menghan, obviously Long Wan'er's foundation was much more practical and profound. She already had 12 years and 6 months of Cultivation during this starting phase, which was probably higher than Ye Feng's current ten years of Cultivation!

In the ancient tomb, since Ye Feng had no alternative, so he quietly stole away her spiritual energy equal to her one year of Cultivation.

If he wanted to impart Immortal Cultivation to her, then certainly he must start with Core Techniques. However, he thought that better he should teach

her Star Tomb Tactics first.

Although he knew a plenty of Immortal Cultivation Techniques, however, he was most familiar with Star Tomb Tactics only. If he practised its Core Techniques, then absolutely nothing would go wrong. However, what most essential issue was all those Immortal Techniques he was familiar with, needed Star Tomb Tactics' practice first, to become capable of using them.

In the world of the Immortals, before achieving 20 years of Cultivation, there were several common Immortal Techniques, such as Invisibility, Red Inflammation, Holy Cure Technique and so on. But after 20 years of Cultivation, there remained just a few common Immortal Techniques. Talking about Su Feiying, her Immortal Techniques were mostly revolving around Star Tomb Tactics.

Several Immortal Techniques which were generally used by the high-level Immortal Cultivators, were of various kinds, so two persons could never be exactly the same based on their skills.

Regarding the operation of Core Techniques, Long Wan'er already had ample experience, because of which very quickly she grasped Star Tomb Tactics and also finally started the orderly revolution of her Zhenqi within her body, the small revolution, the big revolution, every moment her Cultivation kept on growing.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Invisibility, Red Inflammation, Holy Cure Technique, immediately all these techniques were one by one imparted by Ye Feng to her. However, the point was, how long she would take to understand her own talent.

He thought that in this East China Sea's flood, he would teach her Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique, so that even if she got trapped in the sea, she wouldn't get drowned so easily and could hold on like this for at least one or two days.

Long Wan'er displayed these Immortal Techniques one after another to record them down in her memory. Her snow-white body, just like an octopus, looked very soft and greasy on his body. Naughtily she smiled: "Now I separate myself from Long Clan, but then you, if you ever dare to abandon me, I'll straightaway bring your identity as an Immortal cultivator into the light, hee hee.

He already knew that she was just cracking a joke, hence wickedly said: “If you dare speak it out, then I’ll grab your buttocks and will beat it to the pulp.

“Scoundrel, you dare hit me!”

Her cheeks turned red and she immediately got up from the bed and sat on his waist, however then, suddenly she thought something : “Yes, aunt”

“Relax, she’s all right and is also here.”

Ye Feng comforted her, then, swallowed his saliva, this little girl was really daring, how smoothly she slipped away and bravely sat on his waist, still not afraid of his beastly nature which might eat her up completely any moment?

He was just waiting for the right time to teach this little girl and make her become aware of its ferocity. But it seemed that if he would wait for the right time, she would continue tempting him all day long. Not even the Ironman could bear it, ah!

However, at present, the crucial point was he hadn’t told her the most important thing yet.

Those who attained ten years of Immortal Cultivation could easily congeal out Soul Search Technique, which was again the biggest disparity between the Immortal Cultivation and the martial arts Cultivation! Once she mastered this technique, she could easily grasp the surrounding all sounds and movements, then she wouldn’t need to hide from any ambush

“Next, I teach you a special ability.”

Ye Feng pushed the little girl’s body down since he didn’t want to let her play dirty tricks with him, at the same time, he started explaining the function of Soul Search Technique.

The more she listened to the explanation, the more amazed she was : “What, you cheat people, how a person can be like a radar!”

Chapter 176 -> Control a bit

However, Long Wan'er couldn't believe Ye Feng's words, because in this world, having such a strange technique like Soul Search Technique was indeed hard to believe.

Just like a radar, one could also clearly sense everything present in the surrounding. Moreover, if everyone in the world of the Immortals was Immortal Cultivator, then couldn't it be said that this technique wasn't secret over there?

"With the help of this technique, an Immortal Cultivator can easily sense everything falls in his surrounding range and then can naturally shield himself."

Ye Feng smiled: "Therefore, in the Immortals' world, this technique isn't considered as anything special. But on this planet, as long as we have this technique, there is nothing which could remain hidden from us."

A moment later, Long Wan'er finally believed this argument, because now, she could also personally feel it.

Having Ye Feng by her side to help her practice this technique, made the whole process very simple for her. In the beginning, she used it very clumsily, however, after trying for a long time, she finally succeeded in proliferating this technique in the whole room.

She clicked her tongue in amazement, so was this technique also very powerful?

Now that she had the perspective eyes, she could easily feel wardrobe, next door as well as the situation outside! This feeling wasn't just involved seeing things around, rather was like a feeling of personally touching the same, actually, it was a very different feeling.

This wonderful feeling all of a sudden made her totally infatuated with it. She happily hugged Ye Feng in her arms and kissed him crazily several times.

Feeling her soft and smooth white hands around his body, made him unable to endure any more, he simply wanted to press her down under his body severely in some way. However, unfortunately, now was not the right time to do that, he

had some more important things to handle.

He didn't know yet what was the condition of that Taiji Palace's masked youth. He was directly pierced by Thunder Sword qi, because of which he was really severely injured, even the Holy Cure Technique wasn't good to start with.

Moreover, tonight, the big coral king was going to mature, he couldn't let it go. Hence he needed to recharge his batteries at all cost. If presently, because of his burning passion, he went too far with Long Wan'er, then at the crucial time, he might suffer badly.

To be able to enhance his Cultivation by five years, he could never give up that opportunity!

"Well, Aunt is outside."

Long Wan'er was playing cheerfully in the blanket, right then suddenly she felt that outside at the door, there was a person's shadow standing, making her immediately lean against Ye Feng.

Ye Feng slipped his arms around her, simultaneously swept his Soul Search Technique and also found that someone was standing outside. It was Shu Shu and it seemed that she was being hesitant to knock at the door.

By this time, Shu Shu had already taken a bath and had found a clean one piece long dress in her room to put on. However, the thing that made Ye Feng almost unable to bear was that piece of dress she had worn, it actually was a pure black V-neck, low-neckline skirt, making her mature fullness appear more captivating and stirring.

"Little Feng, Wan'er, you people inside?"

After hesitating for a long time, Shu Shu finally knocked at the door and asked softly.

"You idiot, what should we do now?"

Long Wan'er waved her fist softly and hammered on his chest a bit. Since both of them were in a completely bare state, then how could they open the door?

She clumsily swept Soul Search Technique towards the bathroom and found her clothes hanging inside along with Ye Feng's clothes, while a fireball was

under them to dry them up, but it seemed that the job wasn't done yet.

"I'll go, you rest."

Ye Feng kissed her wildly on her long and snow-white nape of the neck, then, jumped out of the bed.

"Aunt, coming right away."

He shouted, then entered the bathroom to put on his clothes which were still wet. Anyway, he had to go to the sea soon, so wet clothes wouldn't create any big difference. As for Long Wan'er's clothes, the heat of the fireball produced by Red Inflammation wouldn't take long to dry them up, so she could change her clothes awhile later.

After getting properly dressed, he arrived at the entrance and opened the door, where he saw Shu Shu, clad in a black, V-neck one piece dress, was standing and waiting quietly outside.

Seeing Ye Feng staring at her, Shu Shu's matured and attractive face turned red at once, as if she also knew that the dress she had put on was a quite exposed one. But she had no other choice, her own clothes were dripping soaked, so when she looked for a clean and dry cloth in the room, then noticed that the room actually had mostly exposed clothes. Hence, under such circumstances, she could only pick a clean one to put on.

"Aunt, come inside."

Ye Feng invited her inside very politely, besides he also knew that just like Long Wan'er, she also couldn't go back to Long Clan anymore.

"Don't be so polite."

Seeing him being so courteous, Shu Shu blushed a little accompanied with a sweet smile: "You young people, try to keep a little control, that would be better"

A while ago, when she had knocked at the door, then waited outside for a while before Ye Feng opened the door. So naturally she could guess that after hastily putting on the clothes, he opened the door. Not to mention when she looked inside and saw Long Wan'er hiding under a blanket as if she hadn't worn

anything, making her even more sure about her guess.

Ye Feng wondered for a while, what should he control a bit?

Could it be that Shu Shu also thought that just now he had done something with Long Wan'er which was not suitable for her?

Think about it, it seemed quite suspicious

He shook his head and decided not to think about it anymore, then, he smiled helplessly: "Aunt, you come in and chat with her, I am going to see how the boy is.

"Eh?"

Shu Shu was somewhat startled : "Actually, I have come here to examine your wound"

"Don't worry, I'm all right."

Ye Feng smiled, the wound he had on his chest had already been cured by the Holy Cure Technique.

"Youngsters always try to be brave."

Shu Shu looked at his face holding somewhat annoyed expression as she thought that nowadays young people didn't want to treasure their own bodies. Wasn't his chest severely stabbed by Long Wuren's sword, then, how could his injury heal so fast?

"Come on, let your aunt see your wound for dressing."

Shu Shu grabbed his arm and pulled him into the room.

Suddenly he felt the temperature of her hand, at the same time, the fragrance of her body also greeted his nostrils, making him suddenly blush and he slightly lowered his head. However now, he could clearly see under the black, V collar dress of her, a pair of rounded full along with a deep seductive gully.

Fuck, how obstinate this woman Shu Shu was, couldn't she believe his wound was already well?

He wondered, but since knew that her intention was pure, hence he couldn't break himself free. Suddenly he got pulled into the room and was pushed down

to sit on the sofa.

“You are also blushing, we are not strangers anymore, so why are you being so bashful?”

Shu Shu saw his facial expression and smiled a bit while covering her mouth. Then after, her white hands pull him and ripped open his cloth, making his chest visible to her.

Due to Long Wuren’s sword, Ye Feng’s shirt was already little torn, while the rest was now pulled by her and tore open. However the moment Shu Shu’s eyes fell on his chest, she couldn’t help but her eyes turn wide open, while her delicate hand covered her lips, an incredible appearance!

The astonishing matter was, there was not even a little trace of any wound on his chest!

“Aunt, well, let him go.”

Long Wan’er, wrapped in a quilt, looked at Shu Shu’s expression and felt a bit funny : “His healing level is much fiercer than yours.”

However, she knew that Ye Feng must have used Holy Cure Technique!

“Ah ... I’ll go first, you people carry on.”

Ye Feng felt a little embarrassment facing her, so he hastily ran away from the room and finally felt relieved. But even after walking outside the room, his mind couldn’t help but keep on imagining Shu Shu’s that matured and plentiful physique

He shook his head and shrugged this thought of his mind. Anyway, firstly, he had to examine that unconscious youth and then should prepare to go to snatch away the big Coral King.

He believed that the big Coral King was such a holy treasure which must provide enough strength to the martial artists. Because of which, they could absolutely not let it go, even if the tsunami turned as fiercer as a tiger and there arose a heart-chilling competition between the people!

Chapter 177 -> Unusual cold

After pressing down these beautiful thoughts, Ye Feng went 32 steps downstairs, then swept his Soul Search Technique and felt that Taiji Palace's youth still hadn't woken up, while Nan Fang was actually sleeping aside, constantly making a whirring noise.

The Hidden Immortal Tactics Nan Fang was studying before, he had already successfully operated it and that also quite smoothly. So according to his talent, it could be said that he could comprehend 'Crying Ghost Blade Technique' in no time.

And at the right time, Ye Feng would teach him Asura Sect's 'Ghost Shadow Soul Step', then he would absolutely become the top-notch killer. At least having Ye Feng by his side meant his growth potential would definitely surpass any other disciple of the Hidden Immortal Faction.

As for the Immortal Cultivation, Ye Feng hadn't told him temporarily, after all, this was his biggest secret.

He pushed open the door and entered the room. Then he walked towards the masked youth and started examining him. Soon he noticed that this boy was around 18-19 years old, but still actually had 10 years of Cultivation, indeed his strength was impressive. But unfortunately, he bumped into persistently unreasonable Li Feng and the tragedy happened.

Ye Feng thought to help this boy take off the mask permanently, therefore, he looked at his face which had severely burnt marks. However, he didn't want to cast Holy Cure Technique for so long.

The golden light flashed and began shrouding the whole body of the boy. Just recently, in the torrential rain, he was hit by a Thunder Sword qi and was badly injured. Now his entire body's necrotic cell as well as his disfigured face, both started recovering at a speed which was visible to the naked eye!

Ten minutes, twenty minutes, half an hour

Time kept on rolling until Ye Feng's Zhenqi once again got totally used up, then

he stopped. But the masked boy had already recovered a bit, even his previously burnt face's necrotic cells had shed off. As long as he took a bath, he could make him no longer wear a mask to see people in the future.

This could be regarded as a little return to this boy for rescuing Shu Shu.

For the Immortal Cultivators. there were no such words like "disfigurement of face". But again, talking about Mo Jiuge, of course, he was naturally an ugly guy. And as per Ye Feng's view, even though there was splendid plastic surgery technology on this plane, but still they couldn't do anything to do honour to the face of Mo Jiuge.....

The sky was gradually darkening, Ye Feng could clearly feel that the tide was spreading gradually from the coast, while the coastline was still elevating.

The water had already entered the entire village up to the ankle area. On the basis of this speed, till tomorrow morning, most likely, the first floor of the house they were in, would be submerged.

At present, if he went back to the centre of Xiangshan County, then certainly he would become too conspicuous. And in case, he was found by either Long Clan or God Fist Gate, then the consequences could be disastrous, so temporarily staying here would be a good option.

After chatting with Long Wan'er for awhile, Shu Shu went downstairs to find some food in the refrigerator and then soon made a simple supper.

Because the downstairs was already flooded with water, so they decided to have their dinner upstairs. Except for that unconscious masked youth, the rest four people were together at the dining table.

"I am starving to death, elder brother!"

On seeing the sight of full table meals, Nan Fang's eyes lit up just like a reincarnated starved ghost.

"You eat more and then take a good rest in the evening."

Ye Feng continued while eating: "Wan'er, you have to pay attention in the evening so be alert, if there is any situation, then immediately call Nan Fang and discuss with him.

Now she also had Soul Search Technique, so nobody could even think of approaching the house silently, whereas Nan Fang had a superb interpretation and decision-making capability. Therefore having him meant no matter how strong the enemy would be, he could always come up with several ways to deal with.

“Hmm and you?”

Long Wan'er listened to him speaking like this and suddenly turned somewhat anxious : “Where do you want to go?”

“I'll go to have a look at the big Coral King.”

He said firmly.

“What!”

The rest three people, sitting at the dining table, were suddenly thunderstruck, so Ye Feng still had the willingness to grab the big Coral King? In their opinion, they should now just try to find an opportunity to leave the East China Sea at once, however, Ye Feng wanted to do things exactly the opposite.

“I'll go for the big coral king alone, you just stay here, will try to come back as soon as possible.”

Ye Feng emphasised.

“Are you sure?”

Nan Fang wrinkled his eyebrows, although had no objection, but just wanted to inquire a bit.

“Yes, I am.”

Ye Feng nodded.

“Then I can rest assured.”

Nan Fang smiled, then without arguing with him furthermore, he continued to have his meal.

It must be said that Shu Shu's cooking skill was splendid, especially now, when everyone was starving and had already turned into the hungry wolves. At such a time, a table full of delicious food was soon wiped out like how a wind used to

sweep away scattered clouds.

Although Ye Feng didn't want to make such comparison, but he had to acknowledge that dishes cooked by Shu Shu, if was compared with Su Menghan's cooking, then it could be said that it was just beyond comparison

"Take care of yourself."

Shu Shu thought that she neither had the right to speak nor could persuade Ye Feng in any form, hence she softly said: "Must remember that Wan'er is still here waiting for you, so your should be the most important thing here".

Long Wan'er heard this and her face turned red, but still she said supporting her Aunt : "Right, if you don't come back, I affirm that I will accompany you.

She wanted to go along with him but then changed her mind as she thought that besides Ye Feng, she was the only one here who knew using Soul Search Technique. Hence, if she would also leave with him, then Aunt's security couldn't be guaranteed. Moreover, Ye Feng might not allow her to accompany him. Therefore, she finally dispelled this idea.

"Relax, why I would think of shrugging you off, even if I fail to grab the big Coral King, still will come back.

Ye Feng helplessly tried to comfort her, but this little girl's words were quite ominous. Moreover, why should she accompany him, was her Ye Feng so weak?

After finishing supper, Ye Feng took a break for a while. Soon he noticed that the sky was gradually darkening, which made him feel that now was the time to set out!

Long Wan'er leant on his arms: "Come back soon."

"Will do."

Ye Feng held her gently in his bosom, then, walked down the stairs while putting a black grimace mask on his face.

She looked at him from behind, Shu Shu, who was standing next to her, draped over her shoulder and then tenderly smiled : "Rest assured, just now how Long Mo'ran couldn't harm us, just like that, everything will be certainly all right tonight.

“Hmm.....”

Long Wan'er nodded, although she leant against Shu Shu, but her complexion was appearing little complexed, from now on, the two of them couldn't go back to Long Clan ever.

Fortunately, now she had at least Ye Feng to depend on, but Aunt?

However, at this moment, Nan Fang didn't have these many thoughts, he just yawned and said: “I am going to sleep now, Miss Long, if there is any problem, directly knock at the door.”

“Dead pigs only know one thing and that is sleeping, go.”

Long Wan'er drove him away impolitely: “But I am not Miss Long of a rich and powerful Clan.”

“Well, its aunt, okay?”

Nan Fang said that, then waved his hand towards those two women and departed.

Although he was little heartless, but he had an optimistic attitude, which made these two women suddenly feel slightly relaxed. These two women, holding hands, started praying in her hearts for Ye Feng's safety.

While on the other side, Ye Feng, wearing a mask, came downstairs and the moment he stepped into the water which had reached up to his ankle, suddenly was hit by an icy-cold feeling as if it was penetrating him to the bone.

His heart moved a bit.

In the morning, when they jumped into the sea from the cliff, afterwards he noticed that it was gradually getting colder nearby the sea, however now, it was more obvious. Things seemed to be very unusual, at least, as per what his memory hinted him, the modern society seemed to have not seen this kind of strange thing.

“Does it have any relation with Master?”

He couldn't control himself from thinking that sometimes, something couldn't be explained in scientific terms and that was what generally happened in the world of the Immortals.

However, even though, Su Feiying had a hundred years of Cultivation, but it was still impossible for her to create such a wide scope of cold

He shook his head as he thought that no matter what the truth was, he had to grasp the big Coral King first! But he didn't know how many people would be there tonight to compete for the big Coral King.

Chapter 178 -> Yin Soul Fake Body Technique

The moment Ye Feng stepped into the water, suddenly felt that the water was icy-cold, but he had to go all the way to the south.

Long Wan'er had shown him the position of the big Coral King before, which he had already recorded it in his mind, hence it was easy to find it following the direction.

Quietly, he cast out Invisibility and dashed towards the destination. In the meantime, he also found that the more he was getting closer to the south, the deeper the water was getting bit by bit, the mighty waves were also rolling over and over crazily, while the water was, even more, piercing cold.

Immortal Technique, Dragon Turtle Holding Breath!

After running around five kilometres, he displayed this Technique and jumped into the water. To this place, the water surface had already reached a person's height. The sky was darker, while far in the sky, the thunder and lightning were continuously showing their power, along with the violent storm, which seemed to never stop. Everything altogether was demonstrating that the weather outside the East China Sea was extremely nasty.

Once he entered the water, suddenly he picked up a high speed. Moreover, his Soul Search Technique was also assisting him, making him feel like he was a fish back in the water. He was advancing rapidly by easily avoiding the various floating things like wood, ruins, debris, etc, appearing right against his face.

He believed that even an expert martial artist, almost equal to Long Mo'ran's class, couldn't catch up with his speed in the water!

As he was moving ahead, simultaneously, the sea water was also getting deeper and more and more icy-cold, however, as for him, he was actually getting closer to his destination. When he was very close to the coastline, then swept his Soul Search Technique and found a little movement not far away from there.

Around 20-30 martial artists were gathered there for the competition! Their position was on the towering coastal cliff because that place was presently the

only land of the sea. In addition, the distance from that place to the big Coral King was the nearest from the rest of the places.

Ye Feng stopped at once and decided to explore for awhile since he wanted to find out who would be participating in this competition, so that he could prepare himself properly in advance.

“So, Long Mo’ran really hasn’t died yet.”

He swept his Soul Search and noticed that on the cliff, in the rain, Long Mo’ran’s stature was still appearing lofty and at present, he was commanding his Clan’s people to put on the diving outfit and equipment.

However this time, the sword Long Mo’ran had in his scabbard before, it had been actually replaced by another one. Ye Feng could easily feel the quality of the sword was not as good as before. It seemed that the resonance explosion caused by Long Wan’er’s body back then, which had curled Long Mo’ran up and thrown him away somewhere, during then his sword must have lost somewhere in the vast sea and now there was no way to find it.

He secretly sneered and continued checking the rest of the people.

In the Long Clan, altogether there were just three powerhouses including Long Mo’ran, who had over 50 years of Cultivation, while the rest of them were just playing around, or they were there just to be used for sacrifices. Interestingly, Long Zi and Long Qing were also not one of the powerhouses.

Apart from Long Clan, there were other twelve super powerful martial artists from Tang Clan, Heavenly Sword Palace and other top martial arts sects, who were also taking part in this competition.

Ye Feng noticed that these martial arts were rolling up their sleeves for battle while looking at each other maliciously, which force him to chuckle in his heart while thinking that at the crucial moment, when these people would be clashing with each other, it would be more conducive to him to capture the big Coral King.

After waiting for a while, he decided to display an Immortal Technique, which he hadn’t used it ever in this world – Yin Soul Fake Body Technique!

When an Immortal Cultivator used this technique, then he could actually

condense out a fake body to use him as a puppet. However, it also had some obvious shortcomings, when there was the existence of Yin Soul Fake Body, then the detection range of that Immortal Cultivator's Soul Search Technique used to reduce by half.

That was the reason why he never displayed this technique before, but now, the use of a Fake body was obviously a more appropriate action. As long as he controlled it well, this Fake body could attract the attention of the opposite party and then he could take advantage of the opportunity to act

Quietly, he contracted his Soul Search Technique, simultaneously congealed his Zhenqi out in the form of a puppet youth wearing a mask, who looked exactly the same as him, quite realistic and genuine!

...

When Ye Feng was about to launch his action, on the other side, carrying Ye Wentian and Su Menghan, Hummer H2 finally arrived at Xiangshan County and stopped in the centre of the city.

“Grandpa, don't get too tired, let's have a dinner first, okay?”

Su Menghan gently, a bit considerately said: “You see, we don't know anyone here, so looking for a person would be too difficult.”

“I'll think of a way, so little girl, you don't have to worry about it.”

Ye Wentian thought that she was playing the idea of purposely delaying the time, hence he immediately pulled out his cell phone and made a phone call. The only one he could contact with in order to find a person was the NSA since he had already heard that the NSA people were also here, so he thought to just ask them to help him in his investigation.

Thunder quickly answered the phone, but as soon as heard Ye Wentian's voice, his face immediately turned somewhat bitter.

At present, Thunder was busy finding a way to send people to the iceberg island, he was totally occupied in this process. He had no time to help him find someone, so he could only just narrate the incident which had happened before in the small village.

Since Ye Wentian had a connection with Lin Clan, so Thunder used to very much respect him.

“He went towards the south.”

Ye Wentian knew that the masked man was Ye Feng, so he immediately hung up the phone to make a decision.

“Grandpa, I’m hungry, let’s eat something first, ok?”

She started to act like a spoiled brat by using both hard and soft tricks.

“Little girl, you know quite well how to procrastinate for him.”

He said that as he looked at her pretty but miserable appearance. He couldn’t vent his anger on her, therefore only said: “See, when he would have an accident or something, you will be the one who would feel too late to regret! Well, okay then let’s eat something first!”

Although Su Menghan smiled but was obviously a little worried deep inside her heart.

Ever since Ye Feng left Yanjing, she couldn’t get through his phone, hence she didn’t have any idea how the situation was there presently, was there any danger?

...

Xiangshan County’s centre, in a private room of a top-notch family restaurant’s.

“Beautiful women, just relax.”

Wang Shadong, with a dog-shaped jade hanging around his neck, said with a smile: “In the morning, I hired more than ten local people especially to look for the masked boy and I believe, soon there will be some news related to his whereabouts.

At this moment, his eyes were all stuck at the most noticeable and prettiest lady present there. This extreme beauty was not only considered as the first beauty of Yanjing, but she also belonged to Yanjing’s Lin Clan, no matter which place they arrived, they used to make their extremely dazzling presence!

Lin Shiqing!

Altogether four people were there in that private room, in addition to Wang Shaodong, Lin Shiqing, Xiao Qi and Xiao Yue were there.

“Elder sister, you saw him but why didn’t you tell me that?”

Xiao Qi was sitting close to Xiao Yue, holding a very annoyed look on her face, which was instead making her look very cute. If it were not for Lin Shiqing who obtained information from the NSA, she would have never known that the masked man had shown up here. Although Xiao Yue met him before but actually she didn’t tell her anything about it!

“You little girl, that person already have a woman, so why are you blindly following him?”

Xiao Yue was in a foul mood, hence immediately chided her, while her fuller front supported her words by rhythmically bouncing under her red dress.

“Elder Sister!”

Xiao Qi’s face turned red at once: “I am looking for him, not for that In short, he has saved me, that’s why I just want to find him!

“Wang Shaodong, I hope your people would act a bit faster to obtain the news, even if the day is dark today.....”

Lin Shiqing seemingly said a bit calmly, although had worn a set of white casual attire, but actually couldn’t conceal her elegant heroic appearance.

In fact, she was a bit anxious in her heart, as per the information conveyed by the NSA, because of an unclear picture of the weather, the whole road leading to the coast of Xiangshan County had been blocked, so going to the beach to find the masked man was not only difficult but was also extremely dangerous.

As per her status, obviously Thunder wouldn’t let her have the opportunity to take risks, besides, she was also afraid that once she stepped out of this restaurant, someone would immediately seize her so that she couldn’t run around.

“Rest assured, I try to find the native people of this place.....”

Wang Shaodong vowed solemnly, but right then, his cell phone suddenly rang

up. He pulled it out and the moment he looked at the number, a happy expression crawled on his face : “Look, there is a news, we have definitely found that kid!

Chapter 179 -> Coral cluster

One of the hired men of Wang Shaodong passed him a message that by taking a secret route through a small hill forest route and then passing through the police blockade line, he could come all the way to the seacoast.

After crossing the hill forest, there was a village, which had already been evacuated and where the sea water had also inundated to the ankle. However, some budglers found that there were still few people residing in that village!

Although it didn't determine that there was the masked man, but it could be considered as a clue. After all, the news of windstorm had already been passed on everywhere, so ordinary people would never dare to still stay in the village regardless of their lives. Even if they didn't want to leave, but would have been forced by the police to leave.

Wang Shaodong heard that and immediately stood up as he wanted to personally go over there, at the same time, quietly, he sent a text message to his hired bludgers, ordering them that once they found the masked man, must kill him and throw him directly into the sea. Luckily in this weather, this incident would remain a complete secret!

Simultaneously, clad in a red one-piece dress, Xiao Yue also got up to catch up with him, leaving behind Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi in the room. These two women didn't come forward because they knew that they were under the supervision of the NSA, so most likely they couldn't leave Xiangshan County.

"Elder sister, you have to be careful."

When Xiao Qi saw her sister leaving with Wang Shaodong, she turned a bit worried in her heart while thinking that just at a glance, she felt that this guy, Wang Shaodong didn't seem to be a nice person. But now, she was too late, did Xiao Yue have some matter with him alone?

"Don't worry."

A smile spread on Xiao Yui's face along with a trace of ample confidence which her face revealed.

As per these two women, they left here because they wanted to look for the masked man and return safely along with him. However, Wang Shaodong and Xiao Yue didn't think so, Wang Shaodong wanted to kill Ye Feng, while Xiao Yue didn't want to let him get close to Xiao Qi even half a step

Wang Shaodong and Xiao Yue took some off-road equipment like flashlights and so on for the night and set out together. They decided to go to the seacoast as fast as possible.

"We should also think of a way, better to keep up with."

Lin Shiqing talked in whispers to discuss with Xiao Qi, the masked man was very important to them and at present, the NSA didn't have the time to look for him, so they could only depend on themselves.

As for Wang Shaodong and Xiao Yue, obviously, Lin Shiqing couldn't completely trust them.

Xiao Qi nodded and the two women began to make plans

Shortly after, in another family restaurant, Ye Wentian and Su Menghan, after finishing their meal, also similarly set out to go to the southern seacoast.

For Ye Wentian, even if Su Menghan was tagged along with him, still breaking through the police blockade line was too easy for him!

.....

By this time, Ye Feng had successfully created the Yin Soul Fake Body.

This fake body similarly had Soul Search Technique with a certain detection range. Even after separating this body, Ye Feng could easily manipulate it from quite afar and perceive the situation happening around it. Of course, the detection scope of the fake body was very small, this thing could only feel the situation within ten meters of range, but was still more than enough.

After making a fake body, Ye Feng turned around and advanced towards the place where the big Coral King was.

As he was proceeding towards his destination, the sea water was also simultaneously becoming icy-cold and piercing, while the undercurrent was surging forcefully too. Even though he was under the spell of Dragon Turtle

Holding Breath, but was still enormously hindered by the piercing cold water.

One could imagine, once Long Mo'ran and other people jumped into the sea, they would certainly face even greater obstacles.

“Really cold, this nearby seabed definitely has the occurrence of some unusual situation. While waiting to grab the big Coral King, I must check around properly, most probably it has some relation with the master”

He thought in his heart. Just like a fish, he was continuously swimming towards his destination.

In the seabed, various undercurrents were turbulent, even the terminal velocity of some ice pieces moving around was making abundant of sea fishes all rattled. Those fishes which were too late to dodge, were cut into two by the sharp ice pieces.

At this time, the seabed was very perilous and was already rippling the dirty smell of fishes everywhere!

Ye Feng was the only one there, who didn't need to borrow the help of any diving equipment in such a submarine action. While the other people, including Long Mo'ran, needed to take the diving equipment before stepping into the sea.

Even if the breath holding time of the group of martial artists was put together, still couldn't be compared with Ye Feng's holding time, this was the dreadful effect of Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique.

The seabed was so pitch-dark that one could only occasionally see some fluorescent living creatures in the depth of the seabed.

The detection range of his Soul Search Technique had been reduced by half, therefore now, he could only sense thing appearing within 50 meters of range. Soon, a row of several strange things caught his attention.

Although he hadn't yet arrived at the location where the big Coral King was, but could see in the vicinity, there was some sophisticated equipment floating all over. Actually, some sophisticated surveillance cameras were monitoring the nearby water area.

Once someone got close to the big Coral King, he would be surely found by the

martial artists!

Though they were the martial artists, but that didn't mean they couldn't understand the modern technology, on the contrary, they could utilise the technology much more efficiently than the general public.

Ye Feng didn't act rashly, instead, he turned around very carefully and found that similar precision small cameras were there in dozens, which were installed in the seabed grotto, soil and some other covert places.

If he were an ordinary person, he could never have found these cameras. Since he was an Immortal Cultivator who also knew using Soul Search Technique, so these cameras failed to escape his sensation.

"Well, there are several cameras which have already been destroyed by the turbulent current and ice pieces. So long as I move slowly, I can eliminate all these cameras installed in this region and believe it won't cause any suspicion!

Ye Feng's Zhenqi suddenly surged and the golden sword emerged out in the seabed. But unfortunately, since there was utter darkness in the seabed, along with such weather, which had made the whole sea water look all muddy, so not even this bright golden light could spread too far.

PuffPuffPuff

An expensive submarine camera was destroyed by his sword!

Suddenly the seabed turbulent flow rapidly rushed forth, he didn't know from where these floating ice chunks were arriving, which were not only countless in number but were also very small in size. But again, crushing these cameras was quite normal. Even if the people, monitoring the scene, became suspicious, still they wouldn't doubt Ye Feng for this.

Having spent a little time in crushing these cameras, Ye Feng, broke into the place where the big Coral King was, like a fish, with irresistible force.

A vast array of red coral cluster soon appeared in his perception range, making him have a scare.

"Isn't there supposed to be a big Coral King? But actually, there are plenty of small corals!"

In the middle of the coral cluster, a big Coral King was dazzling and exuding a rich spiritual energy. However, in its periphery, there were dozens of the small coral group, which if absorbed, could also upgrade Cultivation by one or two years!

Before, Ye Feng was little worried about Su Menghan, Nan Fang and Scar as they didn't have any means to quickly promote their skill, but had never expected that he would run into such a pleasant surprise here.

“Well, so they acted?”

At this moment, Ye Feng's fake body sensed that the group of martial artists including Long Mo'ran, after completing their preparation, finally started putting on the precision diving equipment and then one after another jumped into the sea, all prepared to rob the fruit.

As a result, his fake body, hiding in the seabed, was all of a sudden got discovered by them!

Chapter 180 -> Bloodstained East China Sea

When the light of several underwater searchlights fell on Ye Feng's fake body, Ye Feng immediately reacted and controlled the fake one, making it swim towards the opposite direction, with an extremely fast speed.

The two powerhouses of God Fist Gate along with Long Mo'ran wanted to pursue his fake body! Luo Feng was such a talented disciple of God Fist Gate but was indirectly killed by Ye Feng, besides, Long Mo'ran was also ridiculously defeated by him and lost his honour. The old grudge could be said as absolutely irreconcilable.

Ye Feng's fake body could move exactly like the real body and could also survey the surrounding small scope of the scene. However, it couldn't cast any Immortal Technique; after all, it was just a puppet which didn't have the existence of Zhenqi within his body.

In the seabed, his fake body quickly moved, leading Long Mo'ran along with the other two God Fist Gate's men, more and more away from their destination.

"Paochui Fist!"

However, right then, finally, the opposite party approached quickly and one of them assigned his inner qi away from his body, instantaneously making his two fists rush into the water and hit his fake body.

Buzz!

A circle of ripples suddenly proliferated from his fake body, simultaneously his speed also declined dramatically. It seemed that he was really seriously injured.

Immediately after, Long Mo'ran also kicked in the water and cast out Dragon Leg Technique! His overbearing inner qi, with an extreme force, suddenly penetrated the sea water and kicked his fake body heavily, making it burst into a blue smoke and then it swiftly dissipated with a sound "Thump".

Once hit by a fatal blow, Yin Soul Fake Body immediately disappeared without leaving any trace.

This scene, however, left Long Mo'ran and other two men totally stunned and

their hearts sank, what was this stuff, just now, they obviously hit that guy, but how did he suddenly change into a blue smoke and disappeared in the water?

Quite Strange!

But the three people didn't dare to stay there for a long time because the other martial artists were already on their way to the big Coral King. They were already a little late, if they still stayed back, then, would almost lose the chance of snatching away the big Coral King.

Suddenly they turned around and switched on their searchlights, then rapidly advanced towards their destination. However, such a delay, they were already far behind the other people

.....

As the fake body disappeared, Ye Feng's sensation finally returned to its normal state, now he could survey the surrounding 100 meters of range again. Although there was a big pile of corals, but he wasn't a bit impatient, instead he stepped forward and quietly picked up a small coral, then, hid in the side and immediately started absorbing it.

The big Coral King was in the process of fast maturation and this process would roughly take around half an hour. Hence, picking it in advance would surely, greatly reduce its effect, which Ye Feng didn't want to happen at any cost.

These martial artists should have a public agreement, according to which, after waiting for the big Coral King to mature, they must enter into a fair competition. This pile of corals also seemed to be associated with it, taking them early might not be a good idea. But now the big Coral King's maturity was closer, Ye Feng didn't need to control so much.

Since the big Coral King hadn't matured yet, so he could pick small corals to enhance his strength first!

Absorbing a small coral could enhance one's Cultivation by two years, this way, one could take advantage of it to compete for the big Coral King. Unfortunately, a small coral could only be absorbed once by the same person, otherwise, if these many small corals were put together, they would become much more precious than the big Coral King.

Ye Feng hid aside in a sea cave and began absorbing the spiritual energy of that small coral. He believed that if a small coral was taken out from such a huge coral group, then it would surely not catch people's attention.

Ten years and one month

Ten years and two months ...

Ye Feng's Cultivation once again began to grow up!

Also at this time, several martial artists finally began to show up in the scope of Ye Feng's perception. However the first person appeared was actually in an extremely difficult situation, his diving suit already had several blood stains all over, while one of his legs seemed to be cut by something, from where his fresh blood was dripping.

Ye Feng couldn't see that the opposite party belonged to any martial arts School or not. That fellow immediately arrived close to the coral group, observed them for a moment, then picked up three small corals and similarly hid aside.

Ye Feng noticed that this man's diving suit wasn't spacious enough, still if he would fill it with these three small corals, then how he would manage to keep the big one.

The second and third person also arrived there back to back and surprisingly they were also in a distressed condition. Obviously, the utter darkness together with icy-cold water had made the seabed quite perilous, which must have brought the enormous vexation to them.

Exactly like the first fellow, they also picked up three small corals respectively, then, found a place to hide separately.

Interestingly, no one could notice Ye Feng's presence, but Ye Feng was well aware of their movement. He didn't panic at all because the small corals were present in dozens and all of them couldn't be taken away by them ever, hence remaining would come under his clutch!

He didn't have any scruples, at the right time, he would use his jacket to collect all the corals and then would take them away. While others couldn't carry too many corals in such a perilous seabed, since it was an unpredictable life and death situation for them

Eleven years and eleven months!

Twelve years!

Quite soon, Ye Feng completed the absorption process and enhanced his Cultivation by two years. However, the remaining surplus spiritual energy of that coral couldn't enhance his Cultivation furthermore, but still, he absorbed it into his body to refill his Zhenqi, which he had lost so far, to make his strength again reach its highest peak.

“If my Cultivation reaches fifteen years, then I can cast Star Tomb Faction's first inheritance Immortal Technique

Although he thought in his heart, but unfortunately, at present, his meridians could only withstand upto thirteen years of Cultivation. Even if he succeeded in snatching away the big Coral King, still couldn't immediately promote his Cultivation.

In such seabed, if he was caught in a fight, then could only cast Dragon sword qi. As for Red Inflammation, at his present level, definitely, he was unable to display it in the water, unless he comprehended its second layer

He didn't think much, simply swept his Soul Search Technique and felt that 12 martial arts experts had already arrived there and gathered around the big Coral King. They all belonged to various Sects and had more than fifty years of Cultivation!

As for the group of those Long Clan's people who had low Cultivation, no one reach there, it seemed that after stepping into the water, they were killed by other people. And the remaining person, Long Mo'ran was extremely late.

There were several small corals still left in dozens, if they were not grabbed by Ye Feng, then would be completely wasted.

Right at this time, the big Coral King suddenly exuded a strange ray of light and finally at this moment, it started becoming glittering and translucent, as if it was about to mature any moment!

Long Mo'ran waited for all the martial artists hiding aside, to turn off their underwater searchlights since they didn't want to expose their whereabouts. A foreseeable battle was on the verge of its arrival!

“Such environment is favourable for me too!”

Ye Feng thought that with the help of Soul Search Technique, he could see the movement of everyone around, however for other people, not only they had to guard against other people, but also needed to take precautions against the turbulent current and sharp ice pieces. Especially after switching off the searchlights, they couldn't see anything in this pitch dark seabed, except the light the big Coral King was emitting then.

Puff!

Long Mo'ran launched his first shot; he had a very dense expression on his face at present. His sword jabbed into the chest of another person, making his blood dye the East China Sea instantly! For him, once someone hindered him, he would be eliminated right away!

Afterwards, suddenly he advanced towards the big Coral King.

However, just before him, another person of God Fist Gate also rushed towards it. Hastily, he picked it up and hid it into his diving suit to cover its glory.

All of a sudden, the entire sea turned pitch-black!

Ye Feng could feel that suddenly the surrounding smell of blood became more intense, it wasn't only the deed of Long Mo'ran, other people also similarly made their petty action. In such a dangerous seabed battle, the casualty was obviously extremely serious.

For Ye Feng, the present seabed had completely turned into his stage!

Chapter 181 -> Ye Feng's stage!

In the pitch-black seabed, nobody dared to turn on their underwater searchlights, otherwise would definitely become the target of public criticism.

However, this thing provided the best action environment for Ye Feng, perhaps he could now try to kill Long Mo'ran here!

He swept his Soul Search Technique and found that the big Coral King had already been captured by one of the experts of God Fist Gate and immediately after that, he started swimming back towards the shore, without stopping even for a moment. Along with the violent turbulent flow, several pieces of sharp ice were continuously popping up on his way, but he was quite aware of it, hence every time he moved aside to dodge them.

"It seems that the martial arts experts can also somewhat sense the danger getting close to them."

Ye Feng knew fairly well.

In the scope of his Soul Search Technique, almost all of them, relying on the water flow, were pursuing that God Fist Gate's expert. Among them, Long Mo'ran was the fastest one and just in a flash, he took the lead!

However, Ye Feng decided not to pursue him, instead, he made his stature invisible, then quietly arrived close to the coral cluster, took off his coat, picked up the remaining all 12 small corals and wrapped them up into it.

After done packing these small corals, he carried them behind his back, then, silently moved towards the place where the other powerhouses had advanced chasing the big Coral King.

"Surprisingly, Long Mo'ran is actually blocked."

He quickly clarified the situation ahead, when Long Mo'ran wanted to rush quickly to catch that God Fist Gate's expert, right then, another expert of God Fist Gate arrived in front of him and blocked his way, simultaneously threw a fist towards him!

Long Mo'ran couldn't dare to underestimate this fist, so he right away stopped

his stature and carefully dealt with it. In this dark environment, all of them were blindly following suit, simply relying on their intuition and a little bit of perception, which couldn't be compared with Ye Feng's flexibility.

At this time, Ye Feng once again swept his Soul Search towards Long Mo'ran, simultaneously, quietly swam in that direction, displaying Dragon Turtle Holding Breath to streamline his body just like a fish in the water, with a terrifying speed, which was twice faster than other people.

Approached!

He maintained ten meters of safe distance from Long Mo'ran because according to his previous judgment, the perception scope of the other martial artists including Long Mo'ran was limited to just five meters. In that case, beyond ten meters of range, they couldn't even feel anything.

If it were an ordinary land, then probably the opposite party would have sensed his breath by now, but such a chaotic seabed was a totally different case.

“Beheading Dragon Sword qi!”

Ye Feng waited for the accurate opportunity, when he noticed that Long Mo'ran and God Fist Gate's expert were about to unfold their showdown, in that split second, his Zhenqi rushed and got condensed in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and the next moment, the golden light flashed faintly in the muddy sea water!

An icy-blue Sword qi, penetrating through the turbulent flow of seawater, rapidly rushed towards Long Mo'ran, directly aiming at his head, by sweeping everything away from its way.

Ye Feng's sword was indeed very crafty!

But, Long Mo'ran instantly discovered that the approaching sword was inevitable, but if he tried to dodge this Sword qi, then would certainly be smashed by the fist of God Fist Gate's expert.

Obviously, his fist couldn't kill him, but he would get seriously injured, only if that God Fist Gate's expert used his one horse.

The moment his Sword qi penetrated the sea water, Long Mo'ran immediately

realised something and his complexion changed at once, he hadn't thought that the masked man would actually launch a sneak from behind! Presently, in the East China Sea, other than him and the masked man "Mo Jiuge", no other martial arts experts could display a Sword qi. Therefore, he suddenly understood that he could be the one behind this sneak attack.

Now he had just two options left, facing his death or a serious injury, naturally, he would choose getting seriously injured over other.

His head slanted quickly to avoid this ice blue Sword qi, however, a burst of very cold air passed over scratching him, leaving behind a deep bloodstain on his face. At this propitious moment when Long Mo'ran was in an injured state, that expert of God Fist Gate didn't want to let go of this excellent opportunity.

Paochui Fist!

"Bang" a dull thumping sound passed on, his fist, holding extremely penetrating power, directly across the water, hit Long Mo'ran on his chest terribly.

Puff!

The moment his fist hit Long Mo'ran, he spouted a mouthful of fresh blood and then, in a flash, his stature turned around and fled towards the distant place.

If it were a land, then this catastrophic punch of that expert was dangerous enough to completely shatter the heart of Long Mo'ran at once! Unfortunately, in such a disordered seabed, the impact of his punch was offset by the water, because of which Long Mo'ran could save his life.

In the martial arts world, one plus one could be far more than two, it was such a simple theory.

If singled out, then Long Mo'ran had an overwhelming advantage over both, either facing Ye Feng or God Fist gate's expert. But in such a harsh environment, facing attacks from both sides and that also one after another, he couldn't take it and was got badly injured.

Ye Feng wanted to pursue injured Long Mo'ran to get rid of him then and there, but right at this time, noticed that the expert of God Fist Gate turned

back. Relying on his slight intuition, he could feel it was the same devastating fist, thrown by the opposite party, directly aiming towards him.

Obviously, that man also recognised his identity.

For Ye Feng, God Fist Gate also held its own share of considerable hatred!

At this instant, his stature instantly moved and avoided the fist of the opposite party, at the same time, also reached elegantly in the middle of the sea while escaping a giant ice piece like a flying saucer.

That flat flying saucer-type ice, from Ye Feng's side, dashed towards that expert, carrying a huge speed and slashed him!

Ye Feng could sense through his Soul Search that he was a fifty-year-old middle-aged man, who used to look mediocre and had just one unique thing about him and that seemed to be his high temple.

Unfortunately, such a formidable martial arts expert, although noticed a huge ice piece approaching speedily, but didn't get enough time to escape.

In a hurry, he swam in an upward direction, but the speed was not fast enough, that flying saucer-shaped ice suddenly hit him in the middle! Because of its huge impact, the man was directly thrown to the bottom of the sea and was cut off into two pieces right from his waist!

The smell of blood quickly spread nearby sea water.

"Not only the sea water is getting colder, but these floating ice pieces are also simultaneously increasing crazily"

Ye Feng's heart shivered for a second, he swept his Soul Search and found that the other two people of Long Clan were already around Long Mo'ran for the protection of their Clan's head.

It seemed like temporarily he couldn't kill the opposite party

He understood the situation, if he appeared again, then the other two experts of Long Clan would certainly kill him in a twinkling of an eye. Hence for the sake of his own small life, he finally gave up the alluring idea of killing Long Mo'ran now.

His stature moved and rapidly advanced towards the other side, to compete

with a heap of people fighting for the big Coral King.

At this time, the big Coral King was still in the hands of an expert of God Fist Gate, who was constantly fleeing towards the seacoast. While the rest of the people were in a great mess behind, blocking each other to let that God Fist Gate's guy take away the fruit.

Ye Feng simultaneously displayed Invisibility to make himself completely hidden from the eyes of the other people. Afterwards, conveniently, he held a big ice piece to make a shield. Then he swam towards that fellow, all prepared to assassinate him and capture the big Coral King.

However, God Fist Gate's expert immediately sensed that an ice piece was approaching fast, so very vigilantly, he moved aside to escape it. However, at this instant, Ye Feng suddenly flashed from behind the ice piece and rained numerous punches heavily on his chest!

This sudden attack stunned the opposite party for a moment!

He had never thought that there would be someone hiding behind that ice piece like a ghost in general!

It was not accidental, on the one hand, Ye Feng's fist hit the opposite party, while on the other hand, his Zhenqi surged and condensed in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring.

A golden light flashed.

Puff!

In a flash, the golden Zhenqi sword congealed out and just like how a bean curd was cut, it jabbed into the chest of the opposite party!

Ping!

However, that expert wielded his fist at the point of his death and pounded heavily on Ye Feng's shoulder, his frightening and devastating inner qi all of a sudden smashed Ye Feng's right shoulder thoroughly!

Ye Feng clenched his teeth as he started swimming single-handedly to grab the big Coral King.

"He is that boy!"

The other people immediately realised the change, the underwater searchlights were all of a sudden hit open and illuminated the translucent form of Ye Feng!

Chapter 182 -> Underwater speed

Although these martial artists originally wanted to snatch away the big Coral King from one another, but when the sudden accident occurred, they all united together. Now that the big Coral King was actually taken away by someone else, this group of people could no longer keep patience and in succession, switched on their searchlights.

He was the masked man!

Under the intense light of the searchlights, Ye Feng's translucent body form all of a sudden got exposed in front of people!

Because Ye Feng's shoulder was terribly crushed by the fist of an expert of God Fist Gate, so he was facing little problem in breathing. Besides, since his fresh blood was dripping from his crushed shoulder, hence his Invisibility Technique immediately expired, making his stature half exposed!

"What's the matter with this guy, why does he look like a ghost?"

"He hasn't even worn a diving suit!"

"What's wrong with him, kill him! "

A group of people started talking in whispers, they didn't want to think much, simply advanced towards Ye Feng, all geared up since they wanted to finish him once and for all!

In the icy-cold seabed, all of a sudden a group of hungry tigers advanced towards Ye Feng to kill him, however, he didn't panic a bit, smoothly slipped the big Coral king into his coat together with the other 12 small corals.

Afterwards, just like a fish, he swung his both legs and along with the water current, slid more than ten meters away instantaneously.

His underwater speed was twice faster than other people!

But unfortunately, his shoulder had suffered a severe injury, that last blow had almost cut off his whole right arm, just remaining few muscles of his shoulder were connected together.

This injury greatly impaired his speed. In order to avoid being caught up, he started making distance as soon as possible between him and the others. But now, he was unable to endure any more, hence he waved his left hand and displayed Holy Cure Technique!

Just a moment ago, he had absorbed a small coral to refill his Zhenqi, which got almost exhausted quite soon, but his shoulder was finally fifty percent restored, now at least he could act freely.

Upon seeing that a golden light flashed and then the wound of Ye Feng's shoulder all of a sudden healed up, all the martial artists, who were chasing him, were totally stunned, this kid was too scary, wasn't he?

"Romantic Sword Technique – Sweep away scattered clouds Sword qi!"

Just then, a dull roar spread from behind the crowd, immediately followed by a Sword qi, which rushed splitting the turbulent sea current, directly towards Ye Feng, with an extremely fast speed!

It was Log Mo'ran, after getting protection from other two Long people, finally, he caught up with them. But the moment he saw Ye Feng, immediately launched his favourite Sword qi.

At this instant, Ye Feng swept his Soul Search and after getting the crystal clear picture of the surrounding situation, he decided that he shouldn't continue going towards another side to evade this attack. Hence he finally selected a direction, the deeper he would dive, the darker it would get simultaneously!

The direction that he chose was exactly that place in the sea where a large number of massive ice pieces were floating. In any case, there was the existence of Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique and if he again relied on his Soul Search, then passing such an abyssal environment would be much easier for him.

However, for Long Mo'ran, waiting for someone to reply was a totally different case.

"Damn, doesn't that kid actually court his death?"

The Sword qi of Long Mo'ran was cast aside by the turbulent current, which made his heart burn with anger. He thought that the masked man was a fool because neither had worn a diving suit, nor had any diving equipment, but still

dared to come in such a deep-sea environment.

“He is running towards the deeper place.”

The facial expression of Long Clan’s expert immediately sank.

“He wants to die, we can’t lose the big Coral King. Pursue!”

Long Mo’ran issued an order without a bit of hesitation, at the same time, he coughed up two mouthfuls of blood, however, he still continued pursuing him.

He was gradually getting deeper from the sea surface, besides, the water current also started getting more and more turbulent, accompanied by a sharp decline in the temperature. Now the ice pieces also started showing up more and more, as if they were washed out from some central place.

But still, no one wanted to give up.

Although many of them had already obtained few small corals, but still, a small coral could only promote one’s cultivation by two years, while this theory didn’t go with the big Coral King.

Soon it seemed that they had actually underestimated the danger and risk of the present seabed. They didn’t even go much deeper chasing him, but one unlucky fellow was suddenly drawn into the turbulent whirlpool. Even though he tried to escape but completely failed!

There were several broken ice pieces floating in that whirlpool, which were just like a sharp blade. Shortly after that fellow was curled up, he encountered the torture of being directly cut into pieces and very quickly, was torn into several pieces.

But for Ye Feng, depending upon his Soul Search Technique, he could effectively prevent himself from getting stuck in this turbulent whirlpool, but others couldn’t. Even if there were underwater searchlights, but still a naked eye couldn’t see an invisible turbulent flow of water!

Ye Feng smoothly submerged deep into the sea, where he passed through several perilous whirlpools one after another, simultaneously avoiding the floating sharp ice pieces, quite smoothly.

But for other martial artists, they were actually trembling with fear and were

facing huge difficulty in proceeding further!

Soon, Ye Feng finally spread out from other martial artists.

At this moment, Long Mo'ran looked totally dissatisfied, hence he immediately ordered: "Turn on the jet propeller and pursue!"

"But Clan Head, in such a chaotic seabed using jet propeller, I am afraid, perhaps it's inappropriate"

Immediately, one of the experts of Long Clan replied with a bit of hesitation.

The jet propeller was country's one of the best example of science and technology. If it was used in the tranquil sea water, it could increase the speed of movement multiple times. However now in such a disordered seabed, if was used, then a little carelessness from their end occurred and this jet propeller would throw them to the place beyond redemption!

Such as, what if it rushed into a whirlpool and bumped into a sharp ice piece or so on, the risk would enormously increase.

"There is nothing inappropriate. Turn on!"

Long Mo'ran didn't want to think about it logically, immediately he pressed down a button present on his diving suit.

The diving suit which they were using was indeed a high-tech product. Once its button was pressed on, immediately two jets spurted out gas from its bottom and all of a sudden enhanced his speed several times!

On seeing this, the remaining two Long Clan's martial artists looked at each other helplessly, because now they had to do the same. Once they turned on their jet propeller, their speed also suddenly soared!

Following Ye Feng's route, these three people dashed towards his direction and soon arrived quite closer to him.

"This kid dares to run towards this place, in that case, he must have an assurance. Since we are closely following his route, we shouldn't encounter any danger."

Long Mo'ran's train of thoughts started racing, undoubtedly Ye Feng couldn't be an idiot, just for the sake of this big Coral King, he would put his life on the

line. As for Ye Feng's identity, he had now more and more doubts, at the same time, his abilities also somewhat aroused curiosity in Long Moran's heart. He had only ten years of Cultivation, but could still display Sword qi and on top of that, could still play with a group of martial arts experts so easily?

"As long as we seize this masked man, must interrogate and torture him quite well."

He made up his mind, finally at this time, he was less than ten meters away from Ye Feng!

When other martial artists saw him turning on his jet propeller to pursue rapidly, they turned little disappointed, since they didn't have the courage to rush past him.

Eventually, some people started shrinking back, for them the most important thing was even if they pursued him, the big Coral King wouldn't necessarily fall in their hands, so why would they take the risk? Might as well, they should early retreat to ensure their safety, besides, they still had a few small corals, so it wouldn't be considered as a big loss.

Naturally, these small corals must be immediately absorbed once they returned, otherwise, once they were separated from their companion big Coral, their spiritual energy used to immediately start dissipating.

.....

Ye Feng went much deeper and quite soon, was more than 10 kilometres away from the coastline.

At this point of time, finally Long Mo'ran was forced to smile, now he had to admit it after all! Ye Feng didn't just run away while absorbing the spiritual energy of a small coral, but in the meantime, he also treated his shoulder's injury which was now 70-80 percent recovered and then again supplemented his Zhenqi completely.

Any treasure could enhance one's Cultivation only during its first absorption and in the future, could only restore one's Zhenqi. In any case, Ye Feng had several small corals, hence he wasn't afraid of using it, after all, he must give priority to his life.

While Long Mo'ran was pursuing him, suddenly an idea hit his mind.

Shua!

Ye Feng didn't think anything, immediately the golden sword emerged out in his hand as he turned around, at the same time, Beheading Dragon Sword qi surged up violently and suddenly, quite forcefully rushed towards Long Mo'ran!

Chapter 183 -> An extremely cold ice wall

The icy-blue Sword qi, splitting open the turbulent flow of water, rapidly moved towards Long Mo'ran's face.

“Clan Head!”

The other two experts of Long Clan saw that and immediately exclaimed aloud. They clearly knew that just recently, his chest had suffered a heavy injury, so it would be certainly difficult for him to block this Sword qi!

However, on the other side, Long Mo'ran was all determined to save his face, so he thought that while facing a youngster if he dodged his blow, wouldn't he look very pathetic?

He didn't want to let that happen, hence quickly started condensing his inner qi in the hollow of his both palms, and the next moment, Gentle Palm Technique, first style – Cloud Arrangement! At first, he released his inner qi from his body, then instantly condensed it into the form of a rich Palm qi and finally, bravely welcomed the icy-blue Sword qi.

Buzz!

A muffled sound, accompanied with the arousing layers of waves, swept all around as the Palm qi and Sword qi collided with each other and instantly set off an intense mighty wave!

The place where the collision took place, right from there a formation of whirlpool immediately started. Its volume was much bigger and it instantly took the form of a bloody whirlpool!

Ye Feng didn't stay there any further second, his body moved and he started proceeding forward!

But under such circumstances, Long Mo'ran along with other two people quickly closed his jet propeller. They hesitated a bit because the collision, which had taken place between inner qi and Zhenqi, had led to the formation of a turbulent whirlpool, making them withdraw at once.

Unfortunately, if they got stuck into it, that would be certainly the end of their

lives!

A natural barrier suddenly turned these three people totally unable to follow Ye Feng furthermore. Besides, it would be definitely like courting death if they still continue pursuing him in this dangerous seabed.

“Go back, inform everyone, mobilise the strength of the common people, begin the coastal search, I don’t believe that he will stay hiding in the sea forever and will never come out!

Long Mo’ran was also a quite decisive person, seeing that things didn’t go as per his speculation, immediately made the most appropriate decision.

Afterwards, the three people turned around and departed.

Once again they passed through the hellish kind of treacherous seabed and then quickly returned to the shore, where they straightaway took out the reward they harvested just now and found that altogether they had obtained seven small corals.

Unfortunately, Long Mo’ran was in a severely injured state, because he had been smashed by an expert of God Fist Gate, causing a severe blood clot in his chest. But the things didn’t stop here, later on, while blocking Ye Feng’s blow, the internal injuries of his chest got worsened, making him a bit more critical.

After reaching the shore, when they looked around, then noticed that several people had also successively landed not far from the coast. Originally, altogether twelve martial artists had entered the sea, however, only seven people could return alive.

While the rest five people were buried in the seabed.

But interestingly, not all martial artists had stepped into the sea to compete for the big Coral King, instead few of them had some grudges, so they just wanted to take advantage of this opportunity and use ruthless methods in the bottom of the sea.

In contrast, Long Clan didn’t have any deceased person, so it had been regarded as an unusually lucky clan.

“Mo’ran, it’s a little strange, but that young boy?”

In a somewhat distressed state, a white-bearded old man also arose from the shallow water. He was that Nandou God Fist, Xu Xiaoyu of God Fist Gate.

“Died.”

Long Mo’ran coldly swept his eyes around, directing his people to leave at once. He was gravely injured by a martial artist of God Fist Gate, so naturally Xu Xiaoyu couldn’t have any favourable impression for him.

Xu Xiaoyu looked at Long Moran’s back while thinking that big Coral King didn’t seem to be with them.

Were the big Coral King and the masked kid got buried together in the seabed?

He turned around to look towards the sea surface, still, waves were surging violently one after another. It seemed like this nasty weather would last forever and still, nobody knew what matter had led to such a perilous and unusual weather.

Obviously, he also knew that the NSA had already started a thorough investigation of this matter, but it looked like it didn’t have any prospect.

Should he attempt to have a look again?

He considered for a moment, then turned around and walked towards the northern direction. He must go back to the central zone of Xiangshan County, in order to take a rest, then after could make a new plan.

The weather of the East China Sea suddenly got nastier, perhaps there would be some other treasure taking birth somewhere. Moreover, on seeing this intensity, it seemed like the treasure would be much precious than the big Coral King! If he could investigate it, then could get his hand on it for sure.

.....

Ye Feng eventually got rid of Long Mo’ran and other two Long people but still kept moving ahead constantly under the water.

He wanted to go forward deeper into the sea to examine why the weather had turned so nastier, that way he might suddenly bump into Su Feiying, it couldn’t be better than this.

Now that he didn’t have any pursuing troop, he was much relaxed. Only this

kind of strange seabed environment was something intriguing him and was totally inconceivable for him. In the World of the Immortals, there used to have hundred times greater danger all over if compared with this current weather. Even he along with Su Feiying had experienced this kind of weather a lot of times there.

He went further into the deep sea, water was gradually getting colder, while the entire sea was covered with frost. At this time, small ice sludges also started showing up. Even though he was in the water, but his sensitivity completely failed to avoid them and soon was suddenly smashed by one of them, causing a terrible burning pain.

From time to time, much bigger ice pieces, like a several-storied building, started hitting him similarly like before. Now he really needed to do something in advance so that he could avoid such large ice pieces. At this moment, he suddenly noticed a building-sized ice piece rushed far away and then was broken into several pieces by the turbulent current.

Because of those broken pieces, the deep sea water was entirely covered with several sharp knives. Now the seabed might be called as the place of death.

However, he still kept on moving ahead and once again got hit directly on his face. Ultimately he was compelled by the circumstances to use that technique which he had never used so far. Immediately his Zhenqi rushed outside his body and condensed into a form of Protective Shield, to block the attack of these ice sludges.

This kind of Protective Shield used to consume enormous Zhenqi, therefore it couldn't be pulled for a long time. If Ye Feng's Cultivation would be higher later, then could easily display this Immortal Technique with certainly much better effect than the current one. What a pity, he hadn't yet reached that level.

As he was moving ahead, was getting more and more far from the coastline, 20 kilometres, 30 kilometres

Finally after swimming more than 30 kilometres, suddenly something appeared within the range of his Soul Search which was there right in front of him, beyond 100 meters. Just like a sudden appearance of a monster, the entire seabed was actually blocked by an ice wall, right in his front!

Unconsciously, he arrived at that position which had been actually detected by the NSA and that location was nearly 20 nautical miles away.

An iceberg island in front of him!

That was a spectacular picture, even he was taken aback. He had never thought that on this planet, in such a modern city, he would run into such a stirring scene. Besides, he must know that this place was neither the North Pole nor the South Pole, but still there was the existence of such a giant-sized iceberg island.

An extremely cold ice wall was lying in front of him, blocking his way. In the dark seabed, this ice wall was exuding a shallow white light, making the surrounding sea area look like a wonderland.

Besides, he noticed that there weren't many fishes in the whole sea area, definitely, the sudden change in the weather would have forced them to leave this place.

The intuition of animals had always been much sharper than humans.

The entire ice wall, which had grown from the bottom of the deep sea, was just like an iron bucket, which had encircled the particular sea area. Standing tall above the sea level, it constituted an intriguing iceberg island.

In fact, this was not an island but a layer of the ice shell.

Interestingly, a layer of its mysterious energy not only had blocked the satellite detection of the NSA but had also blocked Ye Feng's Soul Search detection range, making him totally unable to know what could be there inside the layer of this thick ice wall.

"Beheading Dragon Sword qi!"

Since he had again absorbed a small coral, hence he didn't hesitate to make an effort to cut off this ice wall by his sword.

However, the real strength his Sword qi had before, he couldn't use that in this condition. But still, the might of the present Sword qi couldn't be overlooked. When his icy-blue Sword qi hit the ice wall, it could actually only create a fist-sized small hole on the ice wall.

Quite soon, a very cold air passed from inside the ice wall and supplemented the small hole, the restoration speed of which was extremely fast!

“This a little resembles like

Ye Feng’s heart moved a beat as he thought of some kind of a possibility.

Chapter 184 -> Star Arrow

There was the legend in the World of the Immortals that there, towards the extreme north, there was the existence of a rare holy treasure, a thousand years old thick and mysterious ice.

That was genuinely the most precious treasure in the whole world, but it also had the sense of self-awareness! Whenever it used to suffer the invasion of an outsider Immortal Cultivator, it used to immediately take the initiative to release a layer of a very cold ice wall, to block the attack.

At present, Ye Feng encountered the similar situation, which implanted some doubts in his mind. The things which were the legend in the Immortals' World, why were they actually, continually appearing on the earth? Moreover, it also didn't appear in the extreme north.

A thousand years of mysterious ice, which contained the strength of inexhaustible mysterious ice and which gradually took this mighty form after going through a thousand years of a time period, was indeed incredible. The first time absorption of this thing could enhance one's Cultivation by at least ten years and then, it could also very rapidly self-restore its spiritual energy. If Ye Feng could recognise it as the thousand years of mysterious ice, then could also provide other people to absorb.

It was said that in the Immortals' World, towards the extreme north, there was a great martial arts sect, called Town Faction and the treasure they had was the same a thousand years old mysterious ice. Because of that, each of its elite disciples had ten years of Cultivation from the beginning!

This was very unfair there, but the same thing also happened on the earth. Looking at the family ground on the earth, it could be seen that handful of people were the children of extremely rich entrepreneurs and so on, while the maximum number of people had to start from the beginning, right from scratch. In case they didn't work hard, then were doomed to live in wretched poverty throughout their lives.

Two separate worlds had astonishing similarity, it was just that in the

Immortals' World, there were abundant of plunders.

“If it is really the thousand years of mysterious ice, then it must be extraordinary

Ye Feng's heart was in huge shock, this area certainly needed a thorough investigation!

Naturally, depending on his present strength, he could never break this ice wall, in addition, his meridians could only withstand maximum thirteen years of Cultivation. Although he had the big Coral King right now, but couldn't absorb it, otherwise, there was a great possibility that his meridians couldn't contain it and might burst. It was indeed a sad reminder for him.

“I should return to make Wan'er absorb it and attain fifteen years of Cultivation. Then after, she can practice Star Arrow depending on the intelligence of her body of Immortal arteries, then I guess she should be able to break open this ice wall.”

Star Arrow was one of the Immortal Techniques of Star Tomb Sect, which needed just fifteen years of Cultivation to begin practising it.

After the absorption of the strength of group stars, it used to condense and turn into the Starlight Arrow, the penetrating power of which was extremely vigorous! If the absorption was carried out for a longer period, then one could attain enormous power, even at 15 years of Cultivation, one could display techniques possessing strength equivalent to a hundred years of Cultivation's blow.

In the Immortals' World, this technique wouldn't have much use, because, in the battle, one could never give time to his opponent to gather power. Even in the case of sneak attack, one could get easily found by the opponent before he could complete his absorption process. And the most critical point was once this technique started to gather the strength, it couldn't change the direction of its emission.

“It will save almost fifty percent of the time, breaking this ice wall shouldn't be a problem.

After making a perfect plan, Ye Feng turned around at once and rushed

through the water to return.

The longest time needed by Star Arrow to gather the strength was just half an hour, within this period it could absorb enough power of the stars, allowing its might and penetrating power to reach their maximum limit. However, if it didn't execute the instant release of the gathered strength, then its power couldn't be compared with Beheading Dragon Sword qi.

To defeat this ice wall, which was a kind of a fixed target, Star Arrow was an excellent choice.

He swam all the way back to the shore, his stature was still nimble and resourceful and didn't meet any accident all along. Besides, in the seabed, he also coincidentally encountered a corpse and picked up two small corals from him. Perhaps after getting separated from the big Coral, the spiritual energy of these two small corals had already been very much depleted.

The big Coral King and small corals belonged to the associated relationship, if separated with each other, then couldn't preserve their spiritual energy after a certain time.

Ye Feng could feel that the spiritual energy of the big Coral King was also dissipating gradually, just like the previous half Lingshi in general.

"Before in the World of the Immortals, I had never heard such a strange material treasure, it seems like, on this planet, there are really lots of treasure everywhere."

Ye Feng thought: "Once this matter is settled, then probably I can walk everywhere, the harvest is certainly not small."

He relieved the effect of Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique, embarked on the shore and immediately displayed Invisibility once again. Soon he discovered that in the woods nearby shore, there were several martial artists in an ambush, on seeing their attires, it seemed that they belonged to a particular martial arts sect.

"Hehe, you just wait, elder brother won't accompany you to play."

Ye Feng smiled, then noiselessly he passed through the woods without getting found by anyone!

He continued proceeding ahead and soon returned to the village where he had taken shelter along with his people before. At this moment, when he swept his Soul Search Technique around, then suddenly narrowed his eyes and thought that did this place actually had so many people around even before?

Interesting!

.....

At this very moment, on the other side, Thunder was actually leading the NSA squad to enter the raging waves of the deadly sea.

Even their sophisticated speed boats were unable to pass through the intense mighty waves region, to at least get even a half step close to that iceberg island . As a matter of great importance, Thunder had already applied to the Navy to mobilise 052 missile cruisers to help them.

Now they could only wait for them near the shore.

Thunder tightly frowned because such strange weather had never occurred during his whole term of office, neither he knew what exactly happened after all.

Fortunately, the coastline wasn't affected by it, might be because the scope of that iceberg island would have stopped expanding, making Thunder feel a little relieved. After all, his primary goal was to ensure the safety of his country's people and property.

"Captain Thunder, please receive the latest news."

At this time, a dignified voice suddenly spread from his intercom : "Not long ago the military base probed into the military port city of the US to check the movement, most likely they are interested in this strange and giant appearance, must be prepared in advance! "

"Yes, understood."

Thunder's complexion suddenly turned solemn.

Sure enough, this sort of matter couldn't stay hidden from the military power across the Pacific Ocean.

The Iceberg Island was located within the scope of the territorial water of China, so opposite party definitely couldn't dare to blatantly break in.

Nevertheless, he must be prepared ahead of time, so as to avoid being caught off guard at that time.

.....

The seashore small village, in a multistoried building.

When Ye Feng left the village, Long Wan'er couldn't remain peaceful for so long, consequently displayed Soul Search Technique all around and discovered that several people were sneaking in the forest which was not far from the small hill.

At first, she did not care and thought that these people came over here accidentally.

However, quite soon, she found the goal of the opposite party!

Because of Soul Search Technique, she could now also hear the conversation of the opposite party even from quite a distance. When those bludgers were talking, they were frequently mentioning "mask" "a man and a woman" and some other related words, making her instantly understand what the goal of the opposite party was, it was she and Ye Feng!

All of a sudden she recalled that in the morning when they were departing from the hotel, at that time they had encountered a sumptuous youth, wearing a dog-shaped ancient jade.

When she heard them chatting, talking about what Wang Shaodong wanted them to do "Kill the masked man and throw him into the sea" she turned angry.

Wasn't he kicked in the hotel, then what was this killing and then throwing into the sea all about?

She wanted to teach them a good lesson right away!

But very quickly, she repressed her impulsion to run out alone.

Because when she swept her Soul Search in other directions, then found that there actually appeared another strange person not far away from their building! That person was a man, wearing a black windproof coat. On looking at his appearance, it seemed that he was a foreigner. In this dreary rustling wind, he stood alone on the hilltop, carrying a small-sized crossbow arrow behind his

back, overall was looking extremely mystical.

Who was that?

Long Wan'er neither knew that person, nor wanted to take any risk, hence immediately called Shu Shu and Nan Fang and started discussing with them.

"He is an exorcist!"

Nan Fang went upstairs, heard the description given by Long Wan'er and suddenly his complexion changed. It was clear that he was indeed a mysterious foreigner who was simultaneously very dreadful!

Chapter 185 -> An exorcist

When Ye Feng returned, immediately swept his Soul Search and found that Long Wan'er together with other two people was upstairs. Probably they were discussing someone's appearance, while that Taiji Palace's youth was still in the deep slumber.

In addition, there were also five young hooligans present in that building's courtyard, who were trying to cross the courtyard's walls to enter the house.

"Just inform Wang Shao, he will have to quickly bring people over here, before then, let's handle this matter efficiently!"

"Boss, you really want to kill him?"

"Nonsense, at present this area is already under the effect of this dangerous tidal wave, we just have to kill him and throw him into the sea, that's all. Do you even know the reward Wang Shao is offering us on the completion of this task? It's one million! If we divide this sum equally among us, each one would have a share of 200,000. So we must kill that fellow maintaining complete secrecy so that no one can discover "

The fact was Wang Shaodong had actually offered two million to the boss but more than one million was swallowed by him.

For this kind of small punks of Xiangshan County, not to mention two million, even two lakhs were more than enough to make them work to death!

Ye Feng didn't come forward because for him, these small bludgers were not worth paying attention. Even though these five had iron rods in their hands, still they could never be Long Mo'ran's opponents.

He simply hid outside the building as he just wanted to see how Long Wan'er would deal with them. Besides, he also discovered another person with a mysterious appearance and unique personality.

That mysterious person was the same man clad in a black windproof coat, carrying a small-sized crossbow arrow behind, apparently had a quite trendy appearance. He was just standing alone on the hilltop, drenching in the pouring

rain but still he actually didn't even slightly wrinkle his brows.

“Who is this fellow?”

Ye Feng didn't take the initiative to come forward, although he could sense using his Soul Search that the man was not a martial artist, but had a dangerous aura around him. Confronting such an unknown and strange person, he thought that better he should tighten his guard.

Again he swept around and heard the conversation going on in the building, as per that it seemed that Nan Fang had actually recognized this guy, then, they played a clever game and decided to let Long Wan'er deal with them first then they would think about any other thing.

By this time, those five punks, holding iron rods, had already sneaked into the building. By passing through the icy-cold water up to their knees, trembling all the way, they finally set foot on the stairs leading to the second floor.

However suddenly from upstairs “bang, bang” sound echoed twice, as if something was broken into pieces. Then, one by one, the pieces of glass rained those five on the staircase!

In the utter darkness of the damp corridor, those five were using flashlights, so they immediately saw those glass pieces approaching but actually had no enough time to react. Consequently, various large and small pieces of glass jabbed into their bodies, immediately leading to pitiful screams and yells from all direction!

It was Nan Fang's hand which threw these glass pieces.

He had just learnt Crying Ghost Blade Technique but since he didn't have a flying blade at that moment, hence could only break two beer bottles to use the fragments of its glass as flying knife.

The martial arts techniques and Immortal Techniques were quite different because to practice an Immortal Technique, Cultivation was essentially required. However, until now, Ye Feng hadn't seen anything proving that the martial arts also needed Cultivation for practising it.

As long as there was a martial arts book and inner qi inside, one could practice!

It was just that how the martial arts techniques could display their effect, even though they were closely related to Cultivation. At present Nan Fang's Cultivation was very low, that was the reason why the might of the glass fragments thrown by him was just slightly more than the average person.

But still, that was sufficient enough to make these five small punks pee in their pants in terror.

"Lying trough! That boy is there, upstairs!"

"Boss, my leg has been hit by a bullet!"

"You piece of a shit! Quickly take something to block his attack!"

These people endured the pain caused by the glass fragments and decided to go all the way to the end just because of the share of 2 lakhs! They went downstairs, lifted a table before their bodies like a shield and then, like a turtle, went upstairs slowly, quite cautiously.

After being pierced by the fragments of glass, they were constantly bleeding, however, they didn't a bit care about it, because the 2 lakhs was glittering before their eyes and was constantly invoking them.

However, they barely arrived upstairs and suddenly heard a young girl's loud voice, immediately followed by a strong kick, which heavily hit the table they had lifted.

A burst of crazy fierce strength passed through the table and hit those five, making them suddenly roll down the staircase. That kick was purposely thrown to heavily injure them so that they couldn't prop up right away.

This was actually Long Wan'er's shot, although now she had transformed into an Immortal Cultivator, but was still quite familiar with her Long Clan's Dragon Leg Technique. In case she used Dragon Tail Technique right now, then these five hooligans would be knocked out straight away.

"Get lost."

At this moment, a cold voice spread from the downstairs, it was actually Ye Feng who finally walked inside the building, picked up those five punks and threw them out of the courtyard directly into the icy-cold water which had inundated

to their knees' height.

These kind of small punks were actually not a threat, so Ye Feng didn't want to kill them and dirty his own hands. Just now, how badly they were hit by Nan Fang and then immediately after, got kicked by Long Wan'er really hard. Because of these back to back attacks, they were really seriously injured.

"Ye Feng."

At this time, Long Wan'er suddenly noticed that Ye Feng had finally returned, making her feel pleasantly surprised and she immediately ran down the stairs towards him.

When Ye Feng was in the Immortals' world, he often used to completely shield himself so that other's Soul Search couldn't detect him, therefore, just now, Long Wan'er also couldn't sense him.

"First come up, I have to discuss a matter with you."

Ye Feng smiled as he spread his hands and swoop her up in his bosom. When the aroma of her body reached his nose, it made him have a kind of warm feeling.

"Hmm."

Long Wan'er nodded, then embraced his neck and held him tight and close.

Ye Feng was helpless, he had to embrace her to go upstairs. At this time, Shu Shu and Nan Fang were in a bedroom, arranging a candle. Since the tide struck the house, therefore now it didn't have the electricity, so they could only use candles for lighting.

On seeing Ye Feng, holding Long Wan'er, suddenly walked in, Shu Shu covered her mouth and smiled : "Sit quickly, how was everything, you didn't get hurt, right?"

"It's nothing."

Ye Feng shook his head, the broken bone he had on his shoulder due to the punch had already been almost treated by him. Although he still had a lingering pain there, but it didn't affect his motion at all.

For this kind of wound, Holy Cure Technique was enough to treat it easily.

However, in the World of the Immortals, there used to have several categories of wounds, such as wounds caused by mysterious ice Zhenqi, lava Zhenqi, the strength of stars and the like, which certainly couldn't be cured by this Holy Cure Technique.

“Nan Fang, who is that guy outside wearing a black windproof coat?”

Ye Feng entered the room and immediately asked Nan Fang about this.

“An exorcist, he is a global killer who has already made his entry in the list of world's top 100 experts and is also one of the members of Viper Organization.”

Nan Fang's tone dignified as he said.

“Viper?”

Ye Feng gawked.

“Elder brother Ye, I have something important to say.”

Nan Fang said: “Since you are the masked man Mo Jiuge and during your last trip, that dark-skinned sniper you had killed outside the highway, he was actually one of the members of Viper. This is an international killer organisation who recruits a lot of experts and this exorcist is the gold medal killer of Viper!

“Why does he appear here?”

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows.

“If I guess right, his goal is you, Ye elder brother.”

Nan Fang was very affirmative as he said: “Viper has lost its precious man because of you and naturally this gathering place will attract their attention

“Is he powerful?”

Long Wa'ner, while letting herself completely melt in Ye Feng's arms, asked an important question.

Nan Fang heard that and immediately smiled bitterly: “Regarding his strength, I am not clear, but it is said that once he received a task to come to this country China and kill the then notorious and most wanted criminal of the martial arts world, Xingchen Xueren!”

“What, Xingchen Xueren, but he had 40 years of Cultivation, so this fellow actually turned out to be that guy

Long Wan’er covered her mouth and called out in alarm all of a sudden.

However, right at this moment, Ye Feng and Long Wan’er simultaneously realized that stood in the black windproof coat outside on the hilltop, that exorcist suddenly started moving quite fast towards their building!

Chapter 186 -> A fierce battle in the rainy night

The moment that exorcist set out, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er immediately sensed his movement.

"Get ready, you protect your Aunt, Nan Fang, you just play it by ear and let me deal with him."

Ye Feng promptly arrived in front of Long Wan'er and Shu Shu to shield them, then, while facing towards the balcony, said that holding a dignified expression.

"I am with you."

Long Wan'er tenaciously leant on him by completely ignoring his order.

"I can also help."

Nan Fang again picked up two beer bottles.

"I can also."

Shu Shu also weakly raised a kitchen knife.

"....."

Neither Ye Feng could speak anything, nor had enough time to persuade. By now, that exorcist had already arrived at the courtyard outside the building, afterwards, he leapt gently and sprang up under the rainy night. Soon a figure wearing a black coat appeared on the balcony of the room where everyone was gathered!

Taking advantage of the weak candlelight, Shu Shu and Nan Fang immediately looked at him and finally saw his appearance. Since they didn't have Soul Search Technique, hence they could only helplessly listen to the description given by Long Wan'er and Ye Feng.

"It's really him, Nigusi Ding."

Nan Fang's complexion sank as he confirmed the identity of the opposite party.

"Sir, what brings you here?"

Ye Feng stood in front of those three, then raised his head facing the balcony and asked from Nigusi Ding, the exorcist.

“Gu la gua la?”

He had a very large hat on his head which had completely covered his face, making people unable to see him clearly. Besides, the words he just spoke were a series of French words!

Ye Feng heard him and suddenly felt like a stupid, although he had taken Su Menghan’s help before in his studies, because of which now he could somewhat understand English, but French, he certainly couldn’t understand a bit! This was just excellent, now how could they communicate?

At this time, Long Wan’er opened her mouth and delicately spoke a series of fluent French words, which was as sweet and melodious as an oriole’s song, indeed an extremely pleasant voice!

She could actually speak French!

All of a sudden, Ye Feng was dumbfounded at this sight, in addition, this also went against the heaven’s will, how could a martial artist be like this?

“Idiot, keeping pace with the times, understood?”

Long Wan’er said that as she quietly pinched him and softly explained everything to him: “He is asking you that do you want to join Viper organisation? The person you have killed some time ago was the member of his organisation, so unless you join them, they will continuously keep trying to chase you down.”

Join Viper?

Ye Feng heard this and abruptly burst out laughing, this really was a good idea, but unfortunately, he didn’t have even the slightest bit of interest to be a killer. Obviously, he knew that in this kind of huge international killer organisation, there should have some extremely strict rules and regulations, hence once joined, it would become very difficult to come out of its clutch.

“You tell him that I still like to live a bit freely.”

Ye Feng said in a lower voice.

Such a straightforward refusal, so that meant the opposite party was probably

about to launch his attack to obliterate him, right?

Very obviously Long Wan'er also thought so, therefore as she opened her mouth, simultaneously loosened Ye Feng's arm, since she didn't want to become a burden in this fight.

When Nigusi Ding heard her reply, then smiled in a very soft voice. His voice was very delicate which made it seem like he should be an under 30 years old young man. At this moment, he extended his white arm, immediately pressed his black hat and suddenly a cold wind rushed toward Ye Feng!

"A hidden weapon?"

Ye Feng was already alert all along, hence he immediately responded. He waved his hand and the golden sword light flashed, "Shua" and instantly blocked the hidden weapon thrown by him, simultaneously made it fly!

This was a similar bullet-like small-sized silver drill bit, which was actually hidden in his hat. If it was used to kill an ordinary person, then absolutely no one could escape it.

Unfortunately, the person he met was Ye Feng.

"Oh?"

Nigusi Ding was slightly surprised, even he couldn't see it clearly, then, how Ye Feng could block his silver drill which had been projected by him!

That small silver drill bit was originally obscured, so seeing it under such a dark night should be even more difficult. Although there was a candle lit in the room, but still, how could an ordinary martial artist respond to it that fast?

In other words, did this boy have the accurate intuition of and judgment on the danger in advance?

Such a person, he hadn't encountered this kind of experience ever throughout his previous assassination tasks. However, he didn't know that the thing Ye Feng relied on was not intuitive prejudgment, but was the Soul Search Technique!

Whoosh!

A burst of cold wind rushed in from outside the window and blew out the candle, suddenly turning the whole room pitch-dark to the extent where a

person couldn't even see his five fingers.

In this utter darkness, both Nan Fang and Shu Shu were suddenly totally blinded. In such a terrorizing atmosphere, they didn't dare to leave, instead were just anxiously standing in-situ as if were glued to the spot.

“You stay here to protect Aunt and Nan Fang.”

Ye Feng leant close to Long Wan'er's ear and said softly. Immediately after, he displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace and rushed towards Nigusi Ding with an extremely fast speed.

Long Wan'er couldn't dare to be negligent, hence she didn't urge to follow him, instead, she moved a bit and stood in front of Shu Shu and Nan Fang, in order to shield them.

Whistling!

Ye Feng instantaneously arrived in front of him and pounded a punch, but actually, his punch hit in the air because the speed of the exorcist was similarly extremely quick. Immediately that man jumped out of the balcony and stood above the front door of the building's courtyard, in the pouring rain.

“His movement is really agile.”

Ye Feng sneered secretly because had already noticed that his battle efficiency was totally dependent on something and that was

Equipment.

This fellow's entire body was covered with several high-tech equipment, including his foot shoes, the small crossbow behind, his black windproof coat as well as a black hat, all these products were being repeatedly used by him in this fight, indeed he was heavily armed!

His equipment was exquisite and if was compared with the NSA soldiers' weapons, then obviously his equipment was more elegant but relatively less destructive.

In order to kill his assigned target, his all heavy weapons were unnecessary, because he only used to use short silver needles which were hidden in his hat. Since he was also called the exorcist, so definitely had the strength to kill the

demons and ghosts.

After wearing those boots, his jump was splendid! The silver drill which he had hidden in his hat, using that he had been able to kill his targets in one fell swoop and had solved his majority of cases like this.

In addition, he was also a killer, that small crossbow machine behind his back, that was a specifically designed exorcising arrow to deal with the martial artists as well as demons and ghosts!

Zi Zi!

The exorcist's arms stretched out, immediately two iron ropes fled from his cuff and advanced towards Ye Feng with an extremely fast speed as if wanted to strangle him tightly.

At this instant, all of a sudden Ye Feng was struck by a brainwave, making him drop the thought of dodging it, on the contrary, he jumped in the air and moved forward to welcome it!

Puff, suddenly two iron ropes entangled his both hands and feet. This scene was also sensed by Long Wan'er, who was at present in the building and this made her totally startled, could it be that Ye Feng did this deliberately?

"Zi Zi."

Nigusi Ding smiled coldly as he firmly held Ye Feng under his control using his iron ropes, while the small crossbow machine had already been bitten in his mouth, all prepared to pull the trigger!

This small crossbow machine was certainly like a nightmare for the martial arts world. It must be very effective once it hit its target, besides, if compared with the NSA's precision guns, his equipment was way better, since it made Ye Feng's whole body extremely weak at once.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng was far quicker than him.

"Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!"

Although his both hands and feet were tied up, but he didn't fluster, merely opened his mouth and spurted a fireball from his mouth, which swept across immediately!

The exorcist's complexion suddenly enormously changed, although he wanted to quickly jump aside, but actually, Ye Feng's both hands, which were tied with his iron ropes, pulled him back. Originally he wanted to tie Ye Feng with his iron ropes, however now, actually he was indirectly tied to them, making him see his own death approaching fast.

Bang!

Instantaneously he became a fireball.

Chapter 187 -> Plundering equipment

A fierce battle, in the rainy night, ended within a moment.

Ye Feng actually puffed out a fireball and exterminated a tough opponent again in a flash!

Long Wan'er and Nan Fang had already seen him spouting fireballs before, so they were not very much surprised, rather were secretly relieved. However when Shu Shu looked from afar that Ye Feng spouted a fireball from his mouth, that sent shiver down her spine and her pretty face all of a sudden turned paled.

After all who was this guy Ye Feng, how could he spout a fireball? Shu Shu knew that there had never been such a strange martial artist in the entire martial arts world!

Two long and slender iron ropes, which had connected Ye Feng with Nigusi Ding, were suddenly grabbed by Ye Feng with his both hands and then, he pulled them forcefully, making the body of Nigusi Ding immediately flung into the sea water.

"Puff", the raging fire which had completely engulfed the exorcist's body, immediately got extinguished. Immediately after, Ye Feng raised his hands and with the help of connecting wire ropes, pulled his body into the building.

Then he immediately loosened his hands and like a previous vertical leap, he jumped into the courtyard.

Bang!

Instantaneously, his golden sword congealed out and killed those five dumbfounded young punks in a flash.

Originally, Ye Feng also wanted to put them a way out, but hadn't expected that in the process of fighting, he would accidentally display a fireball and the worst part of it, it would be actually seen by these punks. So now, he could no longer leave them alive.

Anyway, the main goal of those five was to kill Ye Feng and toss him into the sea, hence Ye Feng didn't mind following their way and finish them up in a shot.

In order to kill a person, one had to kill one's consciousness first!

His Zhenqi immediately dissipated, then he set his foot into the cold water, soon a layer of surging waves arrived and washed away the corpses of those five. In such an unending rainstorm, the mighty waves were showing their power from time to time, therefore he believed that their corpses would be submerged by the tide soon.

Even if their bodies were found, still no one could find Ye Feng was behind this massacre.

Afterwards, he returned to the building and directly went upstairs. But the moment he entered in the room, his eyes went wide open and he couldn't help but smile. He had just pulled Nigusi Ding's corpse inside the room and in a twinkling of an eye, not only Nan Fang had quickly lit a candle, but had also started digging up the equipment from the exorcist body.

Although this guy was burned to death, but his equipment was of best quality!

Especially his shoes and that fine iron small crossbow machine with seven small arrows. Even if he spent tens of millions, still couldn't buy these top notch stuffs!

"This is the electric powered bouncing boots, which can be used after being filled with the electricity and then it sharply increases the person's jumping ability more than three times! As for this crossbow machine, it can shoot only seven times, but at the critical moment, it will be of great use....."

Nan Fang analysed them quickly, as for other stuff, they were already burnt and destroyed by Ye Feng's fireball.

"You take these two things with yourself."

Ye Feng waved his hand: "If there is nothing important left, then this is the time to pack this fellow off."

Originally he had pulled his body inside because he wanted to see if there is any useful equipment he had which could be plundered, surprisingly Nan Fang's behavior exactly matched his idea. Since everything was already buttoned up, so now he should let his body be washed away just like what happened with those five punks.

“No, all other equipment has become useless, moreover there is anything which can be of great use to us.”

Nan Fang shook his head and smiled while carrying the electric powered bouncing boots in his hand and the small crossbow machine, it had become his favorite now.

Plundering from the hands of Nigusi Ding, which was something he had never dared to think of, but before Ye Feng, this thing was actually so simple and easy.

“Wan’er, haven’t you made a mistake?”

Shu Shu pulled her close and said in a whispering tone: “Who was this Nigusi Ding, didn’t you just say that he had once killed the most wanted criminal, Xingchen Xueren who had forty years of Cultivation? So literary speaking, based on your statement, it seems that he was very strong, but then how was he got killed by Ye Feng so easily ”

“He is not an ordinary person.”

Long Wan’er slightly squinted as she said, however she didn’t disclose Ye Feng’s identity as an Immortal Cultivator.

“Wan’er, Nan Fang, come over here.”

Ye Feng entered the room after dealing with the corpse, now this was the time to give an account for something : “Absorb this because a while later, there is a matter I need you to manage.”

He took out the big Coral King and by lending the light of the candle, presented it in front of everyone, which was just like a pair of antlers, flashing exotic radiance in the darkness.

“This is the big Coral King?”

Long Wan’er was suddenly thunderstruck, she felt that the spiritual energy from the big Coral was continually spreading, which was simply unbelievable.

This treasure could upgrade one’s Cultivation by at least five years at one fell swoop. But why was it presented before her like this? That meant Ye Feng had finally succeeded in obtaining the big Coral King!

“Well, this matter should not be delayed, come on, hold it quickly and start

absorbing it.”

Ye Feng said that as he tossed the big Coral in her hands.

This sight stunned her even more and made her totally speechless, but still somewhat helplessly she said : “What am I supposed to do?”

“Giving you to promote your Cultivation, idiot.”

He smiled and gently patted her head: “My meridians are not strong enough to withstand it, so I can’t absorb it.”

At this moment, she simply wanted to cry out, such a precious thing it was, but still Ye Feng wanted to give it to her?

This could, however, enhance her Cultivation by five years!

In the martial arts world, Cultivation was always placed at the first important position by everyone, even a married couple used to suffer huge hardships and there were handful of them who could think of giving such precious things to the other party.

“Hurry up, don’t waste time.”

Ye Feng moved close to her ear and smilingly said: “If you want to thank me, then later in the evening, display a good performance.”

These words fell and her face turned bright red, while her heart secretly criticised her: “A big pervert.”

However this way, she didn’t hesitate a bit, instead made a little speculation since she already had an idea that Ye Feng would definitely explain things to her a while later which would be very important. Hence, she didn’t dare to waste any further second, immediately held the big Coral and sat down cross-legged to start the absorption process.

Her core Dan immediately started revolving and gradually the rich spiritual energy started transforming into Zhenqi. However at this time, probably there wouldn’t be that sort of hurricane tornado again in this small fishing village, besides that scene was extremely rare which could appear only in the specific circumstances.

As for her Cultivation, she started promoting it with steady steps!

The time she had involved in practicing the martial arts was much longer than Ye Feng's, because of which her meridians had already been broadened enough to accommodate more than 20 years of Cultivation, so she wasn't a bit afraid of absorption.

"Nan Fang, this is for you, absorb it."

He pulled out a small coral and flung it towards him.

However the thing that made Ye Feng a little grieved was the spiritual energy of these small corals, which had already depleted up to 50 percent, now the effect didn't remain as good as before. But whatever the outcome would be, it could still help Nan Fang enhance his Cultivation.

Again he pulled out a small coral and threw it towards Shu Shu.

Irrespective of what the size of the coral would be, it could be absorbed once. In other words, Long Wan'er could be one time able to enhance her Cultivation by six or seven years!

As for Shu Shu

"Wan'er, after this process, could you teach Aunt the core technique of Long Clan."

Ye Feng said that holding a cold look in his eyes: "In any case, you have been already separated from Long Clan, so there is no need to care about Long Mo'ran's reaction. In this world, only those who have enough strength can safeguard themselves."

"It's not a good idea, what if Long Mo'ran knows about it....."

Shu Shu somewhat panicked.

"Even if you don't practice, will Long Mo'ran let you off?"

Ye Feng chuckled and waved his hand: "Relax, you have Wan'er and me by your side currently, even if we again bump into Long Mo'ran, it's not like we don't have enough fighting strength."

He said that so naturally relying on his as well as Long Wan'er's Immortal Cultivation, if they launched an Immortal Technique together while appropriately coordinating with each other, then, could absolutely succeed in killing him!

Unfortunately, these words of him were actually considered as a comfort in Shu Shu's eyes.

She nodded and mused about what Ye Feng just said, whether she practiced or not, Long Mo'ran would never let her off, so might as well she began to practice with this hope that at the key moment, she could also play an important role

.....

Chapter 188 -> Long distance invisible needles

Under the guidance of Long Wan'er and Ye Feng, Shu Shu finally started practising Long Clan's core technique and then together with Nan Fang, soon began the process of absorbing the spiritual energy of a small coral.

Long Wan'er also walked on the same road and simultaneously started absorbing the big Coral along with other small corals smoothly, quite rapidly and in one fell swoop, suddenly reached eighteen years of Cultivation!

This matter was something she had never imagined, now, not only she had 18 years of Cultivation but was also an Immortal Cultivator, whose real strength in the martial arts world was almost similar to the martial arts expert with almost 36 years of Cultivation.

"I have taught you several Immortal Techniques, how about your practice?"

When Ye Feng noticed that everything was smooth now, then finally felt relieved and asked.

"It's already done."

She said while blinking her eyes.

"Is it? Then release a fireball and let me see."

He was slightly surprised, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Invisibility and Red Inflammation, although these were simple basic Immortal Techniques and Long Wan'er had never gotten in touch with them before, still, incredibly, she learnt them extremely fast.

Although she had the body of immortal arteries, but this talent seemed to be also a little unexpected

Obviously, if replaced with Ye Feng, then perhaps he was much faster than her, but her this speed had already greatly astonished him.

She heard that and without being hesitant, instantly started condensing Zhenqi in her hand, "boom" and in a flash, a fireball appeared from her palm!

Upon seeing its brightness and intensity, it was clear that the might of this

fireball was much powerful than Ye Feng's, besides, it was brighter, after all, she had reached 18 years of Cultivation.

“Pretty good.”

There was a trace of appreciation dripping from his eyes, it seemed that teaching her Cultivation was indeed a correct decision. This way in the future, she would turn into a big helping hand for him! If her 18 years and Ye Feng's 12 years of Cultivation were added together, they became 30 years of Cultivation, in addition, the strength of Zhenqi was twice more powerful than an ordinary martial artist's inner qi. So in short, the total count accompanied with double strength was more indelible than Long Mo'ran.

However, since Long Mo'ran had already reached the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique which Ye Feng hadn't yet experienced, hence he didn't know what would be its might. So literary speaking, he couldn't be underestimated.

“In that case, now I'll teach you another Immortal Technique, this is my and my master's sect inherited Immortal Technique, Star Arrow.

Finally, he spoke out his own thought and again started explaining to her how to practice Star Arrow using proper Zhenqi's operational line. This was not a simple basic Technique, perhaps even he needed to spend an hour or two to be able to display it initially, so it would be obviously even more difficult for her.

Indeed as expected, once she started listening to the process, immediately knitted her eyebrows as she felt that it was little complicated.

Every Immortal Technique's principles and Zhenqi operational lines were different, so if anyone accessed to a new Technique, couldn't learn it instantly, including Ye Feng. He was a talented genius but was not the God, obviously, he could comprehend any Immortal Technique much faster than an ordinary Immortal Cultivator, but still, he required time, it was just that there might be the speed difference.

“Once you will comprehend it properly, we will embark to go the sea, since I need you to use this technique to break open a layer of an ice wall.

Ye Feng said.

“Are we going to see your master?”

Long Wan'er suddenly turned a bit nervous.

"I hope she is there inside."

He smiled: "Don't be nervous, although the temperament of my master is not so good, but she never embarrasses those who are on our side.

"Oh."

She nodded, though her heart was still a little disturbed, after all, his master was an outstanding Immortal Cultivator, even Ye Feng had learnt everything from her

Although it was constantly pouring outside and the dark clouds were frequently lightning, making the whole sky pitch dark to the extent where not even a star could be seen, but still to display Star Arrow, seeing the stars wasn't that necessary. As long as the stars existed, she could slowly absorb the power of the group stars, leading to the formation of star arrows.

She sat firmly to comprehend it as fast as possible, it was already late at night, but the time was also flying a bit slowly.

Ye Feng also sat aside, the residue of the big Coral King and the three small corals were over burned, so as to erase all evidence. However there still remained five small corals, the spiritual energy of which hadn't much left, but at the key moment, they could still supplement Zhenqi, making Ye Feng belt them up on his body.

"Hmm?"

Suddenly, he frowned.

"What happened?"

Nearby, Nan Fang was studying that two equipment, when he heard Ye Feng's voice, then asked out of curiosity.

"What is this thing?"

Ye Feng raised his arm, looked at something and suddenly turned vigilant. Actually, he saw a silver needle suddenly stabbed into his arm. If he hadn't felt a burning pain in his arm, most probably wouldn't have found the silver needle.

“It’s not good, this is a long distance invisible needle?”

Long Wan’er swept her Soul Search around and immediately spoke out loud being a bit shocked.

“Long distance invisible needle, what is this thing?”

Ye Feng pulled out the silver needle but soon felt that his whole arm actually started paralysing and gradually his consciousness also started getting blurred.

“It’s the hidden weapon technique of Hidden Immortal sect which can be displayed from quite a long distance and interestingly, it’s completely silent.”

She hurriedly explained, then stood up and immediately swept again towards the surrounding area: “It’s not that wonderful, it seems like there are some people constantly staring at us, I never thought that Soul Search couldn’t detect this invisible needle. Everybody, be a bit more careful. ”

Hearing her explanation, Ye Feng’s complexion all of a sudden dignified.

Now Long Wan’er had 18 years of Cultivation, therefore her Soul Search’s detection range had also increased to 180 meters. However, within this range, there wasn’t any suspicious person. Thus it was clear that the expert of Hidden Immortal Sect was far away. But, although Ye Feng’s Cultivation was already 12 years, still he couldn’t sense anything.

Long distance invisible needle was indeed worthy of its name!

At this moment, Ye Feng suddenly thought of the abandoned factory outside Yanjing, when that armed escort, Zhu Hun had used a hidden weapon, its distance of emission was similarly over a hundred meters.

“It seems that the hidden weapon experts are highly regarded in the martial arts world.”

Ye Feng thought that the current situation was like this, not only they totally failed to notice the existence of the opposite party, but most importantly they were also quite familiar with them since an invisible needle had directly hit on his arm.

“Little Feng come quickly, I have to show you something.”

Shu Shu ran upto him and pulled his arm.

“Be careful, you stay behind me.”

Ye Feng didn't think anything and suddenly stood in front Shu Shu with open arms.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Continuously several silver needles, one after another, were shot from outside the balcony, even he also couldn't see its whereabouts. Immediately his whole body was pierced by several invisible needles! These needles were tainted with toxicant, which rapidly spread in his body, making his whole body gradually paralyse.

It was not that only he was shot, but nearby standing Long Wan'er and Nan Fang were similarly shot a good number of silver needles.

That famous Hidden Immortal Sect's expert was exceptionally formidable!

Why would someone provoke such expert?

Ye Feng wanted to understand and secretly regretted in his heart on this thought that he should have directly resolved that woman back then.

During his stay In Changbai Mountain, his sword had killed the adopted son of a Hidden Immortal Sect, named Li Junlong, but just because of Zhu Bainiao's sake, he let that woman Cuckoo off. Now, because of her, this matter was definitely known by the people of Hidden Immortal Sect and in order to take revenge for Li Junlong, they sent people to attack them.

Outside the room in the rainstorm, a jet black silhouette approached fast and seemingly, was very agile, meritorious, light and dreadful!

A bunch of lightning streaked across the night sky, wearing a night cloth and a black mask, that mysterious figure seemed very dreadful, while a pair of his eyes were like a ghost in general, making anyone shudder.

He was a hidden weapon expert with fifty years of Cultivation!

Chapter 189 -> Broken magical crossbow

Those powerhouses with 50 years of Cultivation were considered as the first-class masters even by Long Clan, so not to mention the Hidden Immortal Sect. Apparently, in order to kill Ye Feng, the Hidden Immortal Sect had already made the firm determination.

Previously under the sea, Ye Feng had already seen several formidable martial artists with fifty years of Cultivation, even he counterattacked there to kill a God Fist Gate's expert and rob the big Coral King.

However now, this wasn't the seabed, rather was the land of a village where he was encountering an extremely skilled, agile and dreadful like ghosts, a hidden weapon expert who used the long distance invisible needles as his weapon and which couldn't be detected even by his Soul Search Technique!

Now it seemed that the martial arts on the Earth was definitely not like how Ye Feng had imagined earlier, instead, it was so unbearable.

His Soul Search was constantly locked outside the house, directly at that hidden weapon expert.

When the opposite party approached within 120 meters scope, then Ye Feng's Soul Search could finally sense his existence, but unfortunately, his speed was terribly fast. To think that the same Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation could be used again to kill him was basically impossible.

Besides, other than Ye Feng, Long Wan'er and Nan Fang were also shot by these invisible needles, which instantly made their bodies somewhat paralysed, while their motion was disrupted as well. Now it had become quite difficult for them to withstand the enemy.

Ye Feng turned around and by taking advantage of the candlelight, looked at Nan Fang and then those two slightly nodded together.

Bang!

Suddenly at this moment, a small flying knife finally entered the room penetrating through the balcony's glass windows, however, its initial target was

not Ye Feng, but was Long Wan'er!

"Invisible, sneak attack, leg!"

All of a sudden Ye Feng jumped towards Long Wan'er and avoided that flying knife, after that, quickly moved close to her ear and said gently.

"Hmm."

She didn't hesitate, right after seeing through his hint, immediately started operating Zhenqi within her body and instantaneously made her stature completely invisible!

There was utter darkness around those four people and on top of that, now she was under the spell of Invisibility technique, hence no one could find her traces.

Ye Feng could feel that outside the room, an astonished expression suddenly crawled over the face of that hidden weapon expert, as it seemed that he couldn't understand how a living being suddenly got disappeared right in front of his eyes.

Besides, it seemed that the hidden weapon expert could clearly see the situation inside the room even though it was a dark night accompanied with rainstorm. That explained everything, he certainly had also brought any high-tech product, such as infrared viewing device and so on. But still, this kind of thing was completely useless in front of Invisibility Technique.

As per Ye Feng's sensation, Long wan'er somewhat clumsily jumped out of the balcony, it seemed that those invisible needles had made her flexibility drop enormously.

He didn't hesitate as well, similarly followed her and arrived in the balcony, then aimed at the enemy and puffed out a fireball directly towards him! This fellow had been hiding in a secret place all along and a while ago, when Ye Feng killed Nigusi Ding, he definitely watched everything, hence this Immortal Technique -Red Inflammation didn't remain a secret anymore.

As expected, the opposite party saw Ye Feng spouting a fireball, although he had some doubts, but actually wasn't that surprised, instead his stature dodged and easily avoided it, at the same time single-handedly, he flung something.

Shua Shua Shua!

A row of dozens of small flying knives sprinkled directly towards the balcony.

Holy Women Scattered Flower Technique!

This hidden weapon expert, if compared with Changbai Mountain's Li Junlong, was much highly talented. Li Junlong could only emit more than ten, however, this fellow could actually release more than thirty knives and on top of that, could also mix some thinner silver needles along with them, producing a gloomy aura and violently poisonous effect.

Facing this kind of situation, the two people could only avoid.

In a flash, Ye Feng moved one side to hide behind a wardrobe, at the same time, the sound of flying knives shooting in the wooden closet echoed with a lingering effect, Bang Bang! But Long wan'er lowered her head and used the balcony's brick wall as a barrier.

"If I were at 20 years of Cultivation, I didn't need to be so hard-pressed"

Ye Feng thought that the disciples of Star Tomb Sect at least needed 20 years of Cultivation to practice an Immortal Technique – Mercury Shield, which was the most appropriate one to resist this kind of an attack.

Shua!

As soon as the flying knives were blocked by the wardrobe, Ye Feng promptly jumped out, simultaneously his golden sword flashed in his hand, immediately followed by an icy-blue Beheading Dragon Sword qi, which rapidly rushed towards the enemy, penetrating through the rain curtain!

Sword qi's speed was extremely fast and it arrived in a flash.

The opposite party moved a step as he wanted to avoid it, but his speed was not enough. That Sword qi arrived much faster than he expected and passed while wiping his face and breaking his night vision device which was there on his black mask!

Hiding nearby, Long Wan'er also took advantage of this chaotic moment, quickly jumped out, wielded her hand and shot a dark blue arrow.

Puff!

Her broken concealed shot was virtually impossible to guard against. The dark blue arrow suddenly penetrated the right thigh of the hidden master expert, while its huge penetrating power made him repel a big step back and then he heavily fell into the inundated sea water, accompanied with water splashes.

“This Star Arrow though had an enormous penetrating power, but the speed was insufficient

Ye Feng suddenly saw her shooting Star Arrow and felt that she indeed had tried her best to fully grasp this Technique, however, it really was not a short time thing.

At this moment, they were on the balcony, just wanted to jump down finish that guy up. However right at this time, they simultaneously felt that their bodies suddenly turned stiff, because the poison attached to those invisible needles finally broke out at one fell swoop!

“Jue Sha!”

A deep voice spread from the bottom of the sea water, followed by a series of flying knives, breaking through the water surface, flew towards the balcony, directly targeting those two people.

Although Ye Feng didn't know how this fellow could throw so many flying knives, but presently he didn't need to consider this issue.

“Jue Sha is a killer technique of the Hidden Immortal Sect, with its endless flying knives he deathtraps people in a tweak. His sneak attack always goes smoothly everywhere, even in the front battle, his pre-eminent shot can kill even a super strong martial artist and that also quite easily!

Long Wan'er quickly filled him with the necessary explanation, although using her Soul search she had already sensed a series of flying knives approaching fast, but since her body was stiff, couldn't make any movement.

Ye Feng similarly felt so, the poison of those invisible needles had dramatically suppressed the effect of his Zhenqi, making him extremely feeble.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Although his whole body's strength had almost exhausted, but still he pulled Long Wan'er behind him, then raised his arms to face the endless flying knives attacking them.

One after another, those flying knives pierced his arm deeply to the extent where even his bone became visible and in a flash, his both arms were covered with blood.

This killer technique of the Hidden Immortal Sect "Jue Sha" barely took five seconds *Shua* and released 100 flying knives, holding a terrific force which not even Ye Feng's Immortal body could resist for long and soon his arms were shot to the pulp.

However, this extremely brilliant killer technique only continued for half a second and then it stopped following-up. Not only he didn't have more knives to shoot, even there was no sound underwater.

Was he going through the shortage of flying knives?

Or his conscience found that he wanted to leave their lives?

However, it was not like that.

"Damn, I was scared to death, but fortunately hit the target."

A voice accompanied with some foul words passed on from the downstairs bathroom, it was actually Nan Fang : "The broken magical crossbow is pretty good, its single arrow burned the enemy to the crisp.

After losing his night vision device and being severely injured because of his thigh, the mobility of the hidden weapon expert was tremendously disrupted. However, eventually, he was sneak attacked by Nan Fang, who was hiding aside and was killed in one fell swoop!

The exquisite co-ordination of these three people finally made them escape.

"Are you all right?"

Shu Shu was in the room when she heard Nan Fang using foul words and suddenly her restless heart finally calmed down. Afterwards, she promptly went to the balcony, however on seeing Ye Feng falling backwards, hastily opened a pair of her white delicate arms and he firmly clung onto her.

Incautiously, Ye Feng rested his head on her plentiful and soft two front groups

.....

Chapter 190 -> Slaughtering God Ghost Hand

Unbalanced, Ye Feng heavily fell backwards, really his body was not under his control. Besides, not only his body was paralysed by the toxin, but his both arms were also covered with multiple injuries caused by those flying knives, making him totally unable to hold anymore.

Originally he thought he would certainly fall to the ground and would see stars spinning around his head. But, he hadn't expected that he would actually hit a soft place and feel like lying on a pillow, which made him comfortably relieved.

"Little Feng, your hand?"

Under the dim candlelight inside the room, Shu Shu suddenly noticed his hands were pierced by several knives and fresh blood was dripping continuously. This scene suddenly scared her and stole away the colour of her pretty face, how was he hurt so badly?

Ye Feng heard her voice and immediately understood where he was lying, which made his face bright red. Undoubtedly, Shu Shu's body was splendid, plentiful, soft and indeed her front two groups were extremely comfortable, but she was Long Wan'er's Aunt after all.....

"Don't worry about this, just support and take us inside"

He immediately said.

At first he wanted to struggle and stand up, but unfortunately couldn't do it, because the paralysis effect of the long distance invisible needle was too strong. Not only him, even Long Wan'er, whom he had shielded just now, couldn't move as well and was standing all stiff against the balcony.

On seeing Ye Feng resting on Shu Shu's comfortable bosom, Long Wan'er cursed him in her heart for acting like a big pervert. In usual time, she would have certainly grabbed his ear by now to lambaste him. However now, under such critical circumstances, she didn't have the intention to do so.

Besides, when she looked at his severely injured arms, her heart was a little touched as she thought that at the critical moment, it was him who pulled her

behind his back, or else these knives might have also penetrated her body.

She thought now she had to be a bit faster to suppress the effect of the poison, then after could display Holy Cure Technique to help him cure his arms promptly.

Very quickly, Shu Shu took Ye Feng inside the room, although it didn't take long to do so, but this short period was very exquisite and pleasant throughout, making Ye Feng feel a little embarrassed.

However Shu Shu didn't think anything odd, soon she also brought Long Wan'er inside and then immediately looked for clean clothes and tore down two pieces of cloth.

"Little Feng, you will have to endure a bit."

Shu Shu gently said, then pulled out several knives from Ye Feng's arms hastily.

Seeing her gentle and quick action, it could be clearly said she had a very rich experience in dealing with such wounds. Once the knives were pulled out, immediately she wrapped two strips of cloth around his arm and tied them up to stop bleeding.

Her action was really quick and was very light and gentle, which instantly greatly reduced Ye Feng's pain, making him take a breath of relief. After tying his arms with cloth strips, his bleeding finally completely stopped.

"Aunt, you have to go downstairs to see where Nan Fang is."

Ye Feng suddenly felt that something wasn't right, after all why there was no sound from Nan Fang's side?

He swept his Soul Search and found something, which made him smile a bit.

In order to launch a sneak attack to kill the hidden weapon expert, at one fell swoop, with the broken magical crossbow, Nan Fang had hidden in the ground floor's bathroom. But there, the sea water had already inundated to the waist level and the worst part of the whole story, at such a critical moment, his toxin also erupted, making him unable to remain standing anymore. As a result, he tumbled down and turned completely motionless.

If nobody would go to look for him, perhaps like this, he would drown to death

in the water.

“Hmm.”

Currently, Shu Shu was the only person who could move freely, therefore she nodded, then carried a candle and went downstairs.

In a short while, she dragged him upstairs. Presently, in her eyes, Nan Fang was just a personal attendant of Ye Feng, hence she certainly didn't need to be good to him. Besides, it was also impossible that she would do the same treatment like she did to Ye Feng.

Nan Fang was dragged all the way to the room, frequent bumps made him want to shout out loud. Eventually, he burst into tears and said: “Aunt, please be a bit gentleI, hit the eggs”

Soon Shu Shu dragged him up, then flung him on the spot, indirectly making him have tears streaming down his face.

Rest.

At present Long Wan'er was at the highest place among them, so naturally she eliminated the effect of poison and recovered really fast. Then without further ado, she immediately cast Holy Cure Technique and started curing Ye Feng's arm.

Since her Cultivation had already taken a higher position, so the treatment effect was obviously better.

Under the glory of the golden light, Ye Feng's pulpy arms quickly returned to normal, only leaving behind a few ugly scars, probably the scars would completely vanish over the time.

As a result, Long Wan'er's Zhenqi was all consumed up soon. But luckily there were still small corals, so Ye Feng immediately tossed a small coral towards her to let her supplement her Zhenqi.

The situation gradually finally stabilised.

After getting all well, Ye Feng went downstairs to bring the corpse of hidden weapon expert from the water.

This fellow had fifty years of Cultivation, so he would be definitely very famous

in the martial arts world and most likely Long Wan'er could easily identify his identity. Once he knew who the opposite party was, then could know more information. In addition, he could also conveniently search his body to steal the remaining flying knives.

Nan Fang had already comprehended Crying Ghost Blade Technique, but unfortunately, he didn't have a single flying cutter to use.

Quite soon Ye Feng found the corpse and then noticed he was actually shot in the temple by Nan Fang's crossbow arrow. Actually, not only he was deeply stabbed, but the effect of the broken magical crossbow didn't let him survive even for a second after being stabbed.

When he opened his black mask, Long Wan'er saw his face and called out loud in astonishment.

"He is the Slaughter God Ghost Hand, Qin Ge!"

In the martial arts world, mostly all well-renowned experts had their own nickname. Many were self-styled, such as Jiangsu Duo kind of tiny persona, however, some were truly worth recognising.

Such as Zhui Hun – the armed escort from the previous encounter and currently this Slaughter God Ghost Hand – Qin Ge, these were some prominent figures in the martial arts world.

And as for this expert who had a mighty 50 years of Cultivation, it could be said that he was capable enough to take sole responsibility for an important task in the martial arts world. However, he was actually killed because of the exquisite coordination of these three people. Not to talk about others, even he himself hadn't thought earlier that he, the famous Slaughter God Ghost Hand, while dealing with these three young children, would actually suffer a huge setback.

The people of Hidden Immortal Sect could certainly never believe that Qin Ge, whom they were truly proud of had not only lost his life, but also his all stuff were plundered by Ye Feng.

A knife bag hanging on his waist still had more than 20 light and small flying knives, while near his both ankles area there were syringes which were used to shoot the long distance invisible needles with paralytic toxins. Besides, there was

also a black ink that, probably it was the deadly toxin used with those needles.

But the fatal toxin long needle was quite thick, hence was totally inappropriate for a sneak attack.

All these things were finally turned over to Nan Fang, which made him extremely happy and in excitement, he started grinning from ear to ear.

His shot could kill the great hidden weapon expert, this was truly something Long Wan'er hadn't thought. Secretly, she looked towards Ye Feng while thinking that from now on, she was not the only person who could fight.

"We will leave this place right away."

After plundering, Ye Feng set out once he made a firm resolve. Since a series of so many people attacked them, which made it seem that this village was no longer safe.

"Hmm....."

Long Wan'er also set out with him but then suddenly her eyebrows tightly wrinkled up : "Again some people have popped up."

Now the scope of her Soul Search was even more than Ye Feng, it had reached 180-meters of scope.

"Who is it?"

Ye Feng, Nan Fang and Shu Shu simultaneously got tensed up.

"They are the two from the hotel who were looking for you in the morning."

Long Wan'er looked at Ye Feng and smiled faintly: "A gorgeous woman Oh, but the point is, why is she looking for you?"

"Who, Xiao Yue and Wang Shao?"

Ye Feng was suddenly taken aback, then after a while, he thought something and slightly smiled.

Chapter 191 -> A witty shark

Soon, the opposite party entered the perception range of Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique.

And as expected, they were Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong. When Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search, automatically his focus got stuck on the pretty girl, Xiao Yue. It must be said the stature of this gorgeous girl was indeed splendid. In such a stormy weather, although she had worn a raincoat, still was unable to cover up her mature and mesmerising figure.

But instantly Ye Feng's focus again got shifted towards Wang Shaodong.

Originally, it was Wang Shaodong who wanted to hire people in order to kill him, however now, he took the initiative to come on his own. This was too much, now Ye Feng didn't have any reason left to let him off! Besides, he didn't care about the opposite party's identity, even if he died in this barren hills and the edge of the tsunami, who would blame him?

Having grudge didn't mean he was not a gentleman.

Although Ye Feng didn't see himself as a gentleman, but his hatred must be reported and at present, it was an excellent opportunity. Relying on his and Long Wan'er's combined strength, killing him and then throwing his body into the sea would be quite easier for them, besides who would know about it?

This was originally Wang Shaodong's own idea to kill and throw, however now, it was going to be implemented on his own body.

"Let me have a look first, will be right back."

Ye Feng immediately stood up.

In such a stormy weather, where the sea water had already inundated the whole village to the waist level, the motion of Shu Shu and Nan Fang was badly disrupted, causing a huge inconvenience to them. In addition, there was also a comatose youth of Taiji Palace along with them

Once Ye Feng would get success in quietly dealing with Wang Shaodong, then would lead these people to leave here as fast as possible. The most critical thing

was to ensure the safety of these three people, Nan Fang, Shu Shu and comatose youth and make them return safely. While he along with Long Wan'er would continue to go to the overseas, in order to break open the thick and cold ice wall.

He quickly left the village alone, then submerged into the waist-deep icy cold sea water and secretly advanced towards approaching Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong.

Now he was the hunter!

.....

Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong, carrying some useful equipment, set out all the way from the central Xiangshan County, then passing through the police blockade line, finally arrived at this small mountain village.

Seeing the waist level cold sea water, she somewhat hesitated and a bit puzzled asked: "Are you sure the masked man is really here? Why don't you make a phone call to your subordinates to confirm this?"

"No need to, they were talking about this village only."

Wang Shaodong said, however, he turned his back while similarly somewhat despising the inundated sea water as he thought that this water was so filthy and he was such a grandly reputed person in Shanghai City, so how could he walk into this water and dirty his legs?

Though he didn't know why those five punks still hadn't updated him till now, but it was reasonable to say that they had already successfully arrived at their target location.

He had never thought that those five little punks were actually slaughtered and then thrown into the sea by that masked guy already and that also quite easily.

"Or else, how about this Xiao Yue, before proceeding we just wait for a while."

Wang Shaodong switched on a flashlight since he felt that the village in front was gloomy and a little virtual.

"There is a smell of blood."

Xiao Yue was more sensitive than him, although it was still pouring in torrents,

but she was still quite sharp and quickly felt a faint smell of blood around the surrounding area. This smell didn't seem to be the smell of fishes, but what this smell was, regarding this she was totally unaware. However, a woman's intuition made her think that this place was pretty dangerous.

"What, a smell of blood? Probably there is a little"

Wang Shaodong filled his lungs with two deep breaths, then nodded as he felt gloomy in his heart, certainly, those five bludgers would have killed the masked boy with their iron bars. Now, as long as they would stay here, would wait for those five to come back and update them.

"Be careful."

Suddenly, Xiao Yue felt that there was a strange form in the front waist-deep sea water, as if something was approaching fast.

"What is that thing?"

Wang Shaodong similarly sensed something and promptly focused his flashlight towards it. But what he saw was a shark in the shallow water which was rapidly swimming towards them.

This scene all of a sudden scared the hell out of him!

Almost like a conditioned reflex, Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong simultaneously drew back rapidly. They hadn't thought that in such shallow water near the shore, which had been actually caused by the tidal wave, there would be actually a shark, this was totally unscientific!

Unfortunately, they had barely taken a small step back and by then, that shark had already approached the shore and had already taken a powerful leap towards them.

It was truly a shark!

The ferocious look in its eyes, accompanied with its sharp and incomparable canine had undoubtedly indicated that once they were nipped by it, absolutely would have the fate of death.

The shark jumped out of the water surface and while spreading a huge wide mouth, advanced towards Wang Shaodong to bit his head.

“Ah!”

All of a sudden this action frightened Wang Shaodong and he started shouting: “Help, help!”

Flurriedly he retreated, but unfortunately got tripped by the common vetch of ground. Panic-stricken, coupled with his extreme fear, he peed in his pants and also dropped his flashlight somewhere!

At this chaotic time, he didn’t have enough time to think why this place actually had such a wild shark. He was badly regretting on the idea to accompany Xiao Yue to this ghastly place, obviously, he was just waiting outside for those bludgers to show up.....

But it seemed that something was wrong, why not a single one of those bludgers responded to him so far, were they also eaten up by the shark?

Wang Shaodong pupils contracted fiercely, while his brain started racing crazily. At this life and death moment, his survival instincts suddenly fired up and made him think of a way suddenly.

Abruptly he grabbed nearby standing Xiao Yue who was also similarly retreating and then pulled her in front of him!

Xiao Yue suddenly staggered as she was pulled, she hadn’t ever thought that at a critical time, he would make such a move. Actually using a woman as a shield, wasn’t this too shameless? Naturally, she didn’t have time to ponder at such a shocking moment.

Confronting a giant size shark leaping towards her, but still, she immediately calmed her mind and became all prepared to show the strength of her karate black belt by launching a solid kick on the shark.

No matter who it was, under such a heart-chilling situation, anyone would be extremely nervous seeing such a ferocious shark. However, she was actually capable enough to stabilize her mind, indirectly forcing that shark to have a feeling of little respect for her.

Of course, a shark couldn’t feel anything or show respect for its prey, but it did and it was because of a reason. Actually, the truth was this shark was no one but Ye Feng, who, by using Camouflage Technique, had made them think that the

figure appeared in their line of sight was not a human but a mighty shark.

Ye Feng was in midair when he suddenly took a sharp turn and then bypassing Xiao Yue, grabbed Wang Shaodong who was shielded behind her.

For Xiao Yue this was quite a strange move, a shark leapt over her and bit Wang Shaodong's arm, which greatly stunned her, while her eyes went wide open as she thought that could it be possible that a shark could take a turn? It was so quick-witted, wasn't it?

Or could it be that it didn't like nipping a woman?

Without waiting for her response, the shark tightly bit Wang Shaodong right before her eyes, then while dragging him along, immediately flung back into the sea water.

"Ah —"

Wang Shaodong's blood-curdling screech reverberated for a while.

On the other side, thunderstruck, Xiao Yue subconsciously retreated several steps back and soon leant against a tree, while constantly breathing heavily. Her stature, wrapped in a raincoat, was looking extremely captivating in this rainstorm. But her palpitation had reached its maximum limit, which made it appear like this scene was indeed too big shock for her to handle.

"Not good, Wang Shao"

After a while, suddenly a thought hit her mind that the person who was bitten up and got dragged away by the shark was Shanghai City's most popular guy, Wang Shaodong! Moreover, he came over here just because of her and now was

If this news reached Wang Clan's ear, then wouldn't she be considered as done for?

Frankly speaking, wasn't Wang Shaodong just now dragged away by a shark?

The devil's letter! Who would believe it!

She didn't dare to think much, just stepped forward and directly jumped into the water!

Chapter 192 -> Encountering interception

In an instant, Ye Feng grabbed Wang Shaodong and dragged him away below the water.

Wang Shaodong bellowed all the way repeatedly while thinking that he was really being dragged away by a shark into this extremely cold water and this thought all of a sudden struck his heart by extreme despair.

He regretted in his heart that he shouldn't come to this kind of damned place, now it seemed that he was absolutely done for, all over for him

As for Ye Feng, he thought that drawing him into the water was dangerous enough to drown him to death. However, he didn't wait until Wang Shaodong took his last breath, simply swept around and shockingly found that Xiao Yue was actually following him.

"This woman, doesn't she want to live?"

A little surprised, he thought that in this sort of unfavourable weather, she actually dared to enter the water, wasn't she afraid of being also towed away by a shark? Or could it be that Wang Shaodong was extremely precious to her, so she couldn't throw him no matter what?

He didn't want to think much because suddenly he felt that within the scope of his Soul Search, there was a mighty wave, billowing ghastly as if any moment it would engulf them all. Moreover, right after this wave, the sea water in the entire village would rise again quite a few centimetres.

Therefore Xiao Yue's presence into the seawater and that also at this point of time was undoubtedly suicidal. Even if he ignored her, still she would be definitely washed away by the waves and would die without getting any burial ground.

She must know the current situation prevailing in the present seabed, not even Long Mo'ran could dare to step into the sea, not to mention her, a huge chested and brainless woman!

At this instant, his Zhenqi suddenly surged up and the next moment, with his

hand, he cut off the arteries of Wang Shaodong's heart and then immediately loosened his hand to let him get swept away by the mighty waves. This popular playboy had not only committed plenty of evil things but had also played with several innocent girls' emotions, but now, he was doomed like this.

If he was killed and then thrown away into the sea, who could ever know?

His original idea finally came true and that also on his own body, henceforth his soul would return to the sea.

As soon as Ye Feng loosened his hand, a mighty wave whirled around and suddenly flushed away Wang Shaodong's body, at the same time, it also rolled him up along with Xiao Yue. Fortunately, he hurriedly displayed Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique and quickly stabilised his stature, however, Xiao Yue couldn't normalise her body like how he did.

The gigantic billowing wave directly curled her up without giving her enough time to respond.

Under the storm, in this utter darkness, although lightning was flashing from a distant place frequently, but that wasn't enough for her to discover the billowing waves' attack! Forget about finding Wang Shaodong, now she herself was actually got curled up by a killer wave.

But interestingly she didn't regret because she knew that if she couldn't bring Wang Shaodong back and returned to Shanghai alone, then would certainly be trampled upon by Wang Clan and eventually would be forced to return to Yanjing

And this was something she never wanted to let it happen. She had come to Shanghai for her college study, then, after graduating from the college, she decided to stay here because she didn't want to get trapped in her family's cage?

Trapped within this dangerous wave, she couldn't balance her body and soon felt her whole body was being washed away further away in this icy-cold water and which also affected her consciousness, making it become more and more blurred. But, right at this time, suddenly she felt that her hand was grabbed.

"Move."

A deep male voice resounded in her ears, followed by a jolt, simultaneously she felt that she was being dragged to the shore.

Obviously, there was no one but Ye Feng who moved forward to rescue her.

He killed Wang Shaodong because that guy wanted to kill him first, this way Ye Feng used his way to deal with him. However Xiao Yue was actually an innocent person, hence he couldn't see her dying like this in this.

Anyway, this way it was more convenient to deal with.

In the icy-cold water, he swam all the way to the shore while dragging Xiao Yue along. Meanwhile, he kept on avoiding several ice pieces which were popping up along the way. Eventually, they were brought to the shore by a gigantic wave.

After that, the wave retreated leaving behind two completely drenched bodies, however, he didn't have time to waste, immediately started pressing her body so as to save her.

"Keke coughs"

Xiao Yue was presently in a state of dizziness to the extent where she couldn't even understand what actually happened just now, but still, she could vaguely feel that someone had saved her.

It was just that why was her chest seemed to be so heavily pressed and causing her extreme discomfort?

"Just go back, don't ask for the trouble."

Ye Feng said in a low voice, then floatingly, he set out, simultaneously proliferated his Soul Search and found that Long Wan'er was rushing towards him from one side.

"Is everything all right?"

Long Wan'er's crispy voice, in the pitch-dark night, sounded like an angel. At least for Xiao Yue, it sounded too much like an angel because this made her know that she was really still alive.

"Yes, all right. Now let's go."

He said and when was about to leave

“Coughs ... Wang Wang Shaodong?”

Taking the support of a big tree, Xiao Yue stood up, although was looking very much distressed but still asked.

“He was dragged away by the shark, I am extremely sorry I couldn’t save him.”

He replied in a low voice.

Meanwhile, occasionally peeping out faint light of lightning, passing from a distance place, suddenly made his face, covered with a grimace face mask, appear right before her eyes.

“It’s you!”

Xiao Yue called out in alarm loudly as she thought that how she didn’t expect that it would be the masked man who rescued her in this kind of situation.

“If you still want to jump into the sea to commit suicide, then do as you please, I have rescued you once, but now have no time to rescue you again.”

After finished saying everything coldly, he went forward, pulled Long Wan’er close and walked away.

“Hold on!”

She still remembered that she along with Wang Shaodong came to this place just to find the masked man. However now, although she had found the masked man, but Wang Shaodong had gone

She wasn’t a brainless person, quickly understood that in this situation, going to the sea again was purely suicidal. Now she had only one choice and that was to abandon the idea of finding Wang Shaodong.

She wanted to keep up with them hastily, but since she didn’t have a flashlight, hence was not even able to see the shadows of those two people. It seemed that she was alone there in the woods of the village

Now finally she understood a bit that when Xiao Qi was rescued twice by this masked man, what kind of mood she would have then.

What should be done now?

Undoubtedly she knew that she should now return, but didn’t it mean her plan

was totally ruined? Since her initial idea was to dig out the masked man and then warn him not to give any wrong idea to her younger sister, Xiao Qi.

Now she knew it was ridiculous.

Someone simply rescued Xiao Qi twice without harbouring any cheap ideas for her! But unfortunately, Xiao Qi took it as if her love was being reciprocated. Now what she should educate her younger sister Xiao Qi was that the masked man didn't belong to anyone.

Originally she had this thought that the masked man wanted to straddle the fence

Now that she was also saved by the masked man once, she could clearly feel that he didn't rescue her because he had some feelings for her. Besides, she also didn't know that what kind of relationship was there between this masked man and Yanjing's Ye Feng?

She pondered for a while, then promptly turned around and started walking hastily. She had barely walked to the half when suddenly heard the quarrelling voice of few people.

.....

"The people in front, stop!"

A man's voice passed through a loudspeaker in a tone dripping with threatening attitude: "Find any suspicious person, bring them back right away!"

On the hilltop, suddenly the shadows of several people appeared. Besides, because of the vehicle's headlight, everything was clearly visible, they were Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi along with four soldiers of the NSA.

But, there were some other figures as well and one of them was a black dressed man holding a stupor youth, while just beside him, there was also a mature and petite womanly figure.

They were Nan Fang, Shu Shu and Taiji Palace's youth!

Just when Ye Feng was about to attack Wang Shaodong, he had already made these people leave this place quietly. But he hadn't expected that in the midway, they would actually bump into the NSA's interception.

Nan Fang stopped for a while, then, glanced around to measure the intensity of the current situation.

This was such a pain in the ass situation, could it be that this time, the NSA really wanted to ask them to have a cup of tea with them? Although now, he didn't need to worry about being tracked down by any other martial artist, however falling into the hands of the NSA was also not a good end

“Invisibility, cast it together.”

At this moment, behind, Ye Feng softly whispered to Long Wan'er and immediately both of them turned completely invisible.

Originally, they had done all preparations to go to the overseas directly, but their Soul Search suddenly detected this situation, naturally making them return to help Nan Fang to deal with those fellows of the NSA.

Two invisible people, like a ghostly stature, advanced towards the NSA's military truck quite rapidly!

Chapter 193 -> Quite dreadful

Honestly speaking, when Ye Feng's eyes fell on Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, he was really startled and couldn't figure out why these two Yanjing's arrogant women came to do this ghastly place.

But regardless of who they were, if they wanted to stop him, then only two words could be said: No way!

He, along with Long Wan'er, under the spell of Invisibility, quickly advanced towards the opposite party.

There were four fully armed NSA soldiers who were sent along with these two ladies to protect and help them in carrying out a special action and interestingly the goal of this action was nothing but to seize the masked man.

When they saw Nan Fang along with Shu Shu, without any discrimination, they directly ordered to make an arrest. Anyways, this late at night and that also in this kind of place, it was impossible to believe that they would be just ordinary civilians!

The two soldiers stayed back for the protection of these two ladies, while the remaining two, carrying firearms, carefully, a bit vigilantly, advanced towards Nan Fang and other two people.

"There's also one on the vehicle?"

At this moment, Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search and immediately sensed that there was one more fellow on the military truck, which made him slightly wrinkle his eyebrows. Because, this way, the opposite party had three stormy men, while they were just two, so it would be kind of difficult for them to knock them down instantaneously.

As for the common NSA soldiers, he didn't want to kill them, it wasn't because he was afraid of future trouble, but because as for him, they were the country's true heroes, who had dedicated their whole life to serve their country.

Of course, the people like Li Feng, who used to be too arrogant and despotic, killing them even hundred times wouldn't be ever overrated.

Ye Feng turned his head to look at Nan Fang, the three people with the exquisite coordination once again appeared.

Anyways, without any hesitation, while being invisible, he came around those two ladies and quickly launched his first shot. Holding two knives in his both hands, he heavily hit those two NSA men who were especially guarding those two ladies and made them unconscious on the spot!

Two stuffy groans attracted the attention of other two NSA soldiers and they immediately turned around carrying their firearms, but right at this moment, Long Wan'er also made her move.

Bang! Bang!

Since her Cultivation was clearly higher than Ye Feng, hence she neatly, quite smoothly knocked them down in an instant.

Seeing the situation had terrifically changed, the last NSA soldier who was on the truck, immediately tried to send a message and ask for the reinforcement, but before he could do anything, "Shua" a black dressed figure dropped from the clouds and directly jumped towards his side.

It was Nan Fang who suddenly appeared before him wearing Nigusi Ding's electrical bouncing boots.

Puff!

While his small crossbow arrow directly penetrated the palm of the NSA driver to prevent him from making any phone call for the support. Afterwards, he pulled him down from the driver's seat and heavily thrown him on the ground in this heavy rainfall.

Ye Feng's speed was extremely fast, instantly he ran over and hit him with a hand knife to make him unconscious.

The NSA members used to wear thick and excellently equipped clothes, because of which Nan Fang couldn't harm him, therefore, Ye Feng jumped in.

All settled!

The entire process took place just in less than a second time, so neither Lin Shiqing nor Xiao Qi got the time to even respond. When the driver was also

settled, then these two women turned around and suddenly saw the figure of Nan Fang and Ye Feng in front.

“It’s him!”

All of a sudden, this scene turned Xiao Qi extremely excited, while her eyes dripping with pleasant surprise, got stuck on Ye Feng’s face mask, making her lovable small face bright red under the raincoat.

“You stop right there!”

Lin Shiqing scathingly said: “Surprisingly you dared to even hit the NSA soldiers

Her heart was already hit by an extreme shock, five NSA’s specialised soldiers were taken down and that also in a matter of few seconds, where they didn’t even get enough time to react! How could the opposite party get that close to them without getting noticed, could it be that he could make himself invisible?

“Cut the crap and tell me straight, what brought you two here?”

Ye Feng’s low and dense voice all of a sudden interrupted her.

“We are here looking for you.”

Xiao Qi spoke out directly.

“Hey, Xiao Qi, Sister Lin, how have you been ever since our last meeting?”

At this time, Nan Fang, while leaning against a tree, said holding a frivolous expression like a maiden’s tone with a touch of slight anger: “As for the matters here, I advise you don’t get involved for your good. When it comes to the matters of the martial arts world, not even the NSA wants to trip on this muddy water, then why are you two young ladies getting involve into it?

Zhao Mingze?

Hearing this voice, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi were suddenly taken aback.

Previously in their eyes, this effeminate man was the close friend of Cai Shaohong, however now, not only he was hanging out together with the masked man, but together with him, also dared to hit the NSA soldiers!

This was really too terrible.

And of course, after an investigation, Lin Shiqing knew that now Nan Clan had only two people, one was called Nan Fang and the other person was known by the name Nan Feng who had already joined God Fist Gate. Then that meant, the person standing in front was certainly Nan Fang.

Luo Feng died, this news seemed to be hadn't yet spread, besides, Lin Shiqing wasn't a martial artist, so obviously she wouldn't know about it instantly.

"Pretty good, both of you are here."

Lin Shiqing immediately loosened her tone, then her clear and witty words accompanied by a rhythmic up and down motion of her huge chest burst out in a soft voice: "Nowadays Pei Keang Group has exerted a great pressure on our country, if possible, I hope that you two would coordinate"

"Sorry, we don't have time for that."

Ye Feng immediately made an outright refusal, then felt a little funny: "Can a small company of the US dare to challenge such a big country? Anyway, I do not believe it."

The reason why he didn't hurt these two women was because he just wanted to ask their next goal. Since he had already asked out, now the time had finally arrived to deal with them. Of course, making them unconscious in this rainstorm was very inappropriate, hence he decided to throw them into the truck once they lose their consciousness.

Therefore he immediately moved towards them, wearing a mask, he was looking quite gloomy and terrible.

"What do you want to do?"

All of a sudden his fast movement sent a shiver down Lin Shiqing's spine, in this wilderness, if his beastly nature would suddenly burst out or so on, then they two simply couldn't do anything to resist!

However, surprisingly, she neither flinched nor shrank back, after all, she was here to seize him because he was at present very important for the whole country. She slipped her hand in her raincoat, took out an anaesthetic gun and directly aimed at him

But unlike her, Xiao Qi didn't realise that something was wrong, instead, all grinning, she ran towards Ye Feng and said: "I have been looking for you for a long time, thank you for"

Ye Feng looked her jumping with happiness, which made him feel quite helpless in his heart, this little girl, wasn't she afraid of him?

"Just relax, you don't need to be so polite."

He gently waved his hand, then, looked towards Lin Shiqing: "You don't need to take any petty action, anaesthetic guns don't have any effect on me."

These words suddenly startled her as she thought that how perfectly she had concealed this anaesthetic gun in her raincoat, so could it be that the opposite party had already discovered it? That was impossible, then that explained, he was certainly fooling her!

She didn't think much, simply took out a fine anaesthetic gun and shot at him!

Puff.

However, Ye Feng conveniently pulled Xiao Qi in front of his body and she suddenly got shot behind by the anaesthetic bullet. Anyway, it wasn't a deadly weapon, hence he didn't mind taking her as a shield, besides, this way he saved his hands from hurting her to make her unconscious.

"This"

Xiao Qi got shot and immediately passed out on the spot.

Ye Feng supported her and carried her to the truck, then put her inside it to avoid the rainstorm.

"Now you are the next."

He raised his head and gazed at Lin Shiqing, she was just an ordinary person, then why should he waste his time with her?

Just when he was about to make his move and get rid of her, suddenly nearby standing Long Wan'er felt something and her complexion terribly changed.

"Awful and it's already too late."

Long Wan'er said in a soft voice, actually nobody needed her to remind, even

Nan Fang could hear a sudden burst of intermittent footsteps and people's voices spreading from the surrounding, accompanied with several formidable forms!

The martial arts people, who were defending along the coast, had finally discovered that there were some unusual forms in this village, that the reason was why they encircled this place in abundance.

“Surround them all!”

A familiar and dense voice passed on from the surrounding.

Long Mo'ran!

Chapter 194 -> A battle!

As soon as the voice of Long Mo'ran passed on, it simultaneously stole away the complexion of the people present on the scene.

Besides, Ye Feng had also not thought that the opposite party would show up such quickly. Hence, a bit puzzled, he glanced towards Lin Shiqing while thinking that if it were not for this woman who brought the NSA soldiers to intercept him, he wouldn't have definitely stayed this long here to attract the attention of Long Mo'ran and others.

However, even though he heard Long Mo'ran's voice, still didn't fluster a bit.

As for the reappearance of Long Mo'ran, he had already been psychologically prepared, especially now when he also had Long Wan'er by his side. So long as she, at the critical moment, would catch him off guard, could definitely launch a fatal blow on the opposite party!

He glanced at Long Wan'er and thought that whether she could do anything or not at the crucial time, it totally depended on her, after all, the opposite party was her father

However, Long wan'er didn't have such a strong self-confidence like he had, the moment she heard her father's voice, as a conditioned reflex, turned anxious right away.

Since her childhood, she had been under the shadow and control of her father, hence a fear of him had clutched at her heart with cold fingers. Although in the small fishing village, she rose vigorously to revolt against him, but that was a do or die situation where she was all certain that she was about to be killed by her own father. That was the reason why she showed courage and revolted.

Now, she was again together with Ye Feng at the same place, besides had also started practising Immortal Cultivation. At this moment, when she was brimming with happiness and yearning for the time, right then she ran into him again, obviously, this made her unable to lift her fighting spirit and she didn't at all want to go all out with the opposite party.

“Just wait for an opportunity to act!”

Ye Feng sent a signal to her by making the shape of his mouth. If he had attained 20 years of Cultivation, then could have easily displayed an Immortal Technique by which, he could easily transmit voice just by using his Zhenqi. But unfortunately, he couldn't do that now.

It was said that in the martial arts world, if someone's Cultivation was very profound, then, he could also transmit sound secretly using his inner qi. However, it was definitely pretty difficult to grasp, or else Long Mo'ran didn't have to be loud in order to communicate with each other. So far, the only person he knew who could produce sound was Ye Wentian, while the rest of the martial artists couldn't achieve.

Long Wan'er when saw him signally her using his mouth shape, although at first she hesitated a bit, but then firmly nodded and ran up to his side.

However, Nan Fang didn't need Ye Feng to instruct him since he had already moved quietly and intelligently hid under the military truck's plate. This kid was indeed very smart, hence could be believed that at a critical moment, would certainly play a significant role.

Although Ye Feng was unable to promote his Cultivation that fast, but who said if someone wanted to kill a person, could only rely on his own strength and go for a direct solo combat?

If these three people co-ordinately launched a sneak attack on the opposite party, then their chances of success were on the higher side, besides, they might turn the table as well.

To defeat a superior enemy, now they only had this way!

On the other side, when Lin Shiqing heard some voices transmitting from around, she slightly felt relaxed in her heart, however, turned even more anxious, because the people who were about to reach there were martial artists, who had never been in good terms with the NSA. Not to mention she was a woman, if Thunder would have been here, even he wouldn't have much right to speak.

She was suddenly struck by a brainwave, taking advantage of Ye Feng's

distraction, she quietly moved sideways and ran away towards the truck, with the intention to take care of Xiao Qi while enjoying a nice play.

Ye Feng saw her moving but still didn't care about her, an ordinary woman couldn't raise any wave. Besides, now the most important thing was that he had no free time to pay attention to her.

He simply swept around and found that several martial artists had surrounded them from all directions. In addition, Xiao Yue, who was just saved, was also nearby hiding behind a dark tree, seemingly was also prepared to stand in a circle and watch the stirring scene.

As for Shu Shu, when she heard the voice of Long Mo'ran, her complexion changed at once and she promptly dodged towards the shadow and hid there. Although she had just started practising and had no Cultivation at all, but since was associated with Long Clan for last so many years, hence still had the awareness of the martial arts people.

Under the bright glowing headlights of the military truck, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er stood together firmly, while few heavily armed NSA soldiers were lying on the ground fully unconscious. While on the truck, Lin Shiqing was there to take care of Xiao Qi who was anaesthetized by her gun.

Due to the stormy weather, everything around seemed to be so chaotic, dark and damp. Even though Lin Shiqing and other top beauties were there, but still no one had the time to appreciate them.

Just within a moment, the entire open area before the truck was flooded with dozens of individuals, in addition to the Long people who were being led by Long Mo'ran, there were also several other disciples of the martial arts school.

But since there was Long Mo'ran, others couldn't dare to act rashly!

Long Mo'ran, clad in a white robe with a sword hanging around his waist, finally appeared before them. Holding a cold look, he came out from the crowd and stood right in front of Ye Feng and Long Wan'er.

Although before, he was blown away by the hurricane tornado, then later in the seabed received severe injuries, but again this time, holding a domineering look, accompanied with bubbling spirit, he appeared before them. Apart from a

little blood stain on his white robe right around his chest area, there was hardly any change in him since the beginning.

Ye Feng again swept his Soul Search and sensed that the severe wound of the opposite party's chest had already a lot better, which made him conclude that the treatment method of the martial arts world was similarly quite impressive

“Mo Jiuge, today you can't fly away.”

Long Mo'ran narrowed his eyes and tightly glared at Ye Feng, who was standing in front wearing a face mask. His eyes revealed a sign of extreme hatred.

The current scene suddenly reminded him of the incident which had taken place 20 Years ago in the Mt. Luofushan cave, where he had exterminated Ye Clan. Just like today, he had then similarly surrounded Ye Yunfei, even at that time, his wife had stood on the opposite side

Raging with fury, not only he had beheaded Ye Yunfei but also didn't let off his wife and beheaded her as well at the same time, a big hatred must report!

Now, the masked man, Mo Jiuge stole away his daughter and the worst part of it, his daughter was also on the other side, which made his blood boil and he again exploded with rage.

But how the current situation was similar to the previous situation?

It was just that this time, his target was replaced with his own daughter.

Well, if such being the case, then how he had beheaded Ye Yunfei back then, would repeat the same now with these two kids!

Long Mo'ran's mind was continuously thinking, making him abruptly pull out his waist sword and then he pointed at Ye Feng!

A good play would be staged soon, apart from these three people, the rest people were constantly talking in whispering tone, while pointing their fingers towards Ye Feng and Long Wan'er.

All of them had the feeling that this time, these two kids should surrender for their own good. Or else their strength had no way to be placed on par with Long

Mo'ran, hence both would be certainly instantly killed by him.

Long Qing slovenly leaning against the side of the tree, glanced towards Long Wan'er's pretty and innocent face and slightly shook his head with regret. He still very much liked his niece, but today under this situation, even he couldn't do anything to support her.

While Long Zi, wearing a purple robe, while standing silently, was constantly looking at Ye Feng's face mask holding a complex look in his eyes. Actually, he wanted to let him be a part of his Clan, because this would enhance the strength of Long Clan. But after going through the experience in that small fishing village, he now clearly knew that there was no way Long Mo'ran would let this fellow off.

Gradually, seeing everyone was constantly whispering, Long Wan'er felt somewhat pressurised by this situation and her heart spontaneously turned very anxious.

“Even if I die, still won't let even the slightest scratch on your body!

Ye Feng said in a low voice, then, held her arm and pulled her behind his body in order to shield her.

Afterwards, he raised his head, his eyes looked through his mask confidently at Long Mo'ran: “Let's begin the battle!”

This was a pre-eminent declaration which acted as a bomb and immediately set off the mighty waves in the surrounding.

Did a young masked man actually dare to speak such words and directly challenge Long Mo'ran? Didn't he want to live further!

No matter who it was, even Lin Shiqing who was presently on the truck, when heard his statement, couldn't help but feel greatly astonished. Even her face favoured her and revealed a look of shock as she thought that this guy, really dared to confront Long Mo'ran?

Chapter 195 -> Suppressing Soul Sound Wave

Confronting Long Mo'ran was equal to courting death.

At least presently in the East China Sea, this was believed by almost everyone. Long Mo'ran had already mastered the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique, so those who had personally witnessed it, clearly knew how formidable he was!

However, Ye Feng was happy instead of being afraid of him.

Although he only had 12 years of Cultivation but was actually the so-called Immortal Cultivator who had all kinds of inconceivable supernatural powers, which the ordinary martial artists couldn't even imagine. A confrontation with Long Mo'ran was obviously something he couldn't completely handle by himself relying on his own strength. But, it wasn't also like he couldn't depend on various means to procrastinate time, so as to consume up the opposite party's inner qi.

Moreover, if compared with Long Wan'er, clearly his Cultivation was relatively low, however, the advantage he had over her was also very obvious and that was, he had the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring.

Besides, the methods of attack she knew were nothing but just two Immortal Techniques and they were Red Inflammation and Star Arrows. Once they were displayed out, then it would be very difficult to produce anything else to threaten the opponent while guarding oneself against any danger.

But Ye Feng was naturally different, he could congeal his Zhenqi out in the form of a sword and his each sword wield had the might to chop down anyone, in addition, his each Sword Qi was pretty deadly regardless of who the opponent was, Long Mo'ran was also not an exception!

So long as he could pose a threat, there was the possibility of defeating the opposite party.

Not to mention that Ye Feng's goal was not to defeat him, but to constrain him, so that when his strength got exhausted after a while, then, Long Wan'er and Nan Fang could seize the opportunity to begin. Although in the Immortal

World, handing over the rest part of the battle to others and that also in a life and death situation was greatly hated, but Ye Feng wanted to believe that Long Wan'er and Nan Fang were enough reliable.

It was really not good, although Long Wan'er immediately turned into the invisible mode, but still by doing so, she had no means to take Shu Shu away from this dangerous place. But fortunately, Ye Feng had also no intention to abandon a single one of those who was on his side.

At this moment, he felt that finally, he was bubbling with boiling passion, because ever since his rebirth to this world, this was going to be his first bitter encounter which relatively had the challenging battle.

“You stay back a little.”

He blocked in front of Long Wan'er, then said in a light tone: “Camouflage is not a martial arts technique.”

In the eyes of Long Mo'ran and others, Long Wan'er had already discarded her Dantian, so now was equal to an ordinary person without any fighting strength. So like this, let them be in a huge misunderstanding and at the critical moment, she could unexpectedly launch a fatal blow!

She clearly understood what he meant, but was still unavoidably a bit worried: “You must be careful.”

“Everything will be all right.”

Ye Feng nodded firmly.

Facing such an expert martial artist, perhaps using Invisibility Technique wouldn't be that effective. In addition, Ye Feng naturally wouldn't dare expose the fact that he knew the technique of making himself invisible since from the beginning.

His Zhenqi all of a sudden surged out of his body and the next moment, the golden sword congealed out.

Long Mo'ran narrowed his eyes, at this moment his eyes were covered with a colour of greed. Since he had seen him using this golden sword plenty of times, but could never figure out from where it used to appear.

There was no doubt the ring which was there in the masked man's hand was the most precious treasure! Even there was a high possibility that the present abilities of the masked man were derived from that ring only

Long Mo'ran's mind was constantly thinking about all these possibilities. Brimming with a greedy intention, now he, even more, wanted to kill him. At this instant, he wielded his sword and a bright white Sword Qi, while sweeping away as many things as possible, rushed towards Ye Feng in this rainstorm.

This was a probe.

Romantic Sword Technique, sweep away scattered clouds!

Even if it was only a probe, still Ye Feng could feel a murderous intention coupled with burning anger rushed towards him, creeping along with the Sword Qi. Now, he could neither dare to be negligent nor could dare to dodge it, because Long Wan'er was right behind him.

"Beheading Dragon!"

He also waved his golden sword, in a flash an icy-blue Sword Qi rushed out and collided with the approaching Sword Qi, immediately followed by a huge explosion, which led to a terrific surge in the air current!

The battle had finally started.

Ye Feng lightly moved and instantly the second layer of his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace broke out, leaving behind several blurred afterimages all the way, bypassing half circle, he rushed quickly towards Long Mo'ran!

Whish!

The surrounded martial artists' scream rose from all directions, this guy could actually burst into such a terrific speed, it was indeed surprising! If his current speed was compared with the people present on the scene, then perhaps there was the only person who could challenge him and that was obviously Long Mo'ran!

Long Zi and Long Qing's complexion suddenly dignified, this boy actually had so many capabilities and they didn't even know about them.

Seeing Ye Feng getting close to him, Long Mo'ran's pupil spontaneously

contracted, while his hand elegantly pulled his sword and precisely, quite rapidly punctured towards Ye Feng's direction.

“A good opportunity!”

Ye Feng saw this and his heart moved, immediately thought of a move which had been an always useless move.

Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave!

An exquisite martial arts technique from Asura Sect had long been extinct from this world. If one could assign his inner qi away from his body, then was known as “a roar that can shake underground spring”! Regardless of how effective it was, if could cause a good threat to Long Mo'ran, then it meant it was really effective. Besides, as long as there was an opportunity to defeat him, Ye Feng would certainly not dare to miss it.

Perhaps this could frighten the opposite party, then, Ye Feng's sword might have the fair chances of getting rid of him.

In the Immortal World, the fight never meant displaying as many techniques as possible by either side, even if two Immortal Cultivators had similar strength and Cultivation, but the fight was something which might decide in an instant who the winner was.

In the martial arts world, on seeing the use of martial arts techniques, one could undoubtedly say the more the martial artists used to comprehend techniques, the more flexibility they achieve in their use and the fighting became handier for them.

This was the reason why in the martial arts world of China, all major sects used to value their people even when they didn't have any worth. Because in case their techniques were stolen by their rivals and in return, their rivals used the same technique against them, wouldn't it be quite tragic?

Ye Feng erupted with a magnificent speed, which was followed by a series of blurred afterimages and then, he quickly reached the sword punctured by Long Mo'ran.

At this instant, in a split second, he gathered his whole body's Zhenqi in the meridians and acupuncture points of his throat, then in accordance with Asura

Suppressing Soul Sound Wave Technique, his Zhenqi gushed out of his mouth at a stretch.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

Consecutively three sounds similar to the ghost wail burst out from his mouth, the power and terror of which all of a sudden spread toward the surrounding, all the way rolling up leaves, mud and even the rain curtain, these three sound waves changed their shapes!

Without any prior indication, this technique directly caught Long Mo'ran off guard, making him bear the brunt of these sound waves, as well as, literally scared him.

Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave lived up to its reputation!

Watching numerous martial artists couldn't remain standing steady and were forced several steps back, even over fifty percent of the people fell to the ground by his roar and finally fainted with blurred vision.

As a conditioned reflex, Lin Shiqing quickly covered her ears. Although she was in the truck, but still felt very sick because of these three acoustic shocks and simply wanted to throw up.

Long Wan'er went two steps back, similarly covered her ears, this technique of Sound Wave was an indiscriminating attack, regardless of who the enemy was, its effect enveloped the surrounding all people without any discrimination.

Nan Fang, who was lying under the truck, barely survived the shock. Fortunately, the strength of his determination was outstanding, making him not to reveal his cloven foot until the very end.

Hiding behind a dark tree, both Xiao Yue and Shu Shu similarly covered their ears, but still these three consecutive ghostly roars made these two women feel sick and they also wanted to vomit.

A good opportunity!

While taking advantage of this moment, Ye Feng quickly displayed the Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!

He opened his mouth and pounded a fireball directly aiming at Long Mo'ran.

This was called catching someone off guard!

Astonishing eruption speed! The sudden Suppressing Soul Sound Wave!
Unfathomable and strange mouth which spat out a fireball!

A series of actions of Ye Feng hit Long Mo'ran directly when he was totally unprepared. However, the final fireball wasn't noticed by anyone around, because all of them were awestruck by the penetrating sound of the Suppressing Soul Sound Wave.

In a split second, Long Mo'ran's white robe was set on fire by the fireball!

Chapter 196 -> A group of Long Wan'er

Although Ye Feng displayed Red Inflammation, still he didn't relax, immediately raised his sword and rushed towards Long Mo'ran, directly aiming at his chest to stab him.

While on the other side, the moment the flame touched Long Mo'ran's cloth, its blazing temperature suddenly shook him up from the state of being deterred and as a result, in an instant, he released his inner qi out of his body and completely enveloped himself by forming a protective shield around!

It seemed that he was pretty aware of Ye Feng's sword approaching him, hence right on the spot he rolled on the ground and evaded it, simultaneously, drew support from the humid ground and put off his flame really fast.

This proved that indeed his Cultivation was very profound. Besides, in this weather, the Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation obviously couldn't pose any threat to his life.

But Ye Feng was unrivalled, couldn't let his opponent slip away like this at any cost. Therefore, he again wielded his sword, immediately an icy-blue Beheading Dragon Sword qi gushed out and while sweeping away everything along its way, rushed towards Long Mo'ran with a lightning fast speed.

Clang!

At this moment, Long Mo'ran promptly attached his inner qi to his sword and then brandished it, making his formidable inner qi firmly block the other Sword qi. There was indeed a big disparity between their Cultivation, no matter what Ye Feng did, really couldn't make up this gap.

"Little bastard, you surely want to die today but I won't make it that easy for you!"

Long Mo'ran was brimming with extreme anger, stuck in an extremely difficult situation, suddenly he jumped up.

Because of just now rolling on the ground, his white robe had been completely stained and moistened with mud and bits of grass. In addition, his elegant and

long tied up hair had also been burnt by the fireball. All these things were collectively making him look very miserable just like a distress beggar in this torrential downpour.

For a moment, he completely failed to see through Ye Feng's attack and once again got caught into his "small tricks" and was thrown into such a distressed and embarrassing situation. So finally he decided that he wouldn't let him die so easily and happily.

And to do that, what could be the most painful thing for a person? It was naturally watching his loved ones being tormented right in front of his own eyes, while he couldn't do anything like a helpless person!

Long Mo'ran threw a glance at Long Wan'er and suddenly a dense look crawled on his face as he thought something: "Aren't you two deeply attached to each other? In that case, my sword will stab her to death right here in front of you!"

He said and moved at once.

His elegant form flashed, his speed was visibly much faster than Ye Feng. Holding his sword, he dashed all the way towards Long Wan'er and suddenly jabbed his long sword directly into her thigh!

He wanted to use his sword to torment Long Wan'er, simultaneously torment the masked man!

Until this time, all the surrounding martial artists, who were wonderstruck by the effect of Suppressing Soul Sound Wave, one after another recovered and gradually opened their eyes, however, what they suddenly saw was a shocking scene where Long Mo'ran stabbed his own daughter.

Did he really want to kill his daughter?

A group of people suddenly raised their voice as they felt that he was really too vicious. However when they thought of that incident when this man had beheaded his own wife without the slightest bit of hesitation, then felt that the current situation was not at all strange.

Long Zi and Long Qing wanted to jump out and block him, but it was quite obvious that based on their speed, they couldn't stop him.

So in desperation, both of them closed their eyes as they couldn't bear to see again.

Puff!

Although it seemed that Long Mo'ran's sword jabbed into her thigh, but surprisingly, his sword didn't cause any injury to her, not even a single drop of blood spilt out. Instead the entire person, just like a blue smoke in general, gradually dissipated right before them.

"Not good, is it an illusion?"

Long Mo'ran immediately reacted and quickly pulled his sword back, then looked around and suddenly saw dozens of Long Wan'er had appeared around him who looked exactly the same!

"Camouflage, unleash!"

Ye Feng wiped the rain water from the corners of his mouth, simultaneously, quietly faded his stature.

Just now he had displayed the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, the eruption speed of which had already brought him quite closer to Long Mo'ran. He had already done a good preparation. At this moment, his Zhenqi dispersed in the forest all around and this way, he deployed the spell of Camouflage Technique.

He had already taken into consideration that the possibility of Long Mo'ran's surprise attack to kill Long Wan'er first was on higher side. That was the reason why he saw through his strategy and immediately, quite silently created a magic array.

All at once, the surrounding all sides became somewhat strange in the eyes of Long Mo'ran.

Long Wan'er.

Long Wan'er.

Long Wan'er.

.....

He looked around and saw all the surrounding people had turned into her, sort of a group of Long Wan'er had surrounded him. But the point was, how the original masked man, Long Zi, Long Qing and other martial artists turned into her!

He all of sudden dignified, what was all this about?

Could it be that he was too tired, so had started hallucinating now?

No, it certainly was that little bastard who did this ghostly illusion, if that little bastard could actually spurt out fireballs from his mouth, then seemingly, whatever God Fist Gate's Luo Feng had said earlier was really the truth. In that case, it was certainly this fireball which had severely injured him back then!

Since he had seen all sorts of strange places, which made him realize that today's opponent was a little strange and scary, so he couldn't treat him similarly like confronting any ordinary martial artist.

His complexion turned gloomy because now he simply couldn't tell which one was real Long Wan'er and which was a dummy, just an illusion.

When Ye Feng saw him being all helpless, his heart finally felt huge relief, now he knew that the magic array was still efficiently playing its role.

Immortal Technique – Yin Soul Fake Body!

He made a fake body in a hidden place which was exactly the same as his main body. Then after, holding his golden sword, his fake body advanced towards Long Mo'ran so as to stab him right from the front.

And he himself, while being under the spell of Invisibility, gradually got close to Long Mo'ran and then quietly arrived behind him.

Apart from Long Wan'er, this cheap trick wasn't discovered by anyone present around and interestingly, the movement of his fake body made her think that he was simply insane!

Actually, holding a sword, he directly advanced towards Long Mo'ran and that also right from ahead in order to stab him. The flaw was too big! Even if Long Mo'ran might be a bit sluggish for some reason, but still if he would rely on his

instinct alone, that was still sufficient enough to kill the masked man a hundred times!

At this moment, a trace of anxiety gradually crawled over Lin Shiqing's face, who was still on the truck.

In case the masked man was really Ye Feng and he died here, then what should she do?

From all kinds of information she had explored, based on that she had already made a conjecture that Ye Feng and the masked man, Mo Jiuge were the same person, but since she couldn't confirm that, therefore didn't yet tell anything to Xiao Qi.

But in case this was really the truth

Ye Feng was right here

If he was killed by Long Mo'ran

She immediately took out the anaesthetic gun in the bosom and quietly aimed at Long Mo'ran.

The intense scene was about to be staged any moment!

Ye Feng's fake body finally took a step to enter within the first five meters of Long Mo'ran, then waved his sword, aiming at his neck to sever it.

Seeing this action, surrounding martial artists sighed with regret as they thought that this young man, after all, was too young. This kind of action of paring his neck was a big step, which might not be chosen by several people of the martial arts world. However, he actually chose this to deal with Long Mo'ran.

Just as expected, although Long Mo'ran couldn't see anyone in front, but relying on his intuition he easily sensed a sword was waved towards him right from ahead. Therefore, he abruptly attached his inner qi to his sword, which was forceful enough to chop Ye Feng down into two sections.

However right at this time.

Puff!

Lin Shiqing went a step ahead and pulled the trigger of her anaesthetic gun,

which unexpectedly hit Long Mo'ran in his back, making his stature stagnate.

Shua!

Right then, from under the truck, similarly, Nan Fang held the broken magical crossbow and pulled the trigger, aiming directly at Long Mo'ran's ass!

The sneak attacks back to back from two sides, made Long Mo'ran a little flurried for a moment, but for him, beheading Ye Feng right now was the matter of primary importance. Therefore, he didn't dodge to avoid these attacks, instead waved his sword to chop down Ye Feng into two parts!

"Bang" sound echoed.

Again his fake body was hit and again he turned into a blue smoke and dissipated right away.

Puff!

The arrow Nan Fang had hit, that had impartially hit Long Mo'ran in the buttocks, the demonic effect of which immediately began to spread in his entire body and simultaneously started suppressing his inner qi.

However, this was still not fatal.

Ye Feng's real body had long been hiding behind Long Mo'ran while being in an invisible mode. At this instant, he also moved and stabbed his sword right into his back along with Nan Fang's strike.

Plop!

His sword suddenly pierced through his chest and immediately a flow of fresh blood gushed out from his body!

Chapter 197 -> Misses it just by a half inch

When a series of adversity fell back to back, it stunned the surrounding audience.

What was the matter, even though the masked man was chopped down into two by Log Mo'ran's sword, but actually he changed into a blue smoke and disappeared? How was this possible, it was totally unscientific, wasn't he a human?

Immediately after, from the truck, Miss Lin also unexpectedly operated the anaesthetic gun. She was also quite stupid, why did she blend in this kind of thing? Now she had really annoyed Long Mo'ran, even several hundreds of Miss Lin was insufficient for the homicide, ah!

And then, something happened which sprinkled salt on his burn. Actually, an arrow also shot him in the buttocks, making some people instantly know what the matter was and it sent a shiver down their spine, the broken magical Crossbow was considered as the exorcist's exclusive weapon! Who could have thought that today, even an exorcist was also present there, but was still hiding somewhere and waiting for an opportunity to attack Long Mo'ran. Could it be that the masked man had spent money to invite him?

However, these were still nothing.

Because, even if all these attacks were added together, still were unable to kill Long Mo'ran. Even the weapon just now used was the so-called Broken Magical Crossbow, but still, it couldn't do anything remarkable on him since his Cultivation was very profound.

Surprisingly, he still had the considerable fighting strength left as before!

But at this time, a figure similar to a ghostly form suddenly appeared behind him, immediately after, a golden light flashed, followed by a sword which stabbed him in his chest right from behind at one fell swoop!

In the rainstorm, this scene like a picture frame all of a sudden freeze in the eyes of the surrounding people. The elegant white and long robe of Long Mo'ran was completely dyed with fresh blood quite soon, which was bubbling out and running down on the ground mixing with the rain water.

The black dressed man with a face mask and the golden sword, he was exactly the same man 'Mo Jiuge' as the rumour spread.

How he floatingly went behind Long Mo'ran and thrust his sword into his chest?

Could it be that Long Mo'ran was such struck that now he wouldn't survive?

Was it going to be an inexplicable death at the hands of a young masked man?

Thunderstruck, Long Zi, Long Qing, hiding Shu Shu, as well as remaining other martial artists all at once opened their mouths widely in shock, it was a jaw-dropping situation for them as they were totally unable to believe that this scene genuinely occurred right before their eyes.

Extremely shocking!

However, in the field, only three people knew that the sword had missed its target.

It missed it only by a half inch.

This explained, how profound Long Mo'ran's Cultivation, accompanied with a rich fighting experience as well. Just relying on his intuition, his body happened to move aside a bit and avoided the deadly vital parts.

Ye Feng missed this superb chance just by a half-inch, or else he would have shaken up the entire martial arts world by know if he had really succeeded in killing him, but unfortunately nothing happened like he expected.

He was aware of it.

But interestingly, Long Mo'ran also knew about it.

Moreover, with the help of Soul Search Technique, Long Wan'er also noticed this thing, but in spite of being stunned, she began to get ready to launch a strike with her all strength

Although Long Mo'ran was stabbed by a sword, but still it couldn't stop him. Immediately his inner qi started condensing in his both legs and then with a lightning fast speed, he quickly turned around and forcefully kicked a foot aiming at him. Seemingly it was the legendary Dragon Tail Technique!

The three supreme feats of Long Clan, Romantic Sword, Dragon Leg and Gentle Palm Technique, each one of them had the wondrous use.

Actually along with this kick “Dragon Tail”, Long Mo’ran condensed his whole body’s inner qi in his legs and threw a solid kick towards Ye Feng, at the same time, opened his mouth, squeezed out some more qi from his Dantian and the next moment launched the great “Dragon Cry Realm”, it was again a sound wave attack!

Employing two-pronged approaches simultaneously to achieve a goal, Ye Feng’s spirit was jolted out by the fierce dragon roar. But just within an instant, he responded, quickly wanted to pull his sword back and escape. However, before he could do anything, was actually got kicked by the opposite party heavily in his waist.

The formidable force of the foot all of a sudden invaded thoroughly within his body and kicked him in mid-air!

The sudden outbreak of Long Mo’ran once again changed the complexion of the surrounding people.

What a pity, that sword really couldn’t kill him

Fortunately, the head of the Clan didn’t die, besides, one must know it wasn’t that easy to dispose him off like this

Now, the masked man would be screwed

“Coughs ...”

Since a sword had pierced his chest just now and immediately after that, the golden Zhenqi sword was pulled back suddenly, causing even more severe injuries to him, making him unable to bear and he coughed up a mouthful of fresh blood.

By this time, the effect of magic array finally gradually dissipated. Now in his eyes, that group of Long Wan’er finally resumed their original appearances, originally they were trees, other martial artists, even were large rocks

He raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng, who was just now severely kicked by him. Seeing him hadn’t yet landed, his eyes once revealed the ominous

light accompanied with a killing intention to kill him right here right now!

Just in a fraction of a second, he drew his right leg and immediately his left leg leapt as he wanted to kill Ye Feng right in midair.

However, right at this time, a dark blue arrow, carrying an infinite power, suddenly was shot towards him from behind the truck! Star arrow was quite bright just like stars in general, in addition, its appearance was not so common, actually, it was shot by Long Wan'er.

Although Long Mo'ran had received several serious injuries, but still he did everything to kick Ye Feng. While on the other side, ignoring other circumstances, Long Wan'er watched for quasi-opportunity and then, immediately congealed out a Star Arrow and projected it at one fell swoop.

Long Mo'ran saw that and suddenly his heart was aghast. He wanted to get away hurriedly, but since just now had been hit by an anaesthetic bullet as well as Broken Magical Crossbow, so finally they began to display their effect.

Suddenly his whole body turned stiff, making him feel all dizzy. The only thing he felt that the circulation of inner qi in his meridians had become incomparably slow, so now he was only able to slightly lean his head.

Puff!

The Star Arrow suddenly stuck to his shoulder and ripped it apart from his shoulder. Actually, the powerful penetrating power directly shot his right arm with which he had held a sword!

“Ahh—”

Because of the tearing sort of pain, he couldn't bear but give out a blood-curdling screech, because this dark blue arrow, more than just penetration, had also shot his arm down!

The formidable force, carrying one of his arms along with it, fired towards the dark woods seaside and then quickly disappeared from the sight of the surrounding people. Now there was no trace of his right arm and searching in this kind of stormy weather was also extremely difficult.

Shockingly an arrow had ripped off Long Mo'ran's arm!

The surrounding all people quickly shifted their eyes towards the place from where the dark blue arrow was shot and were all surprised to see Long Wan'er was there behind the truck. It was just that, she had been preparing for a long time to launch this shot.

This sneak attack could actually produce such a terrible effect. That arrow really left everyone around with huge shock! Didn't Long Wan'er have already discarded her Dantian, then, just now, what was that technique all about?

Besides, neither that shot looked like a martial arts technique, nor she had held any weapon in her hand. In that case, how did she project that deep blue arrow?

Since Long Mo'ran had just now gone through such a heart-chilling experience and injuries, making his whole facial expression look completely abominable and hateful. He had never imagined that he, the God's favoured person and a renowned martial arts hero, would ever suffer such a big and humiliating loss and that also because of two young kids.

He started raging with fury.

Because of the boiling anger in his heart, he almost lost his intellect and rationality.

Now he just wanted to catch the masked man together with Long Wan'er and tear them into shreds while they were still alive!

Bang!

Until this time, Ye Feng's body finally heavily fell to the ground, Long Mo'ran's foot was indeed too frightening, which had almost shattered his whole body's internal organs.

Seeing this, Long Mo'ran again made an effort under his foot to tread him upon. While totally ignoring his chest injury as well as his severed right arm, the whole person suddenly jumped high.

"Dragon in the sky!"

Descending Dragon Leg Technique was another move abruptly displayed by him. Taking his present Cultivation, the strength of such a foot was fully capable

of crushing ten thousands of megaliths!

This was sufficient enough to crush Ye Feng under the foot.

If he was clouted by this foot, then considering his present Cultivation, he would absolutely die without any burial ground.

Did Long Mo'ran want to decide who bagged the victory?

Everyone's heart jumped to their throat while they were constantly gazing towards the field.

Chapter 198 -> Dragon against Dragon!

The long white robe of Long Mo'ran was completely stained with blood, making him look like a dragon descended from the sky while extending his foot towards the ground where Ye Feng was, in order to crush him under the foot!

“Be careful!”

When Long Wan'er saw this situation, panic-stricken, she shouted out loud at once. But unfortunately, Ye Feng had just been severely injured by the same foot, so at this moment, he simply couldn't even get up from the lying position.

Shua!

Therefore without thinking much and further ado, she immediately raised her hand, followed by the Star Arrow which directly dashed towards Long Mo'ran targeting him, just like how the previous hit was.

The condensation speed of this arrow was quite rapid, so it also emerged out extremely fast, making Long Mo'ran dare not to underestimate it again. In any case, one of his arms was ripped off by the same kind of arrow just a moment ago, so could he still dare to be careless now?

With the help of Light Dodge Technique, his foot a bit rose from the ground. Actually, it was his emergency move by using which, he turned over and fell to the ground not far away from Ye Feng and this way, avoided this arrow.

The second appearance.

Thunderstruck, the surrounding people's eyes went wide open, they simply wanted to break their heads since were totally unable to understand what that dark blue arrow was which was shot by her.

Today, this battle seemed to have outrun their cognition.

Could it be that her inner qi congealed out in the form of these blue arrows? This could be possible, after all, some people could achieve the similar level in the martial arts world, however, they could only be those top experts who had already mastered the skill of releasing inner qi away from their bodies!

Long Wan'er had already abandoned her Dantian, so how could she still have inner qi within

“Really a hindrance.”

Long Mo’ran steadily stood on the ground, his severed arm’s cuff was billowing in the rainstorm. He gazed towards long Wan’er with the eyes dripping with a frenzy of anger: “All right, I need to settle you first since you are in the way! ”

If he was compared with the previously met Slaughter God Ghost Hand, Qin Ge, it could be said that they were quite different.

Slaughter God Ghost Hand was just an ordinary martial arts expert with fifty years Cultivation, but as for him, although he had the same level of Cultivation, but was gifted with incredible talent, coupled with more than double strength. Even if they joined hands, the method that would emerge one after another incessantly, still couldn’t strike to kill him.

Then after, he swept a glance towards Long Wan’er who was standing behind the truck, Lin Shiqing on the truck, as well as that unknown guy hiding underneath the truck.

Anyway the masked man had already been thrown in a seriously injured state, hence he couldn’t constitute a threat to him. So might as well, he should think of disposing these few sinister off first, who were stabbing in his back one after another.

In addition to him, Long Zi and Long Qing also finally moved into action.

At the beginning, they had full confidence in Long Mo’ran, basically hadn’t expected he would encounter such a big trouble, so they hadn’t done a good preparation beforehand to begin any moment.

When the favourable situation slipped away from Long Mo’ran’s hand and on top of that, he also lost one of his arms, then Long Zi and Long Qing perceived that the situation was really not right. If under such circumstances, they didn’t set into action, then perhaps it was highly likely that Long Mo’ran would have a tragic end!

They were the people of Long Clan, although didn’t much appreciate Long Mo’ran’s cold behaviour, but what undeniable fact was the status of their Clan in the martial arts world, which might get ruined in case Long Mo’ran got all beaten up today by these few kids.

Long Mo'ran was already seriously battered which was a very big blow to the whole Long Clan.

The two people moved to hurriedly coordinate with Long Mo'ran and prepare attacks from both sides, one on Long Wan'er and the other on the "exorcist" hiding under the truck. As for already knocked out Ye Feng, similarly, they didn't need to care about him right now.

Long Mo'ran had mighty 50 years of Cultivation, while the masked man only had a little more than 10 years of Cultivation, so how could he bear that foot? Although he didn't die but was very badly injured, hence he didn't need to be taken seriously as a threat at this point of time.

Apart from this, Long Wan'er could unexpectedly release this kind of dark blue oddly arrows, making them tighten their guards at all times.

On the other side, other Long people one after another dispersed in abundance and tightly surrounded the open area, at the same time they also sent a few guys to the surrounding area to carry out the search work, in order to find back Long Mo'ran's arm somehow.

Hiding behind the dark tree, Xiao Yue and Shu Shu all of a sudden felt that the situation had turned suddenly unfavourable for them, what if were discovered by these Long people

"I must personally kill her."

Long Mo'ran said in a tone dripping with an unparalleled killing intention, afterwards he paced towards her, simultaneously Long Zi and Long Qing also approached from another two directions and surrounded her, letting her no scope to escape.

However, still, Long Wan'er's beautiful two pupils declined to depart from Ye Feng who was still lying on the ground.

She was truly concerned about him, but it would be better to be concerned about herself at this moment.

"You still have free time to see him?"

Long Mo'ran tracked her vision and instantaneously his complexion turned

denser than ever. Immediately, he started condensing his whole body's inner qi in his legs while holding the sword in his other arm. This time, he couldn't display any sword technique, but could easily display leg techniques, which were still dangerous enough to kill anyone!

Long Zi and Long Qing although somewhat couldn't bear this thing, but just for the sake of their Clan, still blocked her route to prevent her from running away.

While at present, the surrounding people were anticipating that as long as one more second passed by, she would certainly lose her life and that also at the hand of her own father and his leg technique!

"Coughs ..."

At this very moment, nobody from the crowd noticed that Ye Feng's hands had already set into action and the golden light had also appeared, that was the Holy Cure Technique! The injury caused by Long Mo'ran's foot started getting healed quickly. Although, he still shouldn't act now but didn't have the time to continue resting for the treatment.

He wouldn't allow anyone to put his hands on those who were precious to him!

If they wanted to hurt Long Wan'er, then they had to step on his corpse first to get pass him.

Therefore he staggered to get up, relying on what he had understood about few leg techniques of Long Mo'ran which were displayed by him every now and then, his hands turned into the claw, immediately followed by Zhenqi which started condensing quickly and then, in an instant, the majestic momentum took place!

Ye Feng finally touched the doorway of Dragon Claw Hand Technique's third layer.

Two long dragon-shaped claws gradually condensed out in front of him, showing the golden yellow colour. And just like the resounding dragon cry produced by Long Mo'ran just a moment ago, they swept across from Ye Feng's location.

The comprehension layers of many martial arts techniques meant the first

layer was the primary level, while in the second layer they could assign their inner qi away from their bodies and as for the third layer, they could then change their forms.

And in the martial arts world, few people could practice the third layer of some techniques, however, at this moment, the level Ye Feng achieved was similar to what Ye Wentian had expected at the beginning.

When two Dragon Claw Hands emerged out of thin air, it left the surrounding all people with stunned and shocked expression!

Dragon against Dragon!

Just a moment ago, when Long Mo'ran had displayed Descending Dragon Leg Technique along with a penetrating Dragon Cry, could it be that it made the masked man comprehend something to the extent where he even made a breakthrough and entered the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand at one fell swoop?

On seeing this, Lin Shiqing covered her mouth and almost cried out in alarm, but what did she actually see? Two light golden dragon claws! Was it an illusion which appeared in this stormy weather? But that sound was obviously the cries of Dragon?

Being a member of Lin Clan, she knew the existence of martial arts world, also knew that there were plenty of highly skilled martial arts experts who could fly up to the eaves and walls, dodge the water and so on. However, the thing she never expected was that martial artists could actually attain this point.

His both arms extended into two dragon claws, which far exceeded her cognitive range.

"If this boy really succeeds in escaping this calamity, then certainly would have an extremely bright future in the coming days!"

This kind of idea was cropping up in the hearts of almost everyone present on the scene.

The moment Long Mo'ran thought of utilising his full strength to display Dragon Leg Technique and kick Long Wan'er to death, right then, suddenly felt something had firmly grabbed his body, making him unable to move.

Arduously, he turned back and saw two light golden dragon claws holding him. Under the effect of broken magical crossbow and anaesthetic bullet, his strength was already far inferior to his previous state, hence was radically incapable of shaking off the fetter of this pair of dragon claws.

“Get lost!”

Ye Feng displayed the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand, extended his both hands, tightly held him from behind and then made an effort to toss him.

Bang!

Those two dragon claws firmly grabbed him first, then, lifted him up and knocked him against the military truck with formidable strength, making the entire truck shake as if was about to turn over.

Swish!

Then after, he pounded his both claw hands in the air, Cloud style!

With a howling sound, Long Mo’ran was suddenly raised in midair and the next moment was heavily smashed down on the ground!

A loud bang burst out!

Along with it, a deep pit all of a sudden got formed in the damp ground of woods because of such a heavy smash

Chapter 199 -> The last opportunity [Blast 1]

The facial expression of almost everyone present on the spot changed at once.

Long Mo'ran was actually pounded on the ground by the masked man!

As for Long Wan'er, a trace of astonishment coupled with delight peeped out from behind her beautiful facial cast, because Ye Feng's sudden performance was too surprising to digest!

While Long Zi and Long Qing were totally startled and in bewilderment they blankly looked at each other. They still quickly advanced towards Long Wan'er so as to attack her from both sides. One of them had put forth his palm while other his leg, clearly they had resorted to Gentle Palm Technique and Dragon Leg Technique respectively.

If only she fell into their clutch, they could threaten the masked man and prevent him from acting rashly.

However, right at this time, the two light golden Dragon Claws raided over and suddenly grabbed them quite firmly!

Both of them had 30 years of Cultivation, so there was no way the current Ye Feng could be an eligible match for them. However, all of a sudden, they were detained by his dragon claws and instantly were seized on the spot, totally unable to move even an inch.

"Go away!"

Ye Feng roared aloud, simultaneously waved his hands, followed by a strong force which suddenly threw them away separately and later they heavily fell to the ground next to the tree trunk.

Afterwards, Ye Feng's footsteps moved and suddenly the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace burst out with a terrific speed and in a split second, he arrived in front of Long Wan'er.

His Zhenqi then dissipated.

The light golden dragon claws gradually disappeared. Although now he could display the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique, but the enormous consumption of his Zhenqi while using this layer was extremely startling. And at

this situation when he had mere 12 years of Cultivation, he couldn't maintain it for a long time.

Anyways, without further ado, he quickly pulled a small coral out from his bosom and started absorbing it.

In the present situation, not having Zhenqi within his body was extremely dangerous. Fortunately, he still had remaining four small corals which were enough to supplement his Zhenqi four more times. Obviously, the prerequisite was he must have enough time to absorb their spiritual energy.

Seeing Ye Feng being so frantic and acting so boldly to keep those two men off from Long Wan'er and that also by totally ignoring his own safety, sitting inside the truck, Lin Shiqing's heart was suddenly taken aback, the masked man was really too determined.

She couldn't help but recall the incident of the abandoned factory in Yanjing where she had gone through a bitter experience. However, at the time of the explosion, she was actually pressed by this masked man under his body so as to shield her.

But Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand not only dragged Long Mo'ran on the ground but Long Qing and Long Zi couldn't remain unaffected and soon were lifted up and also thrown badly. This incident had really stunned the surrounding all martial artists, this masked man was unexpectedly so formidable!

Even if Ye Feng was replaced by any one of them, still nobody could attain the level which he had already achieved.

At this time, a group of God Fist Gate's people also finally caught up there driven under the leadership of the white-bearded old man, Xu Xiaoyu and coincidentally happened to see Ye Feng casting the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand. It's divine and invincible might instantly stole away the colour of their faces, making them look quite ugly.

When did the martial arts world have this kind of mysterious figure?

Perhaps the whole martial arts world would soon welcome a great change

"How are you now?"

Long Wan'er's whole face was covered with a worried expression as she moved a step forward to support him.

"Fortunately okay"

He nodded and replied in just two words, however, the complexion of both of them actually simultaneously changed.

Because both of them had Soul Search Technique, so they almost simultaneously sensed that Long Mo'ran, who was just now pounded in a deep pit, had stood up again and like a deranged, heavily stamped his foot.

"Sword!"

At this instant, Long Mo'ran roared loudly, at the same time instantly sprang up from the deep pit and re-stood on the ground.

Upon seeing this, Long Qing responded at once, promptly loosened his waist sword and threw it towards him.

Pow!

Long Mo'ran quickly grasped the sword hilt, although blood was still dripping from his severed arm, still, his pair of eyes had a terrorising cold look.

Finally, he had taken the decision to put forth the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique now. Though he had never thought a masked man could compel him to this extent. But if this kid wasn't wiped out now, then would certainly become a huge trouble in the future!

In the martial arts techniques, the first layer was considered as a beginner level, the second layer meant comprehending the process of releasing inner qi out of one's body, while the third layer was all about transforming its shape.

The same applied for Romantic Sword Technique.

Suddenly his mind went into action and the next moment, the temperature of entire woods as if dropped several degrees all of a sudden. Tree leaves as well as torrential rain curtain, all got attached to a layer of thin frost, even water in the muddy land began condensing into ice.

This sword technique had altogether four moves.

Sweep away scattered clouds, flower falls – autumn frost, Snow Reflecting Sunset, Descending moon wild song were mainly the four styles of Romantic Sword Technique.

Long Mo'ran stood elegantly, completely motionless while holding a sword tightly in his hand. At this moment, his sword tip gently trembled, followed by a cold wind Sword Qi dashed towards Ye Feng, accompanied with a huge gale which simultaneously blew along with it and soon spread in the entire woods.

Sitting in the truck, Lin Shiqing was suddenly blown by this strong gale and was not even able to open her eyes. Even the surrounding martial artists were unexpectedly swayed and lost their balance.

If anyone comprehended the third layer of a martial arts technique, that meant he was an extraordinary genius!

“Beheading Dragon!”

Simultaneously Ye Feng's golden sword congealed out icy-blue Sword Qi.

Kiss it!

However, his Sword Qi – sweep across scattered clouds instantly destroyed Ye Feng's Beheading Dragon sword Qi at one fell swoop, followed by a vigorous attack from the lightning which again rushed towards him directly from ahead.

However, having Long Wan'er behind him, he didn't dare to dodge it, could only leap and let himself got hit by the sword.

Puff!

Although the strong wind Sword Qi was divided into two halves by Ye Feng's sword, but still possessed the formidable strength and influence with which it stabbed Ye Feng in his waist and thighs fiercely.

Two severe wounds, but fortunately weren't fatal.

But again, without giving him any breathing time, Long Mo'ran's next sword, Flower fall – autumn frost immediately dashed towards him. As the Sword Qi surged up violently, the frost rimed everywhere, making the snow-white frostwork look similar to a spider web in general, which burst out from soles of his feet and spread in the surrounding open area.

One after another invisible Sword Qi, partnered with the frostwork, rushed towards Ye Feng while cutting off several trees along the way. Even the bursts of strong gale also crept along with it and spread all around.

If this scene wasn't seen by the people with their own eyes, then some people would never believe that martial artists could produce such a terrible effect.

“Withdraw!”

The white-bearded old man, Xu Xiaoyu immediately waved his hand and ordered to retreat since he saw the terrorising effect of Long Mo'ran's sword. For him, he couldn't let the disciples of God Fist Gate suffer any loss while rounding the view.

Quite soon, the entire open area was about to turn into the ocean of Sword Qi, so in case they didn't retreat, then most likely it would bring disaster to these small fishes!

In an instant, the whole crowd, who was rounding the view, drew back.

“It could be said that if inner qi is practised to its extreme peak, similarly can lead the strength of the world, but if compared with Zhenqi, it's much more difficult than inner qi

Ye Feng's mind was struck by a brainwave, so he simply clenched his teeth and stuck his chest out.

“Quickly run!”

Anxiously, Long Wan'er shouted loudly, simultaneously stepped forward to grab his arm and pull him away.

“I can't go.”

Ye Feng said while proliferating his Soul Search around and sensed that behind him, Lin Shiqing was there on the truck trying to drag unconscious Xiao Qi and leave this place, but her strength was too little. Besides, Nan Fang was still under the truck and because of the narrow and small space, he couldn't immediately leave this place.

In case Ye Feng walked away at such a critical moment, then certainly these three people would be cut into pieces by Long Mo'ran's Sword Qi!

Within the scope of his Soul Search, Sword Qi was increasing rapidly. Although naked eyes couldn't see them, but Ye Feng grabbed Long Wan'er and pushed her away, simultaneously, waved his golden sword and tried to quickly intercept these Sword Qi attacking him one after another.

Puff! Puff!

He although could feel Sword Qi was attacking him accompanied with frost, but his movement was actually not able to keep up with, hence totally failed in blocking these Sword Qi which were shot at him from different directions and in a while, was cut and bruised all over.

But still, he didn't flinch back, rather firmly stood in-situ to block those sharp edges and invisible Sword Qi.

In order to ambush to kill Long Mo'ran, there still was an excellent opportunity.

But that also was the last opportunity.

To see whether Ye Feng could take hold or not

Penetrating the cluster of Sword Qi, he tightly gazed towards Long Mo'ran.

A contemptuous smile was there on Long Mo'ran's face as if was thinking: No matter how talented you have been, still don't want to die in my hands?

Gradually, he moved closer to Ye Feng!

Chapter 200 -> Ye Feng? Ye Feng! (Blast 2)

The whole audience was noiselessly watching a series of Sword Qi, which were dancing in the air a moment ago, gradually dissipated

Ye Feng raised his head, meanwhile also felt that the numbness had started acting on his body, but still had the strength left to launch his final blow. Though he was bleeding heavily, but if he couldn't grab this last chance, then today's outcome would be so doomed.

He swept the Soul Search Technique around the surrounding area.

People's eyes were all stuck at his body completely covered with blood, which left them totally stunned. Actually they couldn't think through why he didn't dodge, instead chose to stand in situ and resist those swift and fierce Sword Qi.

The field was in a complete disorder.

Several big trees were snapped off one after another, the ground had multiple traces of scratch marks caused by Sword Qi, which awfully quickly got filled up with rain water and instantly got frozen into ice.

By this time, Lin Shiqing finally left the truck while holding anesthetic Xiao Qi along and then, hid behind a tree. Her pretty face was scouting around from across a big fallen tree holding a complex look in her eyes. She looked towards the field where Ye Feng was.

She knew that he could have easily escaped because just a moment ago when Long Wan'er tried to pull him and escape, in return was pushed away by him.

But he didn't leave the spot.

Besides, on seeing plenty of ugly scratches delimited by Sword Qi all over the military truck, she understood, if it was not for him who stood there to resist, she and Xiao Qi would have already died by now.

Just for them, he was willing to suffer from such a heavy injury?

She really couldn't believe that she and Xiao Qi were that important to him, but when she thought about it, apart from this point, couldn't figure out the other reason why he persisted in blocking those attacks.

She certainly didn't know that just a moment ago, before she stepped out of the truck, Nan Fang crawled out from under the truck, then, bounced and climbed on a nearby treetop, without attracting the attention of anyone in this darkness.

Putting on the exorcist's electrical powered jumping boots, holding the Broken Magical Crossbow, he was also like a major combat power now. But unfortunately, the arrows of his Crossbow couldn't play any major role against Long Mo'ran.

At this point, he just hid there and continued waiting for the right time.

Meanwhile, he took out several flying knives quietly in his hands, although he had just started practicing Crying Ghost Sword Technique, even if he displayed it, still couldn't produce any big effect. However, it could still be used to distract Long Mo'ran when needed.

When Long Wan'er was pushed away by Ye Feng, though she wanted to go all out with Long Mo'ran, but then changed her mind as she thought that it still wouldn't not bring any change to the current situation.

Even after adequate protection, whether it was the Immortal Technique Red Inflammation or Star Arrows, neither of them would have any major effect on him. Instead, if she used multiple techniques frequently, then most likely her identity as Immortal Cultivator could soon get exposed.

Comprehending the third layer of martial arts moves and Immortal Cultivation were little similar, for instance, the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique displayed by Long Mo'ran.

Therefore a while ago when she had shot Star Arrows twice, perhaps that was the reason why it didn't let anyone feel something strange and have doubts. Anyways, based on her talent, comprehending the third layer of martial arts techniques was a simple thing. However, if used multiple times, perhaps would be discerned.

At this time, after few steps, she finally drew back in the dark woods, then, silently moved towards the place where Shu Shu was so as to ensure her safety.

A group of Long people were already spread in the surrounding area to find

Long Mo'ran's severed arm. Because of which Shu Shu was extremely anxious and in nervousness was even unable to breathe, until the arrival of Long Wan'er.

In the utter darkness of woods, the two women leant on each other while constantly paying attention to the surrounding situation.

However, Long Wan'er's Soul Search was still active and was completely concentrated on two people, Ye Feng and Long Mo'ran as she wanted to pay attention to every moment diligently. If only she got a chance, then would continue to display Immortal Techniques and would try to tackle Long Mo'ran from a distance!

On the other side, the disciples of God Fist Gate who were being headed by Xu Xiaoyu, all retreated quite far and when Sword Qi stopped raining, then loosened their breath and once again surrounded the area.

Xu Xiaoyu stood to one side while locked his gaze on Ye Feng.

As for him, he actually wanted Ye Feng to kill Long Mo'ran right here right now, then after he would personally dispose him of. This way, not only he would get rid of an archenemy in the arena, but also would take revenge for Luo Feng.

He was too disinclined to think about it anyway, simply shifted all blames on Ye Feng for Luo Feng's death.

As for stealing away the big Coral King by Ye Feng and suffering the loss of five to ten years of Cultivation, for an expert like him, it was not as important as Luo Feng was for them.

Besides, it must be said Luo Feng although was at the door of his youth, still had already comprehended the skill of assigning away inner qi from his body and that also quite perfectly!

This time God Fist Gate totally failed to reap any benefit, instead lost a lot of manpower. Even if he was the elder of God Fist Gate, still after going back he couldn't take all the consequences.

In addition, other public figures of the martial arts world, one by one pointed their fingers towards the field.

No matter how the situation took the turn today, the masked man had already

brought disaster on Long Mo'ran, not only he ripped off his arm, but also compelled him to move to his last resort and display the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique, which was enough praised in the arena.

If today the masked man could survive, this matter would certainly bring about a mighty change!

Perhaps the whole martial arts world would be jolted out!

Unfortunately, even if masked man turned out successful in eliminating Long Mo'ran, but could never escape the violent treachery of Xu Xiaoyu a group of people were already gazing at Xu Xiaoyu and also noticed the murderous intention his eyes were brimming with.

But today Ye Feng was totally unable to escape even with wings!

One step.

Two step.

Holding a long sword, Long Mo'ran advanced towards him, his long white robe was fluttering, immersed in the blood in this heavy rain, he looked like a bloodthirsty flagitious.

"Don't have strength left?"

A contemptuous smile spread on Long Mo'ran's face, followed by a bright white Sword Qi which again swept towards Ye Feng from quite afar.

The numbness had already engulfed Ye Feng's whole body so he didn't want to escape!

In case he escaped, then would have no strength to launch the final blow

Puff!

But right at this moment, a figure dashed out from nearby dark woods and at the critical point, stood in front of Ye Feng to block the Sword Qi.

In an instant, that bright white Sword Qi cut through the figure's chest. Actually the figure was the masked youth of Taiji Palace!

Until now, Ye Feng didn't know his name, but helped him cure the burn scars on his face. However now, this boy once again bravely stepped forward to help

him block a sword!

With a “Bang”, youth fell to the ground.

That sword was surprisingly quite skillful which actually cut off his heart’s arteries at one fell swoop. Unfortunately this time, he couldn’t survive.

“This guy again!”

Long Mo’ran’s anger was suddenly triggered!

In the small fishing village, he was the one who had blocked Long Mo’ran’s sword aimed at Shu Shu back then and now once again, he ran out to block his Sword Qi which was shot at the masked man.

“Hello Long Mo’ran”

Ye Feng ‘s few gently uttered words suddenly pulled the attention of Long Mo’ran over.

These words, actually he didn’t pretend to be gloomy, but said in Ye Feng’s true voice, at the same time, placed his hand on the black grimace mask as if all prepared to take it off any moment.

In order to survive, he must seize the last opportunity.

Even if he exposed his identity for this reason, still he would have no scruples!

Swish!

In the torrential rain, he unexpectedly took his mask off from his face.

A delicate and gentle face all at once appeared in front of everyone, however, this time, it wasn’t the effect of Camouflage Technique, rather was the true appearance of Ye Feng.

Long Mo’ran was all of a sudden stupefied.

Ye Feng?

Ye Feng!

“Good opportunity!”

Although Ye Feng was sadly looking at the body of Taiji Palace’s youth, but the consciousness of his Soul Search had locked on Long Mo’ran all along. So by

taking advantage of the opposite party's bewilderment, he immediately congealed out the golden sword, followed by Beheading Dragon Sword Qi, which swiftly dashed towards him!

Shua Shua Shua!

Immediately after that, one after another, several flying knives were shot directly towards Long Mo'ran from another direction. It was actually Nan Fang who shrieked and howled wildly with deep veneration!

"Star Arrow!"

In the meantime, Long Wan'er also took advantage of the opportunity and promptly shot a dark blue arrow towards him.

Tripartite converging attack!

Long Mo'ran was already in a state of shock by the sudden and unexpected revelation of Ye Feng's identity, however still, he suddenly responded but found that no matter where he would run, would face a fatal attack for sure!

Over!

He suddenly felt as if his blood turned cold.

Chapter 201 -> Ye Wentian's declaration

Crying Ghost Knife Technique had long been extinct from the martial arts world!

Therefore when Long Mo'ran suddenly noticed that consecutive three flying knives were shot at him, his heart instantly went into a shock mode, making him too difficult to calm his mind. In this critical juncture, he could only rely on his fighting experience and instinct to survive. However, the sudden appearance of this technique made him misjudge the situation.

Originally, among these three sided attacks, obviously, Nan Fang's attack was the weakest one, so breakthrough from this side was highly unlikely.

But Long Mo'ran subconsciously thought these flying knives were the biggest threat to him!

This had to be said that coincidentally, even back then when he had bumped into a hidden weapon master and had seen him displaying Crying Ghost Knife Technique with which he also massacred a lot of people, at that time also it had sent a shiver down his spine.

Henceforth, this technique had always been shadowy for him, but fortunately, later on, that hidden weapon master was not only separated from the Hidden Immortal Faction, but he also took away the rare book of this Crying Ghost Knife Technique along with himself, making this technique extinct ever since then.

However today, again this technique strangely re-appeared in the martial arts world!

Because of which he remained stunned for a moment and in astonishment missed the best opportunity to escape.

The icy-blue Sword Qi, dark blue arrow and three flying knives, these three almost at the same time arrived in his front. Now they only needed another 0.1 second to strike and kill him right on the spot!

Bang!

But all of a sudden, a fist mark, not from much afar, was heavily pounded like a lightning and instantly hit him on his back.

Though he was smashed by this fist but had no ability to resist, consequently he fell down in the moist and cold mud like a dog gnawing the mire and then fainted right away.

However because of this, just at the last moment, he was suddenly removed from Ye Feng's tripartite converging attack!

The fist mark, presenting a big "insane" word, was engraved on his back, which was a quite alarming sight.

Who was he?

Ye Feng was already very tired and had almost lost his all physical strength, but simply wondered that at such a critical moment, someone actually popped up to rescue Long Mo'ran, indeed he had too miscalculated the situation. However, depending on the situation it seemed that it wasn't so simple

Just that Sword Qi was his last shot which totally drained his remaining strength away, making him kneel down on the ground all powerless, but he still strongly endured and tried not to lose his consciousness. His whole body had already been engraved with hundred of wounds constantly dripping with blood, making him more and more feeble.

"Take him away and get lost."

A faint old voice, not far from the woods passed on, followed by a figure of an old man along with a pure young girl who walked out straight towards them.

"Ye Feng!"

The moment the young girl saw him bleeding all over, it immediately stole away the colour of her face, making her extremely worried. So in the panic, she immediately took few quick steps and then burst into running.

"Menghan? Grandpa?"

Ye Feng saw their forms and was suddenly taken aback.

That punch actually turned out to be pounded by Ye Wentian! In that case, why did he make his move to save Long Mo'ran? This didn't make any sense at all!

While on the other side, when he showed up, the complexion of Long Zi and

Long Qing simultaneously changed.

How did this old man arrive here?

Although they hadn't yet completely recovered from Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand attack, but now had no time to dawdle, so they ran hastily towards unconscious Long Mo'ran.

"Clan head, your hand, finally we found it!"

At this time, a burst of hurried footsteps spread from the woods, they were two Long disciples who had finally found his severed arm.

"Why are you making a big fuss? Just walk quickly."

Long Zi knitted his eyebrows, simultaneously stepped forward and shouted loudly as wanted to quickly lift Long Mo'ran and depart at once.

"Hold on, leave behind his hand."

Ye Wentian walked slowly, seemingly leisurely, but in an instant arrived in front of those two Long disciples and snatched the severed arm away from them.

Seeing this, their complexion turned pale.

Swish!

And the next moment, Ye Wentian flung that arm directly far away to some distant place, immediately followed by a "Plop" sound, seemingly it had fallen into the sea.

"Haven't the people of Long Clan departed yet? This old man will count to three and still if sees you, will certainly begin."

Ye Wentian was already fuming with rage.

"Quickly leave."

Long Qing and Long Zi didn't dare to say anything in front of Ye Wentian who was this kind of an ancestral level expert, besides; they simply didn't have any qualification to even speak. Even if Long Mo'ran were in perfect condition and had currently stood in front of him, still they couldn't dare to speak loudly.

Just before departing, Long Zi finally threw his glance at Ye Feng.

For him, it was still hard to imagine the masked man was really Ye Feng

There was a feeling of infinite regret in Long Zi's heart, which simultaneously produced a sense of crisis. Ye Feng had not only started practising the martial arts, but his talent also was so terrifying and now that Long Wan'er was also together with him, the vehemence soared up suddenly!

If Ye Wentian was really fully determined to protect him, as long as he provided him some time, would certainly grow up as the martial arts world's thumb!

So young, still had been able to confront Long Mo'ran, although he also relied on the strength of everyone, but his combat capability couldn't be underestimated. After going back, the treatment of Long Mo'ran would be their top priority, afterwards, they would listen to the plan of their Clan Head, since this matter was extremely important, so Long Zi shouldn't handle it.

As for the severed arm, the person standing in their front was Ye Wentian, so they didn't dare to think about it

"You people now listen up, Ye Feng is my, this old man's grandson."

Ye Wentian said that and then drove them away, afterwards stood elegantly on the scene, looked around and then said in a matured and powerful voice which had the power to shake people's heart: "Who dare have the idea of fighting him, don't blame this old man for being cruel and ruthless!

The moment these words fell, it caused a huge uproar all around the surrounding.

This was Ye Wentian's aggressive declaration!

"Let's go."

Xu Xiaoyu waved his hand, without further ado, simply led the people of God Fist Gate to leave the place at once.

When the identity of the masked man as Ye Feng got exposed, Xu Xiaoyu was also hit by a huge shock for a moment, but quickly had an idea. The news that Ye Feng practised martial arts, he must spread it out at the maximum speed! And since there were already several people who held a grudge against Ye Clan, so at

the right time, he didn't have to deal with him personally. This way the old man and his grandson would soon be in a huge and unending trouble.

But, encountering Ye Feng who was such an extraordinarily talented young man, he also must think a lot of ways beforehand to suppress, it would be best if people encircle to kill him, so solely relying on Ye Wentian, he couldn't turn any waves

Xu Xiaoyu was an old man, so naturally knew what should be done now which would be the most appropriate.

But once he took his people and left, the other martial artist didn't dare to remain standing there in abundance. Today's incident exploded too vigorously, but they also obtained a vital information that Ye Feng had been practising martial arts!

In addition, the existence of an extensive knowledgeable and experienced man with very sharp eyes, who could easily see the flying knives thrown using Crying Ghost Knife Technique, if this news spread out, then could similarly form a major event in the entire martial arts world!

In an instant, surrounding all martial artists anxiously fled in all directions like birds and beasts.

"Ye Feng!"

Long Wan'er also ran out from her hiding place as she wanted to display Holy Cure Technique on him to cure his wounds.

But in the midway, she suddenly saw Su Menghan clad in a short skirt, who was already deeply concerned about him and had also supported him leaning against the side of the truck, while her face had worried expression all over.

For a while, Long Wan'er turned a little hesitant, meanwhile, when she turned her head and noticed that Ye Wentian was gazing at her, this jolted her heart out. Her identity, standing here was really a little awkward here No, it was not a little awkward, rather was extremely awkward

She clenched her teeth and decided not to think much.

A smooth and steady life, after all, didn't belong to her.

She only wanted to help Ye Feng cure his injuries and then along with him would again go to the sea to finally finish that matter, then finally her departure time would arrive.

Long Wan'er had quietly made this decision and then without thinking about Su Menghan and her eyes which were brimming with jealousy, quickly ran up to Ye Feng. Then while staring at Su Menghan, said: "Excuse me, you step back, I want to treat him."

Chapter 202 -> Your grandfather

Long Wan'er tried to make Su Menghan step back for a while as she didn't want to let her see Holy Cure Technique. After all, she didn't know whether Ye Feng had told her anything about Immortal Cultivation or not.

"It's all right, they are own people."

Although Ye Feng spoke somewhat reluctantly, but confronting two women actually brought a smile on his face.

"All right."

On hearing this, Long Wan'er flicked a glance at Su Menghan, followed by a light nod and the moment later Zhenqi started condensing in her hand, making her immediately display Holy Cure Technique. The light golden light gently brushed away Ye Feng's whole body wound, making his scars caused by Sword Qi start healing up at once.

Su Menghan observed that and felt quite surprised at it. Long Wan'er could actually also practice Immortal Cultivation? It seemed like Ye Feng was good to her, moreover, it looked like her Cultivation was very high because Su Menghan couldn't cast this healing technique

For the sake of Ye Feng, Su Menghan temporarily put away her cheap thoughts which were bubbling with jealousy.

Because presently, nothing could be compared with Ye Feng's quicker recovery.

But at this moment, on the other side, Ye Wentian walked few steps and arrived in the woods directly in front of Lin Shiqing: "Miss Lin, how?

Simultaneously he also blocked Lin Shiqing's vision, making her unable to see what Ye Feng and the two women were doing.

Having heard the question asked by him, Lin Shiqing immediately understood he had the multi-layered meaning.

Personally witnessed a martial arts battle, how did it feel like?

Knowing that the masked man was Ye Feng, what did she think about it?

What was her impression of Ye Feng now?

And what had she thought to do next?

Momentarily, she didn't know how to reply, but the old man's impression in her eyes was not favorable because of the forced marriage thing, so she curled her lips and lightly snorted: "Don't say how, Ye Feng seems to have already someone he likes, being an elder and even after knowing everything, you still insist on doing this, making me become your Ye Clan's daughter-in-law, it is not at all appropriate, right?"

"That's something"

Ye Wentian was saying with ease, but suddenly his eyes got attracted towards a nearby place: "Who is hiding there? Come out, I have found you."

These words barely fell and from the side of the dark woods, a person's silhouette immediately appeared, she was actually Xiao Yue. When all martial artists in succession dispersed, she also wanted to escape so that she could go and check how Xiao Qi was. But when she noticed Ye Wentian coming over there, then suppressed her original thought and decided to wait for a while.

She hadn't expected that she would be discovered by him.

"Hmmm, ah"

Xiao Yue didn't know how she should call Ye Wentian, only knew that this old man was much more dreadful and vigorous than that godly gifted, white robe man from just a moment ago. These martial arts people were truly very cold blooded who could kill anyone without batting an eye!

"I am called Ye Wentian, remember, hereafter I will be your grandfather.

He coughed while stroking his white beard.

Bang.

Nearby hiding Nan Fang heard this sentence and couldn't help but burst out laughing crazily, but simultaneously, accidentally, slipped down from the tree trunk. This old man was really pretty interesting, once he saw a pretty attractive girl, immediately said that he was her grandfather, did this make Ye Feng the rhythm of stud horse?

“Smelly brat, what are you laughing at?”

Since Ye Wentian’s Cultivation was profound, so his perception was quite keen as well and if it compared with Long Mo’ran, then was undoubtedly several times better than him. He had already sensed that Nan Fang was hiding on the tree. But when he heard him suddenly laughing, immediately asked one in a bad mood.

“No, it’s nothing.”

Naturally, he didn’t dare to talk back to him: “You continue, I have to go to the bathroom

He said that then swept his eyes around for a moment.

Oh, there was no outsider, one side there was Ye Wentian and two women while the other side had Ye Feng with other two women, in this kind of situation, if he continued waiting, that wouldn’t be at all appropriate!

Hmm, the urine escape

He finally looked at Taiji Palace youth lying on the ground, regrettably shook his head, then immediately burst into running and a moment later, disappeared from their sight.

Ye Wentian’s this one sentence “will be your grandfather”, left Xiao Yue and Lin Shiqing with a kind of strange feeling. It seemed that these people had ever been saved by Ye Feng.

Xiao Yue and Lin Shiqing quickly looked at each other and noticed irritability and awkwardness in each other’s eyes. Confronting Ye Wentian, this kind of old rogue, these two women didn’t know how to refute.

“As expected, he straddles the fence

Xiao Yue thought in her heart while gazing towards Long Wan’er and Su Menghan. She knew her conjecture about Ye Feng was right, this guy was a young hoodlum, but still was going to get engaged with Lin Shiqing?

Xiao Yue looked at Lin Shiqing with a vision infected with pity, meanwhile also glanced at her plentiful front and felt more pity for her while thinking that such a beauty was going to get engaged with such a cheap little rogue, it was indeed

unfair.

“Elder sister Xiao, do you have anything to say?”

Lin Shiqing winked at her and thought this girl wasn't aware of Ye Wentian's ferocity, now she was spotted which was certain enough for her to suffer!

Besides, she also felt that if she strongly opposed this engagement matter, in that case, Xiao Yue would be bound to bear the brunt. Moreover, this poor elder sister still wasn't familiar with the situation.

“You have a good exchange of feelings”

Ye Wentian waved his hand, then without saying anything further, simply raised his head and looked towards the distant sky, that place, lightning, thunder, sky variation.

The matter of the East China Sea hadn't yet ended!

On the surface, he had a very relaxed appearance, but in fact was very dignified since the pressure was enormous. Now that Ye Feng's identity had been exposed, when this news would spread, then, just relying on this old man, he couldn't resist various groups of personal enemies who would come in swarms.

He must think of some countermeasures as early as possible

As for Ye Feng, under the treatment of Long Wan'er's Holy Cure Technique, he finally improved, while his wounds had finally stopped bleeding. His black shirt and casual trousers were all tattered like a ragged beggar, making him look very distressed.

At this moment, Shu Shu also came out of her hiding place and ran over holding a somewhat worried expression.

Su Menghan saw her and immediately turned more depressed while her jealousy suddenly surged up even more as she thought that Ye Feng went out for a while and already hooked up even with this beautiful woman

Interestingly, Ye Feng perceived the thought she had at this moment and felt somewhat puzzled. This little girl was actually jealous, but it looked like being jealous was all about expressing one's love for someone special, right?

He leant on the military truck to stand up, then grabbed Su Menghan's soft hand: "Come on hold this and start absorbing it."

Ye Feng fished out a small coral.

The spiritual energy of that coral had almost depleted, but that was still sufficient at this moment.

"It's exactly like absorbing Lingshi."

Ye Feng guided her.

When Su Menghan saw him talking to her properly, she decided to put away her jealousy, simultaneously her white hand took that coral. However, on seeing that it was also stained with his blood, she turned somewhat distressed, besides, she didn't know a thing about what happened after Ye Feng came to the East China Sea?

"Smelly brat."

At this time, Ye Wentian walked over and said in a light tone: "So do you know why this old man rescued Long Mo'ran?"

"I know a little."

Ye Feng didn't look back, simply nodded: "Considering his arrogant and conceited disposition, as long as he doesn't die, this won't stir up Long Clan's old man. In case that old man shows up, the situation won't be that easy to deal with"

" Not bad."

Ye Wentian arrived in his front, then leant a bit to look towards Long Wan'er since he had heard this girl actually quarrelled with her father, Long Mo'ran. His brow slightly wrinkled up since for him, it was hard to imagine that the things would develop like this.

Originally, he was determined not to let Long Wan'er enter his Ye Clan, but could somebody else discard one's Dantian just for the sake of Ye Feng? This proved, not only she was against Long Clan now, but also shot to cut off her father's arm. If he still resolutely opposed her, it would seem too disrespectful.

"Alright, the matters of you young people, you handle it on your own."

He waved his hand, thought that this kind of sentimental matter was just a pain in the ass, so simply didn't pay attention towards it, making Ye Feng take a decision on his own. But then he threw few more words towards him: "Brat, if you don't revive our Ye Clan, this old man will never let you off easily!"

"....."

Ye Feng was speechless, as expected, this old guy's family concept was still very strong.

He turned his head to look to the side where Taiji Palace's youth was, already dead and silent.

It seemed that again he needed to cast "Soul Sealing Technique" now.....

Chapter 203 -> Provokes the whole country

In order to seal the soul, Ye Feng displayed Soul Sealing Technique, immediately a burst of translucent grey cold wind blew and sealed up the soul of Taiji Palace youth in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring together with Zhao Yibei.

From now on, as long as he found the ways to practice the soul technique, could summon their souls out.

There was no problem with Zhao Yibei because before his death, he was just an ordinary person, so transferring his soul to Cultivator was just normal. But the Taiji Palace youth was originally a martial artist, so whether he could successfully turn his soul into a Cultivator or not, that was still a puzzle.

But no matter what, Ye Feng would certainly try, because the thought that this boy died for him, would always make his conscience restless.

He still remembered that previously, Su Feiying carried out research on the Core Technique of Soul Cultivation. In case this time he found her, then could make Zhao Yibei and this youth appear again.

Soul Cultivation surely didn't exist in this world, so all sort of strange and unpredictable means would be a big help to him!

He couldn't have too much expectation like Su Feiying's 100 years of Cultivation since he was still in

"Ye Feng, did you find your master?"

Right after finished absorbing the small coral, somewhat worried, Su Menghan inquired one. At this moment, her face looked a little flushed after the absorption process.

"Not yet, but now I am all set to find her, earlier I, unfortunately, bumped into Long Mo'ran."

Ye Feng shook his head, then raised his hand and rested it on her delicate white shoulder, his Zhenqi slowly entered her body to explore a bit and soon found that she had more than 4 years of Cultivation, this speed wasn't slower than him.

Then he immediately turned around and said while looking at Ye Wentian:
“Grandpa, please take care of aunt and Menghan, I and Wan’er have something to take care of.”

“What? Smelly boy, you still think of

Ye Wentian heard his words and felt surprised for a while, he wanted to take him back directly because currently, the East China Sea had become a place quite suitable for various troubles, so how could they stay longer there? Not to mention Ye Feng’s identity had already been exposed, so they must go back to prepare a good plan beforehand!

But before he could speak a few words, Ye Feng had already held Long Wan’er’s hand, soon their statures quietly faded away and the next moment, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace burst out and they dashed towards the direction of the coast!

Two big lived people disappeared right before his eyes, making his face all dignified. Oh, what this boy had actually learned that surprisingly he turned himself invisible?

“Grandpa, they are definitely looking for the master, so shall we go back first?”

Su Menghan saw that and immediately urged one.

“You are not afraid that other people might steal away your husband!

Ye Wentian stared at her.

“He’s not that sort of person.”

She firmly replied.

“

Ye Wentian had nothing to say, although relying on the atmosphere, he could feel indistinctly about Ye Feng and Long Wan’er’s trend, but still didn’t pursue them.

He looked to one side where somewhat constrained Long Wan’er’s aunt was waving her hand: “Alright, return together with us first. That brat, I believe they have discretion.”

Even while facing Long Mo'ran, Ye Feng had the means to kill him, Now Ye Wentian had the preliminary understanding of his strength.

Moreover, this brat had really grown up while he was just an old man, so he couldn't be good everywhere to take care of him

Anyways, the group walked towards Xiangshan County centre, gradually the horizon was suffused with white, which meant finally this night had passed. Now the storm also seemed to have gradually become smaller, making it look like soon everything would be calm and peaceful.

Ye Feng was the masked man and had started practising martial arts, besides, was an incredibly talented boy who had almost killed Long Mo'ran!

It seemed like this news had gotten wings because it began to spread in the whole country with a lightning fast speed. In this modern society, even martial arts people had long been using high-tech products.

Through mobile phones, networks and other channels, this news already spread throughout the country even before daybreak.

Ye Feng was only 20 years old but had already comprehended the third layer of Ye Clan's Dragon Claw Hand Technique. That explained, such kind of stunning talent was rare to be seen in the whole world and if given time, then the future would be bright and limitless!

Some people who formerly had a grudge against Ye Clan, they quietly had begun to contact each other. Actually, this sort of threat had appeared out of the blue, so they must take quick action because they had a fear if he grew up, then would certainly make his move one by one on them.

But the fact was, Ye Feng didn't even know their existence.

And at the same time, because of this news, Ye Wentian was also discredited because 20 years ago, he was the one who had agreed that he wouldn't allow Ye Feng to practice martial arts at any cost. However, this old man took this vow as the curtain to hide and secretly teach martial arts to him!

Shameless, he was simply too shameless and this action was bare and undisguised which provoked the entire world!

Now several influential figures had already started a discussion about the preparation to fight with this old man and compel him to make Ye Feng surrender before them. Otherwise, they would make him and his grandson as the public enemy of the entire martial arts world!

Or else, they could simply wait for Ye Feng to grow up, but if this old man was compared to him, then it must be said, he was several times dreadful than him

In the centre of Xiangshan County.

In a hotel, Ye Wentian along with other people opened a few rooms to take rest.

Almost everyone had been busy this whole night, so were exhausted both physically and mentally. Needless to say, Ye Wentian took the lead in Nan Fang's room. Regarding Crying Ghost Knife Technique, he was similarly bubbling with curiosity. If Ye Feng's identity hadn't been exposed, then today's most electrifying and shocking news would have been certainly this one.

Crying Ghost Knife Technique re-appeared in the martial arts world!

"Old gentleman, I follow Ye elder brother now, so you can give directions to me as well."

Like hitting a snake with a stick, Nan Fang promptly, a bit respectfully, asked him for his guidance.

Ye Wentian still hadn't asked anything, simply was stunned seeing his this appearance, this kid really had the individuality

.....

Shu Shu also entered a room, comfortably took a bath first, then, sat on the bed, somewhat stupidly.

Her mind was totally occupied with the things that happened yesterday, just like a dream, yesterday she and Long Wan'er finally and completely broke the wall and escaped from Long Clan. And now that Ye Wentian was at their side, so temporarily there shouldn't have any danger, right?

Henceforth they wouldn't have an easy time.

She could see even Ye Wentian was quite worried, it seemed that the news of Ye Feng's true identity had already started getting spread all over in the martial arts world like a fire in a jungle, which wasn't a good sign.

"Now, seeing Little Feng with Wan'er."

Shu Shu sighed lightly, then looked outside the window towards the white horizon.

.....

Lin Shiqing also returned to her room, quickly took a bath and then immediately fished out her phone.

She knew that Ye Feng and Long Wan'er went back to the East China Sea and their target was likely to be that iceberg island! Unconsciously, her heart produced some concerns for Ye Feng.

At this moment, suddenly the scenes of the abandoned factory started rolling in her mind, at that time also Ye Feng, wearing a mask, had suddenly appeared and saved her from those long-haired Strange fellows; also at the time of explosion, he shielded her by pressing her under his heavy body and protected her from the soaring flames; even just now, he stood desperately before the military truck, even though his whole body was hurt, but still didn't shrink back even an inch

She felt suddenly elated.

But then the thought of Su Menghan and Long Wan'er suddenly popped up in her mind, making her immediately shake her head. Not good, she had always treated him just like a younger brother, nothing more than that!

Making a phone call also stemmed from the concern she had for her younger brother

She hit the number to call Thunder of the NSA: "Thunder uncle, how are things there outside the East China Sea now?"

On the way back to the restaurant, Lin Shiqing had already informed the police assigned to the blockade line, making them go to the sea to take care of the fainted soldiers of the NSA as well as that military truck.

Now, she made a call to Thunder, not because she wanted to inform him about this matter, but more importantly, she wanted to extract out the maximum information possible about the current situation around the East China Sea, so as to determine whether Ye Feng and Long Wan'er's trip would be dangerous or not.

“The situation is not that wonderful.”

Thunder's dignified voice passed on from the other side of the phone.

Chapter 204 -> The iceberg that can't be broken

Hearing the words of Thunder, Lin Shiqing immediately understood the situation in the East China Sea.

On the same day, at the time of dawn, the iceberg island finally stopped expanding, even the lightning storm on the sea surface also gradually ceased. However, under the sea, the mighty waves were still turbulent, accompanied with intermittent bursts of tides, making the sea level still continuously rise.

Leading several NSA's squads to the edge of the iceberg island, Thunder wanted to land but then found this iceberg island was completely counter-buckle hat shaped, along with a very smooth dome, so basically, their landing wasn't possible!

Then suddenly they realised that this island iceberg was not just an island, but was a thick barrier of ice. Besides, no one knew how this ice barrier was generated there, also nothing was clear about what was inside it.

After a preliminary survey it was figured out that this layer of ice shield was actually dozens of meters thick, even the rocket projectile the NSA members carried along was simply impossible to shoot through this barrier. After a bit of researching the ice layer, Thunder made a decision based on the data analysis: Let that nearby standby missile destroyer launch a cruise missile!

This decision was taken after going through a proper discussion and mutual agreement among the military seniors and the essential reason was they must try their all means to find out the secret of this iceberg as soon as possible.

Although, at present, probing into was still not suitable, but an invisible submarine had already been approaching fast from the direction of the U.S. So in case the other party got close to it and recklessly shot torpedo to destroy it along with everything, then perhaps China would encounter a disastrous loss.

An expensive cruise missile was fired from the destroyer, a high-speed sea-skimming flight, after a precise calculation, hit the weakest part of the ice wall, while its violent explosive force exploded a big hole in it.

But then, everyone found an alarming phenomenon and that was, the entire ice wall actually started healing up fast from inside to outside. Although they had

exploded and caused ten meters deep hole, but in an instant it returned to its original shape, their cruise missile completely went into vain.

Whether it was the NSA or the military, this thing blew away their minds for a while.

This iceberg could actually automatically heal, then how should they break open it? The too light thing couldn't break it, while too violent could damage the thing which was within the ice wall. If there was any precious thing, then certainly would be too cost effective.

“Oh, by the way...”

Lin Shiqing although hesitated for a moment, then while somewhat teasing her beautiful hair, finally said: “Thunder uncle, the masked man from before..... remember who had rescued me once, is Ye Feng So, if you bump into him, don't make things difficult for him.

“Haha.”

Thunder's loud voice spread: “So that's how it is. But Miss Lin, since you have said so, does that mean that kid also wants to come to this turbid water? But even if he comes, he would be completely useless because if he doesn't break the ice wall, then no one can enter ”

“Maybe he can break it?”

She unexpectedly answered something quite strange while thinking of Ye Feng's rear view in her mind.

“Haha, what a joke.”

Thunder dismissed it with a laugh, also completely ignored it: “Anyways, now I must hang up, have to discuss the next step countermeasure for dealing with this situation.”

“Hmm.”

She nodded and put down the phone. Then after sitting on her bed foolishly for a while, she got up to take a bath, but Ye Feng's silhouette was still somewhat lingering in her mind.

.....

In a room right next door to Lin Shiqing's room, Xiao Qi finally gained her consciousness after a long time. The anaesthetic bullet she had in her body was very mild, the reason why she didn't need any special care. So naturally after a while, she was all better.

"Ah, where is this?"

Xiao Qi woke up, looked around and when found herself actually lying in a hotel room, got a fright.

The memory she had in her mind before fainting was the scene where she directly ran towards the masked man, Mo Jiuge, but in an instant, how did she come to the hotel?

Not good, she didn't know how was she brought here?

She promptly checked her whole body from top to bottom and immediately the colour of her face faded away, who had changed her clothes?

She leant a bit, making her adorable face look towards the bathroom and felt that there was a graceful figure inside taking a bath, which turned her extremely anxious. who was that person after all?

Quite soon, the rushing sound of water finally stopped in the bathroom, then, an outstanding beauty, wrapped in a bathrobe, walked out.

"Hey, Xiao Qi you woke up?"

That electrifying beauty was undoubtedly Xiao Yue, who asked one holding a faint smile.

"Elder sister, it's you, ah."

Xiao Qi felt relieved, also let her heart finally calm down since it was her elder sister, so there was no problem.

"Right, by the way, there is something I need to tell you."

Xiao Yue arrived in front of the mirror, then while turning on a hair dryer, said: "That masked man is Ye Feng, whose engagement has already been fixed with Lin Shiqing, but you have lost your heart."

For Xiao Qi, these words acted like a bolt from the blue.

What, the masked man was actually Ye Feng? The fiancé of Shiqing, that high school student? Oh, now that the college entrance examination was over, no doubt he should be into Yanjing University as her junior

However, the masked man was really Ye Feng?

Xiao Qi's little mind all of a sudden got twisted, while her face was clouded with the colour of astonishment.

This time, she was done for.

She admitted that she really somewhat liked that guy, but now what could she do, she couldn't grab a man with a girlfriend

"Also, this matter ended here, now I will return to Yanjing.

Xiao Yue said somewhat lazily while blowing her hair, it sounded like the matured elder sister had deeply moved.

"Elder sister, you want to come back? That's great."

Xiao Qi heard that and finally, a cheerful look appeared on her face.

"Hope we don't see that disgusting fellow again."

Xiao Yue's tone had a touch of helplessness, but she didn't know the person who made her disgusted like this also belonged to Yanjing.

Wang Shaodong was just now with her, who was dragged away by a shark, even if she tried a hundred times, still couldn't explain it properly. In case she didn't return to Yanjing, then would certainly be killed by the people of Wang Clan. So long as she returned to her Xiao Clan in Yanjing, she didn't need to be afraid of being trampled upon by Wang people.

.....

In the senior cadre's ward of a nearby hospital, the atmosphere was seriously very intense.

At the door, two heavily armed NSA members were assigned, who were constantly paying attention to all passersby, while in the ward, several local senior officials had swarmed up around the hospital bed, anxiously looking at a youth.

And that youth was Li Feng whose arm had been cut off by Ye Feng!

Now after passing through the whole night surgery, his severed arm had initially been connected, but he must have to do the static training constantly for a long time.

At this moment, he stretched his hand, picked up his re-allocated golden eyeglasses, then put it on and once again appeared mild-mannered and cultivated, but the expression he had on his face, made his whole personality look a bit gloomy.

By this time, he had already extracted out everything that had happened before with the help of the NSA's channel.

“Give me the phone.”

Li Feng's voice was similar to a scorpion in general, making the surrounding people know that this time someone definitely wanted to upside down the big mould.

Under the golden edged eyeglasses, his eyes flashed a touch of viciousness.

These martial artists were indeed extremely wretched!

He thought of the recent news, the heavy losses suffered by God Fist Gate as well as one of the arms of Long Mo'ran was similarly ripped off from his shoulder and felt quite disdainful. Although both sides held a grudge against Ye Feng, but still Li Feng was actually not glad to cooperate with the martial artists, besides for him, that was also too insulting.

These martial artists would be sooner or later eliminated by him!

Li Feng's crazy thoughts led the foundation of an outrageous plan in his mind.

An idea to use torpedo bomb on Ye Feng to make him feel awfully great, suddenly popped up in his mind.

Chapter 205 -> A beautiful figure inside the ice

In the hospital, after making a perfect plan to deal with Ye Feng, Li Feng again telephoned someone.

This time he hit the number of a confidant subordinate, Niu Meng.

Niu Meng was a prodigy of the NSA, who had an amazing talent for the firearms and electronic technology. Since in his childhood, his father was killed by the martial artists, therefore he also held a special kind of hatred for the martial arts world.

Before, he was dispatched to Xiangxi region to carry out a mission, but Li Feng soon got him transferred to the East China Sea. He just arrived last arrived, rested for a night and now was again energetic like before!

At first, Li Feng explained his plan to him, then after gave him an eerie instruction and that was must make Ye Feng be buried in the seabed.

Since Li Feng's arm had just been connected, so he wasn't suitable for proper action. Therefore this time, Li Feng's team member turned entirely towards Niu Meng for further commands and instructions!

Niu Meng brazenly accepted the order.

.....

"Give me death! Just give me death!"

In the top grade ward of another hospital, suddenly a burst of voice full of hatred spread, making those who heard it shudder with fear. Consequently, people couldn't help but started guessing the identity of the person who was going crazy like this.

"Head of the Clan, calm down."

Long Zi and Long Qing stood either side of the hospital bed and tried to persuade him.

"How can you make me calm down!"

At this moment, severed arm Long Mo'ran had leant on the bed to sit, while his eyes revealed a dense look in them: "I want that little bastard to be cut into

thousand pieces!”

This time, not only he lost his face in a big way, but also lost one of his arms!

Moreover, that arm was also thrown by Ye Wentian into the sea to feed shark!

“Clan head, how about we invite our father”

Long Qing asked one tentatively.

“Shut up.”

Long Mo’ran snorted coldly: “Am I, Long Mo’ran an unsuitable match for that stenchy brat? Twenty years ago, I was the one who killed and beheaded his useless father by my own sword. Now I have to kill him, but it’s not that easy to accomplish!”

As for inviting their father (i.e. Lin Clan’s Old man), naturally, he was unwilling to do so because of his this sort of arrogant disposition. Besides if he did so, wouldn’t he be completely discredited?

The solemn Head of Long Clan confronted a young fellow one after another several time, but continuously suffered defeat. And now in the end, if he asked his father for the help, then would simply let the entire world laugh at him! Therefore, he must personally take him down and cut him into thousand pieces. The humiliation he suffered every time, this way he could make a hundred times repayment of it!

“Right.”

Long Zi looked somewhat earnest, at first he analyzed something, then said: “Moreover, now that the identity of Ye Feng as a martial arts practitioner has been vividly exposed across the country, so certainly there would be no shortage of people who would have started looking for him by now, so why should we bother father?

Besides, the old man was still in the process of sealing off the country, so disturbing him was really an unwise move. In any case, who didn’t know the temperament of that old man who was much more eccentric than Long Mo’ran?

“Contact the old man of God Fist Gate.”

Long Mo’ran calmed his mind, then carefully pondered for a moment and

finally got the countermeasure. Even though in this situation of violent rage, he still remained calm and thought that now he really needed to cooperate with others. Obviously neither he was stupid, nor was in a morbid state like Li Feng.

He intended to contact God Fist Gate's Xu Xiaoyu, naturally because wanted to also make use of the opposite party's strategies.

.....

When the focus and strategies of everyone together were targeted on Ye Feng.

On the other side, at this moment, Ye Feng along with Long Wan'er was in the East China Sea. Just like a fish, both were constantly swimming towards the ice wall. Under the spell of Dragon Turtle – Holding Breath Technique, even in this roaring sea which was full of mighty waves and turbulent current in the seabed, they continued moving smoothly.

However, just before approaching the ice wall, several crushed ice pieces along with the turbulent current, started showing up, simultaneously hitting them on their body which was really very painful.

Ye Feng quickly drew Long Wan'er close and wrapped his arms around her, then rapidly moved and helped her keeping off the series of crushed ice residue attacking from ahead. However, soon his body was covered with bloodstains, but still, he didn't care a whoop. As long as Long Wan'er could preserve her strength and reached the ice wall safely, then only he would take a breath of relief.

"Wait until the place arrives, as long as you condense Star Arrow below the sea surface, the condensation strength of a half an hour of the stars should be sufficient enough to break open this thick layer ice wall.

While roving, Ye Feng gave a proper explanation to her.

"Hmm."

She smartly nodded.

She was very clear that Ye Feng was very much concerned about the situation in the East China Sea and it was entirely in order to find his master.

In her heart, the opposite party was also her master, after all, the Core

Techniques of Immortal Cultivation were actually passed on from her side only. Even though the opposite party was the rumoured Fairy of the East China Sea and was said to be an exceptionally beautiful and magnificent woman just like an angel, but still Long Wan'er didn't possess any sour idea in her heart.

For that mystical and beautiful master who was also an Immortal Cultivator, Long Wan'er already had a feeling of high respect in her heart.

Gradually, a beautiful translucent ice wall finally appeared in their front not far away, which looked exceptionally magnificent and was exuding a faint white glory in the sea water.

“Start.”

Ye Feng solemnly nodded his head towards Long Wan'er, then loosened her body.

She quickly responded and immediately started condensing her whole body's Zhenqi in her hands. A dark blue arrow quickly formed in her hands, while the Immortal Technique – Star Arrow simultaneously started operating within her body. The strength of invisible stars was absorbed from the starry sky of very distant place!

Although the eastern horizon had already been suffused with white, but the absorption strength of Star Arrow didn't have anything to do with daytime or dark night. The stars of the universe were infinite, endless, therefore as long as the stars existed, would continuously emit their strength.

With the passage of time, a dark blue bowstring also appeared in her hands, which had never appeared so far during her previous condensation process. Because the condensation strength of stars along with the power of the bowstring could make Star Arrow display the maximum penetrating might.

The dark blue Star Arrow gradually started thickening, earlier it was as thick as a finger, now its thickness was almost equal to a person's wrist. Not only it just thickened, but also became much sharper, lending more and more strength every time!

Half an hour later, the energy of the Star Arrow finally condensed to the vertex!

Ye Feng's mood all of a sudden tensed up.

By all means, it shouldn't disappoint them

Long Wan'er had 18 years of Cultivation, so she had condensed the Star Arrow without any difficulty.

When she felt the vehemence of the arrow had finally reached its peak, she looked towards Ye Feng and saw him nodding towards her. Immediately after, a pair of her arms pulled the dark blue bowstring and the next moment, the arrow was shot!

The spiral of water current surged together with the dark blue arrow, which while piercing the sea water, hit the target in a flash.

The terrifying strength of the stars suddenly erupted, simultaneously threw both Ye Feng and Long Wan'er away. This sudden incident finally caught the attention of Thunder's team who were not far away!

As an effect of Invisibility and Camouflage technique together, Thunder couldn't even notice for almost half an hour that these two people were under the sea.

But now he suddenly responded, accompanied with a surprised look which suddenly crawled across his face.

What just happened in the bottom of the sea?

Nearby Ye Feng, a vast stretch of seawater was suddenly turned upside down, the terrifying penetrating power of Star Arrow actually carried the power equivalent to the might of several rocket projectiles, because of which it penetrated through more than 60 meters thick ice wall at one fell swoop. At this instant, an ice wall channel finally appeared in front of them.

"Quickly go inside!"

Ye Feng also knew that the movement of this side would certainly be found by the NSA members who were nearby, therefore they must take one step ahead and enter the ice wall as soon as possible!

The ice channel was enough to accommodate three or four individuals to pass through it together. While the seawater outside seemed like suddenly found an

outlet, so rapidly started flowing backwards to go inside the channel. Intelligently taking advantage of the sea current, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er, all the way avoiding eddy currents, promptly slid into that ice channel along with it.

In the meantime, Ye Feng tightly protected her all the way and finally slipped into the ice wall.

Due to the impediment of special energy, their Soul Search Technique failed to work properly. Ye Feng reluctantly raised his head and suddenly his pupils got contracted.

Su Feiying!

At the end of the ice channel, there was a wisp of a beautiful figure that he was familiar with, but in this turbulent current, was partly visible!

Master!

Really was his master!

Ye Feng's heart all of a sudden started beating violently!

Chapter 206 -> Ice city fort

When the outer layer of the ice wall was blasted open by the Star Arrow, simultaneously a broad channel opened up in front of them. This made the surrounding seawater as if had suddenly found a vent, so started surging backwards violently to gush in.

At this moment, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er pushed them together and along with the current of sea water, also smoothly slipped into it.

When the entire outer layer was deeply penetrated, the ice wall lost the ability of self-cicatrization. As a result, more than 50 meters deep ice wall channel located under the sea surface, suddenly appeared in the detection range of Thunder's squad...

"Indeed, there is my master."

Ye Feng tightly held Long Wan'er in his arms as their bodies drifted with the current. However, if they hadn't displayed Dragon Turtle – Holding Breath Technique, it would have been certainly impossible for them to survive in this kind of turbulent current.

Even in the case of Ye Feng, at this moment, he would have been washed off murkily, but then he told himself: Must stay awake!

After looking for so long, finally, Su Feiying's appeared before him within this ice wall, so his heart was already brimming with extreme ecstasy.

He just wanted to stare at the beautiful figure for a while, but the turbulent flow of water rolled up layer upon layer and obstructed his line of sight.

The beautiful shadow of a woman remained in front of him for a fleeting moment, then disappeared.

Swish Swish!

Extremely fast, the entire ice wall channel was infused with seawater, while on the other side, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er finally left the terminus of the ice wall channel and arrived at the internal part of the iceberg island.

There was a huge ice city fort, the internal part of which appeared more like a honeycomb shape, while the icy interlocking looked quite complex, accompanied

with a path extended in all directions. A lesser part of it had peeped out of the sea surface and became visible to the eyes of the NSA, but another larger part was still immersed in seawater.

This was an ice city!

Ye Feng greatly rejoiced at the thought that Long Wan'er after all succeeded in breaking open the ice wall channel which was located below the sea surface. So as the matter stood, if other parties like the NSA or other martial artists broke into, in that case, the channel although accessible from all sides, but since was completely infused with water, the degree of liberty and flexibility couldn't be compared with them.

When the ice wall channel was completely filled with water, then the rapid flow of currents finally stopped.

Simultaneously Ye Feng and Long Wan'er also steadily stabilised.

Ye Feng hurriedly hovered in the water and quickly drew close to the internal layer of the ice wall. If the ice wall inside the ice city was compared with the outermost layer, it was relatively much thinner, the thickness of each layer was only ten meters but still were similarly exuding a hazy translucent white radiance.

Although there were several layers of ice wall in Ye Feng's line of sight, but was still able to clearly see in the centre of the ice city fort, where the shadow of a beautiful figure was, along with the vaguely appearing long hair and buttocks, while its white clothing was floating, but nothing was vivid.

"Master!"

Ye Feng was finally determined and because of his overflowing happiness, didn't want to think much. He immediately started condensing Zhenqi and the next moment, the golden sword flashed in his hand, making him immediately wave his sword towards the ice wall.

Shua!

A layer of ripples swung from the ice wall, followed by a burst of mysterious energy, which surprisingly resisted Ye Feng's sword attack.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

However, he didn't give up and kept on wielding his sword one after another towards the 10-meter-thick ice layer, but regardless of his all effort, even though he had a Zhenqi sword which was congealed out from the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, still totally failed to destroy even a tiny bit of the ice wall!

"Come on now break open for me! Come on!"

Ye Feng ground his teeth while continuously wielding his sword.

"Ye Feng!"

When Long Wan'er saw him acting like this, her heart skipped a beat.

Hurriedly she pulled him close as wanted to stop him from acting crazily. Now that it was clear he couldn't break the ice wall like this, then better he should try thinking of some other ways. Since they had already broken the first layer of the ice wall which was more than sixty meters thick, in that case, there would be definitely a way to deal with this situation.

"My master is inside."

But Ye Feng still didn't stop, his eyes were wide open and were constantly staring at the central position of the ice city.

At present, his mind was also totally occupied with Su Feiying, which was making him feel that this layer of ice in his front was indeed very hateful, since at this critical moment, it was still standing erect blocking his way!

"I know."

Long Wan'er said in a soft voice, then suddenly slipped her arms around his neck and embraced him tightly, simultaneously gradually her pretty lovable face moved close to him and gently kissed his lips: "But you calm down, this ice layer, we can't break open it.

What she said was the bitter truth.

The cold sweat was already flowing out of his whole body, however, finally he calmed his mind and decided to carefully consider the current situation.

The situation was far from good.

Through the ice channel, they entered the ice city fort, but due to the impediment of the mysterious energy, Ye Feng felt that his Soul Search Technique was completely inactive here.

If he didn't guess wrong, that mysterious energy was being released from the thousand years thick ice, which was obstructing their Soul Search very strongly. So presently, both Ye Feng and Long Wan'er had zero consciousness, just like an ordinary person, they could only use their naked eyes to see all around.

This feeling made Ye Feng very uncomfortable as if suddenly he turned into a blind person.

However, this still hadn't calculated.

The mysterious energy that the thousands of years thick ice was emitting, not only obstructed their Soul Search Technique but also cut off their connection with the outside world. In other words, now in the ice city, Long Wan'er could no longer absorb the power of stars, to break open the layers of the ice wall.

One, two, three and four.....

Ye Feng casually counted a few, from their current place to the central part of the ice city where the figure of Su Feiying could be vaguely seen, at the very least there were seven or eight layers of the ice wall. But interestingly, although there were these many ice wall barriers, still, they could see a faint shadow of a beautiful figure.

Since they couldn't break this ice wall, then what should they do?

By taking advantage of the dim white light the ice wall was exuding, Ye Feng sized up all around.

Sea water in the ice channel was extremely cold, at least dozens of degrees below zero, even though, hadn't condensed into ice and that only because of the effect of the mysterious energy.

Besides, the channel was extended in all directions, so there should be a way leading to the ice city centre. The whole ice city was not a real ice city, since wasn't constructed manually, but was the result of the thousand years thick ice's power of mysterious expansion.

Under such circumstances, there would be certainly dead end inside!

Even a lot of channels arrived till the last, but all could be the dead end.

Now that their Soul Search Technique was totally unusable, so they were simply unable to explore ahead. In case they swam in the water to find the path, would certainly need Soul Search then.

In this ice-cold seawater, even Ye Feng and Long Wan'er couldn't last long, a thin layer of frost had already appeared on their eyebrows. Under such circumstances, the two could only rely on their Zhenqi to flow within their bodies and keep them warm.

But in addition, there was a place which actually surprised Ye Feng a bit, and that was, after entering the ice channel, the surrounding spiritual energy all of a sudden started getting stronger several times.

If the meridians were spacious enough, then could promote their Cultivation at least for several years by absorbing this spiritual energy.

Obviously, the spiritual energy, as well as a thousand years of mysterious ice, stemmed from a common source. So if at present they absorb the spiritual energy of the ice city, then, later on, couldn't absorb the spiritual energy of the thousand years thick ice, which could enhance their Cultivation by at least 10 years.

What should be done now?

“Walk, look around.”

Ye Feng intensely looked at the central part of the ice city where the shadow of a beautiful figure was.

At this time Su Feiying seemed to be frozen in the centre, completely motionless. Although her figure was faintly visible but still looked quite elegant and beautiful, just like a frozen snow lotus, noble and glamorous.

Soon, they started walking along the ice channel, trying to find the route leading to the ice city centre

Chapter 207 -> Does he want to gamble?

Outside the ice city, on the sea surface.

“So it has been really broken.”

Thunder was now determined, the entire iceberg island was at a place which was more than 50 meters deep from the sea surface. So even if someone exploded open an ice wall channel, but now it didn't have the automatic cicatrization ability!

In other words, finally a channel had appeared in front of them, so now they could easily enter the iceberg island.

But the point was, what was inside the iceberg?

Thunder although didn't know about it, but his curiosity was already soaring in the sky. In such environment, they had to do an ample preparation beforehand to carry out their operation.

Was it Ye Feng?

He secretly guessed, but still somewhat didn't dare to believe his own conjecture.

At this moment, all the people of Thunder's squad had an expression of astonishment on their faces. When even the cruise missile failed to break open the ice wall, it was actually inexplicably blasted by someone else to the extent that a channel also appeared before them?

The morning sun had already plodded along towards the east, under the warmth of which the entire surface of the East China Sea seemed to be very serene. However, the remaining place where iceberg island was, the heart-chilling cold air was constantly passing through it.

The entire eastern coast had long been blocked by the NSA and the military joint local police to ensure that civilians couldn't discover this side's strange appearance.

But then suddenly, from the seacoast direction, another two speedboats quickly approached the location where Thunder along with his squad was.

They were similarly the members of the NSA.

“Niu Meng, why did you show up here?”

Thunder raised his head to catch sight of a familiar figure on the speedboat, then slightly wrinkled his eyebrows.

“Haha, because I have received the order of Captain Li Feng, to come over here and carry out the mission!”

A butcher’s voice suddenly burst out!

Thunder’s team member simultaneously looked ahead and saw two speedboats in the open, along with fully armed another squad, led by a man wearing an electronic eye, who looked similarly as ferocious as a butcher.

That was Niu Meng!

Niu Meng’s stature was fairly tall and sturdy, while his facial features were really ferocious. It was said that once while carrying out his mission, his bright appearance scared a dog to death, henceforth his reputation in the NSA had become a big quake.

On one side of his face, there was a knife-cut scar, but he didn’t remove the stitches deliberately, which made his appearance look quite hideous and fearsome; while on another side of his face, there was an electronic eye embedded in his eye socket to substitute his eyeball.

Because of this, when he was compared with other NSA member, he turned out to have more astonishing kind of advantage over others – his electronic eye, which just like a radar could strafe in all directions, besides was also extremely sensitive to anything fell in its periphery!

When he was a kid, his biological father was killed by the people of the martial arts world, this was the reason why he turned so hostile to the martial artists and consequently became the top ranking official under Li Feng.

“I am sorry but I am solely responsible for the task here and have full authority to handle it.”

Thunder was certainly not affable. When he noticed that Niu Meng wanted to come and butt in horizontally, he didn’t take pleasure in that.

“Hmm, the appointment letter will soon arrive here. Captain Feng had already applied for this above because of your unfavourable work. Besides you also wasted a cruise missile, still didn’t make any progress, therefore now I have been made completely responsible for the task here.”

A trace of fierceness flashed in his eyes as he said, then again continued while being complacent: “Captain Thunder, sorry but this time your squad must coordinate with us. Come on, complete your all preparation to go into the water!

He directly issued an order and the NSA members on the speedboats immediately started getting ready.

Diving suits, precision firearms, detection equipment, thermal equipment

A series of precise and sophisticated equipment were all hung on their bodies and in an instant, they turned into the fully armed soldiers!

Regarding the Iceberg island, channel and fortress, apparently, Niu Meng already knew about this. A cold look hidden within his ferocious eyes was also depicting everything. While his precise electronic eye was reflecting the light of the sun, making people look at it and tremble with fear.

Presumably, after cutting off Captain Li’s arm, that kid had already entered

But what was his purpose

Synthesising various aspects and news, he could almost determine that the person who broke the ice wall was doubtlessly Ye Feng. Although this was very shocking, but still he didn’t care about it.

He licked his lips, simultaneously made the people anticipate that Captain Li’s plan was really too wonderful!

Mere the thought of Li Feng with his detailed description of the plan made his heart bounce with extreme excitement. This time, he must carefully look at that rampant and despotic martial arts kid’s death shape and would take a picture of him to keep as a souvenir!

It must be said Niu Meng’s both physical and psychological qualities were top-notch, except for his extreme hatred against the martial arts world. In short, he

was simply a perfect special soldier who couldn't pick up a problem, while his commanding ability was also pretty commendable.

But just because he wasn't a regular military academy graduate, therefore he could never get the chance to be at the same level as Li Feng and would only stay placed under Li Feng as his subordinate. Of course, Li Feng didn't let him suffer from injustice ever.

Relying on the power and weapons in hands, to make a martial artist obediently surrender, this was the thing he enjoyed a lot!

As for the power, he didn't crave for that.

Almost at the same time when he finished saying, Thunder finally received an appointment letter from above: Because of Li Feng's poor physical condition, Niu Meng would temporarily hold the post of Captain and with full authority, would take over the East China Sea's affairs, while Thunder would assist him from the sideline. Besides, he must investigate the secret of the iceberg island, simultaneously must guard against the secret movement that the U.S. might carry on any moment.

It really came!

Thunder's facial expression suddenly changed, he looked at Niu Meng but didn't say anything.

Talking about the status in the NSA, both Li Feng and Thunder were similarly the Captain but were not at the topmost layer. Li Feng was under the high-level officials of the NSA while Thunder was directly under the jurisdiction of Lin Detian.

While confronting this sort of important matter like the iceberg island, even Lin Detian couldn't guarantee Thunder to have full authority and responsibility.

Objectively speaking, Niu Meng with Li Feng's squad had always operated well and recorded success every time, which had always been much better than Thunder. Of course, how the success of Li Feng's squad was recorded, everyone knew about it, but regardless of the result, what mattered was how it had been achieved. For them, as long as could deterrent to the martial artists, then the approach of Li Feng's squad was considered as correct.

As for the death of plenty of innocent martial artists, what relationship he had with him?

Puff! Puff!

Niu Meng personally led ten members and after getting fully armed, along with other members, also jumped into the sea from the speedboat. Afterwards, they quickly advanced towards the ice wall channel almost fifty meters deep from the sea surface.

.....

While at this time, on the other side, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were constantly shuttling to and from within the ice fortress.

The ice wall channel was just like a honeycomb, densely packed and extended in all directions. The two people walked along a road and soon found that this was a strip dead-end. Since it was completely frozen ahead, so walking ahead was not possible.

"It's not good like this."

Ye Feng said as he gazed at the thick wall of ice, simultaneously his eyebrows gradually turned into a huge frown.

In this half an hour of the time period, these two people were still stuck in the outermost layer of the channel. While taking a broad view, Su Feiying's gorgeous figure was still there in the centre of the ice city but was still separated by seven or eight layers of the ice wall.

If this continued, perhaps they would end up wasting several days and nights, but still, couldn't find a single way to reach the central part of it!

But now Ye Feng didn't have too much time to waste.

Moreover, he also believed that after checking the outer layer of the ice wall channel, the NSA would certainly send people inside. And of course, the opposite party would be having several people, so finding the way would be certainly much easier for them. In case they found the path, then naturally, they wouldn't share anything with Ye Feng.

If Ye Feng let the NSA reach the central part of the ice city, then highly likely

they would carry away frozen Su Feiying's body, while Ye Feng would end up regretting!

"There is another way."

Ye Feng said as he leant a bit and stared at the captivating but hazy figure of Su Feiying.

So now his plan was if he absorbed the spiritual energy present in the ice city, this would promote his Cultivation to 15 years. Then only he could be able to coordinate with Long Wan'er, and then together they could condense Star Arrow again, to break open another ice wall channel.

Their merged effort and exquisite coordination could make the ice wall channel get a bit closer to Su Feiying.

However, presently Ye Feng's meridian could only hold up to 13 years of Cultivation. So in case he tried to forcibly absorb the spiritual energy, then most likely his meridians would burst and he would die right away!

Still, did he want to gamble?

Chapter 208 -> Throws the watermelon to collect the sesame seeds

Ye Feng pondered for a moment, he truly didn't want to let Su Feiying get discovered by the NSA people first, so ultimately decided to go ahead regardless of anything.

Without Su Feiying, the present he didn't exist. If only he could save her, even though by taking the risk that his meridians might burst during the process, still he wouldn't hesitate a bit!

Now he had also refused to take so many things into account.

Furthermore, he didn't even notify Long Wan'er about his plan and simply, a bit selfishly started operating Star Tomb Tactics. In no time, his Dantian began to enliven, followed by a wisp of spiritual energy which started getting absorbed into his body from the surrounding!

As for Long Wan'er, the moment she saw him, a puzzled expression simultaneously crawled across her face, but still she stayed by his side.

Obviously, she knew what he was doing currently, but the story didn't end here, she also knew that a huge risk was involved in this thing. However, she still didn't stop him as already knew that even if she tried stopping him, it would be of no use.

The place his master, Su Feiying had engraved in his heart, didn't that affirm that no one could replace it?

This point suddenly emerged in her heart which drew her completely into it, but soon she shook her head and logically thought that if she were at his place, then she would definitely have also the same kind of feeling for this master
.....

A faint trace of spiritual energy was making its way through Ye Feng's body directly into his Dantian, then after passing through his Core Dan, it immediately transformed into Zhenqi and bit by bit started enhancing his Cultivation.

12 years 6 months

13 years

13 years 6 months

Puff.

However, at this instant, the meridians around his Dantian suddenly failed to withstand it and began to burst one after another, making his heart sink, such quickly his meridians failed to withstand it?

No, not good, he had to reach at least fifteen years!

Till then, he must stick to it!

He clenched his teeth while his eyes were completely stuck on the beautiful figure of his master in his front. Ever since his birth, he never had any moment in his life where he had shown such a firm conviction!

Now it could be felt that Su Feiying was not in a favourable situation because any moment, she might fall into the hands of the NSA, then only the God would know what might happen

Puff. Puff.

When he forcibly absorbed the spiritual energy and jolted his Cultivation to reach 14 years, at that time the meridians of his whole body became unable to withstand anymore and started bursting successively!

Fresh blood also flowed out from his mouth.

Long Wan'er saw that and anxiously looked at him, but other than facing this kind of situation, she didn't have any other way. If possible, she would rather try this dangerous thing, but regrettably, Ye Feng wouldn't allow her to do so.

A dozen of his meridians had already burst by now, but anyway, the injury was not that big, so he could still insist on.

14 years 6 months!

Just a bit more!

He ground his teeth and immediately made his Dantian begin to revolve faster. Immediately a burst of cold spiritual energy rushed all the way into his body from the surrounding!

Now that he had absorbed this spiritual energy, therefore at the time when he

would obtain a thousand years thick ice, then he couldn't rely on it to enhance his Cultivation by ten years.

In the case of other people, they would never think of throwing a watermelon to pick up the sesame seeds. However Ye Feng did so because for him, indeed Cultivation was very important, but there were more important things in the world which were much more precious than few years of Cultivation.

And that was his close relatives!

For him, he had accompanied Su Feiying since his childhood, so she was just like his family member or it could be said she was like his elder sister who led him to grow up like this!

So at all cost, he couldn't let her be injured, not even the slightest bit.

Not only Su Feiying, even other people like Long Wan'er and Su Menghan were also the same for him. At present, he was desperately fighting to enhance his Cultivation, however, his ultimate goal was different from others who used to harbour dreams like to dominate the whole world, enjoy the power and so on.

His goal was simple.

As long as being strong enough to protect the people around, that was enough
.....

His consciousness started getting more and more blurred, but he still had clenched his teeth to carry on the process uninterrupted. As the spiritual energy flooded into his body again, his body's meridians finally completely failed to hold anymore and they immediately collapsed!

But right at this instant, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring he had in his hand, suddenly emitted a faint trace of the mysterious air current, which from his hand directly entered his body and along with his meridians, it rushed throughout his body.

The meridians he had ruptured just now, this faint trace of mysterious airflow abruptly suppressed them.

15 years of Cultivation!

Ye Feng woke up wide open with a flash of understanding, while his pair of eyes also brightened up, so ultimately he accomplished his goal!

Just that scene simply jolted his heart out, but fortunately, there was the existence of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. This mysterious Ring not only saved his life again but also helped him achieve 15 years of Cultivation at one fell swoop!

Seeing Ye Feng setting out all safe and sound, Long Wan'er's tight and restless heart finally calmed down. Immediately her footsteps moved and she swam over to promptly throw herself into his arms.

"Hereafter, I forbid you to take a risk like this!"

She simply wanted to cry her heart out.

"Hmm."

Ye Feng felt her fragrant shoulders were trembling, which made his heart somewhat feel sorry. He pulled out such a dangerous act just because it was really needed, in case he had some other option, then certainly he wouldn't have taken this step.

Otherwise, before at the time of obtaining the big Coral King, he would have directly absorbed it. But then, why did he return all the way to her to make her absorb?

In this world, everyone always had something to hold on to.

For the sake of Su Feiying, Ye Feng was willing to pay his life.

"Let's go."

He gently patted her shoulder, simultaneously glanced at the beautiful figure stuck in the centre of the ice city and finally decided to return according to the original road, all prepared to leave the ice city fortress.

Their plan was to return outside first, afterwards, would try to find another place nearest to Su Feiying. Thereafter, the two would condense a Star Arrow with joint forces as he believed that it could be the faster way to rescue Su Feiying!

.....

On the other side, leading ten NSA members and after getting fully armed, Niu Meng submerged in the seawater and soon arrived at the entrance of the ice wall channel.

Originally they wanted to explore this place, but then found the existence of a kind of mysterious energy which had actually blocked the signals of their instrument, making them simply unable to detect what was inside the channel.

“Get ready for the action.”

Niu Meng ordered holding a dignified expression.

They used to deal with the martial arts people all year round, simultaneously were responsible for exploring similar kind of strange events. Therefore they needed to have a cautious approach at all times.

If they entered the ice wall channel, it might possible that a monster or something would rush out of it because the NSA already had such an example from their past, when several NSA members were killed by an unknown monster, making them suffer heavy losses.

Brimming with extreme spirit, the troops walked into the channel in a line.

Wearing the diving suits, they looked a bit bloated, but whatever they had on their bodies were all necessary equipment. So, one couldn't throw anything even if it reduced his flexibility.

It wasn't like they were average people, even a martial arts expert like Long Mo'ran preferred to enter the sea after putting on the proper diving suit. However, just like Ye Feng and Long Wan'er, could anyone else run around in the seabed totally empty handed? On this planet, seeing such kind of person was absolutely rare.

Niu Meng's people cautiously moved forward, simultaneously under the dim white radiance of the ice wall, a magnificent scene gradually emerged before their eyes.

This was simply the miracle of the nature!

The ice channel was more than 60 meters long and had a very arctic atmosphere. Even though the NSA members were wrapped in several layers

along with a special heating equipment, but still nothing could stop the chilling air from penetrating through their bones.

They quickly passed through the outermost layer of the channel which was sixty meters long and presently, it was the only channel leading to the ice city.

When they arrived at the channel's terminus and took a broad view of the surrounding area, at that time even Niu Meng couldn't bear and his mouth went wide open, this was an incredible ice city!

If some photos of this place were clicked and spread out, this would absolutely act as a huge shock to the entire world. Not even the splendid architects could construct such a perfect piece of work, a streamlined ice city!

Soon the team members began to take pictures of the place to collect evidence, however, they quickly noticed that inside the ice city, there was a kind of mysterious energy which seemed very intense. This was the reason why even after taking photos, they only appeared pitch dark.

It seemed that taking pictures wasn't possible here.

"What's that, look at that quickly?"

Suddenly a team member was shaken up for a second when from a special angle, he gazed towards the central part of the iceberg city, in the bottom of the sea.

There was a shadow of a female's beautiful figure with long and lustrous hair hanging up to her buttocks, just like a perfect ice sculpture!

Chapter 209 -> Threat of the submarine

Quite soon Niu Meng also discovered that person's shadow, which in return, made his heart skip a beat.

That kid Ye Feng desperately wanted to break open this layer of ice wall so as to break into the iceberg city, shouldn't it be for that woman? A while ago, the news of an ice fairy associated with the East China Sea had spread throughout the country, because of that he was even more determined now!

So as the matter stood, the plan of Captain Li seemed to be achieved more smoothly

"Search everywhere and maintain the communication."

He decided to take the bull by the horns and promptly issued an order: "Presently our prime goal is to find the boy who has broken this ice wall and he is called Ye Feng!"

All the members of the team received his order.

Afterwards, immediately a group of people began to disperse. But he along with his two team members stayed at the terminus of the channel to keep watch at its bifurcation while the rest people simultaneously started searching the surrounding place.

"It's really cold."

Niu Meng stared at the central part where the shadow of a beautiful woman was with his one eye, while his mind was constantly thinking that who this so-called fairy of the East China Sea was, who surprisingly had made such a big movement in the East China Sea.

As far as he knew, even the strongest fellow of the entire martial arts world also couldn't come up with such a big fuss.

The only explanation he had was, in this the iceberg, in addition to that woman, there also existed some other stuff and most likely it was the heavenly treasure that the martial artists generally used to say.

"No matter who you are, I, Niu Meng will definitely get hold of you and drag you back to the headquarters for research. And as for the heavenly treasure

present here, it doesn't seem to be cheap for the martial arts world. If it can create such an incredible iceberg, then that stuff has the considerable significance for the NSA's research

In the meantime, he also felt that his own electronic eye had lost the effect in this environment, which was little uncomfortable for him. But even the NSA members were all perplexed thinking that after all what kind of mysterious energy existed there which had badly disrupted their signal.

He stayed at the end of the ice wall channel with great patience, but soon his team members returned.

At this moment, he finally received the communication signal from the other side: "Captain, we have found that kid, but a girl is also there along with him!

"Where?"

Niu Meng's heart suddenly took a jump, making him promptly fire a question.

"Right here, you don't need to search."

Ye Feng's faint voice spread from that channel. Immediately after, in the hazy glory of the ice wall channel, a black shirt youth along with a young girl clad in a one-piece dress walked out right behind the NSA members and stopped directly in front of him.

"It's really you."

Niu Meng lightly snorted, hadn't expected the opposite party would actually appear and that also on his own initiative. But it was better since now he could attempt a direct negotiation with him.

Ye Feng pulled Long Wan'er close, then looked ahead towards the one-eyed man, the appearance of whom was indeed quite ferocious to the extent that he could easily frighten a group of children even in the daytime

Was the opposite party the head of the NSA to carry out this mission?

Ye Feng surmised in his heart.

The fact was, these two people didn't want to be found by the opposite party at any cost, but in this ice city, their Invisibility had also lost its effect!

The principle of Invisibility was basically all about using Zhenqi to change the surrounding light projection. But here in the hazy white radiance of the ice wall, their Zhenqi totally failed to influence the surrounding.

In desperation, the two had no other way but to show up.

However, it was quite natural that Ye Feng didn't want to discuss anything with the opposite party, was simply waiting for the opportunity to escape from this place. Now that he had reached 15 years of Cultivation, so could easily coordinate with Long Wan'er to display the Star Arrow.

Once their strength merged into one, then they could at least penetrate 3 or 4 layers of ice wall quite easily. This way reaching Su Feiying would be much easier for them.

"Hold on."

When Niu Meng saw him and Long Wan'er as if departing, he couldn't stop himself from immediately shouting out loud to stop them.

"What do you want?"

Ye Feng stopped, then lightly asked.

"How about we carry on with our negotiation?"

The other party had already carded up his sleeve, hence said confidently: "First let me introduce myself, I am the person in charge of this action, called Niu Meng. If I am not mistaken, you are Ye Feng and your goal should be that woman stuck in the centre of the ice city?"

Although his words were wrapped in the utmost politeness, but Ye Feng could clearly feel this guy's tone was actually infected with a feeling of extreme hatred for him.

Where did he provoke him?

All puzzled, he thought for a while but it was an inexplicable question, obviously, he didn't know that this guy was also a radical exactly like Li Feng.

"Sorry, I'm here just to have fun. It's already over, so we have to leave now."

Ye Feng said as he made a strenuous effort to pretend that he was facing

problem in breathing. He and Long Wan'er could breathe in water, this kind of secret obviously shouldn't be disclosed to the opposite party.

“Haha.”

And as expected, Niu Meng easily fell into his trap and believed that they really couldn't breathe, so he laughed out loud and said: “You don't have this kind of sophisticated equipment like the NSA people have, so currently the best choice you have is to cooperate with us. Besides, this will be advantageous for you as well, since my people are not going to withdraw soon, so rather can help you in taking that woman out. One more thing, you might as well look for the nearby nautical mile, according to our speculation, very soon the invisible submarine of the U.S. will be here in the vicinity of this place”

The submarine of the U.S.?

Ye Feng heard this and his eyebrows turned into a huge frown, actually, he hadn't even considered this matter.

“We can lend you the diving equipment.”

Niu Meng continued speaking confidently: “The opposite party's invisible technology is too advanced, our destroyer can't scan, it can only detect a few suspicious locations with electronic interference, so we need you to go and explore around. In case you find that submarine, report us right away, then our country's military and the NSA will carry out a joint mission to deal with it ... I believe you don't want them to launch torpedoes recklessly and destroy the whole iceberg island and that's clearly because that woman is still inside, she can survive that shot or not, it's still unknown”

Whatever he said was indeed reasonable!

The invisible submarine of the U.S. certainly wouldn't dare to openly appear, furthermore, they couldn't do anything to carry out an investigation of this iceberg island. But if they couldn't get the thing, then certainly wouldn't let China obtain it.

If one after another, several torpedoes were launched by them, the entire ice city would be blown up for sure. So that meant, Su Feiying was certainly in an imminent danger.

“Hmm, we don’t need the diving equipment, anyways will try to find it.”

Now Ye Feng had to attach great importance to this threat as well.

The U.S. submarine!

In case the entire ice city was really exploded by them, then perhaps it would be too late for Ye Feng to even cry.

“Wait a minute, since you don’t want the diving equipment, then at least take this one.”

Niu Meng pulled out a small electronic part from his diving suit: “This is a small communication device, in case you find the clues of the U.S. submarine, then can rely on this to report, the electronic map of a few suspicious locations is also recorded on this.

Ye Feng squinted.

This gadget, it seemed that if he didn’t accept it then it wouldn’t be good for him in this current situation

“Got it.”

Very Naturally, he took that so-called small communication device, then pulled Long Wan’er’s hand and immediately started swimming to go outside the channel.

He wasn’t a fool, naturally knew that this device was definitely not just a communication device! Perhaps it also had the positioning role, no doubt, the opposite party wanted to trap him by all means.

Actually, he also didn’t know what should be the way to deal with him?

“First, go to the nearby water to have a look around because the U.S. submarine might be somewhere around.”

Ye Feng said to Long Wan’er.

In any case, this threat couldn’t be overlooked.

At this moment, Niu Meng looked towards them leaving and gradually the corners of his mouth curled upwards, simultaneously revealed a hint of a sneer.

Regarding Li Feng’s plan, finally he had completed 50 percent of it, now he had

to only wait for Ye Feng to find the U.S. submarine. Then, he would let the destroyer directly launch a torpedo again, as he believed that it would be enough to make this kid and the submarine get buried in the sea together.

Chapter 210 -> Discovers the nuclear submarine

When Niu Meng saw Ye Feng and Long Wan'er finally left the place swimming all the way, then immediately passed an order: "Take the position!"

The NSA's goal was totally different from Ye Feng's goal.

Ye Feng simply wanted to rescue his master, Su Feiying who was stuck in the centre of the ice city all frozen, while for the NSA, the essential task was to make this matter clear and also obtain enough advantages from it, basically, everything was for the benefits of the nation.

And as for Niu Meng, Ye Feng was just a brief interlude, the next was truly a challenging work!

Not only he needed to look for the channel to reach the centre of the iceberg but also wanted to carry on a sample survey of the ice wall, by mobilising all means, to dig up all the secrets hidden here.

.....

"Why do you listen to him? Better throw this thing away."

Long Wan'er followed him all the way and finally, they came go out of the channel. But she was still somewhat indignant as felt that the NSA must have a conspiracy hidden inside this device.

"But keeping this stuff is also advantageous, this way we can figure out what kind of trick he wants to play"

Ye Feng narrowed his eyes: "As for the U.S. submarine, we have to also check it out, let's go to those few suspicious places to begin our search."

Nowadays science and technology had very much developed, so a submarine's torpedo-firing range was dozens of kilometres. But relying on just two persons to look for a submarine in the deep-sea or looking for a needle in a haystack didn't have any significant difference. Luckily, Niu Meng had already provided them with a few suspicious locations.

Ye Feng looked at that sophisticated electronic device in his hand and found that all these places were within 40 km of range. However, he didn't know whether it was really the place where the submarine was hidden, or some crafty

scheme was there?

“Let’s go.”

He didn’t want to waste any single second, so after having remembered those places, he directly tossed that so-called small communication device away.

Niu Meng hadn’t even thought that Ye Feng didn’t need the help of either NSA or the country’s military!

Because to destroy a submarine, his own strength alone was more than enough, so keeping that so-called little communication device wasn’t useful at all, rather it was kind of posing threat to them.

The precise electronic location finder gradually sank in the seabed

Immediately after that, they displayed Dragon Turtle – Holding Breath Technique and because of their current level of Cultivation, both of them started swimming in the seabed at a terrific speed, which was even more than 100 kilometres per hour. Therefore now, checking those few suspicious locations wouldn’t surpass an hour of time.

Long Wan’er when saw him discarding that small communication device, then finally heaved a sigh of relief.

She had also heard that Niu Meng and Li Feng were birds of a feather. So how could he hold a favourable impression of the martial arts world? Therefore, carrying that device was indeed highly dangerous.

She followed Ye Feng together and also began hovering in the seabed rapidly.

After getting out of the ice city, their Invisibility and Camouflage techniques could be finally used once again. Soon, the two people dove into the seabed, now the NSA people could no longer detect their location

It could be guessed that currently, Niu Meng must be flying into a rage, but unfortunately, right now, Ye Feng didn’t have the mood to care about the feeling of that fellow.

As they went farther and farther from the iceberg island, their surrounding seawater simultaneously turned much warmer. And after swimming more than 20 kilometres away, the normal seabed scene was finally restored.

Now in the seabed, fishes could also be seen all over. But since the visibility was quite low, so both were forced to completely rely on their Soul Search Technique to carry out their exploration uninterrupted.

Moreover, Dragon Turtle – Holding Breath Technique not only allowed the cultivators to breathe underwater but also used to regulate the circulation of blood in their bodies, making them quickly adapt to the water pressure in the deep water. So even if they dove ten thousand meters deep, still wouldn't face any problem.

The entire East China Sea was not very deep, especially near the shore most of the part was 200-300 meters deep continental shelf and occasionally some 500-600 meters deep low-lying lands also used to show up.

If there was a submarine in the vicinity, then certainly could be found at a glance.

In a while, they arrived at the first suspicious site, where they carefully swept around using Soul Search Technique, but didn't find any ambush, even there was no submarine.

As for the electronic interference, the NSA used to determine, only that sinister knew what trick he had played to send them there. Besides in the seabed, the strange and bewildering things were too many.

But still Ye Feng didn't hesitate, instead together with Long Wan'er, continued swimming towards the next place.

At this point, they were like two real fishes in the sea, extremely sensitive and incredibly fast. It could be guaranteed that no one in this world could carry on such deep-sea diving like them

“Over there.”

When they arrived close to the fourth suspicious location, a nuclear submarine, not so far away. finally fell in their line of sight within their detection scope!

Although the visibility was considerably low, making the contours of that nuclear submarine look very fuzzy, but without any doubt, they had ultimately found the goal of this trip.

They quietly approached.

The nuclear submarine was there standing static at a distance of 320 meters deep from the sea surface as if waiting for an opportunity to move this deep-sea giant monster. Its height was 120 meters and was about 15 meters in diameter, while its shape was similar to a dark blue warhead tool. It could also be felt that it possessed great strength of the steel, sufficient enough to make people intimidate at the first glance.

Was it really the U.S. submarine?

Being little sceptical, Ye Feng gradually got closer to it along with Long Wan'er, where he noticed on one side of the submarine, few English alphabets were printed in white and they were "Pei Keang Group", quite strange, what was this stuff?

"It's a night watcher class nuclear submarine of Pei Keang Group."

The depth of knowledge and experience Long Wan'er had was somewhat deeper than Ye Feng, so the moment she saw him being confused, immediately said, but similarly a puzzled expression also crawled across her charming face: "It's not the U.S. military, quite strange."

Pei Keang Group?

The moment this name fell in Ye Feng's ears, instantly drew him back in the past and reminded him of Cai Shaohong. So why did a submarine of Pei Keang Group show up at a place like this?

It seemed that Pei Keang Group was really powerful enough, as could own even a submarine. No wonder Lin Clan was so scared of them.

What a pity, the other side was again flamboyant, but for Ye Feng, it was totally in vain.

"Let's go, first we will inquire about the situation."

Ye Feng beckoned and finally took her underneath the submarine in the seabed. There, they leant against a coral reef to hide.

This position was 50 meters away from the submarine and from here the detection range of their Soul Search could envelop the entire submarine!

What the current situation was in the submarine was completely visible to them.

The entire submarine altogether had approximately 70-80 crew members and all looked occupied at this moment. Indeed a major part of them were the U.S. people. Besides, the dark blue uniform they had worn, "Pei Keang Group" was printed on it, so now it was affirmed that they were the people of Pei Keang Group.

But in addition to those people, their Soul Search suddenly detected the presence of some Chinese people in that submarine! Moreover, there were also several figures that were familiar to Ye Feng.

They were those long-haired strange fellows from before!

Ye Feng pupil suddenly contracted, this Pei Keang Group was really like a lingering spirit, which even tried to barge in the matters of the other country like currently in China for the East China Sea's issue. However, unfortunately, it encountered Ye Feng, which proved this submarine was doomed to come with no returning path.

In the main control room, there was a slightly fat young woman with short hair and somewhat tiny physique, along with a Chinese fellow wearing a black skintight suit and they were talking to nearby people in English.

Ye Feng although listened to those words but didn't understand a thing, it seemed that he could only score high in the college entrance examination but was not that efficacious in practical applications

Fortunately, there was Long Wan'er by his side for the translation work, who made him understand the general situation.

Chapter 211 -> A violent destruction!

It turned out that the submarine was indeed under the banner of Pei Keang Group. This time, when the U.S. discovered a strange appearance in the East China Sea, they originally wanted to send the military to go into action. But entering the territorial water of China was after all quite terrifying for them as well since the danger of loss was highly involved. Therefore they turned towards Pei Keang Group for the help.

And it happened to be an important recent plan of Pei Keang Group had been totally defeated by China, even the son of the Pei Keang Group's chairman was killed here, so they promptly responded to the request of the U.S. military.

Immediately, they sent a nuclear submarine which passed through the Pacific Ocean to enter the East China Sea!

As for that short hair and slightly plump woman, she was also the daughter of Pei Keang Group's another Chinese chairman, who had grown up admiring Cai Shaohong.

The entire Pei Keang Group had altogether seven chairmen, among whom there were two Chinese. Cai Shaohong was the son of one of them, while this short hair and plump woman, named Xu Le was the daughter of another Chinese chairman.

Having listened to the translation of Long Wan'er, a little smile spread on Ye Feng's face, admired Cai Shaohong? No wonder Xu Le's slightly plump face had been so gloomy all along because the person whom she admired was killed in China. Hence probably she had long been burst with rage.

Quite soon, Xu Le began to hurl abuses and complaining while pinching a remote control hanging at her waist.

"She said that look for the opportunity to blow up that iceberg and immediately after that, go and grab Lin"

Long Wan'er although continued with her habitual translation, however, translated only half of it and then stopped, as she felt a little awkward.

"Who will be caught in Lin Clan?"

Ye Feng felt little strange, so asked one.

“It’s Miss Lin.”

Long Wan’er shook her head, then somewhat puzzled said: “This woman Xu Le has put the blame of Cai Shaohong’s death entirely on Lin Shiqing, therefore said that they must seize her and throw her in front of those strange and abnormal fellows afterwards she added that they would never allow the entire country China to live in peace anymore.”

“.....”

Ye Feng heard that and was somewhat dumbfounded, that Xu Le was a brain sick person, wasn’t she?

“They use to call those strange fellows as the second generation fighters quite disgusting.”

She proliferated her Soul Search towards the cabin of the submarine where noticed six long-haired strange persons standing still. However, they hadn’t worn even an inch-wisp on their bodies, while their exposed muscular bodies seemed as if had ample explosive force.

Long Wan’er was, after all, a woman, so when she sensed that those six had nothing on their bodies, immediately felt extremely disgusted to the extent that she was almost about to puke. She couldn’t imagine, if Lin Shiqing was really captured by Xu Le, then by these weirdoes

“What a pity, she won’t get the chance to do so.”

A cold look suddenly flashed in Ye Feng’s eyes, since they had bumped into him today, so this submarine was definitely going to be discarded here: “You stay here, I’ll go over there to destroy it.”

“Must be careful, if you were found by them, they will explode you with the torpedo

Long Wan’er was a little anxious.

“Rest assured, I’m not that easy to die.”

Ye Feng smiled, then glanced at her bumpy figure in the water: “In case I die, wouldn’t you be sad to death?

“Screw yourself.”

She said while glancing back at him: “You have to be careful, if you explode this nuclear submarine with that destructive power, then I am afraid we definitely can’t escape.”

“Hmm.”

Ye Feng nodded.

He certainly wouldn’t have the plan to run foolishly and explode the nuclear reactor of somebody else’s submarine. Actually, his idea was to congeal out the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring’s Zhenqi sword and make this submarine suffer from water leakage everywhere.

Silently and quite rapidly, he swam towards the bottom of the submarine.

Bang!

The Zhenqi sword, along with his plan, emerged in his hand and surprisingly turned into dark green!

Red, orange, yellow, green, blue and purple

Since he had reached 15 years of Cultivation now, so his Zhenqi sword simultaneously changed its colour again. Previously it was golden yellow, now it had turned into dark green. Although it didn’t appear so dazzling like before, but Ye Feng could feel that the implication strength was obviously significantly stronger.

Noiselessly, he drew close to the bottom of the submarine, now could even touch its steel and iron surface. But he wasn’t that foolish since it was apparent if he touched it, then might get discovered by the opposite party instantly.

He must strike to destroy it at one stroke!

The nuclear reactor’s cabin seat in such night watcher-class nuclear submarine used to be in its central part. So Ye Feng’s actions would be certainly to avoid that position, however other places were on his target list.

The outer shell steel plate, pressure resistance shell, silencer tile, etc of the entire nuclear submarine, even if they all were put together, still were less than one meter thick. For Ye Feng’s Zhenqi sword, it was so ordinary, just like a bean

curd in general.

Even though in some of the main cabins' titanium alloys, the high-strength magnetic steel products were degaussed, still they couldn't endure Ye Feng's sword.

Under the detection of Soul Search Technique, Ye Feng considered for a while and then finally found the starting position. The bottom row position of the submarine seemed to be a quite important cabin, however, at the moment, it was all exposed in front of him.

Shua!

The dark green Zhenqi sword flashed!

Holding the sword, he rapidly moved, while his sword, starting from the tail section of the submarine where steam turbine generator set was to the middle of the submarine diesel power generation, drew a hole over 20 meters in length!

Consequently, the surging seawater immediately flowed backwards to infuse into the submarine! Moreover, in an instant, a huge amount of water already entered!

The sound of the rear cabin promptly drew the attention of the submarine's people, making them quickly make a response. However, at this point of time, nobody knew what stuff it was which suddenly exploded!

Interestingly, Ye Feng didn't know a thing about the so-called submarine, also neither knew that cutting the rear part of it could cause an explosion.

But he might as well take a risk again, his legs moved and he swam all the way to the first half of the submarine and the next moment, the dark green Zhenqi sword flashed once again!

The poor night watcher-class submarine just had an accident in its rear cabin and they hadn't even recovered from the shock and now again, a long hole was drawn in the front compartment, from the battery pack to the weapons' storage room.

But this time, the explosion of the submarine's rear cabin got much louder, making Ye Feng feel a little inappropriate, not good, this way he would make

himself get killed by this explosion and that wouldn't be at all worthwhile.

Hence without paying attention to this submarine which had started exploding and disintegrating by now, he quickly returned to Long Wan'er as wanted to lead her to leave rapidly.

"Be careful, torpedo!"

Long Wan'er suddenly saw a torpedo behind his back, so hastily pointed towards it.

"I have already discovered."

Ye Feng's corners of the mouth curled upwards, he hurriedly retreated because unfortunately was discovered by them and as a result, they directly aimed and shot two precision guidance torpedoes back to back at him.

Star Arrow!

Without any hesitation, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er simultaneously congealed out two dark blue arrows and shot back at those two torpedoes.

"Bang" with two loud bangs, both torpedoes and Star Arrows directly collided with each other. However soon, this sound was completely pressed under the loud explosion of the whole submarine.

"This is unscientific!"

Ye Feng and Long Wan'er swam away much farther from there, but when they saw the whole submarine exploded, then turned a bit puzzled. Logically speaking, his two strikes were unlikely to make the entire submarine explode like this, right?

"They should have started the self-destruction procedure."

Long Wan'er was more familiar with some of these things, hence somewhat guessed. The opposite party came to China but actually encountered an unknown attack. So in order to keep this night watcher-class nuclear submarine technology totally hidden, at a critical time like this, starting self-destruction process was pretty normal.

Suddenly, under the deep sea the flame soared to the sky, but the initiator Ye Feng had already wrapped his long arm around Long Wan'er to protect her,

simultaneously had swum far away from the submarine's explosion range.

The incident that took place here, it right away came in the sight of this country's military as well as the NSA.

As soon as Niu Meng heard the news came from above, his face turned a bit gloomy: "I have never thought that kid would act such fast, it's too strange. Moreover, he was able to even explode the nuclear submarine alone"

Regarding Ye Feng's ability, now Niu Meng would no longer dare to underestimate!

Chapter 212 -> Formidable combatants

Just because Ye Feng discarded the small tracking device, so Li Feng's plan all of a sudden ended up in a complete failure. Besides, the U.S. submarine had also been destroyed, so now they didn't have any reason to shoot a torpedo by their destroyer standing by in the vicinity of the iceberg island.

Originally, Li Feng had planned the moment Ye Feng found the submarine; he would launch a torpedo to blow up the submarine. And as per his calculation, since Ye Feng would be in the vicinity of the submarine then, so he certainly couldn't escape the scope of the explosion, thus by this way, he would also be buried in the seabed.

But what he hadn't calculated was the accurate strength of Ye Feng, which paved the way of his plan directly towards a total failure and that also at the last moment.

Of course, the U.S. submarine was exploded, but it still didn't cause any harm to China, since China hadn't even lost half of their ammunition, it was Ye Feng who acted as their tool.

This was entirely a voluntary action carried out by Ye Feng, otherwise who wanted to use him. Pei Keang Group wanted to blow up the ice city fortress where Su Feiying was, so how could he have ignored it?

However, after this incident, Ye Feng's name was finally recorded in the NSA's 'pay attention to list' and that also exactly at the same level as Long Mo'ran since now he also became the s-class key target!

In the martial arts world, each martial artist that possessed an enormous destructive power, their names were recorded by the NSA in their record file.

Such as Ye Feng, this kind of ability that he alone destroyed a submarine, it indeed went against heaven's will. If they didn't pay attention to him and in case someday he caused a big thing, that loss would be certainly disastrous

Thirty kilometres away from the iceberg island, currently Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were close by the potential submarine.

"It seems that something from that submarine has escaped the explosion."

The scope of Long Wan'er's Soul Search Technique was still more than 30 meters wider than Ye Feng, therefore Ye Feng didn't feel anything.

"What is it?"

Ye Feng frowned as he asked.

"Probably it's a life-saving cabin and that Xu Le is also inside it Besides, those six strange fellows have also survived this explosion, surprisingly they haven't died as well!"

She proliferated her Soul Search Technique and suddenly felt surprised beyond words.

It wasn't basically called the life-saving cabin, although a submarine's life-saving cabins rarely had any role, but Pei Keang Group was synonymous with today's cutting-edge military technology, so configuring the life-saving cabinets in the submarine was also pretty normal for them.

But in this violent explosion, those six completely naked long haired strange creatures, who were called as the second generation combatants, actually didn't die, it was simply a miracle!

It must be said that for Ye Feng and Long Wan'er, it was entirely impossible to survive that sort of close-range explosion.

"It seems that the physical qualities and viability of those combatants are indeed very strong."

Ye Feng's complexion suddenly turned gloomy.

In the World of the Immortals, in addition to the Star Tomb Sect, which was a major Cultivation practising Sect, there was also the existence of some other major Sects. The physical qualities of each and every disciple of those Sects were extremely strong so much so that even using Soul Thunder Refining Body was unusually overbearing.

As per the legend, the people who inherited Dragon Sword heritage, the strength of their bodies used to be far more than the general Refining Body Cultivators. But unfortunately, presently Ye Feng only had Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, he hadn't yet opened Ancient Dragon Sword Tomb to acquire Dragon

Sword heritage.

If he really succeeded in obtaining that Dragon Sword heritage, then even if he returned to Immortals' World, would inevitably become a party thumb!

Obviously, this goal was a little distant for the time being. Presently Ye Feng didn't have any way to return to his own world, not to mention finding the legendary Ancient Dragon Sword Tomb.

"Let's go, we can't leave a threat behind for future trouble."

Holding Long Wan'er, Ye Feng rapidly advanced towards the sea surface floating all the way up.

That Xu Le of China had such a profound hatred for Lin Shiqing, if, by any chance, she knew that it was actually Ye Feng who killed Cai Shaohong, then would definitely become a big threat for him.

After all, Xu Le was not a small persona, rather was at the same level with Cai Shaohong because was also the daughter of Pei Keang Group's Chairman! If she returned alive, then depending on her disposition, how many crafty plots and machinations she would frame to trap China, nobody could even imagine.

So the crucial point was to settle her right here and right now. Interestingly, it wouldn't take much time, his sword could easily deal with her, so was there any need to be so puzzled about?

After dealing with her, together with Long Wan'er, he would immediately return by sneaking into the deep sea to break open the ice wall. Then after, they would enter the iceberg fortress from another channel!

Ye Feng believed that if compared with the movement of Niu Meng's team, his action would be certainly a lot faster.

.....

On the other side, Xu Le, wearing black skintight clothes, together with several other Pei Keang Group's foreigners, was currently in a rescue cabin and bit by bit, that cabin was floating up to the water surface.

Escaping the explosion of the submarine was not that easy, even if someone was able to escape, but rising too fast towards the water surface could also

make him unable to withstand the rapid change in water pressure, thus could get killed in the midway. Fortunately, Pei Keang Group's epic level of science and technology kind of used to lead the entire world, this let Xu Li survived.

A black rescue cabin, protecting their four people, finally appeared in the calm sea surface

This time the mission of this watchman-class nuclear submarine had been secretly run by Xu Le as she wanted to participate in this mission without letting her father know. Her short hair and slightly plump body shrank together. She regretted a bit that if she had known about it earlier, then wouldn't have come. Now that the submarine was exploded, their fate most likely fell into the hands of the Chinese people.

But the thing she still didn't know was the person who used his sword twice to cut the submarine like this, who exactly was that person after all?

Xu Le was a little distracted when a strange man, wearing a black shirt, suddenly popped up before her eyes. Did China actually have this kind of terrifying existence?

Promptly, she pressed the remote control hanging at her waist, fortunately, the second generation fighters could still fight at such a critical moment.

"Miss Xu, this time if we fall into the hands of China, then we will completely rely on you."

The three captains of the nuclear submarine, who were 45 years old middle-aged people, said to her in English holding their sullen faces.

If Xu Le didn't care about the relationship, then going back from the hands of China was something only God knew. Besides how long the Chinese would detain them, it was also a mystery. After all, they were the key personnel of that night watcher-class nuclear submarine!

China had a way to deal with them so as to pry open their mouth and extract some confidential data.

"You guys shut off your goddamn thing."

Xu Le was already in a foul mood, so immediately scolded and cursed them.

Afterwards, she pounded her hand on the remote control and slowly those six controlled second-generation combatants also floated up and encircled their rescue cabin to protect them.

However seeing these six fellows surrounding them, those foreigners suddenly were aghast, these people's fighting capability was so strong? What were they? Superman? Batman? Or Iron Man?

They only knew that Pei Keang Group was also involved in the research of gene technology, but had never thought, the research work of their gene science and technology department would have such a fast progress that they even created these fighters, who even survived the explosion of the submarine.

Although this gave a terrifying shock to them, but simultaneously pumped up some confidence in them. Having these six second-generation combatants by their side meant perhaps now they wouldn't be captured by China

While they were occupied with this thought, suddenly a dark green light flashed in front of them and the next moment, the entire rescue cabin was instantaneously cut into two halves.

It was that guy!

All four of them were simultaneously taken aback, Xu Le also screamed up loud, while a startled expression also suddenly appeared on her plump face.

That guy actually chased them, indeed he was like a lingering soul!

Ye Feng broke through from the seabed, while his sword waved and cut Xu Le's rescue cabin directly into two halves, making those four people "pop" suddenly fall into the water one after another.

"Help, help! I can't swim!"

Xu Le shouted as she suddenly choked a few mouthfuls of water and felt as if was about to die. However, fortunately, this time a long-haired fighter arrived at her side and carried her on his shoulder so as to save her.

"Die!"

Ye Feng's sword waved, simultaneously his stature turned into the invisible mode.

And a moment later, the dark green Zhenqi sword suddenly appeared right in front of Xu Le's face.

Chapter 213 -> Maritime bamboo raft

Puff!

A sword flashed and chopped down the arm of that long-haired strange fellow who had carried Xu Le on his shoulder.

When Ye Feng's Cultivation upgraded to 15 years, the colour of his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring's Zhenqi sword got changed, simultaneously, it's sharpness also substantially upgraded.

At the beginning, Ye Feng needed to wave his sword several times to kill a first-generation combatant, however now, this second generation combatant was similar to a bean curd under his sword.

Actually, just now his sword was blocked by this long-haired weirdo, because of which his arm was sliced off, followed by thick and dark red blood which started splashing out.

Terror-stricken, Xu Le also started screaming continuously, but the thing she hadn't noticed was although Ye Feng's sword didn't kill her, but the remote control she had hanging around her waist, had been cut into pieces.

"Ah!"

All of a sudden, the same long-haired freak, who had Xu Le on his shoulder, lost his control and roared loudly in his coarse voice, simultaneously he tore apart Xu Le's black skin-tight clothes and suddenly pushed her down into the sea water.

Other five long-haired fellows similarly lost their control and went sexually crazy, actually, they had been suppressed for too long, especially in that respect! So when they saw Xu Le in front of their eyes, it seemed like the most palatable lamb suddenly appeared in their sight, hence they couldn't control their burning desire and brutally tore her clothes apart.

Seeing this, the other three middle-aged foreigners, who were also in water, immediately, began to shout God, simultaneously made the sign of the cross in front of their chests.

"Oh, God."

Just in a short moment, Xu Le was dragged along the seabed by those six!

That speed, even Ye Feng failed to react.

“Ye Feng!”

At this moment, the charming face of Long Wan’er emerged from the sea surface almost 200 meters away and from there, she waved towards Ye Feng. Her Soul Search couldn’t explore this side, but still, she believed that Ye Feng would have settled them.

“Yes, coming right away.”

Ye Feng similarly floated on the sea surface, simultaneously a slight chill inexplicable idea arose in his mind, Pei Keang Group had created these fighters, but they really didn’t at all possess a human nature.

Even he somewhat didn’t have the heart to see Xu Le going through this devastation, even though she was standing on his opposite site, but in the end was an individual!

In his eyes suddenly a cold look flashed, immediately followed by the dark green sword which once again congealed out. However, he didn’t want to dive in the seabed at this moment, to catch up with those six long-haired freaks.

Puff!

Puff!

In an instant, the heads of those hairy freaks were cut off one after another, even though their cortex was a very hard layer since was specially made, but for Ye Feng’s sword, they were like as thin as a tissue in general.

Unconsciously, Ye Feng’s sword had been already sharp to the point where

All six of them were instantly solved by him, but since at this moment, they had already declined to the seabed more than two hundred meters deep, therefore Xu Le eyes had already turned wide open, while the clothes she had on her body were all tattered. Not only this, her fresh blood was flowing out from all her seven orifices, while her palpitation had already stopped.

Because she was dragged into the seabed extremely fast, so the rapid increase

in water pressure was not something an ordinary person could withstand, therefore Xu Le's internal organs were instantly crushed by the intense water pressure. Even though Ye Feng killed those six hairy freaks, but still couldn't save her.

"That's it"

Ye Feng lightly groaned, then put away his sword, turned around and advanced towards the direction where Long Wan'er was swimming all the way.

As for the remaining three old guys, he didn't want to pay attention to them. This kind of technically talented people would have to wait for the subsequent arrival of the Chinese army. Perhaps this way, they could also bring some advanced technology for China.

Together with Long Wan'er, Ye Feng left the place without telling her anything about how those six hairy freaks had lost their control at the last moment.

"Let's go."

Both of them finally left this sea area, leaving behind those three high-class crew members of the watchman class nuclear submarine, still floating in the sea.

From quite a distance, two small Chinese warships started to come over.

These three middle-aged foreigners would really ultimately fall into the hands of China.

.....

After getting out of the iceberg island to until now, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er had only spent less than an hour of the time period.

Quite soon, they returned to the iceberg island which was less than ten kilometres away in the bottom of the deep seabed, but accidentally, their Soul Search simultaneously detected something strange floating on the sea surface.

That was a bamboo raft, while two people were standing on it. They were clad in the ancient costumes and were appearing very oddly in the vast sea.

One of them was a very scrawny old man and the strangest thing about him was his hands because his both hands had six fingers; while another person was a gray-haired old woman, probably only one meter tall, like a dwarf.

As for these two people, naturally, Ye Feng didn't have any impression. But Long Wan'er as a member of Long Clan, was quite familiar with a variety of characters in the martial arts world, so the moment they fell into her detection range, she immediately introduced them:

"That man is called Old man Liuzhi Guai and the lady is grandma Jueqing. A decade ago, they wrested away the East China Sea nearby jade to slip away from the mountain paradise and since then, have been practising there."

(Lastvoice : that old man's name is Liuzhi Guai, the Chinese word Liuzhi means 'six fingers' in English. But in place of using six fingers everywhere, I chose to use Chinese word 'Liuzhi' for a better flow.)

They swept towards those two old people and immediately sensed that these two had fifty years of Cultivation.

If earlier Long Wan'er had seen these two old people, then perhaps she would have become extremely scared of them, however now with Ye Feng and also as an Immortal Cultivator, her vision had also widened. Although she only had 18 years of Zhenqi Cultivation now, but it was equivalent to 36 years of martial arts world's inner qi Cultivation.

"What are they up to?"

Ye Feng's eyebrows slightly wrinkled, these two old people hadn't only slipped away from the mountain in his later years but also were currently riding a bamboo raft to go to the East China Sea to stroll, it didn't make any sense, totally unreasonable!

"A lot of old guys rarely come out of the mountain paradise, because once they come out, there is definitely something waiting in the East China Sea to attract them."

Long Wan'er said.

Then both of them look at each other, the East China Sea could still attract the martial arts people, without any doubt it was the only one thing – the iceberg island!

"Speaking of which, that old man Liuzhi Guai also has the enmity with your Ye Clan."

She pondered for a moment, although a bit hesitated, still explained: “Long back, Ye Clan was considered as one of the three big influences around the whole country, this old man Liuzhi Guai used to admire Ye Clan’s martial arts techniques a lot and wanted to formally become an apprentice of Mt Luofushan Paradise, but was driven out by Ye Clan. So ever since then, he harbours hard feelings against Ye Clan. The story doesn’t end here, 20 years back, he also participated to encircle and kill Ye Clan, he also has the share in that incident.”

“Is it?”

Ye Feng squinted.

They stopped and slowly went forward along with the bamboo rafts forward. Shortly after, they found that the direction towards which the opposite party was heading, was really the iceberg island which was 10 kilometres away.

“No need to pay attention to them, let’s swim faster.”

After following them for a while, Ye Feng noticed that those two old fogies on the bamboo raft didn’t have any noteworthy movement, hence he shook his head and decided to no longer waste any crucial moment further.

Long Wan’er nodded as she also wanted to stop following them and advance fast towards their destination. However, at this instant, suddenly an old voice spread from the bamboo raft.

“Old Guai, you have offered ten million as a reward in the martial arts world to obtain the rare book of Ye Clan, so really you haven’t received any update?

Jueqing grandma said in her old voice dripping with a hint of ridicule.

“Hmm, well this old man actually doesn’t hold any hope.”

Old man Guai lightly groaned: “The matter of the East China Sea has already produced a huge uproar throughout the country. Moreover, surprisingly that kid of Ye Clan actually practices martial arts. Therefore this old man has already responded to the appeal done by God Fist Gate and Hidden Immortal Sect. After half a month, we have to participate in the encirclement and suppression of that Ye Clan’s boy.

“Therefore this time we are going out to sea because we have to obtain

anything from inside that iceberg.”

Jueqing grandma lightly said as raised her head to look towards the distant place where iceberg island was. This location was not that far from the jade where they had slipped from the mountain, this was really like a chance directly given by the God!

Otherwise, in order to participate in the encirclement and suppression mission, the two of them might not have any status to do so, so how could they talk about sharing the booty?

Old man Liuzhi Guai until now still yearned for the wild and crazy boxing of Ye Clan. It could be that in his lifetime, the only remaining desire he had been to practice this crazy boxing technique!

“Any random person will come to play with the thousand years old thick ice along with my master’s idea.”

Ye Feng snorted coldly.

Even if the NSA would like to give a share to these two old fogies, still they had to go through ask Feng’s wish eventually. As for the thousand years thick ice, Ye Feng didn’t much care about it, but he had to rescue Su Feiying at all cost!

Ye Feng and Long Wan’er swam towards the iceberg island extremely fast.

And a few minutes later, the 10 meters thick ice wall again appeared before them

Chapter 214 -> Void Swordsmanship!

Ye Feng and Long Wan'er finally arrived in front of the ice wall, but all the way they didn't have much conversation.

From the sea surface, more than 200 meters deep in the seabed, the two stayed there for a long time. Again no one could find them, even though the NSA people were around, but since they could make themselves invisible and could also display Camouflage, so not even the NSA people could see them.

However what the current situation was inside the ice wall channel, Ye Feng didn't know about it, after all, his Soul Search Technique again couldn't be used here.

But seeing Thunder's squad still guarding outside, he could say that Niu Meng certainly hadn't made any progress so far.

"Let's start."

His mood somewhat pumped up. He immediately held Long Wan'er's white hand and both of them started absorbing the last small coral to supplement their Zhenqi. Afterwards, they finally began the process of congealing out the Star Arrow together.

A faint trace of the strength of the invisible stars started condensing in the deep-sea and a moment later, a dark blue arrow appeared in their hands.

From such a deep seabed, breaking the ice wall and that also with their joint effort, it could certainly bring them much closer to Su Feiying's shadow. Most probably, if everything went well, then this could also lead them directly to the central part of the city.

But the point was, what would be the effect of their merged strength, obviously, that was something Ye Feng couldn't correctly anticipate, anyway, he must give it a whirl.

.....

On the other side, Niu Meng, leading two team members, similarly shuttled back and forth sometime in the Ice City.

Extending in all directions, the paths were indeed as complex as a honeycomb

labyrinth, making Niu Meng keep patience for a long time. But now, he simply wanted to turn towards the heavy weapons to rumble this thing.

But the most frustrating thing was, these ice walls were very hard and on top of that, had the self-resilience ability. Although his team members had brought all kinds of tools that could be used underwater, but still were unable to break the ice wall. The only thing they could do was helplessly wandering in this maze.

Niu Meng glanced at the central part of the ice city towards that beautiful shadow and his heart moved a bit.

He was not lascivious, rather was extremely excited seeing the rumoured ice fairy right before his eyes. But he also knew that once this woman was brought to the NSA and after the completion of all kind of research studies that would be carried out on her, there was one hundred percent chance that she wouldn't be returned to him.

Anyways, as of now, the essential task was to find the channel leading to the central ice city, afterwards, they could easily carry away that extreme beauty and leave the place right away. As long as could accomplish this goal, Niu Meng would be definitely considered as the very efficient Captian!

Along with the two members, he looked around in the ice wall channel constantly for nearly an hour. However, after an hour, he felt a little weak as the oxygen cylinder behind his back was insufficient, not to mention he had to spend at least half an hour to return along the same route.

So helplessly he ordered to retreat. But his plan was to go back first, then, after refilling their supplies, they would again continue to walk in the maze.

But right at this time, suddenly he felt that something was wrong in the periphery of the surrounding ice wall, what was the matter, why was it vibrating?

While he was pondering so, suddenly a bang sound transmitted from below, making him feel the entire ice city all at once shuddered!

Naturally, it was again Ye Feng and Long Wan'er who once again shot the Star Arrow. But this time, the sound was a little big, as expected adding one plus one was indeed just not equal to two, it was so simple

While at this moment, in the deep seabed, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were staring blankly ahead. They just shot one Star Arrow, however, the scene present in front of them was a bit unbelievable for them as well.

It wasn't at all an exaggeration but surprisingly the arrow they shot made a big opening in the whole ice city!

The beginning of the opening was right in front of them. Not only they fantastically succeeded in breaking open a huge ice channel but fortunately also succeeded in breaking three or four layers of internal ice wall at one fell swoop. This thing really forced Ye Feng to think that everything really happened just as he expected, now they were really much closer to Su Feiying.

But then, the destructive power of Star Arrow hadn't yet finished venting.

Probably the thousand year's thick ice had stopped disseminating energy, therefore the outer layer of the ice wall became a bit brittle and when it was shot by the Star Arrow, surprisingly began to split open all the way from the bottom to the top.

Not long after, the entire iceberg island seemed like was sliced open from top to bottom by a big sword and a ten-meter wide opening gap had extended to the peak of the iceberg island.

If looked downwards from the air, the entire iceberg island looked like a big circular flat cake and it seemed like at this time, suddenly had been nipped one. But in that bitten open cross-section, several ice wall channel entrances started showing up one after another.

They had simply merged their power to shot an arrow which surprisingly produced almost hundred entrances all of a sudden!

Around 20-30 entrances suddenly appeared above the sea surface, which weren't suffused with sea water, however, the distance from there to Su Feiying's shadow was very far.

While under the sea surface, there were 50-60 entrances which were filled in an instant with the restless sea water, which rushed forth crazily to infuse it. Interestingly, this place wasn't much far from Niu Meng's location. So consequently, because of the sudden surge in the water force, Niu Meng was

also washed away into much deeper and distant place!

But after a while, he finally stood firm in the sea water of the ice wall channel and looked around, soon discovered that he had been thrown to another inundated ice wall channel, while his two members, who were following him all along, had also been separated.

“It’s not good, the oxygen is insufficient, in case I can’t find the way to go out

Suddenly a burst of chill emerged in Niu Meng’s heart as he thought that, it meant now he had to go through a tragedy!

This side’s movement had also suddenly alarmed Thunder’s squad who were still outside.

“Since I can’t contact Niu Meng, so now listen to my command, bring all the four speedboats in the vicinity of that big opening and give the report of the current situation to the higher authorities!

Thunder made a decision decisively.

Besides, he also received a message that the Navy had just caught three high-level officials of the U.S. submarine. However the submarine was actually exploded by the strength of a single person strength and that person was surprisingly Ye Feng, which instantly made Thunder secretly scared, that boy Ye Feng, what was he after all?

Not only he was able to destroy the ice wall which not even their cruise missile could break, but now had also destroyed a submarine alone

This ability was really terrifying; he was simply a kind of war machine!

As far as he knew, there was no one like him in the entire martial arts world that possessed the ability to destroy a submarine. Although Long Mo’ran was such a terrifying martial arts expert, but still not even his third layer of Romantic Sword Technique could play any substantial role in one-meter thick steel plate, not to mention 10-meter thick ice wall!

Naturally, he didn’t know that Ye Feng had a sword.

A sharp sword.

With Immortal Cultivation which he had inherited from the World of the Immortals.

On the earth, his sword was the sharpest weapon which was totally matchless.

Furthermore, it wasn't an entity. If an expert succeeded in grasping the real Dragon Sword heritage, then the incredible and illustrious power he would receive from it was not something the people of Earth could imagine

.....

Right below Thunder and other people, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were there deep in the seabed, gazing at the big opening formed by them which made them feel astonished at this sight.

Now, this was really like a huge pain in the ass!

They just wanted to open a small ice wall channel, but now surprisingly such a big opening was formed. The thousand years thick and mysterious ice couldn't stand firm at the critical moment. Although whatever happened was simply amazing, however, this kind of huge open door was like facilitating the NSA to enter conveniently without much effort

Now in their line of sight, Su Feiying's figure appeared much clearer than before, because now there was the impediment of merely three ice walls between the two sides.

In close proximity!

"Or let's try once again and break the last three layers of ice?"

Long Wan'er asked one tentatively.

"No, the seawater is not there in the centre where Master is."

Ye Feng pointed towards one of them: "If we try to break it, the sudden influx of seawater into them might cause serious injuries to the master, in that case, the loss we suffer would be more than any gain"

Using force to break open the last three layers of ice wall was not an appropriate option. But then, under this situation, there was no other better way.

However, currently Ye Feng still had a leeway of choice, so he didn't want to take a risk.

From across the three layers of ice walls, he simply stared at the central part of the city where Su Feiying's beautiful but faint shadow was, that mesmerizing figure was so familiar, but it seemed like he hadn't seen her for thousands of years, making him long to see her again so far.

However, these three layers of ice wall were so disgusting, lying in front of him and her as a barrier!

If he could ignore this three-tier ice wall

Just when Ye Feng's heart was all occupied with this thought, suddenly he felt that his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring was transmitting abstruse mysterious information, which was directly drilled into his mind.

Void Swordsmanship!

Chapter 215 -> Sword pierces through void space!

Void Swordsmanship?

Ye Feng immediately knitted his eyebrows.

Just like before how Ancient Dragon Sword Ring taught him a new technique – Beheading Dragon Sword Qi, it was the same. And now that he had attained 15 years of Cultivation, so his heart had a strong desire to grasp it. Ancient Dragon Sword Ring again imparted an Immortal Technique to him.

As for the Void Swordsmanship, if he comprehended this move, then could he pass through that three-tier ice wall?

He was a bit puzzled, what was this Void Swordsmanship and was it really so formidable? As per his knowledge, in the World of the Immortals, there were plenty of Immortal Techniques which had the ability to teleport. However, those Immortal Techniques were not just to scare people, rather needed a very high Cultivation to be able to practice it.

So for this new technique, could he practice it with just 15 years of Cultivation?

He inquired into the mysterious words that had been drilled into his mind just now but found it too difficult to understand. In addition, it contained all sorts of mysteries, which were far more complicated than other Immortal Techniques he formerly got in touch with.

“Wan’er, you step aside a bit, I have just comprehended a sword technique, so now I will try to pass through these three layers of ice walls.”

The more Ye Feng delved into, the more excited he became, which reminded Long Wan’er a sentence.

“Eh?”

She heard that and was suddenly startled, what did he mean by just comprehended a sword technique?

How could he comprehend a sword technique out of the blue?

Although she knew that Ye Feng was so young, still comprehended the third

layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique, which meant he was certainly gifted, but could she explain how he comprehended a sword technique in just a split second? She certainly didn't know that he had the top treasure of the World of the Immortals and that was the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring.

However, she unconditionally believed the words spoken by him and so, in order to avoid hindering him, her pair of slender and beautiful legs swung in the water a few times and just like a fish, she retroceded ten meters.

Ye Feng wanted her to step aside because there was a reason, in case that so-called Void Swordsmanship caused damage to the surrounding people, wouldn't it be quite miserable?

"Oh, by the way, Wan'er, if I really succeed in passing through it, then you must find a place to hide. Just don't go back to look for your father and most importantly, don't get found by the NSA. I will try to bring my master out as soon as possible."

Ye Feng thought something, then said again.

"Oh."

She nodded, while her pretty face brimmed with curiosity. She fixedly stared at him as wanted to watch him comprehending some kind of swordsmanship.

As for her, Ye Feng was relatively at ease because he knew this young girl didn't rely on the influence of Long Clan, rather preferred wandering alone on her own outside. Moreover, she had a decade of Cultivation for several years, which meant she was definitely very quick-witted.

If she were a fool, then would have already died. Ye Feng believed that in these last few years, she would have definitely encountered several people like 'Happily married couple of knives' along with several dangerous situations.

Not to mention, Ye Feng might not be able to display this Void Sword Technique, in that case, they would have to enter the ice city fort together

After completely settling his mind, he once again congealed out the dark green Zhenqi sword and distantly pointed towards the three layers of ice walls to pass through them.

Each layer of the ice wall was about ten meters thick, however intending to step across this space was completely not the issue of distance, rather involved a very abstruse principle.

Regarding this principle, he didn't need to clarify it now. He knew only one thing, as long as he congealed out Zhenqi to cast this Void Swordsmanship, the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring would naturally be like his helping him.

Space technology had completely no existence in this world, however, in the World of the Immortals, it wasn't regarded as anything special.

From a distance, Ye Feng saw a ring on the slender, beautiful white hand of Su Feiying. That was actually a storage ring. When he was in the Immortals' World, had seen this ring billions of times, hence was already very much familiar with it.

Storage rings were precisely a piece of space reduced in the form of a ring, so as to use for storing items. And only those who had several hundred years of Cultivation were literally able to make a storage ring.

Similarly, in the Immortals' World, displaying such a mysterious sword technique like Void Swordsmanship, only strong powerhouses with hundred years of Cultivation could do. Ye Feng had never thought that he could so early get access to such an exquisite technique.

But now was the opportunity.

The dark green sword exuded a faint ray of light in the deep-sea. While on the other side, at this moment, Long Wan'er's beautiful eyes were constantly gazing at him. Gradually, Ye Feng proliferated his Zhenqi around his body, which started flowing according to the specific position.

And the next moment, not only his Zhenqi got connected to the seawater around his body, but the seawater also began flowing along with his Zhenqi route. Shortly, under the trace of mysterious energy the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring was emitting, the space around his body as if started getting fuzzy.

It only took 0.01 second time.

And the Zhenqi around his body suddenly erupted!

In this split second, he felt as if he suddenly entered an extremely mysterious

state, the surrounding seawater, coral reefs, even Long Wan'er as if started distorting in front of the ice wall.

In the meantime, the sword was wielded and the whole person stepped across ahead!

Shua!

His sword had actually split open the void space!

When the surrounding spatial warping phenomenon vanished, he suddenly regained his consciousness. And when he took a closer look of the surrounding area, then found that surprisingly he was really teleported inside the ice city!

This was the centre of the ice city fortress, quite spacious with no water, only remaining rugged seabed was there. Entire space was almost about the size of a football field and circular in shape. The place above was a layer of the ice wall hemisphere, the ice wall only had two channel entrances, that meant in case the ice city wasn't violently destroyed or someone was teleported inside like him, then in that case, if that person wanted to enter the central part through the ice wall channel, then there were only two roads.

In the centre, there was a magnificent ice sculpture, inside of which a very beautiful woman was frozen, her long hair was hanging around her buttocks, her beautiful eyes were closed, while she had worn a very simple and elegant white long skirt.

From top to bottom, the whole body of that woman didn't have any other pieces of jewellery to embellish other than a storage ring on her white finger. She was appearing so fresh and refined, as if a pretty fairy had fallen into this mundane world, making people unable to raise a shred of blasphemy against her.

Su Feiying, there was no mistake, she really was his master.

Ye Feng felt that if only he stretched out his hand, could be able to touch the ice sculpture. And if he succeeded in breaking this ice sculpture, then could rescue his master.

For a moment he felt as if he was in a dream, did he really come inside?

He turned back and felt astonished seeing that across 30 meter-thick ice wall, there was indeed the deep-sea scene. On the opposite side of the ice wall, charming face of Long Wan'er was fixedly looking at him holding a pleasant but surprised expression, while her hand was waving towards him.

The void swordsmanship lived up to the reputation!

Ye Feng greeted her back and then promptly seized the time, became all prepared to rescue Su Feiying from the ice sculpture.

...

"Captain, it seems that someone is inside!"

Following Thunder's order, his squad immediately started those four speedboats and soon arrived in front of the big opening. One of the team members was sharp-eyed, immediately discovered that near a large gap, an open bamboo raft stopped, however, couldn't see who the people were on that bamboo raft.

"A martial artist?"

Thunder's eyebrows wrinkled up, nowadays in this modern era, there was still someone who popped up in the vicinity riding a bamboo raft, then he must be a martial artist without a doubt.

From the position of the sea surface, Thunder was unable to see Su Feiying's form. This made him more and more curious to know what exactly was there in the ice city fortress.

While his several team members felt somewhat strange, why Thunder didn't order to send a few people to the bottom of the sea, to find the person who broke open such a big opening?

But Thunder was not a stupid man, if he could become the Captain, then naturally had long been taken this matter into account.

When he thought about the words spoken by Lin Shiqing before on the telephone, as well as the true terrifying strength of Ye Feng, then all he could do was simply shook his head. Just consider it as finished, temporarily don't provoke that great entity.

He wouldn't have thought that presently Ye Feng had already used an exceedingly high method and had quietly entered the central part of the iceberg island!

Chapter 216 -> Teleportation Spell

At first, Ye Feng sized up the surrounding environment.

There was no water at all in the entire dome space, instead, it looked quite dry. However, the above two ice wall channels were actually completely suffused with seawater and it would be definitely because of the effect of the thousand years thick ice's mysterious energy.

Su Feiying's ice sculpture was trapped inside this thousand years thick mysterious ice.

Indeed it was one piece of a completely transparent diamond-shaped ice crystal which was almost as long as a person's arm. It looked very exquisite, but the one-half of it was buried in the dry seabed, while the other half was stuck out, looking quite sparkling and translucent like a crystal.

However, Ye Feng knew that the value of the thousand years thick ice couldn't be placed on par with a crystal!

Even in the World of the Immortals, he had only heard about the thousand years thick ice and the school that possessed this mysterious ice, it was considered as the top influence in the entire Immortals' World.

"The earth surprisingly has these many holy treasures, could it be that together with the World of the Immortals, it is also the great majority world?"

He inevitably started making conjectures.

Ever since his rebirth to a modern city, he had successively met Gold Leaf Grass, Lingshi, Hair ornamental Blue Telepathic Grass, Heavenly stone bead, the big Coral King and now again adding together the thousand years thick ice.

In order to attain a hundred years of Immortal Cultivation, the big powerhouses used to fight over these things to the extent where they resorted to smashing one's head to seize the treasure. However here on the earth, it seemed like they used to appear quite often in general.

And there was only one explanation.

These things were although present in both worlds, whether it was the World of the Immortals or the earth, but since the earth didn't have Immortal

Cultivation, hence a lot of things were still buried. An Immortal Cultivator had a sense of perception towards the rich spiritual energy, but the martial arts people couldn't feel it, which also made the task of seeking the holy treasure relatively much difficult for them.

Hundreds of thousands of years of development history the earth had, this was the reason why these many material treasures were still hidden everywhere and which was not at all surprising.

He shook his head and thought that this was not the time to think about this matter. No matter what, but these many holy material treasures were definitely cheaper for him. Because for him, the matter of vital importance was to save his master first!

He found the trapped ice sculpture of Su Feiying had leant against a cluster of coral reefs, while the thousand years mysterious ice was in contact with her foot. Now he could guess that most probably, Su Feiying wanted to obtain this thousand years thick mysterious ice, but in the end, this mysterious ice would have rejected her and she ended up getting trapped inside it.

Before she had said that thousand years mysterious ice had holy treasures with self-consciousness, so if someone wanted to obtain it, then would have to must obtain its approval first.

Unfortunately, Su Feiying looked as if was defeated.

Ye Feng didn't want to move the thousand years mysterious ice, only looked at the intermittent cold air the diamond-shaped ice crystals were emitting, which had the ability to make people shudder. But currently, the crucial point was he was somewhat afraid of moving that stuff, in case he also got trapped inside, that might be a sad reminder!

And in due course, he would also be captured together with her by the NSA people to perform their research study on both of them This mere thought sent a shiver down his spine.

He cautiously took a round of the mysterious ice and in the end, arrived in front of Su Feiying's ice sculpture.

The ice sculpture was square in shape, which meant it was a complete piece of

ice-cube. If an ordinary person was stranded inside it for so long, certainly would have died by now. However, Ye Feng believed that Su Feiying wouldn't be so easy to die.

In the World of the Immortals, Su Feiying had confronted a plethora of situations which were much more difficult than the present one.

Under her snow-white long skirt, there was a mesmerizing figure which could be rated as the perfect figure. Her gracefully standing figure, as well as her lustrous black hair which was spread all over her shoulder like a waterfall, making her appear quite haughty and totally inviolable.

In addition, it seemed as if her skin was like an ice which was looking even more touching from inside the ice sculpture, her slender slippers under her snow-white long skirt, her perfect slender legs and her graceful posture, everything could make anyone see her and have a feeling of rescuing her out of the ice sculpture.

Her face was perfect, quite lucid and elegant, with very refined features, but without even a faint trace of cosmetics, while her beautiful long eyelashes could be clearly seen through the ice.

Ye Feng gazed towards her slightly closed eyes and couldn't help but recall the time when he was in the Immortals' World. Every time he saw the beautiful eyes of his master, it used to produce a slight chill from deep inside his heart, it was really mesmerizing.

Su Feiying didn't have a good temperament so much so that even a stranger shouldn't get close to her.

Except for that day when she had discovered his extraordinary talent, Ye Feng had never seen her smiling. And for the other Immortal Cultivators other than Ye Feng, she had always used a blunt speaking style with a touch of indifference.

Ye Feng quickly recovered from the recollection.

Immediately, he moved two steps forward, then, extended his hand to touch the ice piece, but the bone-piercing chill in the air made him show a conditioned reflex and he shrank back.

Too cold!

If Su Feiying didn't have a hundred years of Cultivation, then it would have been absolutely impossible for her as well to survive inside this cold ice.

How should he save her out?

With Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation?

He thought in his heart that at present, it seemed like he only had this way to give it a go. But this ice-cube was the thousand years thick mysterious ice which was constantly emitting bone-piercing cold air, while he could only depend on the first layer of Red Inflammation, so was afraid that it would be very difficult to melt it away.

He took a deep breath, then after, immediately started condensing Zhenqi in his hands and the moment later, released two balls of fire at the same time!

Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!

The blazing temperature immediately encircled the whole ice piece, however, no matter how hard he tried penetrating it through his flame, completely failed since he didn't see any sign of melting.

“Nothing happened, so it's not working?”

He couldn't believe his own eyes, hence still continued to maintain the flame in his hands. However, after a while, he found that it was indeed pretty hard to have an effect on this mysterious ice by using such small fireballs of his first layer.

The thousand years thick mysterious ice was continuously emitting freezing-cold air. But at this moment, it seemed that the seabed close by Su Feiying's foot finally felt Ye Feng's movement and as a countermeasure, the cold air turned even more intense, as if was sneering at Ye Feng for overestimating his capabilities.

“It's not good.”

Ye Feng didn't want to think much, simply wanted to carry Su Feiying's ice sculpture and move far away from this thousand years ice so as to try the same technique once again.

The heart-chilling cold air all of a sudden invaded his body, making him shiver

with cold. But he didn't care, quickly held the ice piece, jumped and arrived at the peripheral zone of the dome space.

Then he turned back and suddenly felt surprised seeing the appearance of the thousand years ice, it seemed like it was extremely annoyed, so was congealing out one after another several icicle towards him. However, they soon melted away as if were a little worn out.

“Could it be that in order to congeal out this ice fortress, the thousand years mysterious ice consumed up it's all strength?”

Ye Feng thought but still didn't dare to act rashly.

But the moment he thought to turn away his head and try to display Red Inflammation once more, right then suddenly his pupil got attracted towards another direction, making him glue to the spot right away.

What was that?

After removing Su Feiying's ice sculpture from that mysterious ice, there was the presence of a strange thing right behind it in the cluster of coral reefs.

Teleportation Spell?!

His complexion immediately dignified.

A piece of old and round stone was firmly embedded within the cluster of the coral reefs in the seabed, while on the stone, several ancient mysterious texts were written. Wasn't it the same Teleportation Spell which he used to often see in the Immortals' World?

But this Teleportation Spell had already been broken into two halves, so it was quite obvious that it would have already lost its effect.

Ye Feng guessed, sure enough, this world also had Teleportation Spell. Although it couldn't be said precisely but it might lead to the World of the Immortals!

However, this time, Ye Feng's heart was not much excited. For him, as long as there was Su Feiying shadow nearby, returning to his own world was totally an irrelevant matter. And interestingly, now there were also two other women by his side, Su Menghan and Long Wan'er

He thought that there was the possibility that he could go back, but was simultaneously afraid of the thought that did he really want to go back?

Chapter 217 - Immortal Technique – Extreme Inflammation

But Ye Feng soon restrained himself from pondering over the Teleportation Spell. This was simply foolish to grasp it blindly, he thought that he might as well save Su Feiying and listen to her viewpoint later.

Red Inflammation!

Single-handedly, he again congealed out the red flame and continued using it to surround Su Feiying's ice piece. But no matter how hard he tried, the ice piece didn't show the slightest sign of melting, even Su Feiying's eyes didn't blink even once.

This made him little anxious.

"How about I take her out of this place first?"

He thought for a while, then struck his glance towards the thousand years thick mysterious ice.

In case he left the place along with Su Feiying while completely ignoring the mysterious ice, then it would be kind of huge loss for him. But if he rushed to touch that stuff, perhaps he would also end up in the same situation as Su Feiying and that would be certainly not a joke.

What should he do now?

Soon he found himself trapped by his own multiple desires, he could only rely on the Void Sword technique to split open the empty space again. But using this way, it was certainly impossible for him to pass through the empty space along with this huge ice piece.

In other words, currently, he was trapped inside it!

Therefore, without further ado, he immediately returned to the edge of the three-tier ice walls, then while looking towards Long Wan'er who was standing outside, waved his hand and said: "Wan'er, again shoot the Star arrow!"

Once these three layers of ice walls were shot through, then water would immediately rush forth with terrific speed to infuse the whole area. However, this shouldn't be a big problem for him because now he could take care of Su Feiying inside. In any case, the trivial seawater couldn't be a huge threat to

them.

Unfortunately, this three-tier ice wall was too thick, although was translucent so he could clearly see outside, but the sound couldn't pass through it.

Long Wan'er suddenly noticed him speaking something, but couldn't hear his words. She wasn't 100 percent sure about what Ye Feng wanted her to do, although had a speculation that perhaps he was asking her to cast the Star Arrow again, but what if her speculation went wrong?

Upon seeing her blank expression, he turned a bit puzzled. If only he could demonstrate her to condense the Star Arrow and once again hit these three layers of the ice wall directly.

While being inside the ice city, it wasn't possible for him to absorb the strength of the stars, hence the penetration power of his Star Arrow would be very weak, which couldn't even scratch a little bit of ice. But it would be enough if he could make Long Wan'er understand what she had to do now.

She happily nodded, then after, she hid within a coral reef in the seabed and quickly started congealing the dark blue arrow!

Seeing that she had finally picked up his sign language, he heaved a sigh of relief. Now he only had to wait for half an hour, afterwards, she should be surely able to break these three layers of the ice wall. At that time, together with her and Su Feiying, he would immediately leave this place.

As for the thousand years mysterious ice he would think about it later.

At present, the most important thing was Su Feiying's safety. He was not that kind of person who used to resort to all means for his own selfish interests and benefits.

Standing beside the ice piece, he was frequently looking outside the ice wall towards Long Wan'er, while calculating the time in his heart. From time to time, he was also looking towards the exits of the two ice wall channels.

Both channels were completely suffused with water, but interestingly, water didn't fall down from the exit to the place where Ye Feng was, this might be considered as a wonderful sight. If the NSA people or any other person came from outside, they would definitely get down from those two channels only.

“Such a complex ice fortress, even the NSA suddenly can’t come.”

Ye Feng shook his head, as long as another half an hour, he would take Su Feiying out and leave this place. Afterwards, he would find a calm place where he could condense out a fake body again so as to try grabbing the mysterious ice one last time.

He hoped that everything should go as per his plan.....

He prayed in his heart for his success. Most of the time his eyes were getting attracted towards Su Feiying, that long and black hair which was hanging down to her hips, was looking quite nimble and resourceful in front of him.

Somehow he was expecting that Su Feiying would suddenly break open the ice piece and then, just like before, they would travel across the world

“Oh, that’s right.”

Ye Feng pondered for a moment and suddenly remembered something. And as a conditioned reflex, he immediately extended his hand and looked at his palm.

Since the first layer of Red Inflammation couldn’t act on this ice, then why didn’t he think of trying the second layer of it – Extreme Inflammation? If the temperature of the fireball of Red Inflammation could be ten times higher than a normal flame, then naturally the temperature of Extreme Inflammation’s fireball would be ten times higher than a red fireball!

Extreme Inflammation had the ability to burn blazingly even in the water. If someone’s Cultivation would be very profound and in case he threw a white fireball in a lake, it could evaporate all the water of that lake in an instant!

In the World of the Immortals, after achieving 10 years of Cultivation, Ye Feng’s primary attacking method had been this only, the Red Inflammation. And when Su Feiying had noticed his pretty good heat control, then wanted to give him little understanding about the Extreme Inflammation.

Unfortunately, at that time, they encountered the Fire Dragon Demon Lord and she waged a war with him. While Ye Feng went into the Fire Dragon cave all the way chasing her, but somehow got teleported to the earth

“Even though the master is not around to give instruction to me, that doesn’t

mean I can't comprehend this Extreme Inflammation on my own, right?"

He clenched his teeth and tried to recall the scene when Su Feiying had displayed Extreme Inflammation.

But Extreme Inflammation was quite different from Red Inflammation because when it was displayed, a white flame used to appear with extremely high temperature. Interestingly, Su Feiying didn't dare to cast this technique because it had the ability to burn the person and until he totally evaporated.

As for Ye Feng's capability, naturally, his Immortal Cultivation didn't need anyone's approval. In the entire World of the Immortals, he was like a unicorn's horn, simply rare! Otherwise, why he would have been accepted by Su Feiying as her disciple.

Before meeting Su Feiying, Ye Feng was just a 10 years old orphan in a small village who couldn't even eat to his full

Even though he wanted to comprehend the second layer of Red Inflammation by using his natural talent, but this Immortal Technique was not that simple to grasp.

An ordinary people needed 100 days to understand this technique, but for him, naturally if only he got one day, would be definitely able to thoroughly comprehend it! He was truly a genius, no matter what sort of Immortal Technique he got in touch with, always used to comprehend it in an instant, he wasn't a genius, rather could be considered as the God

Of course, if it was a sudden epiphany, then no matter what Immortal Technique he ran into, could instantly learn it. But unfortunately, the state of insight was not so easy to enter. Even though such a genius Cultivator Su Feiying was with a hundred years of Cultivation, but she also couldn't encounter this state several times.

Fire, in the World of the Immortals, was considered as one of the basic elements.

In order to grasp the Extreme Inflammation, certainly, the element 'fire' carried a profound understanding. In that case, how could he transform his Zhenqi into the shape of a flame? And then, how could he make the temperature

of his Zhenqi flame extremely high?

“Let’s make Zhenqi more intensive!”

Ye Feng thought of it and his eyes suddenly lit up. Although it would be very difficult to compress Zhenqi, but if he could achieve it, then perhaps would be able to display Extreme Inflammation.

He wanted to attempt it right away, but right at this moment, a strange sound suddenly spread from above his head.

It was the sound of water current! Accompanied with the rapid breathing of someone!

Ye Feng’s Soul Search Technique was totally inefficient in the ice city. Hence he immediately raised his head and surprisingly his eyes fell on a diminutive, plump and fair complexion form, who abruptly fell down from one of the two ice wall channels exists.

She was the lady from before who was riding the bamboo raft, Grandma Jueqing!

Ye Feng all at once tightened his guard and temporarily stopped pondering over the idea of Extreme Inflammation.

A gnarled old dwarf woman, covered with the ice detritus, suddenly fell down from the ice wall channel. Immediately after, she displayed Lightfoot Technique and lightly flew high in the sky and then, finally stood on the dry sea bed which was more than ten meters high.

The old lady was only 1.3 meters tall, just like a child in general, but the aura around her was quite imposing which made Ye Feng suddenly get struck by the extreme spiritual energy.

This grandma Jueqing was a martial arts expert with mighty 50 years of Cultivation!

Chapter 218 -> Grandma Jueqing

Long Wan'er immediately started condensing the dark blue Star Arrow, while constantly observing the ice city centre from across the three-layered ice wall.

But when she spotted a figure suddenly fell down in the centre of the ice city and surprisingly that figure turned out to be Grandma Jueqing, she couldn't help but feel surprised, while her eyes went wide open as she thought that the secret passage this time finally ended.

Grandma Jueqing arrived here certainly in order to grab the holy treasure, but she also had an old grudge against Ye Clan

And unfortunately, Ye Feng ran into her and that also alone, so what should be done now? As per Long Wan'er's evaluation, there was no way Ye Feng could be considered as an opponent of Grandma Jueqing. Last night, in order to deal with a powerhouse holding fifty years of Cultivation, the three of them needed to combine their strength to kill such a great expert.

Even though Ye Feng had recently made a breakthrough and achieved fifteen years worth of Cultivation, besides he also turned out successful in destroying a nuclear submarine alone. However, a person and a machine couldn't be placed at par. While as for Grandma Jueqing, she was already famous in the entire world for being a very cruel, merciless, sinister and deceitful person!

Long Wan'er couldn't help but turn somewhat anxious, while a hint of worry gradually crawled across her eyes.

.....

While on the other side, Ye Feng didn't understand how Grandma Jueqing found this place, but whether it was a luck or something else, the current situation was like this, not only the opposite party had just gotten down, but had also appeared in front of him.

What did she want to do here in the central part of the ice city?

Although he hadn't completely heard her and Old man Liuzhi Guai's conversation, but could still at least this much guess that it was certainly in order to obtain the holy treasure, so as to enhance their Cultivation. Grandma Jueqing

and Old man Guai slid down the mountain paradise simply because they wanted to come to the ice city to obtain the treasure and enhance their strength, it was just an ordinary way of thinking.

It was just that, did they still have to respond to other martial artists' summon to encircle and annihilate Ye Feng?

Also what about Ye Clan's rare martial arts book? Would they later divide the booty to obtain it?

Ye Feng felt quite strange at this thought, he really didn't know anything about these things. But the fact was, in the whole martial arts world, Ye Clan indeed had altogether several personal foes. So now it seemed like, after going back from here, he would have to inquire about this issue with Ye Wentian for his clear understanding, so that he could avoid stumbling into other dubious calamities in the future.

Since he had recently exposed his identity, so had already anticipated that this sort of situation might soon arise. However, he wasn't a bit afraid of it, at most he could roam far and wide, so what was there to be scared of?

In the World of the Immortals, running around everywhere wasn't the same like here

Grandma Jueqing stood on the ground firm, while her shrewd little eyes immediately swept all around and spotted Ye Feng along with Su Feiying's ice piece, as well as the presence of the thousand years thick mysterious ice.

For a moment, Grandma Jueqing's wrinkled face exposed an astonished expression as she couldn't think through how this place had a person and that also alive?

As for Ye Feng's presence here, she completely couldn't understand. Even if she was an expert with fifty years of Cultivation, but she really considered herself quite lucky for finding this place in this mind-twisting maze. Moreover, before reaching here, she passed through great difficulties and was almost frozen to death in the icy cold seawater of the ice wall channel!

Such a young boy, how could he enter the ice city centre faster than her?

She though didn't recognize his identity, after all, hadn't seen him before. But

whether she recognized him or not, that was not a big issue because for her, no matter who this youth was, she had to do only one thing now: Must kill him!

Here, she would absolutely not allow anyone to fight with her over this precious holy treasure!

Even though that piece of diamond-shaped ice crystal was very far from her, but she could still feel the energy contained therein was way too precious, at least could help her promote her Cultivation by ten years, simultaneously help her climb one level higher.

Fifty years Cultivation and sixty years Cultivation, both were two totally different levels, in case the two sides clashed with each other, then naturally the latter would easily beat the other one!

Her small eyes suddenly filled with greed, that treasure, she was determined to obtain it!

The time when she along with the old man Guai rushed to the iceberg island, right at that moment a big wide opening appeared before them from the iceberg. And as a result, they entered separately to explore inside.

At that time she felt that within this iceberg, there was a presence of very rich spiritual energy all over the place and the mere absorption of which was sufficient enough to make her easily enhance several years of Cultivation. However, she didn't act rashly.

She was not Ye Feng, would never think of choosing sesame seeds over watermelon

She asked in a very gentle tone and surprisingly didn't let her true murderous intention spread on her face. But that was pretty natural as well, an experienced person like her could definitely quite easily hide her true intentions.

To kill an opponent, one must maintain calm and collected stature, such could simplify one's goal. Otherwise making the opposite party realize would be like giving him ample time to prepare himself and resist. This might make the task more difficult and time taking.

"I'd also like to know who you are."

Ye Feng squinted, obviously, he was not so dim-witted that would foolishly reply to the opposite party's question.

“Old lady, Jueqing.”

She then continued in a tone dripping with concern: “This kind of dangerous place is not the place that the young people like you should come to”

She said while gazing towards Su Feiying's ice piece holding a startled look.

Even such an older person like her couldn't help but feel surprised seeing such a beauty in her front, a gorgeous woman like her simply couldn't exist in this mortal world! Whether it was her captivating appearance or her exquisite figure, it could be said that there was no one on this planet who could be compared with her beauty.

That was the quality of being an Immortal Cultivator, which was above mundane thought. Her elegant beauty and arrogance could make a person see her once and feel a slight chill in his heart!

Seeing Su Feiying, Grandma Jueqing guessed in her heart that didn't this boy in front come to this place for that beauty? Indeed she was worthy to be called as the Ice Fairy of the East China Sea, who had incited all young heroes to bow before her.

What a pity.....

All of a sudden a trace of ferocious cold look flashed through Grandma Jueqing's small eyes. No matter how outstanding the youth in front was, but since he arrived here, so was bound to die in her hands!

Without any warning, her footsteps suddenly moved and she quickly advanced toward the thousand years mysterious ice to sweep it away, at the same time she pulled out two silver needles from her drenched gown and quietly shot towards him!

Although Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique was totally ineffective here, but still he saw through opposite party's action, which made him sneer at her as he thought that it seemed like this old codger used to think a lot!

If Su Feiying had encountered this situation, she would have definitely resorted

to killing the opposite party at one fell swoop because she couldn't leave behind any potential threat. And since Ye Feng was her disciple, so he also had the same viewpoint!

He had to kill this old lady who had fifty years of Cultivation. Although before, he had killed one expert with the support of Nan Fang and Long Wan'er. But presently he already had 15 years of Cultivation, while the sword in his hand had also become much sharper than ever!

Although the other party was an old lady, but since she descended here holding a murderous intention, so in that case, he would also certainly not be fastidious about respecting the elders and this kind of nonsense truth.

"Want to touch this mysterious ice? Impossible! Want to kill me? That's even more impossible!"

He didn't even think, instantaneously displayed Dragon Claw Hand Technique and the next moment, his both hands turned into dragon claws. In a split second, his Zhenqi sprang out of his body spatially and shot down the two silver needles in the midair, which were thrown by the opposite party!

These two silver needles were pitch dark and looked as if were highly toxic. But unfortunately, this hidden weapon technique of Grandma Jueqing was so ordinary, which could never be compared with Ye Feng's Immortal Technique – Dragon Claw Hand Technique. Therefore, it was immediately blocked by Ye Feng.

"What?"

Grandma Jueqing's complexion changed at once.

She really hadn't expected before that this comely juvenile, Ye Feng could surprisingly assign his inner qi away from his body! God, this boy looked as if was only 20 years old, how could he release inner qi so easily? Surprisingly, even Grandma Jueqing couldn't achieve this stage so far!

Not good, could it be that this juvenile was Ye Feng?

She immediately responded!

Chapter 219 -> Fifty years Cultivation, yeah right!

Having realized that the youth in front was unexpectedly Ye Feng who was recently in abuzz, the wrinkled face of Grandma Jueqing suddenly changed.

It was reported that when Ye Feng collaborated with his partners, then not only he had been able to withstand the Head of Long Clan, Long Mo'ran, but also carried off one of his arms. So in that case, apart from Ye Feng, if his partners were also somewhere around, didn't that mean she was screwed now?

She thought that and hurriedly sized up all around, over and over confirmed and then finally heaved a sigh of relief. In the entire dome space, there was no one but Ye Feng, so for her, what was there to be afraid of?

"Then let's deal with you first!"

Her small eyes revealed a visible ominous glint as she said: "Ye Feng! You don't know the lady standing in front of you has 50 years of Cultivation, depending on your skill, you alone are nothing but just an inexperienced martial artist!"

Her voice barely fell and the next moment, her diminutive stature suddenly sprang and advanced towards him to make her move!

Fifty years of Cultivation?

Ye Feng sneered at her statement; he also had 15 years of Zhenqi Cultivation which was equivalent to 30 years of inner qi Cultivation. In addition to it, innumerable Immortal Techniques were also under his command, coupled with his sharp Zhenqi Dragon Sword, so now wouldn't it be too easy to deal with this old lady?

"Fifty years of Cultivation, so what!"

He lightly snorted, simultaneously his footsteps stamped heavily on the dry seabed, followed by a shrilling cry of a dragon and the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand again burst out!

Nowadays, in the martial arts world, those who could assign away their inner qi from their bodies were definitely martial arts expert. But experts like Long Mo'ran and Ye Feng, who knew even the third layer of some martial arts techniques, were definitely considered as the master of the masters.

So could it ever possible that Ye Feng would be afraid of an ordinary fifty-years Cultivation expert?

Absolutely not!

At this moment, Grandma Jueqing displayed a set of unsympathetic palm and with the help of the formidable support of her inner qi, swiftly and fiercely, like a tigress, swept forward towards him.

Unfortunately, she didn't know releasing inner qi out of her body, because of which she was still too weak before Ye Feng. The third layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique was cast, immediately followed by two pale golden dragon claws, which immediately extended from his hands and blocked her both palms at one fell swoop.

"Ye Feng! You can even cast the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique, but how!"

At this moment, her voice had become somewhat shrill, while inner qi within her body suddenly trembled and the fifty years of tyrannical Cultivation made a sudden terrific eruption, which all of a sudden shook off those two light golden dragon claws!

The disparity of level of Cultivation was indeed quite noticeable, but this was still insignificant for Ye Feng.

"Making groundless accusations!"

Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand Technique had already reached a high degree of proficiency. At this instant, his two pale golden dragon claws instantly took two rounds around her and tied her up directly.

Then, take the cloud style!

His Zhenqi suddenly fled from his body, making the light of the pale golden dragon claws turned even more bright and in a flash, lifted her short stature and pounded her heavily on the ground.

Bang!

On the dry seabed, a short and stout person's impression got imprinted. It seemed like Grandma Jueqing also walked along Long Mo'ran's footsteps and

was similarly smashed in the sludge by Ye Feng.

If in a battle, someone could assign away his inner qi from his body, that battle situation was completely different.

Ordinary martial artists could only rely on close combat, either could release hidden weapons or could release inner qi out. But after that, they didn't want to make any mistake and risk their bodies, so when they had to advance and when to retreat, they also knew it quite well because their own security was much higher than anything else.

Boom!

Grandma Jueqing flared up in anger, her inner qi suddenly erupted and she shook off dragon claws' fetters all of a sudden. Immediately after, she sprang out of the pit, simultaneously while avoiding the dragon claws, rushed towards him.

"Speed is also below expectation."

Ye Feng saw her and instantly his second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace burst out and the next moment, his body moved, leaving behind only a blurred remnant shade in situ. By the time Grandma Jueqing waved her palm towards his afterimage, he had already escaped to one side!

Might because her height was kind of hard wound, although her Cultivation was profound, Light Foot Technique was also not bad, but still, she couldn't catch up with him. Now she realized that her speed was not as good as Ye Feng, it might be his half.

"Hmmm."

Upon seeing this, she snorted one, however she was a very experienced lady, if she was played by him round and round like this and if this news spread out, then where would the old lady hide her face?

Instantaneously her footsteps moved as she wanted to rush towards Su Feiying's ice piece. Undoubtedly, she had the intention to use Su Feiying as a shield to resist Ye Feng's "inner qi" attack, simultaneously wanted to make him cautious about harming evildoers lest the innocent be hurt!

"You dare!"

The moment Ye Feng saw her advancing towards Su Feiying's ice piece to touch her, immediately his eyes blazed with rage.

For him, Su Feiying was like inviting the wrath of the emperor!

Those who dared try to touch her, Ye Feng would crush their bones to ashes without a bit of hesitation!

Almost in a flash, he cast Invisibility and Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace back to back, instantaneously Zhenqi rushed in his legs and he arrived right behind Grandma Jueqing.

Although she was consistently paying attention to him, but when noticed that his figure all of a sudden vanished right before her eyes, her complexion again changed.

What was all this about?

How did that kid suddenly disappear?

No, it was not possible, could it be that this boy could make himself invisible as well?

Just when she was being overly suspicious, a burst of violently high-temperature object suddenly pasted on her back.

Immortal Technique, Extreme Inflammation!

Using his maximum strength, Ye Feng operated his Dantian and started condensing Zhenqi in his both hands so as to compress it as much as ten times as the original one. Then after, he displayed Red Inflammation and finally poured out a white fireball.

Bang!

Before Grandma Jueqing's short arm could touch Su Feiying's ice piece, Ye Feng's Extreme Inflammation's fireball hit her in her back without a bit of hesitation.

Compared with the intensity of the common flame, it's temperature was hundred times higher, which surrounded her in an instant!

0.1 second?

0.2 second?

She didn't even get the time to issue a pitiful yell and the white flame turned her diminutive body into ashes to the extent that not even her bones sediment left.

"I am Letting you off lightly."

He drew his hand back and then finally felt relieved.

Under ultra-high temperature of Extreme inflammation, Grandma Jueqing instantly died, it could be said that she wouldn't have suffered any pain. Such an aged person should enjoy her remaining time of her old age, why did she slide down the mountain paradise and decide to travel across the world?

The martial arts world was indeed pretty dangerous!

It was thus clear that the humans were really greedy, just take the case of Grandma Jueqing, not only she had the intention to obtain the thousand years mysterious ice, but also wanted to encircle and annihilate Ye Feng to obtain Ye Clan's rare book of martial arts. Unfortunately, she ended up losing her life.

Having ended the chapter of Grandma Jueqing, afterwards, Ye Feng's mind finally calmed a bit. At this moment, he began to aftertaste the feeling of displaying Extreme Inflammation a moment ago

But just that scene didn't fall accurately in the eyes of Long Wan'er who was outside.

How smoothly and quickly Ye Feng killed Grandma Jueqing, when she thought about it, couldn't help but gawk while her eyes as if popped out of their sockets, Ye Feng was unexpectedly so strong at present, wasn't he? Grandma Jueqing was already known as a domineering and tyrannical old lady across the martial arts world, however, he dealt with her as if slaughtering a dog in general!

As expected, cultivators were really much more powerful than any martial arts practitioner

Long Wan'er although was reluctant to admit that martial arts techniques were very weak, but now the fact was bubbling right in her front, before her eyes, so now she couldn't prevent herself from admitting this fact.

A warm feeling slowly arose from her heart and spread all over her body, Ye Feng wanted to teach her Immortal Cultivation, that meant he obviously trusted her a lot. But he was just waiting for the beautiful woman inside to wake up since he didn't know whether she would scold him or not?

Ye Feng entered the ice city centre since then half an hour had already passed by. Long Wan'er's Star Arrow would soon be ready to be shot.

At this moment, in the ice city centre, Ye Feng consolidated a bit to display the method of Extreme Inflammation and then opened his eyes.

"It's the time, Wan'er's Star Arrow should be ready soon"

He looked outside across the three-tier ice wall and really saw a dark blue arrow hidden in the bump of the coral reefs as if was just waiting for action after having accumulated enough power.

He thought that they would quickly depart from here together with his master's ice piece, then, later would display Extreme Inflammation to rescue her!

His eyes were brimming with expectations. At this moment, he turned his head and looked towards the ice piece of Su Feiying.

"Master, wait for me!"

Chapter 220 -> Iceberg mounts aloft!

Once again the dark blue arrow was shot at the already tattered and torn ice city fortress.

But this time inside and outside was only separated by three layers of the ice wall, altogether mere thirty meters thick. So this half an hour condensed Star Arrow shot by Long Wan'er could absolutely penetrate through this wall at one fell swoop!

Ye Feng quickly held Su Feiying's ice piece, even though the cold was penetrating through his bone marrow, but still, he didn't flinch back, while his two extremely bright eyes were constantly gazing outside, towards the deep sea.

Arrived!

Cutting through the turbulent current in the deep sea, the dark blue arrow finally made an accurate hit on the most vulnerable area of the ice wall.

Instantaneously, with a loud bang, a crack began to appear which quickly spread in all directions. Under the great penetrating power of the Star Arrow, the three-tier ice wall was just like a free-range chicken, which was instantly penetrated through.

In a flash, violently surging seawater rushed forth to completely infuse the ice city centre!

"It's not good!"

While at this point of time, Ye Feng actually suddenly found a bewildering situation – after penetrating through the ice walls, that dark blue arrow was going to shoot the thousand years thick mysterious ice.

He had completely forgotten to tell Long Wan'er about the direction!

Ye Feng unknowingly made a miscalculation, but the point was, both parties were already separated by three ice walls and the sound was totally unable to pass through. Even if he tried telling her about it, but most likely she wouldn't have understood his words. And now, the present situation had already not allowed him to think much.

In this rush, he simply neither had any means to stop the Star Arrow nor had

sufficient strength to change its direction.

After absorbing the strength of the stars for more than half an hour, this arrow contained an unparalleled strength, which was way more frightful than a cruise missile!

Did he really want to stop it?

Was he tired of living!

He threw his arms around frozen Su Feiying and embraced her ice piece tightly, then without further ado, quickly ran towards another direction. He was firmly protecting the ice piece in his bosom. Even if the bone-piercing air was infiltrating his body and he was shivering badly, still he didn't loosen his grip.

He desperately wanted to protect her even by risking his own life just to make sure that she didn't get even the slightest injury!

As for the consequences which might happen once the Star Arrow shot the mysterious ice, only God knew about it.

He resigned himself to fate, although he didn't like this feeling very much, but didn't have any other way now.

Soon a loud crash, accompanied by a violent shake around finally passed on from behind him

.....

On the sea surface, everything was calm.

However, Thunder was in a very foul mood and why wouldn't he be? Already half an hour had passed by since he and Niu Meng had lost the contact. In accordance with the capacity of oxygen cylinders according to the NSA's standards, if Niu Meng didn't show up soon, then would definitely lose his life.

Moreover, when this big opening appeared in the iceberg island, he immediately put forward an application asking for the permission to let him use the destroyer to launch a cruise missile again, because now the ice wall was way thinner than before, so encore could surely penetrate through.

But unfortunately, the application to launch a cruise missile needed to go through so many procedures that until now, it didn't get approved.

Just because the first cruise missile was a complete failure, therefore the military people were taking a long time considering this request. One must know the construction cost of a cruise missile was at least several millions and the budget of the military wasn't in favour of Thunder's request, they couldn't take risk and waste such a huge amount like this.

Therefore during this period of time, Thunder didn't resort to any rash action. But he also didn't stay there idle like locking his hands behind his back, instead, he commanded his team members to drive the speedboats and completely keep abreast of the situation of the nearby sea area in their hands.

Including the seabed.

When the diving team entered the sea, they soon reported some strange situations in the ice city centre, letting Thunder know that Ye Feng was actually already inside, besides he had also killed a martial artist there.

How did that boy achieve this?

This was a matter of great importance, if he still turned a blind eye again, that wouldn't be a good indicator. Although Lin Shiqing asked him to deal with Ye Feng a bit gently, but now, seeing that Ye Feng was going to snatch away the most precious things present in the iceberg island, how Thunder could allow this kind of thing to happen.

He had already ordered the fighting members of his squad to get fully armed and regardless of which Ye Feng would choose to come out, he must be intercepted!

"I hope he won't set himself against the country."

Thunder thought so, while his solemn and respectful expression swept a glance towards the four fighting members on the speedboat.

On the basis of qualities and strength, these four were the strongest members among all the members working directly under Thunder. To intercept Ye Feng without fail, they were waiting on their boats. Of course, facing a "war machine" who could eradicate a submarine alone, Thunder must strive to negotiate a settlement as far as possible, or else in case of the conflict, it wouldn't be advantageous for both, the country as well as Ye Feng

“Everyone take the station, prepare to launch.”

Thunder issued the order.

However, at this moment, a strange change abruptly occurred.

A violent explosion suddenly spread from the depths of the seabed all the way up and once again, in an instant, set off the turbulent mighty waves on the sea surface, which had been tranquil for a long time!

As if a heavyweight deep-sea bomb was detonated in the bottom of the sea and suddenly a burst of wildly billowing mighty waves started rolling over and over. It took just a couple of seconds and all the speedboats including Thunder's boat which were in the vicinity of the iceberg island, were overturned like toys.

Thunder's fully armed four combatants as well as his other team members who were dispersed all over in the surrounding sea for exploring purpose, each one of them one after another fell into the sea.

Monstrous waves were extremely dreadful!

The iceberg island began to rise more than 20 meters above the sea level, simultaneously fissures one after another started appearing immediately. Surprisingly it rapidly disintegrated as well and then, immersed in the sea, which triggered a burst of billowing sea waves.

What was the matter!

At this moment, Thunder was helplessly fluttering in the mighty sea waves. Also now he wasn't a bit serious to pay attention to the equipment inside the speedboats which were also thrown off the speedboats into the sea, irrespective of the fact that this equipment if added up together were worth several million.

At present, the only thing he was so much concerned about was to know the exact reason which led to this situation, after all, what had happened in the seabed!

It shouldn't be that kid, Ye Feng who did so, right?

While he was constantly rolled over and over by the gigantic waves, something suddenly popped up in his line of sight and stole away the colour of his face, simultaneously threw him in the clutch of a huge shock.

Actually, another iceberg suddenly towered aloft from the sea!

The previous iceberg island, which had a smooth and rounded surface, with a pot cover sort of shape, was actually in an instant submerged into the seabed. And now this new iceberg suddenly popped up out of the blue, which was actually uneven, as if a real mountain peak in general. Very arrogantly, in a split second, it ascended aloft from the seabed.

The area within a radius of two kilometres, all turned into the territory of this new iceberg, including Thunder which was still being played by the waves. However, abruptly, his legs found a base and suddenly he saw himself standing on the land directly on the top of the iceberg.

Together with him, several members of the NSA also landed one after another in various places of the iceberg. Each one of them quickly held the icicles, ice piece and something like that to prevent themselves from further slipping into the sea.

The highest peak of the whole iceberg was surprisingly over a hundred meters, which was actually reflecting the dazzling glory under the sunlight.

Almost everyone was stunned, what situation was this?

Everyone cast their vision towards the middle position of the iceberg and surprisingly saw that there was no ice peak, edges and sharp angles, but a wide ice surface platform.

Furthermore, the surface of the ice platform was very smooth. But at the corner of the platform, there was a youth standing firm, clad in a black shirt, tightly hugging a large ice piece, while someone was frozen in that ice piece, wasn't that 'someone' actually the rumoured 'Ice Fairy of the East China Sea'??

"It's Ye Feng."

Thunder's felt a slight chill in his heart, hence immediately issued an order loudly: "Surround him!"

...

The violent shaking all around finally stopped.

At this moment, Ye Feng opened his eyes but still didn't loosen his arms from

around the ice piece. Afterwards, he took a broad view around the surrounding area and all of a sudden rejoiced.

As expected, the mysterious ice again displayed its strength and ferocity, but what a pity, this time it's might was much inferior to its previous time, it completely failed to form a decent iceberg fortress, instead had exposed itself out.

He saw a diamond ice crystal was inserted in the ice and was shining brightly in the sun.

"It's good to be all right ..."

Ye Feng loosened his tone finally, for the time being, he didn't have any such idea to hit that diamond-shaped ice crystal, because now he must take advantage of the time before the NSA could respond and flew away along with Su Feiying's ice piece.

But suddenly a familiar and serene voice passed on from the surrounding.

"Surround him!"

Thunder had discovered him, hence issued an order right away!

Chapter 221 -> Surrounded by groups

In a flash the original iceberg disintegrated and submerged into the sea, while a new higher iceberg towered aloft again, making the surrounding sea area again chaotic.

When Thunder issued the order to surround Ye Feng at once, right at this time on the other side, people from several other directions also started their action.

Long Mo'ran and Xu Xiaoyu together embarked on a speedboat and from the coast, proceeded towards the place where the iceberg island had emerged. Meanwhile, they also noticed an immense sound and movement which suddenly took place on the sea surface even though they were still quite far. Now for them, it had become even more unbearable to wait for the treasure hidden in the iceberg island.

“Mo'ran, I wonder if the NSA people try to intervene, then what should we do?”

Xu Xiaoyu muttered irresolutely which made it appear like he was quite afraid of the NSA people.

The most renowned figure who was known all across the world as the 'Nandou God Fist', appeared in a grey gown, while his grizzled beard was blowing in the sea breeze. Behind him, several disciples of God Fist Gate were also there, quite cautious and all alert.

Being on the same boat with Long Mo'ran making them feel as if they were Alexander without a doubt

“Hmm, just my presence is enough to make them give up the idea of meddling.”

Long Mo'ran said while holding a gloomy expression on his face, at this moment, he was in a white robe and the sleeve of his right hand was swaying in the wind.

The trip to this East China Sea had become a sort of humiliation for his lifetime, but if somehow he got his hands on the treasure, then only this trip couldn't be considered as a complete waste, which had already left behind stains on his self-

respect for the lifetime. If he could find the Ice Fairy of the East China Sea, then that would be better for him

As for him, he now didn't care about Ye Feng anymore, because in his opinion, the moment he took off his mask and revealed his identity, at that very moment a desire to kill him had taken birth in his heart, hence Ye Feng was kind of already dead for him.

Even if he did not get involved with Long Mo'ran, but still, there were plenty of forces throughout the country who were also interested in him!

Having heard Long Mo'ran making a solemn vow, Xu Xiaoyu didn't say anything, simply gazed ahead towards the distant place where once again a new iceberg had towered aloft and gradually a hint of faint smile peeped out from behind his solemn expression.

It seemed like Long Mo'ran would again make the NSA eat shrivelled.

As long as Long Mo'ran made the people of the NSA retreat, then everything would be smooth. Besides, Long Mo'ran didn't have any scruples and the NSA actually didn't dare think of taking his life, so there was no need to worry about.

Who didn't know Long Mo'ran had a father, who was famous for being an annoying person across the country China?

Their speedboat rapidly advanced towards the towered iceberg, however, what they didn't know till now was, both Ye Feng and rumoured Ice Fairy were also currently on the same iceberg, so by the time they knew about it

...

"Keke."

On a certain corner of the iceberg, the frightening appearance of Niu Meng finally opened the ice chunk from the shaved ice of the disintegrating slag and crawled up.

Finally, he was delivered from oppression.

His electronic eye immediately turned active and started collecting the present situation of the surrounding at the maximum speed and soon, the corners of his mouth exposed a trace of a fierce smile.

On the whole, he was still alive!

The whole incident of the East China Sea seemed like was going to mark the perfect period. Fortunately, with the help of the NSA, the kid named Ye Feng actually got stranded in the centre of the iceberg. If only he got the chance to solve that kid, then could easily take hold of both the Ice Fairy as well as the material treasure and could bring them back to the NSA. This way, his mission would be considered as over with flying colours!

As soon as Niu Meng's sturdy body crawled up from the ice dregs, he immediately took off the diving suit from his body and also discarded the oxygen cylinder.

In fact before, he was stranded in the labyrinth of the ice wall channel and had been almost choked to perish, but right at the critical moment, suddenly he bumped into his subordinate member.

Without any hesitation, he directly knocked his subordinate down with his own hands and then, quickly switched his oxygen cylinder with him.

That member obviously already choked to death, however, besides Niu Meng, there was no one who knew this matter.

Because for him, his own survival was everything and for the sake of it, even the sacrifice of his own team member didn't matter to him.

Step by step, he moved towards the centre part of the iceberg where Ye Feng currently was.

...

"Why there is no trace of that old woman?"

On another corner of the iceberg, a scrawny figure appeared and it seemed like was searching for something everywhere. It was actually that Old man Liuzhi Guai from before, who came here along with Grandma Jueqing.

His skinny face had a very suspicious look at this moment.

Although he and Grandma Jueqing after slipping away from the mountain paradise, had been together for more than a decade, but the fact was both sides didn't fully trust each other. So when he couldn't find her, then started making

conjectures like could it be that she obtained something fruitful, so already flew away from here?

“No, it shouldn’t be possible.”

Soon, he overthrew this possibility and his old face suddenly darkened.

Being together for last so many years, his and Jueqing’s goal had become the same, that was to siege Ye Feng and then try to get Ye Clan’s rare book of martial arts. So in that case, she shouldn’t slip away like this.

Since he looked for her everywhere but couldn’t find her, so could it be that she already died here somewhere?

How could he have thought that she was killed by Ye Feng’s Extreme Inflammation, which not only killed her but even destroyed her corpse, without leaving any trace?

“Fortunately, this old man is truly blessed with good luck, although I have just started this journey but since I was got struck by a sudden brainwave, so absorbed some spiritual energy

Old man Liuzhi Guai clenched his fist tightly, although he was old but appeared exceptionally vigorous!

Presently he had already reached 55 years of Cultivation and for him, enhancing 5 years of Cultivation at one fell swoop was simply like a pie fell from the sky. But who knew how many martial artists were there who actually yearned for this kind of opportunity?

But unfortunately, not all of them could find the source of spiritual energy, otherwise, they would also have certainly ascended one floor up

While these things were bubbling in Liuzhi Guai’s mind, right then suddenly he heard clamours of the people which instantly attracted his attention.

He climbed on top of an icicle, looked towards that direction and saw a black shirt boy standing on the ice platform in the front, firmly guarding an ice piece. Surprisingly, he finally caught sight of that beautiful stunning woman who was frozen in that ice piece!

The moment he saw that, immediately hid to one side, all prepared to wait for

an opportunity to act. But then, again his eyes suddenly shifted toward the centre place of the ice platform.

There was a diamond-shaped ice crystal inserted in the ice and was releasing the mysterious glory under the sun, it looked really extraordinary.

Could it be that?

Naturally Old man Liuzhi Guai's heart was suddenly struck by a strange thought.

...

At this point of time, Ye Feng was standing firmly by the side of Su Feiying's ice piece and without any hesitation was proliferating his Soul Search Technique around.

More than 20 members of the NSA advanced towards him to encircle him under the command of Thunder, at the same time Niu Meng also showed up again there. In addition, Old man Liuzhi Guai was also there around, that meant he also didn't die just a moment ago in this explosion.

When the Star Arrow hit the thousand years mysterious ice, then the anger of mysterious ice although couldn't cause any damage to Ye Feng, but actually pushed him to the surrounding region, making him a bit puzzled.

Now it might be a good situation to think of taking the frozen Su Feiying's ice piece and slip away silently. However now, his Invisibility had no means to cover such a big goal, while using the Camouflage Technique would be certainly very difficult to escape the detection range of the NSA's precision instrument.

"No matter what, whoever dares to move my master once, I promise I will grasp him and crush his bones into dust for sure!"

Ye Feng clenched his fist and loosened the ice piece, then raised his head and stood erect.

Even though he was caught off guard when he had least expected that Thunder and other NSA members would also be around all prepared to finish him up, but still there was no way he would let the other side take away Su Feiying's ice piece and that also right before his eyes.

This was his final bottom line!

Platter.

A series of footsteps rang out, followed by one after other several members of the NSA who finally appeared within the scope of Ye Feng's line of sight and then in an instant, encircled him from all sides. Each one of them was fully armed as if was confronting a dangerous enemy, firmly holding the blue ray guns as well as suppressing arteries gun, while all kinds of muzzles were almost simultaneously aimed at him.

Chapter 222 -> The martial arts world's resentment

Thunder moved a step ahead, while his solemn expression finally appeared in Ye Feng's line of sight, then, they looked at each other from across more than 20 meters of distance.

"Ye Feng, would you like to talk about it calmly and properly?"

Thunder tentatively asked one.

"We don't seem to have anything important to talk about."

Ye Feng said in a light tone: "It seems that you are not willing to let me go."

"Haha, that's naturally not the issue, but the thing you have right now, it must be left behind."

Thunder smiled.

Ye Feng heard that and his facial expression suddenly changed, this man Thunder actually called "thing" to Su Feiying?

"I have to take her away, so you won't let me go?"

Ye Feng's sharp eyes relentlessly gazed at him.

"Young people shouldn't be too rampant."

Upon seeing Ye Feng's manner of speaking which was very harsh and unyielding, Thunder felt a little uncomfortable in his heart. No matter what, but currently he was standing before the NSA, that NSA who used to represent the nation!

"Just thinking about the face of Miss Lin and her request, making me at least let you go, but that thing has to be left behind."

Thunder solemnly said that and this time, it was his bottom line!

As per the NSA's point of view, Ye Feng was just a negligible character who didn't much matter, instead if he helped them breaking the iceberg island, they would love it. But if he had the intention to take away that "thing" from this iceberg island, there was a big resounding 'No' for it!

Listening Thunder repeatedly using the word "thing" for Su Feiying, Ye Feng

wanted to simply grab him in his hands and give him a nice beating.

“Lin Shiqing? And her face, what relation they have with me.”

Ye Feng’s tone turned much harsher: “Come to the point, you are letting me go or not?”

If it hadn’t been a necessity, then Ye Feng was really reluctant to stand against the NSA, but if the other side kept on pressing harder and harder, then he must think of implementing his idea of breaking Su Feiying’s ice piece first, in any case, he didn’t have any choice left.

From the expression he had in his eyes, Thunder could easily sense a trace of firm determination burning in his eyes, hence couldn’t help but knit his eyebrows.

Currently, he didn’t know much about Ye Feng, but surprisingly how the strength of this young man was still unknown to the NSA.

However what information he had collected about Ye Feng so far was, once he went through gathering strength for some time being, he could display an incredibly violent attack which was much more powerful if compared to a cruise missile. Of course, he couldn’t use the same attack in the ordinary fight.

Then again, Ye Feng had a very sharp sword, which also had the ability to change its colour.

He was also filled with some details from those three high-level officials of Pei Keang Group’s nuclear submarine, who were recently been captured by them. That watchman-class nuclear submarine of Pei Keang Group was actually been brought into this condition only by Ye Feng, because his sword drew two huge holes on the submarine, which caused a sudden water explosion inside, making the crew memberm completely helpless to protect it. Hence ultimately they resorted to the self-destruction procedure.

“That sword can’t be ignored”

Thunder said holding a dignified expression on his face.

If in place of him, Li Feng or Niu Meng would have been there to direct the whole operation, then, he wouldn’t have let Ye Feng off for sure. Now it seemed

like, for Ye Feng, this diamond shaped ice crystal and “the Ice Fairy of the East China Sea”, both were much more valuable than the NSA’s research.

But Thunder also said that seeing the face of Lin Shiqing because he didn’t want to make things difficult for Ye Feng.

He hadn’t expected that Ye Feng wouldn’t be actually content with his situation, rather he also wanted to take away the Ice Fairy of the East China Sea!

One must know since both the East China Sea’s Ice Fairy and the diamond shaped ice crystal had appeared in the East China Sea, so in accordance with laws and regulations, both of them belonged to the state’s property, so how Thunder could let them slip right before him.

“Ye Feng, listen to my one exhortation.”

Originally Thunder’s plan was to establish a proper and peaceful talk with him so as to continue with his persuasion. However now he was a little annoyed in his heart, because this kid’s facial expression was indeed something he couldn’t understand a bit so far, was it so assuming for him opposing the NSA?

“It’s totally needless to say anything, let me take her away, or else it will be just a waste of time talking.”

Ye Feng had already noticed the resolute attitude Thunder’s face was exhibiting, so while talking, he had already made his mind all prepared to fight.

Su Feiying’s frozen ice piece as if for the time being didn’t need him for the protection, did some people want to smash this ice piece? It was just like, they didn’t need Ye Feng to begin

Zhenqi began to condense in his legs and hands, which was sufficient enough to display both Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace and Beheading Dragon Sword Qi at the same time!

Upon seeing the unwavering determination of Ye Feng, Thunder finally gave up the thought of trying to convince him. Now, it seemed that he had a plan for the present situation and that was, he only had to make Ye Feng lose the fighting strength, as for the discussion, it could be put off until later.

He raised his one hand as wanted to order his people to open fire, but right at

this time, from behind the edge of the ice platform, abruptly a person's figure emerged fast who was as swift as the wind!

Instantly, Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique notified him that hiding nearby that Old man Liuzhi Guai finally set into action and made a long-range raid towards him with a lightning fast speed.

"In the resentment of the martial arts world, the NSA must not try to get involved!"

The six-fingered old man shouted ghastly, indeed he was advancing towards Ye Feng to attack him!

Ye Feng's pupil suddenly contracted, surprisingly this old foggy already had 55 years of Cultivation, but was appearing much stronger than previously encountered Grandma Jueqing. If such being the case, even if he cast the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand, still couldn't fetter him.

It was just that how did this old man have hatred against him?

Or, could it be that somehow he knew that Ye Feng was the one who killed Grandma Jueqing?

No, it couldn't be.

Ye Feng's keen consciousness had also already sensed that although this old man had rushed towards him with the killing intention, but occasionally was also sweeping his vision towards the thousand years mysterious ice, with the eyes overflowing with greed.

"Should I use Camouflage?"

Ye Feng thought of a possibility, this old man didn't seem to belong to a brain-disabled generation.

If he had emerged now to snatch away the mysterious ice, the NSA would have certainly prevented him. But since intelligently, he rushed out to deal with Ye Feng, so now the NSA had no reason to stop him, instead they would love it.

And as expected, having heard the words of Liuzhi Guai, Thunder immediately shouted out: "Standby and wait for the order!"

If someone stepped forward to deal with Ye Feng, that couldn't be any better

than this for Thunder. At most, when Ye Feng would be in a difficult situation, at that time he would rush out to help him even by keeping his life on the line, after all, he was the fiancé of Lin Shiqing. But if he died here, then Thunder's position and his image, both would be certainly greatly affected. Speaking of which, Thunder was also a direct subordinate of Lin Detain.

Together with over 20 members of the NSA, Thunder immediately stopped the action and decided to just round the view of "the resentment of the martial arts world", however, each and every person's eyes exposed a doubtful look.

As per what their data expressed, this old man should have fifty years Cultivation, but the real-time detection made it seemed like he was much stronger. And as for Ye Feng, he had 10 years or little more Cultivation, however, they didn't have the specific number because his growth rate was commendably fast, hence the database of the NSA couldn't have yet updated it.

In this two men fight, certainly Ye Feng wasn't the opponent, right?

Although Ye Feng had all sorts of methods using which he could even break open the iceberg island, also alone destroyed a nuclear submarine, but those two methods didn't seem to be very much effective in this real-time battle against a martial arts expert.

Otherwise, he wouldn't have killed Long Mo'ran using these methods.

For the martial arts world's resentment, Thunder wasn't a bit surprised, because he had already arrived at the conclusion correlating both the matters, the bamboo raft from before and the martial artist Ye Feng killed in the ice city centre. His speculation was, the martial artist who died just now would be certainly the friend of this six-fingered old man.

So, the martial arts world's resentment towards Ye Feng was thus also a natural matter.

Ye Feng swept his Soul Search around and felt that this old man had made a long-range raid towards him from about 100 meters away, making his pupil contract once again, this old foggy, why did he choose this time to begin? If Ye Feng were at his place hiding aside, then for him, now was not the best chance to begin

What Ye Feng didn't know yet was beyond the scope of his Soul Soul's detection range, a speedboat was advancing towards the iceberg extremely fast.

Long Mo'ran, Xu Xiaoyu!

The ice platform Ye Feng was standing on at present was relatively low, because of which his line of sight was tunnelled by the iceberg. However Liuzhi Guai, who was hiding on the icicle, actually noticed the speedboat approaching fast.

In case he didn't set about, then, wouldn't he be also grabbed by Long Mo'ran and Xu Xiaoyu?

Therefore, he decisively shot a decision to make his move right away, also thought that while fighting with Ye Feng, he would look for the opportunity to get his hands on the mysterious ice at a stroke!

Chapter 223 -> The life seizing sword!

When the old man Liuzhi Guai dashed towards Ye Feng with the intention to kill him, simultaneously Niu Meng also made his move and quietly arrived at the edge of the ice platform, while his electronic eye was already operating fast and capturing the panoramic view of the current situation.

“Thunder this moron, he can’t even accomplish his mission, instead totally messed up everything!”

Niu Meng was very unhappy seeing the performance of Thunder, he was just dealing with a boy, but still actually had tied his hands as well as foot, what about the country’s prestige? If it were him at Thunder’s place, then would have certainly ordered to open fire!

This was the basic difference between Niu Meng and Thunder.

Niu Meng’s way of handling things was really different. Apart from any too important figure, if any martial artist killed anyone, he was right away disposed of by him. Anyway, he also had the nation’s action regulation to do the backing, so what was there to be afraid of? Therefore, he used to randomly consider any martial artist as a “too big threat” and then imposed several criminal charges on him.

But Thunder was pretty different, he was obviously not like Li Feng or Niu Meng sort of radical, as he preferred a peaceful coexistence while dealing with the martial artists.

Actually, the NSA was also divided into two factions, radical faction and conservative faction. Both Niu Meng and Li Feng were the representatives of the radical faction

“Good to see the resentment of the martial arts world!”

Ye Feng saw the old man ferociously advancing towards him and immediately his anger got triggered.

Due to the sharpness of his Soul Search Technique, he also immediately felt that whole body’s inner qi of this old man was condensed in his fingers, which meant he used to practice finger method. Besides, seeing his manner, it seemed

like he definitely wanted to kill Ye Feng at one blow.

Anyway, he had always been Ye Feng's personal enemy, hence Ye Feng could also make his move without any scruples. Moreover, it was just that the current situation was very urgent, so he must resolve this issue in the shortest time possible, then only he could depart from here.

Confronting such a formidable opponent who was much stronger than Grandma Jueqing, Ye Feng didn't have any other choice anyway. Dragon Claw Hand, Star Arrow, Beheading Dragon Sword Qi, Extreme Inflammation, although these were techniques were at his disposal but not necessarily they would be able to kill and behead him at one fell swoop. So in that case, there was only one technique he was left with – Void Swordsmanship!

Relying on the power of the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, he had already though reluctantly cast this once before, although he had displayed just once, but that was still enough to make him perfectly comprehend it. Also, the feeling he had tasted last time was still alive in his heart.

Though it was an unknown principle for him, but now even by virtue of his own strength, highly likely he could display this technique again with improved efficiency!

This kind of mysterious swordsmanship could allow him to move instantaneously and step across at most 60-70 meters of distance in a fraction of second. So while facing the vehemence of the six fingered old man, this technique had the absolute ability to startle him and then, behead him in a flash.

But how could he expose this technique in front of the NSA?

There was no space technology on the earth, so even if they saw it, still couldn't understand that what just happened. Besides, if this really startled them, then that would be much better for Ye Feng because then he could easily seize the opportunity to take Su Feiying and jump into the sea to escape.

“Want to encircle me, have the intention to obtain Ye Clan's rare book, then don't hesitate, go ahead and try it out!”

A cold look flashed through Ye Feng's eyes, at the same time his Zhenqi suddenly surged and immediately the dark green sword congealed out from his

hand. Afterwards, he gently moved, simultaneously his Zhenqi spread outside around his body and suddenly burst out.

Void Swordsmanship!

In his eyes and even in the sensation of his Soul Search Technique, the surrounding suddenly became fuzzy and started distorting. He lightly moved and in an instant, arrived in front of the old man.

A sword!

Puff!

At this instant, Ye Feng's stature flashed and appeared right behind the old man, then very lightly he stood firm on the ice platform, simultaneously his dark green sword also dissipated.

A moment later, everything around him finally returned to its normal state both in his eyes as well as in his Soul Search's sensation range, now there was longer fuzzy and distorted view. After twice displaying the Void Sword technique, Ye Feng had become already incomparably familiar with it, this was precisely his talent!

The whole action lasted not more than 0.01 seconds. However, no matter who it was, completely couldn't respond to it.

Even those precision instruments of the NSA couldn't capture this instantaneous action of Ye Feng. Not even Niu Meng's electronic eye could do any magic, instead it completely failed to track anything as if it was just blind. And all this happened because in a blink of an eye, Ye Feng had already changed his position.

But the originally menacing old man was still in midair when unexpectedly his heart was penetrated through by Ye Feng's sword, making his entire skinny body instantly lose its vitality and then he heavily fell down on the ice surface.

Teleport?

Teleport!

Thunderstruck, everyone including Thunder as well as Niu Meng couldn't move an inch, even their eyes went wide open, they simply didn't dare to believe what

they saw just now. Regardless it was seen by a naked eye or an instrument, Ye Feng's figure moved in an instant as if was teleported, wasn't it unscientific?

The detecting equipment showed that his body jumped directly from the original coordinate to the present coordinates. It was just a jump, not a displacement as the disparity was quite big.

If it had been a very fast displacement, then it wouldn't have given such a terrible shock to Thunder and others. So now the point was, Ye Feng could also move in a wink, that meant he knew teleportation as well!

If that old man could have reacted then it would have been surely a wonder.

Everyone was already hit by a huge shock, this kid, what background he had in the end, did he really belong to the earth? Even the strongest martial arts expert might not achieve this point!

Suddenly, all people of the NSA, including Thunder and Niu Meng, involuntary held their breath as well as thinking.

Ye Feng's life-seizing sword had as expected really stunned a group of people!

He didn't hesitate, immediately turned his head as wanted to quickly grab Su Feiying's ice piece and jumped into the sea to find Long Wan'er and then leave. However, right at this moment, his Soul Search sensed something, making his heart instantly sink.

Not good, how did Long Mo'ran also show up here?

...

At this very moment, Long Mo'ran along with Xu Xiaoyu, riding a speedboat, happened to approach the iceberg and then, the people landed one after another.

At the same time, other martial artists such as the people of Heavenly Sword Palace, Tang Clan and others, from several other directions also crowded around the place. Facing the enticement of iceberg island's culmination material treasure, nobody could resist, by the way without striving for it once, how could they just walk away?

"Want to fight with me, you people are overestimating yourself."

Wearing a cold look in his eyes, Long Mo'ran gazed towards several other boats, while a feeling of disdain gradually completely clouded his heart.

Today, he was determined to win the world's most precious treasure!

He crossed few steps along with Xu Xiaoyu. However, when they looked towards the central platform of the iceberg, this one glance made them see one astonishing scene, making them remain standing in-situ while their eyes went wide open as if were about to pop out of their sockets.

But what did they actually see?

Ye Feng!

In addition to him, "the Ice Fairy of the East China Sea" which was frozen inside an ice piece!

Furthermore, the diamond shaped ice crystal which was also there, inserted in the central part of the ice platform, the most precious treasure!

However, the thing which gave them the maximum shock was that their eyes happened to catch a glimpse of Ye Feng's life-seizing sword.

Teleportation, nobody could even clearly see his action, Old man Liuzhi Guai with fifty-five years of profound Cultivation, although was such a formidable expert, still was in a flash dispatched by his sword!

A piece of silence spread all at once.

The boy Ye Feng had actually obtained what kind of treasure, which helped him achieve such a rapid growth and which even gifted him with such a wonderful technique?

Obviously not long ago, this kid was just an ordinary high school student, who had never ever attracted the attention of any martial artists of this country China!

However now, even Long Mo'ran actually felt an inexplicable slight chill in his heart.

Too terrible.

Either he would eliminate him right here right now, or would simply grab him

so as to torture and interrogate him later to scoop out his all secrets.

Comparatively speaking, Xu Xiaoyu was more inclined towards the latter, after all, the ability Ye Feng demonstrated just now was sufficient enough to make all the martial artists of this country crazy, so it would rather be a pity to kill him like this.

But for Long Mo'ran, there was just one thing, kill, kill and kill!

In case he didn't settle him now and left such a potential threat for future, then someday he might end up exactly like Liuzhi Guai!

Wearing a dense and complex look on his face, Long Mo'ran stepped forward.

Today, in any case, he must not leave Ye Feng alive!

Chapter 224 -> All get lost, I have to kill him

Presently, the matter of primary importance to Ye Feng was to take Su Feiying along and leave this place as soon as possible. As for the thousand years thick mysterious ice, if he couldn't obtain it, then, would have just a little regret. In case he really failed to grab it at the last moment, then he would have no other choice but give up, after all, it was a mere worldly possession which couldn't be compared to Su Feiying ever.

However, when he was all prepared to grab Su Feiying's ice piece and quickly depart, right then suddenly some figures appeared on the radar of his Soul Search Technique, they were Long Mo'ran, Xu Xiaoyu and other martial artists, who not only landed on the iceberg, but also sized up his life-seizing sword even from quite a distance.

Again he miscalculated, this time the thought of leaving here certainly didn't seem to be so easy ...

Ye Feng thought in his heart, but was also a little worried about Long Wan'er as he didn't know what kind of situation she would be right now? When the Star Arrow had hit the mysterious ice, then sea water around happened to rise immensely high, so now where could be she?

However something made him slightly relieved, after all, Long Wan'er was also an Immortal Cultivator and just like him, she also knew Dragon Turtle – Holding Breath Technique, which proved she could easily survive in the depths of the sea just like a fish and wouldn't run into anything too dangerous.

“You stop right there!”

When Thunder discovered that Long Mo'ran landed on the iceberg and had the intention to go to the ice surface platform, Thunder's team members promptly reacted, immediately several people changed the direction of their muzzles and aimed at Long Mo'ran together with Xu Xiaoyu and others.

“You people get lost, I have to kill him.”

Long Mo'ran's manner of speaking was very dense and harsh, while his eyes were fixedly staring at Ye Feng.

The moment he noticed that several NSA members stood in front of him, completely blocking his way, his heart started blazing with fury. Consequently, immediately his hands turned into the palm and the Gentle Palm Technique was cast out, followed by his inner qi which rushed outside his body and swept everyone away.

Those NSA members almost didn't have any leeway to revolt, thus were abruptly raised by the crazy fierce palm qi and were directly thrown to fly all over the place!

Afterwards, Long Mo'ran strode ahead, while his eyes were all red clouded with the naked desire, and were looking towards the field where frozen Su Feiying's ice piece was, this woman was the so-called rumoured Ice Fairy of the East China Sea, indeed God had eyes!

This woman deserved to be with him!

Long Mo'ran just stole a glimpse and instantly arrived at this conclusion.

Then his eyes again drew towards the diamond-shaped ice crystal which was inserted in the middle of the ice platform and again a colour of similar avarice flashed through his eyes.

Things which were here currently, Long Mo'ran had the complete right on everything, whether it was the most precious heavenly treasure of earth or the East China Sea's Ice Fairy or the life of the housefly 'Ye Feng', everything belonged to him.

Did Xu Xiaoyu have the intention to plunder them?

In that case, only Long Mo'ran's sword would answer him!

"All step back, remain on standby!"

Seeing Long Mo'ran walking over domineeringly by riding roughshod over everyone else's opinions, Thunder's complexion changed, this fellow was the key target on the NSA's rank list, but Thunder was definitely unable to resist him depending on just a few team members of his small squad.

Even though Long Mo'ran had lost his one arm, which was also thrown into the sea by Ye Wentian to feed the shark, but still, his strength was remarkably

strong so much so that all across the world, he was still far more formidable than any ordinary person.

And now, he was even more ferocious and cold than the previous Long Mo'ran.

Because now, he had made his move with just one intention and that was, to kill Ye Feng at a stroke, without giving him any opportunity to escape again. The time he confronted Ye Feng and Long Wan'er together before, he had been badly besieged, it was because he wasn't enough resolute and ruthless back then, thus suffered a big blow both physically as well as mentally since not only he lost his arm, but his self-respect was also badly devastated.

Not to mention, now he was not by oneself, rather there were a bunch of disciples of God Fist Gate standing by his side. Furthermore, that man Xu Xiaoyu had also joined hands with him, although the degree of risk he imposed was nothing if compared with Long Mo'ran, but was a shrewd old fox. Since it was necessary, or else he would have never thought of ticking Thunder off.

If a conflict really broke out between both sides, then definitely the casualties both sides would suffer would be enormously disastrous, not to mention the degree of benefits bagged by either side.

Under the command of Thunder, more than 20 members of the NSA, standing encircling the ice surface platform, immediately stepped back several strides in abundance and then, went into the standby mode, all prepared to wait for the next order.

Now Thunder had no option left but ask the higher authorities about what should be their next step, since this matter now had the involvement of Long Mo'ran, so he ought to be careful.

While at this moment, together with Xu Xiaoyu and others, Long Mo'ran finally stepped onto the ice surface platform without even looking at Thunder a glance.

Because at present, there was only one person who had the right to reside in their eyes and that was Ye Feng!

Besides, together with him, Su Feiying's ice piece and the diamond-shaped ice crystal were also there. If the NSA members moved into action, then it would be

too much pain for both Long Mo'ran and Xu Xiaoyu.

But when Niu Meng saw that, then bitterly pounded his fist and smashed a bit of icicle, while his electronic eye was rapidly working and constantly transmitting the current scene and at the same time, he was passing it on to Li Feng.

“What? Long Mo'ran arrived there? Also several disciples of God Fist Gate? And other martial artists are in close proximity?”

Li Feng's severed arm had just been connected after going through a surgery, so he couldn't move heedlessly, but when this news finally reached his ears, he turned furious: “That fellow Thunder is simply soft eggs! Now I will have to report to the above and ask them to let the military launch more cruise missiles. You just try to make that soft egg Thunder ready to retreat, he shouldn't be in the way!”

“Yes!”

Niu Meng heard his words and finally felt all refreshed in his heart, he really had a greater liking to Captain Li Feng!

As he thought, to deal with Long Mo'ran and several other martial artists, using a cruise missile directly on them to kill them cleanly, was the perfect option. Because, no matter how strong the individual would be, could he be placed on par with the strength of science and technology?

Although the NSA was considered as the representative of the country but did country need to compromise with these things?

He didn't want to think much!

Wearing a ferocious expression and carrying a high and mighty act appearance, he walked towards Thunder.

He had to notify Thunder, making him retreat along with his people, so as to avoid being in the way. This iceberg would soon become a sacrificial victim of the destroyer cruise missiles! As long as the group of bumptious martial artists was massacred, they could slowly search the whole piece of the sea to dig out the heavenly material treasure or other fruitful things, then everything would be ok.

At this moment, when Thunder saw Niu Meng advancing towards him holding

a ferocious expression, he quickly guessed that the ferocious look of this guy was the result of some dangerous thought and the moment he guessed this, his complexion suddenly darkened.

...

“Want to kill me? Is it that easy?”

When Ye Feng heard the overbearing manifesto of Long Mo’ran, then thought something in his heart, simultaneously stood firmly in front of Su Feiying while facing towards Long Mo’ran.

This guy, his arm had just been cut off but was still running outside, it would be better to take advantage of this opportunity and cast Void Sword Technique to behead him once and for all, besides he was also a huge future trouble, wasn’t he? Originally, Long Mo’ran had long been killed in the seaside battle but was unexpectedly rescued by Ye Wentian.

If now Ye Feng couldn’t take control of this man Long Mo’ran, then how could he deal with Long Clan’s Old man who was said to be very formidable and who could be compared with Su Feiying?

Ye Feng framed the plan, at first kill Long Mo’ran, then use Extreme Inflammation to release Su Feiying from the ice piece to set her finally free!

Ye Feng’s eyes shown up, confidently he cast a cold look towards Long Mo’ran.

“His life is mine.”

Along with Xu Xiaoyu and other people, Long Mo’ran arrived all the way in front of Ye Feng, then stood firm around twenty meters away and said in a light tone dripping with arrogance and indifference.

“That’s obvious.”

Xu Xiaoyu naturally nodded, then narrowed his eyes while his white beard was blowing along with the sea breeze, making him look as a very crafty old man.

Bang!

Long Mo’ran unsheathed his sword.

This time, he would come up with his maximum strength, so that he couldn’t

give Ye Feng any opportunity! Moreover, he also saw how Ye Feng just now struck and killed the six fingered old man with his sword, so now he wouldn't dare to have the idea of slacking off.

The third layer of the Romantic Sword Technique, it was the last move, dangerous enough to kill that guy in one fell swoop, wasn't it?

Long Mo'ran looked incomparably vicious as this thought crossed his mind, once his ordinary sword tossed, simultaneously his inner qi suddenly broke out, making him all prepared to launch his attack without even a shred of hesitation!

Xu Xiaoyu, as well as other disciples of God Fist Gate, were all of a sudden forced back several steps by this sudden burst of an array of icy cold inner qi. Each one of them was in overwhelming dismay seeing that Long Mo'ran's perilous strength had already been strong to this point!

